00035145

BOMBAY BRANCH
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.
TOWN HALL, BOMBAY.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018

THE

CONSTITUTIONAL HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND

FROM THE

ACCESSION OF HENRY VII.

TO THE

DEATH OF GEORGE II.

35145

BY HENRY HALLAM.

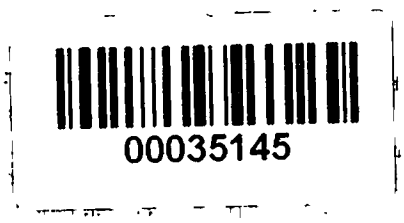
IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE-STREET.

MDCCCXXVII.


00035145

LONDON:
PRINTED BY THOMAS DAVISON, WHITEFRIARS.

CONTENTS

OF VOLUME II.

CHAPTER X.

FROM THE BREAKING OUT OF THE CIVIL WAR TO THE RESTORATION.

PART I.

Success of the King in the first Part of the War—Efforts by the moderate Party for Peace—Affair at Brentford—Treaty of Oxford—Impeachment of the Queen—Waller's Plot—Secession of some Peers to the King's Quarters—Their Treatment there impolitic—The anti-pacific Party gain the Ascendant at Westminster—The Parliament makes a new Great Seal—And takes the Covenant—Persecution of the Clergy who refuse it—Impeachment and Execution of Laud—Decline of the King's Affairs in 1644—Factions at Oxford—Royalist Lords and Commoners summoned to that City—Treaty of Uxbridge—Impossibility of Agreement—The Parliament insist on unreasonable Terms—Miseries of the War—Essex and Manchester suspected of Luke-warmness—Self-denying Ordinance—Battle of Naseby—Desperate Condition of the King's Affairs—He throws himself into the Hands of the Scots—His Struggles to preserve Episcopacy, against the Advice of the Queen and others—Bad Conduct of the Queen—Publication of Letters taken at Naseby—Discovery of Glamorgan's Treaty—King delivered up by the Scots—Growth of the Independents and Republicans—Opposition to the Presbyterian Government—Toleration—Intrigues of the Army with the King—His Person seized—The Parliament yield to the Army—Mysterious Conduct of Cromwell—Imprudent Hopes of the King—He rejects the Proposals of the Army—His Flight from Hampton-Court—Alarming Votes against him—Scots' Invasion—The Presbyterians regain the Ascendant—Treaty of Newport—Gradual Progress of a republican Party—Scheme among the Officers of bringing Charles to Trial—This is finally determined—Seclusion of Presbyterian Members—Motives of some of the King's Judges—Question of his Execution discussed—His Character—Icon Basilice.

PART II.

Abolition of the Monarchy—And of the House of Lords—Commonwealth—Schemes of Cromwell—His Conversations with Whitelock—Unpopularity of the Parliament—Their Fall—

Little Parliament—Instrument of Government—Parliament called by Cromwell—Dissolved by him—Intrigues of the King and his Party—Insurrectionary Movements in 1655—Rigorous Measures of Cromwell—His arbitrary Government—He summons another Parliament—Designs to take the Crown—The Project fails—But his Authority as Protector is augmented—He aims at forming a new House of Lords—His Death—And Character—Richard his Son succeeds him—Is supported by some prudent Men—But opposed by a Coalition—Calls a Parliament—The Army overthrow both—Long Parliament restored—Expelled again—And again restored—Impossibility of establishing a Republic—Intrigues of the Royalists—They unite with the Presbyterians—Conspiracy of 1659—Interference of Monk—His Dissimulation—Secluded Members return to their Seats—Difficulties about the Restoration—New Parliament—King restored—Whether previous Conditions required—Plan of reviving the Treaty of Newport inexpedient—Difficulty of framing Conditions—Conduct of the Convention about this not blamable—Except in respect of the Militia—Conduct of Monk . . . . . Page 1

CHAPTER XI.

FROM THE RESTORATION OF CHARLES THE SECOND TO THE FALL OF THE CABAL ADMINISTRATION.

Popular Joy at the Restoration—Proceedings of the Convention Parliament—Act of Indemnity—Exclusion of the Regicides and others—Discussions between the Houses on it—Execution of Regicides—Restitution of Crown and Church Lands—Discontent of the Royalists—Settlement of the Revenue—Abolition of Military Tenures—Excise granted instead—Army disbanded—Clergy restored to their Benefices—Hopes of the Presbyterians from the King—Projects for a Compromise—King's Declaration in favour of it—Convention Parliament dissolved—Different Complexion of the next—Condemnation of Vane—Its Injustice—Acts replacing the Crown in its Prerogatives—Corporation Act—Repeal of Triennial Act—Star-chamber not restored—Presbyterians deceived by the King—Savoy Conference—Act of Uniformity—Ejection of Non-conformist Clergy—Hopes of the Catholics—Bias of the King towards them—Resisted by Clarendon and the Parliament—Declaration for Indulgence—Objected to by the Commons—Act against Conventicles—Another of the same kind—Remarks on them—Dissatisfaction increases—Private Life of the King—Opposition in Parliament—Appropriation of Supplies—Commission of Public Accounts—Decline of Clarendon's Power—Loss of the King's Favour—Coalition against him—His Impeachment—Some Articles of it not unfounded—Illegal Imprisonments—Sale of Dunkirk—Solicitation of French Money—His Faults as a Minister—His pusillanimous Flight—And consequent Banishment—Cabal Ministry—Scheme of Comprehension and Indulgence—Triple Alliance—Intrigue with France—King's Desire to be absolute—Secret Treaty of 1670—Its Objects—Differences between Charles and Louis as to the Mode of its Execution—Fresh Severities against Dissenters—Dutch War—Declaration of Indulgence—Opposed by Parliament—And withdrawn—Test Act—Fall of Shaftesbury and his Colleagues . . . 163

CHAPTER XII.

Earl of Danby's Administration—Opposition in the Commons—Frequently corrupt—Character of Lord Danby—Connexion of the popular Party with France—Its Motives on both Sides—Doubt as to their Acceptance of Money—Secret Treaties of the King with France—Fall of Danby—His Impeachment—Questions arising on it—His Commitment to the Tower—Pardon pleaded in Bar—Votes of Bishops—Abatement of Impeachments by Dissolution—Popish Plot—Coleman's Letters—Godfrey's Death—Injustice of Judges on the Trials—Parliament dissolved—Exclusion of Duke of York proposed—Schemes of Shaftesbury and Monmouth—Unsteadiness of the King—Expedients to avoid the Exclusion—Names of Whig and Tory—New Council formed by Sir William Temple—Long Prorogation of Parliament—Petitions and Addresses—Violence of the Commons—Oxford Parliament—Impeachment of Commoners for Treason constitutional—Fitzharris impeached—Proceedings against Shaftesbury and College—Triumph of the Court—Forfeiture of Charter of London—And of other Places—Projects of Lord Russell and Sidney—Their Trials—High Tory Principles of the Clergy—Passive Obedience—Some contend for absolute Power—Filmer—Sir George Mackenzie—Decree of University of Oxford—Connexion with Louis broken off—King's Death . . . . . Page 262

CHAPTER XIII.

ON THE STATE OF THE CONSTITUTION UNDER CHARLES II.

Effect of the Press—Restrictions upon it before and after the Restoration—Licensing Acts—Political Writings checked by the Judges—Instances of illegal Proclamations not numerous—Juries fined for Verdicts—Question of their Right to return a general Verdict—Habeas Corpus Act passed—Differences between Lords and Commons—Judicial Powers of the Lords historically traced—Their Pretensions about the Time of the Restoration—Resistance made by the Commons—Dispute about their original Jurisdiction—And that in Appeals from Courts of Equity—Question of the exclusive Right of the Commons as to Money-bills—Its History—The Right extended farther—State of the Upper House under the Tudors and Stuarts—Augmentation of the Temporal Lords—State of the Commons—Increase of their Members—Question as to Rights of Election—Four different Theories as to the original Principle—Their Probability considered 341

CHAPTER XIV.

THE REIGN OF JAMES II.

Designs of the King—Parliament of 1685—King's Intention to repeal the Test Act—Deceived as to the Disposition of his Subjects—Prorogation of Parliament—Dispensing Power con-

firmed by the Judges—Ecclesiastical Commission—King's Scheme of establishing Popery—Dismissal of Lord Rochester—Prince of Orange alarmed—Plan of setting the Princess aside—Rejected by the King—Overtures of the Malcontents to Prince of Orange—Declaration for Liberty of Conscience—Addresses in favour of it—New modelling of the Corporations—Affair of Magdalen College—Infatuation of the King—His coldness towards Louis—Invitation signed to the Prince of Orange—Birth of Prince of Wales—Justice and Necessity of the Revolution—Favourable Circumstances attending it—Its salutary Consequences—Proceedings of the Convention—Ended by the Elevation of William and Mary to the Throne Page 392

CHAPTER XV.

ON THE REIGN OF WILLIAM III.

Declaration of Rights—Bill of Rights—Military Force without Consent declared illegal—Discontent with the new Government—Its Causes—Incompatibility of the Revolution with received Principles—Character and Errors of William—Jealousy of the Whigs—Bill of Indemnity—Bill for restoring Corporations—Settlement of the Revenue—Appropriation of Supplies—Dissatisfaction of the King—No republican Party in Existence—William employs Tories in Ministry—Intrigues with the late King—Schemes for his Restoration—Attainder of Sir John Fenwick—Ill Success of the War—Its Expenses—Treaty of Ryswick—Jealousy of the Commons—Army reduced—Irish Forfeitures resumed—Parliamentary Inquiries—Treaties of Partition—Improvements in Constitution under William—Bill for Triennial Parliaments—Law of Treason—Statute of Edward III.—Its constructive Interpretation—Statute of William III.—Liberty of the Press—Law of Libel—Religious Toleration.—Attempt at Comprehension—Schism of the Non-jurors—Laws against Roman Catholics—Act of Settlement—Limitations of Prerogative contained in it—Privy Council superseded by a Cabinet—Exclusion of Placemen and Pensioners from Parliament—Independence of Judges—Oath of Abjuration 448

CHAPTER XVI.

ON THE STATE OF THE CONSTITUTION IN THE REIGNS OF ANNE, GEORGE I. AND GEORGE II.

Termination of Contest between the Crown and Parliament—Distinctive Principles of Whigs and Tories—Changes effected in these by Circumstances—Impeachment of Sacheverell displays them again—Revolutions in the Ministry under Anne—War of the Succession—Treaty of Peace broken off—Renewed again by the Tory Government—Arguments for and against the Treaty of Utrecht—The Negotiation mismanaged—Intrigues of the Jacobites—Some of the Ministers engage in them—Just Alarm for the Hanover Succession—Accession of George I.—Whigs come into Power—Great Disaffection in the Kingdom—Impeachment of Tory Ministers—Bill for septennial Parliaments—Peerage Bills—Jacobitism among the Clergy—Convocation—Its Encroachments—Hoadley—Convocation no longer suffered to sit—Infringements of the Toleration by Statutes under Anne—They are repealed by the Whigs—Principles

of Toleration fully established—Banishment of Atterbury—Decline of the Jacobites—Prejudices against the reigning Family—Jealousy of the Crown—Changes in the Constitution whereon it was founded—Permanent military Force—Apprehensions from it—Establishment of Militia—Influence over Parliament by Places and Pensions—Attempts to restrain it—Place Bill of 1743—Secret Corruption—Commitments for Breach of Privilege—of Members for Offences—of Strangers for Offences against Members—or for Offences against the House—Kentish Petition of 1701—Dispute with Lords about Aylesbury Election—Proceedings against Mr. Murray in 1751—Commitments for Offences unconnected with the House—Privileges of the House not controllable by Courts of Law—Danger of stretching this too far—Extension of penal Laws—Diminution of personal Authority of the Crown—Causes of this—Party Connexions—Influence of political Writings—Publication of Debates—Increased Influence of the middle Ranks . . . . . Page 549

CHAPTER XVII.

ON THE CONSTITUTION OF SCOTLAND.

Early State of Scotland—Introduction of Feudal System—Scots Parliament—Power of the Aristocracy—Royal Influence in Parliament—Judicial Power—Court of Session—Reformation—Power of the Presbyterian Clergy—Their Attempts at Independence on the State—Andrew Melvil—Success of James VI. in restraining them—Establishment of Episcopacy—Innovations of Charles I.—Arbitrary Government—Civil War—Tyrannical Government of Charles II.—Reign of James VII.—Revolution and Establishment of Presbytery—Reign of William III.—Act of Security—Union—Gradual Decline of Jacobitism . . 658

CHAPTER XVIII.

ON THE CONSTITUTION OF IRELAND.

Ancient State of Ireland—Its Kingdoms and Chieftainships—Law of Tanistry and Gavel-kind—Rude State of Society—Invasion of Henry II.—Acquisitions of English Barons—Forms of English Constitution established—Exclusion of native Irish from th -Degeneracy of English Settlers—Parliament of Ireland—Disorderly State of the Islan. The Irish regain Part of their Territories—English Law confined to the Pale—Poyning's Law—Royal Authority revives under Henry VIII.—Resistance of Irish to Act of Supremacy—Protestant Church established by Elizabeth—Effects of this Measure—Rebellions of her Reign—Opposition in Parliament—Arbitrary Proceedings of Sir Henry Sidney—James I.—Laws against Catholics enforced—English Law established throughout Ireland—Settlements of English in Munster, Ulster, and other Parts—Injustice attending them—Constitution of Irish Parliament—Charles I. promises Graces to the Irish—Does not confirm them—Administration of Strafford—Rebellion of 1641—Subjugation of Irish by Cromwell—Restoration of Charles II.—Act of Settlement—Hopes of Catholics under Charles and James—War of 1689, and final Reduction of Ireland—Penal Laws against Catholics—Dependence of Irish on English Parliament—Growth of a patriotic Party in 1753 699

THE

CONSTITUTIONAL HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND

FROM

HENRY VII. TO GEORGE II.

CHAPTER X.

FROM THE BREAKING OUT OF THE CIVIL WAR TO THE RESTORATION.

PART I.

Success of the King in the first Part of the War—Efforts by the moderate Party for Peace—Affair at Brentford—Treaty of Oxford—Impeachment of the Queen—Waller's Plot—Secession of some Peers to the King's Quarters—Their Treatment there impolitic—The anti-pacific Party gain the Ascendant at Westminster—The Parliament makes a new Great Seal—And takes the Covenant—Persecution of the Clergy who refuse it—Impeachment and Execution of Laud—Decline of the King's Affairs in 1644*—Factions at Oxford—Royalist Lords and Commoners summoned to that City—Treaty of Uxbridge—Impossibility of Agreement—The Parliament insist on unreasonable Terms—Miseries of the War—Essex and Manchester suspected of Lukewarmness—Self-denying Ordinance—Battle of Naseby—Desperate Condition of the King's Affairs—He throws himself into the Hands of the Scots—His Struggles to preserve Episcopacy, against the Advice of the Queen and others—Bad Conduct of the Queen—Publication of Letters taken at Naseby—Discovery of Glamorgan's Treaty—King delivered up by the Scots—Growth of the Independents and Republicans—Opposition to the Presbyterian Government—Toleration—Intrigues of the Army with the King—His Person seized—The Parliament yield to the Army—Mysterious Conduct of Cromwell—Imprudent Hopes of the King—He rejects the Proposals of the Army—His Flight from Hampton-Court—Alarming Votes against him—Scots' Invasion—The Presbyterians regain the Ascendant—Treaty of Newport—Gradual Progress of a republican Party—Scheme among the Officers of bringing Charles to*

Trial—This is finally determined—Seclusion of Presbyterian Members—Motives of some of the King's Judges—Question of his Execution discussed—His Character—Icon Basilice.

PART II.

Abolition of the Monarchy—And of the House of Lords—Commonwealth—Schemes of Cromwell—His Conversations with Whitelock—Unpopularity of the Parliament—Their Fall—Little Parliament—Instrument of Government—Parliament called by Cromwell—Dissolved by him—Intrigues of the King and his Party—Insurrectionary Movements in 1655*—Rigorous Measures of Cromwell—His arbitrary Government—He summons another Parliament—Designs to take the Crown—The Project fails—But his Authority as Protector is augmented—He aims at forming a new House of Lords—His Death—And Character—Richard his Son succeeds him—Is supported by some prudent Men—But opposed by a Coalition—Calls a Parliament—The Army overthrow both—Long Parliament restored—Expelled again—And again restored—Impossibility of establishing a Republic—Intrigues of the Royalists—They unite with the Presbyterians—Conspiracy of* 1659*—Interference of Monk—His Dissimulation—Secluded Members return to their Seats—Difficulties about the Restoration—New Parliament—King restored—Whether previous Conditions required—Plan of reviving the Treaty of Newport inexpedient—Difficulty of framing Conditions—Conduct of the Convention about this not blameable—Except in respect of the Militia—Conduct of Monk.*

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

FACTIONS, that, while still under some restraint from the forms at least of constitutional law, excite our disgust by their selfishness or intemperance, are little likely to redeem their honour when their animosities have kindled civil warfare. If it were difficult for an upright man to enlist with an entire willingness under either the royalist or the parliamentarian banner, at the commencement of hostilities in 1642, it became far less easy for him to desire the complete success of one or the other cause, as advancing time displayed the faults of both in darker colours than they had previously worn. Of the parliament—to begin with the more powerful and victorious party—it may be said, I think, with not greater severity than truth, that scarce two or three public acts of justice, humanity, or generosity, and very few of political wisdom or courage, are recorded of them from their quarrel with the king to their expulsion by Cromwell.

Notwithstanding the secession from parliament before the commencement of the war, of nearly all the peers who could be reckoned on the king's side, and of a pretty considerable part of the commons, there still continued to sit at Westminster many sensible and moderate persons, who thought that they could not serve their country better than by remaining at their posts, and laboured continually to bring about a pacification by mutual concessions. Such were the earls of Northumberland, Holland, Lincoln, and Bedford, among the peers; Selden, Whitelock, Hollis, Waller, Pierrepont, and Rudyard, in the commons. These, however, would have formed but a very ineffectual minority, if the war itself, for at least twelve months, had not taken a turn little expected by the parliament. The hard usage Charles seemed to endure in so many encroachments on his ancient prerogative awakened the sympathies of a generous aristocracy, accustomed to respect the established laws, and to love monarchy, as they did their own liberties, on the score of its prescriptive title; averse also to the rude and morose genius of puritanism, and not a little jealous of those upstart demagogues, who already threatened to subvert the graduated pyramid of English society. Their zeal placed the king at the head of a far more considerable army than either party had anticipated*. In the first battle, that of Edgehill, though he did not remain master of the field, yet all the military consequences were evidently in his favour†. In the ensuing campaign of 1643, the advantage was for several months entirely his own; nor could he be said to be a loser on the whole result, notwithstanding some reverses that accompanied the autumn. A

* May, p. 165.

† Both sides claimed the victory. May, who thinks that Essex, by his injudicious conduct after the battle, lost the advantage he had gained in it, admits that the effect was to strengthen the king's side. "Those who thought his success impossible began to look upon him as one who might be a conqueror, and many neuters joined him," p. 176. Ludlow is of the same opinion as to Essex's behaviour and its consequences: "Our army, after some refreshment at Warwick, returned to London, not like men that had obtained a victory, but as if they had been beaten," p. 52. This shows that they had not in fact obtained much of a victory; and lord Wharton's report to parliament almost leads us to think the advantage, upon the whole, to have been with the king. Parl. Hist. ii. 1495.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

line drawn from Hull to Southampton would suggest no very inexact idea of the two parties, considered as to their military occupation of the kingdom, at the beginning of September 1643; for if the parliament, by the possession of Glocester and Plymouth, and by some force they had on foot in Cheshire and other midland parts, kept their ground on the west of this line, this was nearly compensated by the earl of Newcastle's possession, at that time, of most of Lincolnshire, which lay within it. Such was the temporary effect, partly indeed of what may be called the fortune of war, but rather of the zeal and spirit of the royalists, and of their advantage in a more numerous and intrepid cavalry *.

It has been frequently supposed, and doubtless seems to have been a prevailing opinion at the time, that if the king, instead of sitting down before Glocester at the end of August, had marched upon London, combining his operations with Newcastle's powerful army, he would have brought the war to a triumphant conclusion †. In these matters men judge principally by the event. Whether it would have been prudent in Newcastle to have left behind him the strong garrison of Hull under Fairfax, and an unbroken, though inferior force, commanded by lord Willoughby and Cromwell in Lincolnshire, I must leave to military critics; suspecting, however, that he would have found it difficult to draw away the Yorkshire gentry and yeomanry, forming the strength of his army, from their unprotected homes. Yet the parliamentary forces were

* May, 212. Baillie, 373. 391.

† May, Baillie, Mrs. Hutchinson, are as much of this opinion, as sir Philip Warwick, and other royalist writers. It is certain that there was a prodigious alarm, and almost despondency, among the parliamentarians. They immediately began to make entrenchments about London, which were finished in a month. May, p. 214. In the Somers Tracts, iv. 534, is an interesting letter from a Scotsman then in London, giving an account of these fortifications, which, considering the short time employed about them, seem to have been very respectable, and such as the king's army, with its weak cavalry and bad artillery, could not easily have carried. Lord Sunderland, four days before the battle of Newbury, wherein he was killed, wrote to his wife, that the king's affairs had never been in a more prosperous condition; that sitting down before Glocester had prevented *their finishing the war that year*, "which nothing could keep us from doing, if we had a month's more time." Sidney Letters, ii. 671. He alludes, in the same letters, to the divisions in the royal party.

certainly, at no period of the war, so deficient in numbers, discipline, and confidence; and it may well be thought, that the king's want of permanent resources, with his knowledge of the timidity and disunion which prevailed in the capital, rendered the boldest and most forward game his true policy.

It was natural that the moderate party in parliament should acquire strength by the untoward fortune of its arms. Their aim, as well as that of the constitutional royalists, was a speedy pacification; neither so much considering what terms might be most advantageous to their own side, as which way the nation might be freed from an incalculably protracted calamity. On the king's advance to Colnbrook, in November 1642, the two houses made an overture for negotiation, on which he expressed his readiness to enter. But, during the parley, some of his troops advanced to Brentford, and a sharp action took place in that town. The parliament affected to consider this such a mark of perfidy and bloodthirstiness, as justified them in breaking off the treaty; a step to which they were doubtless more inclined by the king's retreat, and their discovery that his army was less formidable than they had apprehended. It is very probable, or rather certain, even from Clarendon's account, that many about the king, if not himself, were sufficiently indisposed to negotiate; yet as no cessation of arms had been agreed upon, or even proposed, he cannot be said to have waved the unquestionable right of every belligerent, to obtain all possible advantage by arms, in order to treat for peace in a more favourable position. But as mankind are seldom reasonable in admitting such maxims against themselves, he seems to have injured his reputation by this affair of Brentford.

A treaty, from which many ventured to hope much, was begun early in the next spring at Oxford, after a struggle which had lasted through the winter within the walls of parliament*. But

* Parl. Hist. iii. 45. 48. It seems natural to think, that if the moderate party were able to contend so well against their opponents, after the desertion of a great many royalist members, who had joined the king, they would have maintained a decisive majority, had these continued in their places. But it is to be considered, on the

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

though the party of Pym and Hampden at Westminster were not able to prevent negotiation against the strong bent of the house of lords, and even of the city, which had been taught to lower its tone by the interruption of trade, and especially of the supply of coals from Newcastle; yet they were powerful enough to make the houses insist on terms not less unreasonable than those contained in their nineteen propositions the year before *. The king could not be justly expected to comply with these; but had they been more moderate, or if the parliament would have, in some measure, receded from them, we have every reason to conclude, both by the nature of the terms he proposed in return, and by the positive testimony of Clarendon, that he would not have come sincerely into any scheme of immediate accommodation. The reason assigned by that author for the unwillingness of Charles to agree on a cessation of arms during the negotiation, though it had been originally suggested by himself, and which reason would have been still more applicable to a treaty of peace, is one so strange, that it requires all the authority of one very unwilling to confess any weakness or duplicity of the king to be believed. He had made a solemn promise to the queen, on her departure for Holland the year before, "that he would receive no person who had disserved him into any favour or trust, without her privity and consent; and that as she had undergone many reproaches and calumnies at the entrance into the war, so he would never make any peace but by her interposition and mediation, that the kingdom might receive that blessing only from her †." Let this

other hand, that the king could never have raised an army, if he had not been able to rally the peers and gentry round his banner, and that in his army lay the real secret of the temporary strength of the pacific party.

* Parl. Hist. iii. 68. 94. Clarendon, May, Whitelock. If we believe the last (p. 68), the king, who took as usual a very active part in the discussions upon this treaty, would frequently have been inclined to come into an adjustment of terms, if some of the more warlike spirits about him, glancing apparently at Rupert, had not over persuaded his better judgment. This, however, does not accord with what Clarendon tells us of the queen's secret influence, nor indeed with all we have reason to believe of the king's disposition during the war.

† Life of Clarendon, p. 79. This induced the king to find pretexts for avoiding

be called, as the reader may please, the extravagance of romantic affection, or rather the height of pusillanimous and criminal subserviency, we cannot surely help acknowledging, that this one marked weakness in Charles's character, had there been nothing else to object, rendered the return of cordial harmony between himself and his people scarce within the bounds of natural possibility. In the equally balanced condition of both forces at this particular juncture, it may seem that some compromise on the great question of the militia was not impracticable, had the king been truly desirous of accommodation; for it is only just to remember, that the parliament had good reason to demand some security for themselves, when he had so peremptorily excluded several persons from amnesty. Both parties, in truth, were standing out for more than, either according to their situation as belligerents, or even perhaps according to the principles of our constitution, they could reasonably claim; the two houses having evidently no direct right to order the military force, nor the king, on the other hand, having a clear prerogative to keep on foot an army, which is not easily distinguishable from a militia, without consent of parliament. The most reasonable course, apparently, would have been for the one to have waved a dangerous and disputed authority, and the other to have desisted from a still more unconstitutional pretension; which was done by the bill of rights in 1689. The kingdom might have well dispensed, in that age, with any military organization: and this seems to have been the desire of Whitelock, and probably of other reasonable men. But,

the cessation, and was the real cause of his refusal to restore the earl of Northumberland to his post of lord admiral, during this treaty of Oxford, which was urged by Hyde. That peer was, at this time, and for several months afterwards, inclining to come over to the king; but on the bad success of Holland and Bedford in their change of sides, he gave into the opposite course of politics, and joined the party of lords Say and Wharton, in determined hostility to the king.

Dr. Lingard has lately thrown doubts upon this passage in Clarendon, but upon grounds which I do not clearly understand. Hist. of Engl. x. 208, note. That no vestige of its truth should appear, as he observes, in the private correspondence between Charles and his consort, (if he means the letters taken at Naseby, and I know no other) is not very singular; as the whole of that correspondence is of a much later date.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

unhappily, when swords are once drawn in civil war, they are seldom sheathed till experience has shown which blade is the sharper.

Though this particular instance of the queen's prodigious ascendancy over her husband remained secret till the publication of lord Clarendon's life, it was in general well known, and put the leaders of the commons on a remarkable stroke of policy, in order to prevent the renewal of negotiations. On her landing in the north, with a supply of money and arms, as well as with a few troops she had collected in Holland, they carried up to the lords an impeachment for high treason against her. This measure, so obnoxious was Henrietta, met with a less vigorous opposition than might be expected, though the moderate party was still in considerable force *. It was not only an insolence which a king, less uxorious than Charles, could never pardon; but a violation of the primary laws and moral sentiments that preserve human society, to which the queen was acting in obedience. Scarce any proceeding of the long parliament seems more odious than this; whether designed by way of intimidation, or to exasperate the king, and render the composure of existing differences more impracticable.

The enemies of peace were strengthened by the discovery of what is usually called Waller's plot, a scheme for making a strong demonstration of the royalist party in London, wherein several members of both houses appear to have been more or less concerned. Upon the detection of this conspiracy, the two houses of parliament took an oath not to lay down arms, so long as the

* I cannot discover in the Journals any division on this impeachment. But Hollis inveighs against it in his memoirs as one of the flagrant acts of St. John's party; and there is an account of the debate on this subject in the Somers Tracts, v. 500; whence it appears that it was opposed by Maynard, Waller, Whitelock, and others; but supported by Pym, Strode, Long, Glynn, and by Martin, with his usual fury and rudeness. The first of these carried up the impeachment to the house of lords.

This impeachment was not absolutely lost sight of for some time. In January 1644, the lords appointed a committee to consider what mode of proceeding for bringing the queen to trial was most agreeable to a parliamentary way, and to peruse precedents. Parl. Hist. 194.

papists now in arms should be protected from the justice of parliament; and never to adhere to, or willingly assist the forces raised by the king, without the consent of both houses. Every individual member of the peers and commons took this oath; some of them being then in secret concert with the king, and others entertaining intentions, as their conduct very soon evinced, of deserting to his side *. Such was the commencement of a system of perjury, which lasted for many years, and belies the pretended religion of that hypocritical age. But we may always look for this effect from oppressive power, and the imposition of political tests.

The king was now in a course of success, which made him rather hearken to the sanguine courtiers of Oxford, where, according to the invariable character of an exiled faction, every advantage or reverse brought on a disproportionate exultation or despondency, than to those better counsellors, who knew the precariousness of his good fortune. He published a declaration, wherein he denied the two houses at Westminster the name of a parliament; which he could no more take from them, after the bill he had passed, than they could deprive him of his royal title, and by refusing which he shut up all avenues to an equal peace †. This was soon followed by so extraordinary a political error, as manifests the king's want of judgment, and the utter improbability that any event of the war could have restored to England the blessings of liberty and repose. Three peers of the moderate party, the earls of Holland, Bedford, and Clare, dissatisfied with the preponderance of a violent faction in the commons, left their places at Westminster, and came into the king's quarters. It might be presumed, from general policy, as well as from his constant declarations of a desire to restore peace, that they would

* Parl. Hist. 129.

† Parl. Hist. 133, June 20. Clarendon, iv. 155. He published, however, a declaration soon after the taking of Bristol, containing full assurances of his determination to govern by the known laws. Parl. Hist. 144.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

have been received with such studied courtesy, as might serve to reconcile to their own minds a step, which when taken with the best intentions, is always equivocal and humiliating. There was great reason to believe that the earl of Northumberland, not only the first peer then in England as to family and fortune, but a man highly esteemed for prudence, was only waiting to observe the reception of those who went first to Oxford, before he followed their steps. There were even well founded hopes of the earl of Essex, who, though incapable of betraying his trust as commander of the parliament's army, was both from personal and public motives disinclined to the war-party in the commons. There was much to expect from all those who had secretly wished well to the king's cause, and from those whom it is madness to reject or insult, the followers of fortune, the worshippers of power, without whom neither fortune nor power can long subsist. Yet such was the state of Charles's council-board at Oxford, that some were for arresting these proselyte earls; and it was carried with difficulty, after they had been detained some time at Wallingford, that they might come to the court. But they met there with so many and such general slights, that though they fought in the king's army at Newbury, they found their position intolerably ignominious; and after about three months, returned to the parliament with many expressions of repentance, and strong testimonies to the evil counsels of Oxford *.

* Clarendon, iv. 192. 262. Whitelock, 70. They met with a worse reception at Westminster than at Oxford, as indeed they had reason to expect. A motion, that the earl of Holland should be sent to the Tower, was lost in the commons by only one voice. Parl. Hist. 180. They were provoked at his taking his seat without permission. After long refusing to consent, the lords agreed to an ordinance, June 29, 1644, that no peer or commoner, who had been in the king's quarters, should be admitted again to sit in either house. Parl. Hist. 271. This severity was one cause of Essex's discontent, which was increased when the commons refused him leave to take Holland with him on his expedition into the west that summer. Baillie, i. 426. Whitelock, 87. If it be asked why this Roman rigour was less impolitic in the parliament than in the king, I can only answer, that the stronger and the weaker have different measures to pursue. But relatively to the pacification of the kingdom, upon such terms as fellow-citizens ought to require from each other, it was equally blamable in both parties, or rather more so in that possessed of the greater power.

The king seems to have been rather passive in this strange piece of impolicy, but by no means to have taken the line that became him, of repressing the selfish jealousy, or petty revengefulness of his court. If the earl of Holland was a man, whom both he and the queen, on the score of his great obligations to them, might justly reproach with some ingratitude, there was nothing to be excepted against the other two, save their continuance at Westminster, and compliance in votes that he disliked. And if this were to be visited by neglect and discountenance, there could, it was plain, be no reconciliation between him and the parliament. For who could imagine that men of courage and honour, while possessed of any sort of strength, and any hopes of preserving it, would put up with a mere indemnity for their lives and fortunes, subject to be reckoned as pardoned traitors, who might thank the king for his clemency, without presuming to his favour? Charles must have seen his superiority consolidated by repeated victories, before he could prudently assume this tone of conquest. Inferior in substantial force, notwithstanding his transient advantages, to the parliament, he had no probability of regaining his station, but by defections from their banner; and these, with incredible folly, he seemed to decline: far unlike his illustrious father-in-law, who had cordially embraced the leaders of a rebellion much more implacable than the present. For the Oxford counsellors and courtiers, who set themselves against the reception of the three earls, besides their particular animosity towards the earl of Holland*, and that general feelingof disdain and distrust, which, as Clarendon finely observes, seems by nature attached to all de-

* It is intimated by Clarendon, that some at Oxford, probably Jermyn and Digby, were jealous of Holland's recovering the influence he had possessed with the queen, who seems to have retained no resentment against him. As to Bedford and Clare, they would probably have been better received, if not accompanied by so obnoxious an intriguer of the old court. This seems to account for the unanimity which the historian describes to have been shown in the council against their favourable reception. Light and passionate tempers, like that of Henrietta, are prone to forget injuries; serious and melancholic ones, like that of Charles, never lose sight of them.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

sertion and inconstancy, whether in politics or religion, even among those who reap the advantage of it, and when founded upon what they ought to reckon the soundest reasons, there seems ground to suspect, that they had deeper and more selfish designs than they cared to manifest. They had long beset the king with solicitations for titles, offices, pensions; but these were necessarily too limited for their cravings. They had sustained, many of them, great losses; they had performed real or pretended services for the king; and it is probable that they looked to a confiscation of enemies' property for their indemnification or reward. This would account for an averseness to all overtures for peace, as decided, at this period, among a great body of the cavaliers, as it was with the factions of Pym or Vane.

These factions were now become finally predominant at Westminster. On the news that prince Rupert had taken Bristol, the last and most serious loss that the parliament sustained, the lords agreed on propositions for peace to be sent to the king, of an unusually moderate tone *. The commons, on a division of 94 to 65, determined to take them into consideration; but the lord mayor Pennington having procured an address of the city against peace, backed by a tumultuous mob, a small majority was obtained against concurring with the other house †. It was after this that the lords above-mentioned, as well as many of the commons, quitted Westminster. The prevailing party had no thoughts of peace,

* Baillie deplores at this time "the horrible fears and confusions in the city, the king every where being victorious. In the city, a strong and insolent party for him," p. 391. "The malignants stirred a multitude of women of the meaner and more infamous rank to come to the door of both houses, and cry tumultuously for peace on any terms. This tumult could not be suppressed but by violence, and killing some three or four women, and hurting some of them, and imprisoning many," p. 300.

† Lords and Commons' Journals. Parl. Hist. 156, &c. Clarendon, iv. 183. Hollis's Memoirs. Hollis was a teller for the majority on this occasion; he had left the warlike party some months (Baillie, i. 356), and his name is in the journals repeatedly, from November 1642, as teller against them; though he is charged with having said the year before, that he abhorred the name of accommodation. Mrs. Hutchinson, p. 296. Though a very honest, and to a certain extent, an able man, he was too much carried away by personal animosities; and as these shifted, his principles shifted also.

till they could dictate its conditions. Through Essex's great success in raising the siege of Glocester, the most distinguished exploit in his military life, and the battle of Newbury, wherein the advantage was certainly theirs, they became secure against any important attack on the king's side, the war turning again to endless sieges and skirmishes of partizans. They now adopted two important measures, one of which gave a new complexion to the quarrel.

Littleton, the lord keeper of the great seal, had carried it away with him to the king. This of itself put a stop to the regular course of the executive government, and to the administration of justice within the parliament's quarters. No employments could be filled up, no writs for election of members issued, no commissions for holding the assizes completed, without the indispensable formality of affixing the great seal. It must surely excite a smile, that men who had raised armies, and fought battles against the king, should be perplexed how to get over so technical a difficulty. But the great seal, in the eyes of English lawyers, has a sort of mysterious efficacy, and passes for the depository of royal authority in a higher degree than the person of the king. The commons prepared an ordinance in July, for making a new great seal, in which the lords could not be induced to concur till October. The royalists, and the king himself, exclaimed against this, as the most audacious treason, though it may be reckoned a very natural consequence of the state in which the parliament was placed; and in the subsequent negotiations, it was one of the minor points in dispute, whether he should authorise the proceedings under the great seal of the two houses, or they consent to sanction what had been done by virtue of his own.

The second measure of parliament was of greater moment, and more fatal consequences. I have already mentioned the stress laid by the bigoted Scots presbyterians on the establishment of their own church-government in England. Chiefly, perhaps, to conciliate this people, the house of commons had enter-

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

tained the bill for abolishing episcopacy, and this had formed a part of the nineteen propositions that both houses tendered to the king*. After the action at Brentford, they concurred in a declaration to be delivered to the Scots commissioners, resident in London, wherein, after setting forth the malice of the prelatical clergy in hindering the reformation of ecclesiastical government, and professing their own desire willingly and affectionately to pursue a closer union in such matters between the two nations, they request their brethren of Scotland to raise such forces as they should judge sufficient for the securing the peace of their own borders against ill-affected persons there; as likewise, to assist them in suppressing the army of papists and foreigners, which, it was expected, would shortly be on foot in England †.

This overture produced for many months no sensible effect. The Scots, with all their national wariness, suspected, that in spite of these general declarations in favour of their church polity, it was not much at heart with most of the parliament, and might be given up in a treaty, if the king would concede some other matters in dispute. Accordingly, when the progress of his arms, especially in the north, during the ensuing summer, compelled the parliament to call in a more pressing manner, and by a special embassy, for their aid, they resolved to bind them down by such a compact as no wavering policy should ever rescind. They insisted, therefore, on the adoption of the solemn league and covenant, founded on a similar association of their own, five years before, through which they had successfully resisted the king, and overthrown the prelatic government. The covenant consisted in an oath to be subscribed by all sorts of persons in both kingdoms, whereby they bound themselves to preserve the reformed religion in the church of Scotland, in doctrine, worship, discipline,

* The resolution, that government by archbishops, bishops, &c. was inconvenient, and ought to be taken away, passed both houses unanimously, September 10, 1642. Parl. Hist. ii. 1465. But the ordinance to carry this fully into effect was not made till October, 1646. Scobell's Ordinances.

† Parl. Hist. iii. 15.

and government, according to the word of God, and practice of the best reformed churches; and to endeavour to bring the churches of God in the three kingdoms to the nearest conjunction and uniformity in religion, confession of faith, form of church-government, directory for worship, and catechizing: to endeavour, without respect of persons, the extirpation of popery, prelacy (that is, church-government by archbishops, bishops, their chancellors and commissaries, deans and chapters, archdeacons, and all other ecclesiastical officers depending on that hierarchy), and whatsoever should be found contrary to sound doctrine and the power of godliness: to preserve the rights and privileges of the parliaments, and the liberties of the kingdoms, and the king's person and authority, in the preservation and defence of the true religion and liberties of the kingdoms: to endeavour the discovery of incendiaries and malignants, who hinder the reformation of religion, and divide the king from his people, that they may be brought to punishment: finally, to assist and defend all such as should enter into this covenant, and not suffer themselves to be withdrawn from it, whether to revolt to the opposite party, or to give into a detestable indifference or neutrality. In conformity to the strict alliance thus established between the two kingdoms, the Scots commissioners at Westminster were intrusted, jointly with a committee of both houses, with very extensive powers to administer the public affairs *.

Every member of the commons who remained at Westminster, to the number of 228, or perhaps more, and from 20 to 30 peers that formed their upper house †, subscribed this deliberate pledge

* This committee, appointed in February 1644, consisted of the following persons, the most conspicuous, at that time, of the parliament: the earls of Northumberland, Essex, Warwick, and Manchester; lords Say, Wharton, and Roberts; Mr. Pierrepont, the two sir Henry Vanes, sir Philip Stapylton, sir William Waller, sir Gilbert Gerrard, sir William Armyn, sir Arthur Haslerig; Messrs. Crew, Wallop, St. John, Cromwell, Brown, and Glynn. Parl. Hist. 3. 218.

† Somers Tracts, iv. 533. The names marked in the Parliamentary History as having taken the covenant, are 236.

The earl of Lincoln alone, a man of great integrity and moderation, though only conspicuous in the journals, refused to take the covenant, and was excluded in consequence from his seat in the house:

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

to overturn the established church; many of them with extreme reluctance, both from a dislike of the innovation, and from a consciousness that it raised a most formidable obstacle to the restoration of peace; but with a secret reserve, for which some want of precision in the language of this covenant, purposely introduced by Vane, as is said, to shelter his own schemes, afforded them a sort of apology *. It was next imposed on all civil and military officers, and upon all the beneficed clergy †. A severe persecution fell on the faithful children of the Anglican church. Many had already been sequestered from their livings, or even subjected to imprisonment, by the parliamentary committee for scandalous ministers, or by subordinate committees of the same kind set up in each county within their quarters, sometimes on the score of immoralities or false doctrine, more frequently for what they termed malignity, or attachment to the king and his party ‡. Yet wary men who meddled not with politics, might

but on his petition next year, though as far as appears, without compliance, was restored, and the vote rescinded. Parl. Hist. 393. He regularly protested against all violent measures, and we still find his name in the minority on such occasions after the Restoration.

Baillie says, the desertion of about six peers at this time to the king, was of great use to the passing of the covenant in *a legal way*, vol. i. p. 390.

* Burnet's Mem. of Duke of Hamilton, p. 239. I am not quite satisfied as to this, which later writers seem to have taken from Burnet. It may well be supposed, that the ambiguity of the covenant was not very palpable, since the Scots presbyterians, a people not easily cozened, were content with its expression. According to fair and honest rules of interpretation, it certainly bound the subscribers to the establishment of a church government conformed to that of Scotland; namely, the presbyterian, exclusive of all mixture with any other. But Selden, and the other friends of moderate episcopacy who took the covenant, justified it, I suppose, to their consciences, by the pretext that, in renouncing the jurisdiction of bishops, they meant the unlimited jurisdiction without concurrence of any presbyters. It was not, however, an action on which they could reflect with pleasure. Baxter says, that Gataker, and some others of the assembly, would not subscribe the covenant, but on the understanding that they did not renounce primitive episcopacy by it. Life, p. 48. These controversial subtleties elude the ordinary reader of history.

† After the war was ended, none of the king's party were admitted to compound for their estates, without taking the covenant. This Clarendon, in one of his letters, calls "making haste to buy damnation at two years' purchase," vol. ii. p. 286. Yet there must be some term to resistance.

‡ Neal, ii. 19, &c., is fair enough in censuring the committees, especially those in the country. "The greatest part [of the clergy] were cast out for malignity [attachment to the royal cause]; superstition and false doctrine were hardly ever

hope to elude this inquisition. But the covenant, imposed as a general test, drove out all who were too conscientious to pledge themselves by a solemn appeal to the Deity to resist the polity which they generally believed to be of his institution. What number of the clergy were ejected, most of them but for refusing the covenant, and for no moral offence or imputed superstition, it is impossible to ascertain. Walker, in his Sufferings of the Clergy, a folio volume published in the latter end of Anne's reign, with all the virulence and partiality of the high-church faction in that age, endeavoured to support those who had reckoned it at 8000; a palpable over-statement upon his own showing, for he cannot produce near 2000 names, after a most diligent investigation. Neal, however, admits 1600, probably more than one-fifth of the beneficed ministers in the kingdom *. The biographical collections furnish a pretty copious martyrology of men the most distinguished by their learning and virtues in that age. The remorseless and indiscriminate bigotry of presbyterianism might boast that it had heaped disgrace on Walton, and driven Lydiat

objected; yet the proceedings of the sequestrators were not always justifiable; for whereas a court of judicature should rather be counsel for the prisoner than the prosecutor, the commissioners considered the king's clergy as their most dangerous enemies, and were ready to lay hold of all opportunities to discharge them their pulpits," p. 24. But if we can rely at all on White's Century of Malignant Ministers, and I do not perceive that Walker has been able to controvert it, there were a good many cases of irregular life in the clergy, so far at least as haunting alehouses; which, however, was much more common, and consequently less indecent in that age, than at present. See also Baxter's Life, p. 74; whose authority, though open to some exceptions on the score of prejudice, is at least better than Walker's.

The king's party were not less oppressive towards ministers whom they reckoned puritan, which unluckily comprehended most of those who were of strict lives, especially if they preached Calvinistically, unless they redeemed that suspicion by strong demonstrations of loyalty. Neal, p. 21. Baxter's Life, p. 42. And if they put themselves forward on this side, they were sure to suffer most severely for it on the parliament's success; an ordinance of April 1, 1643, having sequestered the private estates of all the clergy who had aided the king. Thus the condition of the English clergy was every way most deplorable, and in fact they were utterly ruined.

* Neal, p. 93. He says it was not tendered, by favour, to some of the clergy who had not been active against the parliament, and were reputed Calvinists, p. 59. Sanderson is said to be one instance. This historian, an honest and well-natured man at bottom, justly censures its imposition.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

to beggary; that it trampled on the old age of Hales, and embittered with insult the dying moments of Chillingworth.

But the most unjustifiable act of these zealots, and one of the greatest reproaches of the long parliament, was the death of archbishop Laud. In the first days of the session, while the fall of Strafford struck every one with astonishment, the commons had carried up an impeachment against him for high treason, in fourteen articles of charge; and he had lain ever since in the Tower, his revenues, and even private estate sequestered, and in great indigence. After nearly three years' neglect, specific articles were exhibited against him in October 1643, but not proceeded in with vigour till December 1644, when, for whatever reason, a determination was taken to pursue this unfortunate prelate to death. The charges against him, which Wild, Maynard, and other managers of the impeachment, were to aggravate into treason, related partly to those papistical innovations which had nothing of a political character about them, partly of the violent proceedings in the star-chamber and high-commission courts, wherein Laud was very prominent as a counsellor, but certainly without any greater legal responsibility than fell on many others. He defended himself, not always prudently or satisfactorily, but with courage and ability; never receding from his magnificent notions of spiritual power, but endeavouring to shift the blame of the sentences pronounced by the council on those who concurred with him. The imputation of popery he repelled by a list of the converts he had made; but the word was equivocal, and he could not deny the difference between his protestantism, and that of our reformation. Nothing could be more monstrous than the allegation of treason in this case. The judges, on a reference by the lords, gave it to be understood, in their timid way, that the charges contained no legal treason *. But the commons having

* "All the judges answered that they could deliver no opinion in this case, in point of treason, by the law, because they could not deliver any opinion in point

changed their impeachment into an ordinance for his execution, the peers were pusillanimous enough to comply. It is said by Clarendon, that only seven lords were in the house on this occasion: but the journals unfortunately bear witness to the presence of twenty *. Laud had amply merited punishment for his tyrannical abuse of power; but his execution at the age of seventy, without the slightest pretence of political necessity, was a far more unjustifiable instance of it, than any that was alleged against him.

In pursuance of this treaty, the Scots army of 21,000 men marched into England in January 1644. This was a very serious accession to Charles's difficulties, already sufficient to dissipate all hopes of final triumph, except in the most sanguine minds. His successes, in fact, had been rather such as to surprise well-judging men, than to make them expect any more favourable termination of the war than by a fair treaty. From the beginning, it may be said, that the yeomanry and trading classes of towns were generally hostile to the king's side, even in those counties which were in his military occupation, except in a few, such as Cornwall, Worcester, Salop, and most of Wales, where the prevailing sentiment was chiefly royalist †; and this disaffection was

of treason, but what was particularly expressed to be treason in the statute of 25 E. III., and so referred it wholly to the judgment of this house." Lords' Journals, 17th December, 1644.

* Lords' Journals, 4th January. It is not said to be done nem. con.

† "The difference in the temper of the common people of both sides was so great, that they who inclined to the parliament left nothing unperformed that might advance the cause, whereas they who wished well to the king thought they had performed their duty in doing so; and that they had done enough for him, in that they had done nothing against him." Clarendon, p. 3. 452. "Most of the gentry of the county (Nottinghamshire)," says Mrs. Hutchinson, "were disaffected to the parliament; most of the middle sort, the able substantial freeholders of the other commons, who had not their dependence upon the malignant nobility and gentry, adhered to the parliament," p. 81. This I conceive to have been the case in much the greater part of England. Baxter, in his Life, p. 30, says just the same thing, in a passage worthy of notice. But the Worcestershire populace, he says, were violent royalists, p. 39. Clarendon observes in another place, iii. 41. "There was in this county (Cornwall), as throughout the kingdom, a wonderful and superstitious reverence towards the name of a parliament, and a prejudice to the power of the court." He afterwards, p. 436, calls "an implicit reverence to the name of a parliament, the fatal disease of the whole kingdom." So prevalent was the sense of the king's arbitrary government, especially in the case of ship-money. Warburton remarks, that he never expressed any repentance, or made any confession in his public

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

prodigiously increased through the license of his ill-paid and ill-disciplined army. On the other hand, the gentry were, in a great majority, attached to his cause, even in the parts of England which lay subject to the parliament. But he was never able to make any durable impression on what were called the associated counties, extending from Norfolk to Sussex inclusively, within which no rising could be attempted with any effect*: while on the other hand, the parliament possessed several garrisons, and kept up considerable forces in that larger portion of the kingdom where he might be reckoned superior. Their resources were far greater, and the taxes imposed by them, though exceedingly heavy, more regularly paid, and less ruinous to the people, than the sudden exactions, half plunder, half contribution, of the ravenous cavaliers. The king lost ground during the winter. He had built hopes on bringing over troops from Ireland, for the sake of which he made a truce, then called the cessation, with the rebel catholics; but this reinforcement having been beaten and dispersed by Fairfax at Namptwich, he had the mortification of finding that this scheme had much increased his own unpopularity, and the distrust entertained of him even by his adherents, without the smallest advantage. The next campaign was marked by the great defeat of Rupert and Newcastle at Marston Moor, and the loss of the north of England; a blow so terrible as must have brought on his speedy ruin, if it had not been in some degree mitigated by his strange and unexpected success over Essex in the west, and by the tardiness of the Scots in making use of their victory. Upon the result of the campaign of 1644, the king's affairs were in so bad condition, that nothing less than a series of victories

declarations, that his former administration had been illegal. Notes on Clarendon, p. 566. But this was not, perhaps, to be expected; and his repeated promises to govern according to law might be construed into tacit acknowledgments of past errors.

* The associated counties, properly speaking, were at first Norfolk, Suffolk, Essex, Hertford, Cambridge; to which some others were added. Sussex, I believe, was not a part of the association; but it was equally within the parliamentary pale, though the gentry were remarkably loyal in their inclinations. The same was true of Kent.

could have reinstated them, yet not so totally ruined as to hold out much prospect of an approaching termination to the people's calamities.

There had been, from the very commencement of the war, all that distraction in the king's councils at Oxford, and all those bickerings and heart-burnings among his adherents, which naturally belong to men embarked in a dangerous cause, with different motives and different views. The military men, some of whom had served with the Swedes in Germany, acknowledged no laws but those of war, and could not understand, that either in annoying the enemy, or providing for themselves, they were to acknowledge any restraints of the civil power. The lawyers, on the other hand, and the whole constitutional party, laboured to keep up, in the midst of arms, the appearances at least of legal justice, and that favourite maxim of Englishmen, the supremacy of civil over military authority, rather more strictly, perhaps, than the nature of their actual circumstances would admit. At the head of the former party stood the king's two nephews, Rupert and Maurice, the younger sons of the late unfortunate elector palatine, soldiers of fortune, as we may truly call them, of rude and imperious characters, avowedly despising the council and the common law, and supported by Charles, with all his injudiciousness and incapacity for affairs, against the greatest men of the kingdom. Another very powerful and obnoxious faction was that of the catholics, proud of their services and sacrifices, confident in the queen's protection, and looking at least to a full toleration as their just reward. They were the natural enemies of peace, and little less hated at Oxford than at Westminster *.

* Clarendon, passim. May, 160. Baillie, i. 416. See, in the Somers Tracts, v. 495, a dialogue between a gentleman and a citizen, printed at Oxford, 1643. Though of course a royalist pamphlet, it shows the disunion that prevailed in that unfortunate party, and inveighs against the influence of the papists, in consequence of which the marquis of Hertford is said to have declined the king's service. Rupert is praised, and Newcastle struck at. It is written, on the whole, in rather a lukewarm style of loyalty. The earl of Holland, and sir Edward Dering, gave out as their reason for quitting the king's side, that there was great danger of popery. This was much exaggerated;

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

At the beginning of the winter of 1643, the king took the remarkable step of summoning the peers and commoners of his party to meet in parliament at Oxford. This was evidently suggested by the constitutionalists with the intention of obtaining a supply by more regular methods than forced contribution, and of opposing a barrier to the military and popish interests *. Whether it were equally calculated to further the king's cause, may admit of some doubt. The royalist convention, indeed, which name it ought rather to have taken than that of parliament, met in considerable strength at Oxford. Forty-three peers, and one hundred and eighteen commoners, subscribed a letter to the earl of Essex, expressing their anxiety for a treaty of peace; twenty-nine of the former, and fifty-seven of the latter, it is said, being then absent on the king's service, or other occasions †. Such a display of numbers, nearly double in one house, and nearly half in the

yet lord Sunderland talks the same language. Sidney Papers, ii. 667. Lord Falkland's dejection of spirits, and constant desire of peace, must chiefly be ascribed to his disgust with the councils of Oxford, and the greater part of those with whom he was associated.

> E quel che più ti graverà le spalle
> Sarà la compagnia malvagia e ria,
> Nella quel tu cadrai in questa valle.

We know too little of this excellent man, whose talents, however, and early pursuits, do not seem to have particularly qualified him for public life. It is evident that he did not plunge into the loyal cause with all the zeal of his friend Hyde; and the king doubtless had no great regard for the counsels of one who took so very different a view of some important matters from himself. Life of Clarendon, 48. He had been active against Strafford, and probably had a bad opinion of Laud. The prosecution of Finch for high treason he had himself moved. In the Ormond Letters, i. 20, he seems to be struck at by one writing from Oxford, June 1, 1643; "God forbid that the best of men and kings be so used by some bad hollow-hearted counsellors, who affect too much the parliamentary way. Many spare not to name them, and I doubt not but you have heard their names."

* It appears by the late edition of Clarendon, iv. 351, that he was the adviser of calling the Oxford parliament. The former editors omit his name.

† Parl. Hist. 218. The number who took the covenant appears by a list of the long parliament in the same work, vol. ii. to be 236; but twelve of these are included in both lists, having gone afterwards into the king's quarters. The remainder, about 100, were either dead since the beginning of the troubles, or for some reason absented themselves from both assemblies. Possibly the list of those who took the covenant is not quite complete; nor do I think the king had much more than about sixty peers on his side. The parliament, however, could not have produced thirty. Lords' Journals, Jan. 22, 1644. Whitelock, p. 80, says that two hundred and eighty appeared in the house of commons, Jan. 1644, besides one hundred absent in the parliament's service; but this cannot be quite exact.

other, of those who remained at Westminster, might have an effect on the nation's prejudices, and at least redeem the king from the charge of standing singly against his parliament. But they came in no spirit of fervid loyalty, rather distrustful of the king, especially on the score of religion, averse to some whom he had injudiciously raised to power, such as Digby and Cottington, and so eager for pacification, as not perhaps to have been unwilling to purchase it by greater concessions than he could prudently make *. Peace, however, was by no means brought nearer by their meeting; the parliament, jealous and alarmed at it, would never recognize their existence; and were so provoked at their voting the lords and commons at Westminster guilty of treason, that if we believe a writer of high authority, the two houses unanimously passed a vote on Essex's motion, summoning the king to appear by a certain day †. But the Scots commissioners had force enough to turn aside such violent suggestions, and ultimately obtained the concurrence of both houses in propositions for a treaty ‡. They had begun to find themselves less likely to sway the councils of Westminster than they had expected, and dreaded the rising ascendancy of Cromwell. The treaty was opened at Uxbridge in January 1645. But neither the king nor his adversaries en[illegible] on it with minds sincerely bent on peace;

* Rushworth Abr. v. 266, and 296; where is an address to the king, intimating, if attentively considered, a little apprehension of popery and arbitrary power. Baillie says, in one of his letters, "The first day the Oxford parliament met, the king made a long speech; but many being ready to give in papers for the removing of Digby, Cottington, and others from court, the meeting was adjourned for some days," i. 429. Indeed, the restoration of Cottington, and still more of Windebank, to the king's councils, was no pledge of protestant or constitutional measures. This opposition, so natural to parliaments in any circumstances, disgusted Charles. In one of his letters to the queen, he congratulates himself on being "freed from the place of all mutinous motions, his mongrel parliament." It may be presumed, that some of those who obeyed the king's summons to Oxford, were influenced less by loyalty than a consideration that their estates lay in parts occupied by his troops; of course the same is applicable to the Westminster parliament.

† Baillie, 441. I can find no mention of this in the Journals; but as Baillie was then in London, and in constant intercourse with the leaders of parliament, there must have been some foundation for his statement, though he seems to have been inaccurate as to the fact of the vote.

‡ Parl. Hist. 299, et post. Clarendon, v. 16. Whitelock, 110, &c. Rushw. Abr. v. 449, &c.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

they, on the one hand, resolute not to swerve from the utmost rigour of a conqueror's terms, without having conquered; and he, though more secretly, cherishing illusive hopes of a more triumphant restoration to power than any treaty could be expected to effect*.

The three leading topics of discussion among the negotiators at Uxbridge, were the church, the militia, and the state of Ireland. Bound by their unhappy covenant, and watched by their Scots colleagues, the English commissioners on the parliament's side demanded the complete establishment of a presbyterian polity, and the substitution of what was called the directory for the Anglican liturgy. Upon this head, there was little prospect of a union. The king had deeply imbibed the tenets of Andrews and Laud, believing an episcopal government was indispensably necessary to the valid administration of the sacraments, and the very existence of a christian church. The Scots, and a portion of the English clergy, were equally confident that their presbyterian form was established by the apostles, as a divine model, from which it was unlawful to depart †. Though most of the laity

* It was impossible for the king to avoid this treaty. Not only his Oxford parliament, as might naturally be expected, were openly desirous of peace, but a great part of the army had, in August 1644, while opposed to that of Essex in the west, taken the extraordinary step of sending a letter to that general, declaring their intentions for the rights and liberties of the people, privileges of parliament, and protestant religion against popish innovations; and that on the faith of subjects, the honour and reputation of gentlemen and soldiers, they would with their lives maintain that which his majesty should publicly promise, in order to a bloodless peace; they went on to request that Essex, with six more, would meet the general (earl of Brentford) with six more, to consider of all means possible to reconcile the unhappy differences and misunderstandings that have so long afflicted the kingdom. Sir Edward Walker's Historical D' ourses, 59. The king was acquainted with this letter before it was sent, but after some hands had been subscribed to it. He consented, but evidently with great reluctance, and even indignation; as his own expressions testify in this passage of Walker, whose manuscript here, as in many other places, contains interlineations by Charles himself. It was doubtless rather in a mutinous spirit, which had spread widely through the army, and contributed to its utter ruin in the next campaign. I presume it was at the king's desire that the letter was signed by the general, as well as by prince Maurice, and all the colonels, I believe, in his army, to take off the appearance of a faction; but it certainly originated with Wilmot, Percy, and some of those whom he thought ill affected. See Clarendon, iv. 527, et post. Rushw. Abr. v. 348. 358.

† The king's doctors, Steward and Sheldon, argued at Uxbridge that episcopacy was jure divino; Henderson and others that

in this kingdom entertained less narrow opinions, the parliamentary commissioners thought the king ought rather to concede such a point than themselves, especially as his former consent to the abolition of episcopacy in Scotland weakened a good deal the force of his plea of conscience; while the royalists, even could they have persuaded their master, thought episcopacy, though not absolutely of divine right (a notion which they left to the churchmen) yet so highly beneficial to religion, and so important to the monarchy, that nothing less than extreme necessity, or at least the prospect of a signal advantage, could justify its abandonment. They offered, however, what in an earlier stage of their dissensions would have satisfied almost every man, that limited scheme of episcopal hierarchy, above-mentioned as approved by Usher, rendering the bishop among his presbyters much like the king in parliament, not free to exercise his jurisdiction, nor to confer orders without their consent, and offered to leave all ceremonies to the minister's discretion. Such a compromise would probably have pleased the English nation, averse to nothing in their established church, except its abuses; but the parliamentary negotiators would not so much as enter into discussion upon it*.

They were hardly less unyielding on the subject of the militia. They began with a demand of naming all the commanders by sea and land, including the lord-lieutenant of Ireland, and all governors of garrisons, for an unlimited time. The king, though not very willingly, proposed that the command should be vested in twenty persons, half to be named by himself, half by the parlia-

presbytery was so. Whitelock, 132. These churchmen should have been locked up like a jury, without food or fire, till they agreed.

If we may believe Clarendon, the earl of Loudon offered in the name of the Scots, that if the king would give up episcopacy, they would not press any of the other demands. It is certain, however, that they would never have suffered him to become the master of the English parliament; and if this offer was sincerely made, it must have been from a conviction that he could not become such.

* Rushworth, Whitelock, Clarendon. The latter tells us in his life, which reveals several things not found in his history, that the king was very angry with some of his Uxbridge commissioners, especially Mr. Bridgman, for making too great concessions with respect to episcopacy. He lived, however, to make himself much greater.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

ment, for the term of three years, which he afterwards extended to seven; at the expiration of which time it should revert to the crown. But the utmost concession that could be obtained from the other side was to limit their exclusive possession of this power to seven years, leaving the matter open for an ulterior arrangement by act of parliament at their termination *. Even if this treaty had been conducted between two belligerent states, whom rivalry or ambition often excite to press every demand which superior power can extort from weakness, there yet was nothing in the condition of the king's affairs which should compel him thus to pass under the yoke, and enter his capital as a prisoner. But we may also remark, that, according to the great principle, that the English constitution, in all its component parts, was to be maintained by both sides in this contest, the question for parliament was not what their military advantages or resources for war entitled them to ask, but what was required for the due balance of power under a limited monarchy. They could rightly demand no further concession from the king, than was indispensable for their own and the people's security; and I leave any one who is tolerably acquainted with the state of England at the beginning of 1645, to decide, whether their privileges and the public liberties incurred a greater risk, by such an equal partition of power over the sword, as the king proposed, than his prerogative and personal freedom would have encountered by abandoning it altogether to their discretion. I am far from thinking that the acceptance of the king's propositions at Uxbridge would have restored tranquillity to England. He would still have repined at the limitations of monarchy, and others would have conspired against its existence. But of the various consequences which we may picture to ourselves as capable of resulting from a pacification, that which appears to me the least likely is, that Charles should have re-established that arbitrary power which he had

* Whitelock, 133.

exercised in the earlier period of his reign. Whither, in fact, was he to look for assistance? Was it with such creatures of a court as Jermyn or Ashburnham, or with a worn out veteran of office, like Cottington, or a rash adventurer, like Digby, that he could outwit Vane, or overawe Cromwell, or silence the press and the pulpit, or strike with panic the stern puritan and the confident fanatic? Some there were beyond question, both soldiers and courtiers, who hated the very name of a limited monarchy, and murmured at the constitutional language which the king, from the time he made use of the pens of Hyde and Falkland, had systematically employed in his public declarations *. But it is as certain, that the great majority of his Oxford parliament, and of those upon whom he must have depended, either in the field or in council, were apprehensive of any victory that might render him absolute, as that Essex and Manchester were unwilling to conquer at the expense of the constitution †. The catholics indeed, generally speaking, would have gone great lengths in asserting his authority. Nor is this any reproach to that body, by no means naturally less attached to their country and its liberties than other Englishmen, but driven by an unjust persecution to

* The creed of this party is set forth in the Behemoth of Hobbes, which is, in other words, the application of those principles of government which are laid down in the Leviathan, to the constitution and state of England in the civil war. It is republished in Baron Maseres's Tracts, ii. 565, 567. Sir Philip Warwick, in his Memoirs, 198, hints something of the same kind.

† Warburton, in the notes subjoined to the late edition of Clarendon, vii. 563, mentions a conversation he had with the duke of Argyle and lord Cobham, (both soldiers, and the first a distinguished one), as to the conduct of the king and the earl of Essex after the battle of Edgehill. They agreed it was inexplicable on both sides by any military principle. Warburton explained it by the unwillingness to be *too victorious*, felt by Essex himself, and by those whom the king was forced to consult. Father Orleans, in a passage with which the bishop, probably, was acquainted, confirms this; and his authority is very good as to the secret of the court. Rupert, he says, proposed to march to London. Mais l'esprit Anglois, qui ne se dement point même dans les plus attachés à la royauté, l'esprit Anglois, dis je, toujours entêté de ces libertéz si funestes au repos de la nation, porta la plus grande partie du conseil à s'opposer à ce dessein. Le pretexte fut qu'il etoit dangereux pour le roy de l'entreprendre, et pour la ville que le prince Robert l'executâst, jeune comme il etoit, emporté, et capable d'y mettre le feu. La vraie raison etoit qu'ils craignoient que si le roy entroit dans Londres les armes à la main, il ne pretendist sur la nation une espece de droit de conquête, qui le rendist trop absolu. Revolut. d'Angleterre, iii. 104.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

see their only hope of emancipation in the nation's servitude. They could not be expected to sympathize in that patriotism of the seventeenth century, which, if it poured warmth and radiance on the protestant, was to them as a devouring fire. But the king could have made no use of the catholics, as a distinct body, for any political purpose, without uniting all other parties against him. He had already given so much offence, at the commencement of the war, by accepting the services which the catholic gentry were forward to offer, that instead of a more manly justification, which the temper of the times, he thought, did not permit, he had recourse to the useless subterfuges of denying or extenuating the facts, and even to a strangely improbable recrimination; asserting, on several occasions, that the number of papists in the parliament's army was much greater than in his own *.

It may still indeed be questioned, whether, admitting the propositions tendered to the king to have been unreasonable and insecure, it might not yet have been expedient, in the perilous condition of his affairs, rather to have tried the chances of peace than those of war. If he could have determined frankly and without reserve to have relinquished the church, and called the leaders of the presbyterian party in both houses to his councils, it is impossible to prove that he might not both have regained his power over the militia in no long course of time, and prevailed on the

* Rushworth Abr. iv. 550. At the very time that he was publicly denying his employment of papists, he wrote to Newcastle, commanding him to make use of all his subjects' services, without examining their consciences, except as to loyalty. Ellis's Letters, iii. 291, from an original in the Museum. No one can rationally blame Charles for any thing in this, but his inveterate and useless habit of falsehood. See Clarendon, iii. 610.

It is probable that some foreign catholics were in the parliament's service. But Dodd says, with great appearance of truth, that no one English gentleman of that persuasion was in arms on their side. Church History of Engl. iii. 28. He reports as a matter of hearsay, that out of about five hundred gentlemen who lost their lives for Charles in the civil war, one hundred and ninety-four were catholics. They were doubtless a very powerful faction in the court and army. Lord Spencer, (afterwards earl of Sunderland), in some remarkable letters to his wife from the king's quarters at Shrewsbury, in September, 1642, speaks of the insolency of the papists with great dissatisfaction. Sidney Papers, ii. 667.

parliament to consent to its own dissolution. The dread that party felt of the republican spirit rising amongst the independents, would have induced them to place in the hands of any sovereign they could trust, full as much authority as our constitution permits. But no one who has paid attention to the history of that period, will conclude that they could have secured the king against their common enemy, had he even gone wholly into their own measures *. And this were to suppose such an entire change in his character, and ways of thinking, as no external circumstances could produce. Yet his prospects from a continuance of hostilities were so unpromising, that most of the royalists would probably have hailed his almost unconditional submission at Uxbridge. Even the steady Richmond and Southampton, it is said, implored him to yield, and deprecated his misjudging confidence in promises of foreign aid, or in the successes of Montrose †. The more lukewarm or discontented of his adherents took this opportunity of abandoning an almost hopeless cause; between the breach of the treaty of Uxbridge and the battle of Naseby, several of the Oxford peers came over to the parliament, and took an engagement never to bear arms against it. A few instances of such defection had occurred before ‡.

It remained only, after the rupture of the treaty at Uxbridge, to try once more the fortune of war. The people, both in the king's and parliament's quarters, but especially the former, heard with dismay that peace could not be attained. Many of the per-

* It cannot be doubted, and is admitted in a remarkable conversation of Hollis and Whitelock with the king at Oxford in November, 1644, that the exorbitant terms demanded at Uxbridge were carried by the violent party, who disliked all pacification. Whitelock, 113.

† Baillie, ii. 91. He adds, "That which has been the great snare to the king, is the unhappy success of Montrose in Scotland." There seems indeed great reason to think, that Charles, always sanguine, and incapable of calculating probabilities, was unreasonably elated by victories from which no permanent advantage ought to have been expected. Burnet confirms this on good authority. Introduction to Hist. of his Times, 51.

‡ Whitelock, 109. 137. 142. Rushw. Abr. v. 163. The first *rat* (except indeed the earls of Holland and Bedford, who were rats with two tails) was sir Edward Dering, who came into the parliament's quarters, Feb. 1644. He was a weak man of some learning, who had already played a very changeable part before the war.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

petual skirmishes and captures of towns which made every man's life and fortune precarious, have found no place in general history, but may be traced in the journal of Whitelock, or in the Mercuries and other fugitive sheets, great numbers of which are still extant. And it will appear, I believe, from these, that scarcely one county in England was exempt, at one time or other of the war, from becoming the scene of this unnatural contest. Compared, indeed, with the civil wars in France in the preceding century, there had been fewer acts of enormous cruelty, and less atrocious breaches of public faith. But much blood had been wantonly shed, and articles of capitulation had been very indifferently kept. "Either side," says Clarendon, "having somewhat to object to the other, the requisite honesty and justice of observing conditions was mutually, as it were by agreement, for a long time violated *." The royalist army, especially the cavalry, commanded by men either wholly unprincipled, or at least regardless of the people, and deeming them ill-affected, the princes Rupert and Maurice, Goring and Wilmot, lived without restraint of law or military discipline, and committed every excess even in friendly quarters †. An ostentatious dissoluteness became cha-

* A flagrant instance of this was the plunder of Bristol by Rupert, in breach of the capitulation. I suspect that it was the policy of one party to exaggerate the cruelties of the other; but the short narratives dispersed at the time give a wretched picture of slaughter and devastation.

† Clarendon and Whitelock passim. Baxter's Life, p. 44, 55. This license of Maurice's and Goring's armies in the west first led to the defensive insurrection, if so it should be called, of the club-men; that is, of yeomen and country people, armed only with clubs, who hoped, by numbers and concert, to resist effectually the military marauders of both parties, declaring themselves neither for king nor parliament, but for their own liberty and property. They were of course regarded with dislike on both sides; by the king's party when they first appeared in 1644, because they crippled the royal army's operations, and still more openly by the parliament next year, when they opposed Fairfax's endeavour to carry on the war in the counties bordering on the Severn. They appeared at times in great strength, but the want of arms and discipline made it of course not very difficult to suppress them. Clarendon, v. 197. Whitelock, 137. Parl. Hist. 379, 390.

The king himself, whose disposition was very harsh and severe, except towards the few he took into his bosom, can hardly be exonerated from a responsibility for some acts of inhumanity. See Whitelock, 67, and Somers Tracts, iv. 502; v. 369; Maseres's Tracts, i. 144. for the ill-treatment of prisoners; and he might probably have checked the outrages which took place at

racteristic of the cavalier, as a formal austerity was of the puritan; one spoiling his neighbour in the name of God, the other of the king. The parliament's troops were not quite free from these military vices, but displayed them in a much less scandalous degree, owing to their more religious habits, and the influence of their presbyterian chaplains, to the better example of their commanders, and to the comparative, though not absolute, punctuality of their pay *. But this pay was raised through unheard-of assessments, especially an excise on liquors, a new name in England, and through the sequestration of the estates of all the king's adherents; resources of which he also had availed himself, partly by the rights of war, partly by the grant of his Oxford parliament †.

A war so calamitous seemed likely to endure till it had exhausted the nation. With all the parliament's superiority, they had yet to subdue nearly half the kingdom. The Scots had not advanced southward, content with reducing Newcastle, and the rest of the northern counties. These they treated almost as hostile, without distinction of parties, not only exacting contributions,

the storming of Leicester, where he was himself present. Certainly no imputation of this nature can be laid at the door of the parliamentary commanders, though some of them were guilty of the atrocity of putting their Irish prisoners to death, in obedience, however, to an ordinance of parliament. Parl. Hist. iii. 295; Rushworth's Abridgement, v. 402. It passed October 24, 1644, and all remissness in executing it was to be reckoned a favouring of the Irish rebellion. When we read, as we do perpetually, these violent and barbarous proceedings of the parliament, is it consistent with honesty or humanity to hold up that assembly to admiration, while the faults on the king's side are studiously aggravated? The partiality of Oldmixon, Harris, Macauley, and now of Mr. Brodie and Mr. Godwin, is full as glaring, to say the very least, as that of Hume.

* Clarendon and Baxter.

† The excise was first imposed by an ordinance of both houses in July, 1643 (Husband's Collection of Ordinances, p. 267), and afterwards by the king's convention at Oxford. See a view of the financial expedients adopted by both parties in Lingard, x. 243. The plate brought in to the parliament's commissioners at Guildhall in 1642, for which they allowed the value of the silver, and one shilling per ounce more, is stated by Neal at £1,267,326, an extraordinary proof of the wealth of London; yet I do not know his authority, though it is probably good. The university of Oxford gave all they had to the king, but could not of course vie with the citizens.

The sums raised within the parliament's quarters from the beginning of the war to 1647, are reckoned in a pamphlet of that year, quoted in Sinclair's Hist. of the Revenue, i. 283, at £17,512,400. But I find this written at random. The contributions, however, were really very great; and if we add those to the king, and the loss by waste and plunder, we may form some judgment of the effects of the civil war.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

but committing, unless they are much belied, great excesses of indiscipline, their presbyterian gravity not having yet overcome the ancient national propensities *. In the midland and western parts the king had just the worse, without having sustained material loss, and another summer might pass away in marches and countermarches, in skirmishes of cavalry, in tedious sieges of paltry fortifications, some of them mere country houses, which nothing but an amazing deficiency in that branch of military science could have rendered tenable. This protraction of the war had long given rise to no unnatural discontent with its management, and to suspicions, first of Essex, then of Manchester and others in command, as if they were secretly reluctant to complete the triumph of their employers. It is, indeed, not impossible that both these peers, especially the former, out of their desire to see peace restored on terms compatible with some degree of authority in the crown, and with the dignity of their own order, did not always press their advantages against the king as if he had been a public enemy †. They might have thought

* The independents raised loud clamours against the Scots army, and the northern counties naturally complained of the burthen of supporting them, as well as of their excesses. Many passages in Whitelock's journal during 1645 and 1646 relate to this. Hollis endeavours to deny or extenuate the charges; but he is too prejudiced a writer, and Baillie himself acknowledges a great deal. Vol. ii. p. 138, 142, 106.

† The chief imputation against Manchester was for not following up his victory in the second battle of Newbury, with which Cromwell openly taxed him; see Ludlow, i. 133. There certainly appears to have been a want of military energy on this occasion; but it is said by Baillie, (ii. 76,) that all the general officers, Cromwell not excepted, concurred in Manchester's determination. Essex had been suspected from the time of the affair at Brentford, or rather from the battle of Edgehill (Baillie and Ludlow); and his whole conduct, except in the celebrated march to relieve Glocester, confirmed a reasonable distrust either of his military talents, or of his zeal in the cause. "He loved monarchy and nobility," says Whitelock, p. 108, "and dreaded those who had a design to destroy both." Yet Essex was too much a man of honour to enter on any private intrigues with the king. The other peers employed under the parliament, Stamford, Denbigh, Willoughby, were not successful enough to redeem the suspicions that fell upon their zeal.

All our republican writers, such as Ludlow and Mrs. Hutchinson in that age, Mrs. Macauley and Mr. Brodie more of late, speak acrimoniously of Essex. "Most will be of opinion," says Mr. B. (History of British Empire, iii. 565), "that as ten thousand pounds a year out of the sequestered lands were settled upon him for his services, he was rewarded infinitely beyond his merits." The reward was doubtless magnificent; but the merit of Essex was this, that he made himself the most prominent object of vengeance in case

that, having drawn the sword avowedly for the preservation of his person and dignity, as much as for the rights and liberties of the people, they were no farther bound by their trust, than to render him and his adherents sensible of the impracticability of refusing their terms of accommodation.

There could, however, be no doubt that Fairfax and Cromwell were far superior, both by their own talents for war, and the discipline they had introduced into their army, to the earlier parliamentary commanders, and that, as a military arrangement, the self-denying ordinance was judiciously conceived. This, which took from all members of both houses their commands in the army, or civil employments, was, as is well known, the first great victory of the independent party, which had grown up lately in parliament under Vane and Cromwell *. They carried another measure of no less importance, collateral to the former; the new-modelling, as it was called, of the army; reducing it to twenty-one or twenty-two thousand men; discharging such officers and soldiers as were reckoned unfit, and completing their regiments by more select levies. The ordinance, after being once rejected by the lords, passed their house with some modifications in April †.

of failure, by taking the command of an army to oppose the king in person at Edgehill; a command of which no other man in his rank was capable, and which could not, at that time, have been intrusted to any man of inferior rank without dissolving the whole confederacy of the parliament.

It is to be observed, that the two battles of Newbury, like that of Edgehill, were by no means decisive victories on the side of the parliament, and that it is not clear whether either Essex or Manchester could have pushed the king much more than they did. Even after Naseby, his party made a pretty long resistance, and he was as much blamed as they for not pressing his advantages with vigour.

* It had been voted by the lords a year before, Dec. 12, 1643, "That the opinion and resolution of this house is from henceforth not to admit the members of either house of parliament into any place or office, excepting such places of great trust as are to be executed by persons of eminency and known integrity, and are necessary for the government and safety of the kingdom." But a motion to make this resolution into an ordinance was carried in the negative. Lords' Journals. Parl. Hist. 187. The first motion had been for a resolution without this exception, that no place of profit should be executed by the members of either house.

† Whitelock, p. 118, 120. It was opposed by him, but supported by Pierrepont, who carried it up to the lords. The lords were chiefly of the presbyterian party, though Say, Wharton, and a few more, were connected with the independents. They added a proviso to the ordinance raising forces to be commanded by Fairfax, that no officer refusing the covenant should

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

But many joined them on this occasion for those military reasons which I have mentioned, deeming almost any termination of the war better than its continuance. The king's rejection of their terms at Uxbridge had disgusted some of the more moderate men, such as the earl of Northumberland and Pierrepont; who deeming reconciliation impracticable, took from this time a different line of politics from that they had previously followed, and were either not alive to the danger of new-modelling the army, or willing to hope that it might be disbanded before that danger could become imminent. From Fairfax too, the new general, they saw little to fear, and much to expect; while Cromwell, as a member of the house of commons, was positively excluded by the ordinance itself. But through a successful intrigue of his friends, this great man, already not less formidable to the presbyterian faction than to the royalists, was permitted to continue lieutenant-general *. The most popular justification for the self-denying ordinance, and yet perhaps its real condemnation, was soon found at Naseby; for there Fairfax and Cromwell triumphed not only over the king and the monarchy, but over the parliament and the nation.

It does not appear to me, that a brave and prudent man, in the condition of Charles the First, had, up to this unfortunate day, any other alternative than a vigorous prosecution of the war, in hope of such decisive success as, though hardly within probable calculation, is not unprecedented in the changeful tide of fortune. I cannot therefore blame him either for refusing unreasonable terms of accommodation, or for not relinquishing altogether the

be capable of serving, which was thrown out in the lower house. But another proviso was carried in the commons by 82 to 63, that the officers, though appointed by the general, should be approved by both houses of parliament. Cromwell was one of the tellers for the minority. Commons' Journals, Feb. 7 and 13, 1645.

In the original ordinance the members of both houses were excluded during the war; but in the second, which was carried, the measure was not made prospective. This, which most historians have overlooked, is well pointed out by Mr. Godwin. By virtue of this alteration, many officers were elected in the course of 1645 and 1646; and the effect, whatever might be designed, was very advantageous to the republican and independent factions.

* Whitelock, p. 145.

contest. But, after his defeat at Naseby, his affairs were, in a military sense, so irretrievable, that in prolonging the war with as much obstinacy as the broken state of his party would allow, he displayed a good deal of that indifference to the sufferings of the kingdom, and of his own adherents, which has been sometimes imputed to him. There was, from the hour of that battle, one only safe and honourable course remaining. He justly abhorred to reign, if so it could be named, the slave of parliament, with the sacrifice of his conscience and his friends. But it was by no means necessary to reign at all. The sea was for many months open to him; in France, or still better in Holland, he would have found his misfortunes respected, and an asylum in that decent privacy which becomes an exiled sovereign. Those very hopes which he too fondly cherished, and which lured him to destruction, hopes of regaining power through the disunion of his enemies, might have been entertained with better reason, as with greater safety, in a foreign land. It is not perhaps very probable that he would have been restored, but his restoration in such circumstances seems less desperate than through any treaty that he could conclude in captivity at home.

Whether any such thoughts of abandoning a hopeless contest were ever entertained by the king during this particular period, it is impossible to pronounce; we should infer the contrary from all his actions. It must be said that many of his counsellors seem to have been as pertinacious as himself, having strongly imbibed the same sanguine spirit, and looking for deliverance, according to their several fancies, from the ambition of Cromwell, or the discontent of the Scots. But, whatever might have been the king's disposition, he would not have dared to retire from England. That sinister domestic rule, to which he had so long been subject, controlled every action. Careless of her husband's happiness, and already attached probably to one whom she afterwards married, Henrietta longed only for his recovery of a power

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

which would become her own*. Hence, while she constantly laid her injunctions on Charles never to concede any thing as to the militia or the Irish catholics, she became desirous, when no other means presented itself, that he should sacrifice what was still nearer to his heart, the episcopal church-government. The queen-regent of France, whose sincerity in desiring the king's restoration there can be no ground to deny†, was equally persuaded that he could hope for it on no less painful conditions. They reasoned of course very plausibly from the great precedent of flexible consciences, the reconciliation of Henrietta's illustrious father to the catholic church. As he could neither have regained his royal power, nor restored peace to France without this compliance with his subjects' prejudices, so Charles could still less expect, in circumstances by no means so favourable, that he should avoid a concession, in the eyes of almost all men but himself, of incomparably less importance. It was in expectation of this

* Whether there are sufficient grounds for concluding that Henrietta's connexion with Jermyn was criminal, I will not pretend to decide; though Warburton has settled the matter in a very summary style. See one of his notes on Clarendon, vol. vii. p. 636. But I doubt whether the bishop had authority for what he there says, though it is likely enough to be true. See also a note of Lord Dartmouth on Burnet, i. 63.

† Clarendon speaks often in his history, and still more frequently in his private letters, with great resentment of the conduct of France, and sometimes of Holland, during our civil wars. I must confess that I see nothing to warrant this. The States-General, against whom Charles had so shamefully been plotting, interfered as much for the purpose of mediation as they could with the slightest prospect of success, and so as to give offence to the parliament (Rushworth Abridged, v. 567; Baillie, ii. 78; Whitelock, 141, 148; Harris's Life of Cromwell, 246); and as to France, though Richelieu had instigated the Scots malcontents, and possibly those of England, yet after his death, in 1642, no sort of suspicion ought to lie on the French government; the whole conduct of Anne of Austria having been friendly, and both the mission of Harcourt in 1643, and the present negotiations of Montreuil and Bellievre, perfectly well intended. That Mazarin made promises of assistance which he had no design, nor perhaps any power to fulfil, is true; but this is the common trick of such statesmen, and argues no malevolent purpose. But Hyde, out of his just dislike of the queen, hated all French connexions; and his passionate loyalty made him think it a crime, or at least a piece of base pusillanimity, in foreign states, to keep on any terms with the rebellious parliament. The case was altered, after the retirement of the regent Anne from power; Mazarin's latter conduct was, as is well known, exceedingly adverse to the royal cause.

sacrifice, that the French envoy, Montreuil, entered on his ill-starred negotiation for the king's taking shelter with the Scots army. And it must be confessed, that several of his best friends were hardly less anxious that he should desert a church he could not protect*. They doubted not, reasoning from their own characters, that he would ultimately give way. But that Charles, unchangeably resolved on this head †, should have put himself in the power of men full as bigoted as himself, if he really conceived that the Scots presbyterians would shed their blood to re-establish the prelacy they abhorred, was an additional proof of that delusion which made him fancy that no government could be established without his concurrence; unless indeed we should rather consider it as one of those desperate courses, into which he who can foresee nothing but evil from every calculable line of action will sometimes plunge at a venture, borrowing some ray of hope from the uncertainty of its consequences ‡.

* Colepepper writes to Ashburnham, in February, 1646, to advance the Scots' treaty with all his power. "It is the only way left to save the crown and the kingdom; all other tricks will deceive you. . . . It is no time to dally on distinctions and criticisms. All the world will laugh at them when a crown is in question." Clar. Papers, ii. 207.

The king had positively declared his resolution not to consent to the establishment of presbytery. This had so much disgusted both the Scots and English presbyterians (for the latter had been concerned in the negotiation), that Montreuil wrote to say he thought they would rather make it up with the independents than treat again. "De sorte qu'il ne faut plus marchander, et que V. M. se doit hâter d'envoyer aux deux parlemens son consentiment aux trois propositions d'Uxbridge; ce qu'étant fait, elle sera en sureté dans l'armée d'Ecosse." (15th Jan. 1646). p. 211.

† "I assure you," he writes to Capel, Hopton, &c. Feb. 2, 1646, "whatever paraphrases or prophecies may be made upon my last message (pressing the two houses to consent to a personal treaty), I shall never part with the church, the essentials of my crown, or my friends." P. 206. Baillie could not believe the report that the king intended to take refuge in the Scots army, as "there would be no shelter there for him, unless he would take the covenant, and follow the advice of his parliament. Hard pills to be swallowed by a wilful and an unadvised prince." Vol. ii. p. 203.

‡ Not long after the king had taken shelter with the Scots, he wrote a letter to Ormond, which was intercepted, wherein he assured him of his expectation that their army would join with his, and act in conjunction with Montrose, to procure a happy peace and the restoration of his rights. Whitelock, page 208. Charles had bad luck with his letters, which fell, too frequently for his fame and interests, into the hands of his enemies. But who, save this most ill-judging of princes, would have entertained an idea that the Scots presbyterian army would co-operate with Montrose, whom they abhorred, and very justly, for his treachery and cruelty, above all men living?

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

It was an inevitable effect of this step, that the king surrendered his personal liberty, which he never afterwards recovered. Considering his situation, we may at first think the parliament tolerably moderate, in offering nearly the same terms of peace at Newcastle, which he had rejected at Uxbridge; the chief difference being, that the power of the militia which had been demanded for commissioners nominated and removable by the two houses during an indefinite period, was now proposed to reside in the two houses for the space of twenty years; which rather more unequivocally indicated their design of making the parliament perpetual *. But in fact they had so abridged the royal prerogative by their former propositions, that, preserving the decent semblance of monarchy, scarce any thing further could be exacted. The king's circumstances were, however, so altered, that, by persisting in his refusal of those propositions, he excited a natural indignation at his obstinacy in men who felt their own right (the conqueror's right), to dictate terms at pleasure. Yet this might have had a nobler character of firmness, if, during all the tedious parleys of the last three years of his life, he had not, by tardy and partial concessions, given up so much of that for which he contended, as rather to appear like a pedler haggling for the best bargain, than a sovereign unalterably determined by conscience and public spirit. We must, however, forgive much to one placed in such unparalleled difficulties. Charles had to contend, during his unhappy residence at Newcastle, not merely with revolted subjects in the pride of conquest, and with bigoted priests, as blindly confident in one set of doubtful propositions as he was in the opposite, but with those he had trusted the most, and loved the dearest. We have in the Clarendon State Papers a series of letters from Paris, written, some by the queen, others

* Parl. Hist. 499. Whitelock, 215, 218. It was voted, 17th June, that after these twenty years, the king was to exercise no power over the militia without the previous consent of parliament, who were to pass a bill at any time respecting it, if they should judge the kingdom's safety to be concerned, which should be valid without the king's assent. Commons' Journals.

jointly by Colepepper, Jermyn, and Ashburnham, or the two former, urging him to sacrifice episcopacy, as the necessary means of his restoration. We have the king's answers, that display, in an interesting manner, the struggles of his mind under this severe trial*. No candid reader, I think, can doubt that a serious sense of obligation was predominant in Charles's persevering fidelity to the English church. For though he often alleges the incompatibility of presbyterianism with monarchy, and says very justly, "I am most confident that religion will much sooner regain the militia, than the militia will religion †," yet these arguments seem rather intended to weigh with those who slighted his scruples, than the paramount motives of his heart. He could hardly avoid perceiving that, as Colepepper told him in his rough style, the question was, whether he would choose to be a king of presbytery or no king. But the utmost length which he could prevail on himself to go was to offer the continuance of the presbyterian discipline, as established by the parliament, for three years, during which a conference of divines might be had, in

* P. 248. "Show me any precedent," he says in another place, "where ever presbyterian government and regal was together without perpetual rebellions, which was the cause that necessitated the king my father to change that government in Scotland. And even in France, where they are but on tolerance, which in likelihood shall cause moderation, did they ever sit still so long as they had power to rebel? And it cannot be otherwise, for the ground of their doctrine is anti-monarchical." P. 260. See also p. 273.

† "The design is to unite you with the Scots nation and the presbyterians of England against the anti-monarchical party, the independents. . . . . If by conscience it is intended to assert that episcopacy is jure divino exclusive, whereby no protestant, or rather christian church can be acknowledged for such without a bishop, we must therein crave leave wholly to differ. And if we be in an error, we are in good company, there not being, as we have cause to believe, six persons of the protestant religion of the other opinion. . . Come, the question in short is, whether you will choose to be a king of presbytery, or no king, and yet presbytery or perfect independency to be." P. 263. They were, however, as much against his giving up the militia, or his party, as in favour of his abolishing episcopacy.

Charles was much to be pitied throughout all this period; none of his correspondents understood the state of affairs so well as himself: he was with the Scots, and saw what they were made of, while the others fancied absurdities through their own private self-interested views. It is very certain that by sacrificing episcopacy he would not have gained a step with the parliament; and as to reigning in Scotland alone, suspected, insulted, degraded, this would perhaps just have been possible for himself; but neither Henrietta nor her friends would have found an asylum there.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

order to bring about a settlement. Even this he would not propose without consulting two bishops, Juxon and Duppa, whether he could lawfully do so. They returned a very cautious answer, assenting to the proposition as a temporary measure, but plainly endeavouring to keep the king fixed in his adherence to the episcopal church *.

Pressed thus on a topic, so important above all others in his eyes, the king gave a proof of his sincerity by greater concessions of power than he had ever intended. He had some time before openly offered to let the parliament name all the commissioners of the militia for seven years, and all the officers of state and judges to hold their places for life †. He now empowered a secret agent in London, Mr. William Murray, privately to sound the parliamentary leaders, if they would consent to the establishment of a moderated episcopacy, after three or five years, on condition of his departing from the right of the militia during his whole life ‡. This dereliction of the main ground of contest brought down the queen's indignation on his head. She wrote several letters in an imperious and unfeeling tone, declaring that she would never set her foot in England as long as the parliament should exist §. Jermyn and Colepepper assumed a style hardly

* Juxon had been well treated by the parliament, in consequence of his prudent abstinence from politics, and residence in their quarters. He dates his answer to the king from his palace at Fulham. He was, however, dispossessed of it not long after by virtue of the ordinance directing the sale of bishops' lands. Nov. 16, 1646, Parl. Hist. 528. A committee was appointed, Nov. 2, 1646, to consider of a fitting maintenance to be allowed the bishops, both those who had remained under the parliament, and those who had deserted it. Journals. I was led to this passage by Mr. Godwin, Hist. of Commonwealth, ii. 250. Whether any thing farther was done, I have not observed. But there is an order in the Journals, 1st May, 1647, that whereas divers of the late tenants of Dr. Juxon, late bishop of London, have refused to pay the rents or other sums of money due to him as bishop of London at or before the 1st of November last, the trustees of bishops' lands are directed to receive the same, and pay them over to Dr. Juxon. Though this was only justice, it shows that justice was done, at least in this instance, to a bishop. Juxon must have been a very prudent and judicious man, though not learned; which probably was all the better.

† Jan. 29, 1646. Parl. Hist. 436. Whitelock says, "Many sober men and lovers of peace were earnest to have complied with what the king proposed; but the major part of the house was contrary, and the new elected members joined those who were averse to compliance." P. 207.

‡ Clar. Papers, p. 275.

§ Id. 294, 297, 300. She had said as much before, (King's Cabinet opened, p.

less dictatorial in their letters *, till Charles withdrew the proposal, which Murray seems never to have communicated †. It was indeed the evident effect of despair and a natural weariness of his thorny crown. He now began to express serious thoughts of making his escape ‡, and seems even to hint more than once at a resignation of his government to the Prince of Wales. But Henrietta forbad him to think of an escape, and alludes to the other with contempt and indignation §. With this selfish and tyrannical woman, that life of exile and privacy, which religion and letters would have rendered tolerable to the king, must have been spent in hardly less bitterness than on a dishonoured throne. She had displayed in France as little virtue as at home: the small resources which should have been frugally dispensed to those who had lost all for the royal cause, were squandered upon her paramour and her French servants ||. So totally had she

28); so that this was not a burst of passion. "Conservez vous la militia," she says in one place, p. 271, "et n'abandonnez jamais, et *par cela tout reviendra.*" Charles, however, disclaimed all idea of violating his faith in case of a treaty, p. 273; but observes, as to the militia, with some truth, that "the retaining of it is not of so much consequence—I am far from saying, none—as is thought, without the concurrence of other things; because the militia here is not, as in France and other countries, a formed powerful strength, but it serves more to hold off ill than to do much good. And certainly, if the pulpits teach not obedience, which will never be, if presbyterian government be absolutely settled, the crown will have little comfort of the militia." P. 296.

* P. 301.

† P. 313.

‡ P. 245, 247, 278, 314. In one place he says, that he will go to France *to clear his reputation to the queen*, p. 265. He wrote in great distress of mind to Jermyn and Colepepper, on her threatening to retire from all business into a monastery, in consequence of his refusal to comply with her wishes, p. 270. See also Montreuil's memoir in Thurloe's State Papers, i. 85, whence it appears that the king had thoughts of making his escape in Jan. 1647.

§ "For the proposition to Bellievre (a French agent at Newcastle after Montreuil's recall), I hate it. If any such thing should be made public, you are undone; your enemies will make a malicious use of it. Be sure you never own it again in any discourse, otherwise than as intended as a foil, or an hyperbole, or any other ways except in sober earnest," &c. p. 304. The queen and her counsellors, however, seem afterwards to have retracted in some measure what they had said about his escape, and advised that if he could not be suffered to go into Scotland, he would try Ireland or Jersey, p. 312.

Her dislike to the king's escape showed itself, according to Clarendon, vi. 192, even at a time when it appeared the only means to secure his life, during his confinement in the Isle of Wight. Some may suspect, that Henrietta had consoled herself too well with lord Jermyn to wish for her husband's return.

|| P. 344.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

abandoned all regard to English interests, that Hyde and Capel, when retired to Jersey, the governor of which, sir Edward Carteret, still held out for the king, discovered a plan formed by the queen and Jermyn to put that island into the hands of France*. They were exceedingly perplexed at this discovery, conscious of the impossibility of defending Jersey, and yet determined not to let it be torn away from the sovereignty of the British crown. No better expedient occurred, than, as soon as the project should be ripe for execution, to despatch a message "to the earl of Northumberland or some other person of honour," asking for aid to preserve the island. This was of course, in other words, to surrender it into the power of the parliament, which they would not name even to themselves. But it was evidently more consistent with their loyalty to the king and his family, than to trust the good faith of Mazarin. The scheme, however, was abandoned, for we hear no more of it.

It must, however, be admitted at the present day, that there was no better expedient for saving the king's life, and some portion of royal authority for his descendants, a fresh renunciation of episcopacy perhaps only excepted, than such an abdication, the time for which had come before he put himself into the hands of the Scots. His own party had been weakened, and the number of his well-wishers diminished by something more than the events of war. The last unfortunate year had, in two memorable instances, revealed fresh proofs of that culpable imprudence, speaking mildly, which made wise and honest men hopeless of any permanent accommodation. At the battle of Naseby, copies of some letters to the queen, chiefly written about the time of the treaty of Uxbridge, and strangely preserved, fell into the hands of the enemy, and were instantly published†. No other losses

* P. 279.

† Clarendon and Hume inveigh against the parliament for this publication, in which they are of course followed by the whole rabble of Charles's admirers. But it could not reasonably be expected that such material papers should be kept back, nor were the parliament under any obligation to do so. The former writer insinuates that they were garbled; but Charles himself never pre-

of that fatal day were more injurious to his cause. Besides many proofs of a contemptible subserviency to one justly deemed irreconcileable to the civil and religious interests of the kingdom, and many expressions indicating schemes and hopes inconsistent with any practicable peace, and especially a design to put an end to the parliament*, he gave her power to treat with the

tended this (see Supplement to Evelyn's Diary, p. 101); nor does there seem any foundation for the surmise. His own friends garbled them, however, after the restoration; some passages are omitted in the edition of King Charles's Works, so that they can only be read accurately in the original publication, called The King's Cabinet Opened, a small tract in quarto; or in the modern compilations, such as the Parliamentary History, which have copied it. Ludlow charges the garbling on the other party: he has been informed, he says, that some of the letters taken at Naseby were suppressed by those intrusted with them, who since the king's restoration have been rewarded for it. Memoirs, i. 156. But I should not be inclined to believe this.

There is, however, an anecdote which may be mentioned in this place. A Dr. Hickman, afterwards bishop of Derry, wrote in 1690 the following letter to Sprat, bishop of Rochester, a copy of which, in Dr. Birch's hand-writing, may be found in the British Museum. It was printed by him in the appendix to the Inquiry into the Share K. Charles I. had in Glamorgan s Transactions; and from thence by Harris, in his Life of Charles I. p. 144.

"My Lord,

"Last week Mr. Bennet [a bookseller] left with me a manuscript of letters from king Charles I. to his queen; and said it was your lordship's desire and Dr. Pelling's, that my lord Rochester should read them over, and see what was fit to be left out in the intended edition of them. Accordingly my lord has read them over, and upon the whole matter says, he is very much amazed at the design of printing them; and thinks that king's enemies could not have done him a greater discourtesy. He showed me many passages which detract very much from the reputation of the king's prudence and something from his integrity; and in short he can find nothing throughout the whole collection, but what will lessen the character of the king, and offend all those who wish well to his memory. He thinks it very unfit to expose any man's conversation and familiarity with his wife, but especially that king's; for it was apparently his blind side, and his enemies gained great advantage by showing it. But my lord hopes his friends will spare him; and therefore he has ordered me not to deliver the book to the bookseller, but put it into your lordship's hands; and when you have read it, he knows you will be of his opinion. If your lordship has not time to read it all, my lord has turned down some leaves where he makes his chief objections. If your lordship sends any servant to town, I beg you would order him to call here for the book, and that you would take care about it."

Though the description of these letters answers perfectly to those in the King's Cabinet Opened, which certainly detract much from the reputation of Charles's prudence, and something from his integrity, it is impossible that Rochester and the others could be ignorant of so well-known a publication; and we must consequently infer, that some letters injurious to the king's character have been suppressed by the caution of his friends.

* The king had long entertained a notion, in which he was encouraged by the attorney-general Herbert, that the act against the dissolution of the parliament without its own consent was void in itself. Life of Clarendon, p. 86. This high monarchical theory of the nullity of statutes in restraint of the prerogative was never thoroughly eradicated till the Revolution, and in all contentions between the crown and

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

English catholics, promising to take away all penal laws against them, as soon as God should enable him to do so, in consideration of such powerful assistance, as might deserve so great a favour, and enable him to effect it*. Yet it was certain, that no parliament, except in absolute duress, would consent to repeal these laws. To what sort of victory, therefore, did he look? It was remembered, that on taking the sacrament at Oxford, some time before, he had solemnly protested that he would maintain the protestant religion of the church of England, without any connivance at popery. What trust could be reposed in a prince capable of forfeiting so solemn a pledge? Were it even supposed that he intended to break his word with the catholics, after obtaining such aid as they could render him, would his insincerity be less flagrant†?

These suspicions were much aggravated by a second dis-

parliament destroyed the confidence, without which no accommodation could be durable.

* "There is little or no appearance but that this summer will be the hottest for war of any that hath been yet; and be confident, that in making peace, I shall ever show my constancy in adhering to bishops, and all our friends, not forgetting to put a short period to this perpetual parliament." King's Cabinet Opened, p. 7. "It being presumption, and no piety, so to trust to a good cause, as not to use all lawful means to maintain it, I have thought of one means more to furnish thee with for my assistance, than hitherto thou hast had: it is, that I give thee power to promise in my name, to whom thou thinkest most fit, that I will take away all the penal laws against the Roman catholics in England as soon as God shall enable me to do it; so as by their means, or in their favours, I may have so powerful assistance as may deserve so great a favour, and enable me to do it. But if thou ask what I call that assistance, I answer, that when thou knowest what may be done for it, it will be easily seen, if it deserve to be so esteemed. I need not tell thee what secrecy this business requires, yet this I will say, that this is the greatest point of confidence I can express to thee; for it is no thanks to me to trust thee in any thing else but in this, which is the only point of difference in opinion betwixt us: and yet I know thou wilt make as good a bargain for me, even in this, as if thou wert a protestant." Id. ibid. "As to my calling those at London a parliament, I shall refer thee to Digby for particular satisfaction; this in general—if there had been but two, besides myself, of my opinion, I had not done it, and the argument that prevailed with me was, that the calling did no ways acknowledge them to be a parliament, upon which condition and construction I did it, and no otherwise, and accordingly it is registered in the council books, with the council's unanimous approbation." Id. p. 4. The one counsellor who concurred with the king was secretary Nicholas. Supplement to Evelyn's Memoirs, p. 90.

† The queen evidently suspected that he might be brought to abandon the catholics. King's Cabinet Opened, p. 30, 31. And, if fear of her did not prevent him, I make no question that he would have done so, could he but have carried his other points.

covery that took place soon afterwards, of a secret treaty between the earl of Glamorgan and the confederate Irish catholics, not merely promising the repeal of the penal laws, but the establishment of their religion in far the greater part of Ireland *. The marquis of Ormond, as well as lord Digby, who happened to be at Dublin, loudly exclaimed against Glamorgan's presumption in concluding such a treaty, and committed him to prison on a charge of treason. He produced two commissions from the king, secretly granted without any seal, or the knowledge of any minister, containing the fullest powers to treat with the Irish, and promising to fulfil any conditions into which he should enter. The king, informed of this, disavowed Glamorgan, and asserted in a letter to the parliament, that he had merely a commission to raise men for his service, but no power to treat of any thing else, without the privity of the lord lieutenant, much less to capitulate any thing concerning religion, or any property belonging either to church or laity †. Glamorgan, however, was soon released, and lost no portion of the king's or his family's favour.

* Parl. Hist. 428; Somers Tracts, v. 542. It appears by several letters of the king, published among those taken at Naseby, that Ormond had power to promise the Irish a repeal of the penal laws, and the use of private chapels, as well as a suspension of Poyning's law. King's Cabinet Opened, p. 16, 19; Rushw. Abr. v. 589. Glamorgan's treaty granted them all the churches with the revenues thereof, of which they had at any time since October, 1641, been in possession; that is, the re-establishment of their religion: they, on the other hand, were to furnish a very large army to the king in England.

† Rushw. Abr. v. 582, 594. This, as well as some letters taken on lord Digby's rout at Sherborn about the same time, made a prodigious impression. "Many good men were sorry that the king's actions agreed no better with his words; that he openly protested before God with horrid imprecations that he endeavoured nothing so much as the preservation of the protestant religion, and rooting out of popery; yet, in the mean time, underhand, he promised to the Irish rebels an abrogation of the laws against them, which was contrary to his late expressed promises in these words, 'I will never abrogate the laws against the papists.' And again he said, I abhor to think of bringing foreign soldiers into the kingdom, and yet he solicited the duke of Lorrain, the French, the Danes, and the very Irish, for assistance." May's Breviate of Hist. of Parliament in Maseres' Tracts, i. 61. Charles had certainly never scrupled (I do not say that he ought to have done so) to make application in every quarter for assistance, and began in 1642 with sending a Col. Cochran on a secret mission to Denmark, in the hope of obtaining a subsidiary force from that kingdom. There was at least no danger to the national independence from such allies. "We fear this shall undo the king for ever, that no repentance shall ever obtain a pardon of this act, if it be true, from his parliaments."

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

This transaction has been the subject of much historical controversy. The enemies of Charles, both in his own and later ages, have considered it as a proof of his indifference at least to the protestant religion, and of his readiness to accept the assistance of Irish rebels on any conditions. His advocates for a long time denied the authenticity of Glamorgan's commissions. But Dr. Birch demonstrated that they were genuine; and if his dissertation could have left any doubt, later evidence might be adduced in confirmation *. Hume, in a very artful and very unfair state-

Baillie, ii. 185. Jan. 20, 1646. The king's disavowal had some effect; it seems as if even those who were prejudiced against him could hardly believe him guilty of such an apostasy, as it appeared in their eyes. P. 175. And, in fact, though the catholics had demanded nothing unreasonable, either in its own nature, or according to the circumstances wherein they stood, it threw a great suspicion on the king's attachment to his own faith, when he was seen to abandon altogether, as it seemed, the protestant cause in Ireland, while he was struggling so tenaciously for a particular form of it in Britain. Nor was his negotiation less impolitic than dishonourable. Without depreciating a very brave and injured people, it may be said with certainty, that an Irish army could not have had the remotest chance of success against Fairfax and Cromwell; the courage being equal on our side, the skill and discipline incomparably superior. And it was evident that Charles could never reign in England but on a protestant interest.

* Birch's Inquiry into the Share which King Charles I. had in the Transactions of the Earl of Glamorgan, 1747. Four letters of Charles to Glamorgan, now in the British Museum (Sloane MSS. 4161), in Birch's hand-writing, but of which he was not aware at the time of that publication, decisively show the king's duplicity. In the first, which was meant to be seen by Digby, dated Feb. 3, 1646, he blames him for having been drawn to consent to conditions much beyond his instructions. "If you had advised with my lord lieutenant as you promised me, all this had been helped;" and tells him he had commanded as much favour to be shown him as might possibly stand with his service and safety. On Feb. 28, he writes by a private hand, sir John Winter, that he is every day more and more confirmed in the trust that he had of him. In a third letter, dated April 5, he says, in a cipher, to which the key is given, "you cannot be but confident of my making good all instructions and promises to you and nuncio." The fourth letter is dated April 6, and is in these words: "Herbert, as I doubt not but you have too much courage to be dismayed or discouraged at the usage like you have had, so I assure you that my estimation of you is nothing diminished by it, but rather begets in me a desire of revenge and reparation to us both (for in this I hold myself equally interested with you), whereupon not doubting of your accustomed care and industry in my service, I assure you of the continuance of my favour and protection to you, and that in deeds more than in words I shall show myself to be your most assured constant friend. C. R."

These letters have lately been republished by Dr. Lingard, Hist. of Engl. x. note B, from Warner's Hist. of the Civil War in Ireland. The cipher may be found in the Biographia Britannica, under the article Bales. Dr. L. endeavours to prove that Glamorgan acted all along with Ormond's privity; and it must be owned that the expression in the king's last letter, about revenge and reparation, which Dr. L. does not advert to, has a very odd appearance.

The controversy is, I suppose, com-

ment, admitting the authenticity of these instruments, endeavours to show that they were never intended to give Glamorgan any power to treat without Ormond's approbation. But they are worded in the most unconditional manner, without any reference to Ormond. No common reader can think them consistent with the king's story. I do not, however, impute to him any intention of ratifying the terms of Glamorgan's treaty. His want of faith was not to the protestant but to the catholic. Upon weighing the whole of this evidence, it appears to me, that he purposely gave Glamorgan, a sanguine and injudicious man, whom he could easily disown, so ample a commission as might remove the distrust that the Irish were likely to entertain of a negotiation wherein Ormond should be concerned; while by a certain latitude in the style of the instrument, and by his own letters to the lord lieutenant about Glamorgan's errand, he left it open to assert, in case of necessity, that it was never intended to exclude the former's privity and sanction. Charles had unhappily long been in the habit of perverting his natural acuteness to the mean subterfuges of equivocal language.

By these discoveries of the king's insincerity, and by what seemed his infatuated obstinacy in refusing terms of accommodation, both nations became more and more alienated from him; the one hardly restrained from casting him off, the other ready

pletely at an end; so that it is hardly necessary to mention a letter from Glamorgan, then marquis of Worcester, to Clarendon, after the restoration, which has every internal mark of credibility, and displays the king's unfairness. Clar. State Pap. ii. 201, and Lingard, ubi supra. It is remarkable that the transaction is never mentioned in the History of the Rebellion. The noble author was, however, convinced of the genuineness of Glamorgan's commission, as appears by a letter to secretary Nicholas. "I must tell you, I care not how little I say in that business of Ireland, since those strange powers and instructions given to your favourite Glamorgan, which appear to me so inexcusable to justice, piety, and prudence. And I fear there is very much in that transaction of Ireland, both before and since, that you and I were never thought wise enough to be advised with in. Oh Mr. Secretary, those stratagems have given me more sad hours than all the misfortunes in war which have befallen the king, and look like the effects of God's anger towards us." Id. p. 237. See also a note of Mr. Laing, Hist. of Scotland, iii. 557, for another letter of the king to Glamorgan, from Newcastle, in July, 1646, not less explicit than the foregoing.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

to leave him to his fate *. This ill opinion of the king forms one apology for that action, which has exposed the Scots nation to so much reproach—their delivery of his person to the English parliament. Perhaps if we place ourselves in their situation, it will not appear deserving of quite such indignant censure. It would have shown more generosity to have offered the king an alternative of retiring to Holland, and from what we now know, he would probably have not neglected the opportunity. But the consequence might have been his solemn deposition from the English throne; and however we may think such banishment more honourable than the acceptance of degrading conditions, the Scots, we should remember, saw nothing in the king's taking the covenant, and sweeping away prelatic superstitions, but the bounden duty of a christian sovereign, which only the most perverse self-will induced him to set at nought †. They had a right also to consider the interests of his family, which the threatened establishment of a republic in England would defeat. To carry him back with their army into Scotland, besides being equally ruinous

* Burnet's Mem. of Dukes of Hamilton, 284. Baillie's letters, throughout 1646, indicate his apprehension of the prevalent spirit, which he dreaded as implacable, not only to monarchy, but to presbytery and the Scots nation. "The leaders of the people seem inclined to have no shadow of a king, to have liberty for all religions, a lame Erastian presbytery, to be so injurious to us as to chase us hence with the sword," 148, March 31, 1646. "The common word is, that they will have the king prisoner. Possibly they may grant to the prince to be a duke of Venice. The militia must be absolutely, for all time to come, in the power of the parliament alone," &c. 200. On the king's refusal of the propositions sent to Newcastle, the Scots took great pains to prevent a vote against him, 226. There was still, however, danger of this, 236, Oct. 13, and p. 243. His intrigues with both parties, the presbyterians and independents, were now known, and all sides seem to have been ripe for deposing them, 245. These letters are a curious contrast to the idle fancies of a speedy and triumphant restoration, which Clarendon himself, as well as others of less judgment, seem to have entertained.

† "Though he should swear it," says Baillie, "no man will believe that he sticks upon episcopacy for any conscience," ii. 205. And again: "It is pity that base hypocrisy, when it is pellucid, shall still be entertained. No oaths did ever persuade me, that episcopacy was ever adhered to on any conscience," 224. This looks at first like mere bigotry. But when we remember that Charles had abolished episcopacy in Scotland, and was ready to abolish protestantism in Ireland, Baillie's prejudices will appear less unreasonable. The king's private letters, in the Clarendon papers, have convinced me of his mistaken conscientiousness about church government; but of this his contemporaries could not be aware.

to the English monarchy, would have exposed their nation to the most serious dangers. To undertake his defence by arms against England, as the ardent royalists desired, and doubtless the determined republicans no less, would have been, as was proved afterwards, a mad and culpable renewal of the miseries of both kingdoms *. He had voluntarily come to their camp; no faith was pledged to him; their very right to retain his person, though they had argued for it with the English parliament, seemed open to much doubt. The circumstance, unquestionably, which has always given a character of apparent baseness to this transaction, is the payment of 400,000*l.* made to them so nearly at the same time, that it has passed for the price of the king's person. This sum was part of a larger demand on the score of arrears of pay, and had been agreed upon long before we have any proof or reasonable suspicion of a stipulation to deliver up the king †. That the parliament would never have actually paid it on any other

* Hollis maintains that the violent party were very desirous that the Scots should carry the king with them, and that nothing could have been more injurious to his interests. If we may believe Berkley, who is much confirmed by Baillie, the presbyterians had secretly engaged to the Scots that the army should be disbanded, and the king brought up to London with honour and safety. Memoirs of Sir J. Berkley, in Maseres's Tracts, i. 358. Baillie, ii. 257. This affords no bad justification of the Scots for delivering him up.

"It is very like," says Baillie, "if he had done any duty, though he had never taken the covenant, but permitted it to have been put in an act of parliament in both kingdoms, and given so satisfactory an answer to the rest of the propositions, as easily he might, and sometimes I know he was willing, certainly Scotland had been for him as one man: and the body of England, upon many grounds, was upon a disposition to have so cordially embraced him, that no man, for his life, durst have muttered against his present restitution. But remaining what he was in all his maxims, a full Canterburian, both in matters of religion and state, he still inclined to a new war; and for that end resolved to go to Scotland. Some great men there pressed the equity of Scotland's protecting of him on any terms. This untimeous excess of friendship has ruined that unhappy prince; for the better party finding the conclusion of the king's coming to Scotland, and thereby their own present ruin, and the ruin of the whole cause, the making the malignants masters of church and state, the drawing the whole force of England upon Scotland for their perjurious violation of their covenant, they resolved by all means to cross that design," p. 253.

† The votes for payment of the sum of 400,000*l.* to the Scots are on Aug. 21, 27, Sept. 1; though it was not fully agreed between the two nations till Dec. 8. Whitelock, 220. 229. But Whitelock dates the commencement of the understanding as to the delivery of the king about Dec. 24, p. 231. See Commons' Journals. Baillie, ii. 246. 253. Burnet's Memoirs of Hamiltons, 293, &c. Laing, iii. 362; and Mr. Godwin's History of the Commonwealth, ii. 258; a work in which great attention has been paid to the order of time.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

consideration, there can be, I presume, no kind of doubt; and of this the Scots must have been fully aware. But whether there were any such secret bargain as has been supposed, or whether they would have delivered him up, if there had been no pecuniary expectation in the case, is what I cannot perceive sufficient grounds to pronounce with confidence; though I am much inclined to believe the affirmative of the latter question. And it is deserving of particular observation, that the party in the house of commons which sought most earnestly to obtain possession of the king's person, and carried all the votes for payment of money to the Scots, was that which had no further aim than an accommodation with him, and a settlement of the government on the basis of its fundamental laws, though doubtless on terms very derogatory to his prerogative; while those who opposed each part of the negotiation were the zealous enemies of the king, and, in some instances at least, of the monarchy. The Journals bear witness to this *.

Whatever might have been the consequence of the king's accepting the propositions of Newcastle, his chance of restoration upon any terms was now in all appearance very slender. He had to encounter enemies more dangerous and implacable than the presbyterians. That faction, which from small and insensible beginnings had acquired continued strength, through ambition in a few, through fanaticism in many, through a despair in some of reconciling the pretensions of royalty with those of the people, was now rapidly ascending to superiority. Though still weak in the house of commons, it had spread prodigiously in the army, especially since its new-modelling at the time of the self-denying ordinance †.

* Journals, Aug. and Sept. Godwin, ubi supra. Baillie, ii. passim.

† Baillie, who, in Jan. 1644, speaks of the independents as rather troublesome than formidable, and even says: "No man, I know, in either of the houses of any note is for them," 437; and that "lord Say's power and reputation is none at all;" admits, in a few months, the alarming increase of independency and sectarianism in the earl of Manchester's army; more than two parts in three of the officers and soldiers being with them, and those the most resolute and confident; though they had no considerable force either in Essex's or Waller's army, nor in the assembly of divines

The presbyterians saw with dismay the growth of their own and the constitution's enemies. But the royalists, who had less to fear from confusion than from any settlement that the commons would be brought to make, rejoiced in the increasing disunion; and fondly believed, like their master, that one or other party must seek assistance at their hands *.

The independent party comprehended, besides the members of that religious denomination †, a countless brood of fanatical sectaries, nursed in the lap of presbyterianism, and fed with the stimulating aliment she furnished, till their intoxicated fancies could neither be restrained within the limits of her creed, nor those of her discipline ‡. The presbyterian zealots were systema-

or the parliament, ii. 5. 19, 20. This was owing, in a great degree, to the influence, at that period, of Cromwell over Manchester. "The man," he says, "is a very wise and active head, universally well beloved, as religious and stout; being a known independent, the most of the soldiers who love new ways put themselves under his command," 60.

* The independent party, or at least some of its most eminent members, as lord Say and Mr. St. John, were in a secret correspondence with Oxford, through the medium of lord Saville, in the spring of 1645, if we believe Hollis, who asserts that he had seen their letters, asking offices for themselves. Mem. of Hollis, sect. 43. Baillie refers this to an earlier period, the beginning of 1644, i. 427; and I conceive that Hollis has been incorrect as to the date. The king, however, was certainly playing a game with them in the beginning of 1646, as well as with the presbyterians, so as to give both parties an opinion of his insincerity. Clarendon State Papers, 214; and see two remarkable letters written by his order to sir Henry Vane, 226; urging an union, in order to overthrow the presbyterian government.

† The principles of the independents are set forth candidly, and even favourably, by Collier, 829; as well as by Neal, ii. 98. For those who are not much acquainted with ecclesiastical distinctions, it may be useful to mention the two essential characteristics of this sect, by which they differed from the presbyterians. The first was, that all churches, or separate congregations, were absolutely independent of each other as to jurisdiction or discipline; whence they rejected all synods and representative assemblies as possessing authority, though they generally admitted, to a very limited degree, the alliance of churches for mutual counsel and support. Their second characteristic was the denial of spiritual powers communicated in ordination by apostolical succession, deeming the call of a congregation a sufficient warrant for the exercise of the ministry. See Orme's Life of Owen, for a clear view and able defence of the principles maintained by this party. I must add, that Neal seems to have proved that the independents, as a body, were not systematically adverse to monarchy.

‡ Edwards's Gangræna, a noted book in that age, enumerates one hundred and seventy-six heresies, which however are reduced by him to sixteen heads; and these seem capable of further consideration: Neal, 249. The house ordered a general fast, Feb. 1647, to beseech God to stop the growth of heresy and blasphemy. Whitelock, 236; a presbyterian artifice to alarm the nation.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

tically intolerant. A common cause made toleration the doctrine of the sectaries. About the beginning of the war, it had been deemed expedient to call together an assembly of divines, nominated by the parliament, and consisting not only of clergymen, but, according to the presbyterian usage, of lay members, peers as well as commoners, by whose advice a general reformation of the church was to be planned *. These were chiefly presbyterian, though a small minority of independents, and a few moderate episcopalians, headed by Selden †, gave them much trouble. The general imposition of the covenant, and the substitution of the directory for the common prayer (which was forbidden to be used even in any private family, by an ordinance of August 1645), seemed to assure the triumph of presbyterianism; which became complete, in point of law, by an ordinance of Feb. 1646, establishing for three years the Scots model of classes, synods, and general assemblies throughout England ‡. But in this very ordinance there was a reservation, which wounded the spiritual arrogance of that party. Their favourite tenet had always been the independency of the church. They had rejected, with as much abhorrence as the catholics themselves, the royal supremacy, so

* Parl. Hist. ii. 1479. They did not meet till July 1, 1643. Rushw. Abr. v. 123. Neal, 42. Collier, 823. Though this assembly showed abundance of bigotry and narrowness, they were by no means so contemptible as Clarendon represents them, ii. 425; and perhaps equal in learning, good sense, and other merits, to any lower house of convocation that ever made a figure in England.

† Whitelock, 71. Neal, 103. Selden, who owed no gratitude to the episcopal church, was from the beginning of its dangers a steady and active friend, displaying, whatever may have been said of his timidity, full as much courage as could reasonably be expected from a studious man advanced in years. Baillie, in 1641, calls him, "the avowed proctor of the bishops," i. 245; and when provoked by his Erastian opposition in 1646, presumes to talk of his "insolent absurdity," ii. 96. Selden sat in the assembly of divines, and by his great knowledge of the ancient languages, and of ecclesiastical antiquities, as well as by his sound logic and calm clear judgment, obtained an undeniable superiority, which he took no pains to conceal.

‡ Scobell. Rushw. Abr. v. 576. Parl. Hist. iii. 444. Neal, 199. The latter says, this did not pass the lords till June 6. But this is not so. Whitelock very rightly opposed the prohibition of the use of the common prayer, and of the silencing episcopal ministers, as contrary to the principle of liberty of conscience avowed by the parliament, and like what had been complained of in the bishops, 226. 239. 281. But, in Sept. 1647, it was voted that the indulgence in favour of tender consciences should not extend to tolerate the common prayer. Id. 274.

far as it controlled the exercise of spiritual discipline. But the house of commons were inclined to part with no portion of that prerogative which they had wrested from the crown. Besides the independents, who were still weak, a party called Erastians *, and chiefly composed of the common lawyers, under the guidance of Selden, the sworn foe of every ecclesiastical usurpation, withstood the assembly's pretensions with success. They negatived a declaration of the divine right of presbyterian government. They voted a petition from the assembly, complaining of a recent ordinance as an incroachment on spiritual jurisdiction, to be a breach of privilege. The presbyterian tribunals were made subject to the appellant control of parliament, as those of the Anglican church had been to that of the crown. The cases wherein spiritual censures could be pronounced, or the sacrament denied, instead of being left to the clergy, were defined by law †. Whether

* The Erastians were named from Erastus, a German physician in the sixteenth century. The denomination is often used in the present age ignorantly, and therefore indefinitely; but I apprehend that the fundamental principle of his followers was this: That in a commonwealth where the magistrate professes christianity, it is not convenient that offences against religion and morality should be punished by the censures of the church, especially by excommunication. Probably he may have gone farther, as Selden seems to have done, (Neal, 194,) and denied the right of exclusion from church communion, even without reference to the temporal power; but the limited proposition was of course sufficient to raise the practical controversy. The Helvetic divines, Gualter and Bullinger, strongly concurred in this with Erastus; "Contendimus disciplinam esse debere in ecclesiâ, sed satis esse, si ea administretur a magistratu." Erastus, 350; and 379, still stronger. And it is said, that archbishop Whitgift caused Erastus's book to be printed at his own expense. See one of Warburton's notes on Neal. Calvin, and the whole of his school, held, as is well known, a very opposite tenet. See Erasti Theses de Excommunicatione, 4to. 1579.

The ecclesiastical constitution of England is nearly Erastian in theory, and almost wholly so in practice. Every sentence of the spiritual judge is liable to be reversed by a civil tribunal, the court of delegates, by virtue of the king's supremacy over all causes. And, practically, what is called church discipline, or the censures of ecclesiastical governors for offences, has gone so much into disuse, and what remains is so contemptible, that I believe no one, except those who derive a little profit from it, would regret its abolition.

"The most part of the house of commons," says Baillie, ii. 149, "especially the lawyers, whereof there are many, and divers of them very able men, are either half or whole Erastians, believing no church government to be of divine right, but all to be a human constitution depending on the will of the magistrate." "The pope and king," he says in another place, 196, "were never more earnest for the headship of the church than the plurality of this parliament." See also p. 183; and Whitelock, 169.

† Parl. Hist. 459, et alibi. Rushw.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

from dissatisfaction on this account, or some other reason, the presbyterian discipline was never carried into effect, except to a certain extent, in London and in Lancashire. But the beneficed clergy throughout England, till the return of Charles II., were chiefly, though not entirely, of that denomination *.

This party was still so far predominant, having the strong support of the city of London and its corporation †, with almost all the peers who remained in their house, that the independents and other sectaries neither opposed this ordinance for its temporary establishment, nor sought any thing farther than a toleration for their own worship. The question, as Neal well observes, was not between presbytery and independency, but between presbytery with a toleration, and without one ‡. Not merely from their own

Abr. v. 578, et alibi. Whitelock, 165, 169, 173, 176, et post. Baillie's Letters, passim. Neal, 23, &c. 194, et post. Collier, 841. The assembly attempted to sustain their own cause by counter votes; and the minority of independents and Erastians having withdrawn, it was carried with the single dissent of Lightfoot, that Christ had established a government in his church, independent of the civil magistrate. Neal, 223.

* Neal, 228. Warburton says, in his note on this passage, that "the presbyterian was *to all intents and purposes* the established religion during the time of the commonwealth." But as coercive discipline and synodical government are no small intents and purposes of that religion, this assertion requires to be modified as it has been in my text. Besides which, there were many ministers of the independent sect in benefices, some of whom probably had never received ordination. "Both baptists and independents," says a very well informed writer of the latter denomination, "were in the practice of accepting the livings, that is, the temporalities of the church. They did not, however, view themselves as parish ministers, and bound to administer all the ordinances of religion to the parish population. They occupied the parochial edifices, and received a portion of the tithes for their maintenance, but in all other respects acted according to their own principles." Orme's Life of Owen, 136. This he thinks would have produced very serious evils, if not happily checked by the Restoration. "During the commonwealth," he observes afterwards, 245, "no system of church government can be considered as having been properly or fully established. The presbyterians, if any, enjoyed this distinction."

† The city began to petition for the establishment of presbytery, and against toleration of sectaries, early in 1646; and not long after came to assume what seemed to the commons too dictatorial a tone. This gave much offence, and contributed to drive some members into the opposite faction. Neal, 193. 221. 241. Whitelock, 207. 240.

‡ Vol. ii. 268. See also 207, and other places. This is a remark that requires attention; many are apt to misunderstand the question. "For this point (toleration) both they and we contend," says Baillie, "tanquam pro aris et focis," ii. 175. "Not only they praise your magistrate," (writing to a Mr. Spang in Holland), "who for policy gives some secret tolerance to divers religions, wherein, as I conceive, your divines preach against them as great sinners, but avow that by God's command the magistrate is discharged to put the least discourtesy on any man, Jew, Turk, papist, socinian, or whatever, for his religion," 18.

exclusive bigotry, but from a political alarm by no means ungrounded, the presbyterians stood firmly against all liberty of conscience. But in this again they could not influence the house of commons to suppress the sectaries, though no open declaration in favour of indulgence was as yet made. It is still the boast of the independents, that they first brought forward the great principles of religious toleration (I mean as distinguished from maxims of politic expediency) which had been confined to a few philosophical minds; to sir Thomas More, in those days of his better judgment, when he planned his republic of Utopia, to Thuanus,

See also 61, and many other passages. "The army," (says Hugh Peters in a tract, entitled A Word for the Army, and Two Words to the People, 1647), "never hindered the state from a state religion, having only wished to enjoy now what the puritans begged under the prelates; when we desire more, blame us, and shame us." In another, entitled Vox Militaris, the author says: "We did never engage against this plat-form, nor for that plat-form, nor ever will, except better informed; and, therefore, if the state establisheth presbytery, we shall never oppose it."

The question of toleration, in its most important shape, was brought at this time before parliament, on occasion of one Paul Best, who had written against the doctrine of the trinity. According to the common law, heretics, on being adjudged by the spiritual court, were delivered over to be burned under the writ de hæretico comburendo. This punishment had been inflicted five times under Elizabeth; on Wielmacker and Ter Wort, two Dutch anabaptists, who, like many of that sect, entertained Arian tenets, and were burned in Smithfield in 1575; on Matthew Hammond in 1579, Thomas Lewis in 1583, and Francis Ket in 1588; all burned by Scambler, bishop of Norwich. It was also inflicted on Bartholomew Legat and Edward Wightman, under James, in 1614; the first burned by King, bishop of London, the second by Neile of Litchfield. A third, by birth a Spaniard, incurred the same penalty; but the compassion of the people showed itself so strongly at Legat's execution, that James thought it expedient not to carry the sentence into effect. Such is the venomous and demoralizing spirit of bigotry, that Fuller, a writer remarkable for good nature and gentleness, expresses his indignation at the pity which was manifested by the spectators of Legat's sufferings. Church Hist. part ii. p. 62. In the present case of Paul Best, the old sentence of fire was not suggested by any one; but an ordinance was brought in, Jan. 1646, to punish him with death. Whitelock, 190. Best made, at length, such an explanation as was accepted, Neal, 214; but an ordinance to suppress blasphemies and heresies as capital offences was brought in. Commons' Journals, April, 1646. The independents gaining strength, this was long delayed; but the ordinance passed both houses, May 2, 1648. Id. 303. Neal, 338, justly observes, that it shows the governing presbyterians would have made a terrible use of their power had they been supported by the sword of the civil magistrate. The denial of the trinity, incarnation, atonement, or inspiration of *any* book of the Old or New Testament, was made felony. Lesser offences, such as anabaptism, or denying the lawfulness of presbyterian government, were punishable by imprisonment till the party should recant. It was much opposed, especially by Whitelock. The writ de hæretico comburendo, as is well known, was taken away by act of parliament in 1677.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

or L'Hospital. Such principles are indeed naturally congenial to the persecuted; and it is by the alternate oppression of so many different sects, that they have now obtained their universal reception. But the independents also assert that they first maintained them while in power; a far higher praise, which can, however, be only allowed them by comparison. Without invidiously glancing at their early conduct in New England *, it must be admitted, that the continuance of the penal laws against catholics, the prohibition of the episcopalian worship, and the punishment of one or two anti-trinitarians under Cromwell, are proofs that the tolerant principle had not yet acquired perfect vigour. If the independent sectaries were its earliest advocates, it was the Anglican writers, the latitudinarian school of Chillingworth, Hales, Taylor, Locke, and Hoadley, that rendered it victorious †.

The king, as I have said, and his party, cherished too sanguine hopes from the disunion of their opponents ‡. Though warned

* "In all New England, no liberty of living for a presbyterian. Whoever there, were they angels for life and doctrine, will essay to set up a different way from them [the independents] shall be sure of present banishment," Baillie, ii. 4, also 17. I am surprised to find a late writer of that country, (Dwight's Travels in New England), attempt to extenuate at least the intolerance of the independents towards the quakers who came to settle there; and which, we see, extended also to the presbyterians. But Mr. Orme, with more judgment, observes that the New England congregations did not sufficiently adhere to the principle of independency, and acted too much as a body, to which he ascribes their persecution of the quakers and others. Life of Owen, 335. It is certain, that the congregational scheme leads to toleration, as the national church scheme is adverse to it, for manifold reasons which the reader will discover.

† Though the writings of Chillingworth and Hales are not directly in behalf of toleration, no one could relish them without imbibing its spirit in the fullest measure. The great work of Jeremy Taylor, on the Liberty of Prophesying, was published in 1647; and, if we except a few concessions to the temper of the times, which are not reconcileable to its general principles, has left little for those who followed him. Mr. Orme admits, that the remonstrants of Holland maintained the principles of toleration very early, p. 50; but refers to a tract by Leonard Busher, an independent, in 1614, as "containing the most enlightened and scriptural views of religious liberty," p. 99. He quotes other writings of the same sect under Charles I.

‡ Several proofs of this occur in the Clarendon State Papers. A letter, in particular, from Colepepper to Digby, in Sept. 1645, is so extravagantly sanguine, considering the posture of the king's affairs at that time, that, if it was perfectly sincere, Colepepper must have been a man of less ability than has generally been supposed. Vol. ii. p. 188. Neal has some sensible remarks on the king's mistake in supposing that any party which he did not join must in the end be ruined, p. 268. He had not lost this strange confidence after his very life

of it by the parliamentary commissioners at Uxbridge, though in fact it was quite notorious and undisguised, they seem never to have comprehended that many active spirits looked to the entire subversion of the monarchy. The king in particular was haunted by a prejudice, natural to his obstinate and undiscerning mind, that he was necessary to the settlement of the nation; so that, if he remained firm, the whole parliament and army must be at his feet. Yet during the negotiations at Newcastle there was daily an imminent danger, that the majority of parliament, irritated by his delays, would come to some vote excluding him from the throne. The Scots presbyterians, whatever we may think of their behaviour, were sincerely attached, if not by loyal affection, yet by national pride, to the blood of their ancient kings. They thought and spoke of Charles as of a headstrong child, to be restrained and chastised, but never cast off*. But in England he had absolutely no friends among the prevailing party; many there were who thought monarchy best for the nation, but none who cared for the king.

This schism, nevertheless, between the parliament and the army was at least in appearance very desirable for Charles, and seemed to afford him an opportunity which a discreet prince might improve to great advantage, though it unfortunately de-

had become desperate, and told sir John Bowring, when he advised him not to spin out the time at the treaty of Newport, that "any interests would be glad to come in with him." See Bowring's Memoirs in Halifax's Miscellanies, 132.

* Baillie's letters are full of this feeling, and must be reckoned fair evidence, since no man could be more bigoted to presbytery, or more bitter against the royalist party. I have somewhere seen Baillie praised for his mildness. His letters give no proof of it. Take the following specimens: "Mr. Maxwell of Ross has printed at Oxford so desperately malicious an invective against our assemblies and presbyteries, that however I could hardly consent to the hanging of Canterbury, or of any jesuit, yet I could give my sentence freely against that unhappy man's life." ii. 99. "God has struck Coleman with death; he fell in an ague, and after three or four days expired. It is not good to stand in Christ's way." P. 199.

Baillie's judgment of men was not more conspicuous than his moderation. "Vane and Cromwell are of horrible hot fancies to put all in confusion, but not of any deep reach. St. John and Pierrepont are more stayed, but not great heads." P. 258. The drift of all his letters is, that every man who resisted the jus divinum of presbytery was knave or fool, if not both. They are, however, eminently serviceable as historical documents.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

luded him with chimerical expectations*. At the conclusion of the war, which the useless obstinacy of the royalists had protracted till the beginning of 1647 †, the commons began to take measures for breaking the force of their remaining enemy. They resolved to disband a part of the army, and to send the rest into Ireland‡. They formed schemes for getting rid of Cromwell, and even made some demur about continuing Fairfax in command §. But in all measures that exact promptitude and energy,

* "Now for my own particular resolution," he says in a letter to Digby, March 26, 1646, "it is this. I am endeavouring to get to London, so that the conditions may be such as a gentleman may own, and that the rebels may acknowledge me king, being not without hope that I shall be able so to draw either the presbyterians or independents to side with me for extirpating the one or the other, that I shall be really king again." Carte's Ormond, iii. 452; quoted by Mr. Brodie, to whom I am indebted for the passage. I have mentioned already his overture about this time to sir Henry Vane through Ashburnham.

† Clarendon, followed by Hume and several others, appears to say that Ragland castle in Monmouthshire, defended by the marquis of Worcester, was the last that surrendered; namely, in August 1646. I use the expression *appears to say*, because the last edition, which exhibits his real text, shows that he paid this compliment to Pendennis castle in Cornwall, and that his original editors, I suppose to do honour to a noble family, foisted in the name of Ragland. It is true, however, of neither. The North Welsh castles held out considerably longer; that of Harlech was not taken till April 1647, which put an end to the war. Whitelock.

Clarendon, still more unyielding than his master, extols the long resistance of his party, and says that those who surrendered at the first summons obtained no better terms than they who made the stoutest defence; as if that were a sufficient justification for prolonging a civil war. In fact, however, they did the king some harm, inasmuch as they impeded the efforts made in parliament to disband the army. Several votes of the commons show this; see the journals of 12th May and 31st July, 1646.

‡ The resolution to disband Fairfax's regiment next Tuesday at Chelmsford passed 16th May, 1647, by 136 to 115. Algernon Sidney being a teller of the noes. Commons Journals. In these votes the house, that is, the presbyterian majority, acted with extreme imprudence, not having provided for the payment of the army's arrears, at the time they were thus disbanding them. Whitelock advised Hollis and his party not to press the disbanding; and on finding them obstinate, drew off, as he tells us, from that connexion, and came nearer to Cromwell, p. 248. This, however, he had begun to do rather earlier. Independently of the danger of disgusting the army, it is probable that, as soon as it was disbanded, the royalists would have been up in arms. For the growth of this discontent, day by day, peruse Whitelock's Journal for March and the three following months, as well as the Parliamentary History.

§ It was only carried by 159 to 147, March 5, 1647, that the forces should be commanded by Fairfax. But on the 8th, the house voted without a division, that no officer under him should be above the rank of a colonel, and that no member of the house should have any command in the army. It is easy to see at whom this was levelled. Commons Journals. They voted at the same time that the officers should all take the covenant, which had been rejected two years before; and, by a majority of 136 to 108, that they should all conform to the government of the church, established by both houses of parliament.

treachery and timidity are apt to enfeeble the resolutions of a popular assembly. Their demonstrations of enmity were, however, so alarming to the army, who knew themselves disliked by the people, and dependent for their pay on the parliament, that as early as April 1647, an overture was secretly made to the king, that they would replace him in his power and dignity. He cautiously answered, that he would not involve the kingdom in a fresh war, but should ever feel the strongest sense of this offer from the army *. Whether they were discontented at the coldness of this reply, or, as is more probable, the offer had only proceeded from a minority of the officers, no further overture was made, till not long afterwards the bold manœuvre of Joyce had placed the king's person in their power.

The first effect of this military violence was to display the parliament's deficiency in political courage. It contained, we well know, a store of energetic spirits, not apt to swerve from their attachments. But where two parties are almost equally balanced, the defection, which external circumstances must produce among those timid and feeble men from whom no assembly can be free, even though they should form but a small minority, will of course give a character of cowardice and vacillation to counsels which is imputed to the whole. They immediately expunged, by a majority of 96 to 79, a vote of reprehension passed some weeks before, upon a remonstrance from the army, which the presbyterians had highly resented, and gave other proofs of retracing their steps. But the army was not inclined to accept their submission in full discharge of the provocation. It had schemes of its own for the reformation and settlement of the kingdom, more extensive than those of the presbyterian faction. It had its own wrongs also to

* Clar. State Papers, ii. 365. The army, in a declaration not long after the king fell into their power, June 24, use these expressions: "We clearly profess that we do not see how there can be any peace to this kingdom firm or lasting, without a due provision for the rights, quiet, and immunity of his majesty, his royal family, and his late partakers." Parl. Hist. 647.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

revenge. Advancing towards London, the general and council of war sent up charges of treason against eleven principal members of that party, who obtained leave to retire beyond sea. Here may be said to have fallen the legislative power and civil government of England, which from this hour till that of the restoration had never more than a momentary and precarious gleam of existence, perpetually interrupted by the sword.

Those who have once bowed their knee to force must expect that force will be for ever their master. In a few weeks after this submission of the commons to the army, they were insulted by an unruly, tumultuous mob of apprentices, engaged in the presbyterian politics of the city, who compelled them by actual violence to rescind several of their late votes *. Trampled upon by either side, the two speakers, several peers, and a great number of the lower house, deemed it somewhat less ignominious, and certainly more politic, to throw themselves on the protection of the army. They were accordingly soon restored to their places, at the price of a more complete and irretrievable subjection to the military power than they had already undergone. Though the presbyterians maintained a pertinacious resistance within the walls of the house, it was evident that the real power of command was gone from them, and that Cromwell with the army must either become arbiters between the king and parliament, or crush the remaining authority of both †.

* Hollis censures the speakers of the two houses and others who fled to the army from this mob, the riot being "a sudden tumultuous thing of young idle people without design." Possibly this might be the case, but the tumult at the door of the house, 26th July, was such that it could not be divided. Their votes were plainly null, as being made under duress. Yet the presbyterians were so strong in the commons, that a resolution to annul all proceedings during the speaker's absence was lost by 97 to 95, after his return, and it was only voted to repeal them. A motion to declare that the houses, from 26th July to 6th August, had been under a force, was also lost by 78 to 75. Journals, 9th and 17th August. The lords, however, passed an ordinance to this effect, and after once more rejecting it, the commons agreed on August 20, with a proviso that no one should be called in question for what had been done.

† These transactions are best read in the Commons Journals, and Parliamentary History, and next to those, in Whitelock. Hollis relates them with great passion; and Clarendon, as he does every thing else

There are few circumstances in our history which have caused more perplexity to inquirers than the conduct of Cromwell and his friends towards the king in the year 1647. Those who look only at the ambitious and dissembling character of that leader, or at the fierce republicanism imputed to Ireton, will hardly believe that either of them could harbour any thing like sincere designs of restoring him even to that remnant of sovereignty which the parliament would have spared. Yet when we consider attentively the public documents and private memoirs of that period, it does appear probable, that their first intentions towards the king were not unfavourable, and so far sincere, that it was their project to make use of his name rather than totally to set him aside. But whether by gratifying Cromwell and his associates with honours, and throwing the whole administration into their hands, Charles would have long contrived to keep a tarnished crown on his head, must be very problematical.

The new gaolers of this unfortunate prince began by treating him with unusual indulgence, especially in permitting his episcopal chaplains to attend him. This was deemed a pledge of what he thought an invaluable advantage in dealing with the army,

that passed in London, very imperfectly. He accounts for the earl of Manchester and the speaker Lenthal's retiring to the army by their persuasion, that the chief officers had nearly concluded a treaty with the king, and resolved to have their shares in it. This is a very unnecessary surmise. Lenthal was a poor spirited man, easily influenced by those whom he thought the strongest, and in this instance, according to Ludlow, p. 206, persuaded with difficulty by Haslerig to go to the army. Manchester, indeed, had more courage and honour; but he was not of much capacity, and his parliamentary conduct was not systematic. But upon the whole it is obvious, by reading the list of names (Parl. Hist. 757), that the king's friends were rather among those who staid behind, especially in the lords, than among those who went to the army. Seven of eight peers who continued to sit from 26th July to 6th of August, 1647, were impeached for it afterwards (Parl. Hist. 764), and they were all of the most moderate party. If the king had any previous connexion with the city, he acted very disingenuously in his letter to Fairfax, Aug. 3, while the contest was still pending, wherein he condemns the tumults, and declares his unwillingness that his friends should join with the city against the army, whose proposals he had rejected the day before with an imprudence of which he was now sensible. This letter, as actually sent to Fairfax, is in the Parliamentary History, 734, and may be compared with a rough draught of the same, preserved in Clarendon Papers, 373, from which it materially differs, being much sharper against the city.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

that they would not insist upon the covenant, which in fact was nearly as odious to them as to the royalists, though for very different reasons. Charles, naturally sanguine, and utterly incapable in every part of his life of taking a just view of affairs, was extravagantly elated by these equivocal testimonies of good-will. He blindly listened to private insinuations from rash or treacherous friends, that the soldiers were with him, just after his seizure by Joyce. "I would have you to know, sir," he said to Fairfax, "that I have as good an interest in the army as yourself;" an opinion as injudiciously uttered as it was absurdly conceived *.

* Fairfax's Memoirs in Maseres's Collection of Tracts, vol. i. p. 447. "By this," says Fairfax, who had for once found a man less discerning of the times than himself, "I plainly saw the broken reed he leaned on. The agitators had brought the king into an opinion that the army was for him." Ireton said plainly to the king, "Sir, you have an intention to be the arbitrator between the parliament and us, and we mean to be so between your majesty and the parliament." Berkley's Memoirs. Ibid. p. 360.

This folly of the king, if Mrs. Hutchinson is well informed, alienated Ireton, who had been more inclined to trust him than is commonly believed. "Cromwell," she says, "was at that time so incorruptibly faithful to his trust and the people's interest, that he could not be drawn in to practise even his own usual and natural dissimulation on this occasion. His son-in-law Ireton, that was as faithful as he, was not so fully of the opinion, till he had tried it, and found to the contrary, but that the king might have been managed to comply with the public good of his people, after he could no longer uphold his own violent will; but upon some discourses with him, the king uttering these words to him, 'I shall play my game as well as I can,' Ireton replied, 'If your majesty have a game, you must give us also the liberty to play ours.' Colonel Hutchinson privately discoursing with his cousin about the communications he had had with the king, Ireton's expressions were these: 'He gave us words, and we paid him in his own coin, when we found he had no real intention to the people's good, but to prevail by our factions, to regain by art what he had lost in fight.'" P. 274.

It must be said for the king, that he was by no means more sanguine or more blind than his distinguished historian and minister. Clarendon's private letters are full of strange and absurd expectations. Even so late as October, 1647, he writes to Berkley in high hopes from the army, and presses him to make no concessions except as to persons. "If they see you will not yield, they must; for sure they have as much or more need of the king than he of them." P. 379. The whole tenor, indeed, of Clarendon's correspondence demonstrates, that notwithstanding the fine remarks occasionally scattered through his history, he was no practical statesman, nor had any just conception, at the time, of the course of affairs. He never flinched from one principle, not very practicable or rational in the circumstances of the king, that nothing was to be receded from which had ever been desired. This may be called magnanimity, but no foreign or domestic dissension could be settled, if all men were to act upon it, or if all men, like Charles and Clarendon, were to expect that Providence would interfere to support what seems to them the best, that is, their own cause. The following passage is a specimen: "Truly I am so unfit to bear a part in carrying on this new contention [by negotiation and concession], that I would not, to preserve my-

These strange expectations account for the ill reception which in the hasty irritation of disappointment he gave to the proposals of the army, when they were actually tendered to him at Hampton Court, and which seems to have eventually cost him his life. These proposals appear to have been drawn up by Ireton, a lawyer by education, and a man of much courage and capacity. He had been supposed, like a large proportion of the officers, to aim at a settlement of the nation under a democratical polity. But the army, even if their wishes in general went so far, which is hardly evident, were not yet so decidedly masters as to dictate a form of government uncongenial to the ancient laws and fixed prejudices of the people. Something of this tendency is discoverable in the propositions made to the king, which had never appeared in those of the parliament. It was proposed that parliaments should be biennial; that they should never sit less than a hundred and twenty days, nor more than two hundred and forty; that the representation of the commons should be reformed, by abolishing small boroughs, and increasing the number of members for counties, so as to render the house of commons, as near as might be, an equal representation of the whole. In respect of the militia, and some other points, they either followed the parliamentary propositions of Newcastle, or modified them favourably for the king. They excepted a very small number of the king's adherents from the privilege of paying a composition for their estates, and set that of the rest considerably lower than had been fixed by the parliament. They stipulated that the royalists should not sit in the next parliament. As to religion, they provided for liberty of conscience, declared against the imposition of the covenant, and by insisting on the retrenchment of the coercive jurisdiction of bishops, and the abrogation

self, wife, and children from the lingering death of want by famine (for a sudden death would require no courage), consent to the lessening any part, which I take to be in the function of a bishop, or the taking away the smallest prebendary in the church, or to be bound not to endeavour to alter any such alteration." Id. vol. iii. p. 2. Feb. 4, 1648.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

of penalties for not reading the common prayer, left it to be implied that both might continue established*. The whole tenor of these propositions was in a style far more respectful to the king, and lenient towards his adherents, than had ever been adopted since the beginning of the war. The sincerity, indeed, of these overtures might be very questionable, if Cromwell had been concerned in them; but they proceeded from those elective tribunes called Agitators, who had been established in every regiment to superintend the interests of the army †. And the terms were surely as good as Charles had any reason to hope. The severities against his party were mitigated. The grand obstacles to all accommodation, the covenant and presbyterian establishment, were at once removed; or if some difficulty might occur as to the latter, in consequence of the actual possession of benefices by the presbyterian clergy, it seemed not absolutely insuperable. For the changes projected in the constitution of parliament, they were not necessarily injurious to the monarchy. That parliament should not be dissolved until it had sat a certain time was so salutary a provision, that the triennial act was hardly complete without it.

It is, however, probable, from the king's extreme tenaciousness of his prerogative, that these were the conditions that he found it most difficult to endure. Having obtained, through sir

* Parl. Hist. 738. Clarendon talks of these proposals as worse than any the king had ever received from the parliament; and Hollis says they "dissolved the whole frame of the monarchy." It is hard to see, however, that they did so in a greater degree than those which he had himself endeavoured to obtain as a commissioner at Uxbridge. As to the church, they were manifestly the best that Charles had ever seen. As to his prerogative, and the power of the monarchy, he was so thoroughly beaten, that no treaty could do him any substantial service; and he had, in truth, only to make his election, whether to be the nominal chief of an aristocratical or a democratical republic. In a well-written tract, called Vox Militaris, containing a defence of the army's proceedings and intentions, and published apparently in July 1647, their desire to preserve the king's rights, according to their notion of them, and the general laws of the realm, is strongly asserted.

† The precise meaning of this word seems obscure. Some have supposed it to be a corruption of adjutators, as if the modern term adjutant meant the same thing. But I find agitator always so spelled in the pamphlets of the time.

John Berkley, a sight of the propositions before they were openly made, he expressed much displeasure, and said that if the army were inclined to close with him, they would never have demanded such hard terms. He seems to have principally objected, at least in words, to the exception of seven unnamed persons from pardon, to the exclusion of his party from the next parliament, and to the want of any articles in favour of the church. Berkley endeavoured to show him that it was not likely that the army, if meaning sincerely, should ask less than this. But the king, still tampering with the Scots, and keeping his eyes fixed on the city and parliament, at that moment came to an open breach with the army, disdainfully refused the propositions when publicly tendered to him, with such expressions of misplaced resentment, and preposterous confidence, as convinced the officers that they could neither conciliate nor trust him*. This unexpected haughtiness lost him all chance with those proud and republican spirits; and as they succeeded about the same time in bridling the presbyterian party in parliament, there seemed no necessity for an agreement with the king, and their former determinations of altering the frame of government returned with more revengeful fury against his person†.

* Berkley's Memoirs, 366. He told lord Capel about this time that he expected a war between Scotland and England; that the Scots hoped for the assistance of the presbyterians; and that he wished his own party to rise in arms on a proper conjuncture, without which he could not hope for much benefit from the others. Clarendon, v. 476.

† Berkley, 368, &c. Compare the letter of Ashburnham, published in 1648, and reprinted in 1764, but probably not so full as the MS. in the earl of Ashburnham's possession; also the memoirs of Hollis, Huntingdon, and Fairfax, which are all in Maseres's Collection; also Ludlow, Hutchinson, Clarendon, Burnet's Memoirs of Hamilton, and some despatches in 1647 and 1648, from a royalist in London, printed in the appendix to the second volume of the Clarendon Papers. This correspondent of secretary Nicholas believes Cromwell and Ireton to have all along planned the king's destruction, and set the levellers on, till they proceeded so violently, that they were forced to restrain them. This also is the conclusion of major Huntingdon, in his Reasons for laying down his Commission. But the contrary appears to me more probable.

Two anecdotes, well known to those versant in English history, are too remarkable to be omitted. It is said by the editor of Lord Orrery's Memoirs, as a relation which he had heard from that noble person, that in a conversation with Cromwell concerning the king's death, the latter told him, he and his friends had once a mind to have closed with the king, fearing that the Scots and presbyterians might do so; when one of

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

Charles's continuance at Hampton Court, there can be little doubt, would have exposed him to such imminent risk, that in escaping from thence, he acted on a reasonable principle of self-preservation. He might probably, with due precautions, have reached France or Jersey. But the hastiness of his retreat from Hampton Court giving no time, he fell again into the toils, through the helplessness of his situation, and the foolish counsels of one whom he trusted *. The fortitude of his own mind sustained him

their spies, who was of the king's bedchamber, gave them information of a letter from his majesty to the queen, sowed up in the skirt of a saddle, and directing them to an inn where it might be found. They obtained the letter accordingly, in which the king said, that he was courted by both factions, the Scots presbyterians and the army; that those which bade fairest for him should have him; but he thought he should rather close with the Scots than the other. Upon this, finding themselves unlikely to get good terms from the king, they from that time vowed his destruction. Carte's Ormond, ii. 12.

A second anecdote is alluded to by some earlier writers, but is particularly told in the following words, by Richardson the painter, author of some anecdotes of Pope, edited by Spence. "Lord Bolingbroke told us, June 12, 1742, (Mr. Pope, lord Marchmont, and myself), that the second earl of Oxford had often told him that he had seen, and had in his hands, an original letter that Charles the First wrote to his queen, in answer to one of hers that had been intercepted, and then forwarded to him; wherein she had reproached him for having made those villains too great concessions, viz. that Cromwell should be lord lieutenant of Ireland for life without account; that that kingdom should be in the hands of the party, with an army there kept which should know no head but the lieutenant; that Cromwell should have a garter, &c.: That in this letter of the king's it was said, that she should leave him to manage, who was better informed of all circumstances than she could be; but she might be entirely easy as to whatever concessions he should make them; for that he should know in due time how to deal with the rogues, who, instead of a silken garter, should be fitted with a hempen cord. So the letter ended; which answer, as they waited for, so they intercepted accordingly; and it determined his fate. This letter lord Oxford said he had offered 500*l.* for."

The authenticity of this latter story has been constantly rejected by Hume and the advocates of Charles in general; and for one reason among others, that it looks like a misrepresentation of that told by lord Orrery, which both stands on good authority, and is perfectly conformable to all the memoirs of the time. I have however been informed, that a memorandum nearly conformable to Richardson's anecdote is extant, in the handwriting of lord Oxford.

It is possible that this letter is the same with that mentioned by lord Orrery; and in that case was written about the month of October. Cromwell seems to have been in treaty with the king as late as September, and advised him, according to Berkley, to reject the proposals of the parliament in that month. Herbert mentions an intercepted letter of the queen (Memoirs, 60); and even his story proves that Cromwell and his party broke off with Charles from a conviction of his dissimulation. See Laing's note, iii. 562; and the note by Strype, therein referred to, on Kennet's Complete Hist. of England, iii. 170; which speaks of a "constant tradition" about this story, and is more worthy of notice, because it was written before the publication of Lord Orrery's Memoirs, or of the Richardsoniana.

* Ashburnham gives us to understand

in this state of captivity, and entire seclusion from his friends. No one, however sensible to the infirmities of Charles's disposition, and the defects of his understanding, can refuse admiration to that patient firmness and unaided acuteness, which he displayed throughout the last and most melancholy year of his life. He had now abandoned all expectation of obtaining any present terms for the church or crown. He proposed, therefore, what he had privately empowered Murray to offer the year before, to confirm the presbyterian government for three years, and to give up the militia during his whole life, with other concessions of importance *. To preserve the church lands from sale, to shield his friends from proscription, to obtain a legal security for the restoration of the monarchy in his son, were from henceforth the main objects of all his efforts. It was, however, far too late, even for these moderate conditions of peace. Upon his declining to pass four bills, tendered to him as preliminaries of a treaty, which on that very account, besides his objections to part of their contents, he justly considered as unfair, the parliament voted that no more addresses should be made to him, and that they would receive no more messages †. He was placed in close and solitary

that the king had made choice of the Isle of Wight, previously to his leaving Hampton Court, but probably at his own suggestion. This seems confirmed by the king's letter in Burnet's Mem. of Dukes of Hamilton, 326. Clarendon's account is a romance, with little mixture, probably, of truth. I have been told that in the manuscript of Ashburnham in his noble descendant's possession, it is asserted, that he was in previous correspondence with Hammond.

* Parl. Hist. 799.

† Jan. 15. This vote was carried by 141 to 92. Id. 831. And see Append. to 2d vol. of Clar. State Papers. Cromwell was now vehement against the king, though he had voted in his favour, on Sept. 22. Journals, and Berkley, 372. A proof that the king was meant to be wholly rejected is, that at this time, in the list of the navy, the expression, "his majesty's ship," was changed to "the parliament's ship." Whitelock, 291.

The four bills were founded on four propositions (for which I refer to Hume or the Parliamentary History, not to Clarendon, who has mis-stated them) sent down from the lords. The lower house voted to agree with them by 115 to 106; Sidney and Evelyn tellers for the Ayes, Martin and Morley for the Noes. The increase of the minority is remarkable, and shows how much the king's refusal of the terms offered him in September, and his escape from Hampton Court, had swollen the commonwealth party, to which, by the way, colonel Sidney at this time seems not to have belonged. Ludlow says, that party hoped the king would not grant the four bills, i. 224. The commons published a declaration of their reasons for making no further

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

confinement, and in a meeting of the principal officers at Windsor it was concluded to bring him to trial, and avenge the blood shed in the war by an awful example of punishment; Cromwell and Ireton, if either of them had been ever favourable to the king, acceding at this time to the severity of the rest.

Yet in the midst of this peril and seeming abandonment, his affairs were really less desperate then they had been, and a few rays of light broke for a time through the clouds that enveloped him. From the hour that the Scots delivered him up at Newcastle, they seem to have felt the discredit of such an action, and longed for the opportunity of redeeming their public name. They perceived more and more that a well-disciplined army, under a subtle chief inveterately hostile to them, were rapidly becoming masters of England. Instead of that covenanted alliance, that unity in church and state they had expected, they were to look for all the jealousy and dissension that a complete discordance in civil and spiritual polity could inspire. Their commissioners, therefore, in England, Lanerk, always a moderate royalist, and Lauderdale, a warm presbyterian, had kept up a secret intercourse with the king at Hampton Court. After his detention at Carisbrook, they openly declared themselves against the four bills proposed by the English parliament, and at length concluded a private treaty with him, by which, on certain terms quite as favourable as he could justly expect, they bound themselves to enter England with an army in order to restore him to his freedom and dignity*. This invasion was to be combined with risings in various parts of the country; the presbyterian and roy-

addresses to the king, wherein they more than insinuate his participation in the murder of his father by Buckingham. Parl. Hist. 847.

* Clarendon, whose aversion to the Scots warps his judgment, says that this treaty contained many things dishonourable to the English tion. Hist. v. 532. The king lost a good deal in the eyes of this uncompromising statesman, by the concessions he made in the Isle of Wight. State Papers, 387. I cannot, for my own part, see any thing derogatory to England in the treaty, for the temporary occupation of a few fortified towns in the north can hardly be called so. Charles, there is some reason to think, had on a former occasion made offers to the Scots far more inconsistent with his duty to this kingdom.

alist, though still retaining much of animosity towards each other, concurring at least in abhorrence of military usurpation; and the common people having very generally returned to that affectionate respect for the king's person, which sympathy for his sufferings, and a sense how little they had been gainers by the change of government, must naturally have excited*. The unfortunate issue of the Scots expedition under the duke of Hamilton, and of the various insurrections throughout England, quelled by the vigilance and good conduct of Fairfax and Cromwell, is well known. But these formidable manifestations of the public sentiment in favour of peace with the king on honourable conditions, wherein the city of London, ruled by the presbyterian ministers, took a share, compelled the house of commons to retract its measures. They came to a vote, by 165 to 99, that they would not alter the fundamental government by king, lords, and commons†; they abandoned their impeachment against seven peers, the most moderate of the upper house, and the most obnoxious to the army‡: they restored the eleven members to their seats§; they revoked their resolutions against a personal treaty with the king, and even that which required his assent by certain preliminary articles‖. In a word, the party for distinction's sake called pres-

* Clarendon. May, Breviate of the Hist. of the Parliament, in Maseres's Tracts, i. 113. Whitelock, 307, 317, &c. In a conference between the two houses, July 25, 1648, the commons gave as a reason for insisting on the king's surrender of the militia as a preliminary to a treaty, that such was the disaffection to the parliament on all sides, that without the militia they could never be secure. Rush. Abr. vi. 444. "The chief citizens of London," says May, 122, "and others called presbyterians, though the presbyterian Scots abominated this army, wished good success to these Scots no less than the malignants did. Whence let the reader judge of the times." The fugitive sheets of this year, such as the Mercurius Aulicus, bear witness to the exulting and insolent tone of the royalists. They chuckle over Fairfax and Cromwell as if they had caught a couple of rats in a trap.

† April 28, 1648. Parl. Hist. 883.

‡ June 6. These peers were the earls of Suffolk, Middlesex, and Lincoln, lords Willoughby of Parham, Berkley, Hunsdon, and Maynard. They were impeached for sitting in the house during the tumults from 26th of July to 6th of August, 1647. The earl of Pembroke, who had also continued to sit, merely because he was too stupid to discover which party was likely to prevail, escaped by truckling to the new powers.

§ June 8.

‖ See Parl. Hist. 823, 892, 904, 921, 924, 959, 996, for the different votes on this subject, wherein the presbyterians gra-

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

byterian, but now rather to be denominated constitutional, regained its ascendancy. This change in the counsels of parliament brought on the treaty of Newport.

The treaty of Newport was set on foot and managed by those politicians of the house of lords, who having long suspected no danger to themselves but from the power of the king, had discovered, somewhat of the latest, that the crown itself was at stake, and that their own privileges were set on the same cast. Nothing was more remote from the intentions of the earl of Northumberland, or lord Say, than to see themselves pushed from their seats by such upstarts as Ireton and Harrison; and their present mortification afforded a proof how men reckoned wise in their generation become the dupes of their own selfish, crafty, and pusillanimous policy. They now grew anxious to see a treaty concluded with the king. Sensible that it was necessary to anticipate, if possible, the return of Cromwell from the north, they implored him to comply at once with all the propositions of parliament, or at least to yield in the first instance as far as he meant to go *. They had not, however, mitigated in any degree the

dually beat the independent or republican party, but with very small and precarious majorities.

* Clarendon, vi. 155. He is very absurd in imagining that any of the parliamentary commissioners would have been satisfied with "an act of indemnity and oblivion."

That the parliament had some reason to expect the king's firmness of purpose to give way, in spite of all his haggling, will appear from the following short review of what had been done. 1. At Newmarket, in June 1642, he absolutely refused the nineteen propositions tendered to him by the lords and commons. 2. In the treaty of Oxford, March 1643, he seems to have made no concession, not even promising an amnesty to those he had already excluded from pardon. 3. In the treaty of Uxbridge, no mention was made on his side of exclusion from pardon; he offered to vest the militia for seven years in commissioners jointly appointed by himself and parliament, so that it should afterwards return to him, and to limit the jurisdiction of the bishops. 4. In the winter of 1645, he not only offered to disband his forces, but to let the militia be vested for seven years in commissioners to be appointed by the two houses, and afterwards to be settled by bill; also to give the nomination of officers of state and judges pro hâc vice to the houses. 5. He went no farther in substance till May 1647, when he offered the militia for ten years, as well as great limitations of episcopacy, and the continuance of presbyterian government for three years; the whole matter to be afterwards settled by bill on the advice of the assembly of divines, and twenty more of his own nomination. 6. In his letter from Carisbrook, Nov. 1647, he gave up the militia for his life. This was in effect to sacrifice almost every thing, as

rigorous conditions so often proposed; nor did the king during this treaty obtain any reciprocal concession worth mentioning in return for his surrender of almost all that could be demanded. Did the positive adherence of the parliament to all these propositions, in circumstances so perilous to themselves, display less unreasonable pertinacity than that so often imputed to Charles? Or if, as was the fact, the majority which the presbyterians had obtained was so precarious, that they dared not hazard it by suggesting any more moderate counsels, what rational security would the treaty have afforded him, had he even come at once into all their requisitions? His real error was to have entered upon any treaty, and still more to have drawn it out by tardy and

to immediate power; but he struggled to save the church lands from confiscation, which would have rendered it hardly practicable to restore episcopacy in future. His further concessions in the treaty of Newport, though very slowly extorted, were comparatively trifling.

What Clarendon thought of the treaty of Newport may be imagined. "You may easily conclude," he writes to Digby, "how fit a counsellor I am like to be, when the best that is proposed is that which I *would not consent unto to preserve the kingdom from ashes.* I can tell you worse of myself than this; which is, that there may be some reasonable expedients, which possibly might in truth restore and preserve all, in which I could bear no part." P. 459 See also p. 351 and 416. I do not divine what he means by this. But what he could not have approved was, that the king had no thoughts of dealing sincerely with the parliament in this treaty, and gave Ormond directions to obey all his wife's commands, but not to obey any further orders he might send, nor to be startled at his great concessions respecting Ireland, for they would come to nothing. Carte's Papers, i. 185. See Mr. Brodie's remarks on this, iv. 143—146. He had agreed to give up the government of Ireland for twenty years to the parliament. In his answer to the propositions at Newcastle, sent in May, 1647, he had declared that he would give full satisfaction with respect to Ireland. But he thus explains himself to the queen—"I have so couched that article, that, if the Irish give me cause, I may interpret it enough to their advantage. For I only say that I will give them (the two houses) full satisfaction as to the management of the war, nor do I promise to continue the war; so that if I find reason to make a good peace there, my engagement is at an end. Wherefore make this my interpretation known to the Irish." Clar. State Papers. "What reliance," says Mr. Laing, from whom I transcribe this passage (which I cannot find in the book quoted), "could parliament place at the beginning of the dispute, or at any subsequent period, on the word or moderation of a prince, whose solemn and written declarations were so full of equivocation?" Hist. of Scotland, iii. 409. It may here be added, that though Charles had given his parole to Col. Hammond, and had the sentinels removed in consequence, he was engaged during most part of his stay at Carisbrook in schemes for an escape. See Col. Cooke's Narrative, printed with Herbert's Memoirs; and in Rushw. Abr. vi. 534. But his enemies were apprised of this intention, and even of an attempt to escape by removing a bar of his window, as appears by the letters from the committee of Derby House, Cromwell, and others, to Col. Hammond, published in 1764.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

ineffectual capitulations. There had long been only one course either for safety or for honour, the abdication of his royal office; now probably too late to preserve his life, but still more honourable than the treaty of Newport. Yet though he was desirous to make his escape to France, I have not observed any hint that he had thoughts of resigning the crown; whether from any mistaken sense of obligation, or from an apprehension that it might affect the succession of his son.

There can be no more erroneous opinion than that of such as believe that the desire of overturning the monarchy produced the civil war, rather than that the civil war brought on the former. In a peaceful and ancient kingdom like England, the thought of change could not spontaneously arise; a very few speculative men, by the study of antiquity, or by observation of the prosperity of Venice and Holland, might be led to an abstract preference of republican politics; some fanatics might aspire to a Jewish theocracy; but at the meeting of the Long Parliament, we have not the slightest cause to suppose that any party, or any number of persons among its members, had formed what must then have appeared so extravagant a conception *. The insuperable distrust of the king's designs, the irritation excited by the sufferings of the war, the impracticability, which every attempt at negotiation displayed, of obtaining his acquiescence to terms deemed indispensable, gradually created a powerful faction, whose chief bond of union was a determination to set him aside †. What further

* Clarendon mentions an expression that dropped from Henry Martin in conversation, not long after the meeting of the parliament; "I do not think one man wise enough to govern us all." This may doubtless be taken in a sense perfectly compatible with our limited monarchy. But Martin's republicanism was soon apparent; he was sent to the Tower in August, 1643, for language reflecting on the king. Parl. Hist. 161. A Mr. Chillingworth had before incurred the same punishment for a like offence, Dec. 1, 1641. Nalson, ii. 714. Sir Henry Ludlow, father of the regicide, was also censured on the same account. As the opposite faction grew stronger, Martin was not only restored to his seat, but the vote against him was expunged. Vane, I presume, took up republican principles pretty early; perhaps also Haslerig. With these exceptions, I know not that we can fix on any individual member of parliament the charge of an intention to subvert the constitution till 1646 or 1647.

† Pamphlets may be found as early as 1643 which breathe this spirit, but they

scheme they had planned is uncertain; none probably in which any number were agreed: some looked to the prince of Wales, others, perhaps, at one time, to the elector palatine *; but necessity itself must have suggested to many the idea of a republican settlement. In the new-modelled army of 1645, composed of independents and enthusiasts of every denomination, a fervid eagerness for changes in the civil polity, as well as in religion, was soon found to predominate. Not checked, like the two houses, by attachment to forms, and by the influence of lawyers, they launched forth into varied projects of reform, sometimes judicious, or at least plausible, sometimes wildly fanatical. They reckoned the king a tyrant, whom, as they might fight against, they might also put to death, and whom it were folly to provoke if he were again to become their master. Elated with their vic-

are certainly rare till 1645 and 1646. Such are "Plain English," 1643; "The Character of an Anti-malignant," 1645; "Last Warning to all the Inhabitants of London," 1647.

* Charles Louis, elector palatine, elder brother of the princes Rupert and Maurice, gave cause to suspect that he was looking towards the throne. He left the king's quarters, where he had been at the commencement of the war, and retired to Holland; whence he wrote, as well as his mother, the queen of Bohemia, to the parliament, disclaiming and renouncing prince Rupert, and begging their own pensions might be paid. He came over to London in August, 1644, took the covenant, and courted the parliament. They showed, however, at first, a good deal of jealousy of him, and intimated that his affairs would prosper better by his leaving the kingdom. Whitelock, 101. Rush. Abr. xv. 359. He did not take this hint, and obtained next year an allowance of 8000*l.* per annum. Id. 145. Lady Ranelagh, in a letter to Hyde, March, 1644, conjuring him by his regard for lord Falkland's memory to use all his influence to procure a message from the king for a treaty, adds: "Methinks what I have informed my sister, and what she will inform you of the posture the prince elector's affairs are in here, should be a motive to hasten away this message." Clar. State Papers, ii. 167. Clarendon himself, in a letter to Nicholas, Dec. 12, 1646, where he gives his opinion, that the independents look more to a change of the king and his line, than of the monarchy itself, and would restore the full prerogative of the crown to one of their own choice, proceeds in these remarkable words: "And I pray God they have not such a nose of wax ready for their impression. This it is makes me tremble more than all their discourses of destroying monarchy; and that towards this end they find assistance from those who from their hearts abhor their confusions." P. 308. These expressions seem more applicable by far to the elector than to Cromwell. But the former was not dangerous, though it was deemed fit to treat him with respect. In March, 1647, we find a committee of both houses appointed to receive some intelligence which the prince elector desired to communicate to the parliament of great importance to the protestant religion. Whitelock, 241. Nothing farther appears about this intelligence, which looks as if he was merely afraid of being forgotten. He left England in 1649, and died in 1680.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

tories, they began already, in imagination, to carve out the kingdom for themselves, and remembered that saying, so congenial to a revolutionary army, that the first of monarchs was a successful leader, the first of nobles were his followers *.

The knowledge of this innovating spirit in the army gave confidence to the violent party in parliament, and increased its numbers by the accession of some of those to whom nature has given a fine sense for discerning their own advantage. It was doubtless swollen through the king's letters, and his pertinacity in clinging to his prerogative. And the complexion of the house of commons was materially altered by the introduction at once of a large body of fresh members. They had at the beginning abstained from issuing writs to replace those whose death or expulsion had left their seats vacant. These vacancies, by the disabling votes against all the king's party †, became so numerous, that it seemed a glaring violation of the popular principles to which they appealed, to carry on the public business, with so maimed a representation of the people. It was, however, plainly impossible to have elections in many parts of the kingdom, while the royal army was in strength; and the change by filling up nearly two hundred vacancies at once was likely to become so important, that some feared that the cavaliers, others that the independents and republicans, might find their advantage in it ‡. The latter party were generally earnest for new elections, and carried their

* Baxter's Life, 50. He ascribes the increase of enthusiasm in the army to the loss of its presbyterian chaplains, who left it for their benefices, on the reduction of the king's party and the new-modelling of the troops. The officers then took on them to act as preachers. Id. 54; and Neal, 183. I conceive that the year 1645 is that to which we must refer the appearance of a republican party in considerable numbers, though not yet among the house of commons.

† These passed against the royalist members separately, and for the most part in the first months of the war.

‡ "The best friends of the parliament were not without fears what the issue of the new elections might be; for though the people durst not choose such as were open enemies to them, yet probably they would such as were most likely to be for a peace on any terms, corruptly preferring the fruition of their estates and sensual enjoyments before the public interest," &c. Ludlow, i. 168. This is a fair confession how little the commonwealth party had the support of the nation.

point against the presbyterians in September, 1645, when new writs were ordered for all the places which were left deficient of one or both representatives*. The result of these elections, though a few persons rather friendly to the king came into the house, was on the whole very favourable to the army. The self-denying ordinance no longer being in operation, the principal officers were elected on every side, and, with not many exceptions, recruited the ranks of that small body which had already been marked by implacable dislike of the king, and by zeal for a total new-modelling of the government†. In the summer of 1646, this party had so far obtained the upper hand, that, according to one of our best authorities, the Scots commissioners had all imaginable difficulty to prevent his deposition. In the course of the year 1647, more overt proofs of a design to change the established constitution were given by a party out of doors. A petition was addressed "to the supreme authority of this nation, the commons assembled in parliament." It was voted upon a division, that the house dislikes this petition, and cannot approve of its being delivered; and afterwards, by a majority of only 94 to 86, that it was seditious and insolent, and should be burned by the hangman‡. Yet the first decisive proof, perhaps, which the journals of parliament afford of the existence of a republican party, was the vote of 22d Sept. 1647, that they would once again make application to the king for those things which they judged necessary for the welfare and safety of the king-

* C. Journals. Whitelock, 168. The borough of Southwark had just before petitioned for a new writ, its member being dead or disabled.

† That the house of commons, in December, 1645, entertained no views of altering the fundamental constitution, appears from some of their resolutions as to conditions of peace: "That Fairfax should have an earldom, with 5000*l.* a year; Cromwell and Waller baronies, with half that estate; Essex, Northumberland, and two more be made dukes; Manchester and Salisbury marquisses, and other peers of their party be elevated to higher ranks; Haslerig, Stapleton, and Skippon to have pensions." Parl. Hist. 403. Whitelock, 182. These votes do not speak much for the magnanimity and disinterestedness of that assembly, though it may suit political romancers to disclaim about it.

‡ Commons Journals, May 4 and 18, 1647. This minority were not, in general, republican; but were unwilling to increase the irritation of the army by so strong a vote.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

dom. This was carried by 70 to 23*. Their subsequent resolution of Jan. 4, 1648, against any further addresses to the king, which passed by a majority of 141 to 91, was a virtual renunciation of allegiance. The lords, after a warm debate, concurred in this vote. And the army had in November, 1647, before the king's escape from Hampton Court, published a declaration of their design for the settlement of the nation under a sovereign representative assembly, which should possess authority to make or repeal laws, and to call magistrates to account.

We are not certainly to conclude, that all who, in 1648, had made up their minds against the king's restoration, were equally averse to all regal government. The prince of Wales had taken so active, and, for a moment, so successful a share in the war of that year, that his father's enemies were become his own. Meetings, however, were held, where the military and parliamentary chiefs discussed the schemes of raising the duke of York, or his younger brother the duke of Glocester, to the throne. Cromwell, especially, wavered, or pretended to waver, as to the settlement of the nation; nor is there any evidence, as far as I know, that he had ever professed himself adverse to monarchy, till, dexterously mounting on the wave which he could not stem, he led on

* Commons' Journals, Whitelock, 271. Parl. Hist. 781. They had just been exasperated by his evasion of their propositions, Ib. 778. By the smallness of the numbers, and the names of the tellers, it seems as if the presbyterian party had been almost entirely absent, which may be also inferred from other parts of the Journals. See October 9, for a long list of absentees. Haslerig and Evelyn, both of the army faction, told the Ayes, Martin and Sir Peter Wentworth the Noes. The house had divided the day before on the qnestion for going into a committee to take this matter into consideration, 84 to 34; Cromwell and Evelyn telling the majority, Wentworth and Rainsborough, the minority. I suppose it is from some of these divisions that Baron Maseres has reckoned the republican party in the house not to exceed thirty.

It was resolved on Nov. 6, 1647, that the king of England, for the time being, was bound in justice, and by the duty of his office, to give his assent to all such laws as by the lords and commons in parliament shall be adjudged to be for the good of the kingdom, and by them tendered unto him for his assent. But the previous question was carried on the following addition: "And in case the laws, so offered unto him, shall not thereupon be assented unto by him, that nevertheless they are as valid to all intents and purposes as if his assent had not been thereunto had and obtained, which they do insist upon as an undoubted right." Com. Jour.

those zealots who had resolved to celebrate the inauguration of their new commonwealth with the blood of a victim king *.

It was about the end of 1647, as I have said, that the principal officers took the determination, which had been already menaced by some of the agitators, of bringing the king, as the first and greatest delinquent, to public justice †. Too stern and haughty, too confident of the rightfulness of their actions, to think of private assassination, they sought to gratify their pride by the solemnity and notoriousness, by the very infamy and eventual danger, of an act unprecedented in the history of nations.

* Ludlow says, that Cromwell "finding the king's friends grow strong in 1648, began to court the commonwealth's party. The latter told him he knew how to cajole and give them good words, when he had occasion to make use of them; whereat, breaking out into a rage, he said they were a proud sort of people, and only considerable in their own conceits." P. 240. Does this look as if he had been reckoned one of them?

† Clarendon says that there were many consultations among the officers about the best mode of disposing of the king; some were for deposing him, others for poison or assassination, which, he fancies, would have been put in practice, if they could have prevailed on Hammond. But this is not warranted by our better authorities.

It is hard to say at what time the first bold man dared to talk of bringing the king to justice. But in a letter of Baillie to Alexander Henderson, May 19, 1646, he says, "if God have hardened him, so far as I can perceive, this people will strive to have him in their power, and make an example of him; *I abhor to think what they speak of execution!*" ii. 20: published also in Dalrymple's Memorials of Charles I. p. 166. Proofs may also be brought from pamphlets by Lilburne and others in 1647, especially towards the end of that year; and the remonstrance of the Scots parliament, dated Aug. 13, alludes to such language. Rushw. Abr. vi. 245. Berkley, indeed, positively assures us, that the resolution was taken at Windsor, in a council of officers, soon after the king's confinement at Carisbrook; and this with so much particularity of circumstance, that if we reject his account, we must set aside the whole of his memoirs at the same time. Maseres's Tracts, i. 383. But it is fully confirmed by an independent testimony, William Allen, himself one of the council of officers, and adjutant-general of the army, who, in a letter addressed to Fleetwood, and published in 1659, declares that after much consultation and prayer at Windsor Castle, in the beginning of 1648, they had "come to a very clear and joint resolution that it was their duty to call Charles Stuart, that man of blood, to an account for the blood he had shed, and mischief he had done to his utmost, against the Lord's cause and people in these poor nations." This is to be found in Somers Tracts, vi. 499. The only discrepancy, if it is one, between him and Berkley, is as to the precise time, which the other seems to place in the end of 1647. But this might be a lapse of memory in either party; nor is it clear, on looking attentively at Berkley's narration, that he determines the time. Ashburnham says, "for some days before the king's remove from HamptonCourt, there was scarcely a day in which several alarms were not brought him by and from several considerable persons, both well affected to him and likely to know much of what was then in agitation, of the resolution which a violent party in the army had to take away his life. And that such a design there was, there were strong insinuations to persuade"

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

Throughout the year 1648, this design, though suspended, became familiar to the people's expectation *. The commonwealth's men and the levellers, the various sectaries (admitting a few exceptions) grew clamorous for the king's death. Petitions were presented to the commons, praying for justice on all delinquents, from the highest to the lowest †. And not long afterwards the general officers of the army came forward with a long remonstrance against any treaty, and insisting that the capital and grand author of their troubles be speedily brought to justice, for the treason, blood, and mischief, whereof he had been guilty ‡. This was soon followed by the vote of the presbyterian party, that the answers of the king to the propositions of both houses are a ground for the house to proceed upon for the settlement of the peace of the kingdom §, by the violent expulsion, or, as it was called, seclusion of all the presbyterian members from the house, and the ordinance of a wretched minority, commonly called the Rump, constituting the high court of justice for the trial of the king ‖.

A very small number among those who sat in this strange tribunal upon Charles the First were undoubtedly capable of taking statesman-like views of the interests of their party, and might consider his death a politic expedient for consolidating the new settlement. It seemed to involve the army, which had openly abetted the act, and even the nation by its passive consent, in such inexpiable guilt towards the royal family, that neither common prudence nor a sense of shame would permit them to suffer its restoration. But by the far greater part of the regicides such considerations were either overlooked or kept in the back ground.

* Somers Tracts, v. 160, 162.

† Sept. 11. Parl. Hist. 1077. May's Breviate in Maseres's Tracts, vol. i. p. 127. Whitelock, 335.

‡ Nov. 17. Parl. Hist. 1077. Whitelock, p. 355. A motion, Nov. 30, that the house do now proceed on the remonstrance of the army, was lost by 125 to 58, (printed, 53, in Parl. Hist.) Commons' Journals. So weak was still the republican party. It is indeed remarkable that this remonstrance itself is rather against the king, than absolutely against all monarchy; for one of the proposals contained in it is that kings should be chosen by the people, and have no negative voice.

§ The division was on the previous question, which was lost by 129 to 83.

‖ No division took place on any of the votes respecting the king's trial.

Their more powerful motive was that fierce fanatical hatred of the king, the natural fruit of long civil dissension, inflamed by preachers more dark and sanguinary than those they addressed, and by a perverted study of the Jewish scriptures. They had been wrought to believe, not that his execution would be justified by state-necessity, or any such feeble grounds of human reasoning, but that it was a bounden duty, which with a safe conscience they could not neglect. Such was the persuasion of Ludlow and Hutchinson, the most respectable names among the regicides; both of them free from all suspicion of interestedness or hypocrisy, and less intoxicated than the rest by fanaticism. "I was fully persuaded," says the former, "that an accommodation with the king was unsafe to the people of England, and unjust and wicked in the nature of it. The former, besides that it was obvious to all men, the king himself had proved, by the duplicity of his dealing with the parliament, which manifestly appeared in his own papers, taken at the battle of Naseby and elsewhere. Of the latter I was convinced by the express words of God's law; 'that blood defileth the land, and the land cannot be cleansed of the blood that is shed therein, but by the blood of him that shed it.' (Numbers, c. xxxv. v. 33.) And therefore I could not consent to leave the guilt of so much blood on the nation, and thereby to draw down the just vengeance of God upon us all, when it was most evident that the war had been occasioned by the invasion of our rights, and open breach of our laws and constitution on the king's part *." "As for Mr. Hutchinson," says his high-souled consort, "although he was very much confirmed in his judgment concerning the cause, yet being here called to an extraordinary action, whereof many were of several minds, he addressed himself to God by prayer, desiring the Lord, that, if through any human frailty, he were led into any error or false opinion in those great transactions, he would open his eyes, and not suffer him to proceed, but that he would confirm his spirit in the truth, and lead

* Ludlow, i. 267.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

him by a right-enlightened conscience; and finding no check, but a confirmation in his conscience, that it was his duty to act as he did, he, upon serious debate, both privately and in his addresses to God, and in conferences with conscientious, upright, unbiassed persons, proceeded to sign the sentence against the king. Although he did not then believe but it might one day come to be again disputed among men, yet both he and others thought they could not refuse it without giving up the people of God, whom they had led forth and engaged themselves unto by the oath of God, into the hands of God's and their enemies; and therefore he cast himself upon God's protection, acting according to the dictates of a conscience which he had sought the Lord to guide; and accordingly the Lord did signalize his favour afterward to him *."

The execution of Charles the First has been mentioned in later ages by a few with unlimited praise, by some with faint and ambiguous censure, by most with vehement reprobation. My own judgment will possibly be anticipated by the reader of the preceding pages. I shall certainly not rest it on the imaginary sacredness and divine origin of royalty, nor even on the irresponsibility with which the law of almost every country invests the person of its sovereign. Far be it from me to contend, that no case smay be conceived, that no instances may be found in history, wherein the sympathy of mankind and the sound principles of political justice would approve a public judicial sentence as the due reward of tyranny and perfidiousness. But we may confidently deny that Charles the First was thus to be singled out as a warning to tyrants. His offences were not, in the worst interpretation, of that atrocious character which calls down the vengeance of insulted humanity, regardless of positive law. His government had been very arbitrary; but it may well be doubted whether any, even of his ministers, could have suffered death for

* Hutchinson, p. 303.

their share in it, without introducing a principle of barbarous vindictiveness. Far from the sanguinary misanthropy of some monarchs, or the revengeful fury of others, he had in no instance displayed, nor does the minute scrutiny since made into his character entitle us to suppose any malevolent dispositions beyond some proneness to anger, and a considerable degree of harshness in his demeanour *. As for the charge of having caused the bloodshed of the war, upon which, and not on any former mis-government, his condemnation was grounded, it was as ill established, as it would have been insufficient. Well might the earl of Northumberland say, when the ordinance for the king's trial was before the lords, that the greatest part of the people of England were not yet satisfied, whether the king levied war first against the houses, or the houses against him †. The fact, in my opinion, was entirely otherwise. It is quite another question whether the parliament were justified in their resistance to the king's legal authority. But we may contend, that when Hotham, by their command, shut the gates of Hull against his sovereign,

* The king's manners were not good. He spoke and behaved to ladies with indelicacy in public. See Warburton's Notes on Clarendon, vii. 629, and a passage in Milton's Defensio pro populo Anglicano, quoted by Harris and Brodie. He once forgot himself so far as to cane sir Henry Vane for coming into a room of the palace reserved for persons of higher rank. Carte's Ormond, i. 356, where other instances are mentioned by that friendly writer. He had in truth none who loved him, till his misfortunes softened his temper, and excited sympathy.

An anecdote, strongly intimating the violence of Charles's temper, has been rejected by his advocates. It is said that Burnet, in searching the Hamilton papers, found that the king, on discovering the celebrated letter of the Scots covenanting lords to the king of France, was so incensed, that he sent an order to sir William Balfour, lieutenant-governor of the Tower, to cut off the head of his prisoner, lord Loudon, but that the marquis of Hamilton, to whom Balfour immediately communicated this, urged so strongly on the king that the city would be up in arms on this violence, that with reluctance he withdrew the warrant. This story is told by Oldmixon, Hist. of the Stuarts, p. 140. It was brought forward on Burnet's authority, and also on that of the duke of Hamilton, killed in 1712, by Dr. Birch, no incompetent judge of historical evidence; it seems confirmed by an intimation given by Burnet himself in his Memoirs of the Duke of Hamilton, p. 161. It is said by Laing, iii. 189, to be also mentioned by Scott of Scotstarvet, a contemporary writer. Harris, p. 350. quotes other authorities, earlier than the anecdote told of Burnet; and upon the whole, I think the story deserving credit, and by no means so much to be slighted as the Oxford editor of Burnet has thought fit to do.

† Clement Walker, Hist. of Independency, Part II. p. 55.

CHAP. X. Charles I. 1642—49.

when the militia was called out in different counties by an ordinance of the two houses, both which preceded by several weeks any levying of forces for the king, the bonds of our constitutional law were by them and their servants snapped asunder; and it would be the mere pedantry and chicane of political casuistry to inquire, even if the fact could be better ascertained, whether at Edgehill, or in the minor skirmishes that preceded, the first carbine was discharged by a cavalier or a roundhead. The aggressor in a war is not the first who uses force, but the first who renders force necessary.

But, whether we may think this war to have originated in the king's or the parliament's aggression, it is still evident that the former had a fair case with the nation, a cause which it was no plain violation of justice to defend. He was supported by the greater part of the peers, by full one third of the commons, by the principal body of the gentry, and a large proportion of other classes. If his adherents did not form, as I think they did not, the majority of the people, they were at least more numerous, beyond comparison, than those who demanded or approved of his death. The steady deliberate perseverance of so considerable a body in any cause takes away the right of punishment from the conquerors, beyond what their own safety or reasonable indemnification may require. The vanquished are to be judged by the rules of national, not of municipal law. Hence, if Charles, after having by a course of victories, or the defection of the people, prostrated all opposition, had abused his triumph by the execution of Essex or Hampden, or Fairfax or Cromwell, I think that later ages would have disapproved of their deaths as positively, though not quite as vehemently, as they have of his own. The line is not easily drawn, in abstract reasoning, between the treason that is justly punished, and the social schism which is beyond the proper boundaries of law; but the civil war of England seems plainly to fall within the latter description. These objections strike me as unanswerable, even if the trial of Charles had been sanctioned

by the voice of the nation through its legitimate representatives, or at least such a fair and full convention, as might, in great necessity, supply the place of lawful authority. But it was, as we all know, the act of a bold but very small minority, who having forcibly expelled their colleagues from parliament, had usurped, under the protection of a military force, that power which all England reckoned illegal. I cannot perceive what there was in the imagined solemnity of this proceeding, in that insolent mockery of the forms of justice, accompanied by all unfairness and inhumanity in its circumstances, which can alleviate the guilt of the transaction; and if it be alleged that many of the regicides were firmly persuaded in their consciences of the right and duty of condemning the king, we may surely remember that private murderers have often had the same apology.

In discussing each particular transaction in the life of Charles, as of any other sovereign, it is required by the truth of history to spare no just animadversion upon his faults; especially where much art has been employed by the writers most in repute to carry the stream of public prejudice in an opposite direction. But when we come to a general estimate of his character, we should act unfairly not to give their full weight to those peculiar circumstances of his condition in this worldly scene, which tend to account for and extenuate his failings. The station of kings is, in a moral sense, so unfavourable, that those who are least prone to servile admiration should be on their guard against the opposite error of an uncandid severity. There seems no fairer method of estimating the intrinsic worth of a sovereign, than to treat him as a subject, and judge, so far as the history of his life enables us, what he would have been in that more private and happier condition, from which the chance of birth has excluded him. Tried by this test, we cannot doubt that Charles the First would have been not altogether an amiable man, but one deserving of general esteem; his firm and conscientious virtues the same, his deviations from right far less frequent, than upon

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

the throne. It is to be pleaded for this prince, that his youth had breathed but the contaminated air of a profligate and servile court, that he had imbibed the lessons of arbitrary power from all who surrounded him, that he had been betrayed by a father's culpable blindness into the dangerous society of an ambitious, unprincipled favourite. To have maintained so much correctness of morality as his enemies confess, was a proof of Charles's virtuous dispositions; but his advocates are compelled also to own, that he did not escape as little injured by the poisonous adulation to which he had listened. Of a temper by nature, and by want of restraint, too passionate, though not vindictive; and, though not absolutely cruel, certainly deficient in gentleness and humanity, he was entirely unfit for the very difficult station of royalty, and especially for that of a constitutional king. It is impossible to excuse his violations of liberty on the score of ignorance, especially after the petition of right; because his impatience of opposition from his council made it unsafe to give him any advice that thwarted his determination. His other great fault was want of sincerity—a fault that appeared in all parts of his life, and from which no one who has paid the subject any attention will pretend to exculpate him. Those indeed who know nothing but what they find in Hume, may believe, on Hume's authority, that the king's contemporaries never dreamed of imputing to him any deviation from good faith; as if the whole conduct of the parliament had not been evidently founded upon a distrust, which on many occasions they very explicitly declared. But, so far as this insincerity was shown in the course of his troubles, it was a failing which untoward circumstances are apt to produce, and which the extreme hypocrisy of many among his adversaries might sometimes palliate. Few personages in history, we should recollect, have had so much of their actions revealed, and commented upon, as Charles; it is perhaps a mortifying truth, that those who have stood highest with posterity have seldom been those who have been most accurately known.

The turn of his mind was rather peculiar, and laid him open with some justice to very opposite censures—for an extreme obstinacy in retaining his opinion, and for an excessive facility in adopting that of others. But the apparent incongruity ceases when we observe that he was tenacious of ends, and irresolute as to means; better fitted to reason than to act; never swerving from a few main principles, but diffident of his own judgment in its application to the course of affairs. His chief talent was an acuteness in dispute; a talent not usually much exercised by kings, but which the strange events of his life called into action. He had, unfortunately for himself, gone into the study most fashionable in that age, of polemical theology; and, though not at all learned, had read enough of the English divines to maintain their side of the current controversies with much dexterity. But this unkingly talent was a poor compensation for the continual mistakes of his judgment in the art of government, and the conduct of his affairs*.

It seems natural not to leave untouched, in this place, the famous problem of the Icon Basilike, which has been deemed an irrefragable evidence both of the virtues and the talents of Charles. But the authenticity of this work can hardly be any longer a question among judicious men. We have letters from Gauden and his family, asserting it as his own in the most express terms, and making it the ground of a claim for reward. We know that the king's sons were both convinced that it was not their father's composition, that Clarendon was satisfied of the same. If Gauden

* Clarendon, Collier, and the high-church writers in general, are very proud of the superiority they fancy the king to have obtained in a long argumentation held at Newcastle with Henderson, a Scots minister, on church authority and government. This was conducted in writing, and the papers afterwards published. They may be read in the King's Works, and in Collier, p. 842. It is more than insinuated that Henderson died of mortification at his defeat. He had certainly not the excuse of the philosopher, who said he had no shame in yielding to the master of fifty legions. But those who take the trouble to read these papers will probably not think one party so much the stronger as to shorten the other's days. They show that Charles held those extravagant tenets about the authority of the church and of the fathers, which are irreconcilable with protestantism, in any country where it is not established, and are likely to drive it out where it is so.

CHAP. X.

Charles I. 1642—49.

not only set up a false claim to so famous a work, but persuaded those nearest to the king to surrender that precious record, as it had been reckoned, of his dying sentiments, it was an instance of successful impudence which has hardly a parallel. But I should be content to rest the case on that internal evidence, which has been so often alleged for its authenticity. The Icon has to my judgment all the air of a fictitious composition. Cold, stiff, elaborate, without a single allusion that bespeaks the superior knowledge of facts, which the king must have possessed, it contains little but those rhetorical common-places which would suggest themselves to any forger. The prejudices of party, which exercise a strange influence in matters of taste, have caused this book to be extravagantly praised. It has doubtless a certain air of grave dignity, and the periods are more artificially constructed than was usual in that age (a circumstance not in favour of its authenticity); but the style is encumbered with frigid metaphors, as is said to be the case in Gauden's acknowledged writings; and the thoughts are neither beautiful, nor always exempt from affectation. The king's letters during his imprisonment, preserved in the Clarendon State Papers, and especially one to his son, from which an extract is given in the History of the Rebellion, are more satisfactory proofs of his integrity than the laboured self-panegyrics of the Icon Basilike*.

* The note on this passage, on account of its length, is placed at the end of the volume.

PART II.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

THE death of Charles the First was pressed forward rather through personal hatred and superstition, than out of any notion of its necessity to secure a republican administration. That party was still so weak, that the commons came more slowly, and with more difference of judgment, than might be expected, to an absolute renunciation of monarchy. They voted indeed that the people are, under God, the original of all just power; and that whatever is enacted by the commons in parliament hath the force of law, although the consent and concurrence of the king or house of peers be not had thereto; terms manifestly not exclusive of the nominal continuance of the two latter. They altered the public style from the king's name to that of the parliament, and gave other indications of their intentions; but the vote for the abolition of monarchy did not pass till the seventh of February, after a debate, according to Whitelock, but without a division. None of that clamorous fanaticism showed itself, which, within our memory, produced, from a far more numerous assembly, an instantaneous decision against monarchy. Wise men might easily perceive that the regal power was only suspended through the force of circumstances, not abrogated by any real change in public opinion.

The house of lords, still less able than the crown to withstand the inroads of democracy, fell by a vote of the commons at the same time. It had continued during the whole progress of the war to keep up as much dignity as the state of affairs would permit; tenacious of small privileges, and offering much temporary opposition in higher matters, though always receding in the end from a contention wherein it could not be successful. The commons, in return, gave them respectful language, and discountenanced the rude innovators who talked against the

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

rights of the peerage. They voted, on occasion of some rumours, that they held themselves obliged, by the fundamental laws of the kingdom and their covenant, to preserve the peerage with the rights and privileges belonging to the house of peers, equally with their own *. Yet this was with a secret reserve, that the lords should be of the same mind as themselves. For the upper house having resented some words dropped from sir John Evelyn at a conference concerning the removal of the king to Warwick Castle, importing that the commons might be compelled to act without them, the commons vindicating their member as if his words did not bear that interpretation, yet added, in the same breath, a plain hint that it was not beyond their own views of what might be done; "hoping that their lordships did not intend by their inference upon the words, even in the sense they took the same, so to bind up this house to one way of proceeding, as that in no case whatsoever, though never so extraordinary, though never so much importing the honour and interest of the kingdom, the commons of England might not do their duty, for the good and safety of the kingdom, in such a way as they may, if they cannot do it in such a way as they would and most desire †."

After the violent seclusion of the constitutional party from the house of commons, on the 6th of December, 1648, very few, not generally more than five, peers continued to meet. Their number was suddenly increased to twelve on the 2d of January, when the vote of the commons, that it is high treason in the king of England, for the time being, to levy war against parliament, and the ordinance constituting the high court of justice were sent up for their concurrence. These were unanimously rejected with more spirit than some, at least, of their number might be expected to display. Yet as if apprehensive of giving too much

* Parl. Hist. 349. The council of war more than once, in the year 1647, declared their intention of preserving the rights of the peerage. Whitelock, 288, and Sir William Waller's Vindication, 192.

† Commons' Journals, 13th and 19th May, 1646.

umbrage, they voted, at their next meeting, to prepare an ordinance, making it treasonable for any future king of England to levy war against the parliament—a measure quite as unconstitutional as that they had rejected. They continued to linger on the verge of annihilation during the month, making petty orders about writs of error, from four to six being present: they even met on the 30th of January. On the 1st of February, six peers forming the house, it was moved, "that they would take into consideration the settlement of the government of England and Ireland, in this present conjuncture of things upon the death of the king;" and ordered that these lords following (naming those present and three more) be appointed to join with a proportionable number of the house of commons for that purpose. Soon after the speaker acquainted the house, that he had that morning received a letter from the earl of Northumberland, with a paper inclosed, of very great concernment; and for the present the house ordered that it should be sealed up with the speaker's seal. This probably related to the impending dissolution of their house; for they found next day that their messengers sent to the commons had not been admitted. They persisted, however, in meeting till the 6th, when they made a trifling order, and adjourned "till ten o'clock to-morrow *." That morrow was the 25th of April, 1660. For the commons having the same day rejected, by a majority of forty-four to twenty-nine, a motion that they would take the advice of the house of lords in the exercise of the legislative power, resolved that the house of peers was useless and dangerous, and ought to be abolished †. It should be noticed, that

* Lords' Journals.

† Commons' Journals. It had been proposed to continue the house of lords as a court of judicature, or as a court of consultation, or in some way or other to keep it up. The majority, it will be observed, was not very great; so far was the democratic scheme from being universal even within the house. Whitelock, 377. Two divisions had already taken place; one on Jan. 9, when it was carried by thirty-one to eighteen, that "a message from the lords should be received;" Cromwell strongly supporting the motion, and being a teller for it; and again on Jan. 18, when, the opposite party prevailing, it was negatived by twenty-five to eighteen, to ask their assent to the vote of the 4th instant, that the sovereignty resides in the commons; which doubtless, if true, could not require the lords' concurrence.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

there was no intention of taking away the dignity of peerage: the lords, throughout the whole duration of the commonwealth, retained their titles, not only in common usage, but in all legal and parliamentary documents. The earl of Pembroke, basest among the base, condescended to sit in the house of commons as knight for the county of Berks, and was received, notwithstanding his proverbial meanness and stupidity, with such excessive honour, as displayed the character of those low-minded upstarts, who formed a sufficiently numerous portion of the house to give their tone to its proceedings *.

Thus by military force, with the approbation of an inconceivably small proportion of the people, the king was put to death; the ancient fundamental laws were overthrown; and a mutilated house of commons, wherein very seldom more than seventy or eighty sat, was invested with the supreme authority. So little countenance had these late proceedings even from those who seemed of the ruling faction, that when the executive council of state, consisting of forty-one, had been nominated, and a test was proposed to them, declaring their approbation of all that had been done about the king and the kingly office, and about the house of lords, only nineteen would subscribe it, though there were fourteen regicides on the list †. It was agreed, at length, that they should subscribe it only as to the future proceedings of the commons. With such dissatisfaction at head-quarters, there was little to hope from the body of the nation ‡. Hence when an engagement was tendered to all civil officers and beneficed clergy,

* Whitelock, 396. They voted that Pembroke, as well as Salisbury and Howard of Escrick, who followed the ignominious example, should be added to all committees.

† Commons' Journals. Whitelock. It had been referred to a committee of five members, Lisle, Holland, Robinson, Scott, and Ludlow, to recommend thirty-five for a council of state; to whose nominations the house agreed, and added their own. Ludlow, i. 288. They were appointed for a year; but in 1650 the house only left out two of the former list, besides those who were dead. Whitelock, 441. In 1651 the change was more considerable. Id. 488.

‡ Six judges agreed to hold on their commissions, six refused. Whitelock, who makes a poor figure at this time on his own showing, consented to act still as commissioner of the great seal. Those who remained in office affected to stipulate that the fundamental laws should not be abolished; and the house passed a vote to this effect. Whitelock, 378.

containing only a promise to live faithful to the commonwealth, as it was established without a king or house of lords, though the slightest test of allegiance that any government could require, it was taken with infinite reluctance, and, in fact, refused by very many; the presbyterian ministers especially showing a determined averseness to the new republican organization *.

This, however, was established, (such is the dominion of the sword), far beyond the control of any national sentiment. Thirty thousand veteran soldiers guaranteed the mock parliament they had permitted to reign. The sectaries, a numerous body, and still more active than numerous, possessed, under the name of committees for various purposes appointed by the house of commons, the principal local authorities, and restrained by a vigilant scrutiny the murmurs of a disaffected majority. Love, an eminent presbyterian minister, lost his head for a conspiracy, by the sentence of a high court of justice, a tribunal that superseded trial by jury †. His death struck horror and consternation into that arrogant priesthood, who had begun to fancy themselves almost beyond the scope of criminal law. The cavaliers were prostrate in the dust; and anxious to retrieve something from the wreck of their long sequestered estates, had generally little appetite to embark afresh in a hopeless cause; besides that the mutual animosities between their party and the presbyterians were still too irreconcilable to admit of any sincere co-operation. Hence neither made any considerable effort in behalf of Charles on his march, or rather flight, into England; a measure, indeed, too

* Whitelock, 444. et alibi. Baxter's Life, 64. A committee was appointed, April, 1649, to inquire about ministers who asperse the proceedings of parliament in their pulpits. Whitelock, 395.

† State Trials, v. 43. Baxter says that Love's death hurt the new commonwealth more than would be easily believed, and made it odious to all the religious party in the land, except the sectaries. Life of B. 67. But oderint dum metuant is the device of those who rule in revolutions. Clarendon speaks, on the contrary, of Love's execution triumphantly. He had been distinguished by a violent sermon during the treaty of Uxbridge, for which the parliament, on complaint of the king's commissioners, put him in confinement. Thurloe, i. 65. State Trials, 201. Though the noble historian, as usual, represents this otherwise. He also mis-states Love's dying speech.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

palpably desperate for prudent men who had learned the strength of their adversaries; and the great victory of Worcester consummated the triumph of the infant commonwealth, or rather of its future master.

A train of favouring events, more than any deep-laid policy, had now brought sovereignty within the reach of Cromwell. His first schemes of ambition may probably have extended no farther than a title and estate, with a great civil and military command in the king's name. Power had fallen into his hands because they alone were fit to wield it; he was taught by every succeeding event his own undeniable superiority over his contemporaries in martial renown, in civil prudence, in decision of character, and in the public esteem, which naturally attached to these qualities. Perhaps it was not till after the battle of Worcester that he began to fix his thoughts, if not on the dignity of royalty, yet on an equivalent right of command. Two remarkable conversations, in which Whitelock bore a part, seem to place beyond controversy the nature of his designs. About the end of 1651, Whitelock himself, St. John, Widdrington, Lenthall, Harrison, Desborough, Fleetwood and Whalley, met Cromwell, at his own request, to consider the settlement of the nation. The four former were in favour of monarchy, Whitelock inclining to Charles, Widdrington and others to the duke of Glocester; Desborough and Whalley were against a single person's government, and Fleetwood uncertain. Cromwell, who had evidently procured this conference in order to sift the inclinations of so many leading men, and to give some intimation of his own, broke it up with remarking, that if it might be done with safety and preservation of their rights as Englishmen and Christians, a settlement of somewhat with monarchical power in it would be very effectual *. The observation he here made of a disposition among the lawyers to elect the duke of Glocester, as being exempt by his youth from the prepossessions of the two elder brothers, may, perhaps, have

* Whitelock, 516.

put Cromwell on releasing him from confinement, and sending him to join his family beyond sea *.

Twelve months after this time, in a more confidential discourse with Whitelock alone, the general took occasion to complain both of the chief officers of the army, and of the parliament; the first as inclined to factious murmurings; and the second, as ingrossing all offices to themselves, divided into parties, delaying business, guilty of gross injustice and partiality, and designing to perpetuate their own authority. Whitelock confessing part of this, urged that having taken commissions from them as the supreme power, it would be difficult to find means to restrain them. "What," said Cromwell, "if a man should take upon him to be king?" "I think," answered Whitelock, "that remedy would be worse than the disease." "Why," rejoined the other, "do you think so?" He then pointed out that the statute of Henry VII. gave a security to those who acted under a king, which no other government could furnish; and that the reverence paid by the people to that title would serve to curb the extravagancies of those now in power. Whitelock replied, that their friends having engaged in a persuasion, though erroneous, that their rights and liberties would be better preserved under a commonwealth than a monarchy, this state of the question would be wholly changed by Cromwell's assumption of the title, and it would become a private controversy between his family and that of the Stuarts. Finally, on the other's encouragement to speak fully his thoughts, he told him "that no expedient seemed so desirable as a private treaty with the king,

* The parliament had resolved, 24th July, 1650, that Henry Stuart, son of the late king, and the lady Elizabeth, daughter of the late king, be removed forthwith beyond the seas, out of the limits of this commonwealth. Yet this intention seems to have been soon changed, for it is resolved, Sept. 11, to give the duke of Glocester 1500*l.* per annum for his maintenance, so long as he should behave himself inoffensively. Whether this proceeded from liberality, or from a vague idea that they might one day make use of him, is hard to say. Clarendon mentions the scheme of making the duke of Glocester king, in one of his letters (iii. 38. 11th Nov. 1651); but says, "truly I do believe that Cromwell might as easily procure himself to be chosen king as the duke of Glocester; for as none of the king's party would assist the last, so I am persuaded both presbyterians and independents would have much sooner the former than any of the race of him whom they have murthered."

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

in which he might not only provide for the security of his friends, and the greatness of his family, but set limits to monarchical power, keeping the command of the militia in his own hands." Cromwell merely said, "that such a step would require great consideration;" but broke off with marks of displeasure, and consulted Whitelock much less for some years afterwards *.

These projects of usurpation could not deceive the watchfulness of those whom Cromwell pretended to serve. He had on several occasions thrown off enough of his habitual dissimulation to show the commonwealth's men that he was theirs only by accident, with none of their fondness for republican polity. The parliament in its present wreck contained few leaders of superior ability; but a natural instinct would dictate to such an assembly the distrust of a popular general, even if there had been less to alarm them in his behaviour †. They had no means, however, to withstand him. The creatures themselves of military force, their pretensions to direct or control the army could only move scorn or resentment. Their claim to a legal authority, and to the name of representatives of a people who rejected and abhorred them, was perfectly impudent. When the house was fullest, their numbers did not much exceed one hundred; but the ordinary divisions, even on subjects of the highest moment, show an attendance of but fifty or sixty members. They had retained in their hands, notwithstanding the appointment of a council of state, most of whom were from their own body, a great part of the executive government, especially the disposal of offices ‡. These they largely shared among

* Id. p. 548. Lord Orrery told Burnet that he had once mentioned to Cromwell a report that he was to bring in the king, who should marry his daughter, and observed, that he saw no better expedient. Cromwell, without expressing any displeasure, said, "the king cannot forgive his father's blood," which the other attempted to answer. Burnet, i. 95. It is certain, however, that such a compromise would have been dishonourable for one party and infamous for the other.

† Cromwell, in his letter to the parliament after the battle of Worcester, called it a *crowning mercy*. This, though a very intelligible expression, was taken in an invidious sense by the republicans.

‡ Journals, passim.

themselves or their dependents; and in many of their votes gave occasion to such charges of injustice and partiality, as, whether true or false, will attach to a body of men so obviously self-interested *. It seems to be a pretty general opinion, that a popular assembly is still more frequently influenced by corrupt and dishonest motives in the distribution of favours, or the decision of private affairs, than a ministry of state; whether it be, that it is more probable, that a man of disinterestedness and integrity may in the course of events rise to the conduct of government, than that such virtues should belong to a majority; or that the clandestine management of court corruption renders it less scandalous, and more easily varnished, than the shamelessness of parliamentary iniquity.

The republican interest in the nation was almost wholly composed of two parties, both off-shoots deriving strength from the great stock of the army; the levellers, of whom Lilburne and Wildman are the most known, and the Anabaptists, fifth monarchymen, and other fanatical sectaries, headed by Harrison, Hewson, Overton, and a great number of officers. Though the sectaries seemed to build their revolutionary schemes more on their own religious views than the levellers, they coincided in most of their

* One of their most scandalous acts was the sale of the earl of Craven's estate. He had been out of England during the war, and could not therefore be reckoned a delinquent. But evidence was offered that he had seen the king in Holland, and upon this charge, though he petitioned to be heard, and, as is said, indicted the informer for perjury, whereof he was convicted, they voted by 33 to 31 that his lands should be sold; Haslerig, the most savage zealot of the whole faction, being a teller for the ayes, Vane for the noes. Journals, 6th March, 1651, and 22d June, 1652. State Trials, v. 323. On the 20th of July in the same year, it was referred to a committee, to select thirty delinquents whose estates should be sold for the use of the navy. Thus, long after the cessation of hostility, the royalists continued to stand in jeopardy, not only collectively but personally, from this arbitrary and vindictive faction. Nor were these qualities displayed against the royalists alone: one Josiah Primatt, who seems to have been connected with Lilburne, Wildman, and the levellers, having presented a petition complaining that sir Arthur Haslerig had violently dispossessed him of some collieries, the house, after voting every part of the petition to be false, adjudged him to pay a fine of £3000 to the commonwealth, £2000 to Haslerig, and £2000 more to the commissioners for compositions. Journals,

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

objects and demands*. An equal representation of the people in short parliaments, an extensive alteration of the common law, the abolition of tithes, and indeed of all regular stipends to the ministry, a full toleration of religious worship, were reformations which they concurred to require, as the only substantial fruits of their arduous struggle†. Some among the wilder sects dreamed of overthrowing all civil institutions. These factions were not without friends in the commons. But the greater part were neither inclined to gratify them, by taking away the provision of the church, nor much less to divest themselves of their own authority. They voted, indeed, that tithes should cease as soon as a competent maintenance should be otherwise provided for the clergy‡. They appointed a commission to consider the reformation of the law, in consequence of repeated petitions against many of its inconveniences and abuses; who, though taxed of course with dilatoriness by the ardent innovators, suggested many useful improvements, several of which have been adopted in more

15th Jan. 1651-2. There had been a project of erecting an university at Durham, in favour of which a committee reported (18th June, 1651), and for which the chapter lands would have made a competent endowment. Haslerig, however, got most of them into his own hands, and thus frustrated, perhaps, a design of great importance to education and literature in this country; for had an university once been established, it is just possible, though not very likely, that the estates would not have reverted, on the king's restoration, to their former, but much less useful possessors.

* Mrs. Hutchinson speaks very favourably of the levellers, as they appeared about 1647, declaring against the factions of the presbyterians and independents, and the ambitious views of their leaders, and especially against the unreasonable privileges claimed by the houses of parliament collectively and personally. "Indeed, as all virtues are mediums and have their extremes, there rose up after in that house a people who endeavoured the levelling of all estates and qualities, which those sober levellers were never guilty of desiring, but were men of just and sober principles, of honest and religious ends, and were therefore hated by all the designing self-interested men of both factions. Colonel Hutchinson had a great intimacy with many of these, and so far as they acted according to the just, pious, and public spirit which they professed, owned them and protected them as far as he had power. These were they who first began to discover the ambition of Lieut. Gen. Cromwell and his idolaters, and to suspect and dislike it." p. 285.

† Whitelock, 399. 401. The levellers rose in arms at Banbury and other places, but were soon put down, chiefly through the energy of Cromwell, and their ring-leaders shot.

‡ It was referred to a committee, 29th April, 1652, to consider how a convenient and competent maintenance for a godly and able ministry may be settled, in lieu of tithes. A proposed addition, that tithes be paid as before till such maintenance be settled, was carried by 27 to 17.

regular times, though with too cautious delay *. They proceeded rather slowly and reluctantly to frame a scheme for future parliaments; and resolved that they should consist of 400, to be chosen in due proportion by the several counties, nearly upon the model suggested by Lilburne, and afterwards carried into effect by Cromwell †. It was with much delay and difficulty, amidst the loud murmurs of their adherents, that they could be brought to any vote in regard to their own dissolution. It passed on Nov. 17, 1651, after some very close divisions, that they should cease to exist as a parliament on Nov. 3, 1654 ‡. The republicans out of doors, who deemed annual, or at least biennial parliaments essential to their definition of liberty, were indignant at so unreasonable a prolongation. Thus they forfeited the good-will of the only party on whom they could have relied. Cromwell dexterously aggravated their faults; he complained of their delaying the settlement of the nation; he persuaded the fanatics of his con-

* Journals, 19th Jan. 1652. Hale was the first named on this commission, and took an active part: but he was associated with some furious levellers, Desborough, Tomlinson, and Hugh Peters, so that it is hard to know how far he concurred in the alterations suggested. Many of them, however, seem to bear marks of his hand. Whitelock, 475. 517. 519. 820. et alibi. There had been previously a committee for the same purpose in 1650. See a list of the acts prepared by them in Somers Tracts, vi. 177; several of them are worthy of attention. Ludlow, indeed, blames the commission for slowness, but their delay seems to have been very justifiable, and their suggestions highly valuable. It even appears that they drew up a book containing a regular digest or code, which was ordered to be printed. Journals, 20th Jan. 1653.

† A committee was named, 15th May, 1649, to take into consideration the settling of the succession of future parliaments and regulating their elections. Nothing more appears to have been done till Oct. 11th, when the committee was ordered to meet next day, and so de die in diem, and to give an account thereof to the house on Tuesday come fortnight. All that came to have voices, but the special care thereof commended to sir Henry Vane, colonel Ludlow, and Mr. Robinson. We find nothing farther till Jan. 3d, 1650, when the committee is ordered to make its report the next Wednesday. This is done accordingly, Jan. 9, when sir H. Vane reports the resolutions of the committee, one of which was, that the number in future parliaments should be 400. This was carried, after negativing the previous question in a committee of the whole house. They proceeded several days afterwards on the same business. See also Ludlow, p. 313. 435.

‡ Two divisions had taken place, Nov. 14 (the first on the previous question), on a motion, that it is convenient to declare a certain time for the continuance of this parliament, 50 to 46, and 49 to 47. On the last division, Cromwell and St. John were tellers for the ayes.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

currence in their own schemes; the parliament in turn conspired against his power, and, as the conspiracies of so many can never be secret, let it be seen that one or other must be destroyed; thus giving his forcible expulsion of them the pretext of self-defence. They fell with no regret, or rather with much joy of the nation, except a few who dreaded more from the alternative of military usurpation or anarchy, than from an assembly which still retained the names and forms so precious in the eyes of those who adhere to the ancient institutions of their country*.

It was now the deep policy of Cromwell to render himself the sole refuge of those who valued the laws, or the regular ecclesiastical ministry, or their own estates, all in peril from the mad enthusiasts who were in hopes to prevail†. These he had admitted into that motley convention of one hundred and twenty persons, sometimes called Barebone's parliament, but more commonly the little parliament, on whom his council of officers pretended to devolve the government, mingling them with a sufficient proportion of a superior class, whom he could direct‡. This assembly took care

* Whitelock was one of these, and being at that time out of Cromwell's favour, inveighs much against his destruction of the power from which he had taken his commission, p. 552, 554. St. John appears to have concurred in the measure. In fact, there had so long been an end of law, that one usurpation might seem as rightful as another. But, while any house of commons remained, there was a stock left from which the ancient constitution might possibly germinate. Mrs. Macauley, whose lamentations over the Rump did not certainly proceed from this cause, thus vents her wrath on the English nation: "An acquiescence thus universal in the insult committed on the guardians of the infant republic, and the first step towards the usurpation of Cromwell, fixes an indelible stain on the character of the English, as a people basely and incorrigibly attached to the sovereignty of individuals, and of natures too ignoble to endure an empire of equal laws," vol. v. p. 112.

† Harrison, when Ludlow asked him why he had joined Cromwell to turn out the parliament, said, he thought Cromwell would own and favour a set of men who acted on higher principles than those of civil liberty, and quoted from Daniel, "that the saints shall take the kingdom and possess it." Ludlow argued against him; but what was argument to such a head? Mem. of Ludlow, p. 565. Not many months after, Cromwell sent his coadjutor to Carisbrook castle.

‡ Hume speaks of this assembly as chiefly composed of the lowest mechanics. But this was not the case; some persons of inferior rank there were, but a large proportion of the members were men of good family, or at least military distinction, as the list of the names in the Parliamentary History is sufficient to prove; and Whitelock remarks, it was much wondered at by some, that these gentlemen, many of them being persons of fortune and knowledge, would at this summons, and from those

to avoid the censure which their predecessors had incurred, by passing a good many bills, and applying themselves with a vigorous hand to the reformation of what their party deemed the most essential grievances, those of the law and of the church. They voted the abolition of the court of Chancery, a measure provoked by its insufferable delay, its engrossing of almost all suits, and the uncertainty of its decisions. They appointed a committee to consider of a new body of the law, without naming any lawyer upon it*. They nominated a set of commissioners to preside in courts of justice, among whom they with difficulty admitted two of that profession †; they irritated the clergy, by enacting, that marriages should be solemnized before justices of the peace ‡; they alarmed them still more, by manifesting a determination to take away their tithes, without security for an equivalent maintenance §. Thus having united against itself these two powerful bodies, whom neither kings nor parliaments in England have in general offended with impunity, this little synod of legislators was ripe for destruction. Their last vote was to negative a report of their own committee, recommending that such as should be approved as preachers of the gospel should enjoy the maintenance already settled by law; and that the payment of tithes, as a just property,

hands, take upon them the supreme authority of this nation, p. 559. With respect to this, it may be observed, that those who have lived in revolutions find it almost necessary, whether their own interests or those of their country are their aim, to comply with all changes, and take a greater part in supporting them, than men of inflexible consciences can approve. No one felt this more than Whitelock, and his remark in this place is a satire upon all his conduct. He was at the moment dissatisfied, and out of Cromwell's favour, but lost no time in regaining it.

* Journals, 19th Aug. This was carried by 46 to 38 against Cromwell's party. Yet Cromwell, two years afterwards, published an ordinance for regulating and limiting the jurisdiction of chancery; which offended Whitelock so much, that he resigned the great seal, not having been consulted in framing the regulations. This is a rare instance in his life, and he vaunts much of his conscience accordingly, but thankfully accepted the office of commissioner of the treasury instead, p. 621, 625. He does not seem, by his own account, to have given much satisfaction to suitors in equity (p. 548), yet the fault may have been theirs, or the system's.

† 4th October.

‡ This had been proposed by the commission for amendment of the law appointed in the long parliament. The great number of dissenters from the established religion rendered it a very reasonable measure.

§ Thurloe, i. 369; iii. 132.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

should be enforced by the magistrates. The house having, by the majority of two, disagreed with this report*, the Speaker, two days after, having secured a majority of those present, proposed the surrender of their power into the hands of Cromwell, who put an end to the opposition of the rest, by turning them out of doors.

It can admit of no doubt, that the despotism of a wise man is more tolerable than that of political or religious fanatics, and it rarely happens that there is any better remedy in revolutions, which have given the latter an ascendant. Cromwell's assumption, therefore, of the title of Protector was a necessary and wholesome usurpation, however he may have caused the necessity; it secured the nation from the mischievous lunacy of the anabaptists, and from the more cool-blooded tyranny of that little oligarchy, which arrogated to itself the name of commonwealth's men. Though a gross and glaring evidence of the omnipotence of the army, the instrument under which he took his title accorded to him no unnecessary executive authority. The sovereignty still resided in the parliament; he had no negative voice on their laws. Until the meeting of the next parliament, a power was given him of making temporary ordinances; but this was not, as Hume, on the authority of Clarendon and Warwick, has supposed, and as his conduct, if that were any proof of the law, might lead us to infer, designed to exist in future intervals of the legislature †. It would be scarcely worth while, however,

* Journals, 2d and 10th Dec. 1653. Whitelock. See the sixth volume of the Somers Tracts, p. 266, for a long and rather able vindication of this parliament by one of its members. Ludlow also speaks pretty well of it, p. 471, and says truly enough, that Cromwell frightened the lawyers and clergy, by showing what the parliament meant to do with them, which made them in a hurry to have it destroyed. See also Parl. Hist. 1412. 1414.

† See the instrument of government in Whitelock, p. 571; or Somers Tracts, vi. 257. Ludlow says, that some of the officers opposed this; but Lambert forced it down their throats, p. 276. Cromwell made good use of this temporary power. The union of Scotland with England was by one of his ordinances, April 12 (Whitelock, 586), and he imposed an assessment of £120,000 monthly, for three months, and £90,000 for the next three, instead of £70,000, which had been paid before (Id. 591), besides many other ordinances of a legislative nature. "I am very glad," says Fleetwood (Feb. 1655, Thurloe, iii. 183), to hear

to pay much attention to a form of government which was so little regarded, except as it makes the jealousy of royal power, which those most attached to Cromwell, and least capable of any proper notions of liberty, continued to entertain.

In the ascent of this bold usurper to greatness, he had successively employed and thrown away several of the powerful factions who distracted the nation. He had encouraged the levellers, and persecuted them; he had flattered the long parliament, and betrayed it; he had made use of the sectaries to crush the commonwealth; he had spurned the sectaries in his last advance to power. These, with the royalists and the presbyterians, forming in effect the whole people, though too disunited for such a coalition as must have overthrown him, were the perpetual, irreconcilable enemies of his administration. Master of his army, which he well knew how to manage, surrounded by a few deep and experienced counsellors, furnished by his spies with the completest intelligence of all designs against him, he had no great cause of alarm from open resistance. But he was bound by the instrument of government to call a parliament; and in any parliament his adversaries must be formidable. He adopted in both those which he summoned the reformed model already determined; limiting the number of representatives to 400, to be chosen partly in the counties, according to their wealth or supposed population, by electors possessing either freeholds, or any real or moveable property to the value of £200; partly by the more considerable boroughs, in whose various rights of election no change appears to have been made *. This alteration, conformable to the equalizing principles of the age, did not produce so considerable a difference in the persons returned as it

his highness has declined the legislative power, which by the instrument of government, in my opinion, he could not exercise after this last parliament's meeting." And the parliament of 1656, at the Protector's desire, confirmed all ordinances made since the dissolution of the long parliament. Thurloe, vi. 243.

* I infer this from the report of a committee of privileges on the election for Lynn, 20th Oct. 1656.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

perhaps might at present *. The court-party, as those subservient to him were called, were powerful through the subjection of the electors to the army. But they were not able to exclude the presbyterian and republican interests, the latter headed by Bradshaw, Haslerig, and Scott, eager to thwart the power which they were compelled to obey †. Hence they began by taking into consideration the whole instrument of government, and even resolved themselves into a committee to debate its leading article, the Protector's authority. Cromwell, his supporters having lost this question on a division of 141 to 136, thought it time to interfere. He gave them to understand that the government by a single person and a parliament was a fundamental principle, not subject to their discussion, and obliged every member to a recognition of it, solemnly promising neither to attempt nor to concur in any alteration of that article ‡. The commons voted, however, that this recognition should not extend to the entire instrument, consisting of forty-two articles, and went on to discuss them with such heat and prolixity, that after five months, the limited term of their session, the Protector, having obtained the ratification of his new scheme neither so fully nor so willingly as he desired, particularly having been disappointed by the great majority of 200 to 60, which voted the protectorate to be elective, not hereditary, dissolved the parliament with no small marks of dissatisfaction §.

* It is remarkable that Clarendon seems to approve this model of a parliament, saying, "it was then generally looked upon as an alteration fit to be more warrantably made, and in a better time."

† Bourdeaux, the French ambassador, says, "some were for Bradshaw as speaker, but the Protector's party carried it for Lenthall. By this beginning, one may judge what the authority of the lord protector will be in this parliament. However it was observed, that as often as he spoke in his speech of liberty or religion, the members did seem to rejoice with acclamations of joy." Thurloe, v. 588.

‡ Journals, 14th and 18th Sept. Parl. Hist. 1445, 1459. Whitelock, 605, &c. Ludlow, 499.

§ This division is not recorded in the Journals, in consequence, I suppose, of its having been resolved in a committee of the whole house. But it is impossible to doubt the fact, which is referred to Oct. 19 by a letter of Bourdeaux, the French ambassador (Thurloe, ii. 681), who observes, "Hereby it is easily discerned, that the nation is nowise affected to his family, nor much to himself. Without doubt he will strengthen his army, and keep that in a good posture." It is also alluded to by Whitelock,

The banished king meanwhile began to recover a little of that political importance which the battle of Worcester had seemed almost to extinguish. So ill supported by his English adherents on that occasion, so incapable with a better army than he had any prospect of ever raising again, to make a stand against the genius and fortune of the usurper, it was vain to expect that he could be restored by any domestic insurrection, until the disunion of the prevailing factions should offer some more favourable opportunity. But this was too distant a prospect for his court of starving followers. He had from the beginning looked around for foreign assistance. But France was distracted by her own troubles; Spain deemed it better policy to cultivate the new commonwealth; and even Holland, though engaged in a dangerous war with England, did not think it worth while to accept his offer of joining her fleet, in order to try his influence with the English seamen*. Totally unscrupulous as to the means by which he might reign, even at the moment that he was treating to become the covenanted king of Scotland, with every solemn renunciation of popery, Charles had recourse to a very delicate negotiation, which deserves remark, as having led, after a long course of time, but by gradual steps, to the final downfall of his family. With

609. They resolved to keep the militia in the power of the parliament, and that the Protector's negative should extend only to such bills as might alter the instrument; and in other cases, if he did not pass bills within twenty days, they were to become laws without his consent. Journals, Nov. 10, 1654. Whitelock, 608. This was carried against the court by 109 to 85. Ludlow insinuates that this parliament did not sit out its legal term of five months, Cromwell having interpreted the months to be lunar instead of calendar. Hume has adopted this notion; but it is groundless, the month in law being always of twenty-eight days, unless the contrary be expressed. This seems however not to have been generally understood at the time; for Whitelock says, that Cromwell's dissolution of the parliament, because he found them not so pliable to his purposes as he expected, caused much discontent in them and others, but that he valued it not, esteeming himself above those things, p. 618. He gave out that the parliament were concerned in the conspiracy to bring in the king.

* Exiles are seldom scrupulous: we find that Charles was willing to propose to the States, in return for their acknowledging his title, "such present and lasting advantages to them by this alliance, as may appear most considerable to that nation and to their posterity, and a valuable compensation for whatever present advantages the king can receive by it." Clarendon State Papers, iii. 90. These intrigues would have justly made him odious in England.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

the advice of Ormond, and with the concurrence of Hyde, he attempted to interest the pope (Innocent X.) on his side as the most powerful intercessor with the catholic princes of Europe*. For this purpose it was necessary to promise toleration at least to the catholics. The king's ambassadors to Spain in 1650, Cottington and Hyde, and other agents despatched to Rome at the same time, were empowered to offer an entire repeal of the penal laws†. The king himself, some time afterwards, wrote a letter to the pope, wherein he repeated this assurance. That court, however, well aware of the hereditary duplicity of the Stuarts, received his overtures with haughty contempt. The pope returned no answer to the king's letter, but one was received after many months from the general of the jesuits, requiring that Charles should declare himself a catholic, since the goods of the church could not be lavished for the support of an heretical prince‡. Even after this insolent refusal, the wretched exiles still clung, at times, to the vain hope of succour, which as protestants and Englishmen they could not honourably demand§. But many of them remarked too clearly the conditions on which assistance might be obtained; the court of Charles, openly or in

* Ormond wrote strongly to this effect, after the battle of Worcester, convinced that nothing but foreign assistance could restore the king. "Amongst protestants there is none that hath the power, and amongst the catholics it is visible." Carte's Letters, i. 461.

† Clarendon State Papers, ii. 481. et sæpies alibi. The protestant zeal of Hyde had surely deserted him; and his veracity in one letter gave way also, see vol. iii. p. 158. But the great criminality of all these negotiations lay in this, that Charles was by them soliciting such a measure of foreign aid, as would make him at once the tyrant of England, and the vassal of Spain; since no free parliament, however royalist, was likely to repeal all the laws against popery. "That which the king will be ready and willing to do, is to give his consent for the repeal of all the penal laws and statutes which have been made in the prejudice of catholics, and to put them into the same condition as his other subjects." Cottington to Father Bapthorpe. Id. 541. These negotiations with Rome were soon known, and a tract was published by the parliament's authority, containing the documents. Notwithstanding the delirium of the restoration, this had made an impression which was not afterwards effaced.

‡ Clarendon State Papers, iii. 181.

§ The pope very well knows, says Hyde to Clement, an agent at the court of Rome, 2d April, 1656, how far the king is from thoughts of severity against his catholic subjects; nay, that he doth desire to put them into the same condition with his other subjects, and that no man shall suffer in any consideration for being a Roman catholic. Id. 291.

secret, began to pass over to the Catholic church; and the contagion soon spread to the highest places. CHAP. X.

In the year 1654, the royalist intrigues in England began to grow more active and formidable through the accession of many discontented republicans *. Though there could be no coalition, properly speaking, between such irreconcilable factions, they came into a sort of tacit agreement, as is not unusual, to act in concert for the only purpose they entertained alike, the destruction of their common enemy. Major Wildman, a name not very familiar to the general reader, but which occurs perpetually, for almost half a century, when we look into more secret history, one of those dark and restless spirits, who delight in the deep game of conspiracy against every government, seems to have been the first mover of this unnatural combination. He had been early engaged in the schemes of the levellers, and was exposed to the jealous observation of the ruling powers. It appears most probable that his views were to establish a commonwealth, and to make the royalists his dupes. In his correspondence, however, with Brussels, he engaged to restore the king. Both parties were to rise in arms against the new tyranny, and the nation's temper was tried by clandestine intrigues in almost every county †. Greater reliance, however, was placed on the project of assassinating Cromwell. Neither party were by any means scrupulous on this score: if we have not positive evidence of Charles's concurrence in this scheme, it would be preposterous to suppose that he would have been withheld by any moral hesitation. It is frequently mentioned without any disapprobation by Clarendon in Commonwealth.

* Clarendon's History of the Rebellion, B. 14. State Papers, iii. 265, 300, &c. Whitelock observes at this time, "Many sober and faithful patriots did begin to incline to the king's restoration;" and hints that this was his opinion, which excited Cromwell's jealousy of him, p. 620.

† Clarendon's History, vii. 129. State Papers, iii. 265, &c. These levellers were very hostile to the interference of Hyde and Ormond, judging them too inflexibly attached to the ancient constitution; but this hostility recommended them to others of the banished king's court, who showed the same sentiments.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

his private letters*; and as the royalists certainly justified the murders of Ascham and Dorislaus, they could not in common sense or consistency have scrupled one so incomparably more capable of defence†. A Mr. Gerard suffered death for one of these plots to kill Cromwell; justly sentenced, though by an illegal tribunal‡.

In the year 1655, Penruddock, a Wiltshire gentleman, with a very trifling force, entered Salisbury at the time of the assizes, and, declaring for the king, seized the judge and the sheriff‖. This little rebellion, meeting with no resistance from the people, but a supineness equally fatal, was soon quelled. It roused Cromwell to secure himself by an unprecedented exercise of power. In possession of all the secrets of his enemies, he knew that want of concert or courage had alone prevented a general rising, towards which indeed there had been some movements in the midland counties§. He was aware of his own unpopularity, and the national bias towards the exiled king. Juries did not

* P. 315, 324, 343. Thurloe, *i.* 360, 510. In the same volume, p. 248, we find even a declaration from the king, dated at Paris, 3d May, 1654, offering 500*l.* per annum to any one who should kill Cromwell, and pardon to any one who should leave that party, except Bradshaw, Lenthall and Haslerig. But this seems unlikely to be authentic: Charles would not have avowed a design of assassination so openly, and it is strange that Lenthall and Haslerig, especially the former, should be thus exempted from pardon, rather than so many regicides.

† See what Clarendon says of Ascham's death, State Papers, ii. 542. In another place he observes: "It is a worse and a baser thing that any man should appear in any part beyond sea under the character of an agent from the rebels, and not have his throat cut." Id. iii. 144.

‡ State Trials, 518. Thurloe, ii. 416. Some of the malecontent commonwealth men were also eager to get rid of Cromwell by assassination; Wildman, Saxby, Titus. Syndercombe's story is well known; he was connected in the conspiracy with those already mentioned. The famous pamphlet by Titus, Killing no Murder, was printed in 1657. Clarendon State Papers, 315, 324, 343.

‖ A very reprehensible passage occurs in Clarendon's account of this transaction, vol. vii. p. 140; where he blames and derides the insurgents for not putting chief justice Rolle and others to death, which would have been a detestable and useless murder.

§ Whitelock, 618, 620. Ludlow, 513. Thurloe, iii. 264, and through more than half the volume, passim. In the preceding volume we have abundant proofs how completely master Cromwell was of the royalist schemes. The "sealed knot" of the king's friends in London is mentioned as frequently as we find it in the Clarendon Papers at the same time.

willingly convict the sharers in Penruddock's rebellion*. To govern according to law may sometimes be an usurper's wish, but can seldom be in his power. The protector abandoned all thought of it. Dividing the kingdom into districts, he placed at the head of each a major-general as a sort of military magistrate, responsible for the subjection of his prefecture. These were eleven in number, men bitterly hostile to the royalist party, and insolent towards all civil authority†. They were employed to secure the payment of a tax of 10 per cent., imposed by Cromwell's arbitrary will, on those who had ever sided with the king during the late wars, where their estates exceeded £100 per annum. The major-generals, in their correspondence printed among Thurloe's papers, display a rapacity and oppression beyond their master's. They complain that the number of those exempted is too great; they press for harsher measures; they incline to the unfavourable construction in every doubtful case; they dwell on the growth of malignancy and the general disaffection‡. It was not indeed likely to be mitigated by this unparalleled tyranny. All illusion was now gone as to the pretended benefits of the civil war. It had ended in a despotism, compared to which all the illegal practices of former kings, all that had cost Charles

* Thurloe, iii. 371, &c. Penruddock and Grove, Ludlow says, "could not have been justly condemned, if they had as sure a foundation in what they declared for, as what they declared against. But certainly it can never be esteemed by a wise man to be worth the scratch of a finger to remove a single person acting by an arbitrary power, in order to set up another with the same unlimited authority." P. 518. This is a just and manly sentiment. Woe to those who do not recognize it! But is it fair to say, that the royalists were contending to set up an unlimited authority?

† They were originally ten, Lambert, Desborough, Whalley, Goffe, Fleetwood, Skippon, Kelsey, Butler, Worseley, and Berry. Thurloe, iii. 701. Barkstead was afterwards added. "The major-generals," says Ludlow, "carried things with unheard-of insolence in their several precincts, decimating to extremity whom they pleased, and interrupting the proceedings at law upon petitions of those who pretended themselves aggrieved, threatening such as would not yield a ready submission to their orders with transportation to Jamaica, or some other plantations in the West Indies, &c." P. 559.

‡ Thurloe, vol. iv. passim. The unpopularity of Cromwell's government appears strongly in the letters of this collection. Duckinfield, a Cheshire gentleman, writes: "Charles Stuart hath 500 friends in these adjacent counties, for every one friend to you amongst them." Vol. iii. 294.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

his life and crown, appeared as dust in the balance. For what was ship-money, a general burthen, by the side of the present decimation of a single class, whose offence had long been expiated by a composition and effaced by an act of indemnity? or were the excessive punishments of the Star-chamber so odious as the capital executions inflicted without trial by peers, whenever it suited the usurper to erect his high court of justice? A sense of present evils not only excited a burning desire to live again under the ancient monarchy, but obliterated, especially in the new generation that had no distinct remembrance of them, the apprehension of its former abuses*.

If this decimation of the royalists could pass for an act of severity towards a proscribed faction, in which the rest of the nation might fancy themselves not interested, Cromwell did not fail to show that he designed to exert an equally despotic command over every man's property. With the advice of his council, he had imposed, or, as I conceive, for it is not clearly explained,

* It may be fair towards Cromwell to give his own apology for the decimation of the royalists, in a declaration, published 1655. "It is a trouble to us to be still rubbing upon the old sore, disobliging those whom we hoped time and patience might make friends; but we can with comfort appeal to God, and dare also to their own consciences, whether this way of proceeding with them hath been the matter of our choice, or that which we have sought an occasion for; or whether, contrary to our own inclinations and the constant course of our carriage towards them, which hath been to oblige them by kindness to forsake their former principles, which God hath so often and so eminently bore witness against, we have not been constrained and necessitated hereunto, and without the doing whereof we should have been wanting to our duty to God and these nations.

"That character of difference between them and the rest of the people which is now put upon them is occasioned by themselves, not by us. There is nothing they have more industriously laboured in than this; to keep themselves distinguished from the well-affected of this nation: To which end they have kept their conversation apart, as if they would avoid the very beginnings of union, have bred and educated their children by the sequestered and ejected clergy, and very much confined their marriages and alliances within their own party, as if they meant to entail their quarrel, and prevent the means to reconcile posterity; which with the great pains they take upon all occasions to lessen and suppress the esteem and honour of the English nation in all their actions and undertakings abroad, striving withal to make other nations distinguish their interest from it, gives us ground to judge that they have separated themselves from the body of the nation; and therefore we leave it to all mankind to judge whether we ought not to be timely jealous of that separation, and to proceed so against them as they may be at the charge of those remedies which are required against the dangers they have bred."

continued a duty on merchandise beyond the time limited by law. A Mr. George Cony having refused to pay this tax, it was enforced from him, on which he sued the collector. Cromwell sent his counsel, Maynard, Twisden, and Wyndham, to the Tower, who soon petitioned for liberty, and abandoned their client. Rolle, the chief justice, when the cause came on, dared not give judgment against the protector, yet not caring to decide in his favour, postponed the case till the next term, and meanwhile retired from the bench. Glyn, who succeeded him upon it, took care to have this business accommodated with Cony, who, at some loss of public reputation, withdrew his suit. Sir Peter Wentworth, having brought a similar action, was summoned before the council, and asked if he would give it up. "If you command me," he replied to Cromwell, "I must submit;" which the protector did, and the action was withdrawn *.

Though it cannot be said that such an interference with the privileges of advocates or the integrity of judges was without precedents in the times of the Stuarts, yet it had never been done in so public or shameless a manner. Several other instances wherein the usurper diverted justice from its course, or violated the known securities of Englishmen, will be found in most general histories; not to dwell on that most flagrant of all, the erection of his high court of justice, by which Gerard and Vowel in 1654, Slingsby and Hewit in 1658, were brought to the scaffold †. I cannot therefore agree in the praises which have been showered upon Cromwell for the just administration of the laws under his dominion. That, between party and party, the ordinary civil rights of men were fairly dealt with, is no extraordinary praise; and it may be admitted that he filled the benches of justice with able lawyers, though not so considerable as those of the reign of

* Ludlow, 528. Clarendon, &c. Clarendon relates the same story with additional circumstances of Cromwell's audacious contempt for the courts of justice, and for the very name of magna charta.

† State Trials, vi. Whitelock advised the protector to proceed according to law against Hewit and Slingsby; "but his highness was too much in love with the new way." P. 673.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

Charles the Second; but it is manifest that, so far as his own authority was concerned, no hereditary despot, proud in the crimes of a hundred ancestors, could more have spurned at every limitation than this soldier of a commonwealth *.

Amidst so general a hatred, trusting to the effect of an equally general terror, the protector ventured to summon a parliament in 1656. Besides the common necessities for money, he had doubtless in his head that remarkable scheme which was developed during its session †. Even the despotic influence of his major-generals, and the political annihilation of the most considerable body of the gentry, then labouring under the imputation of delinquency for their attachment to the late king, did not enable him to obtain a secure majority in the assembly; and he was driven to the audacious measure of excluding above ninety members, duly returned by their constituents, from taking their seats. Their colleagues wanted courage to resist this violation of all privilege; and, after referring them to the council for approbation, resolved to proceed with public business. The excluded members, consisting partly of the republican, partly of the

* The late editor of the State Trials, v. 935, has introduced a sort of episodical dissertation on the administration of justice during the commonwealth, with the view, as far as appears, of setting Cromwell in a favourable light. For this purpose he quotes several passages of vague commendation from different authors, and among others one from Burke, written in haste to serve an immediate purpose, and evidently from a very superficial recollection of our history. It has been said that Cromwell sought out men of character from the party most opposite to his designs. The proof given is the appointment of Hale to be a puisné judge. But Hale had not been a royalist, that is, an adherent of Charles, and had taken the engagement, as well as the covenant. It was no great effort of virtue to place an eminent lawyer and worthy man on the bench. And it is to be remembered that Hale fell under the usurper's displeasure for administering justice with an impartiality that did not suit his government; and ceased to go the circuit, because the criminal law was not allowed to have its course.

† Thurloe writes to Montague, (Carte's Letters, ii. 110) that he cannot give him the reasons for calling this parliament, except in cipher. He says in the same place of the committal of Ludlow, Vane, and others: "There was a necessity not only for peace sake to do this, but to let the nation see those that govern are in good earnest, and intend not to quit the government wholly into the hands of the parliament, as some would needs make the world believe," p. 112. His first direct allusion to the projected change is in writing to Henry Cromwell, 9th Dec. 1656. Thurl. Papers, v. 194. The influence exerted by his legates, the major-generals, appears in Thurloe, v. 299, et post. But they complained of the elections. Id. 302, 341, 371.

presbyterian factions, published a remonstrance in a very high strain, but obtained no redress *.

Cromwell, like so many other usurpers, felt his position too precarious, or his vanity ungratified, without the name which mankind have agreed to worship. He had, as evidently appears from the conversations recorded by Whitelock, long since aspired to this titular, as well as to the real, pre-eminence; and the banished king's friends had contemplated the probability of his obtaining it with dismay †. Affectionate towards his family, he wished to assure the stability of his son's succession, and perhaps to please the vanity of his daughters. It was indeed a very reasonable object with one who had already advanced so far. His assumption of the crown was desirable to many different classes; to the lawyers, who, besides their regard for the established constitution, knew that an ancient statute would protect those who served a de facto king in case of a restoration of the exiled family; to the nobility, who perceived that their legislative right must immediately revive; to the clergy, who judged the regular ministry more likely to be secure under a monarchy; to the people, who hoped for any settlement that would put an end to perpetual changes; to all of every rank and profession, who dreaded the continuance of mili-

* Whitelock, 650. Parl. Hist. 1486. On a letter to the speaker from the members who had been refused admittance at the door of the lobby, Sept. 18, the house ordered the clerk of the commonwealth to attend next day with all the indentures. The deputy clerk came accordingly, with an excuse for his principal, and brought the indentures; but on being asked why the names of certain members were not returned to the house, answered, that he had no certificate of approbation for them. The house on this sent to inquire of the council why these members had not been approved. They returned for answer, that whereas it is ordained by a clause in the instrument of government, that the persons who shall be elected to serve in parliament shall be such and no other than such as are persons of known integrity, fearing God, and of good conversation; that the council, in pursuance of their duty, and according to the trust reposed in them, have examined the said returns, and have not refused to approve any who have appeared to them to be persons of integrity, fearing God, and of good conversation; and those who are not approved, his highness hath given order to some persons to take care that they do not come into the house. Upon this answer, an adjournment was proposed, but lost by 115 to 80: and it being moved, that the persons who have been returned from the several counties, cities, and boroughs to serve in this parliament, and have not been approved, be referred to the council for approbation, and that the house do proceed with the great affairs of the nation; the question was carried by 125 to 29. Journals, Sept. 22.

† Clar. State Papers, iii. 201, &c.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

tary despotism, and demanded only the just rights and privileges of their country. A king of England could succeed only to a bounded prerogative, and must govern by the known laws; a protector, as the nation had well felt, with less nominal authority, had all the sword could confer. And though there might be little chance that Oliver would abate one jot of a despotism, for which not the times of the Tudors could furnish a precedent, yet his life was far worn, and under a successor it was to be expected that future parliaments might assert again all those liberties for which they had contended against Charles*. A few of the royalists might perhaps fancy that the restoration of the royal title would lead to that of the lawful heir; but a greater number were content to abandon a nearly desperate cause, if they could but see the more valuable object of their concern, the form itself of polity, re-established †. There can be, as it appears to me, little room

* The whole conference that took place at Whitehall, between Cromwell and the committee of parliament on this subject, was published by authority, and may be read in the Somers Tracts, vi. 349. It is very interesting. The lawyers did not hesitate to support the proposition, on the ground of the more definite and legal character of a king's authority. "The king's prerogative," says Glyn, "is known by law; he (king Charles) did expatiate beyond the duty; that's the evil of the man: but in Westminster-hall the king's prerogative was under the courts of justice, and is bounded as well as any acre of land, or any thing a man hath, as much as any controversy between party and party: and therefore the office being lawful in its nature, known to the nation, certain in itself, and confined and regulated by the law, and the other office not being so, that was a great ground of the reason why the parliament did so much insist upon this office and title, not as circumstantial, but as essential," p. 359. See also what Lenthall says, p. 356, against the indefiniteness of the protector's authority.

Those passages were evidently implied censures of the late course of government. Cromwell's indistinct and evasive style in his share of this debate betrays the secret inclinations of his heart. He kept his ultimate intentions, however, very secret; for Thurloe professes his ignorance of them, even in writing to Henry Cromwell, vol. vi. p. 219, et post. This correspondence shows that the prudent secretary was uneasy at the posture of affairs, and the manifest dissatisfaction of Fleetwood and Desborough, which had a dangerous influence on others less bound to the present family; yet he had set his heart on this mode of settlement, and was much disappointed at his master's ultimate refusal.

† Clarendon's Hist. vii. 194. It appears by Clarendon's private letters, that he had expected to see Cromwell assume the title of king from the year 1654, vol. iii. p. 201, 223, 224. If we may trust what is here called an intercepted letter, p. 328, Mazarin had told Cromwell that France would enter into a strict league with him, if he could settle himself in the throne, and make it hereditary; to which he answered, that he designed shortly to take the crown, restore the two Houses, and govern by the ancient laws. But this may be apocryphal.

for doubt, that if Cromwell had overcome the resistance of his generals, he would have transmitted the sceptre to his descendants with the acquiescence and tacit approbation of the kingdom. Had we been living ever since under the rule of his dynasty, what tone would our historians have taken as to his character and that of the house of Stuart?

The scheme, however, of founding a new royal line failed of accomplishment, as is well known, through his own caution, which deterred him from encountering the decided opposition of his army. Some of his contemporaries seem to have deemed this abandonment, or more properly suspension, of so splendid a design rather derogatory to his firmness*. But few men were better judges than Cromwell of what might be achieved by daring. It is certainly not impossible that by arresting Lambert, Whalley, and some other generals, he might have crushed for the moment any tendency to open resistance. But the experiment would have been infinitely hazardous. He had gone too far in the path of violence to recover the high road of law by any short cut. King or protector, he must have intimidated every parliament, or sunk under its encroachments. A new-modelled army might have served his turn; but there would have been great difficulties in its formation. It had from the beginning been the misfortune of his government that it rested on a basis too narrow for its safety. For two years he had reigned with no support but the independent sectaries and the army. The army or its commanders becoming odious to the people, he had sacrificed them to the hope of popularity, by abolishing the civil prefectures of the major-generals†, and permitting a bill for again decimating the royalists to be thrown out of the house‡. Their disgust and resentment, excited

* Clar. vii. 203.

† Ludlow, p. 581. The major-generals, or at least many of them, joined the opposition to Cromwell's royalty. Id. p. 586. Clar. State Papers, 332.

‡ This appears from the following passage in a curious letter of Mr. Vincent Gookin to Henry Cromwell, 27th Jan. 1657. "To-morrow the bill for decimating the cavaliers comes again into debate. It is debated with much heat by the major-generals, and as hotly almost by the anti-decimators. I believe the bill will be thrown out of the house. In my opinion,

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

by an artful intriguer, who aspired at least to the succession of the protectorship, found scope in the new project of monarchy, naturally obnoxious to the prejudices of true fanatics, and who still fancied themselves to have contended for a republican liberty. We find that even Fleetwood, allied by marriage to Cromwell, and not involved in the discontent of the major-generals, in all the sincerity of his clouded understanding, revolted from the invidious title, and would have retired from service had it been assumed. There seems therefore reason to think that Cromwell's refusal of the crown was an inevitable mortification. But he undoubtedly did not lose sight of the object for the short remainder of his life *.

those that speak against the bill have much to say in point of moral justice and prudence; but that which makes me fear the passing of the bill is, that thereby his highness' government will be more founded in force, and more removed from that natural foundation which the people in parliament are desirous to give him; supposing that he will become more theirs than now he is, and will in time find the safety and peace of the nation to be as well maintained by the laws of the land as by the sword. And truly, sir, if any others have pretensions to succeed him by their interest in the army, the more of force upholds his highness living, the greater when he is dead will be the hopes and advantages for such a one to effect his aim, who desires to succeed him. Lambert is much for decimations." Thurloe, vi. 20. He writes again, "I am confident it is judged by some that the interest of the godly cannot be preserved but by the dissolution of this, if not all parliaments; and their endeavours in it have been plainly discovered to the party most concerned to know them; which will, I believe, suddenly occasion a reducing of the government to kingship, to which his highness is not averse. Pierpoint and St. John have been often, but secretly, at Whitehall, I know, to advise thereof." P. 37. Thurloe again to the same Henry Cromwell, on February 3, that the decimation bill was thrown out by a majority of forty: "Some gentlemen do think themselves much trampled upon by this vote, and are extremely sensible thereof; and the truth is, it hath wrought such a heat in the house, that I fear little will be done for the future." Id. p. 38. No such bill appears, eo nomine, in the journals. But a bill for regulating the militia forces was thrown out, Jan. 29, by 124 to 88, Col. Cromwell (Oliver's cousin) being a teller for the majority. Probably there was some clause in this renewing the decimation of the royalists.

* Whitelock, who was consulted by Cromwell on this business, and took an active part as one of the committee of conference appointed by the house of commons, intimates that the project was not really laid aside. "He was satisfied in his private judgment that it was fit for him to take upon him the title of king, and matters were prepared in order thereunto; but afterwards by solicitation of the commonwealth's men, and fearing a mutiny and defection of a great part of the army, in case he should assume that title and office, his mind changed, and many of the officers of the army gave out great threatenings against him in case he should do it; he therefore thought it best to attend some better season and opportunity in this business, and refused it at this time with great seeming earnestness." P. 656. The chief advisers with Cromwell on this occasion,

The fundamental charter of the English commonwealth under the protectorship of Cromwell had been the instrument of government, drawn up by the council of officers in December 1653, and approved with modifications by the parliament of the next year. It was now changed to the petition and advice, tendered to him by the present parliament in May 1657, which made very essential innovations in the frame of polity. Though he bore, as formerly, the name of lord protector, we may say, speaking according to theoretical classification, and without reference to his actual exercise of power, which was nearly the same, that the English government in the first period should be ranged in the order of republics, though with a chief magistrate at its head; but that from 1657 it became substantially a monarchy, and ought to be placed in that class, notwithstanding the unimportant difference in the style of its sovereign. The petition and advice had been compiled with a constant respect to that article, which conferred the royal dignity on the protector *; and when this was withdrawn at his request, the rest of the instrument was preserved with all its implied attributions of sovereignty. The style is that of subjects addressing a monarch; the powers it bestows, the privileges it claims, are supposed, according to the expressions employed, the one to be already his own, the other to emanate from his will. The necessity of his consent to laws, though no-

besides Whitelock, were lord Broghill, Pierrepont, Thurloe, and sir Charles Wolseley. Many passages in Thurloe, vol. vii. show that Cromwell preserved to the last his views on royalty.

* Whitelock, 657. It had been agreed, in discussing the petition and advice in parliament, to postpone the first article requesting the protector to assume the title of king, till the rest of the *charter*, to use a modern but not inapplicable word, had been gone through. One of the subsequent articles, fixing the revenue at 1,300,000l. per annum, provides that no part thereof should be raised by a land-tax, "and this not to be altered without the consent of the *three estates in parliament*." A division took place, in consequence, no doubt, of this insidious expression, which was preserved by 97 to 50. Journals, 13 March. The first article was carried, after much debate, on March 24, by 123 to 62. It stood thus: "Resolved, That your highness will be pleased to assume the name, style, dignity, and office of King of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and the respective dominions and territories thereunto belonging; and to exercise the same according to the laws of these nations." On Cromwell's first demurring to the proposal, it was resolved to adhere to the petition and advice by the small majority of 78 to 65. This was perhaps a sufficient warning that he should not proceed.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

where mentioned, seems to have been taken for granted. An unlimited power of appointing a successor, unknown even to constitutional kingdoms, was vested in the protector. He was inaugurated with solemnities applicable to monarchs; and what of itself is a sufficient test of the monarchical and republican species of government, an oath of allegiance was taken by every member of parliament to the protector singly, without any mention of the commonwealth*. It is surely, therefore, no paradox to assert, that Oliver Cromwell was de facto sovereign of England, during the interval from June 1657 to his death in September 1658.

The zealous opponents of royalty could not be insensible that they had seen it revive in every thing except a title, which was not likely to remain long behind †. It was too late, however, to oppose the first magistrate's personal authority. But there remained one important point of contention, which the new constitution had not fully settled. It was therein provided, that the parliament should consist of two houses, the commons, and what they always termed, with an awkward generality, the other house. This was to consist of not more than seventy, nor less than forty persons, to be nominated by the protector, and, as it stood at first, to be approved by the commons. But before the close of the session, the court party prevailed to repeal this last condition ‡; and Cromwell accordingly issued writs of summons to persons of various parties, a few of the ancient peers, a few of his adversaries, whom he hoped to gain over, or at least to exclude from the commons, and of course a majority of his steady adherents. To all these he gave the title of lords, and in the next session their assembly

* Journals, 21st June. This oath, which effectually declared the parliament to be the protector's subjects, was only carried by 63 to 55. Lambert refused it, and was dismissed the army in consequence, with a pension of 2000l. per ann. instead of his pay, 10l. a day. So well did they cater for themselves. Ludlow, 593. Broderick wrote to Hyde, June 30, 1657, that there was a general tranquillity in England, all parties seeming satisfied with the compromise; Fleetwood and Desborough more absolutely Cromwell's friends than before, and Lambert very silent. Clar. State Papers, 349.

† Thurloe, vi. 310.

‡ Compare Journals, 11th March with 24th June.

denominated itself the lords' house*. This measure encountered considerable difficulty. The republican party, almost as much attached to that vote which had declared the house of lords useless, as to that which had abolished the monarchy, and well aware of the intimate connexion between the two, resisted the assumption of this aristocratic title, instead of that of the other house, which the petition and advice had sanctioned. The real peers feared to compromise their hereditary right by sitting in an assembly where the tenure was only during life; and disdained some of their colleagues, such as Pride and Hewson, low-born and insolent men, whom Cromwell had rather injudiciously bribed with this new nobility; though, with these few exceptions, his house of lords was respectably composed. Hence, in the short session of January, 1658, wherein the late excluded members were permitted to take their seats, so many difficulties were made about acknowledging the lords' house by that denomination, that the protector hastily and angrily dissolved the parliament†.

It is a singular part of Cromwell's system of policy, that he would neither reign with parliaments nor without them; impatient of an opposition which he was sure to experience, he still never seems to have meditated the attainment of a naked and avowed despotism. This was probably due to his observation of the ruinous consequences that Charles had brought on himself by that course, and his knowledge of the temper of the English, never content without the exterior forms of liberty, as well as to the suggestions of counsellors who were not destitute of concern for the laws. He had also his great design yet to accomplish, which could only be safely done under the sanction of a parliament. A

* Whitelock, 665. They were to have a judicial power, much like that of the real house of lords. Journals, March.

† Whitelock; Parl. Hist. The former says this was done against his advice. These debates about the other house are to be traced in the Journals, and are mentioned by Thurloe, vi. 107, &c.; and Ludlow, 597. Not one of the true peers, except lord Eure, took his seat in this house; and Haslerig, who had been nominated merely to weaken his influence, chose to retain his place in the commons. The list of these pretended lords in Thurloe, vi. 668, is not quite the same as that in Whitelock.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

very short time, accordingly, before his death, we find that he had not only resolved to meet once more the representatives of the nation, but was tampering with several of the leading officers to obtain their consent to an hereditary succession. The majority, however, of a council of nine, to whom he referred this suggestion, would only consent that the protector for the time being should have the power of nominating his successor; a vain attempt to escape from that regal form of government which they had been taught to abhor*. But a sudden illness, of a nature seldom fatal except to a constitution already shattered by fatigue and anxiety, rendered abortive all these projects of Cromwell's ambition.

He left a fame behind him, proportioned to his extraordinary fortunes, and to the great qualities which sustained them; still more perhaps the admiration of strangers than of his country, because that sentiment was less alloyed by hatred, which seeks to extenuate the glory that irritates it. The nation itself forgave much to one who had brought back the renown of her ancient story, the traditions of Elizabeth's age, after the ignominious reigns of her successors. This contrast with James and Charles in their foreign policy gave additional lustre to the era of the protectorate. There could not but be a sense of national pride to see an Englishman, but yesterday raised above the many,

* This junto of nine debated how they might be secure against the cavaliers. One scheme was an oath of abjuration; but this it was thought they would all take: another was to lay a heavy tax on them: "a moiety of their estates was spoken of; but this, I suppose, will not down with all the nine, and least of all will it be swallowed by the parliament, who will not be persuaded to punish both nocent and innocent without distinction." 22d June; Thurloe, vol. vii. p. 198. And again, p. 269: "I believe we are out of danger of our junto, and I think also of ever having such another. As I take it, the report was made to his highness upon Thursday. After much consideration, the major part voted that succession in the government was indifferent whether it were by election or hereditary; but afterwards some would needs add that it was desirable to have it continued elective; that is, that the chief magistrate should always name his successor; and that of hereditary avoided; and I fear the word desirable will be made necessary, if ever it come upon the trial. His highness finding he can have no advice from those he most expected it from, saith he will take his own resolutions, and that he can no longer satisfy himself to sit still, and make himself guilty of the loss of all the honest party, and of the nation itself."

without one drop of blood in his veins, which the princes of the earth could challenge as their own, receive the homage of those who acknowledged no right to power, and hardly any title to respect, except that of prescription. The sluggish pride of Spain, the mean-spirited cunning of Mazarin, the irregular imagination of Christina, sought with emulous ardour the friendship of our usurper *. He had the advantage of reaping the harvest which he had not sown, by an honourable treaty with Holland, the fruit of victories achieved under the parliament. But he still employed the great energies of Blake in the service for which he was so eminently fitted; and it is just to say, that the maritime glory of England may first be traced from the era of the commonwealth in a track of continuous light. The oppressed protestants in catholic kingdoms, disgusted at the lukewarmness and half-apostasy of the Stuarts, looked up to him as their patron and mediator †. Courted by the two rival monarchies of Europe, he seemed to threaten both with his hostility; and when he declared against Spain, and attacked her West India possessions, with little pretence certainly of justice, but not by any means, as I conceive, with the impolicy sometimes charged against him, so auspicious was his star, that the very failure and disappointment of that

* Harris, p. 348, has collected some curious instances of the servility of crowned heads to Cromwell.

† See Clarendon, vii. 297. He saved Nismes from military execution on account of a riot, wherein the huguenots seem to have been much to blame. In the treaty between England and France, 1654, the French, in agreeing to the secret article about the exclusion of the royalists, endeavoured to make it reciprocal, that the commissioners of rebels in France should not be admitted in England. This did not seem very outrageous—but Cromwell objected that the French protestants would be thus excluded from imploring the assistance of England, if they were persecuted; protesting, however, that he was very far from having any thought to draw them from their obedience, as had been imputed to him, and that he would arm against them, if they should offer frivolously and without a cause to disturb the peace of France. Thurloe, iii. 6. In fact, the French protestants were in the habit of writing to Thurloe, as this collection testifies, whenever they thought themselves injured, which happened frequently enough. Cromwell's noble zeal in behalf of the Vaudois is well known. See this volume of Thurloe, p. 412, &c. Mazarin and the catholic powers in general endeavoured to lye down that massacre; but the usurper had too much protestant spirit to believe them. Id. 536.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

expedition obtained a more advantageous possession for England than all the triumphs of her former kings.

Notwithstanding this external splendour, which has deceived some of our own, and most foreign writers, it is evident that the submission of the people to Cromwell was far from peaceable or voluntary. His strong and skilful grasp kept down a nation of enemies that must naturally, to judge from their numbers and inveteracy, have overwhelmed him. It required a dexterous management to play with the army, and without the army he could not have existed as sovereign for a day. Yet it seems highly improbable that had Cromwell lived, any insurrection or conspiracy, setting aside assassination, could have overthrown a possession so fenced by systematic vigilance, by experienced caution, by the respect and terror that belonged to his name. The royalist and republican intrigues had gone on for several years without intermission; but every part of their designs was open to him; and it appears that there was not courage or rather temerity sufficient to make any open demonstration of so prevalent a disaffection *.

The most superficial observers cannot have overlooked the general resemblances in the fortunes and character of Cromwell, and of him who, more recently, and upon an ampler theatre, has struck nations with wonder and awe. But the parallel may be traced more closely than perhaps has hitherto been remarked. Both raised to power by the only merit which a revolution leaves uncontroverted and untarnished, that of military achievements, in that reflux of public sentiment, when the fervid enthusiasm of democracy gives place to disgust at its excesses, and a desire of firm government. The means of greatness the same to both, the extinction of a representative assembly, once national, but already mutilated by violence, and sunk by its submission to that illegal

* Ludlow, 607; Thurloe, i. and ii. passim.

force into general contempt. In military science or the renown of their exploits, we cannot certainly rank Cromwell by the side of him for whose genius and ambition all Europe seemed the appointed quarry; but it may be said that the former's exploits were as much above the level of his contemporaries, and more the fruits of an original uneducated capacity. In civil government, there can be no adequate parallel between one who had sucked only the dregs of a besotted fanaticism, and one to whom the stores of reason and philosophy were open. But it must here be added, that Cromwell, far unlike his antitype, never showed any signs of a legislative mind, or any desire to fix his renown on that noblest basis, the amelioration of social institutions. Both were eminent masters of human nature, and played with inferior capacities in all the security of powerful minds. Though both, coming at the conclusion of a struggle for liberty, trampled upon her claims, and sometimes spoke disdainfully of her name, each knew how to associate the interests of those who had contended for her with his own ascendancy, and made himself the representative of a victorious revolution. Those who had too much philosophy, or zeal for freedom, to give way to popular admiration for these illustrious usurpers, were yet amused with the adulation that lawful princes showered on them, more gratuitously in one instance, with servile terror in the other. Both too repaid in some measure this homage of the pretended great by turning their ambition towards those honours and titles which they knew to be so little connected with high desert. A fallen race of monarchs, which had made way for the greatness of each, cherished hopes of restoration by their power, till each, by an inexpiable act of blood, manifested his determination to make no compromise with that line. Both possessed a certain coarse good nature and affability, that covered the want of conscience, honour, and humanity; quick in passion, but not vindictive, and averse to unnecessary crimes. Their fortunes in the conclusion of life were indeed very different: one forfeited the affections of his

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

people, which the other, in the character at least of their master, had never possessed; one furnished a moral to Europe by the continuance of his success, the other by the prodigiousness of his fall. A fresh resemblance arose afterwards, when the restoration of those royal families, whom their ascendant had kept under, revived ancient animosities, and excited new ones; those, who from love of democratical liberty had borne the most deadly hatred to the apostates who had betrayed it, recovering some affection to their memory, out of aversion to a common enemy. Our English republicans have, with some exceptions, displayed a sympathy for the name of Cromwell; and I need not observe how remarkably this holds good in the case of his mighty parallel *.

The death of a great man, even in the most regular course of affairs, seems always to create a sort of pause in the movement of society; it is always a problem to be solved only by experiment, whether the mechanism of government may not be disordered by the shock, or have been deprived of some of its moving powers. But what change could be so great, as that from Oliver Cromwell to his son! from one beneath the terror of whose name a nation had cowered and foreign princes grown pale, one trained in

* Mrs. Macauley, who had nothing of compromise or conciliation in her temper, and breathed the entire spirit of Vane and Ludlow, makes some vigorous and just animadversions on the favour shown to Cromwell by some professors of a regard for liberty. The dissenting writers, such as Neal, and in some measure Harris, were particularly open to this reproach. He long continued (perhaps the present tense is more appropriate) to be revered by the independents. One who well knew the manners he paints has described the secret idolatry of that sect to their hero-saint. See Crabbe's Tale of the Frank Courtship.

Slingsly Bethell, an exception perhaps to the general politics of this sect, published in 1667 a tract, entitled The World's Mistake in Oliver Cromwell, with the purpose of decrying his policy and depreciating his genius. Harleian Miscellany, i. 280. But he who goes about to prove the world mistaken in its estimate of a public character, has always a difficult cause to maintain. Bethell, like Mrs. Macauley and others, labours to set up the Rump parliament against the soldier who kicked them; and asserts that Cromwell, having found 500,000*l.* in ready money, with the value of 700,000*l.* in stores, and the army in advance of their pay, (subject, however, to a debt of near 500,000*l.*); the customs and excise bringing in nearly a million annually, left a debt which, in Richard's parliament, was given in at 1,900,000*l.*, though he believes this to have been purposely exaggerated in order to procure supplies. I cannot say how far these sums are correct; but it is to be kept in mind, that one great resource of the parliament, confiscation, sequestration, composition, could not be repeated. Neither of these governments, it will be found on inquiry, were economical, especially in respect to the emoluments of those concerned in them.

twenty eventful years of revolution, the first of his age in the field or in council, to a young man fresh from a country life, uneducated, unused to business, as little a statesman as a soldier, and endowed by nature with capacities by no means above the common. It seems to have been a mistake in Oliver, that with the projects he had long formed in his eldest son's favour, he should have taken so little pains to fashion his mind and manners for the exercise of sovereign power, while he had placed the second in a very eminent and arduous station; or that, if he despaired of Richard's capacity, he should have trusted him to encounter those perils of disaffection and conspiracy which it had required all his own vigilance to avert. But whatever might be his plans, the sudden illness which carried him from the world left no time for completing them. The Petition and Advice had simply empowered him to appoint a successor, without prescribing the mode. It appeared consonant to law and reason, that so important a trust should be executed in a notorious manner, and by a written instrument; or if a verbal nomination might seem sufficient, it was at least to be expected that this should be authenticated by solemn and indisputable testimony. No proof, however, was ever given of Richard's appointment by his father, except a recital in the proclamation of the privy-council, which, whether well founded or otherwise, did not carry conviction to the minds of the people; and this, even if we call it but an informality, aggravated the numerous legal and natural deficiencies of his title to the government *.

* Whitelock,674; Ludlow,611,624. Lord Fauconberg writes in cipher to Henry Cromwell, on Aug. 30, that "Thurloe has seemed resolved to press him in his intervals to such a nomination [of a successor]; but whether out of apprehensions to displease him if recovering, or others hereafter, if it should not succeed, he has not yet done it, nor do I believe will." Thurloe, however, announces on Sept. 4, that "his highness was pleased before his death to declare my lord Richard successor. He did it on Monday, and the Lord hath so ordered it, that the council and army hath received him with all manner of affection. He is this day proclaimed, and hitherto there seems great face of peace; the Lord continue it." Thurloe, State Papers, vii. 365, 372. Lord Fauconberg afterwards confirms the fact of Richard's nomination. P. 375; and see 415.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

This very difference, however, in the personal qualifications of the father and the son, procured the latter some friends whom the former had never been able to gain. Many of the presbyterian party began to see the finger of God, as they called it, in his peaceable accession, and think they owed subjection to one who came in neither by regicide, nor hypocrisy, nor violence *. Some cool-headed and sincere friends of liberty entertained similar opinions. Pierrepont, one of the wisest men in England, who had stood aloof from the protector's government, till the scheme of restoring monarchy came into discussion, had great hopes, as a writer of high authority informs us, of settling the nation in the enjoyment of its liberties under the young man; who was "so flexible," says that writer, "to good counsels, that there was nothing desirable in a prince which might not have been hoped in him, but a great spirit and a just title; the first of which sometimes doth more hurt than good in a sovereign; the latter would have been supplied by the people's deserved approbation." Pierrepont believed that the restoration of the ancient family could not be effected without the ruin of the people's liberty, and all who had been its champions; so that no royalist, he thought, who had any regard to his country, would attempt it; while this establishment of monarchy in Richard's person might reconcile that party, and compose all differences among men of weight and of zeal for the public good †. He acted accordingly on those principles; and became, as well as his friend St. John, who had been discountenanced by Oliver, a steady supporter of the young protector's administration. These two, with Thurloe, Whitelock, lord Broghill, and a very few more, formed a small phalanx of experienced counsellors around his unstable throne. And I must confess that their course of policy in sustaining Richard's govern-

* "Many sober men that called his father no better than a traitorous hypocrite, did begin to think that they owed him [R. C.] subjection," &c. Baxter, 100.

† Hutchinson, 343. She does not name Pierrepont, but I have little doubt that he is meant.

ment appears to me the most judicious that, in the actual circumstances, could have been adopted. Pregnant as the restoration of the exiled family was with incalculable dangers, the English monarchy would have revived with less lustre in the eyes of the vulgar, but with more security for peace and freedom, in the line of Cromwell. Time would have worn away the stains of ignoble birth and criminal usurpation; and the young man, whose misfortune has subjected him to rather an exaggerated charge of gross incapacity, would probably have reigned as well as most of those who are born in the purple *.

But this termination was defeated by the combination of some who knew not what they wished, and of some who wished what they could never attain. The general officers who had been well content to make Cromwell the first of themselves, or greater than themselves by their own creation, had never forgiven his manifest design to reign over them as one of a superior order, and owing nothing to their pleasure. They had begun to cabal during his last illness. Though they did not oppose Richard's succession, they continued to hold meetings, not quite public, but exciting intense alarm in his council. As if disdaining the command of a clownish boy, they proposed that the station of lord general should be separated from that of protector, with the power over all commissions in the army, and conferred on Fleetwood; who, though his brother-in-law, was a certain instrument in their hands. The vain ambitious Lambert, aspiring, on the credit of some military reputation, to wield the sceptre of Cromwell, influenced this junto; while the commonwealth's party, some of whom were, or had been, in the army, drew over several of these ignorant and fanatical soldiers. Thurloe describes the posture of affairs in September and October, while all Europe was admiring the peaceable transmission of Oliver's power, as most alarming; and it may almost

* Richard's conduct is more than once commended in the correspondence of Thurloe, p. 491, 497; and in fact he did nothing amiss during his short administration.

CHAP. X.

Common-wealth.

be said, that Richard had already fallen when he was proclaimed the lord protector of England *.

It was necessary to summon a parliament on the usual score of obtaining money. Lord Broghill had advised this measure immediately on Oliver's death †, and perhaps the delay might be rather prejudicial to the new establishment. But some of the council feared a parliament almost as much as they did the army. They called one, however, to meet Jan. 27, 1659, issuing writs in the ordinary manner to all boroughs which had been accustomed to send members, and consequently abandoning the reformed model of Cromwell. This Ludlow attributes to their expectation of greater influence among the small boroughs; but it may possibly be ascribed still more to a desire of returning by little and little to the ancient constitution, by eradicating the revolutionary innovations. The new parliament consisted of courtiers, as the Cromwell party were always denominated, of presbyterians, among whom some of cavalier principles crept in, and of republicans; the two latter nearly balancing, with their united weight, the ministerial majority ‡. They began with an oath of allegiance to the Protector, as presented by the late parliament, which, as

* Thurloe, vii. 320 et post, passim, in letters both from himself and lord Fauconberg. Thus, immediately on Richard's accession, the former writes to Henry Cromwell, "It hath pleased God hitherto to give his highness your brother a very easy and peaceable entrance upon his government. There is not a dog that wags his tongue, so great a calm we are in . . . But I must needs acquaint your excellency, that there are some secret murmurings in the army, as if his highness were not general of the army as his father was," &c. P. 374. Here was the secret: the officers did not like to fall back under the civil power, by obeying one who was not a soldier. This soon displayed itself openly; and lord Fauconberg thought the game was over as early as Sept. 28. P. 413. It is to be observed that Fauconberg was secretly a royalist, and might hope to bring over his brother-in-law.

† Id. 573.

‡ Lord Fauconberg says, "the commonwealth men in the parliament were very numerous, and beyond measure bold, but more than doubly overbalanced by the sober party; so that, though this make their results slow, we see no great cause as yet to fear." P. 612. And Dr. Barwick, a correspondent of lord Clarendon, tells him the republicans were the minority, but all speakers, zealous and diligent—it was likely to end in a titular protector, without militia or negative voice. P. 615.

According to a letter from Allen Broderick to Hyde, (Clar. St. Pap. iii. 443,) there were 47 republicans, from 100 to 140 neuters or moderates (including many royalists), and 170 court lawyers, or officers.

usual in such cases, his enemies generally took without scruple *. But upon a bill being offered for the recognition of Richard as the undoubted lord protector and chief magistrate of the commonwealth, they made a stand against the word recognise, which was carried with difficulty, and caused him the mortification of throwing out the epithet undoubted †. They subsequently discussed his negative voice in passing bills, which had been purposely slurred over in the Petition and Advice; but now every thing was disputed. The thorny question, as to the powers and privileges of the other house, came next into debate. It was carried by 177 to 113, to transact business with them. To this resolution an explanation was added, that it was not thereby intended to exclude such peers as had been faithful to the parliament, from their privilege of being duly summoned to be members of that house. The court supporting this absurd proviso, which confounded the ancient and modern systems of government, carried it by the small majority of 195 to 188 ‡. They were stronger in rejecting an important motion, to make the approbation of the commons a preliminary to their transacting business with the persons now sitting in the other house as a house of parliament, by 183 voices to 146. But the opposition succeeded in inserting the words "during the present parliament," which left the matter still unsettled §. The sitting of the Scots

* Ludlow tells us, that he contrived to sit in the house without taking the oath, and that some others did the same, p. 619.

† Whitelock, Parl. Hist. 1530, 1541.

‡ The numbers are differently, but, I suppose, erroneously stated in Thurloe, vii. 640. It is said, in a pamphlet of the time, that this clause was introduced to please the cavaliers, who acted with the court; Somers Tracts, vi. 482. Ludlow seems also to think, that these parties were united in this parliament, p. 629; but this seems not very probable, and is contrary to some things we know. Clarendon had advised that the royalists should try to get into parliament, and there to oppose all raising of money, and every thing else that might tend to settle the government. Clar. State Papers, 411. This of course was their true game.

It is said, that Richard pressing the earl of Northumberland to sit in the other house, he declined, urging that when the government was such as his predecessors had served under, he would serve him with his life and fortune. Id. 433.

§ Parl. Hist. Journals, 27 Jan. 14. 18 Feb. 1, 8, 21, 23, 28 March. The names of the tellers in those divisions show the connexions of leading individuals: we find indifferently presbyterian and republican names for the minority, as Fairfax, Lambert, Nevil, Haslerig, Townshend, Booth.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

and Irish members was also unsuccessfully opposed. Upon the whole, the court party, notwithstanding this coalition of very heterogeneous interests against them, were sufficiently powerful to disappoint the hopes which the royalist intriguers had entertained. A strong body of lawyers, led by Maynard, adhered to the government, which was supported also on some occasions by a part of the presbyterian interest, or, as then called, the moderate party; and Richard would probably have concluded the session with no loss of power, if either he or his parliament could have withstood the more formidable cabal of Wallingford House. This knot of officers, Fleetwood, Desborough, Berry, Sydenham, being the names most known among them, formed a coalition with the republican faction, who despaired of any success in parliament. The dissolution of that assembly was the main article of this league. Alarmed at the notorious caballing of the officers, the commons voted that, during the sitting of the parliament, there should be no general council, or meeting of the officers of the army without leave of the protector and of both houses*. Such a vote

* There seems reason to believe, that Richard would have met with more support both in the house and among the nation, if he had not been oppressed by the odium of some of his father's counsellors. A general indignation was felt at those who had condemned men to death in illegal tribunals, whom the republicans and cavaliers were impatient to bring to justice. He was forced also to employ and to screen from vengeance his wise and experienced secretary Thurloe, master of all the secret springs that had moved his father's government, but obnoxious from the share he had taken in illegal and arbitrary measures. Petitions were presented to the house from several who had been committed to the Tower upon short written orders, without any formal warrant, or expressed cause of commitment. In the case of one of these, Mr. Portman, the house resolved that his apprehension, imprisonment, and detention in the Tower was illegal and unjust. (Journals, 26 Feb.) A still more flagrant tyranny was that frequently practised by Cromwell of sending persons disaffected to him as slaves to the West Indies. One Mr. Thomas petitioned the house of commons, complaining that he had been thus sold as a slave. A member of the court side justified it on the score of his being a malignant. Major-general Browne, a secret royalist, replied that he was nevertheless an Englishman and free-born. Thurloe had the presumption to say, that he had not thought to live to see the day, when such a thing as this, so justly and legally done by lawful authority, should be brought before parliament. Vane replied, that he did not think to have seen the day when free-born Englishmen should be sold for slaves by such an arbitrary government. There were, it seems, not less than fifty gentlemen sold for slaves at Barbadoes. Clarendon St. Papers, p. 447. The royalists had planned to attack Thurloe for some of these unjustifiable proceedings, which would have greatly embarrassed the government. Ibid. 423, 428. They hoped

could only accelerate their own downfall. Three days afterwards, the junto of Wallingford House insisted with Richard that he should dissolve parliament; to which, according to the advice of most of his council, and perhaps by an overruling necessity, he gave his consent *. This was immediately followed by a declaration of the council of officers, calling back the Long Parliament, such as it had been expelled in 1653, to those seats which had been filled meanwhile by so many transient successors †.

It is not in general difficult for an armed force to destroy a government; but something else than the sword is required to create one. The military conspirators were destitute of any leader whom they would acknowledge, or who had capacity to go

that Richard would be better disposed towards the king, if his three advisers, St. John, Thurloe, and Pierrepont, all implacable to their cause, could be removed. But they were not strong enough in the house. If Richard, however, had continued in power, he must probably have sacrificed Thurloe to public opinion; and the consciousness of this may have led this minister to advise the dissolution of the parliament, and perhaps to betray his master, from the suspicion of which he is not free.

It ought to be remarked what an outrageous proof of Cromwell's tyranny is exhibited in this note. Many writers glide favourably over his administration, or content themselves with treating it as an usurpation, which can furnish no precedent, and consequently does not merit particular notice; but the effect of this generality is, that the world forms an imperfect notion of the degree of arbitrary power which he exerted; and I believe there are many who take Charles the First, and even Charles the Second, for greater violators of the laws than the protector. Neal and Harris are full of this dishonest bigotry.

* Richard advised with Broghill, Fiennes, Thurloe, and others of his council, all of whom, except Whitelock, who informs us of this, were in favour of the dissolution. This caused, he says, much trouble to honest men; the cavaliers and republicans rejoiced at it; many of Richard's council were his enemies. P. 177. The army at first intended to raise money by their own authority; but this was deemed impossible, and it was resolved to recall the Long Parliament. Lambert and Haslerig accordingly met Lenthall, who was persuaded to remain in office; though, if Ludlow is right, against his will, being now connected with the court, and in the pretended house of lords. The parliament now consisted of 91 members. Parl. Hist. 1547. Harris quotes a manuscript journal of Montagu, afterwards earl of Sandwich, wherein it is said that Richard's great error was to dissolve the parliament, and that he might have over-ruled the army, if he would have employed himself, Ingoldsby, lord Fauconberg, and others, who were suspected to be for the king. Life of Charles II. 194. He afterwards, p. 203, quotes Calamy's Life of Howe for the assertion that Richard stood out against his council, with Thurloe alone, that the parliament should not be dissolved. This is very unlikely.

† This was carried against the previous question by 163 to 87. Journals Abr. 111. Some of the protector's friends were alarmed at so high a vote against the army, which did in fact bring the matter to a crisis. Thurloe, vii. 659, et post.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

through the civil labours of sovereignty; Lambert alone excepted, who was lying in wait for another occasion. They might have gone on with Richard, as a pageant of nominal authority. But their new allies, the commonwealth's men, insisted upon restoring the Long Parliament*. It seemed now the policy, as much as duty, of the officers to obey that civil power they had set up. For to rule ostensibly was, as I have just observed, an impracticable scheme. But the contempt they felt for their pretended masters, and even a sort of necessity arising out of the blindness and passion of that little oligarchy, drove them to a step still more ruinous to their cause than that of deposing Richard, the expulsion once more of that assembly, now worn out and ridiculous in all men's eyes, yet seeming a sort of frail protection against mere anarchy, and the terror of the sword. Lambert, the chief actor in this last act of violence, and indeed many of the rest, might plead the right of self-defence. The prevailing faction in the parliament, led by Haslerig, a bold and headstrong man, perceived that, with very inferior pretensions, Lambert was aiming to tread in the steps of Cromwell; and remembering their negligence of opportunities, as they thought, in permitting the one to overthrow them, fancied that they would anticipate the other. Their intemperate votes cashiering Lambert, Desborough, and other officers, brought on, as every man of more prudence than Haslerig must have foreseen, an immediate revolution, that crushed once more their boasted commonwealth †. They revived

* The army, according to Ludlow, had not made up their minds how to act after the dissolution of the parliament, and some were inclined to go on with Richard; but the republican party, who had coalesced with that faction of officers who took their denomination from Wallingford-house, their place of meeting, insisted on the restoration of the old parliament; though they agreed to make some provision for Richard. Memoirs, p. 635—646. Accordingly it was voted to give him an income of 10,000l. per annum. Journals, July 16.

† Journals, Sept. 23, et post. Whitelock, 683. Parl. Hist. 1562. Thurloe, vii. 703, et post. Ludlow's account of this period is the most interesting part of his Memoirs. The chief officers, it appears from his narrative, were soon disgusted with their republican allies, and "behaved with all imaginable perverseness and insolence" in the council of state, whenever they came there, which was but seldom, scrupling the oath to be true to the commonwealth against Charles Stuart, or any other person. P. 657. He censures, however, the violence of Hasle-

again soon after, not by any exertion of the people, who hated alike both parties, in their behalf, but through the disunion of their real masters, the army, and vented the impotent and injudicious rage of a desperate faction on all who had not gone every length on their side, till scarce any man of eminence was left to muster under the standard of Haslerig and his little knot of associates *.

I can by no means agree with those who find in the character of the English nation some absolute incompatibility with a republican constitution of government. Under favouring circumstances, it seems to me not at all incredible, that such a polity might have existed for many ages in great prosperity, and without violent convulsion. For the English are, as a people, little subject to those bursts of passion which inflame the more imaginative multitude of southern climates, and render them both apt for revolutions, and incapable of conducting them. Nor are they again of that sluggish and stationary temper, which chokes all desire of improvement, and even all zeal for freedom and justice, through which some free governments have degenerated into corrupt oligarchies. The most conspicuously successful experiment of republican institutions, and those far more democratical than, according to the general theory of politics, could be reconciled with perfect tranquillity, has taken place in a people of English original; and though much must here be ascribed to the peculiarly fortunate situation of the nation to which I allude, we can hardly avoid giving some weight to the good sense and well balanced temperament, which have come in their inheritance

rig, "a man of a disobliging temper, sour and morose of temper, liable to be transported with passion, and in whom liberality seemed to be a vice. Yet to do him justice, I must acknowledge that I am under no manner of doubt concerning the rectitude and sincerity of his intentions." P. 718. Ludlow gave some offence to the hot-headed republicans by his half-compliance with the army, and much disapproved the proceedings they adopted after their second restoration in December 1659, against Vane and others. P. 800. Yet, though nominated on the committee of safety, on the expulsion of the parliament in October, he never sat on it, as Vane and Whitelock did.

* Journals, and other authorities above cited.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

with our laws and our language. But the establishment of free commonwealths depends much rather on temporary causes, the influence of persons and particular events, and all those intricacies in the course of providence which we term accident, than on any general maxims that can become the basis of prior calculation. In the year 1659, it is manifest that no idea could be more chimerical than that of a republican settlement in England. The name, never familiar or venerable in English ears, was grown infinitely odious; it was associated with the tyranny of ten years, the selfish rapacity of the Rump, the hypocritical despotism of Cromwell, the arbitrary sequestrations of committee-men, the iniquitous decimations of military prefects, the sale of British citizens for slavery in the West Indies, the blood of some shed on the scaffold without legal trial, the tedious imprisonment of many with denial of the habeas corpus, the exclusion of the ancient gentry, the persecution of the Anglican church, the bacchanalian rant of sectaries, the morose preciseness of puritans, the extinction of the frank and cordial joyousness of the national character. Were the people again to endure the mockery of the good old cause, as the commonwealth's men affected to style the interests of their little faction, and be subject to Lambert's notorious want of principle, or to Vane's contempt of ordinances, a godly mode of expressing the same thing, or to Haslerig's fury, or to Harrison's fanaticism, or to the fancies of those lesser schemers, who in this utter confusion and abject state of their party, were amusing themselves with plans of perfect commonwealths, and debating whether there should be a senate as well as a representation; whether a given number should go out by rotation; and all those details of political mechanism so important in the eyes of theorists*? Every project of this description must have wanted

* The Rota Club, as it was called, was composed, chiefly at least, of these dealers in new constitutions, which were debated in due form. Harrington was one of the most conspicuous. Biographia Britannica, from Wood's Athenæ Oxonienses.

what alone could give it either the pretext of legitimate existence, or the chance of permanency, popular consent; the republican party, if we exclude those who would have had a protector, and those fanatics who expected the appearance of Jesus Christ, was incalculably small; not, perhaps, amounting in the whole nation to more than a few hundred persons.

The little court of Charles, at Brussels, watched with trembling hope these convulsive struggles of their enemies. During the protectorship of Oliver, their best chance appeared to be, that some of the numerous schemes for his assassination might take effect. Their correspondence, indeed, especially among the presbyterian or neutral party, became more extensive*; but these men were habitually cautious: and the marquis of Ormond, who went over to England in the beginning of 1658, though he reported the disaffection to be still more universal than he had expected, was forced to add, that there was little prospect of a rising until foreign troops should be landed in some part of the country; an aid which Spain had frequently promised, but, with an English fleet at sea, could not very easily furnish†. The death of their puissant enemy brightened the visions of the royalists. Though the apparent peaceableness of Richard's government gave them some mortification, they continued to spread their toils through zealous emissaries, and found a very general willingness to restore the ancient constitution under its hereditary sovereign. Besides the cavaliers, who, though numerous and ardent, were impoverished and suspected, the chief presbyterians, lords Fairfax and Willoughby, the earls of Manchester and Denbigh, Sir William Waller, Sir George Booth, Sir Ashley Cooper, Mr. Popham of Somerset, Mr. Howe of Glocester, Sir Horatio Townshend of Norfolk, with more or less of zeal and activity, pledged themselves

* Thurloe, vi. 579. Clarendon State Papers, 391. 395.

† Carte's Letters, ii. 118. In a letter of Ormond to Hyde about this time, he seems to have seen into the king's character, and speaks of him severely: "I fear his immoderate delight in empty, effeminate, and vulgar conversations, is become an irresistible part of his nature," &c. Clarendon State Papers, iii. 387.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

to the royal cause *. Lord Fauconberg, a royalist by family, who had married a daughter of Cromwell, undertook the important office of working on his brothers-in-law, Richard and Henry, whose position, in respect to the army and republican party, was so hazardous. It seems, in fact, that Richard, even during his continuance in power, had not refused to hear the king's agents †, and hopes were entertained of him: yet at that time even he could not reasonably be expected to abandon his apparent interests. But soon after his fall from power, while his influence, or rather that of his father's memory, was still supposed considerable with Montagu, Monk, and Lockhart, they negotiated with him to procure the accession of those persons, and of his brother Henry, for a pension of £20,000 a year, and a title ‡. It soon appeared, however, that those prudent veterans of revolution would not embark under such a pilot, and that Richard was not worth purchasing on the lowest terms. Even Henry Cromwell, with whom a separate treaty had been carried on, and who is said to have determined at one time to proclaim the king at Dublin, from want of courage, or, as is more probable, of seriousness in

* Clarendon Papers, 391. 418. 460. et post. Townshend, a young man who seems to have been much looked up to, was not, in fact, a presbyterian, but is reckoned among them as not a cavalier, having come of age since the wars, and his family neutral.

† This curious fact appears for the first time, I believe, in the Clarendon State Papers, unless it is any where intimated in Carte's collection of the Ormond letters. In the former collection we find several allusions to it; the first is in a letter from Rumbold, a royalist emissary, to Hyde, dated Dec. 2, 1658, p. 421; from which I collect lord Fauconberg's share in this intrigue; which is also confirmed by a letter of Mordaunt to the king, in p. 423. "The lord Falconbridge protests that Cromwell is so remiss a person that he cannot play his own game, much less another man's, and is thereby discouraged from acting in business, having also many enemies who oppose his gaining either power or interest in the army or civil government, because they conceive his principles contrary to theirs. He says, Thurloe governs Cromwell, and St. John and Pierrepont govern Thurloe; and therefore is not likely he will think himself in danger till these tell him so, nor seek a diversion of it but by their councils." Feb. 10, 1659. These ill-grounded hopes of Richard's accession to their cause appear in several other letters, and even Hyde seems to have given into them, 434. 454. &c. Broderick, another active emissary of the royalists, fancied that the three above-mentioned would restore the king if they dared, 477; but this is quite unlikely.

‡ P. 469. This was carried on through colonel Henry Cromwell, his cousin. It is said that Richard had not courage to sign the letters to Monk and his other friends, which he afterwards repented, 491. The intrigues still went on with him for a little longer. This was in May, 1659.

what must have seemed so unnatural an undertaking, submitted quietly to the vote of parliament that deprived him of the command of Ireland *.

The conspiracy, if indeed so general a concert for the restoration of ancient laws and liberties ought to have so equivocal an appellation, became ripe in the summer of 1659. The royalists were to appear in arms in different quarters; several principal towns to be seized: but as the moment grew nigh, the courage of most began to fail. Twenty years of depression and continual failure mated the spirits of the cavaliers. The shade of Cromwell seemed to hover over and protect the wreck of his greatness. Sir George Booth, almost alone, rose in Cheshire; every other scheme, intended to be executed simultaneously, failing through the increased prudence of those concerned, or the precautions taken by the government on secret intelligence of the plots; and Booth, thus deserted, made less resistance to Lambert than possibly was in his power †. This discomfiture, of course, damped the expectations of the king's party. The presbyterians thought themselves ill-used by their new allies, though their own friends had been almost equally cautious ‡. Sir Richard Willis, an old cavalier, and in all the secrets of their conspiracy, was detected in being a spy both of Cromwell and of the new government; a discovery which struck consternation into the party, who could hardly trust any one else with greater security §. In a less favourable posture of affairs, these untoward circumstances might have ruined Charles's hopes; they served, as it was, to make it

* Clarendon State Papers, 434. 500. et post. Thurloe, vi. 686. See also an enigmatical letter to Henry Cromwell, 629, which certainly hints at his union with the king; and Carte's Letters, ii. 293.

† Clarendon State Papers, 552. 556. &c.

‡ Clarendon confesses, Life, p. 20, that the cavaliers disliked this whole intrigue with the presbyterians, which was planned by Mordaunt, the most active and intelligent agent that the king possessed in England. The former, doubtless, perceived, that by extending the basis of the coalition, they should lose all chance of indemnity for their own sufferings; besides which, their timidity and irresolution are manifest in all the Clarendon correspondence at this period. See particularly 491. 520.

§ Willis had done all in his power to obstruct the rising. Clarendon was very slow in believing this treachery, of which he had at length conclusive proofs. 552. 562.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

evident that he must look to some more efficacious aid than a people's good wishes for his restoration.

The royalists in England, who played so deep a stake on the king's account, were not unnaturally desirous that he should risk something in the game, and continually pressed that either he or one of his brothers would land on the coast. His standard would become a rallying-point for the well-affected, and create such a demonstration of public sentiment as would overthrow the present unstable government. But Charles, not by nature of a chivalrous temper, shrunk from an enterprise which was certainly very hazardous, unless he could have obtained a greater assistance of troops from the Low Countries than was to be hoped *. He was as little inclined to permit the duke of York's engaging in it, on account of the differences that had existed between them, and his knowledge of an intrigue that was going forward in England, principally among the catholics, but with the mischievous talents of the duke of Buckingham at its head, to set up the duke instead of himself †. He gave, however, fair words to his party, and continued for some time on the French coast, as if waiting for his opportunity. It was in great measure, as I suspect, to

* Id. 514. 530. 536. 543.

† Clarendon Papers, 425. 427. 458. 462. 475. 526. 579. It is evident that the catholics had greater hopes from the duke than from the king, and considered the former as already their own. A remarkable letter of Morley to Hyde, April 24, 1659, p. 458, shows the suspicions already entertained of him by the writer in point of religion; and Hyde is plainly not free from apprehension that he might favour the scheme of supplanting his brother. The intrigue might have gone a great way, though we may now think it probable that their alarm magnified the danger. "Let me tell you," says sir Antony Ashley Cooper in a letter to Hyde, "that Wildman is as much an enemy now to the king as he was before a seeming friend; yet not upon the account of a commonwealth, for his ambition meets with every day repulses and affronts from that party; but upon a finer spun design of setting up the interest of the duke of York against the king; in which design I fear you will find confederated the duke of Bucks, who perhaps may draw away with him lord Fairfax, the presbyterians, levellers, and many catholics. I am apt to think these things are not transacted without the privity of the queen, and I pray God that they have not an ill influence upon your affairs in France." 475. Buckingham was surmised to have been formally reconciled to the church of Rome. 427. Some supposed that he, with his friend Wildman, were for a republic. But such men are for nothing but the intrigue of the moment. These projects of Buckingham to set up the duke of York are hinted at in a pamphlet by Shaftesbury or one of his party, written about 1680. Somers Tracts, viii. 342.

rid himself of this importunity, that he set out on his long and very needless journey to the foot of the Pyrenees. Thither the two monarchs of France and Spain, wearied with twenty years of hostility without a cause and without a purpose, had sent their ministers to conclude the celebrated treaty which bears the name of those mountains. Charles had long cherished hopes that the first fruits of their reconciliation would be a joint armament to place him on the English throne: many of his adherents almost despaired of any other means of restoration. But Lewis de Haro was a timid statesman, and Mazarin a cunning one; there was little to expect from their generosity, and the price of assistance might probably be such as none but desperate and unscrupulous exiles would offer, and the English nation would with unanimous indignation reject. It was most fortunate to Charles that he contracted no public engagement with these foreign powers, whose co-operation must either have failed of success, or have placed on his head a degraded and unstable crown. The full toleration of popery in England, its establishment in Ireland, its profession by the sovereign and his family, the surrender of Jamaica, Dunkirk, and probably the Norman islands, were conditions on which the people might have thought the restoration of the Stuart line too dearly obtained.

It was a more desirable object for the king to bring over, if possible, some of the leaders of the commonwealth. Except Vane, accordingly, and the decided republicans, there was hardly any man of consequence whom his agents did not attempt, or, at least, from whom they did not entertain hopes. There stood at this time conspicuous above the rest, not all of them in ability, but in apparent power of serving the royal cause by their defection, Fleetwood, Lambert, and Monk. The first had discovered, as far as his understanding was capable of perceiving any thing, that he had been the dupe of more crafty men in the cabals against Richard Cromwell, whose complete fall from power he had neither designed nor foreseen. In pique and vexation, he listened to the overtures of

CHAP. X.

Common-wealth.

the royalist agents, and sometimes, if we believe their assertions, even promised to declare for the king *. But his resolutions were not to be relied upon, nor was his influence likely to prove considerable; though from his post of lieutenant-general of the army, and long accustomed precedence, he obtained a sort of outward credit far beyond his capacity. Lambert was of a very different stamp; eager, enterprising, ambitious, but destitute of the qualities that inspire respect or confidence. Far from the weak enthusiasm of Fleetwood, he gave offence by displaying less show of religion than the temper of his party required, and still more by a current suspicion that his secret faith was that of the church of Rome, to which the partiality of the catholics towards him gave support †. The crafty unfettered ambition of Lambert rendered it not unlikely that, finding his own schemes of sovereignty impracticable, he would make terms with the king; and there were not wanting those who recommended the latter to secure his services by the offer of marrying his daughter ‡; but it does not appear that any actual overtures were made on either side.

There remained one man of eminent military reputation, in the command of a considerable insulated army, to whom the royalists anxiously looked with alternate hope and despondency. Monk's early connexions were with the king's party, among whom he had been defeated and taken prisoner by Fairfax at

* Hyde writes to the duke of Ormond: "I pray inform the king, that Fleetwood makes great professions of being converted, and of a resolution to serve the king upon the first opportunity." Oct. 11, 1659. Carte's Letters, ii. 231. See Clarendon State Papers, 551 (Sept. 2,) and 577. But it is said afterwards, that he had "not courage enough to follow the honest thoughts which some time possess him," 592, (Oct. 31,) and that Manchester, Popham, and others, tried what they could do with Fleetwood; but "though they left him with good resolutions, they were so weak as not to continue longer than the next temptation," 635. (Dec. 27.)

† Id. 588. Carte's Letters, ii. 225.

‡ Lord Hatton, an old royalist, suggested this humiliating proposition in terms scarcely less so to the heir of Cerdic and Fergus. "The race is a *very good gentleman's family*, and kings have condescended to marry subjects. The lady is pretty, of an extraordinary sweetness of disposition, and very virtuously and ingenuously disposed; the father is a person, set aside his unhappy engagement, of very great parts and noble inclinations." Clarendon State Papers, 592. Yet, after all, Miss Lambert was hardly more a mis-alliance than Hortense Mancini, whom Charles had asked for in vain.

Namptwich. Yet even in this period of his life he had not escaped suspicions of disaffection, which he effaced by continuing in prison till the termination of the war in England. He then accepted a commission from the parliament to serve against the Irish; and now falling entirely into his new line of politics, became strongly attached to Cromwell, by whom he was left in the military government, or rather vice-royalty of Scotland, which he had reduced to subjection, and kept under with a vigorous hand. Charles had once, it is said, attempted to seduce him by a letter from Cologne, which he instantly transmitted to the protector *. Upon Oliver's death, he wrote a very sensible letter to Richard Cromwell, containing his advice for the government. He recommends him to obtain the affections of the moderate presbyterian ministers, who have much influence over the people, to summon to his house of lords the wisest and most faithful of the old nobility and some of the leading gentry, to diminish the number of superior officers in the army, by throwing every two regiments into one, and to take into his council as his chief advisers Whitelock, St. John, lord Broghill, sir Richard Onslow, Pierrepont, and Thurloe †. The judiciousness of this advice is the surest evidence of its sincerity, and must leave no doubt on our minds that Monk was at that time very far from harbouring any thoughts of the king's restoration.

But when, through the force of circumstances, and the deficiencies in the young protector's capacity, he saw the house of Cromwell for ever fallen, it was for Monk to consider what course he should follow, and by what means the nation was to be rescued

* Biogr. Brit. art. MONK. The royalists continued to entertain hopes of him, especially after Oliver's death. Clarendon Papers, iii. 393. 395, 396. In a sensible letter of Colepepper to Hyde, Sept. 20, 1658, he points out Monk as able alone to restore the king, and not absolutely averse to it, either in his principles or affections; kept hitherto by the vanity of adhering to his professions, and by his affection to Cromwell, the latter whereof is dissolved both by the jealousies he entertained of him, and by his death, &c. Id. 412.

† Thurloe, vii. 387. Monk wrote about the same time against the earl of Argyle, as not a friend to the government, 584. Two years afterwards he took away his life as being too much so.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

from the state of anarchy that seemed to menace it. That very different plans must have passed through his mind before he commenced his march from Scotland, it is easy to conjecture; but at what time his determination was finally taken, we cannot certainly pronounce *. It would be the most honourable supposition to believe that he was sincere in those solemn protestations of adherence to the commonwealth which he poured forth, as well during his march as after his arrival in London; till discovering, at length, the popular zeal for the king's restoration,

* If the account of his chaplain, Dr. Price, republished in Maseres' Tracts, vol. ii. be worthy of trust, Monk gave so much encouragement to his brother, a clergyman, secretly despatched to Scotland by sir John Grenvil, his relation, in June, 1659, as to have approved sir George Booth's insurrection, and to have been on the point of publishing a declaration in favour of it. P. 718. But this is flatly in contradiction of what Clarendon asserts, that the general not only sent away his brother with no hopes, but threatened to hang him if he came again on such an errand. And, in fact, if any thing so favourable as what Price tells us had occurred, the king could not fail to have known it. See Clarendon State Papers, iii. 543. This throws some suspicion on Price's subsequent narrative (so far as it professes to relate the general's intentions); so that I rely far less on it than on Monk's own behaviour, which seems irreconcilable with his professions of republican principles. It is, however, an obscure point of history, which will easily admit of different opinions; and I may not improbably change my own.

The story told by Locke, on lord Shaftesbury's authority, that Monk had agreed with the French ambassador to take on himself the government, wherein he was to have the support of Mazarin, and that his wife, having overheard what was going forward, sent notice to Shaftesbury, who was thus enabled to frustrate the intrigue (Locke's Works, iii. 456.), seems to have been confirmed lately by Mr. D'Israeli, in an extract from the manuscript memoirs of sir Thomas Browne (Curiosities of Literature, N. S. vol. ii.), but in terms so nearly resembling those of Locke, that it seems to be an echo. It is certain, as we find by Phillips's continuation of Baker's Chronicle (written, in this part, by sir Thomas Clarges, Monk's brother-in-law,) that Bourdeaux, the French ambassador, did make such overtures to the general, who absolutely refused to enter upon them; but, as Clarges admits, received a visit from the ambassador, on condition that he should propose nothing in relation to public matters. I quote from Kennet's Register, 85. But, according to my present impression, this is more likely to have been the foundation of Shaftesbury's story, who might have heard from Mrs. Monk the circumstance of the visit, and conceived suspicions upon it, which he afterwards turned into proofs. It was evidently not in Monk's power to have usurped the government, after he had let the royalist inclinations of the people show themselves; and he was by no means of a rash character. He must have taken his resolution when the secluded members were restored to the house, Feb. 21; and this alleged intrigue with Mazarin could hardly have been so early.

It may be added, that in one of the pamphlets about the time of the exclusion bill, written by Shaftesbury himself or one of his party (Somers Tracts, viii. 338.), he is hinted to have principally brought about the restoration; "without whose courage and dexterity some men, the most highly rewarded, had done otherwise than they did." But this still depends on his veracity.

he concurred in a change which it would have been absurd, and perhaps impracticable, to resist. This, however, seems not easily reconcilable to Monk's proceedings in new-modelling his army, and confiding power, both in Scotland and England, to men of known intentions towards royalty; nor did his assurances of support to the republican party become less frequent or explicit at a time when every one must believe that he had taken his resolution, and even after he had communicated with the king. I incline, therefore, upon the whole, to believe that Monk, not accustomed to respect the Rump parliament, and incapable, both by his temperament and by the course of his life, of any enthusiasm for the name of liberty, had satisfied himself as to the expediency of the king's restoration from the time that the Cromwells had sunk below his power to assist them; though his projects were still subservient to his own security, which he was resolved not to forfeit by any premature declaration or unsuccessful enterprise. If the coalition of cavaliers and presbyterians, and the strong bent of the entire nation, had not convinced this wary dissembler that he could not fail of success, he would have continued true to his professions, as the general of a commonwealth, content with crushing his rival Lambert, and breaking that fanatical interest which he most disliked. That he aimed at such a sovereignty as Cromwell had usurped, has been the natural conjecture of many, but does not appear to me either warranted by any presumptive evidence, or consonant to the good sense and phlegmatic temper of Monk.

At the moment when, with a small but veteran army of 7000 men, he took up his quarters in London, it seemed to be within his arbitrement which way the scale should preponderate. On one side were the wishes of the nation, but restrained by fear; on the other, established possession, maintained by the sword, but rendered precarious by disunion and treachery. It is certainly very possible, that, by keeping close to the parliament, Monk might have retarded, at least for a considerable time, the great

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

event which has immortalised him. But it can hardly be said, that the king's restoration was rather owing to him than to the general sentiments of the nation, and almost the necessity of circumstances, which had already made every judicious person anticipate the sole termination of our civil discord which they had prepared. Whitelock, who, incapable of refusing compliance with the ruling power, had sat in the committee of safety, established in October, 1659, by the officers who had expelled the parliament, has recorded a curious anecdote, whence we may collect how little was wanting to prevent Monk from being the great mover in the restoration. He had for some time, as appears by his journal, entertained a persuasion that the general meditated nothing but the king's return, to which he was doubtless himself well inclined, except from some apprehension for the public interest, and some also for his own. This induced him to have a private conference with Fleetwood, which he enters as of the 22d December, 1659, wherein, after pointing out the probable designs of Monk, he urged him either to take possession of the Tower, and declare for a free parliament, in which he would have the assistance of the city, or to send some trusty person to Breda, who might offer to bring in the king upon such terms as should be settled. Both these propositions were intended as different methods of bringing about a revolution, which he judged to be inevitable. "By this means," he contended, "Fleetwood might make terms with the king for preservation of himself and his friends, and of that cause, in a good measure, in which they had been engaged; but if it were left to Monk, they and all that had been done would be left to the danger of destruction. Fleetwood then asked me, 'If I would be willing to go myself upon this employment?' I answered, 'that I would go, if Fleetwood thought fit to send me.' And after much other discourse to this effect, Fleetwood seemed fully satisfied to send me to the king, and desired me to go and prepare myself forthwith for the journey; and that in the mean time Fleetwood and his friends would prepare

the instructions for me, so that I might begin my journey this evening, or to-morrow morning early.

"I going away from Fleetwood, met Vane, Desborough, and Berry in the next room, coming to speak with Fleetwood, who thereupon desired me to stay a little; and I suspected what would be the issue of their consultation, and within a quarter of an hour Fleetwood came to me, and in much passion said to me, 'I cannot do it, I cannot do it.' I desired his reason why he could not do it. He answered, 'Those gentlemen have remembered me, and it is true, that I am engaged not to do any such thing without my lord Lambert's consent.' I replied, 'that Lambert was at too great a distance to have his consent to this business, which must be instantly acted.' Fleetwood again said, 'I cannot do it without him.' Then I said, 'You will ruin yourself and your friends.' He said, 'I cannot help it.' Then I told him I must take my leave, and so we parted *."

Whatever might have been in the power of Monk, by adhering to his declarations of obedience to the parliament, it would have been too late for him, after consenting to the restoration of the secluded members to their seats on February 21, 1660, to withstand the settlement which it seems incredible that he should not at that time have desired. That he continued, for at least six weeks afterwards, in a course of astonishing dissimulation, so as to deceive, in a great measure, almost all the royalists, who were distrusting his intentions, at the very moment when he made his first and most private tender of service to the king through sir John Grenvil about the beginning of April, might at first seem rather to have proceeded from a sort of inability to shake off his inveterate reservedness, than from consummate prudence and discretion. For any sudden risings in the king's favour, or an intrigue in the council of state, might easily have brought about the restoration without his concurrence; and, even as it was, the language

* Whitelock, 690.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

held in the house of commons before their dissolution, the votes expunging all that appeared on their journals against the regal government and the house of lords*, and above all, the course of the elections for the new parliament, made it sufficiently evident,

* The engagement was repeated March 13. This was of itself tantamount to a declaration in favour of the king; though perhaps the previous order of March 5, that the solemn league and covenant should be read in churches, was still more so. Prynne was the first who had the boldness to speak for the king, declaring his opinion that the parliament was dissolved by the death of Charles the First; he was supported by one or two more. Clar. Papers, 696. Thurloe, vii. 854. Carte's Letters, ii. 312. Prynne wrote a pamphlet advising the peers to meet and issue writs for a new parliament, according to the provisions of the triennial act; which in fact was no bad expedient. Somers Tracts, vi. 534.

A speech of sir Harbottle Grimston before the close of the parliament, March, 1660, is more explicit for the king's restoration than any thing which I have seen elsewhere; and as I do not know that it has been printed, I will give an extract from the Harleian MS. 1576.

He urges it as necessary to be done by them, and not left for the next parliament, who all men believed would restore him. "This is so true and so well understood, that we all believe, that whatsoever our thoughts are, this will be the opinion of the succeeding parliament, whose concerns as well as affections will make them active for his introduction. And I appeal, then, to your own judgments, whether it is likely that those persons, as to their particular interest more unconcerned, and probably less knowing in the affairs of the nation, can or would obtain for any those terms or articles as we are yet in a capacity to procure both for them and us. I must confess sincerely, that it would be as strange to me as a miracle, did I not know that God infatuates whom he designs to destroy, that we can see the king's return so unavoidable, and yet be no more studious of serving him, or at least ourselves, in the managing of his recall.

"The general, that noble personage to whom under God we do and must owe all the advantages of our past and future changes, will be as far from opposing us in the design, as the design is removed from the disadvantage of the nation. He himself is, I am confident, of the same opinion; and if he has not yet given notice of it to the house, it is not that he does not look upon it as the best expedient; but he only forbears to oppose it, that he might not seem to necessitate us, and by an over early discovery of his own judgment be thought to take from us the freedom of ours."

In another place he says, "That the recalling of our king is this only way (for composure of affairs), is already grown almost as visible as true, and were it but confessed of all of whom it is believed, I should quickly hear from the greatest part of this house what now it hears alone from me. Had we as little reason to fear as we have too much, that if we bring not in the king, he either already is, or shortly may be, in a capacity of coming in unsent for; methinks the very knowledge of his right were enough to keep just persons, such as we would be conceived to be, from being accessary to his longer absence. We are already, and but justly, reported to have been the occasion of our prince's banishment; we may then, with reason and equal truth, for ought I know, be thought to have been the contrivers of it, unless we endeavour the contrary, by not suffering the mischief to continue longer which is in our power to remove."

Such passages as these, and the general tenor of public speeches, sermons, and pamphlets in the spring of 1660, show how little Monk can be said to have restored Charles II., except so far that he did not persist in preventing it so long as he might have done.

that the general had delayed his assurances of loyalty till they had lost a part of their value. It is, however, a full explanation of Monk's public conduct, that he was not secure of the army, chiefly imbued with fanatical principles, and bearing an inveterate hatred towards the name of Charles Stuart. A correspondent of the king writes to him on the 28th of March: "the army is not yet in a state to hear your name publicly *." In the beginning of that month, many of the officers, instigated by Haslerig and his friends, had protested to Monk against the proceedings of the house, insisting that they should abjure the king and house of lords. He repressed their mutinous spirit, and bade them obey the parliament, as he should do †. Hence he redoubled his protestations of abhorrence of monarchy, and seemed for several weeks, in exterior demonstrations, rather the grand impediment to the king's restoration, than the one person who was to have the credit of it ‡. Meanwhile he silently proceeded in displacing the officers whom he could least trust, and disposing the regiments near to the metropolis, or at a distance, according to his knowledge of their tempers; the parliament having given him a com-

* Clarendon State Papers, 711.

† Id. 696.

‡ Id. 678, et post. He wrote a letter (Jan. 21) to the gentry of Devon, who had petitioned the speaker for the re-admission of the secluded members, objecting to that measure as likely to bring in monarchy, very judicious, and with an air of sincerity that might deceive any one; and after the restoration of these secluded members, he made a speech to them, (Feb. 21) strongly against monarchy; and that so ingenuously, upon such good reasons, so much without invective or fanaticism, that the professional hypocrites, who were used to their own tone of imposture, were deceived by his. Cromwell was a mere bungler to him. See these in Harris's Charles II. 296, or Somers Tracts, vi. 551. It cannot be wondered at that the royalists were exasperated at Monk's behaviour. They published abusive pamphlets against him in February, from which Kennet, in his Register, p. 53, gives quotations. "Whereas he was the common hopes of all men, he is now the common hatred of all men, as a traitor more detestable than Oliver himself, who, though he manacled the citizens' hands, yet never took away the doors of the city," and so forth. It appears by the letters of Mordaunt and Broderick to Hyde, and by those of Hyde himself, in the Clarendon Papers, that they had no sort of confidence in Monk till near the end of March; though Barwick, another of his correspondents, seems to have had more insight into the general's designs (Thurloe, 852. 860. 870), who had expressed himself to a friend of the writer, probably Clobery, fully in favour of the king before March 19.

CHAP. X. (ommon-wealth.

mission as lord general of all the forces in the three kingdoms *. The commissioners appointed by parliament for raising the militia in each county were chiefly gentlemen of the presbyterian party; and there seemed likely to be such a considerable force under their orders, as might rescue the nation from its ignominious servitude to the army. In fact, some of the royalists expected that the great question would not be carried without an appeal to the sword †. The delay of Monk in privately assuring the king of his fidelity is still not easy to be explained, but may have proceeded from a want of confidence in Charles's secrecy, or that of his counsellors. It must be admitted that lord Clarendon, who has written with some minuteness and accuracy this important part of his history, has more than insinuated (especially as we now read his genuine language, which the ill faith of his original editors had shamefully garbled) that Monk entertained no purposes in the king's favour till the last moment; but a manifest prejudice that shows itself in all his writings against the general, derived partly from offence at his extreme reserve and caution during this period, partly from personal resentment of Monk's behaviour at the time of his own impeachment, greatly takes off from the weight of the noble historian's judgment ‡.

The months of March and April, 1660, were a period of ex-

* Clar. 699. 705. Thurloe, vii. 860. 870.

† A correspondent of Ormond writes, March 16: "This night the fatal long parliament hath dissolved itself. All this appears well, but I believe we shall not be settled upon our ancient foundations without a war, for which all prepare vigorously and openly." Carte's Letters, ii. 513. It appears also from a letter of Massey to Hyde, that a rising in different counties was intended. Thurloe, 854.

‡ After giving the substance of Monk's speech to the house, recommending a new parliament, but insisting on commonwealth principles, Clarendon goes on; "There was no dissimulation in this, in order to cover and conceal his good intentions to the king; for without doubt he had not to this hour entertained any purpose or thought to serve him, but was really of the opinion he expressed in his paper, that it was a work impossible, and desired nothing but that he might see a commonwealth established on such a model as Holland was, where he had been bred, and that himself might enjoy the authority and place which the prince of Orange possessed in that government." vii. 417.

treme inquietude, during which every one spoke of the king's restoration as imminent, yet none could distinctly perceive by what means it would be effected, and much less how the difficulties of such a settlement could be overcome*. As the moment approached, men turned their attention more to the obstacles and dangers that lay in their way. The restoration of a banished family, concerning whom they knew little, and what they knew not entirely to their satisfaction, with ruined, perhaps revengeful

* The Clarendon and Thurloe Papers are full of more proofs of this than can be quoted, and are very amusing to read, as a perpetually shifting picture of hopes and fears, and conjectures right or wrong. Pepys's Diary also, in these two months, strikingly shows the prevailing uncertainty as to Monk's intentions, as well as the general desire of having the king brought in. It seems plain, that if he had delayed a very little longer, he would have lost the whole credit of the restoration. All parties began to crowd in with addresses to the king in the first part of April, before Monk was known to have declared himself. Thurloe, among others, was full of his offers, though evidently anxious to find out whether the king had an interest with Monk, p. 898. The royalists had long entertained hopes, from time to time, of this deep politician; but it is certain he never wished well to their cause, and with St. John and Pierrepont, had been most zealous, to the last moment that it seemed practicable, against the restoration. There had been, so late as February 1660, or even afterwards, a strange plan of setting up again Richard Cromwell, wherein not only these three, but Montagu, Jones, and others were thought to be concerned, erroneously no doubt as to Montagu. Clarendon, State Papers, 693. Carte's Letters, ii. 310. 330. "One of the greatest reasons they alleged, was that the king's party, consisting altogether of indigent men, will become powerful by little and little to force the king, whatever be his own disposition, to break any engagement he can now make: and since the nation is bent on a single person, none will combine all interests so well as Richard." This made Monk, it is said, jealous of St. John, and he was chosen at Cambridge to exclude him. In a letter of Thurloe to Downing at the Hague, April 6, he says, "that many of the presbyterians are alarmed at the prospect, and thinking how to keep the king out without joining the sectaries." vii. 887. This could hardly be achieved but by setting up Richard. Yet that, as is truly said in one of the letters quoted, was ridiculous. None were so conspicuous and intrepid on the king's side as the presbyterian ministers. Reynolds preached before the lord mayor, Feb. 28, with manifest allusion to the restoration; Gauden (who may be reckoned on that side, as conforming to it), on the same day, much more explicitly. Kennet's Register, 69. Sharp says, in a letter to a correspondent in Scotland, that he, Ash, and Calamy had a long conversation with Monk, March 11, "and convinced him a commonwealth was impracticable, and to our sense sent him off that sense he hath hitherto maintained, and came from him as being satisfied of the necessity of dissolving this house, and calling a new parliament." Id. p. 81. Baxter thinks the presbyterian ministers, together with Clarges and Morrice, turned Monk's resolution, and induced him to declare for the king. Life, p. 2. This is a very plausible conjecture, though I incline to think Monk more disposed that way by his own judgment or his wife's. But she was influenced by the presbyterian clergy. They evidently deserved of Charles what they did not meet with.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

followers; the returning ascendancy of a distressed party, who had sustained losses that could not be repaired without fresh changes of property, injuries that could not be atoned without fresh severities; the conflicting pretensions of two churches, one loth to release its claim, the other to yield its possession; the unsettled dissensions between the crown and parliament, suspended only by civil war and usurpation; all seemed pregnant with such difficulties that prudent men could hardly look forward to the impending revolution without some hesitation and anxiety*. Hence Pierrepont, one of the wisest statesmen in England, though not so implicated in past transactions as to have much to fear, seems never to have overcome his repugnance to the recall of the king; and I am by no means convinced that the slowness of Monk himself was not in some measure owing to his sense of the embarrassments that might attend that event. The presbyterians, generally speaking, had always been on their guard against an unconditional restoration. They felt much more of hatred to the prevailing power than of attachment to the house of Stuart, and had no disposition to relinquish, either as to church or state government, those principles for which they had fought against Charles the First. Hence they began, from the very time that they entered into the coalition, that is, the spring and summer of 1659, to talk of the treaty of Newport, as if all that had passed

* The royalists began too soon with threatening speeches, which well nigh frustrated their object. Id. 721, 722. 727. Carte's Letters, 318. Thurloe, 887. One Dr. Griffith published a little book, vindicating the late king in his war against the parliament, for which the ruling party were by no means ripe; and having justified it before the council, was committed to the Gate-house early in April. Id. ibid. These imprudences occasioned the king's declaration from Breda. Somers Tracts, vi. 562. Another also was published, April 25, 1660, signed by several peers, knights, divines, &c. of the royalist party, disclaiming all private passions and resentments. Kennet's Register, 120. Clar. vii. 471. But these public professions were weak disguises, when belied by their current language. See Baxter, 217. Marchmont Needham, in a tract intitled, "Interest will not lye" (written in answer to an artful pamphlet ascribed to Fell, afterwards bishop of Oxford, and reprinted in Maseres' Tracts, "The Interest of England stated"), endeavoured to alarm all other parties, especially the presbyterians, with representations of the violence they had to expect from that of the king. See Harris's Charles II. 268.

since their vote of 5th December, 1648, that the king's concessions were a sufficient ground whereon to proceed to the settlement of the kingdom, had been like an hideous dream, from which they had awakened to proceed exactly in their former course*. The council of state, appointed on the 23d of February, two days after the return of the secluded members, consisted principally of this party. And there can, I conceive, be no question, that if Monk had continued his neutrality to the last, they would, in conjunction with the new parliament, have sent over propositions for the king's acceptance. Meetings were held of the chief presbyterian lords, Manchester, Northumberland, Bedford, Say, with Pierrepont (who finding it too late to prevent the king's return, endeavoured to render it as little dangerous as possible), Hollis, Annesley, sir William Waller, Lewis, and other leaders of that party. Monk sometimes attended on these occasions, and always urged the most rigid limitations†. His sincerity in this was the less suspected, that his wife, to whom he was notoriously submissive, was entirely presbyterian, though a friend to the king; and his own preference of that sect had always been declared in a more consistent and unequivocal manner than was usual to his dark temper.

These projected limitations, which but a few weeks before Charles would have thankfully accepted, seemed now intolerable;

* Proofs of the disposition among this party to revive the treaty of the isle of Wight occur perpetually in the Thurloe and Clarendon Papers, and in those published by Carte. The king's agents in England evidently expected nothing better, and were, generally speaking, much for his accepting the propositions. "The presbyterian lords," says sir Allen Broderic to Hyde, "with many of whom I have spoken, pretend, that should the king come in upon any such insurrection, abetted by those of his own party, he would be more absolute than his father was in the height of his prerogative. Stay, therefore, say they, till we are ready; our numbers so added will abundantly recompense the delay, rendering what is now extremely doubtful morally certain, and establishing his throne upon the true basis, liberty and property." July 16, 1659. Clar. State Papers, 527.

† Clarendon, Hist. of Rebellion, vii. 440. State Papers, 705. 729. "There is so insolent a spirit among some of the nobility," says Clarendon, about the middle of February, "that I really fear it will turn to an aristocracy; Monk inclining that way too. My opinion is clear, that the king ought not to part with the church, crown, or friends' lands, least he make my lord of Northumberland his equal, nay perhaps his superior." P. 680.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

so rapidly do men learn, in the course of prosperous fortune, to scorn what they just before hardly presumed to expect. Those seemed his friends, not who desired to restore him, but who would do so at the least sacrifice of his power and pride. Several of the council, and others in high posts, sent word that they would resist the imposition of unreasonable terms *. Monk himself redeemed his ambiguous and dilatory behaviour, by taking the restoration, as it were, out of the hands of the council, and suggesting the judicious scheme of anticipating their proposals by the king's letter to the two houses of parliament. For this purpose he had managed, with all his dissembling pretences of commonwealth principles, or, when he was as it were compelled to lay them aside, of insisting on rigorous limitations, to prevent any overtures from the council, who were almost entirely presbyterian, before the meeting of parliament, which would have considerably embarrassed the king's affairs†. The elections meantime had taken

* Downing, the minister at the Hague, was one of these. His overtures to the king were as early as Monk's, at the beginning of April; he declared his wish to see his majesty restored on good terms, though many were desirous to make him a doge of Venice. Carte's Letters, ii. 320. See also a remarkable letter of the king to Monk, (dated May 21; but I suspect he used the new style, therefore read May 11), intimating what a service it would be to prevent the imposition of any terms. Clar. 745. And another from him to Morice of the same tenor, May 20, (N. S.) 1660, and hinting that his majesty's friends in the house had complied with the general in all things, according to the king's directions, departing from their own sense, and restraining themselves from pursuing what they thought most for his service. Thurloe, vii. 912. This perhaps referred to the indemnity and other provisions then pending in the commons, or rather to the delay of a few days before the delivery of sir John Grenvil's message.

† "Monk came this day (about the first week of April) to the council, and assured them, that notwithstanding all the appearance of a general desire of kingly government, yet it was in no wise his sense, and that he would spend the last drop of his blood to maintain the contrary." Extract of a letter from Thurloe to Downing. Carte's Letters, ii. 322. "The council of state are utterly ignorant of Monk's treating with the king; and surely, as the present temper of the council of state is now, and may possibly be also of the parliament, by reason of the presbyterian influence upon both, I should think the first chapman will not be the worst, who perhaps will not offer so good a rate in conjunction with the company, as he may give to engross the commodity." Clar. 722. April 6. This sentence is a clue to all the intrigue. It is said soon afterwards, (p. 726, April 11), that the presbyterians were much troubled at the course of the elections, which made some of the council of state again address themselves to Monk for his consent to propositions they would send to the king; but he absolutely refused, and said he would leave all to a free parliament, as he had promised the nation. Yet,

a course, which the faction now in power by no means regarded with satisfaction. Though the late house of commons had passed a resolution, that no person who had assisted in any war against the parliament since 1642, unless he should since have manifested his good affection towards it, should be capable of being elected, yet this, even if it had been regarded, as it was not, by the people, would have been a feeble barrier against the royalist party, composed in a great measure of young men, who had grown up under the commonwealth, and of those who, living in the parliamentary counties during the civil war, had paid a reluctant obedience to its power *. The tide ran so strongly for the king's friends, that it was as much as the presbyterians could effect, with the weight of government in their hands, to obtain about an equality of strength with the cavaliers in the convention parliament†.

It has been a frequent reproach to the conductors of this great revolution, that the king was restored without those terms and limitations which might secure the nation against his abuse of their confidence; and this, not only by contemporaries who had suffered by the political and religious changes consequent on the restoration, or those who, in after times, have written with some prepossession against the English church and constitutional monarchy, but by the most temperate and reasonable men; so that

though the elections went as well as the royalists could reasonably expect, Hyde was dissatisfied that the king was not restored without the intervention of the new parliament; and this may have been one reason of his spleen against Monk. P. 726, 731.

* A proposed resolution, that those who had been on the king's side, *or their sons*, should be disabled from voting at elections, was lost by 93 to 56, the last effort of the expiring Rump. Journals, 13 March. The electors did not think themselves bound by this arbitrary exclusion of the cavaliers from parliament, several of whom (though not perhaps a great number within the terms of the resolution) were returned. Massey, however, having gone down to stand for Glocester, was put under arrest by order of the council of state. Thurloe, 887. Clarendon, who was himself not insensible to that kind of superstition, had fancied, that any thing done at Glocester by Massey for the king's service would make a powerful impression on the people.

† It is a curious proof of the state of public sentiment, that though Monk himself wrote a letter to the electors of Bridgenorth, recommending Thurloe, the cavalier party was so powerful, that his friends did not even produce the letter, lest it should be treated with neglect. Thurloe, vii. 895.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

it has become almost regular to cast on the convention parliament, and more especially on Monk, the imputation of having abandoned public liberty, and brought on, by their inconsiderate loyalty, or self-interested treachery, the mis-government of the two last Stuarts, and the necessity of their ultimate expulsion. But as this is a very material part of our history, and those who pronounce upon it have not always a very distinct notion either of what was or what could have been done, it may be worth while to consider the matter somewhat more analytically, confining myself, it is to be observed, in the present chapter, to what took place before the king's personal assumption of the government on the 29th of May, 1660. The subsequent proceedings of the convention parliament fall within another period.

We may remark, in the first place, that the unconditional restoration of Charles the Second is sometimes spoken of in too hyperbolical language, as if he had come in as a sort of conqueror, with the laws and liberties of the people at his discretion. Yet he was restored to nothing but the bounded prerogatives of a king of England; bounded by every ancient and modern statute, including those of the long parliament, which had been enacted for the subjects' security. If it be true, as I have elsewhere observed, that the long parliament, in the year 1641, had established, in its most essential parts, our existing constitution, it can hardly be maintained that fresh limitations and additional securities were absolutely indispensable, before the most fundamental of all its principles, the government by king, lords, and commons, could be permitted to take its regular course. Those who so vehemently reprobate the want of conditions at the restoration would do well to point out what conditions should have been imposed, and what mischiefs they can probably trace from their omission *. They should be able also to prove that in the

* "To the king's coming in without conditions may be well imputed all the errors of his reign." Thus says Burnet. The great political error, if so it should be termed, of his reign, was a conspiracy with the king of France, and some wicked ad-

circumstances of the time, it was quite as feasible and convenient to make certain secure and obligatory provisions the terms of the king's restoration, as seems to be taken for granted.

The chief presbyterians appear to have considered the treaty of Newport, if not as fit to be renewed in every article, yet at least as the basis of the compact into which they were to enter with Charles the Second *. But were the concessions wrested in this treaty from his father, in the hour of peril and necessity, fit to become the permanent rules of the English constitution? Turn to the articles prescribed by the long parliament in that negotiation. Not to mention the establishment of a rigorous presbytery in the church, they had insisted on the exclusive command of all forces by land and sea for twenty years, with the sole power of levying and expending the monies necessary for their support; on the nomination of the principal officers of state, and of the judges during the same period; and on the exclusion of the king's adherents from all trust or political power. Admit even that the insincerity and arbitrary principles of Charles the First had rendered necessary such extraordinary precautions, was it to be supposed that the executive power should not revert to his successor? Better it were, beyond comparison, to maintain the perpetual exclusion of his family, than to mock them with such a titular crown, the certain cause of discontent and intrigue, and to mingle premature distrust with their professions of affection. There was undoubtedly much to apprehend from the king's restoration; but it might be expected, that a steady regard for public liberty in the parliament and the nation would obviate that danger, without any momentous change of the constitution; or that if such a sentiment should prove unhappily

visers at home, to subvert the religion and liberty of his subjects; and it is difficult to perceive by what conditions this secret intrigue could have been prevented.

* Clarendon Papers, p. 729. They resolved to send the articles of that treaty to the king, leaving out the preface. This was about the middle of April.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

too weak, no guarantees of treaties or statutes would afford a genuine security.

If, however, we were to be convinced that the restoration was effected without a sufficient safeguard against the future abuses of royal power, we must still allow, on looking attentively at the circumstances, that there were very great difficulties in the way of any stipulations for that purpose. It must be evident, that any formal treaty between Charles and the English government, as it stood in April 1660, was inconsistent with their common principle. That government was, by its own declarations, only de facto, only temporary; the return of the secluded members to their seats, and the votes they subsequently passed, held forth to the people that every thing done since the force put on the house in December 1648 was by an usurpation; the restoration of the ancient monarchy was implied in all recent measures, and was considered as out of all doubt by the whole kingdom. But between a king of England and his subjects no treaty, as such, could be binding; there was no possibility of entering into stipulations with Charles, though in exile, to which a court of justice would pay the slightest attention, except by means of acts of parliament. It was doubtless possible, that the council of state might have entered into a secret agreement with him on certain terms, to be incorporated afterwards into bills, as at the treaty of Newport. But at that treaty his father, though in prison, was the acknowledged sovereign of England; and it is manifest that the king's recognition must precede the enactment of any law. It is equally obvious that the contracting parties would no longer be the same, and that the conditions that seemed indispensable to the council of state might not meet with the approbation of parliament. It might occur to an impatient people, that the former were not invested with such legal or permanent authority as could give them any pretext for bargaining with the king, even in behalf of public liberty.

But if the council of state, or even the parliament on its first meeting, had resolved to tender any hard propositions to the king, as the terms, if not of his recognition, yet of his being permitted to exercise the royal functions, was there not a possibility that he might demur about their acceptance, that a negotiation might ensue to procure some abatement, that in the interchange of couriers between London and Brussels, some weeks at least might be whiled away? Clarendon, we are sure, inflexible and uncompromising of his master's honour, would have dissuaded such enormous sacrifices as had been exacted from the late king. And during this delay, while no legal authority would have subsisted, so that no officer could have collected the taxes or executed process without liability to punishment, in what a precarious state would the parliament have stood! On the one hand, the nation almost maddened with the intoxication of reviving loyalty, and rather prone to cast at the king's feet the privileges and liberties it possessed, than to demand fresh security for them, might insist upon his immediate return, and impair the authority of parliament. On the other hand, the army, desperately irreconcilable to the name of Stuart, and sullenly resenting the hypocrisy that had deluded them, though they knew no longer where to seek a leader, were accessible to the furious commonwealth's men, who, rushing as it were with lighted torches along their ranks, endeavoured to rekindle a fanaticism that had not quite consumed its fuel*. The escape of Lambert from the Tower had struck a panic into all the kingdom; some such accident might again furnish a rallying point for the disaffected, and plunge the country into an unfathomable abyss of confusion. Hence the motion of Sir Matthew Hale, in the convention parliament, to appoint a committee, who should draw up propositions to be sent over for the king's acceptance, does not appear to me well timed and expedient; nor can I censure Monk for having

* Life of Clarendon, p. 10.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

objected to it*. The business in hand required greater despatch. If the king's restoration was an essential blessing, it was not to be thrown away in the debates of a committee. A wary, scrupulous, conscientious English lawyer, like Hale, is always wanting in the rapidity and decision necessary for revolutions, though he may be highly useful in preventing them from going too far.

It is, I confess, more probable, that the king would have accepted almost any conditions tendered to him; such at least would have been the advice of most of his counsellors; and his own conduct in Scotland was sufficient to show how little any sense of honour or dignity would have stood in his way. But on what grounds did his English friends, nay some of the presbyterians themselves, advise his submission to the dictates of that party? It was in the expectation that the next free parliament, summoned by his own writ, would undo all this work of stipulation, and restore him to an unfettered prerogative. And this expectation there was every ground, from the temper of the nation, to entertain. Unless the convention parliament had bargained for its own perpetuity, or the privy council had been made immoveable, or a military force, independent of the crown, had been kept up to overawe the people,—all of them most unconstitutional and abominable usurpations,—there was no possibility of maintaining the conditions, whatever they might have been, for the want of which so much mischief is fancied to have sprung. Evils did take place, dangers did arise, the liberties of England were once more impaired; but these are far less to be ascribed to the actors in the restoration, than to the next parliament, and to the nation who chose it.

I must once more request the reader to take notice, that I am not here concerned with the proceedings of the convention

* "This," says Burnet somewhat invidiously, "was the great service that Monk did; for as to the restoration itself, the tide ran so strong, that he only went into it dexterously enough to get much praise and great rewards." P. 123.

parliament after the king's return to England, which, in some respects, appear to me censurable; but discussing the question, whether they were guilty of any fault in not tendering bills of limitation on the prerogative, as preliminary conditions of his restoration to the exercise of his lawful authority. And it will be found, upon a review of what took place in that interregnum from their meeting together on the 25th of April, 1660, to Charles's arrival in London on the 29th of May, that they were less unmindful than has been sometimes supposed of provisions to secure the kingdom against the perils which had seemed to threaten it in the restoration.

On the 25th of April, the commons met and elected Grimston, a moderate presbyterian, as their speaker, somewhat against the secret wish of the cavaliers, who, elated by their success in the elections, were beginning to aim at superiority, and to show a jealousy of their late allies*. On the same day, the doors of the house of lords were found open, and ten peers, all of whom had sat in 1648, took their places as if nothing more than a common adjournment had passed in the interval†. There was, however, a very delicate and embarrassing question, that had been much discussed in their private meetings. The object of these, as I have mentioned, was to impose terms on the king, and maintain the presbyterian ascendancy. But the peers of this party were far from numerous, and must be out-voted, if all the other lawful members of the house should be admitted to their privileges. Of these there were three classes. The first was of the peers who had come to their titles since the commencement of the civil war, and whom there was no colour of justice, nor any vote of the house, to exclude. To some of these accordingly they caused letters to be directed, and the others took their seats without ob-

* Grimston was proposed by Pierrepont, and conducted to the chair by him, Monk, and Hollis. Journals, Parl. Hist. The cavaliers complained that this was done before they came into the house, and that he was partial. Mordaunt to Hyde, April 27. Clarendon State Papers, 734.

† These were the earls of Manchester, Northumberland, Lincoln, Denbigh, and Suffolk; lords Say, Wharton, Hunsdon, Grey, Maynard. Lords' Journals, April 25.

CHAP. X. Commonwealth.

jection on the 26th and 27th of April, on the latter of which days thirty-eight peers were present*. The second class was of those who had joined Charles the First, and had been excluded from sitting in the house by votes of the long parliament. These it had been in contemplation among the presbyterian junto to keep out; but the glaring inconsistency of such a measure with the popular sentiment, and the strength that the first class had given to the royalist interest among the aristocracy, prevented them from insisting on it. A third class consisted of those who had been created since the great seal was taken to York in 1642; some by the late king, others by the present in exile; and these, according to the fundamental principle of the parliamentary side, were incapable of sitting in the house. It was probably one of the conditions on which some meant to insist, conformably to the articles of the treaty of Newport, that the new peers should be perpetually incapable; or even, that none should in future have the right of voting, without the concurrence of both houses of parliament. An order was made therefore, on May 4, that no lords created since 1642 should sit. This was vacated by a subsequent resolution of May 31.

A message was sent down to the commons on April 27, desiring a conference on the great affairs of the kingdom. This was the first time that word had been used for more than eleven years. But the commons, in returning an answer to this message, still employed the word nation. It was determined, that the conference should take place on the ensuing Tuesday, the first of May†. In this conference, there can be no doubt that the

* Id. Lords' Journals.

† "It was this day (April 27) moved in the house of commons to call in the king; but it was deferred till Tuesday next by the king's friends' consent, and then it is generally believed something will be done in it. The calling in of the king is now not doubted; but there is a party among the old secluded members, that would have the treaty grounded upon the Isle of Wight propositions, and the old lords are thought generally of that design. But it is believed the house of commons will use the king more gently. The general hath been highly complimented by both houses, and, without doubt, the giving the king easy or hard conditions dependeth totally upon him; for, if he appear for the king, the affections of the people are so high for him, that no other authority can

question of further securities against the power of the crown would have been discussed. But Monk, whether from conviction of their inexpedience, or to atone for his ambiguous delay, had determined to prevent any encroachment on the prerogative. He caused the king's letter to the council of state, and to the two houses of parliament, to be delivered on that very day. A burst of enthusiastic joy testified their long repressed wishes; and when the conference took place, the earl of Manchester was instructed to let the commons know, that the lords do own and declare that, according to the ancient and fundamental laws of this kingdom, the government is and ought to be by king, lords, and commons. On the same day, the commons resolved to agree in this vote, and appointed a committee to report what pretended acts and ordinances were inconsistent with it *.

It is, however, so far from being true, that this convention gave itself up to a blind confidence in the king, that their journals during the month of May bear witness to a considerable activity in furthering provisions, which the circumstances appeared to require. They appointed a committee, on May 3d, to consider of the king's letter and declaration, both holding forth, it will be remembered, all promises of indemnity, and every thing that could tranquillize apprehension, and to propose bills accordingly, especially for taking away military tenures. One bill was brought into the house, to secure lands purchased from the trustees of the late parliament; another, to establish ministers already settled in benefices; a third, for a general indemnity; a fourth, to take away tenures in chivalry and wardship; a fifth, to make void all grants of honour or estate, made by the late

oppose him." H. Coventry to marquis of Ormond. Carte's Letters, ii. 328. Mordaunt confirms this. Those who moved for the king were colonel King and Mr. Finch, both decided cavaliers. It must have been postponed by the policy of Monk. What could Clarendon mean by saying, (History of Rebellion, vii. 478.) that "none had the courage, how loyal soever their wishes were, to mention his majesty?" This strange way of speaking has misled Hume, who copies it. The king was as generally talked of as if he were on the throne.

* Lords' and Commons' Journals. Parl. Hist. iv. 24.

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

or present king since May 1642. Finally, on the very 29th of May, we find a bill read twice and committed, for the confirmation of privilege of parliament, magna charta, the petition of right, and other great constitutional statutes *. These measures, though some of them were never completed, prove that the restoration was not carried forward with so thoughtless a precipitancy and neglect of liberty as has been asserted.

There was undoubtedly one very important matter of past controversy, which they may seem to have avoided, the power over the militia. They silently gave up that momentous question. Yet it was become, in a practical sense, incomparably more important that the representatives of the commons should retain a control over the land forces of the nation, than it had been at the commencement of the controversy. War and usurpation had sown the dragon's teeth in our fields, and instead of the peaceable trained bands of former ages, the citizen soldiers who could not be marched beyond their counties, we had a veteran army accustomed to tread upon the civil authority at the bidding of their superiors, and used alike to govern and obey. It seemed prodigiously dangerous to give up this weapon into the hands of our new sovereign. The experience of other countries as well as our own demonstrated that public liberty could never be secure, if a large standing army should be kept on foot, or any standing army without consent of parliament. But this salutary restriction the convention parliament did not think fit to propose; and in this respect I certainly consider them as having stopped short of adequate security. It is probable, that the necessity of humouring Monk, whom it was their first vote to constitute general of all the forces in the three kingdoms †, with the hope, which proved not vain, that the king himself would dis-

* Commons' Journals.

† Lords' Journals, May 2. Upon the same day, the house went into consideration how to settle the militia of this kingdom. A committee of twelve lords was appointed for this purpose, and the commons were requested to appoint a proportionate number to join therein. But no bill was brought in till after the king's return.

band the present army, whereon he could so little rely, prevented any endeavour to establish the control of parliament over the military power, till it was too late to withstand the violence of the cavaliers, who considered the absolute prerogative of the crown in that point the most fundamental article of their creed. CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

Of Monk himself, it may, I think, be said, that if his conduct in this revolution was not that of a high-minded patriot, it did not deserve all the reproach that has been so frequently thrown on it. No one can, without forfeiting all pretensions to have his own word believed, excuse his incomparable deceit and perjury; a master-piece no doubt, as it ought to be reckoned by those who set at nought the obligations of veracity in public transactions, of that wisdom which is not from above. But in seconding the public wish for the king's restoration, a step which few perhaps can be so much in love with fanatical and tyrannous usurpation as to condemn, he seems to have used what influence he possessed, an influence by no means commanding, to render the new settlement as little injurious as possible to public and private interests. If he frustrated the scheme of throwing the executive authority into the hands of a presbyterian oligarchy, I, for one, can see no great cause for censure; nor is it quite reasonable to expect, that a soldier of fortune, inured to the exercise of arbitrary power, and exempt from the prevailing religious fanaticism, which must be felt or despised, should have partaken a fervent zeal for liberty, as little congenial to his temperament as it was to his profession. He certainly did not satisfy the king even in his first promises of support, when he advised an absolute indemnity, and the preservation of actual interests in the lands of the crown and church. In the first debates on the bill of indemnity, when the case of the regicides came into discussion, he pressed for the smallest number of exceptions from pardon. And though his conduct after the king's return displayed his accustomed prudence, it is evident, that, if he had retained great influence in the council, which he assuredly did not, he would have maintained as much as possible

CHAP. X. Common-wealth.

of the existing settlement in the church. The deepest stain on his memory is the production of Argyle's private letters on his trial in Scotland; nor indeed can Monk be regarded in any respect as an estimable man, though his prudence and success may entitle him, in the common acceptation of the word, to be reckoned a wise one.

CHAPTER XI.

FROM THE RESTORATION OF CHARLES THE SECOND TO THE FALL OF THE CABAL ADMINISTRATION.

Popular Joy at the Restoration—Proceedings of the Convention Parliament—Act of Indemnity—Exclusion of the Regicides and others—Discussions between the Houses on it—Execution of Regicides—Restitution of Crown and Church Lands—Discontent of the Royalists—Settlement of the Revenue—Abolition of Military Tenures—Excise granted instead—Army disbanded—Clergy restored to their Benefices—Hopes of the Presbyterians from the King—Projects for a Compromise—King's Declaration in Favour of it—Convention Parliament dissolved—Different Complexion of the next—Condemnation of Vane—Its Injustice—Acts replacing the Crown in its Prerogatives—Corporation Act—Repeal of Triennial Act—Star-chamber not restored—Presbyterians deceived by the King—Savoy Conference—Act of Uniformity—Ejection of Non-conformist Clergy—Hopes of the Catholics—Bias of the King towards them—Resisted by Clarendon and the Parliament—Declaration for Indulgence—Objected to by the Commons—Act against Conventicles—Another of the same Kind—Remarks on them—Dissatisfaction increases—Private Life of the King—Opposition in Parliament—Appropriation of Supplies—Commission of public Accounts—Decline of Clarendon's Power—Loss of the King's Favour—Coalition against him—His Impeachment—Some Articles of it not unfounded—Illegal Imprisonments—Sale of Dunkirk—Solicitation of French Money—His Faults as a Minister—His pusillanimous Flight—And consequent Banishment—Cabal Ministry—Scheme of Comprehension and Indulgence—Triple Alliance—Intrigue with France—King's Desire to be absolute—Secret Treaty of 1670—Its Objects—Differences between Charles and Louis as to the Mode of its Execution—Fresh Severities against Dissenters—Dutch War—Declaration of Indulgence—Opposed by Parliament—And withdrawn—Test Act—Fall of Shaftesbury and his Colleagues.

It is universally acknowledged that no measure was ever more national, or has ever produced more testimonies of public approbation, than the restoration of Charles II. Nor can this be attributed to the usual fickleness of the multitude. For the late

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

government, whether under the parliament or the protector, had never obtained the sanction of popular consent, nor could have subsisted for a day without the support of the army. The king's return seemed to the people the harbinger of a real liberty, instead of that bastard commonwealth which had insulted them with its name; a liberty secure from enormous assessments, which, even when lawfully imposed, the English had always paid with reluctance, and from the insolent despotism of the soldiery. The young and lively looked forward to a release from the rigours of fanaticism, and were too ready to exchange that hypocritical austerity of the late times for a licentiousness and impiety that became characteristic of the present. In this tumult of exulting hope and joy, there was much to excite anxious forebodings in calmer men, and it was by no means safe to pronounce, that a change so generally demanded, and in most respects so expedient, could be effected without very serious sacrifices of public and particular interests.

Four subjects of great importance, and some of them very difficult, occupied the convention parliament from the time of the king's return till their dissolution in the following December; a general indemnity and legal oblivion of all that had been done amiss in the late interruption of government; an adjustment of the claims for reparation which the crown, the church, and private royalists had to prefer; a provision for the king's revenue, consistent with the abolition of military tenures; and the settlement of the church. These were, in effect, the articles of a sort of treaty between the king and the nation, without some legislative provisions as to which, no stable or tranquil course of law could be expected.

The king, in his well-known declaration from Breda, dated the 14th of April, had laid down, as it were, certain bases of his restoration, as to some points which he knew to excite much apprehension in England. One of these was a free and general pardon to all his subjects, saving only such as should be excepted

by parliament. It had always been the king's expectation, or at least that of his chancellor, that all who had been immediately concerned in his father's death should be delivered up to punishment*; and in the most unpropitious state of his fortunes, while making all professions of pardon and favour to different parties, he had constantly excepted the regicides†. Monk, however, had advised in his first messages to the king, that none, or at most not above four, should be excepted on this account‡; and the commons voted, that not more than seven persons should lose the benefit of the indemnity, both as to life and estate§. Yet after having named seven of the late king's judges, they proceeded in a few days to add several more, who had been concerned in managing his trial, or otherwise forward in promoting his death‖. They went on to pitch upon twenty persons, whom, on account of their deep concern in the transactions of the last twelve years, they determined to affect with penalties, not extending to death, and to be determined by some future act of parliament**. As

* Life of Clarendon, p. 69.

† Clar. State Papers, iii. 427. 529. In fact, very few of them were likely to be of use, and the exception made his general offers appear more sincere.

‡ Clar. Hist. of Rebellion, vii. 447. Ludlow says, that Fairfax and Northumberland were positively against the punishment of the regicides, vol. iii. p. 10; and that Monk vehemently declared at first against any exceptions, and afterwards prevailed on the house to limit them to seven, p. 16. Though Ludlow was not in England, this seems very probable, and is confirmed by other authority as to Monk. Fairfax, who had sat one day himself on the king's trial, could hardly with decency concur in the punishment of those who went on.

§ Journals, May 14.

‖ June 5, 6, 7. The first seven were Scott, Holland, Lisle, Barkstead, Harrison, Say, Jones. They went on to add Coke, Broughton, Dendy.

** These were Lenthall, Vane, Burton, Keble, St. John, Ireton, Haslerig, Sydenham, Desborough, Axtell, Lambert, Pack, Blackwell, Fleetwood, Pyne, Dean, Creed, Nye, Goodwin, and Cobbett; some of them rather insignificant names. Upon the words that "twenty and no more" be so excepted, two divisions took place, 160 to 131, and 153 to 135; the presbyterians being the majority. June 8. Two other divisions took place on the names of Lenthall, carried by 215 to 126, and of Whitelock, lost by 175 to 134. Another motion was made afterwards against Whitelock by Prynne. Milton was ordered to be prosecuted separately from the twenty, so that they already broke their resolution. He was put in custody of the sergeant-at-arms and released, December 17. Andrew Marvell, his friend, soon afterwards complained that fees to the amount of 150 pounds had been extorted from him; but Finch answered, that Milton had been Cromwell's secretary, and deserved hanging. Parl. Hist. p. 162. Lenthall had taken some share in the restoration, and entered into correspondence

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

their passions grew warmer, and the wishes of the court became better known, they came to except from all benefit of the indemnity such of the king's judges as had not rendered themselves to justice according to the late proclamation*. In this state, the bill of indemnity and oblivion was sent up to the lords †. But in that house, the old royalists had a more decisive preponderance than among the commons. They voted to except all who had signed the death-warrant against Charles the First, or sat when sentence was pronounced, and five others by name, Hacker, Vane, Lambert, Haslerig, and Axtell. They struck out, on the other hand, the clause reserving Lenthall and the rest of the same class for future penalties. They made other alterations in the bill to render it more severe‡; and with these, after a pretty long delay, and a positive message from the king, requesting them to hasten their proceedings (an irregularity to which they took no exception, and which in the eyes of the nation was justified by the circumstances), they returned the bill to the commons.

The vindictive spirit displayed by the upper house was not agreeable to the better temper of the commons, where the presbyterian or moderate party retained great influence. Though the king's judges (such at least as had signed the death-warrant) were equally guilty, it was consonant to the practice of all humane governments to make a selection for capital penalties; and to put forty or fifty persons to death for that offence seemed a very sanguinary course of proceeding, and not likely to promote the

with the king's advisers a little before. Clar. State Papers, iii. 711. 720. Kennet's Register, 762. But the royalists never could forgive his having put the question to the vote on the ordinance for trying the late king.

* June 30. This was carried without a division. Eleven were afterwards excepted by name, as not having rendered themselves. July 9.

† July 11.

‡ The worst and most odious of their proceedings, quite unworthy of a christian and civilized assembly, was to give the next relations of the four peers who had been executed under the commonwealth, Hamilton, Holland, Capel, and Derby, the privilege of naming each one person (among the regicides) to be executed. This was done in the three last instances; but lord Denbigh, as Hamilton's kinsman, nominated one who was dead; and on this being pointed out to him, refused to fix on another. Journals, Aug. 7. Ludlow, iii. 34.

conciliation and oblivion so much cried up. But there was a yet stronger objection to this severity. The king had published a proclamation, in a few days after his landing, commanding his father's judges to render themselves up within fourteen days, on pain of being excepted from any pardon or indemnity, either as to their lives or estates. Many had voluntarily come in, having put an obvious construction on this proclamation. It seems to admit of little question, that the king's faith was pledged to those persons, and that no advantage could be taken of any ambiguity in the proclamation, without as real perfidiousness as if the words had been more express. They were at least entitled to be set at liberty, and to have a reasonable time allowed for making their escape, if it were determined to exclude them from the indemnity*. The commons were more mindful of the king's honour and their own than his nearest advisers†. But the violent royalists were gaining ground among them, and it ended in a compromise. They left Hacker and Axtell, who had been prominently concerned in the king's death, to their fate. They even admitted the exceptions of Vane and Lambert, contenting themselves with a joint address of both houses to the king, that, if they should be attainted, execution as to their lives might be remitted. Haslerig was saved, on a division of 141 to 116, partly through the inter-

* Lord Southampton, according to Ludlow, actually moved this in the house of lords, but was opposed by Finch. iii. 43.

† Clarendon uses some shameful chicanery about this, Life, p. 69; and with that inaccuracy, to say the least, so habitual to him, says, "the parliament had published a proclamation, that all who did not render themselves by a day named should be judged as guilty, and attainted of treason." The proclamation was published by the king, on the suggestion indeed of the lords and commons, and the expressions were what I have stated in the text. State Trials, v. 959. Somers Tracts, vii. 437. It is obvious that by this mis-representation he not only throws the blame of ill faith off the king's shoulders, but puts the case of those who obeyed the proclamation on a very different footing. The king, it seems, had always expected that none of the regicides should be spared. But why did he publish such a proclamation? Clarendon, however, seems to have been against the other exceptions from the bill of indemnity, as contrary to some expressions in the declaration from Breda, which had been inserted by Monk's advice; and thus wisely and honourably got rid of the twenty exceptions, which had been sent up from the commons, p. 133. The lower house resolved to agree with the lords as to those twenty persons, or rather sixteen of them, by 197 to 102, Hollis and Morrice telling the Ayes.

cession of Monk, who had pledged his word to him. Most of the king's judges were entirely excepted, but with a proviso in favour of such as had surrendered according to the proclamation, that the sentence should not be executed without a special act of parliament*. Others were reserved for penalties not extending to life, to be inflicted by a future act. About twenty enumerated persons, as well as those who had pronounced sentence of death in any of the late illegal high courts of justice, were rendered incapable of any civil or military office. Thus after three months' delay, which had given room to distrust the boasted clemency and forgiveness of the victorious royalists, the act of indemnity was finally passed.

Ten persons suffered death soon afterwards for the murder of Charles the First, and three more who had been seized in Holland, after a considerable lapse of time†. There can be no reasonable ground for censuring either the king or the parliament for their punishment; except that Hugh Peters, though a very odious fanatic, was not so directly implicated in the king's death as many who escaped, and the execution of Scrope, who had surrendered under the proclamation, was an inexcusable breach of faith‡. But nothing can be more sophistical than to pretend that

* Stat. 12 Car. II. c. 11.

† These were, in the first instance, Harrison, Scott, Scrope, Jones, Clement, Carew, all of whom had signed the warrant, Cook, the solicitor at the high court of justice, Hacker and Axtell, who commanded the guard on that occasion, and Peters. Two years afterwards, Downing, ambassador in Holland, prevailed on the states to give up Barkstead, Corbet, and Okey. They all died with great constancy, and an enthusiastic persuasion of the righteousness of their cause. State Trials.

Pepys says in his Diary, 13th Oct. 1660, of Harrison, whose execution he witnessed, that "he looked as cheerful as any man could do in that condition."

‡ It is remarkable, that Scrope had been so particularly favoured by the convention parliament, as to be exempted, together with Hutchinson and Lascelles, from any penalty or forfeiture by a special resolution. June 9. But the lords put in his name again, though they pointedly excepted Hutchinson, and the commons, after first resolving that he should only pay a fine of one year's value of his estate, came at last to agree in excepting him from the indemnity as to life. It appears that some private conversation of Scrope had been betrayed, wherein he spoke of the king's death as he thought.

As to Hutchinson, he had certainly concurred in the restoration, having an extreme dislike to the party who had turned out the parliament in Oct. 1659, especially Lambert. This may be inferred from his conduct, as well as by what Ludlow says, and

such men as Hollis and Annesley, who had been expelled from parliament by the violence of the same faction who put the king to death, were not to vote for their punishment, or to sit in judgment on them, because they had sided with the commons in the civil war *. It is mentioned by many writers, and in the Journals, that when Mr. Lenthall, son of the late speaker, in the very first days of the convention parliament, was led to say, that those who had levied war against the king were as blamable as those who had cut off his head, he received a reprimand from the chair, which the folly and dangerous consequence of his position well deserved; for such language, though it seems to have been used by him in extenuation of the regicides, was quite in the tone of the violent royalists †.

A question, apparently far more difficult, was that of restitution and redress. The crown lands, those of the church, the estates in certain instances of eminent royalists, had been sold by the authority of the late usurpers; and that not at very low rates, considering the precariousness of the title. This naturally seemed a material obstacle to the restoration of ancient rights, especially in the case of ecclesiastical corporations, whom men are commonly less disposed to favour than private persons. The clergy themselves had never expected that their estates would revert to them in full propriety, and would probably have been contented, at the moment of the king's return, to have granted easy leases

Kennet in his Register, p. 169. His wife puts a speech into his mouth as to his share in the king's death, not absolutely justifying it, but, I suspect, stronger than he ventured to use. At least, the commons voted that he should not be excepted from the indemnity, "on account of his signal repentance," which could hardly be predicated of the language she ascribes to him. Compare Mrs. Hutchinson's Memoirs, p. 367, with Commons' Journals, June 9.

* Horace Walpole, in his Catalogue of Noble Authors, has thought fit to censure both these persons for their pretended inconsistency. The case is, however, different as to Monk and Cooper; and perhaps it may be thought, that men of more delicate sentiments than either of these possessed would not have sat upon the trial of those with whom they had long professed to act in concert, though innocent of their crime.

† Commons' Journals, May 12, 1660.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

to the purchasers. Nor were the house of commons, many of whom were interested in these sales, inclined to let in the former owners without conditions. A bill was accordingly brought into the house at the beginning of the session to confirm sales, or to give indemnity to the purchasers. I do not find its provisions more particularly stated. The zeal of the royalists soon caused the crown lands to be excepted *. But the house adhered to the principle of composition as to ecclesiastical property, and kept the bill a long time in debate. At the adjournment in September, the chancellor told them, his majesty had thought much upon the business, and done much for the accommodation of many particular persons, and doubted not but that before they met again a good progress would be made, so that the persons concerned would be much to blame if they received not full satisfaction; promising also to advise with some of their own body as to that settlement †. These expressions indicate a design to take the matter out of the hands of parliament. For it was Hyde's firm resolution to replace the church in the whole of its property, without any other regard to the actual possessors than the right owners should severally think it equitable to display. And this, as may be supposed, proved very small. No further steps were taken on the meeting of parliament after the adjournment; and by the dissolution the parties were left to the common course of law. The church, the crown, the dispossessed royalists re-entered triumphantly on their lands; there was no means of repelling the owners' claim, nor any satisfaction to be looked for by the purchasers under so defective a title. It must be owned, that the facility with which this was accomplished is a striking testimony to the strength of the new government, and the concurrence of the nation. This is the more remarkable, if it be true, as Ludlow informs us, that the chapter lands had been sold by the

* Parl. Hist. iv. 80.

† Id. 129.

trustees appointed by parliament at the clear income of fifteen or seventeen years' purchase *.

The great body, however, of the suffering cavaliers, who had compounded for their delinquency, under the ordinances of the Long Parliament, or whose estates had been for a time in sequestration, found no remedy for these losses by any process of law. The act of indemnity put a stop to any suits they might have instituted against persons concerned in carrying these illegal ordinances into execution. They were compelled to put up with their poverty, having the additional mortification of seeing one class, namely the clergy, who had been engaged in the same cause, not the same in their fortune, and many even of the vanquished republicans undisturbed in wealth which, directly or indirectly, they deemed acquired at their own expense †. They called the statute an act of indemnity for the king's enemies, and of oblivion for his friends. They murmured at the ingratitude of Charles, as if he were bound to forfeit his honour and risk his throne for their sakes. They conceived a deep hatred of Clarendon, whose steady adherence to the great principles of the act of indemnity is the most honourable act of his public life. And the discontent engendered by their disappointed hopes led to some part of the opposition afterwards experienced by the king, and still more certainly to the coalition against the minister.

* Memoirs, p. 299. It appears by some passages in the Clarendon Papers, that the church had not expected to come off so brilliantly, and, while the restoration was yet unsettled, would have been content to give leases of their lands. P. 620. 723. Hyde, however, was convinced that the church would be either totally ruined, or restored to a great lustre; and herein he was right, as it turned out. P. 614.

† Life of Clarendon, 99. L'Estrange, in a pamphlet printed before the end of 1660, complains that the cavaliers were neglected, the king betrayed, the creatures of Cromwell, Bradshaw, and St. John laden with offices and honours. Of the indemnity he says, "That act made the enemies to the constitution masters in effect of the booty of three nations, bating the crown and church lands, all which they might now call their own, while those who stood up for the laws were abandoned to the comfort of an irreparable but honourable ruin." He reviles the presbyterian ministers still in possession, and tells the king that misplaced lenity was his father's ruin. Kennet's Register, p. 233. See too in Somers Tracts, vii. 517, "The Humble Representation of the Sad Condition of the King's Party." Also p. 557.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

No one cause had so eminently contributed to the dissensions between the crown and parliament in the two last reigns, as the disproportion between the public revenues, under a rapidly increasing depreciation in the value of money, and the exigencies, at least on some occasions, of the administration. There could be no apology for the parsimonious reluctance of the commons to grant supplies, except the constitutional necessity of rendering them the condition of redress of grievances; and in the present circumstances, satisfied, as they seemed at least to be, with the securities they had obtained, and enamoured of their new sovereign, it was reasonable to make some further provision for the current expenditure. Yet this was to be meted out with such prudence as not to place him beyond the necessity of frequent recurrence to their aid. A committee was accordingly appointed "to consider of settling such a revenue on his majesty as may maintain the splendour and grandeur of his kingly office, and preserve the crown from want, and from being undervalued by his neighbours." By their report it appeared that the revenue of Charles I. from 1637 to 1641 had amounted on an average to about 900,000*l.*, of which full 200,000*l.* arose from sources either not warranted by law, or no longer available. The house resolved to raise the present king's income to 1,200,000*l.* per annum; a sum perhaps sufficient in those times for the ordinary charges of government. But the funds assigned to produce this revenue soon fell short of the parliament's calculation *.

One ancient fountain that had poured its stream into the royal treasury it was now determined to close up for ever. The feudal tenures had brought with them at the conquest, or not long after, those incidents, as they were usually called, or emoluments

* Commons' Journals, 4 Sept. 1660. Sir Philip Warwick, chancellor of the exchequer, assured Pepys that the revenue fell short by a fourth of the 1,200,000l. voted by parliament. See his Diary, March 1, 1664. Ralph, however, says, the income in 1662 was 1,120,593*l.*, though the expenditure was 1,439,000*l.* P. 88. It appears probable, that the hereditary excise did not yet produce much beyond its estimate. Id. p. 20.

of signiory, which remained after the military character of fiefs had been nearly effaced; especially the right of detaining the estates of minors holding in chivalry, without accounting for the profits. This galling burthen, incomparably more ruinous to the tenant than beneficial to the lord, it had long been determined to remove. Charles, at the treaty of Newport, had consented to give it up for a fixed revenue of 100,000*l.*; and this was almost the only part of that ineffectual compact which the present parliament were anxious to complete. The king, though likely to lose much patronage and influence, and what passed with lawyers for a high attribute of his prerogative, could not decently refuse a commutation so evidently advantageous to the aristocracy. No great difference of opinion subsisting as to the expediency of taking away military tenures, it remained only to decide from what resources the commutation revenue should spring. Two schemes were suggested; the one, a permanent tax on lands held in chivalry (which, as distinguished from those in socage, were alone liable to the feudal burthens); the other, an excise on beer and some other liquors. It is evident, that the former was founded on a just principle, while the latter transferred a particular burthen to the community. But the self-interest which so unhappily predominates even in representative assemblies, with the aid of the courtiers, who knew that an excise increasing with the riches of the country was far more desirable for the crown than a fixed land-tax, caused the former to be carried, though by the very small majority of two voices*. Yet even thus, if the impoverishment of the gentry, and dilapidation of their estates through the detestable abuses of wardship was, as cannot be doubted, enormously mischievous to the inferior classes, the whole community must be reckoned gainers by the arrangement, though it might have been conducted in a more equitable manner. The statute 12 Car. II. c. 24, takes away the court of wards, with all

* 21 Nov. 1660, 151 to 149. Parl. Hist.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

wardships and forfeitures for marriage by reason of tenure, all primer seisins, and fines for alienation, aids, escuages, homages, and tenures by chivalry without exception, save the honorary services of grand sergeanty, converting all such tenures into common socage. The same statute abolishes those famous rights of purveyance and pre-emption, the fruitful theme of so many complaining parliaments; and this relief of the people from a general burthen may serve in some measure as an apology for the imposition of the excise. This act may be said to have wrought an important change in the spirit of our constitution, by reducing what is emphatically called the prerogative of the crown, and which, by its practical exhibition in these two vexatious exercises of power, kept up in the minds of the people a more distinct perception, as well as more awe, of the monarchy, than could be felt in later periods, when it has become, as it were, merged in the common course of law, and blended with the very complex mechanism of our institutions. This great innovation, however, is properly to be referred to the revolution of 1641, which put an end to the court of star-chamber, and suspended the feudal superiorities. Hence with all the misconduct of the two last Stuarts, and all the tendency towards arbitrary power that their government often displayed, we must perceive that the constitution had put on, in a very great degree, its modern character during that period; the boundaries of prerogative were better understood; its pretensions, at least in public, were less enormous; and not so many violent and oppressive, certainly not so many illegal, acts were committed towards individuals, as under the two first of their family.

In fixing upon 1,200,000*l.* as a competent revenue for the crown, the commons tacitly gave it to be understood, that a regular military force was not among the necessities for which they meant to provide. They looked upon the army, notwithstanding its recent services, with that apprehension and jealousy, which becomes an English house of commons. They were still supporting it by monthly assessments of 70,000*l.*, and could gain no relief

by the king's restoration, till that charge came to an end. A bill, therefore, was sent up to the lords before their adjournment in September, providing money for disbanding the land forces. This was done during the recess; the soldiers received their arrears with many fair words of praise, and the nation saw itself, with delight and thankfulness to the king, released from its heavy burthens and the dread of servitude *. Yet Charles had too much knowledge of foreign countries, where monarchy flourished in all its plenitude of sovereign power, under the guardian sword of a standing army, to part readily with so favourite an instrument of kings. Some of his counsellors, and especially the duke of York, dissuaded him from disbanding the army, or at least advised his supplying its place by another. The unsettled state of the kingdom after so momentous a revolution, the dangerous audacity of the fanatical party, whose enterprises were the more to be guarded against, that they were founded on no such calculation as reasonable men would form, and of which the insurrection of Venner, in November, 1660, furnished an example, did undoubtedly appear a very plausible excuse for something more of a military protection to the government than yeomen of the guard and gentlemen pensioners. General Monk's regiment, called the Coldstream, and one other of horse, were accordingly retained by the king in his service; another was formed out of troops brought from Dunkirk; and thus began, under the name of guards, the present regular army of Great Britain †. In 1662 these amounted to about 5000 men; a petty force according to our present notions, or to the practice of other European monarchies in that age, yet sufficient to establish an alarming precedent, and to open a new source of contention between the supporters of power and those of freedom.

* The troops disbanded were fourteen regiments of horse and eighteen of foot in England: one of horse and four of foot in Scotland, besides garrisons. Journals, Nov. 7.

† Ralph, 85; Life of James, 447; Grose's Military Antiquities, i. 61.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

So little essential innovation had been effected by twenty years' interruption of the regular government in the common law or course of judicial proceedings, that when the king and house of lords were restored to their places, little more seemed to be requisite than a change of names. But what was true of the state could not be applied to the church. The revolution there had gone much farther, and the questions of restoration and compromise were far more difficult.

It will be remembered, that such of the clergy as steadily adhered to the episcopal constitution had been expelled from their benefices by the long parliament, under various pretexts, and chiefly for refusing to take the covenant. The new establishment was nominally presbyterian. But the presbyterian discipline and synodical government were very partially introduced; and, upon the whole, the church, during the suspension of the ancient laws, was rather an assemblage of congregations than a compact body, having little more unity than resulted from their common dependency on the temporal magistrate. In the time of Cromwell, who favoured the independent sectaries, some of that denomination obtained livings; but very few, I believe, comparatively, who had not received either episcopal or presbyterian ordination. The right of private patronage to benefices, and that of tithes, though continually menaced by the more violent party, subsisted without alteration. Meanwhile the episcopal ministers, though excluded from legal toleration along with papists, by the instrument of government under which Cromwell professed to hold his power, obtained, in general, a sufficient indulgence for the exercise of their function *. Once indeed, on discovery of the royalist conspiracy in 1655, he published a severe ordinance, forbidding every ejected minister or fellow of a college to act as domestic chaplain or schoolmaster. But this was coupled with a promise to show as much tenderness as might consist with the safety of

* Neal, 429, 444.

the nation towards such of the said persons as should give testimony of their good affection to the government; and, in point of fact, this ordinance was so far from being rigorously observed, that episcopalian conventicles were openly kept in London *. Cromwell was of a really tolerant disposition, and there had perhaps, on the whole, been no period of equal duration wherein the catholics themselves suffered so little molestation as under the protectorate †. It is well known that he permitted the settlement of Jews in England, after an exclusion of nearly three centuries, in spite of the denunciations of some bigoted churchmen and lawyers.

The presbyterian clergy, though co-operating in the king's restoration, experienced very just apprehensions of the church they had supplanted; and this was in fact one great motive of the restrictions that party was so anxious to impose on him. His character and sentiments were yet very imperfectly known in England; and much pains were taken on both sides, by short pamphlets, panegyrical or defamatory, to represent him as the best Englishman and best protestant of the age, or as one given up to profligacy and popery ‡. The caricature likeness was, we

* Id. 471. Pepys's Diary, ad init. Even in Oxford, about 300 episcopalians used to meet every Sunday with the connivance of Dr. Owen, dean of Christ Church. Orme's Life of Owen, 188. It is somewhat bold in Anglican writers to complain, as they now and then do, of the persecution they suffered at this period, when we consider what had been the conduct of the bishops before, and what it was afterwards. I do not know that any member of the church of England was imprisoned under the commonwealth, except for some political reason; certain it is that the gaols were not filled with them.

† The penal laws were comparatively dormant, though two priests suffered death, one of them before the protectorate. Butler's Mem. of Catholics, ii. 13. But in 1655 Cromwell issued a proclamation for the execution of these statutes, which seems to have been provoked by the persecution of the Vaudois. Whitelock tells us he opposed it, 625. It was not acted upon.

‡ Several of these appear in Somers Tracts, vol. vii. The king's nearest friends were of course not backward in praising him, though a little at the expense of their consciences. "In a word," says Hyde to a correspondent in 1659, "if being the best protestant and the best Englishman of the nation can do the king good at home, he must prosper with and by his own subjects." Clar. State Papers, 541. Morley says he had been to see judge Hale, who asked him questions about the king's character and firmness in the protestant religion. Id. 736. Morley's exertions to dispossess men of the notion that the king and his brother were inclined to popery are

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

must now acknowledge, more true than the other; but at that time it was fair and natural to dwell on the more pleasing picture. The presbyterians remembered that he was what they called a covenanted king; that is, that for the sake of the assistance of the Scots, he had submitted to all the obligations, and taken all the oaths, they thought fit to impose*. But it was well known that on the failure of those prospects he had returned to the church of England, and that he was surrounded by its zealous adherents. Charles, in his declaration from Breda, promised to grant liberty of conscience, so that no man should be disquieted or called in question for differences of opinion in matters of religion, which do not disturb the peace of the kingdom, and to consent to such act of parliament as should be offered him for confirming that indulgence. But he was silent as to the church establishment; and the presbyterian ministers, who went over to present the congratulations of their body, met with civil language, but no sort of encouragement to expect any personal compliance on the king's part with their mode of worship.

The moderate party in the convention parliament, though not absolutely of the presbyterian interest, saw the danger of permitting an oppressed body of churchmen to regain their superiority without some restraint. The actual incumbents of benefices were on the whole a respectable and even exemplary class, most of whom could not be reckoned answerable for the legal defects of their title. But the ejected ministers of the Anglican church, who had endured for their attachment to its discipline, and to the crown, so many years of poverty and privation, stood in a still more favourable light, and had an evident claim to restoration.

also mentioned by Kennet, in his Register, 818: a book containing very copious information as to this particular period. Yet Morley could hardly have been without strong suspicions as to both of them.

* He had written in cipher to secretary Nicholas, from St. Johnston's, Sept. 3, 1650, the day of the battle of Dunbar, "Nothing could have confirmed me more to the church of England than being here, seeing their hypocrisy." Supplement to Evelyn's Diary, 133. The whole letter shows that he was on the point of giving his new friends the slip; as indeed he attempted soon after, in what was called the Start. Laing, iii. 463.

The commons accordingly, before the king's return, prepared a bill for confirming and restoring ministers; with the twofold object of replacing in their benefices, but without their legal right to the intermediate profits, the episcopal clergy, who by ejection or forced surrender had made way for intruders, and at the same time of establishing the possession, though originally usurped, of those against whom there was no claimant living to dispute it, as well as of those who had been presented on legal vacancies *. This act did not pass without opposition of the cavaliers, who panted to retaliate the persecution that had afflicted their church †.

This legal security, however, for the enjoyment of their livings gave no satisfaction to the scruples of conscientious men. The episcopal discipline, the Anglican liturgy and ceremonies having never been abrogated by law, revived of course with the constitutional monarchy, and brought with them all the penalties that the act of uniformity and other statutes had inflicted. The nonconforming clergy threw themselves on the king's compassion, or gratitude, or policy, for relief. The independents, too irreconcilable to the established church for any scheme of comprehension, looked only to that liberty of conscience which the king's declaration from Breda had held forth ‡. But the presbyterians soothed themselves with hopes of retaining their benefices by

* 12 Car. II. c. 17. It is quite clear that an usurped possession was confirmed by this act, where the lawful incumbent was dead, though Burnet intimates the contrary.

† Parl. Hist. 94. The chancellor, in his speech to the houses at their adjournment in September, gave them to understand that this bill was not quite satisfactory to the court, who preferred the confirmation of ministers by particular letters patent under the great seal; that the king's prerogative of dispensing with acts of parliament might not grow into disuse. Many got the additional security of such patents, which proved of service to them, when the next parliament did not think fit to confirm this important statute. Baxter says, p. 241, some got letters patent to turn out the possessors, where the former incumbents were dead. These must have been to benefices in the gift of the crown; in other cases, letters patent could have been of no effect. I have found this confirmed by the Journals, Aug. 27, 1660.

‡ Upon Venner's insurrection, though the sectaries, and especially the independents, published a declaration of their abhorrence of it, a pretext was found for issuing a proclamation to shut up the conventicles of the anabaptists and quakers, and so worded as to reach all others. Kennet's Register, 357.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

some compromise with their adversaries. They had never, generally speaking, embraced the rigid principles of the Scottish clergy, and were willing to admit what they called a moderate episcopacy. They offered, accordingly, on the king's request to know their terms, a middle scheme, usually denominated Bishop Usher's Model, not as altogether approving it, but because they could not hope for any thing nearer to their own views. This consisted, first, in the appointment of a suffragan bishop for each rural deanery, holding a monthly synod of the presbyters within his district; and, secondly, in an annual diocesan synod of suffragans and representatives of the presbyters, under the presidency of the bishop, and deciding upon all matters before them by plurality of suffrages *. This is, I believe, considered by most competent judges as approaching more nearly than our own system to the usage of the primitive church, which gave considerable influence and superiority of rank to the bishop, without destroying the aristocratical character and co-ordinate jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical senate †. It lessened also the inconveniences

* Collier, 869. 871; Baxter, 232. 238. The bishops said, in their answer to the presbyterians' proposals, that the objections against a single person's administration in the church were equally applicable to the state. Collier, 872. But this was false, as they well knew, and designed only to produce an effect at court; for the objections were not grounded on reasoning, but on a presumed positive institution. Besides which the argument cut against themselves: for if the English constitution, or something analogous to it, had been established in the church, their adversaries would have had all they *now* asked.

† Stillingfleet's Irenicum. King's Inquiry into the Constitution of the Primitive Church. The former work was published at this time, with a view to moderate the pretensions of the Anglican party, to which the author belonged, by showing: 1. That there are no sufficient data for determining with certainty the form of church-government in the apostolical age, or that which immediately followed it; 2. That, as far as we may probably conjecture, the primitive church was framed on the model of the synagogue; that is, a synod of priests in every congregation, having one of their own number for a chief or president; 3. That there is no reason to consider any part of the apostolical discipline as an invariable model for future ages, and that much of our own ecclesiastical polity cannot any way pretend to primitive authority; 4. That this has been the opinion of all the most eminent theologians at home and abroad; 5. That it would be expedient to introduce various modifications, not on the whole much different from the scheme of Usher. Stillingfleet, whose work is a remarkable instance of extensive learning and mature judgment at the age of about twenty-three, thought fit afterwards to retract it in a certain degree, and towards the latter part of his life, gave into more high-church politics. It is true that the Irenicum must have been composed with almost unparal-

supposed to result from the great extent of some English dioceses. But though such a system was inconsistent with that parity which the rigid presbyterians maintained to be indispensable, and those who espoused it are reckoned, in a theological division, among episcopalians, it was, in the eyes of equally rigid churchmen, little better than a disguised presbytery, and a real subversion of the Anglican hierarchy *.

The presbyterian ministers, or rather a few eminent persons of that class, proceeded to solicit a revision of the liturgy, and a consideration of the numerous objections which they made to certain passages, while they admitted the lawfulness of a prescribed form. They implored the king also to abolish, or at least not to enjoin as necessary, some of those ceremonies which they scrupled to use, and which in fact had been the original cause of their schism; the surplice, the cross in baptism, the practice of kneeling at the communion, and one or two more. A tone of humble supplication pervades all their language, which some might invidiously contrast with their unbending haughtiness in prosperity. The bishops and other Anglican divines, to whom their propositions were referred, met the offer of capitulation with a scornful and vindictive smile. They held out not the least overture towards a compromise.

The king, however, deemed it expedient, during the continuance of a parliament, the majority of whom were desirous of union in the church, and had given some indications of their disposition †, to keep up the delusion a little longer, and prevent the possible consequences of despair. He had already appointed several presbyterian ministers his chaplains, and given them fre-

leled rapidity for such a work; but it shows, as far as I can judge, no marks of precipitancy. The biographical writers put its publication in 1659; but this must be a mistake; no one can avoid perceiving that it could not have passed the press on the 24th of March, 1660.

* Baxter's Life. Neal.

† They addressed the king to call such divines as he should think fit to advise with concerning matters of religion. July 20, 1660. Journals and Parl. Hist.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

quent audiences. But during the recess of parliament he published a declaration, wherein, after some compliments to the ministers of the presbyterian opinion, and an artful expression of satisfaction that he had found them no enemies to episcopacy or a liturgy, as they had been reported to be, he announces his intention to appoint a sufficient number of suffragan bishops in the larger dioceses; he promises that no bishop should ordain or exercise any part of his spiritual jurisdiction without advice and assistance of his presbyters; that no chancellors or officials of the bishop should use any jurisdiction over the ministry, nor any archdeacon without the advice of a council of his clergy; that the dean and chapter of the diocese, together with an equal number of presbyters, annually chosen by the clergy, should be always advising and assisting at all ordinations, church censures, and other important acts of spiritual jurisdiction. He declared also that he would appoint an equal number of divines of both persuasions to revise the liturgy, desiring that in the mean time none would wholly lay it aside, yet promising that no one should be molested for not using it till it should be reviewed and reformed. With regard to ceremonies, he declared that none should be compelled to receive the sacrament kneeling, nor to use the cross in baptism, nor to bow at the name of Jesus, nor to wear the surplice, except in the royal chapel and in cathedrals, nor should subscription to articles not doctrinal be required. He renewed also his declaration from Breda, that no man should be called in question for differences of religious opinion, not disturbing the peace of the kingdom *.

* Parl. Hist. Neal, Baxter, Collier, &c. Burnet says that Clarendon had made the king publish this declaration; "but the bishops did not approve of this; and after the service they did that lord in the Duke of York's marriage, he would not put any hardship on those who had so signally obliged him." This is very invidious. I know no evidence that the declaration was published at Clarendon's suggestion, except indeed that he was the great adviser of the crown; yet in some things, especially of this nature, the king seems to have acted without his concurrence. He certainly speaks of the declaration as if he did not wholly relish it, (Life, 75.) and does not state it fairly. In State Trials, vi. 11, it is said to have been

Though many of the presbyterian party deemed this modification of Anglican episcopacy a departure from their notions of an apostolic church, and inconsistent with their covenant, the majority would doubtless have acquiesced in so extensive a concession from the ruling power. If faithfully executed, according to its apparent meaning, it does not seem that the declaration falls very short of their own proposal, the scheme of Usher*. The high churchmen indeed would have murmured had it been made effectual. But such as were nearest the king's councils well knew that nothing else was intended by it than to scatter dust in men's eyes, and prevent the interference of parliament. This was soon rendered manifest, when a bill to render the king's declaration effectual was vigorously opposed by the courtiers, and rejected on a second reading by 183 to 157†. Nothing could more forcibly demonstrate an intention of breaking faith with the presbyterians than this vote. For the king's declaration was repugnant to the act of uniformity and many other statutes, so that it could not be carried into effect without the authority of parliament, unless by means of such a general dispensing power as no parliament would endure‡. And it is impossible to question

drawn up by Morley and Henchman for the church, Reynolds and Calamy for the dissenters; if they disagreed, lords Anglesea and Hollis to decide.

* The chief objection made by the presbyterians, as far as we learn from Baxter, was, that the consent of presbyters to the bishop's acts was not promised by the declaration, but only their advice; a distinction not apparently very material in practice, but bearing perhaps on the great point of controversy, whether the difference between the two were in order, or in degree. The king would not come into the scheme of consent; though they pressed him with a passage out of the Icon Basilike, where his father allowed of it. Life of Baxter, 276. Some alterations, however, were made in consequence of their suggestions.

† Parl. Hist. 141. 152. Clarendon, 76, most strangely observes on this: "Some of the leaders brought a bill into the house for the making that declaration a law, which was suitable to their other acts of ingenuity to keep the church for ever under the same indulgence and without any settlement; which being quickly perceived, there was no further progress in it." The bill was brought in by sir Matthew Hale.

‡ Collier, who of course thinks this declaration an encroachment on the church, as well as on the legislative power, says, "For this reason it was overlooked at the assizes and sessions in several places in the country, where the dissenting ministers were indicted for not conforming, pursuant to the laws in force." P. 876. Neal confirms this, 586, and Kennet's Register, 374.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

that a bill for confirming it would have easily passed through this house of commons, had it not been for the resistance of the government.

Charles now dissolved the convention parliament, having obtained from it what was immediately necessary, but well aware that he could better accomplish his objects with another. It was studiously inculcated by the royalist lawyers, that as this assembly had not been summoned by the king's writ, none of its acts could have any real validity, except by the confirmation of a true parliament*. This doctrine being applicable to the act of indemnity left the kingdom in a precarious condition, till an undeniable security could be obtained, and rendered the dissolution almost necessary. Another parliament was called of very different composition from the last. Possession and the standing ordinances against royalists had enabled the secluded members of 1648, that is, the adherents of the long parliament, to stem with some degree of success the impetuous tide of loyalty in the last elections, and put them almost upon an equality with the court. But in the new assembly, cavaliers, and the sons of cavaliers, entirely predominated; the great families, the ancient gentry, the episcopal clergy, resumed their influence; the presbyterians and sectarians feared to have their offences remembered; so that we may rather be surprised that about fifty or sixty who

* Life of Clarendon, 74. A plausible and somewhat dangerous attack had been made on the authority of this parliament from an opposite quarter, in a pamphlet written by one Drake, under the name of Thomas Philips, intitled "The Long Parliament Revived," and intended to prove that by the act of the late king, providing that they should not be dissolved but by the concurrence of the whole legislature, they were still in existence; and that the king's demise, which legally puts an end to a parliament, could not affect one that was declared permanent by so direct an enactment. This argument seems by no means inconsiderable; but the times were not such as to permit of technical reasoning. The convention parliament, after questioning Drake, finally sent up articles of impeachment against him; but the lords, after hearing him in his defence, when he confessed his fault, left him to be prosecuted by the attorney-general. Nothing more, probably, took place. Parl. Hist. 145. 157. This was in November and December 1660: but Drake's book seems still to have been in considerable circulation; at least I have two editions of it, both bearing the date of 1661. The argument it contains is purely legal; but the aim must have been to serve the presbyterian or parliamentarian cause.

had belonged to the opposite side found places in such a parliament, than that its general complexion should be decidedly royalist. The presbyterian faction seemed to lie prostrate at the feet of those on whom they had so long triumphed, without any force of arms, or civil convulsion, as if the king had been brought in against their will. Nor did the cavaliers fail to treat them as enemies to monarchy, though it was notorious that the restoration was chiefly owing to their endeavours*.

The new parliament gave the first proofs of their disposition, by voting that all their members should receive the sacrament on a certain day according to the rites of the church of England, and that the solemn league and covenant should be burned by the common hangman†. They excited still more serious alarm by an evident reluctance to confirm the late act of indemnity, which the king at the opening of the session had pressed upon their attention. Those who had suffered the sequestrations and other losses of a vanquished party could not endure to abandon what they reckoned a just reparation. But Clarendon adhered with equal integrity and prudence to this fundamental principle of the restoration; and after a strong message from the king on the subject, the commons were content to let the bill pass with no new exceptions‡. They gave indeed some relief to the

* Complaints of insults on the presbyterian clergy were made to the late parliament. Parl. Hist. 160. The Anglicans inveighed grossly against them on the score of their past conduct, notwithstanding the act of indemnity. Kennet's Register, 616. See, as a specimen, South's sermons, passim.

† Journals, 17th of May, 1661. The previous question was moved on this vote, but lost by 228 to 103; Morice, the secretary of state, being one of the tellers for the minority. Monk, I believe, to whom Morice owed his elevation, did what he could to prevent violent measures against the presbyterians. Alderman Love was suspended from sitting in the house, July 3, for not having taken the sacrament. I suppose that he afterwards conformed; for he became an active member of the opposition.

‡ Journals, June 14, &c. Parl. Hist. 209. Life of Clarendon, 71. Burnet, 230. A bill discharging the loyalists from all interest exceeding three per cent. on debts contracted before the wars, passed the commons, but dropped in the other house. The great discontent of this party at the indemnity continued to show itself in subsequent sessions. Clarendon mentions with much censure, that many private bills passed about 1662, annulling conveyances of lands made during the troubles, p. 162, 163. One remarkable instance ought to be noticed, as having been greatly misre-

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

ruined cavaliers, by voting £60,000 to be distributed among that class; but so inadequate a compensation did not assuage their discontents.

I have mentioned above, that the late house of commons had consented to the exception of Vane and Lambert from indemnity, on the king's promise that they should not suffer death. They had lain in the Tower, accordingly, without being brought to trial. The regicides who had come in under the proclamation were saved from capital punishment by the former act of indemnity. But the present parliament abhorred this lukewarm lenity. A bill was brought in for the execution of the king's judges in the Tower, and the attorney-general was requested to proceed against Vane and Lambert*. The former dropped in the house of lords; but those formidable chiefs of the commonwealth were brought to trial. Their indictments alleged as overt acts of high treason against Charles II. their exercise of civil and military functions under the usurping government;

presented: At the earl of Derby's seat, of Knowsley in Lancashire, a tablet is placed to commemorate the ingratitude of Charles II. in having refused the royal assent to a bill which had passed both houses for restoring the son of the earl of Derby, who had lost his life in the royal cause, to his family estate. This has been so often reprinted by tourists and novelists, that it passes currently for a just reproach on the king's memory. It was however in fact one of his most honourable actions. The truth is, that the cavalier faction carried through parliament a bill to make void the conveyances of some manors which lord Derby had voluntarily sold before the restoration, in the very face of the act of indemnity, and against all law and justice. Clarendon, who, together with some very respectable peers, had protested against this measure in the upper house, thought it his duty to recommend the king to refuse his assent. Lords' Journals, Feb. 6, and May 14, 1662. There is so much to blame in both the minister and his master, that it is but fair to give them credit for that which the pardonable prejudices of the family interested have led it to mis-state.

* Commons' Journals, 1st July, 1661. A division took place, November 26, on a motion to lay this bill aside, in consideration of the king's proclamation, which was lost by 124 to 109: lord Cornbury (Clarendon's son) being a teller for the Noes. The bill was sent up to the lords, Jan. 27, 1662. See also Parl. Hist. 217, 225. Some of their proceedings trespassed upon the executive power, and infringed the prerogative they laboured to exalt. But long interruption of the due course of the constitution had made its boundaries indistinct. Thus, in the convention parliament, the bodies of Cromwell, Bradshaw, Ireton, and others, were ordered, Dec. 4, on the motion of colonel Titus, to be disinterred, and hanged on a gibbet. The lords concurred in this order; but the mode of address to the king would have been more regular. Parl. Hist. 151.

though not, as far as appears, expressly directed against the king's authority, and certainly not against his person. Under such an accusation many who had been the most earnest in the king's restoration might have stood at the bar. Thousands might apply to themselves, in the case of Vane, the beautiful expressions of Mrs. Hutchinson, as to her husband's feelings at the death of the regicides, that he looked on himself as judged in their judgment, and executed in their execution. The stroke fell upon one, the reproach upon many.

The condemnation of sir Henry Vane was very questionable, even according to the letter of the law. It was plainly repugnant to its spirit. An excellent statute enacted under Henry VII., and deemed by some great writers to be only declaratory of the common law, but occasioned, no doubt, by some harsh judgments of treason which had been pronounced during the late competition of the houses of York and Lancaster, assured a perfect indemnity to all persons obeying a king for the time being, however defective his title might come to be considered when another claimant should gain possession of the throne. It established the duty of allegiance to the existing government upon a general principle; but in its terms it certainly presumed that government to be a monarchy. This furnished the judges upon the trial of Vane with a distinction of which they willingly availed themselves. They proceeded, however, beyond all bounds of constitutional precedents and of common sense, when they determined that Charles the Second had been king de facto as well as de jure from the moment of his father's death, though, in the words of their senseless sophistry, "kept out of the exercise of his royal authority by traitors and rebels." He had indeed assumed the title during his exile, and had granted letters patent for different purposes, which it was thought proper to hold good after his restoration; thus presenting the strange anomaly, and as it were contradiction in terms, of a king who began to govern in the twelfth year of his reign. But this had not been the usage of former

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

times. Edward IV., Richard III., Henry VII., had dated their instruments either from their proclamation, or at least from some act of possession. The question was not whether a right to the crown descended according to the laws of inheritance; but whether such a right, divested of possession, could challenge allegiance as a bounden duty by the law of England. This is expressly determined in the negative by Lord Coke in his third Institute, who maintains a king "that hath right, and is out of possession," not to be within the statute of treasons. He asserts also that a pardon granted by him would be void; which by parity of reasoning must extend to all his patents *. We may consider therefore the execution of Vane as one of the most reprehensible actions of this bad reign. It not only violated the assurance of indemnity, but introduced a principle of sanguinary proscription, which would render the return of what is called legitimate government under any circumstances an intolerable curse to a nation †.

The king violated his promise by the execution of Vane, as much as the judges strained the law by his conviction. He had assured the last parliament, in answer to their address, that if Vane and Lambert should be attainted by law, he would not suffer the sentence to be executed. Though the present parliament had urged the attorney-general to bring these delinquents to trial, they had never, by an address to the king, given him a colour for retracting his promise of mercy. It is worthy of notice, that Clarendon does not say a syllable about Vane's trial; which affords a strong presumption that he thought it a breach of the act of indemnity. But we have on record a remarkable letter of the king to his minister, wherein he expresses his resentment at Vane's bold demeanour during his trial, and intimates a wish for

* 3 Inst. 7. This appears to have been held in Bagot's case, 9 Edw. 4. See also Higden's View of the English Constitution, 1709.

† Foster, in his Discourse on High Treason, evidently intimates that he thought the conviction of Vane unjustifiable.

his death, though with some doubts whether it could be honourably done *. Doubts of such a nature never lasted long with this prince; and Vane suffered the week after. Lambert, whose submissive behaviour had furnished a contrast with that of Vane, was sent to Guernsey, and remained a prisoner for thirty years. The royalists have spoken of Vane with extreme dislike; yet it should be remembered, that he was not only incorrupt, but disinterested, inflexible in conforming his public conduct to his principles, and averse to every sanguinary or oppressive measure: qualities not very common in revolutionary chiefs, and which honourably distinguish him from the Lamberts and Haslerigs of his party †.

No time was lost, as might be expected from the temper of the commons, in replacing the throne on its constitutional basis after the rude encroachments of the long parliament. They declared that there was no legislative power in either or both houses without the king; that the league and covenant was unlawfully imposed; that the sole supreme command of the militia, and of all forces by sea and land, had ever been by the laws of England the undoubted right of the crown; that neither house of parliament could pretend to it, nor could lawfully levy any war offensive or defensive against his majesty ‡. These last words appeared to go to a dangerous length, and to sanction the suicidal doctrine of absolute non-resistance. They made the law of high treason more strict during the king's life, in pur-

* "The relation that has been made to me of sir H. Vane's carriage yesterday in the Hall is the occasion of this letter, which, if I am rightly informed, was so insolent, as to justify all he had done; acknowledging no supreme power in England but a parliament, and many things to that purpose. You have had a true account of all; and if he has given new occasion to be hanged, certainly he is too dangerous a man to let live, if we can honestly put him out of the way. Think of this, and give me some account of it to-morrow, till when I have no more to say to you. C." Indorsed in lord Clarendon's hand. "The king, June 7, 1662." Vane was beheaded June 14. Burnet (note in Oxford edition, p. 164.) Harris's Lives, v. 32.

† Vane gave up the profits of his place as treasurer of the navy, which, according to his patent, would have amounted to 30,000l. per ann. if we may rely on Harris's Life of Cromwell, p. 260.

‡ 13 Car. II. c. 1 and 6. A bill for settling the militia had been much opposed in the convention parliament, as tending to bring in martial law. Parl. Hist. iv. 115. It seems to have dropped.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

suance of a precedent in the reign of Elizabeth *. They restored the bishops to their seats in the house of lords; a step which the last parliament would never have been induced to take, but which met with little opposition from the present †. The violence that had attended their exclusion seemed a sufficient motive for rescinding a statute so improperly obtained, even if the policy of maintaining the spiritual peers were somewhat doubtful. The remembrance of those tumultuous assemblages which had overawed their predecessors in the winter of 1641, and at other times, produced a law against disorderly petitions. This statute provides that no petition or address shall be presented to the king or either house of parliament by more than ten persons, nor shall any one procure above twenty persons to consent or set their hands to any petition for alteration of matters established by law in church or state, unless with the previous order of three justices of the county, or the major part of the grand jury ‡.

Thus far the new parliament might be said to have acted chiefly on a principle of repairing the breaches recently made in our constitution, and of re-establishing the just boundaries of the executive power; nor would much objection have been offered to their measures, had they gone no farther in the same course. The act for regulating corporations is much more questionable, and displayed a determination to exclude a considerable portion of the community from their civil rights. It enjoined all magistrates and persons bearing offices of trust in corporations to swear, that they believed it unlawful, on any pretence whatever, to take arms against the king, and that they abhorred the traitorous position of bearing arms by his authority against his person, or against those that are commissioned by him. They were also to renounce all obligation arising out of the oath called

* C. 1.

† C. 2. The only opposition made to this was in the house of lords by the earl of Bristol and some of the Roman catholic party, who thought the bishops would not be brought into a toleration of their religion. Life of Clarendon, p. 138.

‡ C. 5.

the solemn league and covenant; in case of refusal, to be immediately removed from office. Those elected in future were, in addition to the same oaths, to have received the sacrament within one year before their election, according to the rites of the English church *. These provisions struck at the heart of the presbyterian party, whose strength lay in the little oligarchies of corporate towns, which directly or indirectly returned to parliament a very large proportion of its members. Yet it rarely happens that a political faction is crushed by the terrors of an oath. Many of the more rigid presbyterians refused the conditions imposed by this act, but the majority found pretexts for qualifying themselves.

It could not yet be said, that this loyal assembly had meddled with those safeguards of public liberty which had been erected by their great predecessors in 1641. The laws that Falkland and Hampden had combined to provide, those bulwarks against the ancient exorbitance of prerogative, stood unscathed, threatened from afar, but not yet betrayed by the garrison. But one of these, the bill for triennial parliaments, wounded the pride of royalty, and gave scandal to its worshippers; not so much on account of its object, as of the securities provided against its violation. If the king did not summon a fresh parliament within three years after a dissolution, the peers were to meet and issue writs of their own accord; if they did not within a certain time perform this duty, the sheriffs of every county were to take it on themselves; and in default of all constituted authorities, the electors might assemble without any regular summons, to choose representatives. It was manifest that the king must have taken a fixed resolution to trample on a fundamental law, before these irregular and tumultuous modes of redress could be called into

* 13 Car. II. sess. 2. c. 1. This bill did not pass without a strong opposition in the commons. It was carried at last by 182 to 77, Journals, July 5; but on a previous division for its commitment the numbers were 185 to 136. June 20. Prynne was afterwards reprimanded by the speaker for publishing a pamphlet against this act, July 15; but his courage had now forsaken him, and he made a submissive apology, though the censure was pronounced in a very harsh manner.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

action; and that the existence of such provisions could not in any degree weaken or endanger the legal and limited monarchy. But the doctrine of passive obedience had now crept from the homilies into the statute-book; the parliament had not scrupled to declare the unlawfulness of defensive war against the king's person; and it was but one step more to take away all direct means of counteracting his pleasure. Bills were accordingly more than once ordered to be brought in for repealing the triennial act; but no further steps were taken till the king thought it at length necessary, in the year 1664, to give them an intimation of his desires*. A vague notion had partially gained ground, that no parliament, by virtue of that bill, could sit for more than three years. In allusion to this, he told them, on opening the session of 1664, that he "had often read over that bill; and though there was no colour for the fancy of the determination of the parliament, yet he would not deny, that he had always expected them to consider the wonderful clauses in that bill, which passed in a time very uncareful for the dignity of the crown or the security of the people. He requested them to look again at it. For himself, he loved parliaments; he was much beholden to them; he did not think the crown could ever be happy without frequent parliaments. But assure yourselves," he concluded, "if I should think otherwise, I would never suffer a parliament to come together by the means prescribed by that bill†."

So audacious a declaration, equivalent to an avowed design, in certain circumstances, of preventing the execution of the laws by force of arms, was never before heard from the lips of an English king; and would, in any other times, have awakened a storm of indignation from the commons. They were, however, sufficiently compliant to pass a bill for the repeal of that which had been enacted with unanimous consent in 1641, and had been

* Journals, 3d April, 1662; 10th March, 1663.

† Parl. Hist. 289. Clarendon speaks very unjustly of the triennial act, forgetting that he had himself concurred in it. P. 221.

hailed as the great palladium of consititutional monarchy. The preamble recites the said act to have been "in derogation of his majesty's just rights and prerogative, inherent in the imperial crown of this realm, for the calling and assembling of parliaments." The bill then repeals and annuls every clause and article in the fullest manner; yet, with an inconsistency not unusual in our statutes, adds a provision that parliaments shall not in future be intermitted for above three years at the most. This clause is evidently framed in a different spirit from the original bill, and may be attributed to the influence of that party in the house, which had begun to oppose the court, and already showed itself in considerable strength*. Thus the effect of this compromise was, that the law of the long parliament subsisted as to its principle, without those unusual clauses which had been enacted to render its observance secure. The king assured them, in giving his assent to the repeal, that he would not be a day more without a parliament on that account. But the necessity of those securities, and the mischiefs of that false and servile loyalty which abrogated them, became manifest at the close of the present reign; nearly four years having elapsed between the dissolution of Charles's last parliament and his death.

Clarendon, the principal adviser, as yet, of the king since his restoration, (for Southampton rather gave reputation to the administration, than took that superior influence which belonged to his place of treasurer) has thought fit to stigmatize the triennial bill with the epithet of infamous. So wholly had he divested himself of the sentiments he entertained at the beginning of the long parliament, that he sought nothing more ardently than to place the crown again in a condition to commit those abuses and excesses, against which he had once so much inveighed. "He did

* 16 Car. II. c. 1. We find by the Journals that some divisions took place during the passage of this bill, and though, as far as appears, on subordinate points, yet probably springing from an opposition to its principle. March 28, 1664. There was by this time a regular party formed against the court.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

never dissemble," he says, "from the time of his return with the king, that the late rebellion could never be extirpated and pulled up by the roots, till the king's regal and inherent power and prerogative should be fully avowed and vindicated, and till the usurpations in both houses of parliament, since the year 1640, were disclaimed and made odious; and many other excesses, which had been affected by both before that time under the name of privileges, should be restrained or explained. For all which reformation the kingdom in general was very well disposed, when it pleased God to restore the king to it. The present parliament had done much, and would willingly have prosecuted the same method, if they had had the same advice and encouragement*." I can only understand these words to mean, that they might have been led to repeal other statutes of the long parliament besides the triennial act, and that excluding the bishops from the house of peers; but more especially to have restored the two great levers of prerogative, the courts of star-chamber and high-commission. This would indeed have pulled up by the roots the work of the long parliament, which, in spite of such general reproach, still continued to shackle the revived monarchy. There had indeed been some serious attempts at this in the house of lords during the session of 1661-2. We read in the Journals†, that a committee was appointed to prepare a bill for repealing all acts made in the parliament begun the 3d day of November, 1640, and for re-enacting such of them as should be thought fit. This committee some time after‡ reported their opinion, "that it was fit for the good of the nation, that there be a court of like nature to the late court called the star-chamber, but desired the advice and directions of the house in these particulars following: Who should be judges? What matters should they be judges of? By what manner of proceedings should they act?" The house, it is added, thought it not fit to give any particular directions therein, but left it to the

* P. 383. † Lords' Journals, 23d and 24th Jan. 1662. ‡ 12th Feb.

committee to proceed as they would. It does not appear that any thing further was done in this session; but we find the bill of repeal revived next year*. It is, however, only once mentioned. Perhaps it may be questionable, whether, even amidst the fervid loyalty of 1661, the house of commons would have concurred in re-establishing the star-chamber. They had taken marked precautions in passing an act for the restoration of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, that it should not be construed to restore the high-commission court, or to give validity to the canons of 1640, or to enlarge in any manner the ancient authority of the church†. A tribunal still more formidable and obnoxious would hardly have found favour with a body of men, who, as their behaviour shortly demonstrated, might rather be taxed with passion and vindictiveness towards a hostile faction, than a deliberate willingness to abandon their English rights and privileges.

The striking characteristic of this parliament was a zealous and intolerant attachment to the established church, not losing an atom of their aversion to popery in their abhorrence of protestant dissent. In every former parliament since the reformation, the country party (if I may use such a word by anticipation for those gentlemen of landed estates who owed their seats to their provincial importance, as distinguished from courtiers, lawyers, and dependants on the nobility), had incurred with rigid churchmen the reproach of puritanical affections. They were implacable against popery, but disposed to far more indulgence with respect to non-conformity, than the very different maxims of Elizabeth and her successors would permit. Yet it is obvious that the puritan commons of James I., and the high-church commons of Charles II., were composed, in a great measure, of the same families, and entirely of the same classes. But as the arrogance of the prelates had excited indignation, and the sufferings of the scrupulous clergy begot sympathy in one age, so the reversed scenes of the

* 19th March, 1663.

† 13 Car. II. c. 12.

CHAP. IX.

Charles II. 1660—73.

last twenty years had given to the former, or their adherents, the advantage of enduring oppression with humility and fortitude, and displayed in the latter, or at least many of their number, those odious and malevolent qualities which adversity had either concealed or rendered less dangerous. The gentry, connected for the most part by birth or education with the episcopal clergy, could not for an instant hesitate between the ancient establishment, and one composed of men whose eloquence in preaching was chiefly directed towards the common people, and pre-supposed a degree of enthusiasm in the hearer which the higher classes rarely possessed. They dreaded the wilder sectaries, foes to property, or at least to its political influence, as much as to the regal constitution; and not unnaturally, though without perfect fairness, confounded the presbyterian or moderate non-conformist in the motley crowd of fanatics, to many of whose tenets he, at least, more approximated than the church of England minister.

There is every reason to presume, as I have already remarked, that the king had no intention but to deceive the presbyterians and their friends in the convention parliament by his declaration of October, 1660 *. He proceeded, after the dissolution of that assembly, to fill up the number of bishops, who had been reduced to nine, but with no further mention of suffragans, or of the council of presbyters, which had been announced in that declaration †. It does, indeed, appear highly probable, that this

* Clarendon, in his Life, p. 149, says, that the king "had received the presbyterian ministers with grace; and did believe that he should work upon them by persuasions, having been well acquainted with their common arguments by the conversation he had had in Scotland, and *was very able to confute them.*" This is one of the strange absurdities into which Clarendon's prejudices hurry him in almost every page of his writings, and more especially in this continuation of his Life. Charles, as his minister well knew, could not read a common Latin book (Clarendon State Papers, iii. 567.) and had no manner of acquaintance with theological learning, unless the popular argument in favour of popery is so to be called; yet he was very able to confute men who had passed their lives in study, on a subject involving a considerable knowledge of Scripture and the early writers in their original languages.

† Clarendon admits that this could not have been done till the former parliament was dissolved. 97. This means, of course, the supposition that the king's word was to be broken. "The malignity towards the church," he says, "seemed increasing, and

scheme of Usher would have been found inconvenient and even impracticable; and reflecting men would perhaps be apt to say, that the usage of primitive antiquity, upon which all parties laid so much stress, was rather a presumptive argument against the adoption of any system of church-government, in circumstances so widely different, than in favour of it. But inconvenient and impracticable provisions carry with them their own remedy; and the king might have respected his own word, and the wishes of a large part of the church, without any formidable danger to episcopal authority. It would have been, however, too flagrant a breach of promise (and yet hardly greater than that just mentioned) if some show had not been made of desiring a reconciliation on the subordinate details of religious ceremonies and the liturgy. This produced a conference held at the Savoy, in May, 1661, between twenty-one Anglican and as many presbyterian divines: the latter were called upon to propose their objections; it being the part of the others to defend. They brought forward so long a list as seemed to raise little hope of agreement. Some of these objections to the service, as may be imagined, were rather captious and hypercritical; yet in many cases they pointed out real defects. As to ceremonies, they dwelt on the same scruples as had from the beginning of Elizabeth's reign produced

to be greater than at the coming in of the king." Pepys, in his Diary, has several sharp remarks on the misconduct and unpopularity of the bishops, though himself an episcopalian even before the restoration. "The clergy are so high, that all people I meet with do protest against their practice." August 31, 1660. "I am convinced in my judgment, that the present clergy will never heartily go down with the generality of the commons of England, they have been so used to liberty and freedom, and they are so acquainted with the pride and debauchery of the present clergy. He [Mr. Blackburn, a non-conformist] did give me many stories of the affronts which the clergy receive in all parts of England from the gentry and ordinary persons of the parish." November 9, 1663. The opposite party had recourse to the old weapons of pious fraud. I have a tract containing twenty-seven instances of remarkable judgments, all between June, 1660, and April, 1661, which befell divers persons for reading the common prayer, or, the more common offence, reviling godly ministers. This is intitled Annus Mirabilis; and, besides the above twenty-seven, attests so many prodigies, that the name is by no means misapplied. The bishops made large fortunes by filling up leases. Burnet, 260. And Clarendon admits them to have been too rapacious, though he tries to extenuate. P. 48.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

so unhappy a discordance, and had become inveterate by so much persecution. The conference was managed with great mutual bitterness and recrimination; the one party stimulated by vindictive hatred and the natural arrogance of power; the other irritated by the manifest design of breaking the king's faith, and probably by a sense of their own improvidence in ruining themselves by his restoration. The chief blame, it cannot be dissembled, ought to fall on the churchmen. An opportunity was afforded of healing, in a very great measure, that schism and separation which, if they are to be believed, is one of the worst evils that can befall a christian community. They had it in their power to retain or to expel a vast number of worthy and laborious ministers of the gospel, with whom they had, in their own estimation, no essential ground of difference. They knew the king, and consequently themselves, to have been restored with (I might almost say by) the strenuous co-operation of those very men who were now at their mercy. To judge by the rules of moral wisdom, or of the spirit of christianity (to which, notwithstanding what might be satirically said of experience, it is difficult not to think we have a right to expect that a body of ecclesiastics should pay some attention), there can be no justification for the Anglican party on this occasion. They have certainly one apology, the best very frequently that can be offered for human infirmity; they had sustained a long and unjust exclusion from the emoluments of their profession, which begot a natural dislike towards the members of the sect that had profited at their expense, though not, in general, personally responsible for their misfortunes*.

* The fullest account of this conference, and of all that passed as to the comprehension of the presbyterians, is to be read in Baxter, whom Neal has abridged. Some allowance must, of course, be made for the resentment of Baxter; but his known integrity makes it impossible to discredit the main part of his narration. Nor is it necessary to rest on the evidence of those who may be supposed to have the prejudices of dissenters. For bishop Burnet admits, that all the concern which seemed to employ the prelates' minds, was not only to make no alteration on the presbyterians' account, but to straighten the terms of conformity far more than before the war. Those, however, who would see what can be said by writers of high-church principles, may consult Kennet's History of Charles II. p. 252, or Collier, p. 878. One little anecdote

The Savoy conference broke up in anger, each party more exasperated and more irreconcilable than before. This, indeed, has been the usual consequence of attempts to bring men to an understanding on religious differences by explanation or compromise. The public is apt to expect too much from these discussions; unwilling to believe either that those who have a reputation for piety can be wanting in desire to find the truth, or that those who are esteemed for ability can miss it. And this expectation is heightened by the language rather too strongly held by moderate and peaceable divines, that little more is required than an understanding of each others' meaning, to unite conflicting sects in a common faith. But as it generally happens that the disputes of theologians, though far from being so important as they appear to the narrow prejudices and heated passions of the combatants, are not wholly nominal, or capable of being reduced to a common form of words, the hopes of union and settlement vanish upon that closer inquiry which conferences and schemes of agreement produce. And though this may seem rather applicable to speculative controversies, than to such matters as were debated between the church and the presbyterians at the Savoy conference, and which are in their nature more capable of compromise than articles of doctrine, yet the consequence of exhibiting the incompatibility and reciprocal alienation of the two parties in a clearer light was nearly the same.

A determination having been taken to admit of no extensive comprehension, it was debated by the government whether to make a few alterations in the liturgy, or to restore the ancient

may serve to display the spirit with which the Anglicans came to the conference. Upon Baxter's saying, that their proceedings would alienate a great part of the *nation*, Stearne, bishop of Carlisle, observed to his associates: "He will not say *kingdom*, least he should acknowledge a king." Baxter, p. 338. This was a very malignant reflection on a man who was well known never to have been of the republican party. It is true that Baxter seems to have thought, in 1659, that Richard Cromwell would have served the turn better than Charles Stuart; and, as a presbyterian, he thought very rightly. See p. 207, and part iii. p. 71. But preaching before the parliament, April 30, 1660, he said it was none of our differences whether we should be loyal to our king; on that all were agreed. P. 217.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

service in every particular. The former advice prevailed, though with no desire or expectation of conciliating any scrupulous persons by the amendments introduced *. These were by no means numerous, and in some instances rather chosen in order to irritate and mock the opposite party, than from any compliance with their prejudices. It is indeed very probable, from the temper of the new parliament, that they would not have come into more tolerant and healing measures. When the act of uniformity was brought into the house of lords, it proved not only to restore all the ceremonies and other matters to which objection had been taken, but to contain fresh clauses more intolerable than the rest to the presbyterian clergy. One of these enacted, that not only every beneficed minister, but fellow of a college, or even schoolmaster, should declare his unfeigned assent and consent to all and every thing contained in the book of common prayer †. These words, however capable of being eluded and explained away, as such subscriptions always are, seemed to amount, in common use of language, to a complete approbation of an entire volume, such as a man of sense hardly gives to any book, and which, at a time when scrupulous persons were with great difficulty endeavouring to reconcile themselves to submission, placed a new stumbling-block in their way, which, without abandoning their integrity, they found it impossible to surmount.

The malignity of those who chiefly managed church affairs at

* Life of Clarendon, 147. He observes that the alterations made did not reduce one of the opposite party to the obedience of the church. Now, in the first place, he could not know this; and, in the next, he conceals from the reader, that, on the whole matter, the changes made in the liturgy were more likely to disgust than to conciliate. Thus the puritans having always objected to the number of saints' days, the bishops added a few more; and the former having given very plausible reasons against the apocryphal lessons in the daily service, the others inserted the legend of Bel and the Dragon, for no other purpose than to show contempt of their scruples. The alterations may be seen in Kennet's Register, 585. The most important was the restoration of a rubric inserted in the communion service under Edward VI., but left out by Elizabeth, declaring against any corporal presence in the Lord's supper. This gave offence to some of those who had adopted that opinion, especially the duke of York, and perhaps tended to complete his alienation from the Anglican church. Burnet, i. 183.

† 13 and 14 Car. II. c. iv. § 3.

this period displayed itself in another innovation tending to the same end. It had been not unusual from the very beginnings of our reformation, to admit ministers ordained in foreign protestant churches to benefices in England. No re-ordination had ever been practised with respect to those who had received the imposition of hands in a regular church; and hence it appears, that the church of England, whatever tenets might latterly have been broached in controversy, did not consider the ordination of presbyters invalid. Though such ordinations as had taken place during the late troubles, and by virtue of which a great part of the actual clergy were in possession, were evidently irregular on the supposition that the English episcopal church was then in existence; yet if the argument from such great convenience as men call necessity was to prevail, it was surely worth while to suffer them to pass without question for the present, enacting provisions, if such were required, for the future. But this did not fall in with the passion and policy of the bishops, who found a pretext for their worldly motives of action in the supposed divine right and necessity of episcopal succession; a theory naturally more agreeable to arrogant and dogmatical ecclesiastics than that of Cranmer, who saw no intrinsic difference between bishops and priests; or of Hooker, who thought ecclesiastical superiorities, like civil, subject to variation; or of Stillingfleet, who had lately pointed out the impossibility of ascertaining beyond doubtful conjecture the real constitution of the apostolical church, from the scanty, inconclusive testimonies that either scripture or antiquity furnish. It was therefore enacted in the statute for uniformity, that no person should hold any preferment in England, without having received episcopal ordination. There seems to be little or no objection to this provision, if ordination be considered as a ceremony of admission into a particular society; but according to the theories which both parties had embraced in that age, it conferred a sort of

CHAP XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

mysterious indelible character, which rendered its repetition improper *.

The new act of uniformity succeeded to the utmost wishes of its promoters. It provided that every minister should, before the feast of St. Bartholomew, 1662, publicly declare his assent and consent to every thing contained in the book of common prayer, on pain of being ipso facto deprived of his benefice †. Though even the long parliament had reserved a fifth of the profits to those who were ejected for refusing the covenant, no mercy could be obtained from the still greater bigotry of the present; and a motion to make that allowance to non-conforming ministers was lost by 94 to 87 ‡. The lords had shown a more temperate spirit, and made several alterations of a conciliating nature. They objected to extending the subscription required by the act to schoolmasters. But the commons urged in a conference the force of education, which made it necessary to take care for

* Life of Clarendon, 152. Burnet, 256. Morley, afterwards bishop of Winchester, was engaged just before the restoration in negotiating with the presbyterians. They stuck out for the negative voice of the council of presbyters, and for the validity of their ordinations. Clar. State Papers, 727. He had two schemes to get over the difficulty; one to pass them over sub silentio; the other, a hypothetical re-ordination, on the supposition that something might have been wanting before, as the church of Rome practises about re-baptization. The former is a curious expedient for those who pretended to think presbyterian ordinations really null. Id. 738.

† The day fixed upon suggested a comparison which, though severe, was obvious. A modern writer has observed on this, "They were careful not to remember that the same day, and for the same reason, because the tithes were commonly due at Michaelmas, had been appointed for the former ejectment, when four times as many of the loyal clergy were deprived for fidelity to their sovereign." Southey's Hist. of the Church, ii. 467. That the day was chosen in order to deprive the incumbent of a whole year's tithes, Mr. Southey has learned from Burnet, and it aggravates the cruelty of the proceeding—but where has he found his precedent? The Anglican clergy were ejected for refusing the covenant at no one definite period, as, on recollection, Mr. S. would be aware; nor can I find any one parliamentary ordinance in Husband's Collection that mentions St. Bartholomew's day. There was a precedent indeed in that case, which the government of Charles did not choose to follow. One-fifth of the income had been reserved for the dispossessed incumbents.

‡ Journals, April 26. This may perhaps have given rise to a mistake we find in Neal, 624, that the act of uniformity only passed by 186 to 180. There was no division at all upon the bill except that I have mentioned.

youth. The upper house even inserted a proviso, allowing the king to dispense with the surplice and the sign of the cross; but the commons resolutely withstanding this and every other alteration, they were all given up*. Yet next year, when it was found necessary to pass an act for the relief of those who had been prevented involuntarily from subscribing the declaration in due time, a clause was introduced, declaring that the assent and consent to the book of common prayer required by the said act should be understood only as to practice and obedience, and not otherwise. The duke of York and twelve lay peers protested against this clause, as destructive to the church of England as now established; and the commons vehemently objecting to it, the partisans of moderate councils gave way as before †. When the day of St. Bartholomew came, about 2000 persons resigned their preferments rather than stain their consciences by compliance—an act to which the more liberal Anglicans, after the bitterness of immediate passions had passed away, have accorded that praise which is due to heroic virtue in an enemy. It may justly be said, that the episcopal clergy had set an example of similar magnanimity in refusing to take the covenant. Yet as that was partly of a political nature, and those who were ejected for not taking it might hope to be restored through the success of the king's arms, I do not know that it was altogether so eminent an act of self-devotion as the presbyterian clergy displayed on St. Bartholomew's day. Both of them afford striking contrasts to the pliancy of the English church in the greater question of the preceding century, and bear witness to a remarkable integrity and consistency of principle ‡.

* The report of the conference, Lords' Journals, 7th May, is altogether rather curious.

† Lords' Journals, 25th and 27th July, 1663. Ralph, 58.

‡ Neal, 625—636. Baxter told Burnet, as the latter says, p. 185, that not above 300 would have resigned, had the terms of the king's declaration been adhered to. The blame, he goes on, fell chiefly on Sheldon. But Clarendon was charged with entertaining the presbyterians with good words, while he was giving way to the bishops. See also p. 268. Baxter puts the number of

No one who has any sense of honesty and plain dealing can pretend that Charles did not violate the spirit of his declarations, both that from Breda, and that which he published in October, 1660. It is idle to say, that those declarations were subject to the decision of parliament, as if the crown had no sort of influence in that assembly, nor even any means of making its inclinations known. He had urged them to confirm the act of indemnity, wherein he thought his honour and security concerned: was it less easy to obtain, or at least to ask for their concurrence in a comprehension or toleration of the presbyterian clergy? Yet after mocking those persons with pretended favour, and even offering bishoprics to some of their number, by way of purchasing their defection, the king made no effort to mitigate the provisions of the act of uniformity; and Clarendon strenuously supported them through both houses of parliament *. This behaviour in the minister sprung from real bigotry and dislike of the presbyterians; but Charles was influenced by a very different motive, which had become the secret spring of all his policy. This requires to be fully explained.

Charles, during his misfortunes, had made repeated promises to the pope and the great catholic princes of relaxing the penal laws against his subjects of that religion—promises which he well knew to be the necessary condition of their assistance. And though he never received any succour which could demand the performance of these assurances, his desire to stand well with

the deprived at 1800. Life, 384. And it has generally been reckoned about 2000, though Burnet says it has been much controverted. If indeed we can rely on Calamy's account of the ejected ministers, abridged by Palmer under the title of the Non-conformist's Memorial, the number must have been full 2400. Kennet, however (Register, 807), notices great mistakes of Calamy in respect only to one diocese, that of Peterborough. Probably both in this collection, and in that of Walker on the other side, as in all martyrologies, there are abundant errors; but enough will remain to afford memorable examples of conscientious suffering; and we cannot read without indignation Kennet's endeavours, in the conclusion of this volume, to extenuate the praise of the deprived presbyterians by captious and unfair arguments.

* See Clarendon's feeble attempt to vindicate the king from the charge of breach of faith, 157.

France and Spain, as well as a sense of what was really due to the English catholics, would have disposed him to grant every indulgence which the temper of his people should permit. The laws were highly severe, in some cases sanguinary; they were enacted in very different times, from plausible motives of distrust, which it would be now both absurd and ungrateful to retain. The catholics had been the most strenuous of the late king's adherents, the greatest sufferers for their loyalty. Out of about 500 gentlemen who lost their lives in the royal cause, one-third, it has been said, were of that religion *. Their estates had been selected for confiscation, when others had been admitted to compound. It is, however, certain that after the conclusion of the war, and especially during the usurpation of Cromwell, they declined in general to provoke a government which showed a good deal of connivance towards their religion, by keeping up any connexion with the exiled family †. They had, as was surely very natural, one paramount object in their political conduct, the enjoyment of religious liberty; whatever debt of gratitude they might have owed to Charles I. had been amply paid; and perhaps they might reflect, that he had never scrupled, in his various negotiations with the parliament, to acquiesce in any proscriptive measures suggested against popery. This apparent abandonment, however, of the royal interests excited the displeasure of Clarendon, which was increased by a tendency some of the catholics showed to unite with Lambert, who was understood to be privately of their religion, and by an intrigue carried on in 1659, by the machinations of Buckingham with some priests, to set up the duke of York for the crown. But the

* A list of these published in 1660, contains more than 170 names. Neal, 590.

† Sir Kenelm Digby was supposed to be deep in a scheme that the catholics, in 1649, should support the commonwealth with all their power, in return for liberty of religion. Carte's Letters, i. 216, et post. We find a letter from him to Cromwell in 1656 (Thurloe, iv. 591), with great protestations of duty.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

king retained no resentment of the general conduct of this party, and was desirous to give them a testimony of his confidence, by mitigating the penal laws against their religion. Some steps were taken towards this by the house of lords in the session of 1661, and there seems little doubt that the statutes at least inflicting capital punishment would have been repealed without difficulty, if the catholics had not lost the favourable moment by some disunion among themselves, which the never-ceasing intrigues of the Jesuits contrived to produce *.

There can be no sort of doubt that the king's natural facility, and exemption from all prejudice in favour of established laws, would have led him to afford every indulgence that could be demanded to his catholic subjects, many of whom were his companions or his counsellors, without any propensity towards their religion. But it is morally certain, that during the period of his banishment, he had imbibed, as deeply and seriously as the character of his mind would permit, a persuasion, that if any scheme of christianity were true, it could only be found in the bosom of an infallible church; though he was never reconciled, according to the formal profession which she exacts, till the last hours of his life. The secret, however, of his inclinations, though disguised to the world by the appearance, and probably sometimes more than the appearance, of carelessness and infidelity, could not be wholly concealed from his court. It appears the most natural mode of

* See Lords' Journals, June and July 1661, or extracts from them in Kennet's Register, 469, &c. 620, &c. and 798, where are several other particulars worthy of notice. Clarendon, 143, explains the failure of this attempt at a partial toleration (for it was only meant as to the exercise of religious rites in private houses) by the persevering opposition of the Jesuits to the oath of allegiance, to which the lay catholics, and generally the secular priests, had long ceased to make objection. The house had voted, that the indulgence should not extend to Jesuits, and that they would not alter the oaths of allegiance or supremacy. The Jesuits complained of the distinction taken against them, and asserted, in a printed tract (Kennet, ubi supra), that since 1616 they had been inhibited by their superiors from maintaining the pope's right to depose sovereigns. See also Butler's Mem. of Catholics, ii. 27; iv. 142; and Burnet, i. 194.

accounting for the sudden conversion of the earl of Bristol to popery, which is generally agreed to have been insincere. An ambitious intriguer, holding the post of secretary of state, would not have ventured such a step without some grounds of confidence in his master's wishes; though his characteristic precipitancy hurried him forward to destroy his own hopes. Nor are there wanting proofs that the protestantism of both the brothers was greatly suspected in England before the restoration *. These suspicions acquired strength after the king's return, through his manifest intention not to marry a protestant, and still more through the presumptuous demeanour of the opposite party, which seemed to indicate some surer grounds of confidence than were yet manifest. The new parliament in its first session had made it penal to say that the king was a papist or popishly affected; whence the prevalence of that scandal may be inferred †.

Charles had no assistance to expect, in his scheme of granting a full toleration to the Roman faith, from his chief adviser Clarendon. A repeal of the sanguinary laws, a reasonable connivance, perhaps in some cases a dispensation—to these favours he would have acceded. But in his creed of policy, the legal allowance of any but the established religion was inconsistent with public order, and with the king's ecclesiastical prerogative. This was also a fixed principle with the parliament, whose implacable resentment towards the sectaries had not inclined them to abate in the least of their abhorrence and apprehension of popery. The church of England, distinctly and exclusively, was their rallying-

* The suspicions against Charles were very strong in England before the restoration, so as to alarm his emissaries: "Your master," Mordaunt writes to Ormond, Nov. 10, 1659, "is utterly ruined as to his interest here in whatever party, if this be true." Carte's Letters, ii. 264, and Clar. State Papers, iii. 602. But an anecdote related in Carte's Life of Ormond, ii. 255, and Harris's Lives, v. 54, which has obtained some credit, proves, if true, that he had embraced the Roman catholic religion as early as 1659, so as even to attend mass. This cannot be reckoned out of question; but the tendency of the king's mind before his return to England is to be inferred from all his behaviour. Kennet (Complete Hist. of Eng. iii. 237) plainly insinuates that the project for restoring popery began at the treaty of the Pyrenees; and see his Register, p. 852.

† 13 Car. ii. c. 1.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

point; the crown itself stood only second in their affections; and this has ever since been the characteristic of real toryism. The king, therefore, had recourse to a more subtle and indirect policy. If the terms of conformity had been so far relaxed as to suffer the continuance of the presbyterian clergy in their benefices, there was every reason to expect from their known disposition a determined hostility to all approaches towards popery, and even to its toleration. It was, therefore, the policy of those who had the interests of that cause at heart, to permit no deviation from the act of uniformity, to resist all endeavours at a comprehension of dissenters within the pale of the church, and to make them look up to the king for indulgence in their separate way of worship. They were to be taught that, amenable to the same laws as the Romanists, exposed to the oppression of the same enemies, they must act in concert for a common benefit*. The presbyterian ministers, disheartened at the violence of the parliament, had recourse to Charles, whose affability and fair promises they were loth to distrust, and implored his dispensation for their non-conformity. The king, naturally irresolute, and doubtless sensible that he had made a bad return to those who had contributed so much towards his restoration, was induced, at the strong solicitation of lord Manchester, to promise that he would issue a declaration suspending the execution of the statute for three months. Clarendon, though he had been averse to some of the rigorous clauses inserted in the act of uniformity, was of opinion, that once passed, it ought to be enforced without any connivance, and told the king likewise that it was not in his power to preserve those who did not comply with it from deprivation. Yet, as the king's word had been given, he advised him rather to issue such a declaration than to break his promise. But the bishops vehemently remonstrating against it, and intimating that they would not be parties to a violation of the law, by refusing to institute a clerk

* Burnet, i. 179.

presented by the patron on an avoidance for want of conformity in the incumbent, the king gave way, and resolved to make no kind of concession. It is remarkable, that the noble historian does not seem struck at the enormous and unconstitutional prerogative which a proclamation suspending the statute would have assumed *.

Instead of this very objectionable measure, the king adopted one less arbitrary, and more consonant to his own secret policy. He published a declaration in favour of liberty of conscience, for which no provision had been made so as to redeem the promises he had held forth at his accession. Adverting to these, he declared, that "as in the first place he had been zealous to settle the uniformity of the church of England in discipline, ceremony, and government, and should ever constantly maintain it; so as for what concerns the penalties upon those who, living peaceably, do not conform themselves thereto, he should make it his special care, so far as in him lay, without invading the freedom of parliament, to incline their wisdom next approaching sessions to concur with him in making some such act for that purpose, as may enable him to exercise with a more universal satisfaction that power of dispensing, which he conceived to be inherent in him †."

The aim of this declaration was to obtain from parliament a mitigation at least of all penal statutes in matters of religion, but more to serve the interests of catholic than of protestant non-conformity ‡. Except, however, the allusion to the dispensing power,

* Life of Clarendon, 159. He intimates that this begot a coldness in the bishops towards himself, which was never fully removed. Yet he had no reason to complain of them on his trial. See too Pepys's Diary, Sept. 3, 1662.

† Parl. Hist. 257.

‡ Baxter intimates, 429, that some disagreement arose between the presbyterians and independents as to the toleration of popery, or rather, as he puts it, as to the active concurrence of the protestant dissenters in accepting such a toleration as should include popery. The latter, conformably to their general principles, were favourable to it; but the former would not make themselves parties to any relaxation of the penal laws against the church of Rome, leaving the king to act as he thought fit. By this stiffness it is very probable that they provoked a good deal of persecution from the court, which they might have avoided by falling into its views of a general indulgence.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—75.

which yet is very moderately alleged, there was nothing in it, according to our present opinions, that should have created offence. But the commons, on their meeting in February 1663, presented an address, denying that any obligation lay on the king by virtue of his declaration from Breda, which must be understood to depend on the advice of parliament, and slightly intimating that he possessed no such dispensing prerogative as was suggested. They strongly objected to the whole scheme of indulgence, as the means of increasing sectaries, and rather likely to occasion disturbance than to promote peace *. They complained, in another address, against the release of Calamy, an eminent dissenter, who having been imprisoned for transgressing the act of uniformity, was irregularly set at liberty by the king's personal order †. The king, undeceived as to the disposition of this loyal assembly to concur in his projects of religious liberty, was driven to more tedious and indirect courses in order to compass his end. He had the mortification of finding, that the house of commons had imbibed, partly perhaps in consequence of this declaration, that jealous apprehension of popery, which had caused so much of his father's ill-fortune. On this topic the watchfulness of an English parliament could never be long at rest. The notorious insolence of the Romish priests, who, proud of the court's favour, disdained to respect the laws enough to disguise themselves, provoked an address to the king, that they might be sent out of the kingdom; and bills were brought in to prevent the further growth of popery ‡.

* Parl. Hist. 260. An adjournment had been moved, and lost by 161 to 119. Journals, 25 Feb.

† 19 Feb. Baxter, p. 429.

‡ Journals, 17 and 28 March, 1663. Parl. Hist. 264. Burnet, 274, says the declaration of indulgence was usually ascribed to Bristol, but in fact proceeded from the king, and that the opposition to it in the house was chiefly made by the friends of Clarendon. The latter tells us in his Life, 189, that the king was displeased at the insolence of the Romish party, and gave the judges general orders to convict recusants. The minister and historian either was, or pretended to be, his master's dupe; and if he had any suspicions of what was meant as to religion, as he must surely have had, is far too loyal to hint them. Yet the one circumstance he mentions soon after, that the countess of Castlemaine suddenly declared herself a

Meanwhile, the same remedy, so infallible in the eyes of legislators, was not forgotten to be applied to the opposite disease of protestant dissent. Some had believed, of whom Clarendon seems to have been, that all scruples of tender conscience in the presbyterian clergy being faction and hypocrisy, they would submit very quietly to the law, when they found all their clamour unavailing to obtain a dispensation from it. The resignation of 2000 beneficed ministers at once, instead of extorting praise, rather inflamed the resentment of their bigoted enemies; especially when they perceived that a public and perpetual toleration of separate worship was favoured by part of the court. Rumours of conspiracy and insurrection, sometimes false, but gaining credit from the notorious discontent both of the old commonwealth's party, and of many who had never been on that side, were sedulously propagated in order to keep up the animosity of parliament against the ejected clergy *; and these are recited as the pretext of an act passed in 1664, for suppressing seditious conventicles (the epithet being in this place wantonly and unjustly insulting), which inflicted on all persons above the age of sixteen, present at any religious meeting in other manner than is allowed by the practice of the church of England, where five or more persons besides the household should be present, a penalty of three months' imprisonment for the first offence, of six for the second, and of seven years transportation for the third, on

Catholic, was enough to open his eyes and those of the world.

The Romish partisans assumed the tone of high loyalty, as exclusively characteristic of their religion, but affected, at this time, to use great civility towards the church of England. A book, entitled Philanax Anglicus, published under the name of Bellamy, the second edition of which is in 1663, after a most flattering dedication to Sheldon, launches into virulent abuse of the presbyterians and of the reformation in general, as founded on principles adverse to monarchy. This indeed is common with the ultra or high-church party; but the work in question, though it purports to be written by a clergyman, is manifestly a shaft from the concealed bow of the Palatine Apollo: ὁ δ' ἤϊε νυκτὶ ἐοικώς, τόξ' ὤμοισιν ἔχων.

* See proofs of this in Ralph, 53. Rapin, p. 78. There was in 1663 a trifling insurrection in Yorkshire, which the government wished to have been more serious, so as to afford a better pretext for strong measures, as may be collected from a passage in a letter of Bennet to the duke of Ormond, where he says, "The county

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660–73.

conviction before a single justice of peace *. This act, says Clarendon, if it had been vigorously executed, would no doubt have produced a thorough reformation †. Such is ever the language of the supporters of tyranny; when oppression does not succeed, it is because there has been too little of it. But those who suffered under this statute report very differently as to its vigorous execution. The gaols were filled, not only with ministers who had borne the brunt of former persecutions, but with the laity who attended them; and the hardship was the more grievous, that the act being ambiguously worded, its construction was left to a single magistrate, generally very adverse to the accused.

It is the natural consequence of restrictive laws to aggravate the disaffection which has served as their pretext; and thus to create a necessity for a legislature that will not retrace its steps, to pass still onward in the course of severity. In the next session, accordingly, held at Oxford in 1665, on account of the plague that ravaged the capital, we find a new and more inevitable blow aimed at the fallen church of Calvin. It was enacted, that all persons in holy orders who had not subscribed the act of uniformity should swear that it is not lawful upon any pretence whatsoever to take arms against the king; and that they did abhor that traitorous position of taking arms by his authority against his person, or against those that are commissioned by him, and would not at any time endeavour any alteration of

was in a greater readiness to prevent the disorders than perhaps were to be wished; but it being the effect of their own care, rather than his majesty's commands, it is the less to be censured." Clarendon, 218, speaks of this as an important and extensive conspiracy; and the king dwelt on it in his next speech to the parliament. Parl. Hist. 289.

* 16 Car. ii. c. 4. A similar bill had passed the commons in July 1663, but hung some time in the upper house, and was much debated; the commons sent up a message (an irregular practice of those times) to request their lordships would expedite this and some other bills. The king seems to have been displeased at this delay; for he told them at their prorogation, that he had expected some bills against conventicles and distempers in religion, as well as the growth of popery, and should himself present some at their next meeting. Parl. Hist. 288. Burnet observes, that to empower a justice of peace to convict without a jury, was thought a great breach on the principles of the English constitution, 285. We have seen a little more of this since.

† P. 221.

government in church or state. Those who refused this oath were not only made incapable of teaching in schools, but prohibited from coming within five miles of any city, corporate town, or borough sending members to parliament*.

This infamous statute did not pass without the opposition of the earl of Southampton, lord treasurer, and other peers. But archbishop Sheldon, and several bishops, strongly supported the bill, which had undoubtedly the sanction also of Clarendon's authority†. In the commons, I do not find that any division took place; but an unsuccessful attempt was made to insert the word "legally" before commissioned; the lawyers, however, declared that this word must be understood‡. Some of the non-conforming clergy took the oath upon this construction. But the far greater number refused. Even if they could have borne the solemn assertion of the principles of passive obedience in all possible cases, their scrupulous consciences revolted from a pledge to endeavour no kind of alteration in church and state; an engagement, in its extended sense, irreconcilable with their own principles in religion, and with the civil duties of Englishmen. Yet to quit the towns where they had long been connected, and where alone they had friends and disciples, for a residence in country villages, was an exclusion from the ordinary means of subsistence. The church of England had doubtless her provocations, but she made the retaliation much more than commensurate to the injury. No severity comparable to this cold-blooded persecution had been inflicted by the late powers, even in the ferment and fury of a civil war. Encouraged by this easy triumph, the violent party in the house of commons thought it a good opportunity to give the same test a more sweeping application. A bill was brought in imposing this oath upon the whole nation; that is, I presume, for I do not know that its precise nature is any

* 17 Car. II. c. 2. † Burnet. Baxter, Part III. p. 2. Neal, p. 652.
‡ Burnet. Baxter.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

where explained, on all persons in any public or municipal trust. This, however, was lost on a division by a small majority *.

It has been remarked, that there is no other instance in history, where men have suffered persecution on account of differences, which were admitted by those who inflicted it to be of such small moment. But, supposing this to be true, it only proves, what may perhaps be alleged as a sort of extenuation of these severe laws against non-conformists, that they were merely political, and did not spring from any theological bigotry. Sheldon, indeed, their great promoter, was so free from an intolerant zeal, that he is represented as a man who considered religion chiefly as an engine of policy. The principles of religious toleration had already gained considerable ground over mere bigotry, but were still obnoxious to the arbitrary temper of some politicians, and wanted perhaps experimental proof of their safety to recommend them to the caution of others. There can be no doubt, that all laws against dissent and separation from an established church, those even of the inquisition, have proceeded in a greater or less degree from political motives; and these appear to me far less odious than the disinterested rancour of superstition. The latter is very common among the populace, and sometimes among the clergy. Thus the presbyterians exclaimed against the toleration of popery, not as dangerous to the protestant establishment, but as a sinful compromise with idolatry; language which, after the first heat of the reformation had abated, was never so current in the Anglican church †. In the case of these statutes against non-

* Mr. Locke, in a letter from a person of quality to his friend in the country, printed in 1675 (see it in his works, or in Parliamentary History, vol. iv. Appendix, No. 5), says it was lost by three votes, and mentions the persons. But the numbers in the Journals, October 27, 1665, appear to be 57 to 51.

† A pamphlet, with Baxter's name subscribed, called Fair Warning, or XXV Reasons against Toleration and Indulgence of Popery, 1663, is a pleasant specimen of this *argumentum ab inferno*. "Being there is but one safe way to salvation, do you think that the protestant way is that way, or is it not? If it be not, why do you live in it? If it be, how can you find in your heart to give your subjects liberty to go another way? Can you, in your conscience, give them leave to go on in that course in which, in your con-

conformists under Charles II., revenge and fear seem to have been the unmixed passions that excited the church party against those whose former superiority they remembered, and whose disaffection and hostility it was impossible to doubt *.

A joy so excessive and indiscriminating had accompanied the king's restoration, that no prudence or virtue in his government could have averted that re-action of popular sentiment, which inevitably follows the disappointment of unreasonable hope. Those who lay their account upon blessings, which no course of political administration can bestow, live, according to the poet's comparison, like the sick man, perpetually changing posture in search of the rest which nature denies; the dupes of successive revolutions, sanguine as children with the novelties of politics, a new constitution, a new sovereign, a new minister, and as angry with the playthings when they fall short of their desires. What then was the discontent that must have ensued upon the restoration of Charles II.? The neglected cavalier, the persecuted presbyterian, the disbanded officer, had each his grievance, and felt that he was either in a worse situation than he had formerly been, or at least than he had expected to be. Though there were not the violent acts of military power, which

science, you think you could not be saved?" Baxter, however, does not mention this little book in his life, nor does he there speak violently about the toleration of Romanists.

* The clergy had petitioned the house of commons in 1664, inter alia, That for the better observation of the Lord's day, and for the promoting of conformity, you would be pleased to advance the pecuniary mulct of twelve pence for each absence from divine service in proportion to the degree, quality, and ability of the delinquent; that so the penalty may be of force sufficient to conquer the obstinacy of the non-conformists Wilkin's Concilia, iv. 580. Letters from Sheldon to the commissary of the Diocese of Canterbury, in 1669 and 1670, occur in the same collection, p. 588, 589, directing him to inquire about conventicles, and if they cannot be restrained by ecclesiastical authority, to apply to the next justice of peace in order to put them down. A proclamation appears also from the king, injoining magistrates to do this. In 1673, the archbishop writes a circular to his suffragans, directing them to proceed against such as keep schools without licence. P. 593.

See in the Somers Tracts, vii. 586, a "true and faithful narrative" of the severities practised against non-conformists about this time. Baxter's Life is also full of proofs of persecution; but the most complete register is in Calamy's account of the ejected clergy.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

had struck every man's eyes under Cromwell, it cannot be said that personal liberty was secure, or that the magistrates had not considerable power of oppression, and that pretty unsparingly exercised towards those suspected of disaffection. The religious persecution was not only far more severe than it was ever during the commonwealth, but perhaps more extensively felt than under Charles I. Though the monthly assessments for the support of the army ceased soon after the restoration, several large grants were made by parliament, especially during the Dutch war; and it appears, that in the first seven years of Charles II. the nation paid a greater sum in taxes than in any preceding period of the same duration. If then the people compared the national fruits of their expenditure, what a contrast they found, how deplorable a falling off in public honour and dignity since the days of the magnanimous usurper*! They saw with indignation, that Dunkirk, acquired by Cromwell, had been chaffered away by Charles (a transaction justifiable perhaps on the mere balance of profit and loss, but certainly derogatory to the pride of a great nation); that a war needlessly commenced had been carried on with much display of bravery in our seamen and their commanders, but no sort of good conduct in the government; and that a petty northern potentate, who would have trembled at the name of the commonwealth, had broken his faith towards us out of mere contempt of our inefficiency.

These discontents were heightened by the private conduct of Charles, if the life of a king can in any sense be private, by a dissoluteness and contempt of moral opinion, which a nation, still in the main grave and religious, could not endure. The austere character of the last king had repressed to a considerable degree the common vices of a court, which had gone to a scan-

* Pepys observes, 12 July, 1667, "how every body now-a-days reflect upon Oliver and commend him, what brave things he did, and made all the neighbour princes fear him."

dalous excess under James. But the cavaliers in general affected a profligacy of manners, as their distinction from the fanatical party, which gained ground among those who followed the king's fortunes in exile, and became more flagrant after the restoration. Anecdotes of court excesses, which required not the aid of exaggeration, were in daily circulation through the coffee-houses; those who cared least about the vice, not failing to inveigh against the scandal. It is in the nature of a limited monarchy, that men should censure very freely the private lives of their princes, as being more exempt from that immoral servility which blinds itself to the distinctions of right and wrong in elevated rank. And as a voluptuous court will always appear prodigal, because all expense in vice is needless, they had the mortification of believing that the public revenues were wasted on the vilest associates of the king's debauchery. We are, however, much indebted to the memory of Barbara, duchess of Cleveland, Louisa, duchess of Portsmouth, and Mrs. Eleanor Gwyn. We owe a tribute of gratitude to the Mays, the Killigrews, the Chiffinches, and the Grammonts. They played a serviceable part in ridding the kingdom of its besotted loyalty. They saved our forefathers from the star-chamber, and the high-commission court; they laboured in their vocation against standing armies and corruption; they pressed forward the great ultimate security of English freedom, the expulsion of the house of Stuart *.

* The Memoires de Grammont are known to every body, and are almost unique in their kind, not only for the grace of their style and the vivacity of their pictures, but for the happy ignorance in which the author seems to have lived, that any one of his readers could imagine that there are such things as virtue and principle in the world. In the delirium of thoughtless voluptuousness they resemble some of the memoirs about the end of Louis XV.'s reign, and somewhat later; though I think, even in these, there is generally some effort, here and there, at moral censure, or some affectation of sensibility. *They*, indeed, have always an awful moral; and in the light portraits of the court of Versailles, such, sometimes, as we might otherwise almost blush to peruse, we have before us the hand-writing on the wall, the winter whirlwind, hushed in its grim repose, and expecting its prey, the vengeance of an oppressed people and long-forbearing Deity. No such retribution fell on the courtiers of Charles II.; but they earned in their own age, what has descended to posterity, though possibly very indifferent to themselves, the disgust and aversion of all that was respectable among mankind.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

Among the ardent loyalists, who formed the bulk of the present parliament, a certain number of a different class had been returned, not sufficient of themselves to constitute a very effective minority, but of considerable importance as a nucleus, round which the lesser factions that circumstances should produce might be gathered. Long sessions, and a long continuance of the same parliament, have an inevitable tendency to generate a systematic opposition to the measures of the crown, which it requires all vigilance and management to hinder from becoming too powerful. The sense of personal importance, the desire of occupation in business, a very characteristic propensity of the English gentry, the various inducements of private passion and interest, bring forward so many active spirits, that it was, even in that age, as reasonable to expect that the ocean should always be tranquil, as that a house of commons should continue long to do the king's bidding, with any kind of unanimity or submission. Nothing can more demonstrate the incompatibility of the Tory scheme, which would place the virtual and effective, as well as nominal, administration of the executive government in the sole hands of the crown, with the existence of a representative assembly, than the history of this long parliament of Charles II. None has ever been elected in circumstances so favourable for the crown, none ever brought with it such high notions of prerogative; yet in this assembly, a party soon grew up, and gained strength in every successive year, which the king could neither direct nor subdue. The methods of bribery, to which the court had largely recourse, though they certainly diverted some of the measures, and destroyed the character of this opposition, proved in the end like those dangerous medicines, which palliate the instant symptoms of a disease that they aggravate. The leaders of this parliament were, in general, very corrupt men, but they knew better than to quit the power which made them worth purchase. Thus the house of commons matured and extended those rights of inquiring into and controlling the management of pub-

lic affairs, which had caused so much dispute in former times; and as the exercise of these functions became more habitual, and passed with little or no open resistance from the crown, the people learned to reckon them unquestionable, or even fundamental, and were prepared for that more perfect settlement of the constitution on a more republican basis, which took place after the revolution. The reign of Charles II., though displaying some stretches of arbitrary power, and threatening a great deal more, was, in fact, the transitional state between the ancient and modern schemes of the English constitution; between that course of government where the executive power, so far as executive, was very little bounded except by the laws, and that where it can only be carried on, even within its own province, by the consent and co-operation, in a great measure, of the parliament.

The commons took advantage of the pressure, which the war with Holland brought on the administration, to establish two very important principles on the basis of their sole right of taxation. The first of these was the appropriation of supplies to limited purposes. This indeed was so far from an absolute novelty, that it found precedents in the reigns of Richard II. and Henry IV., a period when the authority of the house of commons was at a very high pitch. No subsequent instance, I believe, was on record till the year 1624, when the last parliament of James I., at the king's own suggestion, directed their supply for the relief of the Palatinate, to be paid into the hands of commissioners named by themselves. There were cases of a similar nature in the year 1641, which, though of course they could no longer be upheld as precedents, had accustomed the house to the idea, that they had something more to do than simply to grant money, without any security or provision for its application. In the session of 1665, accordingly, an enormous supply, as it then appeared, of 1,250,000l., after one of double that amount in the preceding year, having been voted for the Dutch war*, sir George Downing,

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

one of the tellers of the exchequer, introduced into the subsidy bill a proviso, that the money raised by virtue of that act should be applicable only to the purposes of the war. Clarendon inveighed with fury against this, as an innovation derogatory to the honour of the crown; but the king himself, having listened to some who persuaded him that the money would be advanced more easily upon this better security for speedy re-payment, insisted that it should not be thrown out †. That supplies, granted by parliament, are only to be expended for particular objects specified by itself, became, from this time, an undisputed principle, recognized by frequent and, at length, constant practice. It drew with it the necessity of estimates regularly laid before the house of commons; and by exposing the management of the public revenues, has given to parliament, not only a real and effective control over an essential branch of the executive administration, but, in some measure, rendered them partakers in it ‡.

It was a consequence of this right of appropriation, that the house of commons should be able to satisfy itself as to the expenditure of their monies in the services for which they were voted. But they might claim a more extensive function, as naturally derived from their power of opening and closing the public purse, that of investigating the wisdom, faithfulness and economy with which their grants had been expended. For this too there was some show of precedents in the ancient days of Henry IV.; but what undoubtedly had most influence was the recollection, that during the late civil war, and in the times of the commonwealth, the house had superintended, through its committees, the whole

* This was carried on a division by 172 to 102. Journals, 25 November 1665. It was to be raised "in a regulated subsidiary way, reducing the same to a certainty in all counties, so as no person, for his real or personal estate, be exempted." They seem to have had some difficulty in raising this enormous subsidy. Parliamentary History, 305.

† 17 Car. ii. c. 1. The same clause is repeated next year, and has become regular.

‡ Life of Clarendon, p. 315. Hatsell's Precedents, iii. 80.

receipts and issues of the national treasury. This had not been much practised since the restoration. But in the year 1666, the large cost and indifferent success of the Dutch war begetting vehement suspicions, not only of profuseness, but of diversion of the public money from its proper purposes, the house appointed a committee to inspect the accounts of the officers of the navy, ordnance and stores, which were laid before them, as it appears, by the king's direction. This committee after some time having been probably found deficient in powers, and particularly being incompetent to administer an oath, the house determined to proceed in a more novel and vigorous manner, and sent up a bill, nominating commissioners to inspect the public accounts, who were to possess full powers of inquiry, and to report such as they should find to have broken their trust. The immediate object of this inquiry, so far as appears from lord Clarendon's mention of it, was rather to discover whether the treasurers had not issued money without legal warrant, than to enter upon the details of its expenditure. But that minister, bigoted to his Tory creed of prerogative, thought it the highest presumption for a parliament to intermeddle with the course of government. He spoke of this bill as an encroachment and usurpation that had no limits, and pressed the king to be firm in his resolution never to consent to it *. Nor was the king less averse to a parliamentary commission of this nature, as well from a jealousy of its interference from his prerogative, as from a consciousness, which Clarendon himself suggests, that great sums had been issued by his orders, which could not be put in any public account; that is, for we can give no other interpretation, that the monies granted for the war, and appropriated by statute to that service, had been diverted to supply his wasteful and debauched course of pleasures †. It was

* Life of Clarendon, p. 368. Burnet observes it was looked upon at the time as a great innovation, p. 335.

† Pepys's Diary has lately furnished some things worthy to be extracted. "Mr. W. and I by water to Whitehall, and there at sir George Carteret's lodgings sir William Coventry met, and we did debate the whole business of our accounts to the parliament; where it appears to us that the

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

the suspicion, or rather private knowledge of this criminal breach of trust, which had led to the bill in question. But such a slave was Clarendon to his narrow prepossessions, that he would rather see the dissolute excesses which he abhorred suck nourishment from that revenue which had been allotted to maintain the national honour and interests, and which, by its deficiencies thus aggravated, had caused even in this very year the navy to be laid up, and the coasts to be left defenceless, than suffer them to be restrained by the only power to which thoughtless luxury would submit. He opposed the bill therefore in the house of lords, as he confesses, with much of that intemperate warmth which distinguished him, and with a contempt of the lower house and its authority, as imprudent in respect to his own interests, as it was unbecoming and unconstitutional. The king prorogued parliament while the measure was depending; but in hopes to pacify the house of commons, promised to issue a commission under the great seal for the examination of public accountants*; an expedient which was not likely to bring more to light than suited his purpose. But it does not appear that this royal commission, though actually prepared and sealed, was ever carried into effect; for in the ensuing session, the great minister's downfall having

charge of the war from Sept. 1, 1664, to this Michaelmas will have been but 3,200,000l. and we have paid in that time somewhat about 2,200,000l., so that we owe about 900,000l.; but our method of accounting, though it cannot, I believe, be far wide from the mark, yet will not abide a strict examination, if the parliament should be troublesome. Here happened a pretty question of sir William Coventry, whether this account of ours will not put my lord treasurer to a difficulty to tell what is become of all the money the parliament have given in this time for the war, which hath amounted to about 4,000,000l., which nobody there could answer; but I perceive they did doubt what his answer could be." Sept. 23, 1666.—The money granted the king for the war he afterwards, Oct. 10, reckons at 5,590,000l., and the debt 900,000l. The charge stated only at 3,200,000l. "So what is become of all this sum, 2,390,000l.!" He mentions afterwards, Oct. 8, the proviso in the poll-tax bill, that there shall be a committee of nine persons to have the inspection on oath of all the accounts of the money given and spent for the war; "which makes the king and court mad, the king having given order to my lord chamberlain to send to the playhouses and brothels, to bid all the parliament men that were there to go to the parliament presently; but it was carried against the court by 30 or 40 voices." It was thought, he says, Dec. 12, that above 400,000l. had gone into the privy purse since the war.

* Life of Clarendon, p. 392.

occurred in the mean time, the house of commons brought forward again their bill, which passed into a law. It invested the commissioners therein nominated with very extensive and extraordinary powers, both as to auditing public accounts, and investigating the frauds that had taken place in the expenditure of money, and employment of stores. They were to examine upon oath, to summon inquests, if they thought fit, to commit persons disobeying their orders to prison without bail, to determine finally on the charge and discharge of all accountants; the barons of the exchequer, upon a certificate of their judgment, were to issue process for recovering money to the king's use, as if there had been an immediate judgment of their own court. Reports were to be made of the commissioners' proceedings from time to time to the king and to both houses of parliament. None of the commissioners were members of either house. The king, as may be supposed, gave way very reluctantly to this interference with his expenses. It brought to light a great deal of abuse and misapplication of the public revenues, and contributed doubtless in no small degree to destroy the house's confidence in the integrity of government, and to promote a more jealous watchfulness of the king's designs *. At the next meeting of parliament, in October, 1669, sir George Carteret, treasurer of the navy, was expelled the house, for issuing money without legal warrant.

Sir Edward Hyde, whose influence had been almost annihilated in the last years of Charles I. through the inveterate hatred of the queen and those who surrounded her, acquired by degrees the entire confidence of the young king, and baffled all the intrigues of his enemies. Guided by him, in all serious matters, during the latter years of his exile, Charles followed his counsels almost im-

* 19 and 20 Car. II. c. 1. Burnet, p. 374. They reported unaccounted balances of 1,509,161l. besides much that was questionable in the payments. But, according to Ralph, p. 177, the commissioners had acted with more technical rigour than equity, surcharging the accountants for all sums not expended since the war began, though for the purposes of preparation.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

plicitly in the difficult crisis of the restoration. The office of chancellor and the title of earl of Clarendon were the proofs of the king's favour; but in effect, through the indolence and ill health of Southampton, as well as their mutual friendship, he was the real minister of the crown *. By the clandestine marriage of his daughter with the duke of York, he changed one brother from an enemy to a sincere and zealous friend, without forfeiting the esteem and favour of the other. And though he was wise enough to dread the invidiousness of such an elevation, yet for several years it by no means seemed to render his influence less secure †.

* Burnet, p. 130. Southampton left all the business of the treasury, according to Burnet, p. 131, in the hands of sir Philip Warwick, "a weak but incorrupt man." The king, he says, chose to put up with his contradiction rather than make him popular by dismissing him. But in fact, as we see by Clarendon's instance, the king retained his ministers long after he was displeased with them. Southampton's remissness and slowness, notwithstanding his integrity, Pepys says, was the cause of undoing the nation as much as any thing; "yet if I knew all the difficulties he has lain under, and his instrument sir Philip Warwick, I might be of another mind." May 16, 1667.—He was willing to have done something, Clarendon tells us, p. 415, to gratify the presbyterians, on which account the bishops thought him not enough affected to the church. His friend endeavours to extenuate this heinous sin of tolerant principles.

† The behaviour of lord Clarendon on this occasion was so extraordinary, that no credit could have been given to any other account than his own. The duke of York, he says, informed the king of the affection and friendship that had been long between him and the young lady; that they had been long contracted, and that she was with child; and therefore requested his majesty's leave that he might publicly marry her. The marquis of Ormond by the king's order communicated this to the chancellor, who "broke out into an immoderate passion against the wickedness of his daughter; and said with all imaginable earnestness, that as soon as he came home he would turn her out of his house as a strumpet to shift for herself, and would never see her again. They told him that his passion was too violent to administer good counsel to him; that they thought that the duke was married to his daughter, and that there were other measures to be taken, than those which the disorder he was in had suggested to him. Whereupon he fell into new commotions, and said, If that were true, he was well prepared to advise what was to be done: that he had much rather his daughter should be the duke's whore than his wife: in the former case, nobody could blame him for the resolution he had taken, for he was not obliged to keep a whore for the greatest prince alive; and the indignity to himself he would submit to the good pleasure of God. But if there were any reason to suspect the other, he was ready to give a positive judgment, in which he hoped their lordships would concur with him, that the king should immediately cause the woman *to be sent to the Tower and cast into a dungeon*, under so strict a guard that no person living should be admitted to come to her; and then that *an act of parliament should be immediately passed for cutting off her head, to which he would not only give his consent, but would very willingly be the first man that should propose it.* And whoever knew the man, will believe

Both in their characters, however, and turn of thinking, there was so little conformity between Clarendon and his master, that

that he said all this very heartily." Lord Southampton, he proceeds to inform us, on the king's entering the room at the time, said, very naturally, that the chancellor was mad, and had proposed such extravagant things, that he was no more to be consulted with. This however did not bring him to his senses; for he repeated his strange proposal of "sending her presently to the Tower, and the rest;" imploring the king to take this course, as the only expedient that could free him from the evils that this business would otherwise bring upon him.

That any man of sane intellects should fall into such an extravagance of passion, is sufficiently wonderful; that he should sit down in cool blood several years afterwards to relate it, is still more so; and perhaps we shall carry our candour to an excess, if we do not set down the whole of this scene to overacted hypocrisy. Charles II., we may be very sure, could see it in no other light. And here I must take notice, by the way, of the singular observation the worthy editor of Burnet has made: "King Charles's conduct in this business was excellent throughout, that of Clarendon *worthy an ancient Roman.*" We have indeed a Roman precedent for subduing the sentiments of nature, rather than permitting a daughter to incur disgrace through the passions of the great; but I think Virginius would not quite have understood the feelings of Clarendon. Such virtue was more like what Montesquieu calls, l'heroisme de l'esclavage, and was just fit for the court of Gondar. But with all this violence that he records of himself, he suppresses great part of the truth: "The king (he says) afterwards spoke every day about it, and told the chancellor that he must behave himself wisely, for that the thing was remediless; and that his majesty knew that they were married, which would quickly appear to all men, who knew that nothing could be done upon it. In this time the chancellor had conferred with his daughter, without any thing of indulgence, and not only discovered that they were unquestionably married, but *by whom, and who were present at it, who would be ready to avow it;* which pleased him not, though it diverted him from using some of that rigour which he intended. And he saw no other remedy could be applied, but that which he had proposed to the king, who thought of nothing like it." Life of Clarendon, 29 et post.

Every one would conclude from this, that a marriage had been solemnized, if not before their arrival in England, yet before the chancellor had this conference with his daughter. It appears, however, from the duke of York's declaration in the books of the privy council, quoted by Ralph, p. 40, that he was contracted to Anne Hyde on the 24th of November, 1659, at Breda; and after that time lived with her as his wife, though very secretly; he married her 3d Sept. 1660, according to the English ritual, lord Ossory giving her away. The first child was born Oct. 22, 1660. Now whether the contract were sufficient to constitute a valid marriage, will depend on two things; first, upon the law existing at Breda; secondly, upon the applicability of what is commonly called the rule of the lex loci, to a marriage between such persons according to the received notions of English lawyers in that age. But, even admitting all this, it is still manifest that Clarendon's expressions point to an actual celebration, and are consequently intended to mislead the reader. Certain it is, that at the time the contract seems to have been reckoned only an honorary obligation. James tells us himself (Macpherson's Extracts, p. 17) that he promised to marry her; and "though when he asked the king for his leave, he refused and dissuaded him from it, yet at last he opposed it no more, and the duke married her privately, and owned it some time after." His biographer, writing from his own manuscript, adds, "it may well be supposed that my lord chancellor did his part, but with great caution and circumspection, to soften the king in that matter which in every respect seemed so much for his own advantage." Life of James, 387. And Pepys

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

the continuance of his ascendancy can only be attributed to the power of early habit over the most thoughtless tempers. But it rarely happens that kings do not ultimately shake off these fetters, and release themselves from the sort of subjection which they feel in acting always by the same advisers. Charles, acute himself and cool-headed, could not fail to discover the passions and prejudices of his minister, even if he had wanted the suggestions of others, who, without reasoning on such broad principles as Clarendon, were perhaps his superiors in judging of temporary business. He wished too, as is common, to depreciate a wisdom, and to suspect a virtue, which seemed to reproach his own vice and folly. Nor had Clarendon spared those remonstrances against the king's course of life, which are seldom borne without impatience or resentment. He was strongly suspected by the king as well as his courtiers, though, according to his own account, without any reason, of having promoted the marriage of miss Stewart with the duke of Richmond *. But above all, he stood in the way of projects, which, though still probably unsettled, were floating

inserts in his Diary, Feb. 23, 1661, "Mr. H. told me how my lord chancellor had lately got the duke of York and duchess, and her woman, my lord Ossory and a doctor, to make oath before most of the judges of the kingdom, concerning all the circumstances of their marriage. And, in fine, it is confessed, that they were not fully married till about a month or two before she was brought to bed; but that they were contracted long before, and [were married] time enough for the child to be legitimate. But I do not hear that it was put to the judges to determine that it was so or not." He had said before that lord Sandwich told him, 17th Oct. 1660, "the king wanted him [the duke] to marry her, but he would not." This seems at first sight inconsistent with what James says himself. But at this time, though the private marriage had really taken place, he had been persuaded by a most infamous conspiracy of some profligate courtiers, that the lady was of a licentious character, and that Berkeley, afterwards lord Falmouth, had enjoyed her favours. Life of Clarendon, 33. It must be presumed, that those men knew only of a contract which they thought he could break. Hamilton, in the Memoirs of Grammont, speaks of this transaction with his usual levity, though the parties showed themselves as destitute of spirit as of honour and humanity. Clarendon, we must believe (and the most favourable hypothesis for him is to give up his veracity), would not permit his daughter to be made the victim of a few perjured debauchees, and of her husband's fickleness or credulity.

* Hamilton mentions this as the current rumour of the court, and Burnet has done the same. But Clarendon himself denies that he had any concern in it, or any acquaintance with the parties. He wrote in too humble a strain to the king on the subject. Life of Clar. p. 454.

in the king's mind. No one was more zealous to uphold the prerogative at a height where it must overtop and chill with its shadow the privileges of the people. No one was more vigilant to limit the functions of parliament, or more desirous to see them confiding and submissive. But there were landmarks which he could never be brought to transgress. He would prepare the road for absolute monarchy, but not introduce it; he would assist to batter down the walls, but not to march into the town. His notions of what the English constitution ought to be appear evidently to have been derived from the times of Elizabeth and James I., to which he frequently refers with approbation. In the history of that age, he found much that could not be reconciled to any liberal principles of government. But there were two things which he certainly did not find; a revenue capable of meeting an extraordinary demand without parliamentary supply, and a standing army. Hence he took no pains, if he did not even, as is asserted by Burnet, discourage the proposal of others, to obtain such a fixed annual revenue for the king on the restoration, as would have rendered it very rarely necessary to have recourse to parliament*, and did not advise the keeping up any part of the army. That a few troops were retained, was owing to the duke of York. Nor did he go the length that was expected

* Burnet says that Southampton had come into a scheme of obtaining 2,000,000l. as the annual revenue, which was prevented by Clarendon, lest it should put the king out of need of parliaments. This the king found out, and hated him mortally for it. P. 223. It is the fashion to discredit all Burnet says. But observe what we may read in Pepys: "Sir W. Coventry did tell me it as the wisest thing that was ever said to the king by any statesman of his time, and it was by my lord treasurer that is dead, whom, I find, he takes for a very great statesman, that when the king did show himself forward for passing the act of indemnity, he did advise the king that he would hold his hand in doing it, till he had got his power restored that had been diminished by the late times, and his revenue settled in such a manner as he might depend upon himself without resting upon parliaments, and then pass it. But my lord chancellor, who thought he could have the command of parliaments for ever, because for the king's sake they were awhile willing to grant all the king desired, did press for its being done; and so it was, and the king from that time able to do nothing with the parliament almost." March 20, 1669. Rari quippe boni! Neither Southampton nor Coventry make the figure in this extract we should wish to find; yet who were their superiors for integrity and patriotism under Charles II.?

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

in procuring the repeal of all the laws that had been enacted in the long parliament *.

These omissions sank deep in Charles's heart, especially when he found that he had to deal with an unmanageable house of commons, and must fight the battle for arbitrary power; which might have been achieved, he thought, without a struggle by his minister. There was still less hope of obtaining any concurrence from Clarendon in the king's designs as to religion. Though he does not once hint at it in his writings, there can be little doubt that he must have suspected his master's inclinations towards the church of Rome. The duke of York considered this as the most likely cause of his remissness in not sufficiently advancing the prerogative †. He was always opposed to the various schemes of a general indulgence towards popery, not only from his strongly protestant principles, and his dislike of all toleration, but from a prejudice against the body of the English catholics, whom he thought to arrogate more on the ground of merit than they could claim. That interest, so powerful at court, was decidedly hostile to the chancellor; for the duke of York, who strictly adhered to him, if he had not kept his change of religion wholly secret, does not at least seem to have hitherto formed any avowed connexion with the popish party ‡.

This estrangement of the king's favour is sufficient to account for Clarendon's loss of power; but his entire ruin was rather ac-

* Macpherson's Extracts from Life of James, 17, 18. Compare Innes's Life of James, published by Clarke, i. 391. 393. In the former work it is said that Clarendon, upon Venner's insurrection, advised that the guards should not be disbanded. But this seems to be a mistake in copying: for Clarendon read the duke of York. Pepys, however, who heard all the gossip of the town, mentions the year after that the chancellor thought of raising an army, with the duke as general. Dec. 22, 1661.

† Ibid.

‡ The earl of Bristol, with all his constitutional precipitancy, made a violent attack on Clarendon, by exhibiting articles of treason against him in the house of lords in 1663; believing, no doubt, that the schemes of the intriguers were more mature, and the king more alienated than was really the case, and thus disgraced himself at court instead of his enemy. Parl. Hist. 276. Life of Clar. 209. Before this time Pepys had heard that the chancellor had lost the king's favour, and that Bristol, with Buckingham and two or three more, ruled him. May 15, 1663.

complished by a strange coalition of enemies, which his virtues, or his errors and infirmities, had brought into union. The cavaliers hated him on account of the act of indemnity, and the presbyterians for that of uniformity. Yet the latter were not in general so eager in his prosecution as the others *. But he owed great part of the severity with which he was treated to his own pride and ungovernable passionateness, by which he had rendered very eminent men in the house of commons implacable, and to the

* A motion to refer the heads of charge against Clarendon to a committee was lost by 194 to 128, Seymour and Osborne telling the noes, Birch and Clarges the ayes. Commons' Journals, Nov. 6, 1667. These names show how parties ran, Seymour and Osborne being high-flying cavaliers, and Birch a presbyterian. A motion that he be impeached for treason on the first article was lost by 172 to 103; the two former tellers for the ayes: Nov. 9. In the Harleian MS. 881, we have a copious account of the debates on this occasion, and a transcript in No. 1218. Sir Heneage Finch spoke much against the charge of treason; Maynard seems to have done the same. A charge of secret correspondence with Cromwell was introduced merely ad invidiam, the prosecutors admitting that it was pardoned by the act of indemnity, but wishing to make the chancellor plead that: Maynard and Hampden opposed it, and it was given up out of shame without a vote. Vaughan, afterwards chief justice, argued, that counselling the king to govern by a standing army was treason at common law, and seems to dispute what Finch laid down most broadly, that there can be no such thing as a common law treason; relying on a passage in Glanvil, where "seductio domini regis" is said to be treason. Maynard stood up for the opposite doctrine. Waller and Vaughan argued, that the sale of Dunkirk was treason, but the article passed without declaring it to be so; nor would the word have appeared probably in the impeachment, if a young lord Vaughan had not asserted that he could prove Clarendon to have betrayed the king's councils, on which an article to that effect was carried by 161 to 89. Garraway and Littleton were forward against the chancellor, but Coventry seems to have taken no great part. See Pepys's Diary, Dec. 3d and 6th, 1667. Baxter also says, that the presbyterians were by no means strenuous against Clarendon, but rather the contrary, fearing that worse might come for the country, as giving him credit for having kept off military government. Baxter's Life, part iii. 21. This is very highly to the honour of that party, whom he had so much oppressed, if not betrayed. "It was a notable providence of God, he says, that this man, who had been the great instrument of state, and done almost all, and had dealt so cruelly with the non-conformists, should thus by his own friends be cast out and banished, while those that he had persecuted were the most moderate in his cause, and many for him. And it was a great ease that befel the good people throughout the land by his dejection. For his way was to decoy men into conspiracies, or to pretend plots, and upon the rumour of a plot the innocent people of many countries were laid in prison, so that no man knew when he was safe. Whereas since then, though laws have been made more and more severe, yet a man knoweth a little better what he is to expect, when it is by a law that he is to be tried." Sham plots there seem to have been, but it is not reasonable to charge Clarendon with inventing them. Ralph, 122.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

language he had used as to the dignity and privileges of the house itself*. A sense of this eminent person's great talents, as well as general integrity and conscientiousness on the one hand, an indignation at the king's ingratitude, and the profligate counsels of those who supplanted him on the other, have led most writers to overlook his faults in administration, and to treat all the articles of accusation against him as frivolous or unsupported. It is doubtless impossible to justify the charge of high treason, on which he was impeached; but there are matters that never were or could be disproved, and our own knowledge enables us to add such grave accusations as must show Clarendon's unfitness for the government of a free country †.

1. It is the fourth article of his impeachment, that he had "advised and procured divers of his majesty's subjects to be imprisoned against law, in remote islands, garrisons, and other places,

* In his wrath against the proviso inserted by sir George Downing, as above mentioned, in the bill of supply, Clarendon told him, as he confesses, that the king could never be well served while fellows of his condition were admitted to speak as much as they had a mind; and that in the best times such presumptions had been punished with imprisonment by the lords of the council, without the king's taking notice of it, 321. The king was naturally displeased at this insolent language towards one of his servants, a man who had filled an eminent station, and done services, for a suggestion intended to benefit the revenue. And it was a still more flagrant affront to the house of commons, of which Downing was a member, and where he had proposed this clause, and induced the house to adopt it.

Coventry told Pepys "many things about the chancellor's dismissal, not fit to be spoken, and yet not any unfaithfulness to the king, but instar omnium, that he was so great at the council-board, and in the administration of matters, there was no room for any body to propose any remedy for what was amiss, or to compass any thing, though never so good for the kingdom, unless approved of by the chancellor; he managing all things with that greatness which now will be removed, that the king may have the benefit of others' advice." Sept. 2, 1667. His own memoirs are full of proofs of this haughtiness and intemperance. He set himself against sir William Coventry, and speaks of a man as able and virtuous as himself, with marked aversion. See too Life of James, 398. Coventry, according to this writer, 431, was the chief actor in Clarendon's impeachment, but this seems to be a mistake, though he was certainly desirous of getting him out of place.

The king, Clarendon tells us, 438, pretended that the anger of parliament was such, and their power too, as it was not in his power to save him. The fallen minister desired him not to fear the power of parliament, "which was more or less, or nothing, as he pleased to make it." So preposterous as well as unconstitutional a way of talking could not but aggravate his unpopularity with that great body he pretended to contemn.

† State Trials, vi. 318. Parl. Hist.

thereby to prevent them from the benefit of the law, and to produce precedents for the imprisoning any other of his majesty's subjects in like manner." This was undoubtedly true. There was some ground for apprehension on the part of the government from those bold spirits who had been accustomed to revolutions, and drew encouragement from the vices of the court, and the embarrassments of the nation. Ludlow and Algernon Sidney, about the year 1665, had projected an insurrection, the latter soliciting Louis XIV. and the pensionary of Holland for aid*. Many officers of the old army, Wildman, Creed, and others, suspected, perhaps justly, of such conspiracies, had been illegally detained in prison for several years, and only recovered their liberty on Clarendon's dismissal†. He had too much encouraged the hateful race of informers, though he admits that it had grown a trade by which men got money, and that many were committed on slight grounds ‡. Thus colonel Hutchinson died in the close confinement of a remote prison, far more probably on account of his share in the death of Charles I., from which the act of indemnity had discharged him, than any just pretext of treason §. It was difficult to obtain a habeas corpus from some of the judges in this reign. But to elude that provision by removing men out of the kingdom, was such an offence against the constitution, as may be thought enough to justify the impeachment of any minister.

2. The first article, and certainly the most momentous, asserts, "That the earl of Clarendon hath designed a standing army to be raised, and to govern the kingdom thereby, and advised the king to dissolve this present parliament, to lay aside all thoughts

* Ludlow, iii. 118, 165, et post. Clarendon's Life, 290. Burnet, 226. Œuvres de Louis XIV. ii. 204.

† Harris's Lives, v. 28. Biogr. Brit. art. *Harrington*. Life of James, 396. Somers Tracts, vii. 530. 534.

‡ See Kennet's Register, 757, Ralph, 78 et post, Harris's Lives, v. 182, for the proofs of this.

§ Mem. of Hutchinson, 303. It seems, however, that he was suspected of some concern with an intended rising in 1663, though nothing was proved against him. Miscellanea Aulica, 319.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

of parliaments for the future, to govern by a military power, and to maintain the same by free quarter and contribution." This was prodigiously exaggerated; yet there was some foundation for a part of it. In the disastrous summer of 1667, when the Dutch fleet had insulted our coasts, and burned our ships in the Medway, the exchequer being empty, it was proposed in council to call together immediately the parliament, which then stood prorogued to a day at the distance of some months. Clarendon, who feared the hostility of the house of commons towards himself, and had pressed the king to dissolve it, maintained that they could not legally be summoned before the day fixed; and, with a strange inconsistency, attaching more importance to the formalities of law than to its essence, advised that the counties where the troops were quartered should be called upon to send in provisions, and those where there were no troops to contribute money, which should be abated out of the next taxes. And he admits that he might have used the expression of raising contributions, as in the late civil war. This unguarded and unwarrantable language, thrown out at the council-table where some of his enemies were sitting, soon reached the ears of the commons, and, mingled up with the usual misrepresentations of faction, was magnified into a charge of high treason *.

3. The eleventh article charged lord Clarendon with having advised and effected the sale of Dunkirk to the French king, being part of his majesty's dominions, for no greater value than the ammunition, artillery, and stores were worth. The latter part is generally asserted to be false. The sum received is deemed the utmost that Louis would have given, who thought he had made a

* Life of Clarendon, 424. Pepys says, the parliament was called together "against the duke of York's mind flatly, who did rather advise the king to raise money as he pleased; and against the chancellor, who told the king that queen Elizabeth did do all her business in 1588 without calling a parliament, and so might he do for any thing he saw." June 25, 1667. He probably got this from his friend sir W. Coventry.

hard bargain. But it is very difficult to reconcile what Clarendon asserts in his defence, and much more at length in his Life, that the business of Dunkirk was entirely decided before he had any thing to do in it, by the advice of Albemarle and Sandwich, with the letters of d'Estrades, the negociator in this transaction on the part of France. In these letters, written at the time to Louis XIV., Clarendon certainly appears not only as the person chiefly concerned, but as representing himself almost the only one of the council favourable to the measure, and having to overcome the decided repugnance of Southampton, Sandwich, and Albemarle*. I cannot indeed see any other explanation, than that he magnified the obstacles in the way of this treaty, in order to obtain better terms; a management not very unusual in diplomatical dealing, but, in the degree at least to which he carried it, scarcely reconcilable with the good faith we should expect from this minister. For the transaction itself, we can hardly deem it honourable or politic. The expense of keeping up Dunkirk, though not trifling, would have been willingly defrayed by parliament, and could not well be pleaded by a government which had

* Ralph, 78, &c. The overture came from Clarendon, the French having no expectation of it. The worst was that, just before, he had dwelt in a speech to parliament on the importance of Dunkirk. This was on May 19, 1662. It appears by Louis XIV.'s own account, which certainly does not tally with some other authorities, that Dunkirk had been so great an object with Cromwell, that it was the stipulated price of the English alliance. Louis, however, was vexed at this, and determined to recover it at any price: il est certain que je ne pouvois trop donner pour racheter Dunkerque. He sent d'Estrades accordingly to England in 1661, directing him to make this his great object. Charles told the ambassador, that Spain had made him great offers, but he would rather treat with France. Louis was delighted at this, and though the sum asked was considerable, 5,000,000 livres, he would not break off, but finally concluded the treaty for 4,000,000, payable in three years; nay, saved 500,000 without its being found out by the English, for a banker having offered them prompt payment at this discount, they gladly accepted it; but this banker was a person employed by Louis himself, who had the money ready. He had the greatest anxiety about this affair, for the city of London deputed the lord mayor to offer any sum so that Dunkirk might not be alienated. Œuvres de Louis XIV. i. 167. If this be altogether correct, the king of France did not fancy he had made so bad a bargain; and, indeed, with his projects, if he had the money to spare, he could not think so. Compare the Memoires d'Estrades, and the supplement to the third volume of Clarendon State Papers. The historians are of no value, except as they copy from some of these original testimonies.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

just incumbered itself with the useless burthen of Tangier. That its possession was of no great direct value to England must be confessed, but it was another question whether it ought to have been surrendered into the hands of France.

4. This close connexion with France is indeed a great reproach to Clarendon's policy, and was the spring of mischiefs to which he contributed, and which he ought to have foreseen. What were the motives of these strong professions of attachment to the interests of Louis XIV. which he makes in some of his letters, it is difficult to say, since he had undoubtedly an ancient prejudice against that nation and its government. I should incline to conjecture, that his knowledge of the king's unsoundness in religion led him to keep at a distance from the court of Spain, as being far more zealous in its popery, and more connected with the Jesuit faction, than that of France; and this possibly influenced him also with respect to the Portuguese match, wherein, though not the first adviser, he certainly took much interest; an alliance as little judicious in the outset, as it proved eventually fortunate *. But the capital misdemeanour that he committed in this relation with France was the clandestine solicitation of pecuniary aid for the king. He first taught a lavish prince to seek the wages of dependence in a foreign power, to elude the control of parliament by the help of French money †. The purpose for which this aid was asked, the succour of Portugal, might be fair and laudable, but the precedent was most base, dangerous, and abominable. A king who had once tasted

* Life of Clar. 78. Life of James, 393.

† See Supplement to third volume of Clarendon State Papers, for abundant evidence of the close connexion between the courts of France and England. The former offered bribes to lord Clarendon so frequently and unceremoniously, that one is disposed to think he did not show so much indignation at the first overture as he ought to have done. See pp. 1. 4. 13. The aim of Louis was to effect the match with Catharine. Spain would have given a great portion with any protestant princess, in order to break it. Clarendon asked, on his master's account, for £50,000, to avoid application to parliament, p. 4. The French offered a secret loan, or subsidy perhaps, of 2,000,000 livres for the succour of Portugal. This was accepted by Clarendon, p. 15; but I do not find any thing more about it.

the sweets of dishonest and clandestine lucre would, in the words of the poet, be no more capable afterwards of abstaining from it, than a dog from his greasy offal.

These are the errors of Clarendon's political life, which, besides his notorious concurrence in all measures of severity and restraint towards the non-conformists, diminish my respect from his memory, and exclude, in my judgment, his name from that list of great and wise ministers, where some are willing to place him near the head. If I may seem to my readers less favourable to so eminent a person than common history might warrant, it is at least to be said that I have formed my decision from his own recorded sentiments, or from equally undisputable sources of authority. The publication of his life, that is, of the history of his administration, has not contributed to his honour. We find in it little or nothing of that attachment to the constitution for which he had acquired credit, and some things which we must struggle hard to reconcile with his veracity, even if the suppression of truth is not to be reckoned an impeachment of it in an historian *. But the manifest profligacy of those who con-

* As no one, who regards with attachment the present system of the English constitution, can look upon lord Clarendon as an excellent minister, or a friend to the soundest principles of civil and religious liberty, so no man whatever can avoid considering his incessant deviations from the great duties of an historian as a moral blemish in his character. He dares very frequently to say what is not true, and what he must have known to be otherwise; he does not dare to say what is true. And it is almost an aggravation of this reproach, that he aimed to deceive posterity, and poisoned at the fountain a stream from which another generation was to drink. No defence has ever been set up for the fidelity of Clarendon's history, nor can men, who have sifted the authentic materials, entertain much difference of judgment in this respect; though, as a monument of powerful ability and impressive eloquence, it will always be read with that delight which we receive from many great historians, especially the ancient, independent of any confidence in their veracity.

One more instance, before we quit lord Clarendon for ever, may here be mentioned of his disregard for truth. The strange tale of a fruitless search after the restoration for the body of Charles I. is well known. Lords Southampton and Lindsey, he tells us, who had assisted at their master's obsequies in St. George's chapel at Windsor, were so overcome with grief, that they could not recognize the place of interment, and after several vain attempts, the search was abandoned in despair. Hist. of Rebellion, vi. 244. Whatever motive the noble historian may have had for this story, it is absolutely incredible that any such ineffectual search was ever made. Nothing could have been more easy than to have taken up the pavement of the choir. But

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

tributed most to his ruin, and the measures which the court took soon afterwards, have rendered his administration comparatively honourable, and attached veneration to his memory. We are unwilling to believe that there was any thing to censure in a minister, whom Buckingham persecuted, and against whom Arlington intrigued *.

A distinguished characteristic of Clarendon had been his firmness, called indeed by most pride and obstinacy, which no circumstances, no perils, seemed likely to bend. But his spirit sunk all at once with his fortune. Clinging too long to office, and cheating himself against all probability with a hope of his master's kindness when he had lost his confidence, he abandoned that dignified philosophy which ennobles a voluntary retirement, that stern courage which innocence ought to inspire, and hearkening to the king's treacherous counsels, fled before his enemies into a foreign country. Though the impeachment, at least in the point of high treason, cannot be defended, it is impossible to deny, that the act of banishment, under the circumstances of his flight, was capable in the main of full justification. In an ordinary

this was unnecessary. Some at least of the workmen employed must have remembered the place of the vault. Nor did it depend on them; for sir Thomas Herbert, who was present, had made at the time a note of the spot, "just opposite the eleventh stall on the king's side." Herbert's Memoirs, 142. And we find from Pepys's Diary, Feb. 26, 1666, that "he was shown, at Windsor, where the late king was buried, and king Henry VIII. and my lady Seymour." In which spot, as is well known, the royal body has twice been found, once in the reign of Anne, and again in 1816.

* The tenor of Clarendon's life and writings almost forbids any surmise of pecuniary corruption. Yet this is insinuated by Pepys, on the authority of Evelyn, April 27, and May 16, 1667. But the one was gossiping, though shrewd; and the other feeble, though accomplished. Lord Dartmouth, who lived in the next age, and whose excessive ill nature makes him no good witness against any body, charges him with receiving bribes from the main instruments and promoters of the late troubles, and those who had plundered the royalists, which enabled him to build his great mansion in Piccadilly, asserting that it was full of pictures belonging to families who had been despoiled of them. "And whoever had a mind to see what great families had been plundered during the civil war, might find some remains either at Clarendon-house or at Cornbury." Note on Burnet, 88.

The character of Clarendon as a minister, is fairly and judiciously drawn by Macpherson, Hist. of England, 98; a work by no means so full of a tory spirit as has been supposed.

criminal suit, a process of outlawry goes against the accused who flies from justice; and his neglect to appear within a given time is equivalent, in cases of treason or felony, to a conviction of the offence; can it be complained of, that a minister of state, who dares not confront a parliamentary impeachment, should be visited with an analogous penalty? But whatever injustice and violence may be found in this prosecution, it established for ever the right of impeachment, which the discredit into which the long parliament had fallen, exposed to some hazard; the strong abettors of prerogative, such as Clarendon himself, being inclined to dispute this responsibility of the king's advisers to parliament. The commons had, in the preceding session, sent up an impeachment against lord Mordaunt, upon charges of so little public moment, that they may be suspected of having chiefly had in view the assertion of this important privilege *. It was never called in question from this time; and indeed they took care during the remainder of this reign, that it should not again be endangered by a paucity of precedents †.

* Parl. Hist. 347.

† The lords refused to commit the earl of Clarendon on a general impeachment of high treason, and in a conference with the lower house, denied the authority of the precedent in Strafford's case, which was pressed upon them. It is remarkable, that the managers of this conference for the commons vindicated the first proceedings of the long parliament, which shows a considerable change in their tone since 1661. They do not however seem to have urged, what is an apparent distinction between the two precedents, that the commitment of Strafford was on a verbal request of Pym in the name of the commons, without alleging any special matter of treason, and consequently irregular and illegal in the highest degree; while the 16th article of Clarendon's impeachment charges him with betraying the king's counsels to his enemies; which, however untrue, evidently amounted to treason within the statute of Edward III.; so that the objection of the lords extended to committing any one for treason upon impeachment, without all the particularity required in an indictment. This showed a very commendable regard to the liberty of the subject; and from this time we do not find the vague and unintelligible accusations, whether of treason or misdemeanour, so usual in former proceedings of parliament. Parl. Hist. 387. A protest was signed by Buckingham, Albemarle, Bristol, Arlington, and others of their party, including three bishops (Cosens, Croft, and another), against the refusal of their house to commit Clarendon upon the general charge. A few, on the other hand, of whom Hollis is the only remarkable name, protested against the bill of banishment.

"The most fatal blow (says James) the king gave himself to his power and prerogative, was when he sought aid from the house of commons to destroy the earl of Clarendon: by that he put that house again

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

The period between the fall of Clarendon in 1667, and the commencement of lord Danby's administration in 1673, is justly reckoned one of the most disgraceful in the annals of our monarchy. This was the age of what is usually denominated the Cabal administration, from the five initial letters of sir Thomas Clifford, first commissioner of the treasury, afterwards lord Clifford and high treasurer, the earl of Arlington, secretary of state, the duke of Buckingham, lord Ashley, chancellor of the exchequer, afterwards earl of Shaftesbury and lord chancellor, and lastly, the duke of Lauderdale.

Though the counsels of these persons soon became extremely pernicious and dishonourable, it must be admitted, that the first measures after the banishment of Clarendon, both in domestic and foreign policy, were highly praiseworthy. Bridgeman, who succeeded the late chancellor in the custody of the great seal, with the assistance of chief baron Hale and bishop Wilkins, and at the instigation of Buckingham, who, careless about every religion, was, from humanity or politic motives, friendly to the indulgence of all, laid the foundations of a treaty with the nonconformists, on the basis of a comprehension for the presbyterians, and a toleration for the rest*. They had nearly come, it is said, to terms of agreement, so that it was thought time to intimate their design in a speech from the throne. But the spirit of 1662 was still too powerful in the commons; and the friends of

in mind of their impeaching privilege, which had been wrested out of their hands by the restoration; and when ministers found they were like to be left to the censure of the parliament, it made them have a greater attention to court an interest there, than to pursue that of their princes, from whom they hoped not for so sure a support." Life of James, 593.

The king, it is said, came rather slowly into the measure of impeachment, but became afterwards so eager, as to give the attorney general, Finch, positive orders to be active in it, observing him to be silent. Carte's Ormond, ii. 353. Buckingham had made the king great promises of what the commons would do in case he would sacrifice Clarendon.

* Kennet, 293. 300. Burnet. Baxter, 23. The design was to act on the principle of the declaration of 1660, so that presbyterian ordinations should pass sub modo. Tillotson and Stillingfleet were concerned in it. The king was at this time exasperated against the bishops for their support of Clarendon. Burnet, ibid. Pepys's Diary, 21st Dec. 1667. And he had also deeper motives.

Clarendon, whose administration this change of counsels seemed to reproach, taking a warm part against all indulgence, a motion that the king be desired to send for such persons as he should think fit to make proposals to him in order to the uniting of his protestant subjects, was negatived by 176 to 70 *. They proceeded, by almost an equal majority, to continue the bill of 1664, for suppressing seditious conventicles; which failed, however, for the present, in consequence of the sudden prorogation †.

But whatever difference of opinion might at that time prevail with respect to this tolerant disposition of the new government, there was none as to their great measure in external policy, the triple alliance with Holland and Sweden. A considerable and pretty sudden change had taken place in the temper of the English people towards France. Though the discordance of national character, and the dislike that seems natural to neighbours, as well as, in some measure, the recollections of their ancient hostility, had at all times kept up a certain ill will between the two, it is manifest that before the reign of Charles II. there was not that antipathy and inveterate enmity towards the French in general, which it has since been deemed an act of patriotism to profess. The national prejudices, from the accession of Elizabeth to the restoration, ran far more against Spain; and it is not surprising that the apprehensions of that ambitious monarchy, which had been very just in the age of Philip II., should have lasted longer than its ability or inclination to molest us. But the rapid declension of Spain, after the peace

* Parl. Hist. 421. Ralph, 170. Carte's Life of Ormond, ii. 362. Sir Thomas Littleton spoke in favour of the comprehension, as did Seymour and Waller; all of them enemies of Clarendon, and probably connected with the Buckingham faction: but the church party was much too strong for them. Pepys says the commons were furious against the project; it was said, that whoever proposed new laws about religion must do it with a rope about his neck. Jan. 10, 1668. This is the first instance of a triumph obtained by the church over the crown in the house of commons. Ralph observes upon it, "It is not for nought that the words church and state are so often coupled together, and that the first has so insolently usurped the precedency of the last."

† Id. 422.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

of the Pyrenees, and the towering ambition of Louis XIV., master of a kingdom intrinsically so much more formidable than its rival, manifested that the balance of power in Europe, and our own immediate security, demanded a steady opposition to the aggrandizement of one monarchy, and a regard to the preservation of the other. These, indeed, were rather considerations for statesmen than for the people; but Louis was become unpopular both by his acquisition of Dunkirk at the expense, as it was thought, of our honour, and much more deservedly by his shuffling conduct in the Dutch war, and union in it with our adversaries. Nothing therefore gave greater satisfaction in England than the triple alliance, and consequent peace of Aix la Chapelle, which saved the Spanish Netherlands from absolute conquest, though not without pretty important sacrifices *.

Charles himself, meanwhile, by no means partook in this common jealousy of France. He had, from the time of his restoration, entered into close relations with that power, which a short period of hostility had interrupted without leaving any resentment in his mind. It is now known, that while his minister was negotiating at the Hague for the triple alliance, he had made overtures for a clandestine treaty with Louis, through his sister the duchess of Orleans, the duke of Buckingham, and the French ambassador Rouvigny †. As the king of France was at first backward in meeting these advances, and the letters published in regard to them are very few, we do not find any precise object expressed beyond a close and intimate friendship. But a few

* France retained Lille, Tournay, Douay, Charleroi, and other places by the treaty. The allies were surprised, and not pleased at the choice Spain made of yielding these towns in order to save Franche Comté. Temple's Letters, 97. In fact, they were not on good terms with that power; she had even a project, out of spite to Holland, of giving up the Netherlands entirely to France, in exchange for Rousillon, but thought better of it on cooler reflection.

† Dalrymple, ii. 5, et post. Temple was not treated very favourably by most of the ministers on his return from concluding the triple alliance: Clifford said to a friend, "Well, for all this noise, we must yet have another war with the Dutch before it be long." Temple's Letters, 123.

words in a memorial of Rouvigny to Louis XIV. seem to let us into the secret of the real purpose. "The duke of York," he says, "wishes much for this union; the duke of Buckingham the same: they use no art, but say that nothing else can re-establish the affairs of this court *."

Charles II. was not of a temperament to desire arbitrary power, either through haughtiness and conceit of his station, which he did not greatly display, or through the love of taking into his own hands the direction of public affairs, about which he was in general pretty indifferent. He did not wish, as he told lord Essex, to sit like a Turkish sultan, and sentence men to the bow-string, but could not bear that a set of fellows should inquire into his conduct †. His aim, in fact, was liberty rather than power; it was that immunity from control and censure, in which men of his character place a great part of their happiness. For some years he had cared probably very little about enhancing his prerogative, content with the loyalty, though not quite with the liberality of his parliament. And had he not been drawn against his better judgment into the war with Holland, this harmony might perhaps have been protracted a good deal longer. But the vast expenditure of that war, producing little or no decisive success, and coming unfortunately at a time when trade was not very thriving, and when rents had considerably fallen, exasperated all men against the prodigality of the court, to which they might justly ascribe part of their burthens, and, with the usual mis-calculations, believed that much more of them was due. Hence the bill appointing commissioners of public account, so ungrateful to the king, whose personal reputation it was likely to affect, and whose favourite excesses it might tend to restrain.

He was almost equally provoked by the license of his people's tongues. A court like that of Charles is the natural topic of the

* Dalrymple, ii. 12.

† Burnet.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

idle, as well as the censorious. An administration so ill-conducted could not escape the remarks of a well-educated and intelligent city. There was one method of putting an end to these impertinent comments, or of rendering them innoxious; but it was the last which he would have adopted. Clarendon informs us, that the king one day complaining of the freedom, as to political conversation, taken in coffee-houses, he recommended either that all persons should be forbidden by proclamation to resort to them, or that spies should be placed in them to give information against seditious speakers*. The king, he says, liked both expedients, but thought it unfair to have recourse to the latter till the former had given fair warning, and directed him to propose it to the council; but here sir William Coventry objecting, the king was induced to abandon the measure, much to Clarendon's disappointment, though it probably saved him an additional article in his impeachment. The unconstitutional and arbitrary tenor of this great minister's notions of government is strongly displayed in this little anecdote. Coventry was an enlightened, and, for that age, an upright man, whose enmity Clarendon brought on himself by a marked jealousy of his abilities in council.

Those who stood nearest to the king were not backward to imitate his discontent at the privileges of his people and their representatives. The language of courtiers and court-ladies is always intolerable to honest men, especially that of such courtiers as surrounded the throne of Charles II. It is worst of all amidst public calamities, such as pressed very closely on one another in a part of his reign; the awful pestilence of 1665, the still more ruinous fire of 1666, the fleet burned by the Dutch in the Medway next summer. No one could reproach the king for outward inactivity or indifference during the great fire. But there were some, as Clarendon tells us, who presumed to assure him, "that this was the greatest blessing that God had ever conferred on

* Life of Clarendon, 357.

him, his restoration only excepted; for the walls and gates being now burned and thrown down of that rebellious city, which was always an enemy to the crown, his majesty would never suffer them to repair and build them up again, to be a bit in his mouth and a bridle upon his neck; but would keep all open, that his troops might enter upon them whenever he thought it necessary for his service; there being no other way to govern that rude multitude but by force *." This kind of discourse, he goes on to say, did not please the king. But here we may venture to doubt his testimony; or if the natural good temper of Charles prevented him from taking pleasure in such atrocious congratulations, we may be sure that he was not sorry to think the city more in his power.

It seems probable, that this loose and profligate way of speaking gave rise, in a great degree, to the suspicion that the city had been purposely burned by those who were more enemies to religion and liberty than to the court. The papists stood ready to bear the infamy of every unproved crime; and a committee of the house of commons collected evidence enough for those who were already convinced that London had been burned by that obnoxious sect. Though the house did not proceed farther, there can be no doubt that the inquiry contributed to produce that inveterate distrust of the court, whose connexions with the popish faction were half known, half conjectured, which gave from this time an entirely new complexion to the parliament. Prejudiced as the commons were, they could hardly have imagined the catholics to have burned the city out of mere malevolence; but must have attributed the crime to some far-spreading plan of subverting the established constitution †.

* Life of Clarendon, 355.

† State Trials, vi. 807. One of the oddest things connected with this fire was, that some persons of the fanatic party had been hanged, in April, for a conspiracy to surprise the Tower, murder the duke of Albemarle and others, and then declare for an equal division of lands, &c. In order to effect this, the city was to be fired, and the guards secured in their quarters; and for this the 3d of September following was fixed upon as a lucky day. This is un-

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

The retention of the king's guards had excited some jealousy, though no complaints seem to have been made of it in parliament; but the sudden levy of a considerable force in 1667, however founded upon a very plausible pretext from the circumstances of the war, lending credit to these dark surmises of the court's sinister designs, gave much greater alarm. The commons, summoned together in July, instantly addressed the king to disband his army as soon as peace should be made. We learn from the duke of York's private memoirs, that some of those who were most respected for their ancient attachment to liberty deemed it in jeopardy at this crisis. The earls of Northumberland and Leicester, lord Hollis, Mr. Pierrepont, and others of the old parliamentary party, met to take measures together. The first of these told the duke of York, that the nation would not be satisfied with the removal of the chancellor, unless the guards were disbanded, and several other grievances redressed. The duke bade him be cautious what he said, lest he should be obliged to inform the king; but Northumberland replied, that it was his intention to repeat the same to the king, which he did accordingly the next day *.

This change in public sentiment gave warning to Charles that he could not expect to reign with as little trouble as he had hitherto experienced; and doubtless the recollection of his father's history did not contribute to cherish the love he sometimes pretended for parliaments. His brother, more reflecting and more impatient of restraint on royal authority, saw with still greater clearness than the king, that they could only keep the prerogative at its desired height by means of intimidation. A regular army was indispensable; but to keep up an army in spite of parlia-

doubtedly to be read in the London Gazette for April 30, 1666; and it is equally certain that the city was in flames on the 3d of September. But though the coincidence is curious, it would be very weak to think it more than co-incidence, for the same reason as applies to the suspicion which the catholics incurred; that the mere destruction of the city could not have been the object of any party, and that nothing was attempted to manifest any further design.

* Macpherson's Extracts, 38. 49. Life of James, 426.

ment, or to raise money for its support without parliament, were very difficult undertakings. It seemed necessary to call in a more powerful arm than their own; and by establishing the closest union with the king of France, to obtain either military or pecuniary succours from him, as circumstances might demand. But there was another and not less imperious motive for a secret treaty. The king, as has been said, though little likely, from the tenor of his life, to feel very strong and lasting impressions of religion, had at times a desire to testify publicly his adherence to the Romish communion. The duke of York had come more gradually to change the faith in which he was educated. He describes it as the result of patient and anxious inquiry; nor would it be possible, therefore, to fix a precise date for his conversion, which seems to have been not fully accomplished till after the Restoration *. He however continued in conformity to the church of England, till, on discovering that the catholic religion exacted an outward communion, which he had fancied not indispensable, he became more uneasy at the restraint that policy imposed on him. This led to a conversation with the king, of whose private opinions and disposition to declare them he was probably informed, and to a close union with Clifford and Arlington, from whom he had stood aloof on account of their animosity against Clarendon. The king and duke held a consultation with those two ministers, and with lord Arundel of

* He tells us himself that it began by his reading a book written by a learned bishop of the church of England to clear her from schism in leaving the Roman communion, which had a contrary effect on him, especially when, at the said bishop's desire, he read an answer to it. This made him inquisitive about the grounds and manner of the Reformation. *After his return*, Heylin's History of the Reformation, and the preface to Hooker's Ecclesiastical Polity, thoroughly convinced him that neither the church of England, nor Calvin, nor any of the reformers, had power to do what they did; and he was confident, he said, that whosoever reads those two books with attention and without prejudice would be of the same opinion. Life of James, i. 629. The duchess of York embraced the same creed as her husband, and, as he tells us, without knowledge of his sentiments, but one year before her death in 1670. She left a paper at her death containing the reasons for her change. See it in Kennet, 320. It is plain that she, as well as the duke, had been influenced by the Romanizing tendency of some Anglican divines.

Wardour, on the 25th of January, 1669, to discuss the ways and methods fit to be taken for the advancement of the catholic religion in these kingdoms. The king spoke earnestly, and with tears in his eyes. After a long deliberation, it was agreed that there was no better way to accomplish this purpose than through France; the house of Austria being in no condition to give any assistance *.

The famous secret treaty, which, though believed on pretty good evidence not long after the time, was first actually brought to light by Dalrymple about half a century since, began to be negotiated very soon after this consultation †. We find allusions to the king's projects in one of his letters to the duchess of Orleans, dated 22d March, 1669 ‡. In another of June 6, the methods he was adopting to secure himself in this perilous juncture appear. He was to fortify Plymouth, Hull, and Portsmouth, and to place them in trusty hands. The fleet was under the duke, as lord admiral; the guards and their officers were thought in general well affected §; but his great reliance was on the most christian king. He stipulated for £200,000 annually, and for the aid of 6000 French troops ‖. In return for such important succour,

* Macpherson, 50. Life of James, 441.

† De Witt was apprised of the intrigue between France and England as early as April, 1669, through a Swedish agent at Paris. Temple, 179. Temple himself, in the course of that year, became convinced that the king's views were not those of his people, and reflects severely on his conduct in a letter, December 24, 1669, p. 206. In September, 1670, on his sudden recall from the Hague, De Witt told him his suspicions of a clandestine treaty, 241. He was received on his return coldly by Arlington, and almost with rudeness by Clifford, 244. They knew he would never concur in the new projects. But in 1682, during one of the intervals when Charles was playing false with his brother Louis, the latter, in revenge, let an abbé Primi, in a history of the Dutch war, publish an account of the whole secret treaty, under the name of the count de St. Majolo. This book was immediately suppressed at the instance of the English ambassador, and Primi was sent for a short time to the Bastile. But a pamphlet, published in London just after the Revolution, contains extracts from it. Dalrymple, ii. 80. Somers Tracts, viii. 13. Harl. Misc. ii. 387. Œuvres de Louis XIV., vi. 476. It is singular that Hume should have slighted so well authenticated a fact, even before Dalrymple's publication of the treaty; but I suppose he had never heard of Primi's book.

‡ Dalrymple, ii. 22.

§ Id. 23. Life of James, 442.

‖ The tenor of the article leads me to conclude, that these troops were to be landed in England at all events, in order to secure the public tranquillity without waiting for any disturbance.

Charles undertook to serve his ally's ambition and wounded pride against the United Provinces. These, when conquered by the French arms, with the co-operation of an English navy, were already shared by the royal conspirators. A part of Zealand fell to the lot of England, the remainder of the Seven Provinces to France, with an understanding that some compensation should be made to the prince of Orange. In the event of any new rights to the Spanish monarchy accruing to the most christian king, as it is worded (that is, on the death of the king of Spain, a sickly child), it was agreed that England should assist him with all her force by sea and land, but at his own expense; and should obtain not only Ostend and Minorca, but, as far as the king of France could contribute to it, such parts of Spanish America as she should choose to conquer *. So strange a scheme of partitioning that vast inheritance was never, I believe, suspected till the publication of the treaty; though Bolingbroke had alluded to a previous treaty of partition between Louis and the emperor Leopold, the complete discovery of which has been but lately made †.

Each conspirator in this coalition against the protestant faith and liberties of Europe had splendid objects in view; but those of Louis seemed by far the more probable and less liable to be

* P. 49.

† Bolingbroke has a remarkable passage as to this in his Letters on History (Letter VII.): it may be also alluded to by others. The full details, however, as well as more authentic proofs, were reserved, as I believe, for the publication of Œuvres de Louis XIV., where they will be found in vol. ii. 403. The proposal of Louis to the emperor, in 1667, was, that France should have the Pays Bas, Franche Comté, Milan, Naples, the ports of Tuscany, Navarre, and the Philippine Islands; Leopold taking all the rest. The obvious drift of this was, that France should put herself in possession of an enormous increase of power and territory, leaving Leopold to fight as he could for Spain and America, which were not likely to submit peaceably. The Austrian cabinet understood this, and proposed that they should exchange their shares. Finally, however, it was concluded on the king's terms, except that he was to take Sicily instead of Milan. One article of this treaty was, that Louis should keep what he had conquered in Flanders; in other words, the terms of the treaty of Aix la Chapelle. The ratifications were exchanged 29th Feb. 1668. Louis represents himself as more induced by this prospect than by any fear of the triple alliance, of which he speaks slightingly, to conclude the peace of Aix la Chapelle. He thought that he should acquire a character for moderation which might be serviceable to him, "dans les grands accroissemens que ma fortune pourroit recevoir." Vol. ii. p. 369.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

defeated. The full completion of their scheme would have reunited a great kingdom to the catholic religion, and turned a powerful neighbour into a dependent pensioner. But should this fail, and Louis was too sagacious not to discern the chances of failure, he had pledged to him the assistance of an ally in subjugating the republic of Holland, which, according to all human calculation, could not withstand their united efforts; nay, even in those ulterior projects which his restless and sanguine ambition had ever in view, and the success of which would have realized, not the chimera of an universal monarchy, but a supremacy and dictatorship over Europe. Charles, on the other hand, besides that he had no other return to make for the necessary protection of France, was impelled by a personal hatred of the Dutch, and by the consciousness that their commonweath was the standing reproach of arbitrary power, to join readily in the plan for its subversion. But looking first to his own objects, and perhaps a little distrustful of his ally, he pressed that his profession of the Roman catholic religion should be the first measure in prosecution of the treaty; and that he should immediately receive the stipulated £200,000, or at least a part of the money. Louis insisted that the declaration of war against Holland should precede. This difference occasioned a considerable delay; and it was chiefly with a view of bringing round her brother on this point, that the duchess of Orleans took her famous journey to Dover, in the spring of 1670. Yet notwithstanding her influence, which passed for irresistible, he persisted in adhering to the right reserved to him in the draft of the treaty of choosing his own time for the declaration of his religion; and it was concluded on this footing at Dover, by Clifford, Arundel, and Arlington, on the 22d of May, 1670, during the visit of the duchess of Orleans*.

* Dalrymple, 31—57. James gives a different account of this, and intimates that Henrietta, whose visit to Dover he had for this reason been much against, prevailed on the king to change his resolution, and to begin with the war. He gained over Arlington and Clifford. The duke told them, it would quite defeat the catholic design, because the king must run in debt, and be at the mercy of his parliament.

A mutual distrust, however, retarded the further progress of this scheme; one party unwilling to commit himself till he should receive money, the other too cautious to run the risk of throwing it away. There can be no question but that the king of France was right in urging the conquest of Holland as a preliminary of the more delicate business they were to manage in England; and from Charles's subsequent behaviour, as well as his general fickleness and love of ease, there seems reason to believe, that he would gladly have receded from an undertaking of which he must every day have more strongly perceived the difficulties. He confessed, in fact, to Louis's ambassador, that he was almost the only man in his kingdom who liked a French alliance*. The change of religion, on a nearer view, appeared dangerous for himself, and impracticable as a national measure. He had not dared to intrust any of his protestant ministers, even Buckingham, whose indifference in such points was notorious, with this great secret; and to keep them the better in the dark, a mock negotiation was set on foot with France, and a pretended treaty actually signed, the exact counterpart of the other, except as to religion. Buckingham, Shaftesbury, and Lauderdale, were concerned in this simulated treaty, the negotiation for which did not

They answered, that if the war succeeded, it was not much matter what people suspected. P. 450. This shows that they looked on force as necessary to compass the design, and that the noble resistance of the Dutch, under the prince of Orange, was that which frustrated the whole conspiracy. "The duke," it is again said, p. 453, "was in his own judgment against entering into this war before his majesty's power and authority in England had been better fixed and less precarious, as it would have been if the private treaty first agreed on had not been altered." The French court, however, was evidently right in thinking that till the conquest of Holland should be achieved, the declaration of the king's religion would only weaken him at home. It is gratifying to find the heroic character of our glorious deliverer displaying itself among these foul conspiracies. The prince of Orange came over to England in 1670. He was then very young, and his uncle, who was really attached to him, would have gladly associated him in the design; indeed it had been agreed that he was to possess part of the United Provinces in sovereignty. But Colbert writes, that the king had found him so zealous a Dutchman and protestant, that he could not trust him with any part of the secret. He let him know, however, as we learn from Burnet, 382, that he had himself embraced the Romish faith.

* Dalrymple, 57.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

commence till after the original convention had been signed at Dover*.

The court of France having yielded to Charles the point about which he had seemed so anxious, had soon the mortification to discover that he would take no steps to effect it. They now urged that immediate declaration of his religion which they had, with very wise reasons, not long before dissuaded. The king of England hung back, and tried so many excuses, that they had reason to suspect his sincerity; not that, in fact, he had played a feigned part from the beginning, but his zeal for popery having given way to the seductions of a voluptuous and indolent life, he had leisure, with the good sense he naturally possessed, to form a better estimate of his resources, and of the opposition he must encounter. Meanwhile the eagerness of his ministers had plunged the nation into war with Holland; and Louis, having attained his principal end, ceased to trouble the king on the subject of religion. He received large sums from France during the Dutch war †.

This memorable transaction explains and justifies the strenuous opposition made in parliament to the king and duke of York, and may be reckoned the first act of a drama which ended in the revolution. It is true, that the precise terms of this treaty were not authentically known; but there can be no doubt, that those who, from this time, displayed an insuperable jealousy of one brother, and a determined enmity to the other, had proofs enough for moral conviction of their deep conspiracy with France against religion and liberty. This suspicion is implied in all the conduct of that parliamentary opposition, and is the apology of much that seems violence and faction, especially in the business of the popish plot, and the bill of exclusion. It is of importance

* P. 68. Life of James, 444. In this work it is said that even the duchess of Orleans had no knowledge of the real treaty; and that the other originated with Buckingham. But Dalrymple's authority seems far better in this instance.

† P. 84, &c.

also to observe, that James II. was not misled and betrayed by false or foolish counsellors, as some would suggest, in his endeavours to subvert the laws, but acted on a plan, long since concerted, and in which he had taken a principal share.

It must be admitted, that neither in the treaty itself, nor in the few letters which have been published by Dalrymple, do we find any explicit declaration, either that the catholic religion was to be established as the national church, or arbitrary power introduced in England. But there are not wanting strong presumptions of this design. The king speaks, in a letter to his sister, of finding means to put the proprietors of church lands out of apprehension *. He uses the expression, "retablir la religion catholique;" which though not quite unequivocal, seems to convey more than a bare toleration or a personal profession by the sovereign †. He talks of a negotiation with the court of Rome, to obtain the permission of having mass in the vulgar tongue, and communion in both kinds, as terms that would render his conversion agreeable to his subjects ‡. He tells the French ambassador, that not only his conscience, but the confusion he saw every day increasing in his kingdom, to the diminution of his authority, impelled him to declare himself a catholic, which, besides the spiritual advantage, he believed to be the only means of restoring the monarchy. These passages, as well as the precautions taken in expectation of a vigorous resistance from a part of the nation, appear to intimate a formal re-establishment of the catholic church; a measure connected, in the king's apprehension, if not strictly with arbitrary power, yet with a very material enhancement of his prerogative. For the profession of an obnoxious faith by the king, as an insulated person, would, instead of strengthening his authority, prove the greatest obstacle to it,

* P. 23.

† P. 52. The reluctance to let the duke of Buckingham into the secret seems to prove that more was meant than a toleration of the Roman catholic religion, towards which he had always been disposed, and which was hardly a secret at court.

‡ P. 62. 84.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

as, in the next reign, turned out to be the case. Charles, however, and the duke of York deceived themselves into a confidence, that the transition could be effected with no extraordinary difficulty. The king knew the prevailing laxity of religious principles in many about his court, and thought he had reason to rely on others as secretly catholic. Sunderland is mentioned as a young man of talent, inclined to adopt that religion *. Even the earl of Orrery is spoken of as a catholic in his heart †. The duke, who conversed more among divines, was led to hope, from the strange language of the high-church party, that they might readily be persuaded to make what seemed no long step, and come into easy terms of union ‡. It was the constant policy of the Romish priests to extenuate the differences between the two churches, and to throw the main odium of the schism on the calvinistic sects. And many of the Anglicans, in their abhorrence of protestant non-conformists, played into the hands of the common enemy.

The court, however, entertained great hopes from the depressed condition of the dissenters, whom it was intended to bribe with that toleration under a catholic regimen, they could so little expect from the church of England. Hence the duke of York was always strenuous against schemes of comprehension, which would invigorate the protestant interest and promote conciliation. With the opposite view of rendering a union among protestants impracticable, the rigorous episcopalians were encouraged underhand to prosecute the non-conformists §. The duke of York took pains to assure Owen, an eminent divine of the independent persuasion, that he looked on all persecution as an unchristian thing, and altogether against his conscience ‖. Yet the court promoted a renewal of the temporary act, passed in 1664, against conventicles, which was re-inforced by the addition

* P. 81.

† P. 33.

‡ "The generality of the church of England men was not at that time very averse to the catholic religion: many that went under that name had their religion to choose, and went to church for company's sake." Life of James, p. 442.

§ Life of James, ibid.

‖ Macpherson's Extracts, p. 51.

of an extraordinary proviso, That all clauses in the act should be construed most largely and beneficially for suppressing conventicles, and for the justification and encouragement of all persons to be employed in the execution thereof*. Wilkins, the most honest of the bishops, opposed this act in the house of lords, notwithstanding the king's personal request that he would be silent †. Sheldon and others, who, like him, disgraced the church of England by their unprincipled policy or their passions, not only gave it their earnest support at the time, but did all in their power to enforce its execution ‡. As the king's temper was naturally tolerant, his co-operation in this severe measure would not easily be understood, without the explanation that a knowledge of his secret policy enables us to give. In no long course of time the persecution was relaxed, the imprisoned ministers set at liberty, some of the leading dissenters received pensions, and the king's declaration of a general indulgence held forth an asylum from the law under the banner of prerogative §. Though this is said to have proceeded from the advice of Shaftesbury, who had no

* 22 Car. II. c. 1. Kennet, p. 306. The zeal in the commons against popery tended to aggravate this persecution of the dissenters. They had been led by some rascally clergyman to believe the absurdity that there was a good understanding between the two parties.

† Burnet, p. 272.

‡ Baxter, p. 74. 86. Kennet, p. 311. See an infamous letter of Sheldon, written at this time, to the bishops of his province, urging them to persecute the non-conformists. Harris's Life of Charles II., p. 106. Proofs also are given by this author of the manner in which some, such as Lamplugh and Ward, the latter a very tyrannical bishop, though a good mathematician, responded to their primate's wishes.

Sheldon found a panegyrist quite worthy of him in his chaplain Parker, afterwards bishop of Oxford. This notable person has left a Latin history of his own time, wherein he largely commemorates the archbishop's zeal in molesting the dissenters, and praises him for defeating the scheme of comprehension. P. 25. I observe, that the late excellent editor of Burnet has endeavoured to slide in a word for the primate, (note on vol. i. p. 243,) on the authority of that history by bishop Parker, and of Sheldon's Life in the Biographia Britannica. It is lamentable to rest on such proofs. I should certainly not have expected that in Magdalen college, of all places, the name of Parker would have been held in honour; and as to the Biographia, laudatory as it is of primates in general, (save Tillotson, whom it depreciates), I find, on reference, that its praise of Sheldon's virtues is grounded on the authority of his epitaph in Croydon church. It is said in the same note, on somebody's authority, that Sheldon was born and bred to be archbishop of Canterbury; in which case, Tillotson, Herring, and Sutton must have been intended for something else.

§ Baxter, 87.

CHAP. XI. Charles II. 1660—73.

concern in the original secret treaty with France, it was completely in the spirit of that compact, and must have been acceptable to the king.

But the factious, fanatical, republican party (such were the usual epithets of the court at the time, such have ever since been applied by the advocates or apologists of the Stuarts) had gradually led away by their delusions that parliament of cavaliers; or, in other words, the glaring vices of the king, and the manifestation of designs against religion and liberty, had dispossessed them of a confiding loyalty, which, though highly dangerous from its excess, had always been rather ardent than servile. The sessions had been short, and the intervals of repeated prorogations much longer than usual; a policy not well calculated for that age, where the growing discontents and suspicions of the people acquired strength by the stoppage of the regular channel of complaint. Yet the house of commons, during this period, though unmanageable on the one point of toleration, had displayed no want of confidence in the king, nor any animosity towards his administration; notwithstanding the flagrant abuses in the expenditure, which the parliamentary commission of public accounts had brought to light, and the outrageous assault on sir John Coventry; a crime notoriously perpetrated by persons employed by the court, and probably by the king's direct order *.

The war with Holland, at the beginning of 1672, so repugnant to English interests, so unwarranted by any provocation, so infamously piratical in its commencement, so ominous of further schemes still more dark and dangerous, finally opened the eyes of all men of integrity. It was accompanied by the shutting up

* This is asserted by Burnet, and seems to be acknowledged by the duke of York. The court endeavoured to mitigate the effect of the bill brought into the commons, in consequence of Coventry's injury, and so far succeeded, that, instead of a partial measure of protection for the members of the house of commons, as originally designed, which seemed, I suppose, to carry too marked a reference to the particular transaction, it was turned into a general act, making it a capital felony to wound with intention to maim or disfigure. But the name of the Coventry act has always clung to this statute. Parl. Hist. 461.

of the exchequer, an avowed bankruptcy at the moment of beginning an expensive war*, and by the declaration of indulgence, or suspension of all penal laws in religion; an assertion of prerogative which seemed without limit. These exorbitances were the more scandalous, that they happened during a very long prorogation. Hence the court so lost the confidence of the house of commons, that with all the lavish corruption of the following period, it could never regain a secure majority on any important question. The superiority of what was called the country party is referred to the session of February 1673, in which they compelled the king to recall his proclamation suspending the penal laws, and raised a barrier against the encroachments of popery in the test-act.

The king's declaration of indulgence had been projected by Shaftesbury, in order to conciliate or lull to sleep the protestant dissenters. It redounded in its immediate effect chiefly to their benefit; the catholics already enjoying a connivance at the private exercise of their religion, and the declaration expressly refusing them public places of worship. The plan was most laudable in itself, could we separate the motives which prompted it, and the means by which it was pretended to be made effectual. But in the declaration the king says, "we think ourselves obliged to make use of that supreme power in ecclesiastical matters which is not only inherent in us, but hath been declared and recognised to be so by several statutes and acts of parliament." "We do," he says, not long afterwards, "declare our will and pleasure to be, that the

* The king promised the bankers interest at six per cent., instead of the money due to them from the exchequer; but this was never paid till the latter part of William's reign. It may be considered as the beginning of our national debt. It seems to have been intended to follow the shutting up of the exchequer with a still more unwarrantable stretch of power, by granting an injunction to the creditors, who were suing the bankers at law. According to North (Examen, p. 38, 47.) lord-keeper Bridgman resigned the great seal, rather than comply with this; and Shaftesbury himself, who succeeded him, did not venture, if I understand the passage rightly, to grant an absolute injunction. The promise of interest for their money seems to have been given instead of this more illegal and violent remedy.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

execution of all and all manner of penal laws in matters ecclesiastical, against whatsoever sort of non-conformists or recusants, be immediately suspended, and they are hereby suspended." He mentions also his intention to license a certain number of places for the religious worship of non-conforming protestants *.

It was generally understood to be an ancient prerogative of the crown to dispense with penal statutes in favour of particular persons, and under certain restrictions. It was undeniable, that the king might, by what is called a noli prosequi, stop any criminal prosecution commenced in his courts, though not an action for the recovery of a pecuniary penalty, which, by many statutes, was given to the common informer. He might of course set at liberty, by means of a pardon, any person imprisoned, whether upon conviction or by a magistrate's warrant. Thus the operation of penal statutes in religion might, in a great measure, be rendered ineffectual, by an exercise of undisputed prerogatives; and thus, in fact, the catholics had been enabled, since the accession of the house of Stuart, to withstand the crushing severity of the laws. But a pretension, in explicit terms, to suspend a body of statutes, a command to magistrates not to put them in execution, arrogated a sort of absolute power, which no benefits of the indulgence itself, had they even been less insidiously offered, could induce a lover of constitutional privileges to endure †. Notwithstanding the affected distinction of temporal and ecclesiastical matters, it was evident that the king's supremacy was as much capable of being bounded by the legislature in one as in the other, and that every law in the statute-book might be repealed by a similar proclamation. The house of commons voted, that the king's prerogative, in matters ecclesiastical, does not extend to repeal acts of parliament, and addressed the king to recall his declaration. Whether from a desire to protect

* Parl. Hist. 515. Kennet, 313.

† Bridgman, the lord-keeper, resigned the great seal, according to Burnet, because he would not put it to the declaration of indulgence, and was succeeded by Shaftesbury.

the non-conformists in a toleration even illegally obtained, or from the influence of Buckingham among some of the leaders of opposition, it appears from the debates, that many of those, who had been in general most active against the court, resisted this vote, which was carried by 168 to 116. The king, in his answer to this address, lamented that the house should question his ecclesiastical power, which had never been done before. This brought on a fresh rebuke, and, in a second address, they positively deny the king's right to suspend any law. "The legislative power," they say, "has always been acknowledged to reside in the king and two houses of parliament." The king, in a speech to the house of lords, complained much of the opposition made by the commons, and found a majority of the former disposed to support him, though both houses concurred in an address against the growth of popery. At length, against the advice of the bolder part of his council, but certainly with a just sense of what he most valued, his ease of mind, Charles gave way to the public voice, and withdrew his declaration *.

There was indeed a line of policy indicated at this time, which though intolerable to the bigotry and passion of the house, would best have foiled the schemes of the ministry; a legislative repeal of all the penal statutes both against the catholic and the protestant dissenter, as far as regarded the exercise of their religion. It must be evident to any impartial man, that the unrelenting

* Parl. Hist. 517. The presbyterian party do not appear to have supported the declaration, at least Birch spoke against it: Waller, Seymour, Sir Robert Howard in its favour. Baxter says, the non-conformists were divided in opinion as to the propriety of availing themselves of the declaration, p. 99. Birch told Pepys, some years before, that he feared some would try for the toleration of papists, but the sober party would rather be without it than have it on those terms. Pepys's Diary, Jan. 31, 1668. Parl. Hist. 516, 561. Father Orleans says, that Ormond, Arlington, and some more, advised the king to comply; the duke and the rest of the council urging him to adhere, and Shaftesbury, who had been the first mover of the project, pledging himself for its success; there being a party for the king among the commons, and a force on foot enough to daunt the other side. It was suspected that the women interposed, and prevailed on the king to withdraw his declaration. Upon this, Shaftesbury turned short round, provoked at the king's want of steadiness, and especially at his giving up the point about issuing writs in the recess of parliament.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

harshness of parliament, from whom no abatement, even in the sanguinary laws against the priests of the Romish church, had been obtained, had naturally and almost irresistibly driven the members of that persuasion into the camp of prerogative, and even furnished a pretext for that continual intrigue and conspiracy, which was carried on in the court of Charles II., as it had been in that of his father. A genuine toleration would have put an end to much of this; but in the circumstances of that age, it could not have been safely granted without an exclusion from those public trusts, which were to be conferred by a sovereign, in whom no trust could be reposed.

The act of supremacy, in the first year of Elizabeth, had imposed on all, accepting temporal as well as ecclesiastical offices, an oath denying the spiritual jurisdiction of the pope. But though the refusal of this oath, when tendered, incurred various penalties, yet it does not appear that any were attached to its neglect, or that the oath was a previous qualification for the enjoyment of office, as it was made by a subsequent act of the same reign for sitting in the house of commons. It was found also by experience, that persons attached to the Roman doctrine sometimes made use of strained constructions to reconcile the oath of supremacy to their faith. Nor could that test be offered to peers, who were excepted by a special provision. For these several reasons, a more effectual security against popish counsellors, at least in notorious power, was created by the famous test act of 1673, which renders the reception of the sacrament according to the rites of the church of England, and a declaration renouncing the doctrine of transubstantiation, preliminary conditions, without which no temporal office of trust can be enjoyed*. In this fundamental article of faith, no compromise or equivocation would be admitted by any member of the church of Rome. And as the obligation extended to the highest ranks,

* 25 Car. 2. c. 2. Burnet, p. 490.

this reached the end for which it was immediately designed, compelling, not only the lord-treasurer Clifford, the boldest and most dangerous of that party, to retire from public business, but the duke of York himself, whose desertion of the protestant church was hitherto not absolutely undisguised, to quit the post of lord admiral *.

It is evident that a test might have been framed to exclude the Roman catholic as effectually as the present, without bearing like this on the protestant non-conformist. But, though the preamble of the bill, and the whole history of the transaction, show that the main object was a safeguard against popery, it is probable that a majority of both houses liked it the better for this secondary effect of shutting out the presbyterians still more than had been done by previous statutes of this reign. There took place, however, a remarkable coalition between the two parties; and many who had always acted as high-church men and cavaliers, sensible at last of the policy of their common adversaries, renounced a good deal of the intolerance and bigotry that had characterized the present parliament. The dissenters, with much prudence or laudable disinterestedness, gave their support to the test act. In return, a bill was brought in, and, after some debate, passed to the lords, repealing, in a considerable degree, the persecuting laws against their worship †. The upper house, perhaps insidiously, returned it with amendments more favourable to the dissenters, and insisted upon them, after

* The test act began in a resolution, February 28, 1673, that all who refuse to take the oaths and receive the sacrament, according to the rites of the church of England, shall be incapable of all public employments. Parl. Hist. 556. The court party endeavoured to oppose the declaration against transubstantiation, but of course in vain. Id. 561. 592.

The king had pressed his brother to receive the sacrament, in order to avoid suspicion, which he absolutely refused; and this led, he says, to the test. Life of James, p. 482. But his religion was long pretty well known, though he did not cease to conform till 1672.

† Parl. Hist. 526—585. These debates are copied from those published by Anchitel Grey, a member of the commons for thirty years; but his notes, though collectively most valuable, are sometimes so brief and ill expressed, that it is hardly possible to make out their meaning. The court and church party, or rather some of them, seem to have much opposed this bill for the relief of protestant dissenters.

CHAP. XI.

Charles II. 1660—73.

a conference *. A sudden prorogation very soon put an end to this bill, which was as unacceptable to the court as it was to the zealots of the church of England. It had been intended to follow it up by another, excluding all who should not conform to the established church from serving in the house of commons †.

It may appear remarkable that, as if content with these provisions, the victorious country party did not remonstrate against the shutting up of the exchequer, nor even wage any direct war against the king's advisers. They voted, on the contrary, a large supply, which, as they did not choose explicitly to recognize the Dutch war, was expressed to be granted for the king's extraordinary occasions ‡. This moderation, which ought at least to rescue them from the charges of faction and violence, has been censured by some as servile and corrupt, and would really incur censure, if they had not attained the great object of breaking the court measures by other means. But the test act, and their steady protestation against the suspending prerogative, crushed the projects and dispersed the members of the cabal. The king had no longer any minister on whom he could rely, and, with his indolent temper, seems from this time, if not to have abandoned all hope of declaring his change of religion, yet to have seen both that and his other favourite projects postponed without much reluctance. From a real predilection, from the prospect of gain, and partly, no doubt, from some distant views of arbitrary power

* Commons' Journals, 28 and 29 March, 1673. Lords' Journals, 24 and 29 March. The lords were so slow about this bill, that the lower house, knowing an adjournment to be in contemplation, sent a message to quicken them, according to a practice not unusual in this reign. Perhaps, on an attentive consideration of the report on the conference (March 29), it may appear, that the lords' amendments had a tendency to let in popish, rather then to favour protestant dissenters. Parker says, that this act of indulgence was defeated by his great hero, archbishop Sheldon, who proposed, that the non-conformists should acknowledged the war against Charles I. to be unlawful. Hist. sui temporis, p. 24. (203 of the translation).

† It was proposed, as an instruction to the committee on the test act, that a clause should be introduced, rendering non-conformists incapable of sitting in the house of commons. This was lost by 163 to 107; but it was resolved, that a distinct bill should be brought in for that purpose. 10 March, 1673.

‡ Kennet, p. 318.

and a catholic establishment, he persevered a long time in clinging secretly to the interests of France; but his active co-operation in the schemes of 1669 was at an end. In the next session of October, 1673, the commons drove Buckingham from the king's councils; they intimidated Arlington into a change of policy; and though they did not succeed in removing the duke of Lauderdale, compelled him to confine himself chiefly to the affairs of Scotland*.

* Commons' Journals, 20 Jan. 1674. Parl. Hist. 608. 625. 649. Burnet.

CHAPTER XII.

Earl of Danby's Administration—Opposition in the Commons—Frequently corrupt—Character of Lord Danby—Connexion of the popular Party with France—Its Motives on both Sides—Doubt as to their Acceptance of Money—Secret Treaties of the King with France—Fall of Danby—His Impeachment—Questions arising on it—His Commitment to the Tower—Pardon pleaded in Bar—Votes of Bishops—Abatement of Impeachments by Dissolution—Popish Plot—Coleman's Letters—Godfrey's Death—Injustice of Judges on the Trials—Parliament dissolved—Exclusion of Duke of York proposed—Schemes of Shaftesbury and Monmouth—Unsteadiness of the King—Expedients to avoid the Exclusion—Names of Whig and Tory—New Council formed by Sir William Temple—Long Prorogation of Parliament—Petitions and Addresses—Violence of the Commons—Oxford Parliament—Impeachment of Commoners for Treason constitutional—Fitzharris impeached—Proceedings against Shaftesbury and College—Triumph of the Court—Forfeiture of Charter of London—And of other Places—Projects of Lord Russell and Sidney—Their Trials—High Tory Principles of the Clergy—Passive Obedience—Some contend for absolute Power—Filmer—Sir George Mackenzie—Decree of University of Oxford—Connexion with Louis broken off—King's Death.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

THE period of lord Danby's administration, from 1673 to 1678, was full of chicanery and dissimulation on the king's side, of increasing suspiciousness on that of the commons. Forced by the voice of parliament, and the bad success of his arms, into peace with Holland, Charles struggled hard against a co-operation with her in the great confederacy of Spain and the empire to resist the incroachments of France on the Netherlands. Such was in that age the strength of the barrier fortresses, and so heroic the resistance of the prince of Orange, that notwithstanding the extreme weakness of Spain, there was no moment in that war, when the sincere and strenuous intervention of England would not have compelled Louis XIV. to accept the terms of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. It was the treacherous attachment of Charles

II. to French interests that brought the long congress of Nimeguen to an unfortunate termination; and by surrendering so many towns of Flanders as laid the rest open to future aggression, gave rise to the tedious struggles of two more wars *.

In the behaviour of the house of commons during this period, previously at least to the session of 1678, there seems nothing which can incur much reprehension from those who reflect on the king's character and intentions, unless it be rather that they granted supplies too largely, and did not sufficiently provide against the perils of the time. But the house of lords contained unfortunately an invincible majority for the court, ready to frustrate any legislative security for public liberty. Thus the habeas corpus act, first sent up to that house in 1674, was lost there in several successive sessions. The commons, therefore, testified their sense of public grievances, and kept alive an alarm in the nation by resolutions and addresses, which a phlegmatic reader is sometimes too apt to consider as factious or unnecessary. If they seem to have dwelt more, in some of these, on the dangers of religion, and less on those of liberty, than we may think reasonable, it is to be remembered, that the fear of popery has always been the surest string to touch for effect on the people; and that the general clamour against that religion was all covertly directed against the duke of York, the most dangerous enemy of every part of our constitution. The real vice of this parliament was not intemperance, but corruption. Clifford, and still more Danby, were masters in an art practised by ministers from the time of James I., and which indeed can never be unknown, where there exists a court and a popular assembly, that of turning to their use the weapons of mercenary eloquence by office, or blunting their edge by bribery †. Some who had been once prominent

* Temple's Memoirs.

† Burnet says, that Danby bribed the less important members, instead of the leaders, which did not answer so well. But he seems to have been liberal to all. The parliament has gained the name of the pensioned. In that of 1679, sir Stephen Fox was called upon to produce an account of the monies paid to many of their predecessors. Those who belonged to the new par-

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

in opposition, as sir Robert Howard and sir Richard Temple, became placemen; some, like Garraway and sir Thomas Lee, while they continued to lead the country party, took money from the court for softening particular votes *; many, as seems to have been the case with Reresby, were won by promises, and the pretended friendship of men in power †. On two great classes of questions, France and popery, the commons broke away from all management, nor was Danby unwilling to let his master see their indocility on these subjects. But, in general, till the year 1678, by dint of the means before mentioned, and partly no doubt through the honest conviction of many, that the king was not likely to employ any minister more favourable to the protestant religion and liberties of Europe, he kept his ground without any insuperable opposition from parliament ‡.

liament endeavoured to defend themselves, and give reasons for their pensions; but I observe no one says he did not always vote with the court. Parl. Hist. 1137. North admits that great clamour was excited by this discovery, and well it might. See also Dalrymple, ii. 92.

* Burnet charges these two leaders of opposition with being bribed by the court to draw the house into granting an enormous supply, as the consideration of passing the test act; and see Pepys, Oct. 6, 1666. Sir Robert Howard and sir Richard Temple were said to have gone over to the court, in 1670, through similar inducements. Ralph. Roger North (Examen, p. 456) gives an account of the manner in which men were bought off from the opposition, though it was sometimes advisable to let them nominally continue in it; and mentions Lee, Garraway, and Meres, all very active patriots, if we trust to the parliamentary debates. But, after all, neither Burnet nor Roger North are wholly to be relied on as to particular instances, though the general fact of an extensive corruption be indisputable.

† This cunning, self-interested man, who had been introduced to the house by lord Russell and lord Cavendish, and was connected with the country party, tells us that Danby sent for him in Feb. 1677, and assured him that the jealousies of that party were wholly without foundation; that to his certain knowledge the king meant no other than to preserve the religion and government by law established; that if the government was in any danger, it was from those who pretended such a mighty zeal for it. On finding him well disposed, Danby took his proselyte to the king, who assured him of his regard for the constitution, and was right loyally believed. Reresby's Memoirs, p. 36. What a picture of a minister and his knave-dupe!

‡ "There were two things," says bishop Parker, "which, like Circe's cup, bewitched men, and turned them into brutes; viz. popery and French interest. If men otherwise sober heard them once, it was sufficient to make them run mad. But when those things were laid aside, their behaviour to his majesty was with a becoming modesty." P. 244. Whenever the court seemed to fall in with the national interests on the two points of France and popery, many of the country party voted with them, though more numerous than their own. Temple, p. 458. See too Reresby, p. 25, et alibi.

The earl of Danby had virtues, as an English minister, which serve to extenuate some great errors, and an entire want of scrupulousness in his conduct. Zealous against the church of Rome and the aggrandizement of France, he counteracted, while he seemed to yield to, the prepossessions of his master. If the policy of England before the peace of Nimeguen was mischievous and disgraceful, it would evidently have been far more so, had the king and duke of York been abetted by this minister in their fatal predilection for France. We owe to Danby's influence, it must ever be remembered, the marriage of princess Mary to the prince of Orange, the seed of the revolution and the act of settlement—a courageous and disinterested counsel, which ought not to have proved the source of his greatest misfortunes *. But we cannot pretend to say that he was altogether as sound a friend to the constitution of his country, as to her national dignity and interests. I do not mean that he wished to render the king absolute. But a minister harassed and attacked in parliament is tempted to desire the means of crushing his opponents, or at least of augmenting his own sway. The mischievous bill that passed the house of lords in 1675, imposing as a test to be taken by both houses of parliament, as well as all holding beneficed offices, a declaration, that resistance to persons commissioned by the king was in all cases unlawful, and that they would never attempt any alteration in the government in church or state, was promoted by Danby, though it might possibly originate with others †. It was

* The king, according to James himself, readily consented to the marriage of the princess, when it was first suggested, in 1675; the difficulty was with her father. He gave at last a reluctant consent, and the offer was made by lords Arlington and Ossory to the prince of Orange, who received it coolly. Life of James, 501. When he came over to England in Oct. 1677, with the intention of effecting the match, the king and duke wished to defer it till the conclusion of the treaty then in negotiation at Nimeguen; but "the obstinacy of the prince, with the assistance of the treasurer, who from that time entered into the measures and interests of the prince, prevailed upon the flexibility of the king to let the marriage be first agreed and concluded." P. 508.

† Kennet, p. 332. North's Examen, p. 61. Burnet. This test was covertly meant against the Romish party, as well as more openly against the dissenters. Life of James, p. 499. Danby set himself up as the patron of the church party and old cavaliers against the two opposing religions, trusting that they were the stronger in the house of commons. But the times were so

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

apparently meant as a bone of contention among the country party, in which presbyterians and old parliamentarians were associated with discontented cavaliers. Besides the mischief of weakening this party, which indeed the minister could not fairly be expected to feel, nothing could have been devised more unconstitutional, or more advantageous to the court's projects of arbitrary power.

It is certainly possible that a minister, who, aware of the dangerous intentions of his sovereign or his colleagues, remains in the cabinet to thwart and countermine them, may serve the public more effectually than by retiring from office; but he will scarcely succeed in avoiding some material sacrifices of integrity, and still less of reputation. Danby, the ostensible adviser of Charles II., took on himself the just odium of that hollow and suspicious policy which appeared to the world. We know, indeed, that he was concerned, against his own judgment, in the king's secret receipt of money from France, the price of neutrality, both in 1676 and in 1678, the latter to his own ruin *.

changed, that the same men had no longer the same principles, and the house would listen to no measures against non-conformists. He propitiated, however, the Lambeth Moloch and his suffragan imps, by renewing the persecution under the existing laws, which had been relaxed by the cabal ministry. Baxter, 156. 172. Kennet, 331. Neal, 698. Somers Tracts, vii. 336.

Meanwhile, schemes of comprehension were sometimes on foot, and the prelates affected to be desirous of bringing about an union; but Morley and Sheldon frustrated them all. Baxter, 156. Kennet, 326. Parker, 25. The bishops, however, were not uniformly intolerant. Croft, bishop of Hereford, published, about 1675, a tract that made some noise, entitled the Naked Truth, for the purpose of moderating differences. It is not written with extraordinary ability, but is very candid and well designed, though conceding so much as to scandalize his brethren. Somers Tracts, vii. 268. Biogr. Brit. art. CROFT, where the book is extravagantly over praised. Croft was one of the few bishops, who, being then very old, advised his clergy to read James II.'s declaration of indulgence in 1687; thinking, I suppose, though in those circumstances erroneously, that toleration was so good a thing, it was better to have it irregularly than not at all.

* Charles received 500,000 crowns for the long prorogation of parliament, from Nov. 1675 to Feb. 1677. In the beginning of the year 1676, the two kings bound themselves by a formal treaty, to which Danby and Lauderdale, but not Coventry or Williamson, were privy, not to enter on any treaties but by mutual consent; and Charles promised, in consideration of a pension, to prorogue or dissolve parliament, if they should attempt to force such treaties upon him. Dalrymple, p. 99. Danby tried to break this off, but did not hesitate to press the French cabinet for the money; and £200,000 was paid. The prince of Orange came afterwards through Rouvigny to a knowledge of this secret treaty. P. 117.

Could the opposition, though not so well apprized of these transactions as we are, be censured for giving little credit to his assurances of zeal against that power, which, though sincere in him, were so little in unison with the disposition of the court? Had they no cause to dread that the great army suddenly raised in 1677, on pretence of being employed against France, might be turned to some worse purposes more congenial to the king's temper *?

This invincible distrust of the court is the best apology for that which has given rise to so much censure, the secret connexions formed by the leaders of opposition with Louis XIV. through his ambassadors Barillon and Rouvigny, about the spring of 1678 †. They well knew that the king's designs against their liberties had been planned in concert with France, and could hardly be rendered effectual without her aid in money, if not in arms ‡. If they could draw over this dangerous ally from his

* This army consisted of between twenty and thirty thousand men, as fine troops as could be seen (Life of James, p. 512): an alarming sight to those who denied the lawfulness of any standing army. It is impossible to doubt from Barillon's correspondence in Dalrymple, that the king and duke looked to this force as the means of consolidating the royal authority. This was suspected at home, and very justly: "Many well meaning men," says Reresby, "began to fear the army now raised was rather intended to awe our own kingdom than to war against France, as had at first been suggested." P. 62. And he, in a former passage, p. 57, positively attributes the opposition to the French war, in 1678, to "a jealousy that the king indeed intended to raise an army, but never designed to go on with the war; and to say the truth, some of the king's own party were not very sure of the contrary."

† Dalrymple, p. 129. The immediate cause of those intrigues was the indignation of Louis at the princess Mary's marriage. That event, which, as we know from James himself, was very suddenly brought about, took the king of France by surprise. Charles apologized for it to Barillon, by saying, "I am the only one of my party, except my brother." (P. 125.) This, in fact, was the secret of his apparent relinquishment of French interests at different times in the latter years of his reign; he found it hard to kick constantly against the pricks, and could employ no minister who went cordially along with his predilections. He seems too at times, as well as the duke of York, to have been seriously provoked at the unceasing encroachments of France, which exposed him to so much vexation at home.

The connexion with lords Russell and Hollis began in March 1678, though some of the opposition had been making advances to Barillon in the preceding November, p. 129. 131. See also "Copies and Extracts of some Letters written to and from the Earl of Danby," published in 1716; whence it appears that Montagu suspected the intrigues of Barillon, and the mission of Rouvigny, lady Russell's first cousin, for the same purpose, as early as Jan. 1678, and informed Danby of it, pp. 50. 53. 59.

‡ Courtin, the French ambassador who preceded Barillon, had been engaged

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

side, and convince the king of France that it was not his interest to crush their power, they would at least frustrate the suspected conspiracy, and secure the disbanding of the army, though at a great sacrifice of the continental policy which they had long maintained, and which was truly important to our honour and safety. Yet there must be degrees in the scale of public utility; and if the liberties of the people were really endangered by domestic treachery, it was ridiculous to think of saving Tournay and Valenciennes at the expense of all that was dearest at home. This is plainly the secret of that unaccountable, as it then seemed, and factious opposition, in the year 1678, which cannot be denied to have served the ends of France, and thwarted the endeavours of lord Danby and sir William Temple, to urge on the uncertain and half-reluctant temper of the king into a decided course of policy *. Louis, in fact, had no desire to see the king of England

through great part of the year 1677 in a treaty with Charles for the prorogation or dissolution of parliament. After a long chaffering, the sum was fixed at 2,000,000 livres, in consideration of which the king of England pledged himself to prorogue parliament from December to April, 1678. It was in consequence of the subsidy being stopped by Louis, in resentment of the princess Mary's marriage, that parliament, which had been already prorogued till April, was suddenly assembled in February. Dalrymple, p. 111. It appears that Courtin had employed French money to bribe members of the commons in 1677, with the knowledge of Charles; assigning as a reason, that Spain and the emperor were distributing money on the other side. In the course of this negotiation, he assured Charles that the king of France was always ready to employ all his forces for the confirmation and augmentation of the royal authority in England, so that he should always be master of his subjects, and not depend upon them.

* See what Temple says of this, p. 460: the king raised 20,000 men in the spring of 1678, and seemed ready to go into the war; but all was spoiled by a vote on Clarges's motion, that no money should be granted till satisfaction should be made as to religion. This irritated the king so much, that he determined to take the money which France offered him; and he afterwards almost compelled the Dutch to sign the treaty; so much against the prince of Orange's inclinations, that he has often been charged, though unjustly, with having fought the battle of St. Denis after he knew that the peace was concluded. Danby also, in his vindication (published in 1679, and again in 1710; see State Trials, ii. 634), lays the blame of discouraging the king from embarking in the war on this vote of the commons. And the author of the Life of James II. says very truly, that the house "were in reality more jealous of the king's power than of the power of France; for notwithstanding all their former warm addresses for hindering the growth of the power of France, when the king had no army, now that he had one, they passed a vote to have it immediately disbanded; and the factious party, which was then prevalent among them, made it their only business to be rid of the duke, to pull down the ministers, and to weaken the crown." P. 512.

absolute over his people, unless it could be done so much by his own help as to render himself the real master of both. In the estimate of kings, or of such kings as Louis XIV., all limitations of sovereignty, all co-ordinate authority of estates and parliaments, are not only derogatory to the royal dignity, but injurious to the state itself, of which they distract the councils, and enervate the force. Great armies, prompt obedience, unlimited power over the national resources, secrecy in council, rapidity in execution, belong to an energetic and enlightened despotism: we should greatly err in supposing that Louis XIV. was led to concur in projects of subverting our constitution, from any jealousy of its contributing to our prosperity. He saw, on the contrary, in the perpetual jarring of kings and parliaments, a source of feebleness and vacillation in foreign affairs, and a field for intrigue and corruption. It was certainly far from his design to see a republic, either in name or effect, established in England; but an unanimous loyalty, a spontaneous submission to the court, was as little consonant to his interests; and especially if accompanied with a willing return of the majority to the catholic religion, would have put an end to his influence over the king, and still more certainly over the duke of York *. He had long been sensible of the advantage to be reaped from a malcontent party in England. In the first years after the restoration, he kept up a connexion with the disappointed commonwealth's men, while their courage was yet fresh and unsubdued; and in the war of 1665 was very nearly exciting insurrections both in England and Ireland †. These

In defence of the commons it is to be urged, that if they had any strong suspicion of the king's private intrigues with France for some years past, as in all likelihood they had, common prudence would teach them to distrust his pretended desire for war with her; and it is in fact most probable, that his real object was to be master of a considerable army.

* The memorial of Blancard to the prince of Orange, quoted by Dalrymple, p. 201, contains these words: "Le roi auroit été bien faché qu'il eut été absolu dans ses états; l'un de ses plus constants maximes depuis son retablissement ayant été de le diviser d'avec son parlement, et de se servir tantot de l'un, tantot de l'autre, toujours par argent pour parvenir a ses fins."

† Ralph, p. 116. Œuvres de Louis XIV. ii. 204, and v. 67, where we have a curious and characteristic letter of the king to d'Estrades in Jan. 1662, when he had been provoked by some high language Clarendon had held about the right of the flag.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

schemes of course were suspended as he grew into closer friendship with Charles, and saw a surer method of preserving an ascendancy over the kingdom. But as soon as the princess Mary's marriage, contrary to the king of England's promise, and to the plain intent of all their clandestine negotiations, displayed his faithless and uncertain character to the French cabinet, they determined to make the patriotism, the passion, and the corruption of the house of commons, minister to their resentment and ambition.

The views of lord Hollis and lord Russell in this clandestine intercourse with the French ambassador were sincerely patriotic and honourable: to detach France from the king; to crush the duke of York and popish faction; to procure the disbanding of the army, the dissolution of a corrupted parliament, the dismissal of a bad minister*. They would, indeed, have displayed more prudence in leaving these dark and dangerous paths of intrigue to the court which was practised in them. They were concerting measures with the natural enemy of their country, religion, honour, and liberty; whose obvious policy was to keep the kingdom disunited, that it might be powerless; who had been long abetting the worst designs of our own court, and who could never be expected to act against popery and despotism, but for the temporary ends of his ambition. Yet, in the very critical circumstances of

* The letters of Barillon in Dalrymple, p. 134. 136. 140, are sufficient proofs of this. He imputes to Danby in one place, p. 142, the design of making the king absolute, and says: "M. le duc d'York se croit perdu pour sa religion, si l'occasion presente ne lui sert à soumettre l'Angleterre; c'est une entreprise fort hardie, et dont le succès est fort douteux." Of Charles himself he says: "Le roi d'Angleterre balance encore à se porter à l'extremité; son humeur répugne fort au dessein de changer le gouvernement. Il est néanmoins entrainé par M. le duc d'York et par le grand trésorier; mais dans le fond il aimeroit mieux que la paix le mît en état de demeurer en repos, et rétablir ses affaires, c'est à dire, un bon revenu; et je crois qu'il ne se soucie pas beaucoup d'être plus absolu qu'il est. Le duc et le trésorier connoissent bien à qui ils ont affaire, et craignent d'être abandonnés par le roi d'Angleterre aux premiers obstacles considérables qu'ils trouveront au dessein de relever l'autorité royale en Angleterre." On this passage it may be observed, that there is reason to believe there was no co-operation, but rather a great national distrust at this time between the duke of York and lord Danby. But Barillon had no doubt taken care to infuse into the minds of the opposition those suspicions of that minister's designs.

that period, it was impossible to pursue any course with security; and the dangers of excessive circumspection and adherence to general rules may often be as formidable as those of temerity. The connexion of the popular party with France may very probably have frustrated the sinister intentions of the king and duke, by compelling the reduction of the army, though at the price of a great sacrifice of European policy *. Such may be, with unprejudiced men, a sufficient apology for the conduct of lord Russell and lord Hollis, the most public-spirited and high-minded characters of their age, in this extraordinary and unnatural alliance. It would have been unworthy of their virtue to have gone into so desperate an intrigue with no better aim than that of ruining lord Danby; and of this I think we may fully acquit them. The nobleness of Russell's disposition beams forth in all that Barillon has written of their conferences. Yet, notwithstanding the plausible grounds of his conduct, we can hardly avoid wishing that he had abstained from so dangerous an intercourse, which led him to impair, in the eyes of posterity, by something more like faction than can be ascribed to any other part of his parliamentary life, the consistency and ingenuousness of his character †.

I have purposely mentioned lord Russell and lord Hollis apart from others who were mingled in the same intrigues of the French ambassador, both because they were among the first with whom he tampered, and because they are honourably distinguished by their abstinence from all pecuniary remuneration, which Hollis refused, and which Barillon did not presume to offer to Russell. It appears, however, from this minister's accounts of the money he had expended in this secret service of the French crown, that,

* Barillon appears to have favoured the opposition rather than the duke of York, who urged the keeping up of the army. This was also the great object of the king, who very reluctantly disbanded it in Jan. 1679. Dalrymple, 207, &c.

† This delicate subject is treated with great candour as well as judgment by lord John Russell, in his Life of William Lord Russell.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

at a later time, namely about the end of 1680, many of the leading members of opposition, sir Thomas Littleton, Mr. Garraway, Mr. Hampden, Mr. Powle, Mr. Sacheverell, Mr. Foley, received sums of 500 or 300 guineas, as testimonies of the king of France's munificence and favour. Among others, Algernon Sidney, who, though not in parliament, was very active out of it, is more than once mentioned. Chiefly because the name of Algernon Sidney had been associated with the most stern and elevated virtue, this statement was received with great reluctance, and many have ventured to call the truth of these pecuniary gratifications in question. This is certainly a bold surmise; though Barillon is known to have been a man of luxurious and expensive habits, and his demands for more money on account of the English court, which continually occur in his correspondence with Louis, may lead to a suspicion that he would be in some measure a gainer by it. This, however, might possibly be the case without actual peculation. But it must be observed, that there are two classes of those who are alleged to have received presents through his hands; one, of such as were in actual communication with himself; another, of such as sir John Baber, a secret agent, had prevailed upon to accept it. Sidney was in the first class; but, as to the second, comprehending Littleton, Hampden, Sacheverell, in whom it is as difficult to suspect pecuniary corruption as in him, the proof is manifestly weaker, depending only on the assertion of an intriguer, that he had paid them the money. The falsehood either of Baber or Barillon would acquit these considerable men. Nor is it to be reckoned improbable that persons employed in this clandestine service should be guilty of a fraud for which they could evidently never be made responsible. We have indeed a remarkable confession of Coleman, the famous intriguer executed for the popish plot, to this effect. He deposed in his examination before the house of commons, in November 1678, that he had received last session of Barillon 2500*l.* to be distributed among

members of parliament, which he had converted to his own use*. It is doubtless possible, that Coleman having actually expended this money in the manner intended, bespoke the favour of those whose secret he kept by taking the discredit of such a fraud on himself. But it is also possible that he spoke the truth. A similar uncertainty hangs over the transactions of sir John Baber. Nothing in the parliamentary conduct of the above-mentioned gentlemen in 1680 corroborates the suspicion of an intrigue with France, whatever may have been the case in 1678.

I must fairly confess, however, that the decided bias of my own mind is on the affirmative side of this question; and that principally because I am not so much struck, as some have been, by any violent improbability in what Barillon wrote to his court on the subject. If indeed we were to read, that Algernon Sidney had been bought over by Louis XIV. or Charles II. to assist in setting up absolute monarchy in England, we might fairly oppose our knowledge of his inflexible and haughty character, of his zeal, in life and death, for republican liberty. But there is, I presume, some moral distinction between the acceptance of a bribe to desert or betray our principles, and that of a trifling present for acting in conformity to them. The one is, of course, to be styled corruption; the other is repugnant to a generous and delicate mind, but too much sanctioned by the practice of an age far less scrupulous than our own, to have carried with it any great self-reproach or sense of degradation. It is truly inconceivable that men of such property as sir Thomas Littleton or Mr. Foley should have accepted 300 or 500 guineas, the sums mentioned by Barillon, as the price of apostasy from those political principles to which they owed the esteem of their country, or of an implicit compliance with the dictates of France. It is sufficiently disgraceful to the times in which they lived, that they should have accepted so pitiful a gratuity; unless, indeed, we should in can-

* Parl. Hist. 1035; Dalrymple, 200.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

dour resort to an hypothesis which seems tenable, that they agreed among themselves not to run the chance of offending Louis, or exciting his distrust, by a refusal of this money. Sidney, indeed, was, as there is reason to think, a distressed man; he had formerly been in connexion with the court of France *, and had persuaded himself that the countenance of that power might one day or other be afforded to his darling scheme of a commonwealth; he had contracted a dislike to the prince of Orange, and consequently to the Dutch alliance, from the same governing motive: is it strange that one so circumstanced should have accepted a small gratification from the king of France, which implied no dereliction of his duty as an Englishman, or any sacrifice of political integrity? And I should be glad to be informed by the idolaters of Algernon Sidney's name, what we know of him from authentic and contemporary sources which renders this incredible †.

* Louis XIV. tells us, that Sidney had made proposals to France in 1666 for an insurrection, and asked 100,000 crowns to effect it, which was thought too much for an experiment. He tried to persuade the ministers, that it was against the interest of France that England should continue a monarchy. Œuvres de Louis XIV. ii. 204.

† "No man of common sense, I imagine," says lord John Russell, "can believe that he took the money for himself. His character is one of heroic pride and generosity. His declining to sit in judgment on the king, his extolling the sentence when Charles II. was restored, his shooting a horse for which Louis XIV. offered him a large sum, that he might not submit to the will of a despot, are all traits of a spirit as noble as it is uncommon. With a soul above meanness, a station above poverty, and a temper of philosophy above covetousness, what man will be envious enough to think that he was a pensioner of France?" P. 116.

I must fairly confess, that in my opinion all those who believe that Sidney took the money at all, believe that he took it for himself; and notwithstanding this high eulogium, I adhere to the reasoning in my text. The noble descendant of lord Russell, equal to him in candour and virtue, but far superior in talents, has lost sight, I must take leave to say, of his usual good sense and good taste in mentioning with praise the idle story of Sidney's shooting his horse. It was such an action as Alderman Sawbridge or Mr. Thomas Brand Hollis would have thought very fine; but which, on a moment's thought, lord John Russell would see in its true light, as a piece of vulgar brutality, unworthy of Sidney's character and station, and most unlikely to be true. He was a republican, no doubt, and wished to see such a form of government established at home; but it was as a Roman senator, with no bigoted abhorrence of kings, or cosmopolite zeal. Nor was Louis XIV., as lord John well knows, a Muley Molock, who would have taken away a gentleman's horse by violence. The truth is, that Sidney was a little too much disposed towards that great monarch; and would, I have no question, have been

France, in the whole course of these intrigues, held the game in her hands. Mistress of both parties, she might either embarrass the king through parliament, if he pretended to an independent course of policy, or cast away the latter, when he should return to his former engagements. Hence, as early as May 1678, a private treaty was set on foot between Charles and Louis, by which the former obliged himself to keep a neutrality, if the allies should not accept the terms offered by France, to recal all his troops from Flanders within two months, to disband most of his army, and not to assemble his parliament for six months; in return he was to receive 6,000,000 livres. This was signed by the king himself on May 27, none of his ministers venturing to affix their names *. Yet at this time he was making outward professions of an intention to carry on the war. Even in this secret treaty, so thorough was his insincerity, he meant to evade one of its articles, that of disbanding his troops. In this alone he was really opposed to the wishes of France; and her pertinacity in disarming him seems to have been the chief source of those capricious changes of his disposition we find for three or four years at this period †. Louis again appears not only to have mistrusted the king's own inclinations after the prince of Orange's marriage, and his ability to withstand the eagerness of the nation for war, but to have apprehended he might become absolute, by means of his army, without standing indebted for it to his ancient ally. In this point, therefore, he faithfully served the popular party. Charles used every endeavour to evade this condition; whether it were that he still entertained hopes of attaining arbitrary power through inti-

most happy both to oblige his majesty and to pocket the pistoles. But it has been the fashion for a long time (chiefly, I am persuaded, through the delusion of the ear, the name of Algernon Sidney having so specious a sound) to exaggerate his merits, so that even those who are best able to form an estimate of them are carried away; and I have no doubt that such as know very little will be dissatisfied with what I have said of their idol.

* Dalrymple, 162.

† His exclamation at Barillon's pressing the reduction of the army to 8000 men is well known: "God's fish! are all the king of France's promises to make me master of my subjects come to this! or does he think that a matter to be done with 8000 men!" Temple says, "he seemed at this time (May 1678), more resolved to enter into the war than I had ever before seen or thought him."

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

midation, or that dreading the violence of the house of commons, and ascribing it rather to a republican conspiracy than to his own misconduct, he looked to a military force as his security. From this motive we may account for his strange proposal to the French king of a league in support of Sweden, by which he was to furnish fifteen ships, and 10,000 men at the expense of France, during three years, receiving six millions for the first year, and four for each of the two next. Louis, as is highly probable, betrayed this project to the Dutch government, and thus frightened them into that hasty signature of the treaty of Nimeguen, which broke up the confederacy, and accomplished the immediate objects of his ambition. No longer in need of the court of England, he determined to punish it for that duplicity, which none resent more in others than those who are accustomed to practise it. He refused Charles the pension stipulated by the private treaty, alleging that its conditions had not been performed; and urged on Montagu, with promises of indemnification, to betray as much as he knew of that secret, in order to ruin lord Danby *.

The ultimate cause of this minister's fall may thus be deduced from the best action of his life, though it ensued immediately from his very culpable weakness in aiding the king's base propenseness to a sordid bargaining with France. It is well known that the famous letter to Montagu, empowering him to make an offer of neutrality for the price of 6,000,000 livres, was not only written by the king's express order, but that Charles attested this with his own signature in a postscript. This bears date five days after an act had absolutely passed to raise money for carrying on the war; a circumstance worthy of particular attention, as it both puts an end to every pretext or apology which the least scrupulous could venture to urge in behalf of this negotiation, but justifies the whig party of England in an invincible distrust, an inexpiable hatred of so perfidious a cozener as filled the throne. But as he

* Dalrymple, 178, et post.

was beyond their reach, they exercised a constitutional right in the impeachment of his responsible minister. For responsible he surely was, though, strangely mistaking the obligations of an English statesman, Danby seems to fancy in his printed defence that the king's order would be a sufficient warrant to justify obedience in any case not literally unlawful. "I believe," he says, "there are very few subjects but would take it ill not to be obeyed by their servants; and their servants might as justly expect their master's protection for their obedience." The letter to Montagu, he asserts, "was written by the king's command, upon the subject of peace and war, wherein his majesty alone is at all times sole judge, and ought to be obeyed not only by any of his ministers of state, but by all his subjects*." Such were, in that age, the monarchical or tory maxims of government, which the impeachment of this minister contributed in some measure to overthrow. As the king's authority for the letter to Montagu was an undeniable fact, evidenced by his own hand-writing, the commons in impeaching lord Danby went a great way towards establishing the principle that no minister can shelter himself behind the throne by pleading obedience to the orders of his sovereign. He is answerable for the justice, the honesty, the utility of all measures emanating from the crown, as well as for their legality; and thus the executive administration is, or ought to be, subordinate, in all great matters of policy, to the superintendence and virtual control of the two houses of parliament. It must at the same time be admitted that through the heat of honest indignation, and some less worthy passions on the one hand, through uncertain and crude principles of constitutional law on the other, this just and necessary impeachment of the earl of Danby was not so conducted as to be exempt from all reproach. The charge of high-treason for an offence manifestly amounting only to misdemeanor, with the purpose, not perhaps of taking the life of the accused,

* Memoirs relating to the Impeachment of the earl of Danby, 1710, p. 151. 227. State Trials, vol. xi.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

but at least of procuring some punishment beyond the law *, the strange mixture of articles as to which there was no presumptive proof, or which were evidently false, such as concealment of the popish plot, gave such a character of intemperance and faction to these proceedings, as may lead superficial readers to condemn them altogether †. The compliance of Danby with the king's corrupt policy had been highly culpable, but it was not unprecedented; it was even conformable to the court standard of duty; and as it sprung from too inordinate a desire to retain power, it would have found an appropriate and adequate chastisement in exclusion from office. We judge, perhaps, somewhat more favourably of lord Danby than his contemporaries at that juncture were warranted to do; but even then he was rather a minister to be pulled down, than a man to be severely punished. His one great and undeniable service to the protestant and English interests should have palliated a multitude of errors. Yet this was the main-spring and first source of the intrigue that ruined him.

The impeachment of lord Danby brought forward several material discussions on that part of our constitutional law, which should not be passed over in this place. 1. As soon as the charges presented by the commons at the bar of the upper house had been read, a motion was made, that the earl should withdraw; and another afterwards, that he should be committed to the Tower: both of which were negatived by considerable majorities ‡. This refusal to commit on a charge of treason had created a dispute between the two houses in the instance of lord Clarendon §. In

* The violence of the next house of commons, who refused to acquiesce in Danby's banishment, to which the lords had changed their bill of attainder, may seem to render this very doubtful. But it is to be remembered, that they were exasperated by the pardon he had clandestinely obtained, and pleaded in bar of their impeachment.

† The impeachment was carried by 179 to 116, 19 Dec. A motion, 21 Dec. to leave out the word traitorously, was lost by 179 to 141.

‡ Lords' Journals, 26 Dec. 1678. Eighteen peers entered their protests; Halifax, Essex, Shaftesbury, &c.

§ State Trials, vi. 351, et post. Hatsell's Precedents, iv. 176.

that case, however, one of the articles of impeachment did actually contain an unquestionable treason. But it was contended with much force on the present occasion, that if the commons, by merely using the word traitorously, could alter the character of offences that, on their own showing, amounted only to misdemeanors, the boasted certainty of the law in matters of treason would be at an end; and unless it were meant that the lords should pass sentence in such a case, against the received rules of law, there could be no pretext for their refusing to admit the accused to bail. Even in Strafford's case, which was a condemned precedent, they had a general charge of high-treason upon which he was committed; while the offences alleged against Danby were stated with particularity, and upon the face of the articles could not be brought within any reasonable interpretation of the statutes relating to treason. The house of commons faintly urged a remarkable clause in the act of Edward III., which provides that in case of any doubt arising as to the nature of an offence charged to amount to treason, the judges should refer it to the sentence of parliament; and maintained that this invested the two houses with a declaratory power to extend the penalties of the law to new offences which had not been clearly provided for in its enactments. But though something like this might possibly have been in contemplation with the framers of that statute, and precedents were not absolutely wanting to support the construction, it was so repugnant to the more equitable principles of criminal law which had begun to gain ground, that even the heat of faction did not induce the commons to insist upon it. They may be considered, however, as having carried their point; for though the prorogation and subsequent dissolution of the present parliament ensued so quickly, that nothing more was done in the matter, yet when the next house of commons revived the impeachment, the lords voted to take Danby into custody without any further objection *. It ought not to be inferred from hence,

* Lords' Journals, 16 April.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

that they were wrong in refusing to commit; nor do I conceive, notwithstanding the later precedent of lord Oxford, that any rule to the contrary is established. In any future case it ought to be open to debate, whether articles of impeachment pretending to contain a charge of high-treason do substantially set forth overt acts of such a crime; and if the house of lords shall be of opinion, either by consulting the judges or otherwise, that no treason is specially alleged, they should, notwithstanding any technical words, treat the offence as a misdemeanor, and admit the accused to bail *.

2. A still more important question sprung up as to the king's right of pardon upon a parliamentary impeachment. Danby, who had absconded on the unexpected revival of these proceedings in the new parliament, finding that an act of attainder was likely to pass against him in consequence of his flight from justice, surrendered himself to the usher of the black rod, and, on being required to give in his written answer to the charges of the commons, pleaded a pardon secretly obtained from the king, in bar of the prosecution †. The commons resolved that the pardon was illegal and void, and ought not to be pleaded in bar of the impeachment of the commons of England. They demanded

* "The lord privy seal, Anglesea, in a conference between the two houses," said "that in the transaction of this affair were two great points gained by this house of commons: the first was, that impeachments made by the commons in one parliament continued from session to session, and parliament to parliament, notwithstanding prorogations or dissolutions: the other point was, that in cases of impeachments, upon special matter shown, if the modesty of the party directs him not to withdraw, the lords admit that of right they ought to order him to withdraw, and that afterwards he ought to be committed. But he understood that the lords did not intend to extend the points of withdrawing and committing to general impeachments without special matter alleged; else they did not know how many might be picked out of their house on a sudden."

Shaftesbury said, indecently enough, that they were as willing to be rid of the earl of Danby as the commons, and cavilled at the distinction between general and special impeachments. Commons' Journals, 12 April, 1679. On the impeachment of Scroggs for treason, in the next parliament, it was moved to commit him, but the previous question was carried, and he was admitted to bail; doubtless because no sufficient matter was alleged. Twenty peers protested. Lords' Journals, 7 Jan. 1681.

† Lords' Journals, 25th April. Parl. Hist. 1121, &c.

judgment at the lords' bar, against Danby, as having put in a void plea. They resolved, with that culpable violence which distinguished this and the succeeding house of commons, in order to deprive the accused of the assistance of counsel, that no commoner whatsoever should presume to maintain the validity of the pardon pleaded by the earl of Danby, without their consent, on pain of being accounted a betrayer of the liberties of the commons of England*. They denied the right of the bishops to vote on the validity of this pardon. They demanded the appointment of a committee from both houses to regulate the form and manner of proceeding on this impeachment, as well as on that of the five lords accused of participation in the popish plot. The upper house gave some signs of a vacillating and temporizing spirit, not by any means unaccountable. They acceded, after a first refusal, to the proposition of a committee, though manifestly designed to encroach on their own exclusive claim of judicature†. But they came to a resolution that the spiritual lords had a right to sit and vote in parliament in capital cases, until judgment of death should be pronounced‡. The commons of course protested against this vote‖; but a prorogation soon dropped the curtain over their differences, and Danby's impeachment was not acted upon in the next parliament.

There seems to be no kind of pretence for objecting to the votes of the bishops on such preliminary questions as may arise in an impeachment of treason. It is true that ancient custom has so far ingrafted the provisions of the ecclesiastical law on our

* Lords' Journals, 9th May, 1679.

† Lords' Journals, 10th and 11th May. After the former vote 50 peers, out of 107 who appear to have been present, entered their dissent; and another, the earl of Leicester, is known to have voted with the minority. This unusual strength of opposition, no doubt, produced the change next day.

‡ 13th May. Twenty-one peers were entered as dissentient. The commons inquired whether it were intended by this that the bishops should vote on the pardon of Danby, which the upper house declined to answer, but said they could not vote on the trial of the five popish lords. 15th, 17th, 27th May.

‖ See the report of a committee in Journals, 26th May; or Hatsell's Precedents, iv. 374.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

constitution, that they are bound to withdraw when judgment of life or death is pronounced; though even in this, they always do it with a protestation of their right to remain. This, once claimed as a privilege of the church, and reluctantly admitted by the state, became, in the lapse of ages, an exclusion and badge of inferiority. In the constitutions of Clarendon, under Henry II., it is enacted, that the bishops and others holding spiritual benefices in capite should give their attendance at trials in parliament, till it come to sentence of life or member. This, although perhaps too ancient to have authority as statute law, was a sufficient evidence of the constitutional usage, where nothing so material could be alleged on the other side. And as the original privilege was built upon nothing better than the narrow superstitions of the canon law, there was no reasonable pretext for carrying the exclusion of the spiritual lords farther than certain and constant precedents required. Though it was true, as the enemies of lord Danby urged, that by voting for the validity of his pardon, they would in effect determine the whole question in his favour, yet there seemed no serious reason, considering it abstractedly from party views, why they should not thus indirectly be restored for once to a privilege, from which the prejudices of former ages alone had shut them out.

The main point in controversy, whether a general or special pardon from the king could be pleaded in answer to an impeachment of the commons, so as to prevent any further proceedings in it, never came to a regular decision. It was evident that a minister who had influence enough to obtain such an indemnity might set both houses of parliament at defiance; the pretended responsibility of the crown's advisers, accounted the palladium of our constitution, would be an idle mockery, if not only punishment could be averted, but inquiry frustrated. Even if the king could remit the penalties of a guilty minister's sentence upon impeachment, it would be much, that public indignation should have been excited against him, that suspicion should have been

turned into proof, that shame and reproach, irremissible by the great seal, should avenge the wrongs of his country. It was always to be presumed, that a sovereign undeceived by such a judicial inquiry, or sensible to the general voice it roused, would voluntarily, or at least prudently, abandon an unworthy favourite. Though it might be admitted, that long usage had established the royal prerogative of granting pardons under the great seal, even before trial, and that such pardons might be pleaded in bar (a prerogative indeed which ancient statutes, not repealed, though gone into disuse, or rather in no time acted upon, had attempted to restrain), yet we could not infer that it extended to cases of impeachment. In ordinary criminal proceedings by indictment the king was before the court as prosecutor, the suit was in his name; he might stay the process at his pleasure, by entering a noli prosequi; to pardon, before or after judgment, was a branch of the same prerogative; it was a great constitutional trust, to be exercised at his discretion. But in an appeal or accusation of felony, brought by the injured party, or his next of blood, a proceeding wherein the king's name did not appear, it was undoubted that he could not remit the capital sentence. The same principle seemed applicable to an impeachment at the suit of the commons of England, demanding justice from the supreme tribunal of the other house of parliament. It could not be denied, that James had remitted the whole sentence upon lord Bacon. But impeachments were so unusual at that time, and the privileges of parliament so little out of dispute, that no great stress could be laid on this precedent.

Such must have been the course of arguing, strong on political, and specious on legal grounds, which induced the commons to resist the plea put in by lord Danby. Though this question remained in suspense on the present occasion, it was finally decided by the legislature in the act of settlement, which provides that no pardon under the great seal of England be pleadable to an im-

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673–85.

peachment of the commons in parliament*. These expressions seem tacitly to concede the crown's right of granting a pardon after sentence, which, though perhaps it could not well be distinguished in point of law from a pardon pleadable in bar, stands on a very different footing, as has been observed above, with respect to constitutional policy. Accordingly upon the impeachment of the six peers who had been concerned in the rebellion of 1715, the house of lords after sentence passed, having come to a resolution on debate, that the king had a right to reprieve in cases of impeachment, addressed him to exercise that prerogative as to such of them as should deserve his mercy; and three of the number were in consequence pardoned†.

3. The impeachment of Danby first brought forward another question of hardly less magnitude, and remarkable as one of the few great points in constitutional law, which have been discussed and finally settled within the memory of the present generation: I mean the continuance of an impeachment by the commons from one parliament to another. Though this has been put at rest by a determination altogether consonant to maxims of expediency, it seems proper in this place to show briefly the grounds upon which the argument on both sides rested.

In the earlier period of our parliamentary records, the business of both houses, whether of a legislative or judicial nature, though often very multifarious, was despatched with the rapidity natural to comparatively rude times, by men impatient of delay, unused to doubt, and not cautious in the proof of facts or attentive to the subtleties of reasoning. The session, generally speaking, was not to terminate till the petitions in parliament for redress had been disposed of, whether decisively or by reference to some more permanent tribunal. Petitions for alteration of the law, presented

* 13 W. III. c. 2.

† Parl. Hist. vii. 283. Mr. Lechmere, a very ardent whig, then solicitor-general, and one of the managers on the impeachment, had most confidently denied this prerogative. Id. 233.

by the commons, and assented to by the lords, were drawn up into statutes by the king's council just before the prorogation or dissolution. They fell naturally to the ground, if the session closed before they could be submitted to the king's pleasure. The great change that took place in the reign of Henry VI., by passing bills complete in their form through the two houses, instead of petitions, while it rendered manifest to every eye that distinction between legislative and judicial proceedings which the simplicity of older times had half concealed, did not affect this constitutional principle. At the close of a session, every bill then in progress through parliament became a nullity, and must pass again through all its stages before it could be tendered for the royal assent. No sort of difference existed in the effect of a prorogation and a dissolution; it was even maintained that a session made a parliament.

During the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, writs of error from inferior courts to the house of lords became far less usual than in the preceding age; and when they occurred, as error could only be assigned on a point of law appearing on the record, they were quickly decided with the assistance of the judges. But when they grew more frequent, and especially when appeals from the chancellor, requiring often a tedious examination of depositions, were brought before the lords, it was found that a sudden prorogation might often interrupt a decision; and the question arose, whether writs of error, and other proceedings of a similar nature, did not, according to precedent or analogy, cease, or in technical language, abate, at the close of a session. An order was accordingly made by the house on March 11, 1673, that "the lords committees for privileges should inquire whether an appeal to this house either by writ of error or petition, from the proceedings of any other court, being depending, and not determined in one session of parliament, continue in statu quo unto the next session of parliament, without renewing the writ of error or petition, or beginning all anew." The committee

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

reported on the 29th of March, after mis-reciting the order of reference to them in a very remarkable manner, by omitting some words, and interpolating others, so as to make it far more extensive than it really was*, that upon the consideration of precedents, which they specify, they came to a resolution that "businesses depending in one parliament or session of parliament have been continued to the next session of the same parliament, and the proceedings thereupon have remained in the same state in which they were left when last in agitation." The house approved of this resolution, and ordered it accordingly †.

This resolution was decisive as to the continuance of ordinary judicial business beyond the termination of a session. It was still open to dispute, whether it might not abate by a dissolution. And the peculiar case of impeachment, to which, after the dissolution of the long parliament in 1678, every one's attention was turned, seemed to stand on different grounds. It was referred, therefore, to the committee of privileges, on the 11th of March, 1679, to consider, whether petitions of appeal which were presented to this house in the last parliament be still in force to be proceeded on. Next day it is referred to the same committee, on a report of the matter of fact as to the impeachments of the earl of Danby and the five popish lords in the late parliament, to consider of the state of the said impeachments and all the incidents relating thereto, and to report to the house. On the 18th of March lord Essex reported from the committee, that "upon perusal of the judgment of this house of the 29th of March, 1673, they are of opinion, that in all cases of appeals and writs of error they continue, and are to be proceeded on, in statu quo, as they stood at the dissolution of the last parliament, without beginning de novo . . . . . And upon consideration had of the

* Instead of the words in the order, "from the proceedings of any other court," the following are inserted, "or any other business wherein their lordships act as in a court of judicature, and not in their legislative capacity." The importance of this alteration as to the question of impeachment is obvious.

† Lords' Journals.

matter referred to their lordships concerning the state of the impeachments brought up from the house of commons the last parliament, &c. . . . . they are of opinion, that the dissolution of the last parliament doth not alter the state of the impeachments brought up by the commons in that parliament." This report was taken into consideration next day by the house, and after a debate, which appears from the journals to have lasted some time, and the previous question moved and lost, it was resolved to agree with the committee *.

This resolution became for some years the acknowledged law of parliament. Lord Stafford, at his trial in 1680, having requested that his counsel might be heard as to the point, whether impeachments could go from one parliament to another, the house took no notice of this question; though they consulted the judges about another which he had put, as to the necessity of two witnesses to every overt act of treason †. Lord Danby and chief justice Scroggs petitioned the lords in the Oxford parliament, one to have the charges against him dismissed, the other to be bailed; but neither take the objection of an intervening dissolution ‡. And lord Danby, after the dissolution of three successive parliaments since that in which he was impeached, having lain for three years in the Tower, when he applied to be enlarged on bail by the court of King's Bench in 1682, was refused by the judges, on the ground of their incompetency to meddle in a parliamentary impeachment; though, if the prosecution were already at an end, he would have been entitled to an absolute discharge. On Jefferies becoming chief justice of the King's Bench, Danby was admitted to bail ‖. But in the parliament

* Lords' Journals. Seventy-eight peers were present.

† Id. 4th Dec. 1680.

‡ Lords' Journ. March 24, 1681. The very next day the commons sent a message to demand judgment on the impeachment against him. Com. Journ. 25th March.

‖ Shower's Reports, ii. 335. "He was bailed to appear at the lords' bar the first day of the then next parliament." The catholic lords were bailed the next day. This proves that the impeachment was not held to be at an end.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

of 1685, the impeached lords having petitioned the house, it was resolved, that the order of the 19th of March, 1679, be reversed and annulled as to impeachments; and they were consequently released from their recognizances *.

The first of these two contradictory determinations is not certainly free from that reproach which so often contaminates our precedents of parliamentary law, and renders an honest man reluctant to show them any greater deference than is strictly necessary. It passed during the violent times of the popish plot; and a contrary resolution would have set at liberty the five catholic peers committed to the Tower, and enabled them probably to quit the kingdom before a new impeachment could be preferred. It must be acknowledged, at the same time, that it was borne out, in a considerable degree, by the terms of the order of 1673, which was liable to no suspicion of answering a temporary purpose, and that the court party in the house of lords were powerful enough to have withstood any flagrant innovation in the law of parliament. As for the second resolution, that of 1685, which reversed the former, it was passed in the very worst of times; and, if we may believe the protest, signed by the earl of Anglesea and three other peers, with great precipitation and neglect of usual forms. It was not, however, annulled after the revolution; but, on the contrary, received what may seem at first sight a certain degree of confirmation, from an order of the house of lords in 1690, on the petitions of lords Salisbury and Peterborough, who had been impeached in the preceding parliament, to be discharged; which was done after reading the resolutions of 1679 and 1685, and a long debate thereon. But as a general pardon had come out in the mean time, by which the judges held that the offences imputed to these two lords had been discharged, and as the commons showed no disposition to follow up their impeachment against them, no parlia-

* Id. 22d May, 1685.

mentary reasoning can perhaps be founded on this precedent*. In the case of the duke of Leeds, impeached by the commons in 1695, no further proceedings were had; but the lords did not make an order for his discharge from the accusation till five years after three dissolutions had intervened, and grounded it upon the commons not proceeding with the impeachment. They did not, however, send a message to inquire if the commons were ready to proceed, which, according to parliamentary usage, would be required in case of a pending impeachment. The cases of lords Somers, Orford, and Halifax, were similar to that of the duke of Leeds, except that so long a period did not intervene. These instances, therefore, rather tend to confirm the position, that impeachments did not ipso facto abate by a dissolution, notwithstanding the reversal of the order of 1679. In the case of the earl of Oxford, it was formally resolved, in 1717, that an impeachment does not determine by a prorogation of parliament; an authority conclusive to those who maintain that no difference exists in the law of parliament between the effects of a prorogation and a dissolution. But it is difficult to make all men consider this satisfactory.

The question came finally before both houses of parliament in 1791, a dissolution having intervened during the impeachment of Mr. Hastings; an impeachment which, far unlike the rapid proceedings of former ages, had already been for three years before the house of lords, and seemed likely to run on to an almost interminable length. It must have been abandoned in despair if the prosecution had been held to determine by the late dissolution. The general reasonings, and the force of precedents on both sides, were urged with great ability, and by the principal speakers in both houses; the lawyers generally inclining to main-

* Upon considering the proceedings in the house of lords on this subject, Oct. 6 and 30, 1690, and especially the protest signed by eight peers on the latter day, there can be little doubt that their release had been chiefly grounded on the act of grace, and not on the abandonment of the impeachment.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

tain the resolution of 1685, that impeachments abate by a dissolution, but against still greater names which were united on the opposite side. In the end, after an ample discussion, the continuance of impeachments, in spite of a dissolution, was carried by very large majorities; and this decision, so deliberately taken, and so free from all suspicion of partiality, the majority in neither house, especially the upper, bearing any prejudice towards the accused person, as well as so consonant to principles of utility and constitutional policy, must for ever have set at rest all dispute upon the question.

The year 1678, and the last session of the parliament that had continued since 1661, were memorable for the great national delusion of the popish plot. For national it was undoubtedly to be called, and by no means confined to the whig or opposition party, either in or out of parliament, though it gave them much temporary strength. And though it were a most unhappy instance of the credulity begotten by heated passions and mistaken reasoning, yet there were circumstances, and some of them very singular in their nature, which explain and furnish an apology for the public error, and which it is more important to point out and keep in mind, than to inveigh, as is the custom in modern times, against the factiousness and bigotry of our ancestors. For I am persuaded, that we are far from being secure from similar public delusions, whenever such a concurrence of coincidences and seeming probabilities shall again arise, as misled nearly the whole people of England in the popish plot *.

It is first to be remembered, that there was really and truly a popish plot in being, though not that which Titus Oates and his associates pretended to reveal,—not merely in the sense of Hume, who, arguing from the general spirit of proselytism in that religion, says there is a perpetual conspiracy against all

* Bishop Parker is not wrong in saying that the house of commons had so long accustomed themselves to strange fictions about popery, that upon the first discovery of Oates's plot, they readily believed every thing he said, for they had long expected whatever he declared. Hist. sui temp. p. 248 (of the translation).

governments, protestant, Mahometan and pagan, but one alert, enterprising, effective, in direct operation against the established protestant religion in England. In this plot the king, the duke of York, and the king of France, were chief conspirators; the Romish priests, and especially the jesuits, were eager co-operators. Their machinations and their hopes, long suspected, and in a general sense, known, were divulged by the seizure and publication of Coleman's letters. "We have here," he says, in one of these, "a mighty work upon our hands, no less than the conversion of three kingdoms, and by that perhaps the utter subduing of a pestilent heresy which has a long time domineered over this northern world. There were never such hopes since the death of our queen Mary, as now in our days. God has given us a prince who is become (I may say by miracle) zealous of being the author and instrument of so glorious a work; but the opposition we are sure to meet with is also like to be great; so that it imports us to get all the aid and assistance we can." These letters were addressed to Father la Chaise, confessor of Louis XIV., and displayed an intimate connexion with France for the great purpose of restoring popery. They came to light at the very period of Oates's discovery, and though not giving it much real confirmation, could hardly fail to make a powerful impression on men unaccustomed to estimate the value and bearings of evidence *.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

The conspiracy supposed to have been concerted by the jesuits at St. Omers, and in which so many English catholics were implicated, chiefly consisted, as is well known, in a scheme of assassinating the king. Though the obvious falsehood and absurdity of much that the witnesses deposed in relation to this plot

* Parl. Hist. 1024, 1035. State Trials, vii. 1. Kennet, 327. 337. 351. North's Examen, 129. 177. Ralph, 386. Burnet, i. 555. Scroggs tried Coleman with much rudeness and partiality; but his summing up in reference to the famous passage in the letters is not deficient in acuteness. In fact this not only convicted Coleman, but raised a general conviction of the truth of a plot—and a plot there was, though not Oates's.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

render it absolutely incredible, and fully acquit these unfortunate victims of iniquity and prejudice, it could not appear at the time an extravagant supposition, that an eager intriguing faction should have considered the king's life a serious obstacle to their hopes. Though as much attached in heart as his nature would permit to the catholic religion, he was evidently not inclined to take any effectual measures in its favour; he was but one year older than his brother, on the contingency of whose succession all their hopes rested, since his heiress was not only brought up in the protestant faith, but united to its most strenuous defender. Nothing could have been more anxiously wished at St. Omers than the death of Charles; and it does not seem improbable, that the atrocious fictions of Oates may have been originally suggested by some actual though vague projects of assassination, which he had heard in discourse among the ardent spirits of that college.

The popular ferment which this tale, however undeserving of credit, excited in a predisposed multitude, was naturally wrought to a higher pitch by the very extraordinary circumstances of sir Edmondbury Godfrey's death. Even at this time, although we reject the imputation thrown on the catholics, and especially on those who suffered death for that murder, it seems impossible to frame any hypothesis which can better account for the facts that seem to be authenticated. That he was murdered by those who designed to lay the charge on the papists, and aggravate the public fury, may pass with those who rely on such writers as Roger North*, but has not the slightest corroboration from any evidence, nor does it seem to have been suggested by the contemporary libellers of the court party. That he might have had, as an active magistrate, private enemies, whose revenge took away his life, which seems to be Hume's conjecture, is hardly more satisfactory; the enemies of a magistrate are not likely to have left his person unplundered, nor is it usual for justices of

* Examen, p. 196.

peace, merely on account of the discharge of their ordinary duties, to incur such desperate resentment. That he fell by his own hands was doubtless the suggestion of those who aimed at discrediting the plot; but it is impossible to reconcile this with the marks of violence which are so positively sworn to have appeared on his neck; and on a later investigation of the subject in the year 1682, when the court had become very powerful, and a belief in the plot had grown almost a mark of disloyalty, an attempt made to prove the self-murder of Godfrey, in a trial before Pemberton, failed altogether; and the result of the whole evidence, on that occasion, was strongly to confirm the supposition that he had perished by the hands of assassins *. His death remains at this moment a problem, for which no tolerably satisfactory solution can be offered. But at the time it was a very natural presumption to connect it with the plot, wherein he had not only taken the deposition of Oates, a circumstance not in itself highly important, but was supposed to have received the confidential communications of Coleman †.

Another circumstance, much calculated to persuade ordinary minds of the truth of the plot, was the trial of Reading, a Romish attorney, for tampering with the witnesses against the accused catholic peers, in order to make them keep out of the way ‡. As

* R. v. Farwell and others. State Trials, viii. 1361. They were indicted for publishing some letters to prove that Godfrey had killed himself. They defended themselves by calling witnesses to prove the truth of the fact, which, though in a case of libel, Pemberton allowed. But their own witnesses proved that Godfrey's body had all the appearance of being strangled.

The Roman catholics gave out, at the time of Godfrey's death, that he had killed himself, and hurt their own cause by foolish lies. North's Examen, p. 200.

† It was deposed by a respectable witness, that Godfrey entertained apprehensions on account of what he had done as to the plot, and had said, "On my conscience, I believe I shall be the first martyr." State Trials, vii. 168. These little additional circumstances, which are suppressed by later historians, who speak of the plot as unfit to impose on any but the most bigoted fanatics, contributed to make up a body of presumptive and positive evidence, from which human belief is rarely withheld.

It is remarkable, that the most acute and diligent historian we possess for those times, Ralph, does not in the slightest degree pretend to account for Godfrey's death; though in his general reflections on the plot, p. 555, he relies too much on the assertions of North and L'Estrange.

‡ State Trials, vii. 259. North's Examen, 240.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

such clandestine dealing with witnesses creates a strong, and perhaps with some, too strong a presumption of guilt, where justice is sure to be uprightly administered, men did not make a fair distinction as to times, when the violence of the court and jury gave no reasonable hope of escape; and when the most innocent party would much rather procure the absence of a perjured witness, than trust to the chance of disproving his testimony.

There was, indeed, good reason to distrust the course of justice. Never were our tribunals so disgraced by the brutal manners and iniquitous partiality of the bench, as in the latter years of this reign. The State Trials, none of which appear to have been published by the prisoners' friends, bear abundant testimony to the turpitude of the judges. They explained away and softened the palpable contradictions of the witnesses for the crown, insulted and threatened those of the accused, checked all cross-examination, assumed the truth of the charge throughout the whole of every trial*. One Whitbread, a jesuit, having been indicted with several others, and the evidence not being sufficient, Scroggs discharged the jury of him, but ordered him to be kept in custody till more proof might come in. He was accordingly

* State Trials, vol. vii. passim. On the trial of Green, Berry, and Hill, for Godfrey's murder, part of the story for the prosecution was, that the body was brought to Hill's lodgings on the Saturday, and remained there till Monday. The prisoner called witnesses who lodged in the same house, to prove that it could not have been there without their knowledge. Wild, one of the judges, assuming, as usual, the truth of the story as beyond controversy, said it was very suspicious that they should see or hear nothing of it; and another, Dolben, told them it was well they were not indicted. Id. 199. Jones, summing up the evidence on sir Thomas Gascoigne's trial at York, (an aged catholic gentleman, most improbably accused of accession to the plot), says to the jury; "Gentlemen, you have the king's witness on his oath; he that testifies against him is barely on his word, and he is a papist;" Id. 1039: thus deriving an argument from an iniquitous rule which, at that time, prevailed in our law, of refusing to hear the prisoner's witnesses upon oath. Gascoigne, however, was acquitted.

It would swell this note to an unwarrantable length, were I to extract so much of the trials as might fully exhibit all the instances of gross partiality in the conduct of the judges. I must, therefore, refer my readers to the volume itself, a standing monument of the necessity of the revolution, not only as it rendered the judges independent of the crown, but as it brought forward those principles of equal and indifferent justice, which can never be expected to flourish but under the shadow of liberty.

indicted again for the same offence. On his pleading that he had been already tried, Scroggs and North had the effrontery to deny that he had been ever put in jeopardy, though the witnesses for the crown had been fully heard, before the jury were most irregularly and illegally discharged of him on the former trial. North said he had often known it done, and it was the common course of law. In the course of this proceeding, Bedloe, who had deposed nothing explicit against the prisoner on the former trial, accounted for this by saying, it was not then convenient; an answer with which the court and jury were content *.

It is remarkable, that although the king might be justly surmised to give little credence to the pretended plot, and the duke of York was manifestly affected in his interests by the heats it excited, yet the judges most subservient to the court, Scroggs, North, Jones, went with all violence into the popular cry, till the witnesses beginning to attack the queen, and to menace the duke, they found it was time to rein in, as far as they could, the passions they had instigated †. Pemberton, a more honest man in political matters, showed a remarkable intemperance and unfairness in all trials relating to popery. Even in that of lord Stafford in 1680, the last, and perhaps the worst proceeding under this delusion, though the court had a standing majority in the house of lords, he was convicted by fifty-five peers against thirty-one; the earl of Nottingham, lord chancellor, the duke of Lauderdale, and several others of the administration voting him guilty, while he was acquitted by the honest Hollis and the acute Halifax ‡.

* State Trials, 119. 315. 344.

† Roger North, whose long account of the popish plot is, as usual with him, a medley of truth and lies, acuteness and absurdity, represents his brother, the chief justice, as perfectly immaculate in the midst of this degradation of the bench. The State Trials, however, show that he was as partial and unjust towards the prisoners as any of the rest, till the government thought it necessary to interfere. The moment when the judges veered round, was on the trial of sir George Wakeman, physician to the queen. Scroggs, who had been infamously partial against the prisoners upon every former occasion, now treated Oates and Bedloe as they deserved, though to the aggravation of his own disgrace. State Trials, vii. 619—686.

‡ State Trials, 1552. Parl. Hist. 1229. Stafford, though not a man of much ability, had rendered himself obnoxious as a pro-

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

So far was the belief in the popish plot, or the eagerness in hunting its victims to death, from being confined to the whig faction, as some writers have been willing to insinuate. None had more contributed to rouse the national out-cry against the accused, and create a firm persuasion of the reality of the plot, than the clergy in their sermons, even the most respectable of their order, Sancroft, Sharp, Barlow, Burnet, Tillotson, Stillingfleet; inferring its truth from Godfrey's murder, or Coleman's letters; calling for the severest laws against Catholics, and imputing to them the fire of London, nay even the death of Charles I. *

Though the duke of York was not charged with participation in the darkest schemes of the popish conspirators, it was evident that his succession was the great aim of their endeavours, and evident also that he had been engaged in the more real and undeniable intrigues of Coleman. His accession to the throne, long viewed with just apprehension, now seemed to threaten such perils to every part of the constitution, as ought not supinely to be waited for, if any means could be devised to obviate them. This gave rise to the bold measure of the exclusion bill, too bold indeed for the spirit of the country, and the rock on which English liberty was nearly shipwrecked. In the long parliament, full as it was of pensioners and creatures of court influence, nothing so vigorous would have been successful. Even in the bill which excluded catholic peers from sitting in the house of lords, a pro-

minent opposer of all measures intended to check the growth of popery. His name appears constantly in protests upon such occasions; as for instance, March 3, 1678, against the bill for raising money for a French war. Reresby praises his defence very highly, p. 108. The duke of York, on the contrary, or his biographer, observes; "Those who wished lord Stafford well were of opinion, that had he managed the advantages which were given him with dexterity, he would have made the greatest part of his judges ashamed to condemn him; but it was his misfortune to play his game worst when he had the best cards." P. 637.

* I take this from extracts out of those sermons, contained in a Roman catholic pamphlet printed in 1687, and entitled Good Advice to the Pulpits. The protestant divines did their cause no good by misrepresentation of their adversaries, and by their propensity to rudeness and scurrility. The former fault, indeed, existed in a much greater degree on the opposite side, but by no means the latter. See also a treatise by Barlow, published in 1679, entitled Popish Principles pernicious to Protestant Princes.

viso, passed by a majority of two voices, exempting the duke of York from its operation, having been sent down from the other house *. But the zeal they showed against Danby induced the king to put an end to this parliament of seventeen years duration; an event long ardently desired by the popular party, who foresaw their ascendancy in the new elections †. The next house of commons, accordingly, came together with an ardour not yet quenched by corruption; and after reviving the impeachments commenced by their predecessors, and carrying a measure long in agitation, a test ‡ which shut the catholic peers out of parlia-

* Parl. Hist. 1040.

† See Marvell's "Seasonable Argument to persuade all the grand Juries in England to petition for a new Parliament." He gives very bad characters of the principal members on the court side; but we cannot take for granted all that comes from so unscrupulous a libeller. Sir Harbottle Grimstone had first thrown out, in the session of 1675, that a standing parliament was as great a grievance as a standing army, and that an application ought to be made to the king for a dissolution. This was not seconded, and met with much disapprobation from both sides of the house. Parl. Hist. vii. 64. But the country party, in two years' time, had changed their views, and were become eager for a dissolution. An address to that effect was moved in the house of lords, and lost by only two voices, the duke of York voting for it. Id. 800. This is explained by a passage in Coleman's Letters, where that intriguer expresses his desire to see parliament dissolved, in the hope that another would be more favourable to the toleration of catholics. This must mean, that the dissenters might gain an advantage over the rigorous church of England men, and be induced to come into a general indulgence.

‡ This test, 30 Car. II. stat. 2. is the declaration subscribed by members of both houses of parliament on taking their seats, that there is no transubstantiation of the elements in the Lord's supper; and that the invocation of saints, as practised in the church of Rome, is idolatrous. The oath of supremacy was already taken by the commons, though not by the lords; and it is a great mistake to imagine that catholics were legally capable of sitting in the lower house before the act of 1679. But it had been the aim of the long parliament in 1642 to exclude them from the house of lords; and this was of course revived with greater eagerness, as the danger from their influence grew more apparent. A bill for this purpose passed the commons in 1675, but was thrown out by the peers. Journals, May 14, Nov. 8. It was brought in again in the spring of 1678. Parl. Hist. 990. In the autumn of the same year it was renewed, when the lords agreed to the oath of supremacy, but omitted the declaration against transubstantiation, so far as their own house was affected by it. Lords' Journals, Nov. 20, 1678. They also excepted the duke of York from the operation of the bill, which exception was carried in the commons by two voices. Parl. Hist. 1040. The duke of York and seven more lords protested.

The violence of those times on all sides will account for this theological declaration, but it is more difficult to justify its retention at present. Whatever influence a belief in the pope's supremacy may exercise upon men's politics, it is hard to see how the doctrine of transubstantiation can directly affect them; and surely he who renounces the former cannot be very dangerous on account of his adherence to the latter. Nor is it less extraordinary to demand from many of those who usually com-

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

ment, went upon the exclusion bill. Their dissolution put a stop to this, and in the next parliament the lords rejected it *.

The right of excluding an unworthy heir from the succession was supported not only by the plain and fundamental principles of civil society, which establish the interest of the people to be the paramount object of political institutions, but by those of the English constitution. It had always been the better opinion among lawyers, that the reigning king with consent of parliament was competent to make any changes in the inheritance of the crown; and this, besides the acts passed under Henry VIII. empowering him to name his successor, was expressly enacted, with heavy penalties against such as should contradict it, in the thirteenth year of Elizabeth. The contrary doctrine indeed, if pressed to its legitimate consequences, would have shaken all the statutes that limit the prerogative; since, if the analogy of entails in private inheritances were to be resorted to, and the existing legislature should be supposed incompetent to alter the line of succession, they could as little impair, as they could alienate, the indefeasible rights of the heir; nor could he be bound by restrictions to which he had never given his assent. It seemed strange to maintain, that the parliament could reduce a king of England to the condition of a doge of Venice, by shackling and taking away his authority, and yet could not divest him of a title which they could render little better than a mockery. Those accord-

pose a house of commons, the assertion that the practice of the church of Rome in the invocation of saints is idolatrous; since, even on the hypothesis that a country gentleman has a clear notion of what is meant by idolatry, he is, in many cases, wholly out of the way of knowing what the church of Rome, or any of its members, believe or practise. The invocation of saints, as held and explained by that church in the council of Trent, is surely not idolatrous, with whatever error it may be charged; but the practice at least of uneducated Roman catholics seems fully to justify the declaration; understanding it to refer to certain superstitions, countenanced, or not eradicated, by their clergy. I have sometimes thought that the legislator of a great nation sets off oddly by solemnly professing theological positions, about which he knows nothing, and swearing to the possession of property which he does not enjoy.

* The second reading of the exclusion bill was carried, May 21, 1679, by 207 to 128. The debates are in Parliamentary History, 1125, et post. In the next parliament it was carried without a division. Sir Leoline Jenkins alone seems to have taken the high ground, that "parliament cannot disinherit the heir of the crown; and that if such an act should pass, it would be invalid in itself." Id. 1191.

ingly who disputed the legislative omnipotence of parliament did not hesitate to assert that statutes infringing on the prerogative were null of themselves. With the court lawyers conspired the clergy, who pretended these matters of high policy and constitutional law to be within their province, and, with hardly an exception, took a zealous part against the exclusion. It was indeed a measure repugnant to the common prejudices of mankind; who, without entering on the abstract competency of parliament, are naturally accustomed, in an hereditary monarchy, to consider the next heir as possessed of a right, which, except through necessity, or notorious criminality, cannot be justly divested. The mere profession of a religion different from the established does not seem, abstractedly considered, an adequate ground for unsettling the regular order of inheritance. Yet such was the narrow bigotry of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, which died away almost entirely among protestants in the next, that even the trifling differences between Lutherans and Calvinists had frequently led to alternate persecutions in the German states, as a prince of one or the other denomination happened to assume the government. And the Romish religion, in particular, was, in that age, of so restless and malignant a character, that unless the power of the crown should be far more strictly limited than had hitherto been the case, there must be a very serious danger from any sovereign of that faith; and the letters of Coleman, as well as other evidences, made it manifest, that the duke of York was engaged in a scheme of general conversion, which, from his arbitrary temper, and the impossibility of succeeding by fair means, it was just to apprehend, must involve the subversion of all civil liberty. Still this was not distinctly perceived by persons at a distance from the scene, imbued, as most of the gentry were, with the principles of the old cavaliers, and those which the church had inculcated. The king, though hated by the dissenters, retained the affections of that party, who forgave the vices they deplored to his father's memory, and his personal affability. It

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

appeared harsh and disloyal to force his consent to the exclusion of a brother, in whom he saw no crime, and to avoid which he offered every possible expedient*. There will always be found in the people of England a strong unwillingness to force the reluctance of their sovereign—a latent feeling, of which parties, in the heat of their triumphs, are seldom aware, because it does not display itself until the moment of re-action. And although, in the less settled times before the revolution, this personal loyalty was highly dangerous, and may still, no doubt, sometimes break out so as to frustrate objects of high import to the public weal, it is on the whole a salutary temper for the conservation of the monarchy, which may require such a barrier against the encroachments of factions, and the fervid passions of the multitude.

The bill of exclusion was drawn with as much regard to the inheritance of the duke of York's daughters as they could reasonably demand, or as any lawyer engaged for them could have shown; though something different seems to be insinuated by Burnet. It provided that the imperial crown of England should descend to and be enjoyed by such person or persons successively during the life of the duke of York, as should have inherited or enjoyed the same, in case he were naturally dead. If the princess of Orange was not expressly named, which, the bishop tells us, gave a jealousy, as though it were intended to keep that matter still undetermined, this silence was evidently justified by the possible contingency of the birth of a son to the duke, whose right there was no intention in the framers of the bill to defeat. But a large part of the opposition had unfortunately other objects in view. It had been the great error of those who withstood the arbitrary counsels of Charles II. to have admitted into their closest confidence, and in a considerable degree to the management of their

* While the exclusion bill was passing the commons, the king took the pains to speak himself to almost every lord, to dissuade him from assenting to it when it should come up, telling them at the same time, let what would happen, he would never suffer such a villainous bill to pass. Life of James, 553.

party, a man so destitute of all honest principle as the earl of Shaftesbury. Under his contaminating influence, their passions became more untractable, their connexions more seditious and democratical, their schemes more revolutionary, and they broke away more and more from the line of national opinion, till a fatal re-action involved themselves in ruin, and exposed the cause of public liberty to its most imminent peril. The countenance and support of Shaftesbury brought forward that unconstitutional and most impolitic scheme of the duke of Monmouth's succession. There could hardly be a greater insult to a nation used to respect its hereditary line of kings, than to set up the bastard of a prostitute, without the least pretence of personal excellence or public services, against a princess of known virtue and attachment to the protestant religion. And the effrontery of this attempt was aggravated by the libels eagerly circulated to dupe the credulous populace into a belief of Monmouth's legitimacy. The weak young man, lured on to destruction by the arts of intriguers and the applause of the multitude, gave just offence to sober-minded patriots, who knew where the true hopes of public liberty were anchored, by a kind of triumphal procession through parts of the country, and by other indications of a presumptuous ambition *.

* Ralph, p. 498. The atrocious libel, entitled "An Appeal from the Country to the City," published in 1679, and usually ascribed to Ferguson (though said in Biogr. Brit. art. L'ESTRANGE, to be written by Charles Blount), was almost sufficient of itself to excuse the return of public opinion towards the throne. State Tracts, temp. Car. II.; Ralph, i. 476; Parl. Hist. iv. Appendix. The king is personally struck at in this tract with the utmost fury: the queen is called Agrippina, in allusion to the infamous charges of Oates; Monmouth is held up as the hope of the country. "He will stand by you, therefore you ought to stand by him. He who hath the worst title always makes the best king." One Harris was tried for publishing this pamphlet. The jury at first found him guilty of selling; an equivocal verdict, by which they probably meant to deny, or at least to disclaim, any assertion of the libellous character of the publication. But Scroggs telling them it was their province to say guilty or not guilty, they returned a verdict of guilty. State Trials, vii. 925.

Another arrow dipped in the same poison was a "Letter to a Person of Honour concerning the Black Box." Somers Tracts, viii. 189. The story of a contract of marriage between the king and Mrs. Waters, Monmouth's mother, concealed in a black box, had lately been current, and the former had taken pains to expose its falsehood by a public examination of the gentleman whose name had been made use of. This artful tract is intended to keep up the belief of Monmouth's legitimacy,

If any apology can be made for the encouragement given by some of the Whig party, for it was by no means general, to the pretensions of Monmouth, it must be found in their knowledge of the king's affection for him, which furnished a hope that he might more easily be brought into the exclusion of his brother for the sake of so beloved a child, than for the prince of Orange. And doubtless there was a period when Charles's acquiescence in the exclusion did not appear so unattainable, as from his subsequent line of behaviour we are apt to consider it. It appears from the recently published life of James, that in the autumn of 1680 the embarrassment of the king's situation, and the influence of the duchess of Portsmouth, who had gone over to the exclusionists, made him seriously deliberate on abandoning his brother*. Whether from natural instability of judgment, from the steady adherence of France to the duke of York, or from observing the great strength of the Tory party in the house of lords, where the bill was rejected by a majority of 63 to 30, he soon returned to his former disposition. It was long, however, before he treated James with perfect cordiality. Conscious of his own insincerity in religion, which the duke's bold avowal of an obnoxious creed

and even to graft it on the undeniable falsehood of that tale, as if it had been purposely fabricated to delude the people by setting them on a wrong scent. See also another libel of the same class, p. 197.

Though Monmouth's illegitimacy is past all question, it has been observed by Harris, that the princess of Orange, in writing to her brother about Mrs. Waters, in 1655, twice names her as his wife. Thurloe, i. 665, quoted in Harris's Lives, iv. 168. But though this was a scandalous indecency on her part, it proves no more than that Charles, like other young men, in the heat of passion, was foolish enough to give that appellation to his mistress; and that his sister humoured him in it.

Sidney mentions a strange piece of Monmouth's presumption. When he went to dine with the city in October, 1680, it was remarked that the bar, by which the heralds denote illegitimacy, had been taken off the royal arms on his coach. Letters to Saville, p. 54.

* Life of James, 592, et post. Compare Dalrymple, p. 265, et post. Barillon was evidently of opinion that the king would finally abandon his brother. Sunderland joined the duchess of Portsmouth, and was one of the thirty peers who voted for the bill in November, 1680. James charges Godolphin also with deserting him, p. 615. But his name does not appear in the protest signed by twenty-five peers, though that of the privy seal, lord Anglesea, does. The duchess of Portsmouth sat near the commons at Stafford's trial, "dispensing her sweetmeats and gracious looks among them." P. 638.

seemed to reproach, he was provoked at bearing so much of the odium, and incurring so many of the difficulties, which attended a profession that he had not ventured to make. He told Hyde before the dissolution of the parliament of 1680, that it would not be in his power to protect his brother any longer, if he did not conform and go to church*. Hyde himself, and the duke's other friends, had never ceased to urge him on this subject. Their importunity was renewed by the king's order, even after the dissolution of the Oxford parliament, and it seems to have been the firm persuasion of most about the court that he could only be preserved by conformity to the protestant religion. He justly apprehended the consequences of a refusal; but inflexibly conscientious on this point, he braved whatever might arise from the timidity or disaffection of the ministers and the selfish fickleness of the king.

In the apprehensions excited by the king's unsteadiness, and the defection of the duchess of Portsmouth, he deemed his fortunes so much in jeopardy, as to have resolved on exciting a civil war, rather than yield to the exclusion. He had already told Barillon that the royal authority could be re-established by no other means†. The episcopal party in Scotland had gone such lengths that they could hardly be safe under any other king. The catholics of England were of course devoted to him. With the help of these he hoped to show himself so formidable, that Charles would find it his interest to quit that cowardly line of politics, to which he was sacrificing his honour and affections. Louis, never insensible to any occasion of rendering England weak and miserable, directed his ambassador to encourage the duke in this guilty project with the promise of assistance‡. It seems to have been prevented by the wisdom or public spirit of Churchill, who pointed out to Barillon the absurdity of supposing

* Life of James, p. 657.

† Il est persuadé que l'autorité royale ne se peut rétablir en Angleterre que par une guerre civile. Aug. 19, 1680. Dalrymple, 265.

‡ Id. 277. Nov. 1680.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

that the duke could stand by himself in Scotland. This scheme of lighting up the flames of civil war in three kingdoms for James's private advantage deserves to be more remarked than it has hitherto been at a time when his apologists seem to have become numerous. If the designs of Russell and Sidney for the preservation of their country's liberty are blamed as rash and unjustifiable, what name shall we give to the project of maintaining the pretensions of an individual by means of rebellion and general bloodshed?

It is well known that those who took a concern in the maintenance of religion and liberty were much divided as to the best expedients for securing them; some, who thought the exclusion too violent, dangerous, or impracticable, preferring the enactment of limitations on the prerogatives of a catholic king. This had begun in fact from the court, who passed a bill through the house of lords in 1677, for the security, as it was styled, of the protestant religion. This provided that a declaration and oath against transubstantiation should be tendered to every king within fourteen days after his accession; that on his refusal to take it, the ecclesiastical benefices in the gift of the crown should vest in the bishops, except that the king should name to every vacant see one out of three persons proposed to him by the bishops of the province. It enacted also, that the children of a king refusing such a test should be educated by the archbishop and two or three more prelates. This bill dropped in the commons, and Marvell speaks of it as an insidious stratagem of the ministry*. It is more easy, however, to give hard names to a

* Marvell's Growth of Popery, in State Tracts, temp. Car. 2. p. 98. Parl. Hist. 853. The second reading was carried by 127 to 88. Serjeant Maynard, who was probably not in the secrets of his party, seems to have been surprised at their opposition. An objection with Marvell, and not by any means a bad one, would have been that the children of the royal family were to be consigned for education to the sole government of bishops. The duke of York, and thirteen other peers, protested against this bill, not all of them from the same motives, as may be collected from their names. Lords' Journals, 13th and 15th March, 1679.

measure originating with an obnoxious government, than to prove that it did not afford a considerable security to the established church, and impose a very remarkable limitation on the prerogative. But the opposition in the house of commons had probably conceived their scheme of exclusion, and would not hearken to any compromise. As soon as the exclusion became the topic of open discussion, the king repeatedly offered to grant every security that could be demanded consistently with the lineal succession. Hollis, Halifax, and for a time Essex, as well as several eminent men in the lower house, were in favour of limitations *. But those which they intended to insist upon were such encroachments on the constitutional authority of the crown, that, except a title and revenue, which Charles thought more valuable than all the rest, a popish king would enjoy no one attribute of royalty. The king himself, on the 30th of April 1679, before the heats on the subject had become so violent as they were the next year, offered not only to secure all ecclesiastical preferments from the control of a popish successor, but to provide that the parliament in being at a demise of the crown, or the last that had been dissolved, should immediately sit and be indissoluble for a certain time; that none of the privy council, nor judges, nor lord lieutenant, or deputy lieutenant, nor officer of the navy, should be appointed during the reign of a catholic king, without consent of parliament. He offered, at the same time, most readily to consent to any further provision that could occur to the wisdom of parliament for the security of religion and liberty consistently with the right of succession. Halifax, the eloquent and successful opponent of the exclusion, was the avowed champion of limitations. It was proposed, in addition

* Lords Russell and Cavendish, sir W. Coventry and sir Thomas Littleton, seem to have been in favour of limitations. Lord J. Russell, p. 42. Ralph, 446. Sidney's Letters, p. 32. Temple and Shaftesbury, for opposite reasons, stood alone in the council against the scheme of limitations. Temple's Memoirs.

to these offers of the king, that the duke, in case of his accession, should have no negative voice on bills; that he should dispose of no civil or military posts without consent of parliament; that a council of forty-one, nominated by the two houses, should sit permanently during the recess or interval of parliament, with power of appointing to all vacant offices, subject to the future approbation of the lords and commons *. These extraordinary innovations would, at least for the time, have changed our constitution into a republic, and justly appeared to many persons more revolutionary than an alteration in the course of succession. The duke of York looked on them with dismay; Charles indeed privately declared, that he would never consent to such infringements of the prerogative †. It is not, however, easy to perceive how he could have escaped from the necessity of adhering to his own propositions, if the house of commons would have relinquished the bill of exclusion. The prince of Orange, who was doubtless in secret not averse to the latter measure, declared strongly against the plan of restrictions, which a protestant successor might not find it practicable to shake off. Another expedient, still more ruinous to James than that of limitations, was what the court itself suggested in the Oxford parliament, that the duke retaining the title of king, a regent should be appointed, in the person of the princess of Orange, with all the royal prerogatives; nay, that the duke, with his pageant crown on his head, should be banished from England during his life ‡.

* Commons' Journals, 23d Nov. 1680, 8th Jan. 1681.

† Life of James, 634. 671. Dalrymple, p. 307.

‡ Dalrymple, p. 301. Life of James, 660. 671. The duke gave himself up for lost when he heard of the clause in the king's speech declaring his readiness to hearken to any expedient but the exclusion. Birch and Hampden, he says, were in favour of this; but Fitzharris's business set the house in a flame, and determined them to persist in their former scheme. Reresby says, p. 19, confirmed by Parl. Hist. 132, it was supported by sir Thomas Littleton, who is said to have been originally against the bill of exclusion, as well as sir William Coventry. Sidney's Letters, p. 32. It was opposed by Jones, Winnington, Booth, and, if the Parliamentary History be right, by Hampden and Birch.

This proposition, which is a great favourite with Burnet, appears liable to the same objections as were justly urged against a similar scheme at the revolution. It was certain, that in either case James would attempt to obtain possession of power by force of arms, and the law of England would not treat very favourably those who should resist an acknowledged king in his natural capacity, while the statute of Henry VII. would, legally speaking, afford a security to the adherents of a de facto sovereign.

Upon the whole, it is very unlikely, when we look at the general spirit and temper of the nation, its predilection for the ancient laws, its dread of commonwealth and fanatical principles, the tendency of the upper ranks to intrigue and corruption, the influence and activity of the church, the bold counsels and haughty disposition of James himself, that either the exclusion, or such extensive limitations as were suggested in lieu of it, could have been carried into effect with much hope of a durable settlement. It would, I should conceive, have been practicable to secure the independence of the judges, to exclude placemen and notorious pensioners from the house of commons, to render the distribution of money among its members penal, to remove from the protestant dissenters, by a full toleration, all temptation to favour the court, and above all, to put down the standing army. Though none perhaps of these provisions would have prevented the attempts of this and the next reign to introduce arbitrary power, they would have rendered them still more grossly illegal, and, above all, they would have saved that unhappy revolution of popular sentiment which gave the court encouragement and temporary success.

It was in the year 1679, that the words whig and tory were first heard in their application to English factions, and though as senseless as any cant terms that could be devised, they became instantly as familiar in use as they have since continued. There were then, indeed, questions in agitation, which rendered the distinction more broad and intelligible than it has generally been

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

in later times. One of these, and the most important, was the bill of exclusion, in which, as it was usually debated, the republican principle, that all positive institutions of society are in order to the general good, came into collision with that of monarchy, which rests on the maintenance of a royal line, as either the end, or at least the necessary means of lawful government. But as the exclusion was confessedly among those extraordinary measures, to which men of tory principles are sometimes compelled to resort in great emergencies, and which no rational whig espouses at any other time, we shall better perhaps discern the formation of these grand political sects in the petitions for the sitting of parliament, and in the counter addresses of the opposite party.

In the spring of 1679, Charles established a new privy-council by the advice of sir William Temple, consisting in great part of those eminent men in both houses of parliament, who had been most prominent in their opposition to the late ministry *. He publicly declared his resolution to govern entirely by the advice of this council, and that of parliament. The duke of York was kept in what seemed a sort of exile at Brussels †. But the just suspicion attached to the king's character prevented the commons from placing much confidence in this new ministry, and,

* Temple's Memoirs. He says their revenues in land or offices amounted to £300,000 per annum, whereas those of the house of commons seldom exceeded £400,000. The king objected much to admitting Halifax, but himself proposed Shaftesbury, much against Temple's wishes. The funds in Holland rose on the news. Barillon was displeased, and said it was making "des états, et non des conseils;" which was not without weight, for the king had declared he would take no measure, nor even choose any new counsellor, without their consent. But the extreme disadvantage of the position in which this placed the crown rendered it absolutely certain, that it was not submitted to with sincerity. Lady Portsmouth told Barillon, the new ministry was formed in order to get money from parliament. Another motive, no doubt, was to prevent the exclusion bill.

† Life of James, 558. On the king's sudden illness, Aug. 22, 1679, the ruling ministers, Halifax, Sunderland, and Essex, alarmed at the anarchy which might come on his death, of which Shaftesbury and Monmouth would profit, sent over for the duke, but soon endeavoured to make him go into Scotland, and after a struggle against the king's tricks to outwit them, succeeded in this object. Id. p. 570, et post.

as frequently happens, abated their esteem for those who, with the purest intentions, had gone into the council*. They had soon cause to perceive that their distrust had not been excessive. The ministers were constantly beaten in the house of lords; an almost certain test, in our government, of the court's insincerity†. The parliament was first prorogued, then dissolved; against the advice, in the latter instance, of the majority of that council by whom the king had pledged himself to be directed. A new parliament, after being summoned to meet in October 1679, was prorogued for a twelvemonth without the avowed concurrence of any member of the council. Lord Russell, and others of the honester party, withdrew from a board where their presence was only asked in mockery or deceit, and the whole specious scheme of Temple came to nothing before the conclusion of the year which had seen it displayed‡. Its author, chagrined at the disappointment of his patriotism and his vanity, has sought the causes of failure in the folly of Monmouth and perverseness of Shaftesbury. He was not aware, at least in their full extent, of the king's intrigues at this period. Charles, who had been induced to take those whom he most disliked into his council, with the hope of obtaining money from parliament, or of parrying the exclusion bill, and had consented to the duke of York's quitting England, found himself enthralled by ministers

* Temple. Reresby, p. 89. "So true it is," he says, "that there is no wearing the court and country livery together." Thus also Algernon Sidney, in his letters to Saville, p. 16. "The king certainly inclines not to be so stiff as formerly in advancing only those that exalt prerogative, but the earl of Essex, and some others that are coming into play thereupon, cannot avoid being suspected of having intentions different from what they have hitherto professed." He ascribed the change of ministry at this time to Sunderland: "if he and two more [Essex and Halifax] can well agree among themselves, I believe they will have the management of almost all businesses, and may bring much honour to themselves and good to our nation." April 21, 1679. But he writes afterwards, Sept. 8, that Halifax and Essex were become very unpopular, p. 50. "The bare being preferred," says secretary Coventry, "maketh some of them suspected, though not criminal." Lord J. Russell's Life of Lord Russell, p. 90.

† See the protests in 1679, passim.

‡ Temple's Memoirs. Life of James, 581.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

whom he could neither corrupt nor deceive; Essex, the firm and temperate friend of constitutional liberty in power as he had been out of it, and Halifax, not yet led away by ambition or resentment from the cause he never ceased to approve. He had recourse, therefore, to his accustomed refuge, and humbly implored the aid of Louis against his own council and parliament. He conjured his patron not to lose this opportunity of making England for ever dependent upon France. These are his own words, such at least as Barillon attributes to him *. In pursuance of this overture, a secret treaty was negotiated between the two kings, whereby, after long haggling, Charles, for a pension of 1,000,000 livres annually during three years, obliged himself not to assemble parliament during that time. This negotiation was broken off, through the apprehensions of Hyde and Sunderland, who had been concerned in it, about the end of November 1679, before the long prorogation which is announced in the Gazette by a proclamation of December 11th. But the resolution having been already taken not to permit the meeting of parliament, Charles persisted in it as the only means of escaping the bill of exclusion, even when deprived of the pecuniary assistance to which he had trusted.

Though the king's behaviour on this occasion exposed the fallacy of all projects for reconciliation with the house of commons, it was very well calculated for his own ends; nor was there any part of his reign wherein he acted with so much prudence, as from this time to the dissolution of the Oxford parliament. The scheme concerted by his adversaries, and already put in operation, of pouring in petitions from every part of the kingdom for the meeting of parliament, he checked in the outset by a proclamation, artfully drawn up by Chief Justice North; which, while it kept clear of any thing so palpably unconstitutional as a prohibition of petitions, served the purpose of manifesting the king's

* Dalrymple, p. 230. 237.

dislike to them, and encouraged the magistrates to treat all attempts that way as seditious and illegal, while it drew over the neutral and lukewarm to the safer and stronger side*. Then were first ranged against each other the hosts of whig and tory, under their banners of liberty or loyalty; each zealous, at least in profession, to maintain the established constitution, but the one seeking its security by new maxims of government, the other by an adherence to the old. It must be admitted that petitions to the king from bodies of his subjects, intended to advise or influence him in the exercise of his undoubted prerogatives, such as the time of calling parliament together, familiar as they may now have become, had no precedent except one in the dark year 1640, and were repugnant to the ancient principles of our monarchy. The cardinal maxim of toryism is, that the king ought to exercise all his lawful prerogatives without the interference, or unsolicited advice even of parliament, much less of the people. These novel efforts therefore were met by addresses from most of the grand juries, from the magistrates at quarter sessions, and from many corporations, expressing not merely their entire confidence in the king, but their abhorrence of the petitions for the assembling of parliament; a term which, having been casually used in one address, became the watch-word of the whole party†. Some allowance must be made for the exertions made by the court, especially through the judges of assize, whose charges to grand juries were always of a political nature. Yet there can be no doubt that the strength of the tories manifested itself beyond expectation. Sluggish and silent in its fields, like the animal which it has taken for its type, the deep-rooted loyalty of the English gentry to the crown may escape a superficial observer, till some circumstance calls forth an indignant

* See Roger North's account of this court stratagem. Examen of Kennet, 546. The proclamation itself, however, in the Gazette, 12th Dec. 1679, is more strongly worded than we should expect from North's account of it, and is by no means limited to *tumultuous* petitions.

† London Gazettes of 1680, passim.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673–85.

and furious energy. The temper shown in 1680 was not according to what the late elections would have led men to expect, not even to that of the next elections for the parliament at Oxford. A large majority returned on both these occasions, and that in the principal counties, as much as in corporate towns, were of the whig principle. It appears that the ardent zeal against popery in the smaller freeholders must have overpowered the natural influence of the superior classes. The middling and lower orders, particularly in towns, were clamorous against the duke of York and the evil counsellors of the crown. But with the country gentlemen, popery was scarce a more odious word than fanaticism; the memory of the late reign and of the usurpation was still recent, and in the violence of the commons, in the insolence of Monmouth and Shaftesbury, in the bold assaults upon hereditary right, they saw a faint image of that confusion which had once impoverished and humbled them. Meanwhile the king's dissimulation was quite sufficient for these simple loyalists; the very delusion of the popish plot raised his name for religion in their eyes, since his death was the declared aim of the conspirators; nor did he fail to keep alive this favourable prejudice by letting that imposture take its course, and by enforcing the execution of the penal laws against some unfortunate priests*.

It is among the great advantages of a court in its contention with the asserters of popular privileges, that it can employ a circumspect and dissembling policy, which is never found on the opposite side. The demagogues of faction, or the aristocratic leaders of a numerous assembly, even if they do not feel the influence of the passions they excite, which is rarely the case, are urged onwards by their headstrong followers, and would both lay themselves open to the suspicion of unfaithfulness and damp the

* David Lewis was executed at Usk for saying mass, Aug. 27, 1679. State Trials, vii. 256. Other instances occur in the same volume; see especially p. 811. 839. 849. 857. Pemberton was more severe and unjust towards these unfortunate men than Scroggs. The king, as his brother tells us, came unwillingly into these severities to prevent worse. Life of James, 583.

spirit of their party, by a wary and temperate course of proceeding. Yet that incautious violence to which ill-judging men are tempted by the possession of power must, in every case, and especially where the power itself is deemed an usurpation, cast them headlong. This was the fatal error of that house of commons which met in October, 1680; and to this the king's triumph may chiefly be ascribed. The addresses declaratory of abhorrence of petitions for the meeting of parliament were doubtless intemperate with respect to the petitioners; but it was preposterous to treat them as violations of privilege. A few precedents, and those in times of much heat and irregularity, could not justify so flagrant an encroachment on the rights of the private subject, as the commitments of men for a declaration so little affecting the constitutional rights and functions of parliament*. The expulsion of Withens, their own member, for promoting one of these addresses, though a violent measure, came in point of law within their acknowledged authority†. But it was by no means a generally received opinion in that age, that the house of commons had an unbounded jurisdiction, directly or indirectly, over their constituents. The lawyers, being chiefly on the side of prerogative, inclined at least to limit very greatly this alleged power of commitment for breach of privilege or contempt of the house. It had very rarely, in fact, been exerted, except in cases of serving legal process on members or other molestation, before the long parliament of Charles I.; a time absolutely discredited by one party, and confessed by every reasonable man to be full of innovation and violence. That the commons had no right of judicature was admitted; was it compatible to principles of reason and justice, that they could, merely by using the words contempt or breach of privilege in a warrant, deprive the subject of that liberty, which the recent statute of Habeas Corpus had secured

* Journals, passim. North's Examen, 377. 561.

† They went a little too far, however, when they actually seated sir William Waller in Withens's place for Westminster. Ralph, 514.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

against the highest ministers of the crown? Yet one Thompson, a clergyman at Bristol, having preached some virulent sermons, wherein he traduced the memory of Hampden for refusing the payment of ship-money, and spoken disrespectfully of queen Elizabeth, as well as insulted those who petitioned for the sitting of parliament, was sent for in custody of the serjeant to answer at the bar for his high misdemeanour against the privileges of that house, and was afterwards compelled to find security for his forthcoming to answer to an impeachment voted against him on these strange charges*. Many others were brought to the bar, not only for the crime of abhorrence, but for alleged misdemeanours still less affecting the privileges of parliament, such as remissness in searching for papists. Sir Robert Cann, of Bristol, was sent for in custody of the serjeant-at-arms, for publicly declaring that there was no popish, but only a presbyterian plot. A general panic, mingled with indignation, was diffused through the country, till one Stawell, a gentleman of Devonshire, had the courage to refuse compliance with the speaker's warrant; and the commons, who hesitated at such a time to risk an appeal to the ordinary magistrates, were compelled to let this contumacy go unpunished. If indeed we might believe the journals of the house, Stawell was actually in custody of the serjeant, though allowed a month's time on account of sickness. This was most probably a subterfuge to conceal the truth of the case†.

These encroachments under the name of privilege were exactly in the spirit of the long parliament, and revived too forcibly the recollection of that awful period. It was commonly in men's mouths, that 1641 was come about again. There appeared indeed for several months a very imminent danger of civil war. I have already mentioned the projects of the duke of York in case his brother had given way to the exclusion bill. There could be little reason to doubt that many of the opposite leaders were

* Journals, Dec. 24, 1680. † Parl. Hist. i. 174.

ready to try the question by arms. Reresby has related a conversation he had with lord Halifax immediately after the rejection of the bill, which shows the expectation of that able statesman, that the differences about the succession would end in civil war*. The just abhorrence good men entertain for such a calamity, excites their indignation against those who conspicuously bring it on. And however desirous some of the court might be to strengthen the prerogative by quelling a premature rebellion, the commons were, in the eyes of the nation, far more prominent in accelerating so terrible a crisis. Their votes in the session of November, 1680, were marked by the most extravagant factiousness †. Their conduct in the short parliament held at Oxford in March, 1681, served still more to alienate the peaceable part of the community. That session of eight days was marked by the rejection of a proposal to vest all effective power during the duke of York's life in a regent, and by an attempt to screen the author of a treasonable libel from punishment, under the pretext of impeaching him at the bar of the upper house. It seems difficult not to suspect, that the secret instigations of Barillon, and even his gold, had considerable influence on some of those who swayed the votes of this parliament.

Though the impeachment of Fitzharris, to which I have just alluded, was in itself a mere work of temporary faction, it brought into discussion a considerable question in our constitutional law,

* Reresby's Memoirs, 106. Lord Halifax and he agreed, he says, on consideration, that the court party were not only the most numerous, but the most active and wealthy part of the nation.

† It was carried by 219 to 95, (17th Nov.) to address the king to remove lord Halifax from his councils and presence for ever. They resolved, nem. con. that no member of that house should accept of any office or place of profit from the crown, or any promise of one, during such time as he should continue a member; and that all offenders herein should be expelled. 30th Dec. They passed resolutions against a number of persons by name, whom they suspected to have advised the king not to pass the bill of exclusion. 7th Jan. 1680. They resolved unanimously, (10th Jan.) that it is the opinion of this house, that the city of London was burnt in the year 1666 by the papists, designing thereby to introduce popery and arbitrary power into this kingdom. They were going on with more resolutions in the same spirit, when the usher of the black rod appeared to prorogue them. Parl. Hist.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

which deserves notice, both on account of its importance, and because a popular writer has advanced an untenable proposition on the subject. The commons impeached this man of high-treason. The lords voted, that he should be proceeded against at common law. It was resolved, in consequence, by the lower house, "that it is the undoubted right of the commons in parliament assembled, to impeach before the lords in parliament any peer or commoner for treason, or any other crime or misdemeanour: and that the refusal of the lords to proceed in parliament upon such impeachment is a denial of justice, and a violation of the constitution of parliament*." It seems indeed difficult to justify the determination of the lords. Certainly the declaration in the case of sir Simon de Bereford, who having been accused by the king, in the fourth year of Edward III. before the lords, of participating in the treason of Roger Mortimer, that noble assembly protested, with the assent of the king in full parliament, that albeit they had taken upon them, as judges of the parliament, in the presence of the king, to render judgment, yet the peers, who then were or should be in time to come, were not bound to render judgment upon others than peers, nor had power to do so; and that the said judgment thus rendered should never be drawn to example or consequence in time to come, whereby the said peers of the land might be charged to judge others than their peers, contrary to the laws of the land; certainly, I say, this declaration, even if it amounted to a statute, concerning which there has been some question†, was not necessarily to be interpreted as applicable to impeachments at the suit of the commons, wherein the king is no ways a party. There were several precedents in the reign of Richard II. of such impeachments for treason. There had been more than one in that

* Commons' Journals, March 26, 1681.

† Parl. Hist. ii. 54. Lord Hale doubted whether this were a statute. But the judges, in 1689, on being consulted by the lords, inclined to think that it was one; arguing, I suppose, from the words "in full parliament," which have been held to imply the presence and assent of the commons.

of Charles I. The objection indeed was so novel, that chief-justice Scroggs, having been impeached for treason, in the last parliament, though he applied to be admitted to bail, had never insisted on so decisive a plea to the jurisdiction. And if the doctrine, adopted by the lords, were to be carried to its just consequences, all impeachment of commoners must be at an end; for no distinction is taken in the above mentioned declaration as to Bereford between treason and misdemeanour. The peers had indeed lost, except during the session of parliament, their ancient privilege in cases of misdemeanour, and were subject to the verdict of a jury; but the principle was exactly the same, and the right of judging commoners upon impeachment for corruption or embezzlement, which no one called in question, was as much an exception from the ordinary rules of law, as in the more rare case of high treason. It is hardly necessary to observe that the 29th section of Magna Charta, which establishes the right of trial by jury, is by its express language solely applicable to the suits of the crown.

This very dangerous and apparently unfounded theory, broached upon the occasion of Fitzharris's impeachment by the earl of Nottingham, never obtained reception, and was rather intimated, than avowed, in the vote of the lords, that he should be proceeded against at common law. But after the revolution, the commons having impeached sir Adam Blair, and some others, of high treason, a committee was appointed to search for precedents on this subject, and after full deliberation, the house of lords came to a resolution, that they would proceed on the impeachments *. The inadvertent position, therefore, of Blackstone †, that a commoner cannot be impeached for high treason, is not only difficult to be supported upon ancient authorities, but contrary to the latest determination of the supreme tribunal.

* Hatsell's Precedents, iv. 54, and Appendix, 347. State Trials, viii. 236; and xii. 1218.

† Commentaries, vol. iv. c. 19.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

No satisfactory elucidation of the strange libel for which Fitzharris suffered death has yet been afforded. There is much probability in the supposition, that it was written at the desire of some in the court, in order to cast odium on their adversaries; a very common stratagem of unscrupulous partisans*. It caused an impression unfavourable to the whigs in the nation. The court made a dexterous use of that extreme credulity, which has been supposed characteristic of the English, though it belongs at least equally to every other people. They seized into their hands the very engines of delusion that had been turned against them. Those perjured witnesses, whom Shaftesbury had hallooed on through all the infamy of the popish plot, were now arrayed in the same court to swear treason and conspiracy against him†. Though he escaped by the resoluteness of his grand jury, who refused to find a bill of indictment on testimony, which they professed themselves to disbelieve, and which was probably false, yet this extraordinary deviation from the usual practice did harm rather than otherwise to the general cause of his faction. The judges had taken care that the witnesses should be examined

* Ralph, 564, et post. State Trials, 223. 427. North's Examen, 274. Fitzharris was an Irish papist, who had evidently had interviews with the king through lady Portsmouth. One Hawkins, afterwards made dean of Chichester for his pains, published a narrative of this case full of falsehoods.

† State Trials, viii. 759. Roger North's remark on this is worthy of him; "having sworn false, as it is manifest some did before to one purpose, it is more likely they swore true to the contrary." Examen, p. 117. And sir Robert Sawyer's observation to the same effect is also worthy of him. On College's trial, Oates, in his examination for the prisoner, said, that Turberville had changed sides; Sawyer, as counsel for the crown, answered, "Dr. Oates, Mr. Turberville has not changed sides, you have; he is still a witness for the king, you are against him." State Trials, viii. 639.

The opposite party were a little perplexed by the necessity of refuting testimony they had relied upon. In a dialogue, intitled Ignoramus Vindicated, it is asked, why were Dr. Oates and others believed against the papists? and the best answer the case admits is given: "Because his and their testimony was backed by that undeniable evidence of Coleman's papers, Godfrey's murder, and a thousand other pregnant circumstances, which makes the case much different from that when people, of very suspected credit, swear the grossest improbabilities." But the same witnesses, it is urged, had lately been believed against the papists. "What! then," replies the advocate of Shaftesbury, "may not a man be very honest and credible at one time, and six months after, by necessity, subornation, malice, or twenty ways, become a notorious villain?"

in open court, so that the jury's partiality, should they reject such positive testimony, might become glaring. Doubtless it is, in ordinary cases, the duty of a grand juror to find a bill upon the direct testimony of witnesses, where they do not contradict themselves or each other, and where their evidence is not palpably incredible or contrary to his own knowledge *. The oath of that inquest is forgotten, either where they render themselves, as seems too often the case, the mere conduit-pipes of accusation, putting a prisoner in jeopardy upon such slender evidence, as does not call upon him for a defence; or where, as we have sometimes known in political causes, they frustrate the ends of justice by rejecting indictments which are fully substantiated by testimony. Whether the grand jury of London, in their celebrated ignoramus on the indictment preferred against Shaftesbury, had sufficient grounds for their incredulity, I will not pretend to determine †. There was probably no one man among them who had not implicitly swallowed the tales of the same witnesses in the trials for the plot. The nation, however, in general, less bigoted, or at least more honest in their bigotry, than those London citizens, was staggered by so many depositions to a traitorous conspiracy, in those who had pretended an excessive loyalty to the king's person ‡. Men unaccustomed to courts of

* The true question for a grand juror to ask himself seems to be this: Is the evidence such as that, if the prisoner can prove nothing to the contrary, he ought to be convicted? However, where any considerable doubt exists as to this, as a petty juror ought to acquit, so a grand juror ought to find the indictment.

† Roger North, and the prerogative writers in general, speak of this inquest as a scandalous piece of perjury, enough to justify the measures soon afterwards taken against the city. But Ralph, who, at this period of history, is very impartial, seems to think the jury warranted by the absurdity of the depositions. It is to be remembered, that the petty juries had shown themselves liable to intimidation, and that the bench was sold to the court. In modern times, such an ignoramus could hardly ever be justified. There is strong reason to believe, that the court had recourse to subornation of evidence against Shaftesbury. Ralph, 140, et post. And the witnesses were chiefly low Irishmen, in whom he was not likely to have placed confidence. As to the association found among Shaftesbury's papers, it was not signed by himself, nor, as I conceive, treasonable, only binding the associators to oppose the duke of York, in case of his coming to the crown. State Trials, viii. 786. See also 827, and 835.

‡ If we may believe James II., the populace hooted Shaftesbury when he was

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

justice are naturally prone to give credit to the positive oaths of witnesses. They were still more persuaded, when, as in the trial of College at Oxford, they saw this testimony sustained by the approbation of a judge, (and that judge a decent hypocrite, who gave no scandal), and confirmed by the verdict of a jury. The gross iniquity practised towards the prisoner in that trial was not so generally bruited as his conviction *. There is in England a remarkable confidence in our judicial proceedings, in part derived from their publicity, and partly from the indiscriminate manner in which jurors are usually summoned. It must be owned that the administration of the two last Stuarts was calculated to show how easily this confiding temper might be the dupe of an insidious ambition.

The king's declaration of the reasons that induced him to dissolve the last parliament, being a manifesto against the late majority of the house of commons, was read in all churches. The clergy scarcely waited for this pretext to take a zealous part for the crown. Every one knows their influence over the nation in any cause which they make their own. They seemed to change the war against liberty into a crusade. They re-echoed from every pulpit the strain of passive obedience, of indefeasible hereditary right, of the divine origin and patriarchal descent of monarchy. Now began again the loyal addresses, more numerous and ardent than in the last year, which overspread the pages

sent to the Tower. Macpherson, 124. Life of James, 688. This was an improvement on the *odit damnatos*. They rejoiced, however, much more, as he owns, at the ignoramus, p. 714.

* See College's case in State Trials, viii. 549; and Hawles's remarks on it, 723. Ralph, 626. It is one of the worst pieces of judicial iniquity that we find in the whole collection. The written instructions he had given to his counsel before the trial were taken away from him, in order to learn the grounds of his defence. North and Jones, the judges before whom he was tried, afforded him no protection. But besides this, even if the witnesses had been credible, it does not appear to me that the facts amounted to treason. Roger North outdoes himself in his justification of the proceedings on this trial. Examen, p. 587. What would this fellow have been in power, when he writes thus in a sort of proscription, twenty years after the revolution! But in justice it should be observed, that his portraits of North and Jones, Id, 512 and 517, are excellent specimens of his inimitable talent for Dutch painting.

of the London Gazette for many months. These effusions stigmatize the measures of the three last parliaments, dwelling especially on their arbitrary illegal votes against the personal liberty of the subject. Their language is of course not alike; yet amidst all the ebullitions of triumphant loyalty, it is easy in many of them to perceive a lurking distrust of the majesty to which they did homage, insinuated to the reader in the marked satisfaction with which they allude to the king's promise of calling frequent parliaments, and of governing by the laws *.

The whigs, meantime, so late in the heyday of their pride, lay, like the fallen angels, prostrate upon the fiery lake. The scoffs and gibes of libellers, who had trembled before the resolutions of the commons, were showered upon their heads. They had to fear, what was much worse than the insults of these vermin, the perjuries of mercenary informers, suborned by their enemies to charge false conspiracies against them, and sure of countenance from the contaminated benches of justice. The court, with an artful policy, though with detestable wickedness, secured itself against its only great danger, the suspicion of popery, by the sacrifice of Plunket, the titular archbishop of Dublin †. The execution of this worthy and innocent person cannot be said to have been extorted from the king in a time of great difficulty, like that of lord Stafford. He was coolly and deliberately permitted to suffer death, lest the current of loyalty, still sensitive and suspicious upon the account of religion, might be somewhat checked in its course. Yet those who heap the epithets of merciless, inhuman, sanguinary, on the whig party for the impeachment of lord Stafford, in whose guilt they fully be-

* London Gazettes, 1681, passim. Ralph, 592, has spoken too strongly of their servility, as if they showed a disposition to give up altogether every right and privilege to the crown. This may be true in a very few instances, but is by no means their general tenor. They are exactly high tory addresses, and nothing more.

† State Trials, viii. 447. Chief justice Pemberton, by whom he was tried, had strong prejudices against the papists, though well enough disposed to serve the court in some respects.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

lieved, seldom mention, without the characteristic distinction of "good-natured," that sovereign, who signed the warrant against Plunket, of whose innocence he was assured *.

The hostility of the city of London, and of several other towns, towards the court, degenerating no doubt into a factious and indecent violence, gave a pretext for the most dangerous aggression on public liberty that occurred in the present reign. The power of the democracy in that age resided chiefly in the corporations. These returned, exclusively or principally, a majority of the representatives of the commons. So long as they should be actuated by that ardent spirit of protestantism and liberty, which prevailed in the middling classes, there was little prospect of obtaining a parliament that would co-operate with the Stuart scheme of government. The administration of justice was very much in the hands of their magistrates; and especially in Middlesex, where all juries are returned by the city sheriffs. It was

* The king, James says in 1679, was convinced of the falsehood of the plot, "while the seeming necessity of his affairs made this unfortunate prince, for so he may well be termed in this conjuncture, think he could not be safe but by consenting every day to the execution of those he knew in his heart to be most innocent; and as for that notion of letting the law take its course, it was such a piece of casuistry as had been fatal to the king his father," &c. 562. If this was blamable in 1679, how much more in 1681?

Temple relates, that having objected to leaving some priests to the law, as the house of commons had desired in 1679, Halifax said he would tell every one he was a papist, if he did not concur; and that the plot must be treated as if it were true, whether it was so or not: p. 339 (folio edit.). A vile maxim indeed! But as Halifax never showed any want of candour or humanity, and voted lord Stafford not guilty next year, we may doubt whether Temple has represented this quite exactly.

In reference to lord Stafford, I will here notice, that lord John Russell, in a passage deserving very high praise, has shown rather too much candour in censuring his ancestor (p. 140) on account of the support he gave (if, in fact, he did so, for the evidence seems weak) to the objection raised by the sheriffs, Bethell and Cornish, with respect to the mode of Stafford's execution. The king having remitted all the sentence except the beheading, these magistrates thought fit to consult the house of commons. Hume talks of Russell's seconding this "barbarous scruple," as he calls it, and imputes it to faction. But, notwithstanding the epithet, it is certain, that the only question was between death by the cord and the axe; and if Stafford had been guilty, as lord Russell was convinced, of a most atrocious treason, he could not deserve to be spared the more ignominious punishment. The truth is, which seems to have escaped both these writers, that if the king could remit a part of the sentence upon a parliamentary impeachment, it might considerably affect the question, whether he could not grant a pardon, which the commons had denied.

suggested, therefore, by some crafty lawyers, that a judgment of forfeiture obtained against the corporation of London would not only demolish that citadel of insolent rebels, but intimidate the rest of England by so striking an example. True it was, that no precedent could be found for the forfeiture of corporate privileges. But general reasoning was to serve instead of precedents, and there was a considerable analogy in the surrenders of the abbeys under Henry VIII., if much authority could be allowed to that transaction. An information, as it is called, quo warranto was accordingly brought into the Court of King's Bench against the corporation. Two acts of the common council were alleged as sufficient misdemeanours to warrant a judgment of forfeiture; one, the imposition of certain tolls on goods brought into the city markets, by an ordinance or by-law of their own; the other, their petition to the king in December 1679 for the sitting of parliament, and its publication throughout the country *. It would be foreign to the purpose of this work to inquire, whether a corporation be in any case subject to forfeiture, the affirmative of which seems to have been held by courts of justice since the revolution; or whether the exaction of tolls in their markets, in consideration of erecting stalls and standings, were within the competence of the city of London; or, if not so, whether it were such an offence as could legally incur the penalty of a total forfeiture and disfranchisement; since it was manifest that the crown made use only of this additional pretext, in order to punish the corporation for its address to the king. The language, indeed, of their petition had been uncourtly, and what the adherents of prerogative would call insolent; but it was at the worst rather a misdemeanour for which the persons concerned might be responsible, than a breach of the trust reposed in the corporation. We are not, however, so much concerned to argue the matter of law in this question, as to remark the spirit in which the attack on this

* See this petition, Somers Tracts, viii. 144.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

stronghold of popular liberty was conceived. The court of King's Bench pronounced judgment of forfeiture against the corporation; but this judgment, at the request of the attorney-general, was only recorded: the city continued in appearance to possess its corporate franchises, but upon submission to certain regulations; namely, that no mayor, sheriff, recorder, or other chief officer, should be admitted until approved by the king; that in the event of his twice disapproving their choice of a mayor, he should himself nominate a fit person, and the same in case of sheriffs, without waiting for a second election; that the court of aldermen, with the king's permission, should remove any one of their body; that they should have a negative on the elections of common councilmen, and in case of disapproving a second choice, to have themselves the nomination. The corporation submitted thus to purchase the continued enjoyment of its estates, at the expense of its municipal independence; yet, even in the prostrate condition of the whig party, the question to admit these regulations was carried by no great majority in the common councils*. The city was of course absolutely subservient to the court from this time to the revolution.

After the fall of the capital, it was not to be expected that towns less capable of defence should stand out. Informations quo warranto were brought against several corporations, and a far greater number hastened to anticipate the assault by voluntary surrenders. It seemed to be recognised as law by the judgment against London, that any irregularity or misuse of power in a corporation might incur a sentence of forfeiture; and few could boast that they were invulnerable at every point. The judges of assize on their circuits prostituted their influence and authority, to forward this and every other encroachment of the crown. Jefferies, on the northern circuit in 1684, to use the language of Charles II.'s most unblushing advocate, "made all the charters,

* State Trials, viii. 1039—1340. Ralph, 717. The majority was but 104 to 86; a division honourable to the spirit of the citizens.

like the walls of Jericho, fall down before him, and returned laden with surrenders the spoils of towns*." They received instead new charters, framing the constitution of these municipalities on a more oligarchical model, and reserving to the crown the first appointment of those who were to form the governing part of the corporation. These changes were gradually brought about in the last three years of Charles's reign, and in the beginning of the next.

There can be nothing so destructive to the English constitution, not even the introduction of a military force, as the exclusion of the electoral body from their franchises. The people of this country are, by our laws and constitution, bound only to obey a parliament duly chosen; and this violation of charters, in the reigns of Charles and James, appears to me the great and leading justification of that event which drove the latter from the throne. It can, therefore, be no matter of censure, in a moral sense, that some men of pure and patriotic virtue, mingled, it must be owned, with others of a far inferior temper, began to hold consultations as to the best means of resisting a government, which, whether to judge from these proceedings, or from the language of its partisans, was aiming without disguise at an arbitrary power. But as resistance to established authority can never be warrantable until it is expedient, the proverbial saying, that treason never prospers, because by prospering it ceases to be treason, being founded upon very good sense, we could by no means approve any schemes of insurrection that might be projected in 1682, unless we could perceive that there was a fair chance of their success. And this we are not led, by what we read of the spirit of those times, to believe. The tide ran violently in another direction; the courage of the whigs was broken; their adversaries were strong in numbers and in zeal. But from hence it is reasonable to infer, that men, like lord Essex and lord

* North's Examen, 626.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

Russell, with so much to lose by failure, with such good sense, and such abhorrence of civil calamity, would not ultimately have resolved on the desperate issue of arms, though they might deem it prudent to form estimates of their strength, and to knit together a confederacy which absolute necessity might call into action. It is beyond doubt that the supposed conspirators had debated among themselves the subject of an insurrection, and poised the chances of civil war. Thus much the most jealous lawyer, I presume, will allow might be done, without risking the penalties of treason. They had, however, gone farther; and by concerting measures in different places, as well as in Scotland, for a rising, though contingently, and without any fixed determination to carry it into effect, most probably, if the whole business had been disclosed in testimony, laid themselves open to the law, according to the construction it has frequently received. There is a considerable difficulty, after all that has been written, in stating the extent of their designs; but, I think, we may assume, that a wide-spreading and formidable insurrection was for several months in agitation *. But the difficulties and hazards of the enterprise had already caused lord Russell and lord Essex to recede from the desperate counsels of Shaftesbury; and but for the unhappy detection of the conspiracy, and the perfidy of lord Howard, these two noble persons, whose lives were untimely lost to their country, might have survived to join the banner and support the throne of William. It is needless to observe, that the minor plot, if we may use that epithet in reference to the relative dignity of the conspirators, for assassinating the king and the duke of York, had no immediate connexion with the schemes of Russell, Essex, and Sidney †.

* Lady Russell's opinion was, that "it was no more than what her lord confessed, talk—and it is possible that talk going so far as to consider, if a remedy for supposed evils might be sought, how it could be formed." Life of Lord Russell, p. 266. It is not easy, however, to talk long in this manner about the *how* of treason, without incurring the penalties of it.

† See this business well discussed by the acute and indefatigable Ralph, p. 722, and by Lord John Russell, p. 253. See

But it is by no means a consequence from the admission we have made, that the evidence adduced on lord Russell's trial was sufficient to justify his conviction *. It appears to me, that lord Howard, and perhaps Rumsey, were unwilling witnesses; and that the former, as is frequently the case with those who betray their friends in order to save their own lives, divulged no more than was extracted by his own danger. The testimony of neither witness, especially Howard, was given with any degree of that precision which is exacted in modern times; and, as we now read the trial, it is not probable that a jury in later ages would have found a verdict of guilty, or would have been advised to it by the court. But, on the other hand, if lord Howard were really able to prove more than he did, which I much suspect, a better conducted examination would probably have elicited facts unfavourable to the prisoner, which at present do not appear.

also State Trials, ix. 358, et post. There appears no cause for doubting the reality of what is called the Rye-house plot. The case against Walcot, Id. 519, was pretty well proved; but his own confession completely hanged him and his friends too. His attainder was reversed after the revolution, but only on account of some technical errors, not essential to the merits of the case.

* State Trials, ix. 577. Lord Essex cut his throat in the Tower. He was a man of the most excellent qualities, but subject to constitutional melancholy, which overcame his fortitude; an event the more to be deplored, that there seems to have been no possibility of his being convicted. A suspicion, as is well known, obtained credit with the enemies of the court, that lord Essex was murdered; and some evidence was brought forward by the zeal of one Braddon. The late editor of the State Trials seems a little inclined to revive this report, which even Harris (Life of Charles, p. 352), does not venture to accredit; and I am surprised to find lord John Russell observe, "It would be idle, at the present time, to pretend to give any opinion on the subject," p. 182. This I can by no means admit. We have, on the one side, some testimonies by children, who frequently invent and persist in falsehoods, with no conceivable motive. But, on the other hand, we are to suppose, that Charles II. and the duke of York caused a detestable murder to be perpetrated on one towards whom they had never shown any hostility, and in whose death they had no interest. Each of these princes had faults enough; but I may venture to say, that they were totally incapable of such a crime. One of the presumptive arguments of Braddon, in a pamphlet published long afterwards, is, that the king and his brother were in the Tower on the morning of lord Essex's death. If this leads to any thing, we are to believe that Charles the Second, like the tyrant in a Grub-street tragedy, came to kill his prisoner with his own hands. Any man of ordinary understanding, which seems not to have been the case with Mr. Braddon, must perceive that the circumstance tends to repel suspicion, rather than the contrary. See the whole of this, including Braddon's pamphlet, in State Trials, ix. 1127.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1674—85.

I do not perceive that any overt act of treason is distinctly proved against lord Russell, except his concurrence in the project of a rising at Taunton, to which Rumsey deposes. But this depending on the oath of a single witness, could not be sufficient for a conviction.

Pemberton, chief-justice of the common-pleas, tried this illustrious prisoner with more humanity than was usually displayed on the bench; but, aware of his precarious tenure in office, he did not venture to check the counsel for the crown, Sawyer and Jefferies, the most brutal and corrupt of mankind, permitting them to give a great body of hearsay evidence, with only the feeble and useless remark, that it did not affect the prisoner*. Yet he checked lord Anglesea, when he offered similar evidence for the defence. In his direction to the jury, it deserves to be remarked, that he by no means advanced the general proposition, which better men have held, that a conspiracy to levy war is in itself an overt act of compassing the king's death; limiting it to cases where the king's person might be put in danger, in the immediate instance, by the alleged scheme of seizing his guards †. His language indeed, as recorded in the printed trial, was such as might have produced a verdict of acquittal from a jury tolerably disposed towards the prisoner; but the sheriffs, North and Rich, who had been illegally thrust into office, being men, especially the former, wholly devoted to the prerogative, had taken care to return a pannel in whom they could confide ‡.

* State Trials, 615. Sawyer told lord Russell, when he applied to have his trial put off, that he would not have given the king an hour's notice to save his life. Id. 582. Yet he could not pretend that the prisoner had any concern in the assassination plot.

† The act annulling lord Russell's attainder recites him to have been "wrongfully convicted by partial and unjust constructions of law." State Trials, ix. 695. Several pamphlets were published after the revolution by sir Robert Atkins and sir John Hawles against the conduct of the court in this trial, and by sir Bartholomew Shower in behalf of it. These are in the State Trials. But Holt, by laying down the principle of constructive treason in Ashton's case, established for ever the legality of Pemberton's doctrine, and indeed carried it a good deal further.

‡ There seems little doubt, that the juries were packed through a conspiracy of the sheriffs with Burton and Graham, so-

The trial of Algernon Sidney, at which Jefferies, now raised to the post of chief-justice of the king's bench, presided, is as familiar to all my readers, as that of Lord Russell *. Their names have been always united in grateful veneration and sympathy. It is notorious, that Sidney's conviction was obtained by a most illegal distortion of the evidence. Besides lord Howard, no living witness could be produced to the conspiracy for an insurrection; and though Jefferies permitted two others to prepossess the jury by a second-hand story, he was compelled to admit, that their testimony could not directly affect the prisoner †. The attorney-general, therefore, had recourse to a paper found in his house, which was given in evidence, either as an overt act of treason by its own nature, or as connected with the alleged conspiracy; for though it was only in the latter sense that it could be admissible at all, yet Jefferies took care to insinuate, in his charge to the jury, that the doctrines it contained were treasonable in themselves, and without reference to other evidence. In regard to truth, and to that justice which cannot be denied to the worst men in their worst actions, I must observe, that the common accusation against the court in this trial, of having admitted insufficient proof by the mere comparison of hand-writing, though alleged, not only in most of our historians, but in the act of parliament reversing Sidney's attainder, does not appear to be well founded; the testimony to that fact, unless the printed trial is extraordinarily falsified, being such as would be received at

solicitors for the crown. State Trials, ix. 932. These two men ran away at the revolution; but Roger North vindicates their characters, and those who trust in him may think them honest.

* State Trials, ix. 818.

† Id 846. Yet in summing up the evidence, he repeated all West and Keeling had thus said at second-hand, without reminding the jury that it was not legal testimony. Id. 899. It would be said by his advocates, if any are left, that these witnesses must have been left out of the question, since there could otherwise have been no dispute about the written paper. But they were undoubtedly intended to prop up Howard's evidence, which had been so much shaken by his previous declaration, that he knew of no conspiracy.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

present *. We may allow also, that the passages from this paper, as laid in the indictment, containing very strong assertions of the right of the people to depose an unworthy king, might by possibility, if connected by other evidence with the conspiracy itself, have been admissible as presumptions for the jury to consider whether they had been written in furtherance of that design. But when they came to be read on the trial with their context, though only with such parts of that as the attorney-general chose to produce out of a voluminous manuscript, it was clear that they belonged to a theoretical work on government, long since perhaps written, and incapable of any bearing upon the other evidence †.

The manifest iniquity of this sentence upon Algernon Sidney, as well as the high courage he displayed throughout these last scenes of his life, have inspired a sort of enthusiasm for his name, which neither what we know of his story, nor the opinion of his contemporaries seem altogether to warrant. The crown of martyrdom should be suffered, perhaps, to exalt every virtue, and efface every defect in patriots, as it has often done in saints. In the faithful mirror of history, Sidney may lose something of this

* This is pointed out, perhaps for the first time, in an excellent modern law-book, Phillips's Law of Evidence. Yet the act for the reversal of Sidney's attainder declares, in the preamble, that "the paper, supposed to be his hand-writing, was not proved by the testimony of any one witness to be written by him, but the jury was directed to believe it by comparing it with other writings of the said Algernon." State Trials, 997. This does not appear to have been the case, and though Jefferies is said to have garbled the manuscript trial before it was printed, (for all the trials, at this time, were published by authority, which makes them much better evidence against the judges than for them), yet he can hardly have substituted so much testimony without its attracting the notice of Atkins and Hawles, who wrote after the revolution. However, in Hayes's case, State Trials, x. 312, though the prisoner's hand-writing to a letter was proved in the usual way by persons who had seen him write, yet this letter was also shown to the jury, along with some of his acknowledged writing, for the purpose of their comparison. It is possible therefore, that the same may have been done on Sidney's trial, though the circumstance does not appear. Jefferies indeed says, "comparison of hands was allowed for good proof in Sidney's case." Id. 313. But I do not believe that the expression was used in that age so precisely as it is at present; and it is well known to lawyers, that the rules of evidence on this subject have only been distinctly laid down within the memory of the present generation.

† See Harris's Lives, v. 347.

lustre. He possessed no doubt a powerful, active, and undaunted mind, stored with extensive reading on the topics in which he delighted. But having proposed one only object for his political conduct, the establishment of a republic in England, his pride and inflexibility, though they gave a dignity to his character, rendered his views narrow, and his temper unaccommodating. It was evident to every reasonable man, that a republican government, being adverse to the prepossessions of a great majority of the people, could only be brought about and maintained by the force of usurpation. Yet for this idol of his speculative hours, he was content to sacrifice the liberties of Europe, to plunge the country in civil war, and even to stand indebted to France for protection. He may justly be suspected of having been the chief promoter of the dangerous cabals with Barillon; nor could any tool of Charles's court be more sedulous in representing the aggressions of Louis XIV. in the Netherlands as indifferent to our honour and safety.

Sir Thomas Armstrong, who had fled to Holland on the detection of the plot, was given up by the States. A sentence of outlawry, which had passed against him in his absence, is equivalent, in cases of treason, to a conviction of the crime. But the law allows the space of one year, during which the party may surrender himself to take his trial. Armstrong, when brought before the court, insisted on this right, and demanded a trial. Nothing could be more evident, in point of law, than that he was entitled to it. But Jefferies, with inhuman rudeness, treated his claim as wholly unfounded, and would not even suffer counsel to be heard in his behalf. He was executed accordingly without trial*. But it would be too prolix to recapitulate all the instances of brutal injustice, or of cowardly subserviency, which degraded the English lawyers of the Stuart period, and never so infamously as in these last years of Charles II. From this prostitution of

* State Trials, x. 105.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

the tribunals, from the intermission of parliaments, and the steps taken to render them in future mere puppets of the crown, it was plain that all constitutional securities were at least in abeyance, and those who felt themselves most obnoxious, or whose spirit was too high to live in an enslaved country, retired to Holland as an asylum in which they might wait the occasion of better prospects, or, at the worst, breathe an air of liberty.

Meanwhile the prejudice against the whig party, which had reached so great a height in 1681, was still farther enhanced by the detection of the late conspiracy. The atrocious scheme of assassination, alleged against Walcot and some others who had suffered, was blended by the arts of the court and clergy, and by the blundering credulity of the gentry, with those less heinous projects ascribed to lord Russell and his associates*. These projects, if true in their full extent, were indeed such as men honestly attached to the government of their country could not fail to disapprove. For this purpose, a declaration full of malicious insinuations was ordered to be read in all churches†. It was generally commented upon, we may make no question, in one of those loyal discourses, which trampling on all truth, charity, and moderation, had no other scope than to inflame the hearers against non-conforming protestants, and to throw obloquy on the constitutional privileges of the subject.

It is not my intention to censure, in any strong sense of the word, the Anglican clergy at this time for their assertion of absolute non-resistance, so far as it was done without calumny and insolence towards those of another way of thinking, and without self-interested adulation of the ruling power. Their error was very dangerous, and had nearly proved destructive of the whole

* The grand jury of Northamptonshire, in 1683, "present it as very expedient and necessary for securing the peace of this country, that all ill affected persons may give security for the peace;" specifying a number of gentlemen of the first families, as the names of Montagu, Langham, &c. show. Somers Tracts, viii. 409.

† Ralph, p 768. Harris's Lives, v. 321.

constitution; but it was one which had come down with high recommendation, and of which they could only perhaps be undeceived, as men are best undeceived of most errors, by experience that it might hurt themselves. It was the tenet of their homilies, their canons, their most distinguished divines and casuists; it had the apparent sanction of the legislature in a statute of the present reign. Many excellent men, as was shown after the revolution, who had never made use of this doctrine as an engine of faction or private interest, could not disentangle their minds from the arguments or the authority on which it rested. But by too great a number it was eagerly brought forward to serve the purposes of arbitrary power, or at best to fix the wavering protestantism of the court by professions of unimpeachable loyalty. To this motive, in fact, we may trace a good deal of the vehemence with which the non-resisting principle had been originally advanced by the church of England under the Tudors, and was continually urged under the Stuarts. If we look at the tracts and sermons published by both parties after the restoration, it will appear manifest that the Romish and Anglican churches bade, as it were, against each other for the favour of the two royal brothers. The one appealed to its acknowledged principles, while it denounced the pretensions of the holy see to release subjects from their allegiance, and the bold theories of popular government, which Mariana and some other Jesuits had promulgated. The others retaliated on the first movers of the reformation, and expatiated on the usurpation of lady Jane Grey, not to say Elizabeth, and the republicanism of Knox or Calvin.

From the æra of the exclusion-bill especially, to the death of Charles II., a number of books were published in favour of an indefeasible hereditary right to the crown, and of absolute non-resistance. These were, however, of two very different classes. The authors of the first, who were perhaps the more numerous,

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

did not deny the legal limitations of monarchy. They admitted, that no one was bound to concur in the execution of unlawful commands. Hence the obedience they deemed indispensable was denominated passive; an epithet, which, in modern usage, is little more than redundant, but at that time made a sensible distinction. If all men should confine themselves to this line of duty, and merely refuse to become the instruments of such unlawful commands, it was evident that no tyranny could be carried into effect. If some should be wicked enough to co-operate against the liberties of their country, it would still be the bounden obligation of Christians to submit. Of this, which may be reckoned the moderate party, the most eminent were Hickes, in a treatise called Jovian, and Sherlock, in his case of resistance to the supreme powers*. To this also must have belonged arch-

* This book of Sherlock, printed in 1684, is the most able treatise on that side. His proposition is that "sovereign princes, or the supreme power in any nation, in whomsoever placed, is in all cases irresistible." He infers, from the statute 13 Car. 2. declaring it unlawful, under any pretence, to wage war, even defensive, against the king, that the supreme power is in him; for he who is unaccountable and irresistible is supreme. There are some, he owns, who contend that the higher powers mentioned by St. Paul meant the law, and that when princes violate the laws, we may defend their legal authority against their personal usurpations. He answers this very feebly. "No law can come into the notion and definition of supreme and sovereign powers; such a prince is under the direction, but cannot possibly be said to be under the government of the law, because there is no superior power to take cognizance of his breach of it, and a law has no authority to govern where there is no power to punish." P. 114. "These men think," he says, p. 126, "that all civil authority is founded in consent, as if there were no natural lord of the world, or all mankind came free and independent into the world. This is a contradiction to what at other times they will grant, that the institution of civil power and authority is from God; and indeed if it be not, I know not how any prince can justify the taking away the life of any man, whatever crime he has been guilty of. For no man has power of his own life, and therefore cannot give this power to another; which proves that the power of capital punishments cannot result from mere consent, but from a superior authority, which is lord of life and death." This is plausibly urged, and is not refuted in a moment. He next comes to an objection, which eventually he was compelled to admit, with some discredit to his consistency and disinterestedness. "'Is the power of victorious rebels and usurpers from God? Did Oliver Cromwell receive his power from God? then it seems it was unlawful to resist him too, or to conspire against him; then all those loyal subjects who refused to submit to him when he had got the power in his hands were rebels and traitors.' To this I answer, that the most prosperous rebel is not the higher powers, while our natural prince, to whom we owe obedience and subjection, is in being. And therefore, though such men may get the power into their hands by God's permission, yet not by God's ordinance; and he who resists

bishop Sancroft, and the great body of non-juring clergy, who had refused to read the declaration of indulgence under James II., and whose conduct in that respect would be utterly absurd, except on the supposition that there existed some lawful boundaries of the royal authority.

But besides these men, who kept some measures with the constitution, even while, by their slavish tenets, they laid it open to the assaults of more intrepid enemies, another and a pretty considerable class of writers did not hesitate to avow their abhorrence of all limitations upon arbitrary power. Brady went back to the primary sources of our history, and endeavoured to show that Magna Charta, as well as every other constitutional law, were but rebellious encroachments on the ancient uncontrollable imprescriptible prerogatives of the monarchy. His writings, replete with learning and acuteness, and in some respects with just remarks, though often unfair and always partial, naturally produced an effect on those who had been accustomed to value the constitution rather for its presumed antiquity, than its real excellence. But the author most in vogue with the partisans of despotism was sir Robert Filmer. He had lived before the civil war, but his posthumous writings came to light about this period. They contain an elaborate vindication of what was called the patriarchal scheme of government, which, rejecting with scorn that original contract whence human society had been supposed to spring, derives all legitimate authority from that of primo-

them does not resist the ordinance of God, but the usurpations of men. In hereditary kingdoms, the king never dies, but the same minute that the natural person of one king dies, the crown descends upon the next of blood; and therefore, he who rebelleth against the father, and murders him, continues a rebel in the reign of the son, which commences with his father's death. It is otherwise, indeed, where none can pretend a greater title to the crown than the usurper, for there possession of power seems to give a right." P. 127.

Sherlock began to preach in a very different manner as soon as James showed a disposition to set up his own church. "It is no act of loyalty," he told the house of commons, May 29, 1685, "to accommodate or compliment away our religion and its legal securities." Good Advice to the Pulpits.

CHAP. XII. Charles II. 1673—85.

geniture, the next heir being king by divine right, and as incapable of being restrained in his sovereignty, as of being excluded from it. "As kingly power," he says, "is by the law of God, so hath it no inferior power to limit it. The father of a family governs by no other law than his own will, not by the laws and wills of his sons and servants*." "The direction of the law is but like the advice and direction which the king's council gives the king, which no man says is a law to the king†." "General laws," he observes, "made in parliament, may, upon known respects to the king, by his authority be mitigated or suspended upon causes only known to him; and by the coronation oath, he is only bound to observe good laws, of which he is the judge‡." "A man is bound to obey the king's command against law, nay, in some cases, against divine laws §." In another treatise, entitled the Anarchy of a Mixed or Limited Monarchy, he inveighs, with no kind of reserve or exception, against the regular constitution; setting off with an assumption, that the parliament of England was originally but an imitation of the States General of France, which had no further power than to present requests to the king ‖.

These treatises of Filmer obtained a very favourable reception. We find the patriarchal origin of government frequently mentioned in the publications of this time as an undoubted truth. Considered with respect to his celebrity rather than his talents, he was not, as some might imagine, too ignoble an adversary for Locke to have combated. Another person, far superior to Filmer in political eminence, undertook at the same time an unequivocal defence of absolute monarchy. This was sir George Mackenzie, the famous lord advocate of Scotland. In his Jus Regium, published in 1684, and dedicated to the university of Oxford, he maintains, that "monarchy in its nature is absolute,

* P. 81. † P. 95. ‡ P. 98. 100. § P. 100. ‖ This treatise, subjoined to one of greater length, entitled the Freeholder's Grand Inquest, was published in 1679; but the Patriarcha not till 1685.

and consequently these pretended limitations are against the nature of monarchy*." "Whatever proves monarchy to be an excellent government, does by the same reason prove absolute monarchy to be the best government; for if monarchy be to be commended because it prevents divisions, then a limited monarchy, which allows the people a share, is not to be commended, because it occasions them; if monarchy be commended, because there is more expedition, secresy, and other excellent qualities to be found in it, then absolute monarchy is to be commended above a limited one, because a limited monarch must impart his secrets to the people, and must delay the noblest designs, until malicious and factious spirits be either gained or overcome; and the same analogy of reason will hold in reflecting upon all other advantages of monarchy, the examination whereof I dare trust to every man's own bosom†." We can hardly, after this, avoid being astonished at the effrontery even of a Scots crown lawyer, when we read in the preface to this very treatise of Mackenzie, "Under whom can we expect to be free from arbitrary government, when we were and are afraid of it under king Charles I. and king Charles II.?"

It was at this time that the university of Oxford published their celebrated decree against pernicious books and damnable doctrines, enumerating as such above twenty propositions, which they anathematized as false, seditious, and impious. The first of these is, that all civil authority is derived originally from the people; the second, that there is a compact, tacit or express, between the king and his subjects: and others follow of the same description. They do not explicitly condemn a limited monarchy, like Filmer, but evidently adopt his scheme of primogenitary right, which is incompatible with it. Nor is there the slightest intimation that the university extended their censure

* P. 39. † P. 46.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

to such praises of despotic power as have been quoted in the last pages*. This decree was publicly burned by an order of the house of lords in 1709: nor does there seem to have been a single dissent in that body to a step that cast such a stigma on the university. But the disgrace of the offence was greater than that of the punishment.

We can frame no adequate conception of the jeopardy in which our liberties stood under the Stuarts, especially in this particular period, without attending to this spirit of servility, which had been so sedulously excited. It seemed as if England was about to play the scene which Denmark had not long since exhibited, by a spontaneous surrender of its constitution. And although this loyalty were much more on the tongue than in the heart, as the next reign very amply disclosed, it served at least to deceive the court into a belief that its future steps would be almost without difficulty. It is uncertain whether Charles would have summoned another parliament. He either had the intention, or professed it in order to obtain money from France, of convoking one at Cambridge in the autumn of 1681†. But after the scheme of new-modelling corporations began to be tried, it was his policy to wait the effects of this regeneration. It was better still, in his judgment, to dispense with the commons altogether. The period fixed by law had elapsed nearly twelve months before his death, and we have no evidence that a new parliament was in contemplation. But Louis, on the other hand, having discontinued his annual subsidy to the king in 1684, after gaining Strasburg and Luxemburg by his connivance, or rather co-operation‡, it would

* Collier, 902; Somers Tracts, viii. 420.

† Dalrymple, appendix, 8; Life of James, 691. He pretended to come into a proposal of the Dutch for an alliance with Spain and the empire against the fresh encroachments of France, and to call a parliament for that purpose, but with no sincere intention, as he assured Barillon. "Je n'ai aucune intention d'assembler le parlement; ces sont des diables qui veulent ma ruine." Dalrymple, 15.

‡ He took 100,000 livres for allowing the French to seize Luxemburg; after this

not have been easy to avoid a recurrence to the only lawful source of revenue. The king of France, it should be observed, behaved towards Charles as men usually treat the low tools by whose corruption they have obtained any end. During the whole course of their long negotiations, Louis, though never the dupe of our wretched monarch, was compelled to endure his shuffling evasions, and pay dearly for his base compliances. But when he saw himself no longer in need of them, it seems to have been in revenge that he permitted the publication of the secret treaty of 1670, and withdrew his pecuniary aid. Charles deeply resented both these marks of desertion in his ally. In addition to them he discovered the intrigues of the French ambassadors with his malecontent commons. He perceived also that by bringing home the duke of York from Scotland, and restoring him in defiance of the test act to the privy council, he had made the presumptive heir of the throne, possessed as he was of superior steadiness and attention, too near a rival to himself. These reflections appear to have depressed his mind in the latter months of his life, and to have produced that remarkable private reconciliation with the duke of Monmouth, through the influence of lord Halifax; which, had he lived, would very probably have displayed one more revolution in the uncertain policy of this reign *. But a death, so sudden and inopportune as to excite suspicions of poison in some most nearly

he offered his arbitration, and on Spain's refusal, laid the fault on her, though already bribed to decide in favour of France. Lord Rochester was a party in all these base transactions. The acquisition of Luxemburg and Strasburg was of the utmost importance to Louis, as they gave him a predominating influence over the four Rhenish electors, through whom he hoped to procure the election of the dauphin as king of the Romans. Id. 36.

* Dalrymple, appendix, 74; Burnet; Mazure, Hist. de la Revolution de 1688, i. 340. 372. This is confirmed by, or rather confirms, the very curious notes found in the duke of Monmouth's pocket-book when he was taken after the battle of Sedgmoor, and published in the appendix to Welwood's Memoirs. Though we should rather see more external evidence of their authority, than, as far as I know, has been produced, they have great marks of it in themselves; and it is not impossible that, after the revolution, Welwood may have obtained them from the secretary of state's office.

CHAP. XII.

Charles II. 1673—85.

connected with him, gave a more decisive character to the system of government*.

*. It is mentioned by Mr. Fox, as a tradition in the duke of Richmond's family, that the duchess of Portsmouth believed Charles II. to have been poisoned. This I find confirmed in a letter read on the trial of Francis Francia, indicted for treason in 1715. "The duchess of Portsmouth, who is at present here, gives a great deal of offence, as I am informed, by pretending to prove that the late king James had poisoned his brother Charles; it was not expected, that after so many years' retirement in France, she should come hither to revive that vulgar report, which at so critical a time cannot be for any good purpose." State Trials, xv. 948. It is almost needless to say, that the suspicion was wholly unwarrantable.

CHAPTER XIII.

ON THE STATE OF THE CONSTITUTION UNDER CHARLES II.

Effect of the Press—Restrictions upon it before and after the Restoration—Licensing Acts—Political Writings checked by the Judges—Instances of illegal Proclamations not numerous—Juries fined for Verdicts—Question of their Right to return a general Verdict—Habeas Corpus Act passed—Differences between Lords and Commons—Judicial Powers of the Lords historically traced—Their Pretensions about the Time of the Restoration—Resistance made by the Commons—Dispute about their original Jurisdiction—And that in Appeals from Courts of Equity—Question of the exclusive Right of the Commons as to Money-bills—Its History—The Right extended farther—State of the Upper House under the Tudors and Stuarts—Augmentation of the Temporal Lords—State of the Commons—Increase of their Members—Question as to Rights of Election—Four different Theories as to the original Principle—Their Probability considered.

It may seem rather an extraordinary position, after the last chapters, yet is strictly true, that the fundamental privileges of the subject were less invaded, the prerogative swerved into fewer excesses during the reign of Charles II. than perhaps in any former period of equal length. Thanks to the patriot energies of Selden and Elliott, of Pym and Hampden, the constitutional boundaries of royal power had been so well established, that no minister was daring enough to attempt any flagrant and general violation of them. The frequent session of parliament, and its high estimation of its own privileges, furnished a security against illegal taxation. Nothing of this sort has been imputed to the government of Charles, the first king of England, perhaps, whose reign was wholly free from such a charge. And as the nation happily escaped the attempts that were made after the restoration, to revive the star-chamber and high-commission courts, there was no means of chastising political delinquencies, except through

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

the regular tribunals of justice, and through the verdict of a jury. Ill as the one were often constituted, and submissive as the other might often be found, they afforded something more of a guarantee, were it only by the publicity of their proceedings, than the dark and silent divan of courtiers and prelates who sat in judgment under the two former kings. Though the bench was frequently subservient, the bar contained high-spirited advocates, whose firm defence of their clients the judges often reproved, but no longer affected to punish. The press, above all, was in continual service. An eagerness to peruse cheap and ephemeral tracts on all subjects of passing interest had prevailed ever since the reformation. These had been extraordinarily multiplied from the meeting of the long parliament. Some thousand pamphlets of different descriptions, written between that time and the restoration, may be found in the British Museum; and no collection can be supposed to be perfect. It would have required the summary process and stern severity of the court of star-chamber to repress this torrent, or reduce it to those bounds which a government is apt to consider as secure. But the measures taken with this view under Charles II. require to be distinctly noticed.

In the reign of Henry VIII., when the political importance of the art of printing, especially in the great question of the reformation, began to be apprehended, it was thought necessary to assume an absolute control over it, partly by the king's general prerogative, and still more by virtue of his ecclesiastical supremacy *. Thus it became usual to grant by letters patent the

* It was said in 18 Car. II. (1666) that "the king by the common law hath a general prerogative over the printing press; so that none ought to print a book for public use without his license." This seems, however, to have been in the argument of counsel; but the court held that a patent to print law-books exclusively was no monopoly. Carter's Reports, 89. "Matters of state and things that concern the government," it is said in another case, "were never left to any man's liberty to print that would." 1 Mod. Reps. 258. Kennet informs us, that several complaints having been made of Lilly's Grammar, the use of which had been prescribed by the royal ecclesiastical supremacy, it was thought proper, in 1664, that a new public form of grammar should be drawn up and *approved in convocation*, to be enjoined by the royal autho-

exclusive right of printing the Bible or religious books, and afterwards all others. The privilege of keeping presses was limited to the members of the stationers' company, who were bound by regulations established in the reign of Mary by the star-chamber, for the contravention of which they incurred the speedy chastisement of that vigilant tribunal. These regulations not only limited the number of presses, and of men who should be employed on them, but subjected new publications to the previous inspection of a licenser. The long parliament did not hesitate to copy this precedent of a tyranny they had overthrown, and by repeated ordinances against unlicensed printing, hindered, as far as in them lay, this great instrument of political power from serving the purposes of their adversaries. Every government, however popular in name or origin, must have some uneasiness from the great mass of the multitude, some vicissitudes of public opinion to apprehend; and experience shows that republics, especially in a revolutionary season, shrink as instinctively, and sometimes as reasonably, from an open license of the tongue and pen, as the most jealous court. We read the noble apology of Milton for the freedom of the press with admiration; but it had little influence on the parliament to whom it was addressed.

It might easily be anticipated, from the general spirit of lord Clarendon's administration, that he would not suffer the press to emancipate itself from these established shackles *. A bill for the regulation of printing failed in 1661, from the commons' jealousy of the peers, who had inserted a clause exempting their own houses from search †. But next year a statute was enacted, which, reciting the well-government and regulating of printers

rity. One was accordingly brought in by bishop Pearson, but the matter dropped. Life of Charles II., 274.

* We find an order of council, June 7, 1660, that the stationers' company do seize and deliver to the secretary of state all copies of Buchanan's History of Scotland, and De Jure Regni apud Scotos, "which are very pernicious to monarchy, and injurious to his majesty's blessed progenitors." Kennet's Register, 176. This was beginning early.

† Commons' Journals, July 29, 1661.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

and printing-presses to be matter of public care and concernment, and that by the general licentiousness of the late times many evil-disposed persons had been encouraged to print and sell heretical and seditious books, prohibits every private person from printing any book or pamphlet, unless entered with the stationers' company, and duly licensed in the following manner; to wit, books of law by the chancellor or one of the chief justices, of history and politics by the secretary of state, of heraldry by the kings at arms, of divinity, physic, or philosophy, by the bishops of Canterbury or London, or, if printed in either university, by its chancellor. The number of master-printers was limited to twenty; they were to give security, to affix their names, and to declare the author, if required by the licenser. The king's messengers, by warrant from a secretary of state, or the master and wardens of the stationers' company, were empowered to seize unlicensed copies wherever they should think fit to search for them, and in case they should find any unlicensed book suspected to contain matters contrary to the church or state, they were to bring them to the two bishops before mentioned, or one of the secretaries. No books were allowed to be printed out of London, except in York, and in the universities. The penalties for printing without license were of course heavy*. This act was only to last three years, and after being twice renewed, the last time until the conclusion of the first session of the next parliament, expired consequently in 1679; an era when the house of commons were happily in so different a temper, that any attempt to revive it must have proved abortive. During its continuance, the business of licensing books was intrusted to sir Roger L'Estrange, a well-known pamphleteer of that age, and himself a most scurrilous libeller in behalf of the party he espoused, that of popery and despotic power. It is hardly necessary to remind the reader of the objections that were raised to one or two lines in Paradise Lost.

* 14 Car. II. c. 33.

Though a previous license ceased to be necessary, it was held by all the judges, having met for this purpose, if we believe chief justice Scroggs, by the king's command, that all books scandalous to the government, or to private persons, may be seized, and the authors or those exposing them punished: and that all writers of false news, though not scandalous or seditious, are indictable on that account*. But in a subsequent trial, he informs the jury that, "when by the king's command we were to give in our opinion what was to be done in point of the regulation of the press, we did all subscribe, that to print or publish any news, books, or pamphlets of news whatsoever is illegal; that it is a manifest intent to the breach of the peace, and they may be proceeded against by law as an illegal thing†. Suppose now that this thing is not scandalous, what then? If there had been no reflection in this book at all, yet it is *illicitè*, and the author ought to be convicted for it. And that is for a public notice to all people, and especially printers and booksellers, that they ought to print no book or pamphlet of news whatsoever without authority." The pretended libel in this case was a periodical pamphlet, entitled the Weekly Pacquet of Advice from Rome, being rather a virulent attack on popery, than serving the purpose of a newspaper. These extraordinary propositions were so far from being loosely advanced, that the court of king's bench proceeded to make an order, that the book should no longer be printed or published by any person whatsoever‡. Such an order was evidently beyond the competence of that court, were even the prerogative of the

* State Trials, vii. 929.

† This declaration of the judges is recorded in the following passage of the London Gazette, May 5, 1680. "This day the judges made their report to his majesty in council, in pursuance of an order of this board, by which they unanimously declare, that his majesty may by law prohibit the printing and publishing of all news-books and pamphlets of news whatsoever not licensed by his majesty's authority, as manifestly tending to the breach of the peace and disturbance of the kingdom. Whereupon his majesty was pleased to direct a proclamation to be prepared for the restraining the printing of news-books and pamphlets of news without leave." Accordingly such a proclamation appears in the Gazette of May 17.

‡ State Trials, vii. 1127. viii. 184. 197. Even North seems to admit that this was a stretch of power. Examen, 564.

CHAP. XIII. Charles II. Constitution

king in council as high as its warmest advocates could strain it. It formed accordingly one article of the impeachment voted against Scroggs in the next session *. Another was for issuing general warrants (that is, warrants wherein no names are mentioned), to seize seditious libels and apprehend their authors †. But this impeachment having fallen to the ground, no check was put to general warrants, at least from the secretary of state, till the famous judgment of the court of common pleas in 1764.

Those encroachments on the legislative supremacy of parliament, and on the personal rights of the subject, by means of proclamations issued from the privy council, which had rendered former princes of both the Tudor and Stuart families almost arbitrary masters of their people, had fallen with the odious tribunal by which they were enforced. The king was restored to nothing but what the law had preserved to him. Few instances appear of illegal proclamations in his reign. One of these, in 1665, required all officers and soldiers who had served in the armies of the late usurped powers to depart the cities of London and Westminster, and not to return within twenty miles of them before the November following. This seems connected with the well grounded apprehension of a republican conspiracy ‡. Another, immediately after the fire of London, directed the mode in which houses should be rebuilt, and enjoined the lord-mayor and other city magistrates to pull down whatsoever obstinate and refractory persons might presume to erect upon pretence that the ground was their own; and especially that no houses of timber should be erected for the future §. Though the public benefit of this restriction, and of some order as to the rebuilding of a city which had been destroyed in great measure through the want of it, was sufficiently manifest, it is impossible to justify

* State Trials, viii. 163.

† It seems that these warrants, though usual, were known to be against the law. State Trials, vii. 949. 956. Possibly they might have been justified under the words of the licensing act, while that was in force; and having been thus introduced, were not laid aside.

‡ Kennet's Charles II. 277.

§ State Trials, vi. 837.

the tone and tenor of this proclamation, and more particularly as the meeting of parliament was very near at hand. But an act having passed therein for the same purpose, the proclamation must be considered as having had little effect. Another instance, and far less capable of extenuation, is a proclamation for shutting up coffee-houses, in December, 1675. I have already mentioned this as an intended measure of lord Clarendon. Coffee-houses were all at that time subject to a license, granted by the magistrates at quarter-sessions. But the licenses having been granted for a certain time, it was justly questioned whether they could in any manner be revoked. This proclamation being of such disputable legality, the judges, according to North, were consulted, and intimating to the council that they were not agreed in opinion upon the most material questions submitted to them, it seemed advisable to recall it *. In this essential matter of proclamations, therefore, the administration of Charles II. is very advantageously compared with that of his father; and, considering at the same time the entire cessation of impositions of money without consent of parliament, we must admit that, however dark might be his designs, there were no such general infringements of public liberty in his reign as had continually occurred before the long parliament.

One undeniable fundamental privilege had survived the shocks of every revolution; and, in the worst times, except those of the late usurpation, had been the standing record of primæval liberty—the trial by jury: whatever infringement had been made on this, in many cases of misdemeanor, by the pretended jurisdiction of the star-chamber, it was impossible, after the bold reformers of 1641 had lopped off that unsightly excrescence from the constitution, to prevent a criminal charge from passing the legal course of investigation through the inquest of a grand jury, and the verdict in open court of a petty jury. But the judges, and other

* Ralph, 297. North's Examen, 139. Kennet, 337. Hume of course pretends that this proclamation would have been reckoned legal in former times.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

ministers of justice, for the sake of their own authority or that of the crown, devised various means of subjecting juries to their own direction, by intimidation, by unfair returns of the panel, or by narrowing the boundaries of their lawful function. It is said to have been the practice in early times, as I have mentioned from sir Thomas Smith in another place, to fine juries for returning verdicts against the direction of the court, even as to matter of evidence, or to summon them before the star-chamber. It seems that instances of this kind were not very numerous after the accession of Elizabeth; yet a small number occur in our books of reports. They were probably sufficient to keep juries in much awe. But after the restoration, two judges, Hyde and Keeling, successively chief-justices of the king's bench, took on them to exercise a pretended power, which had at least been intermitted in the time of the commonwealth. The grand jury of Somerset having found a bill for manslaughter instead of murder, against the advice of the latter judge, were summoned before the court of King's Bench, and dismissed with a reprimand instead of a fine *. In other cases fines were set on petty juries for acquittals against the judge's direction. This unusual and dangerous inroad on so important a right attracted the notice of the house of commons; and a committee was appointed, who reported some

* "Sir Hugh Wyndham and others of the grand jury of Somerset were at the last assizes bound over, by lord Ch. J. Keeling, to appear at the K. B. the first day of this term, to answer a misdemeanour for finding upon a bill of murder, 'billa vera quoad manslaughter,' against the directions of the judge. Upon their appearance they were told by the court, being full, that it was a misdemeanour in them, for they are not to distinguish betwixt murder and manslaughter; for it is only the circumstance of malice which makes the difference, and that may be implied by the law, without any fact at all, and so it lies not in the judgment of a jury but of the judge; that the intention of their finding indictments is, that there might be no malicious prosecution; and therefore if the matter of the indictment be not framed of malice, but is verisimilis, though it be not vera, yet it answers their oaths to present it. Twisden said he had known petty juries punished in my lord chief justice Hyde's time, for disobeying of the judge's directions in point of law. But, because it was a mistake in their judgments rather than any obstinacy, the court discharged them without any fine or other attendance." Pasch. 19 Car. 2. Keeling, Ch. J. Twisden, Wyndham, Morton, justices. Hargrave MSS. n. 339.

strong resolutions against Keeling for illegal and arbitrary proceedings in his office, the last of which was, that he be brought to trial, in order to condign punishment, in such manner as the house should deem expedient. But the chief justice having requested to be heard at the bar, so far extenuated his offence, that the house, after resolving that the practice of fining or imprisoning jurors is illegal, came to a second resolution, to proceed no farther against him *.

The precedents, however, which these judges endeavoured to establish, were repelled in a more decisive manner than by a resolution of the house of commons. For in two cases, where the fines thus imposed upon jurors had been estreated into the exchequer, Hale, then chief baron, with the advice of most of the judges of England, as he informs us, stayed process; and in a subsequent case it was resolved by all the judges, except one, that it was against law to fine a jury for giving a verdict contrary to the court's direction. Yet notwithstanding this very recent determination, the recorder of London, in 1670, upon the acquittal of Penn and Mead, the quakers, on an indictment for an unlawful assembly, imposed a fine of forty marks on each of the jury †. Bushell, one of their number, being committed for non-payment of this fine, sued his writ of habeas corpus from the court of common-pleas; and on the return made that he had been committed for finding a verdict against full and manifest evidence, and against the direction of the court, chief justice Vaughan held the ground to be insufficient, and discharged the party. In his reported judgment on this occasion, he maintains the practice of fining jurors, merely on this account, to be comparatively recent, and clearly against law ‡. No later instance of it is recorded; and perhaps it can only be ascribed to the violence that still prevailed in the house of commons against non-conformists, that the recorder escaped its animadversion.

* Journals, 16th Oct. 1667.

† State Trials, vi. 967.

‡ Vaughan's Reports. State Trials, v. 999.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

In this judgment of the chief justice Vaughan, he was led to enter on a question much controverted in later times, the legal right of the jury to find a general verdict, in criminal cases, where it determines not only the truth of the facts as deposed, but their quality of guilt or innocence; or as it is commonly, though not perhaps quite accurately worded, to judge of the law as well as the fact. It is a received maxim with us, that the judge cannot decide on questions of fact, nor the jury on those of law. Whenever the general principle, or what may be termed the major proposition of the syllogism, which every litigated case contains, can be extracted from the particular circumstances to which it is supposed to apply, the court pronounce their own determination, without reference to a jury. The province of the latter, however, though it properly extend not to any general decision of the law, is certainly not bounded, at least in modern times, to a mere estimate of the truth of testimony. The intention of the litigant parties in civil matters, of the accused in crimes, is, in every case, a matter of inference from the testimony, or from the acknowledged facts of the case; and wherever that intention is material to the issue, is constantly left for the jury's deliberation. There are, indeed, rules in criminal proceedings which supersede this consideration; and where, as it is expressed, the law presumes the intention in determining the offence. Thus in the common instance of murder or manslaughter, the jury cannot legally determine that provocation to be sufficient, which by the settled rules of law is otherwise; nor can they, in any case, set up novel and arbitrary constructions of their own, without a disregard of their duty. Unfortunately it has been sometimes the disposition of judges to claim to themselves the absolute interpretation of facts, and the exclusive right of drawing inferences from them, as it has occasionally, though not perhaps with so much danger, been the frailty of juries to make their undeniable right of returning a general verdict subservient to faction or prejudice. Vaughan did not of course mean to encourage any petulance in juries that

should lead them to pronounce on the law, nor does he expatiate so largely on their power, as has sometimes since been usual; but confines himself to a narrow, though conclusive, line of argument, that as every issue of fact must be supported by testimony, upon the truth of which the jury are exclusively to decide, they cannot be guilty of any legal misdemeanor in returning their verdict, though apparently against the direction of the court in point of law, since it cannot ever be proved that they believed the evidence upon which that direction must have rested *.

I have already pointed out to the reader's notice that article of Clarendon's impeachment, which charges him with having caused many persons to be imprisoned against law †. These were released by the duke of Buckingham's administration, which in several respects acted on a more liberal principle than any other in this reign. The practice was not, however, wholly discontinued. Jenkes, a citizen of London, on the popular or factious side, having been committed by the king in council for a mutinous speech in Guildhall, the justices at quarter sessions refused to admit him to bail, on pretence that he had been committed by a superior court; or to try him, because he was not entered in the calendar of prisoners. The chancellor, on application for a habeas corpus, declined to issue it during the vacation; and the chief justice of the King's Bench, to whom, in the next place, the friends of Jenkes had recourse, made so many difficulties, that he lay in prison for several weeks ‡. This has been commonly said to have produced the famous act of habeas corpus. But this is not truly stated. The arbitrary proceedings of lord Clarendon were what really gave rise to it. A bill to prevent the refusal of the writ of habeas corpus was brought into the house on April 10,

* See Hargrave's judicious observations on the province of juries. State Trials, vi. 1013.

† Those who were confined by warrants were forced to buy their liberty of the courtiers; "Which," says Pepys, (July 7, 1667,) "is a most lamentable thing that we do professedly own that we do these things, not for right and justice sake, but only to gratify this or that person about the king."

‡ State Trials, vi. 1189.

1668, but did not pass the committee in that session *. But another to the same purpose, probably more remedial, was sent up to the lords in March 1669-70 †. It failed of success in the upper house; but the commons continued to repeat their struggle for this important measure, and in the session of 1673-4 passed two bills, one to prevent the imprisonment of the subject in gaols beyond the seas, another to give a more expeditious use of the writ of habeas corpus in criminal matters ‡. The same or similar bills appear to have gone up to the lords in 1675. It was not till 1676, that the delay of Jenkes's habeas corpus took place. And this affair seems to have had so trifling an influence, that these bills were not revived for the two next years, notwithstanding the tempests that agitated the house during that period §. But in the short parliament of 1679, they appear to have been consolidated into one, that having met with better success among the lords, passed into a statute, and is generally denominated the habeas corpus act ‖.

It is a very common mistake, and that not only among fo-

* Commons' Journals. As the titles only of these bills are entered in the Journals, their purport cannot be stated with absolute certainty. They might however, I suppose, be found in some of the offices.

† Parl. Hist. 661. It was opposed by the court.

‡ In this session, Feb. 14, a committee was appointed to inspect the laws, and consider how the king may commit any subject by his immediate warrant, as the law now stands, and report the same to the house, and also how the law now stands, touching commitments of persons by the council-table. Ralph supposes (p. 255) that this gave rise to the habeas corpus act, which is certainly not the case. The statute 16 Car. I. c. 10. seems to recognise the legality of commitments by the king's special warrant, or by the privy council, or some, at least, of its members singly; and I do not know whether this, with long usage, is not sufficient to support the controverted authority of the secretary of state. As to the privy council, it is not doubted, I believe, that they may commit. But it has been held, even in the worst of times, that a warrant of commitment under the king's own hand, without seal, or the hand of any secretary, or officer of state, or justice, is bad. 2 Jac. II. B. R. 2 Shower, 484.

§ In the Parliamentary History, 845, we find a debate on the petition of one Harrington to the commons in 1677, who had been committed to close custody by the council. But as his demeanor was alleged to have been disrespectful, and the right of the council to commit was not disputed, and especially as he seems to have been at liberty when the debate took place, no proceedings ensued; though the commitment had not been altogether regular. Ralph, p. 314, comments more severely on the behaviour of the house than was necessary.

‖ 31 Car. II. c. 2.

reigners, but many from whom some knowledge of our constitutional laws might be expected, to suppose that this statute of Charles II. enlarged in a great degree our liberties, and forms a sort of epoch in their history. But though a very beneficial enactment, and eminently remedial in many cases of illegal imprisonment, it introduced no new principle, nor conferred any right upon the subject. From the earliest records of the English law, no freeman could be detained in prison, except upon a criminal charge or conviction, or for a civil debt. In the former case, it was always in his power to demand of the court of king's bench a writ of habeas corpus ad subjiciendum, directed to the person detaining him in custody, by which he was enjoined to bring up the body of the prisoner, with the warrant of commitment, that the court might judge of its sufficiency, and remand the party, admit him to bail, or discharge him, according to the nature of the charge. This writ issued of right, and could not be refused by the court. It was not to bestow an immunity from arbitrary imprisonment, which is abundantly provided in Magna Charta, if indeed it were not much more ancient, that the statute of Charles II. was enacted, but to cut off the abuses, by which the government's lust of power, and the servile subtlety of crown lawyers, had impaired so fundamental a privilege.

There had been some doubts, whether the court of common pleas could issue this writ, and the court of exchequer seems never to have done so*. It was also a question, and one of more importance, as we have seen in the case of Jenkes, whether a single judge of the court of king's bench could issue it during the vacation. The statute, therefore, enacts that where any person, other than persons convicted or in execution upon legal process, stands committed for any crime, except for treason or felony plainly expressed in the warrant of commitment, he may during

* The puisne judges of the common pleas granted a habeas corpus, against the opinion of chief justice Vaughan, who denied the court to have that power. Carter's Reports, 221.

CHAP. XIII. Charles II. Constitution

the vacation complain to the chancellor, or any of the twelve judges, who upon sight of a copy of the warrant, or an affidavit that a copy is denied, shall award a habeas corpus directed to the officer in whose custody the party shall be, commanding him to bring up the body of his prisoner within a time limited according to the distance, but in no case exceeding twenty days, who shall discharge the party from imprisonment, taking surety for his appearance in the court wherein his offence is cognizable. A gaoler refusing a copy of the warrant of commitment, or not obeying the writ, is subjected to a penalty of 100*l.*; and even the judge denying a habeas corpus, when required according to this act, is made liable to a penalty of 500*l.* at the suit of the injured party. The court of king's bench had already been accustomed to send out their writ of habeas corpus into all places of peculiar and privileged jurisdiction, where this ordinary process does not run, and even to the island of Jersey, beyond the strict limits of the kingdom of England*; and this power, which might admit of some question, is sanctioned by a declaratory clause of the present statute. Another section enacts, that "no subject of this realm that now is, or hereafter shall be, an inhabitant or resiant of this kingdom of England, dominion of Wales, or town of Berwick-upon-Tweed, shall be sent prisoner into Scotland, Ireland, Jersey, Guernsey, Tangier, or into parts, garrisons, islands, or places beyond the seas, which are or at any time hereafter shall be within or without the dominions of his majesty, his heirs, or successors," under penalties of the heaviest nature short of death which the law knows, and an incapacity of receiving the king's pardon. The great rank of those who were likely to offend against this part of the statute, was doubtless the cause of this unusual severity.

* The court of king's bench directed a habeas corpus to the governor of Jersey, to bring up the body of Overton, a well-known officer of the commonwealth, who had been confined there several years. Siderfin's Reports, 386. This was in 1668, after the fall of Clarendon, when a less despotic system was introduced.

But as it might still be practicable to evade these remedial provisions by expressing some matter of treason or felony in the warrant of commitment, the judges not being empowered to inquire into the truth of the facts contained in it, a further security against any protracted detention of an innocent man is afforded by a provision of great importance, that every person committed for treason or felony, plainly and specially expressed in the warrant, may, unless he shall be indicted in the next term, or at the next sessions of general gaol delivery after his commitment, be, on prayer to the court, released upon bail, unless it shall appear that the crown's witnesses could not be produced at that time, and if he shall not be indicted and tried in the second term or sessions of gaol delivery, he shall be discharged.

The remedies of the habeas corpus act are so effectual, that no man can possibly endure any long imprisonment on a criminal charge, nor would any minister venture to exercise a sort of oppression so dangerous to himself. But it should be observed, that as the statute is only applicable to cases of commitment on such a charge, every other species of restraint on personal liberty is left to the ordinary remedy, as it subsisted before this enactment. Thus a party detained without any warrant must sue out his habeas corpus at common law, and this is at present the more usual occurrence. But the judges of the king's bench, since the statute, have been accustomed to issue this writ during the vacation in all cases whatsoever. A sensible difficulty has, however, been sometimes felt, from their incompetency to judge of the truth of a return made to the writ. For though in cases within the statute the prisoner may always look to his legal discharge at the next sessions of gaol delivery, the same redress cannot be obtained when he is not in custody upon any criminal accusation. If the person, therefore, who detains any one in custody should think fit to make a return to the writ of habeas corpus, alleging matter sufficient to justify the party's restraint, yet false in fact, there

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

would be no means, at least by this summary process, of obtaining relief. An attempt was made in 1757, after an examination of the judges by the house of lords, as to the extent and efficiency of the habeas corpus at common law, to render their jurisdiction more remedial *. It failed however, for the time, of success; but a statute has recently been enacted †, which not only extends the power of issuing the writ during the vacation, in cases not within the act of Charles II., to all the judges, but enables the judge, before whom the writ is returned, to inquire into the truth of the facts alleged therein, and in case they shall seem to him doubtful, to release the party in custody, on giving surety to appear in the court to which such judge shall belong, on some day in the ensuing term, when the court may examine by affidavit into the truth of the facts alleged in the return, and either remand or discharge the party according to their discretion. It is also declared, that a writ of habeas corpus shall run to any harbour or road on the coast of England, though out of the body of any county; in order, I presume, to obviate doubts as to the effects of this remedy in a kind of illegal detention, more likely perhaps than any other to occur in modern times, on board of vessels upon the coast. Except a few of this description, it is very rare for a habeas corpus to be required in any case where the government can be presumed to have an interest.

The reign of Charles II. was hardly more remarkable by the vigilance of the house of commons against arbitrary prerogative, than by the warfare it waged against whatever seemed an encroachment or usurpation in the other house of parliament. It has been a peculiar happiness of our constitution, that such dissensions have so rarely occurred. I cannot recollect any republican government, ancient or modern, except perhaps some of

* See the lords' questions and answers of the judges in Parl. Hist. xv. 898.; or Bacon's Abridgment, tit. Habeas Corpus; also Wilmot's Judgments, 81. This arose out of a case of impressment, where the expeditious remedy of habeas corpus is eminently necessary.

† 56 G. III. c. 100.

the Dutch provinces, where hereditary and democratical authority have been amalgamated so as to preserve both in effect and influence, without continual dissatisfaction and reciprocal encroachments; for though in the most tranquil and prosperous season of the Roman state, one consul, and some magistrates of less importance, were invariably elected from the patrician families, these did not form a corporation, nor had any collective authority in the government. The history of monarchies, including of course all states where the principality is lodged in a single person, that have admitted the aristocratical and popular temperaments at the same time, bears frequent witness to the same jealous or usurping spirit. Yet monarchy is unquestionably more favourable to the co-existence of an hereditary body of nobles with a representation of the commons, than any other form of commonwealth; and it is to the high prerogative of the English crown, its exclusive disposal of offices of trust, which are the ordinary subjects of contention, its power of putting a stop to parliamentary disputes by a dissolution, and, above all, to the necessity, which both the peers and the commons have often felt, of a mutual good understanding for the maintenance of their privileges, that we must, in a great measure, attribute the general harmony, or at least the absence of open schism, between the two houses of parliament. This is, however, still more owing to the happy graduation of ranks, which renders the elder and the younger sons of our nobility two links in the unsevered chain of society; the one trained in the school of popular rights, and accustomed, for a long portion of their lives, to regard the privileges of the house whereof they form a part, full as much as those of their ancestors*;

* It was ordered 21 Jan. 1549, that the eldest son of the earl of Bedford should continue in the house after his father had succeeded to the peerage. And, 9th Feb. 1575, that his son should do so, "according to the precedent in the like case of the now earl his father." It is worthy of notice, that this determination, which, at the time, seems to have been thought doubtful, though very unreasonably, (Journals, 10th Feb.), but which has had an influence, which no one can fail to acknowledge, in binding together the two branches of the legislature, and in keeping alive the sympathy for public and popular rights in the English nobility, (that sensus communis, which the poet

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

the other falling without hereditary distinction into the class of other commoners, and mingling the sentiments natural to their birth and family affections, with those that are more congenial to the whole community. It is owing also to the wealth and dignity of those ancient families, who would be styled noble in any other country, and who give an aristocratical character to the popular part of our legislature, and to the influence which the peers themselves, through the representation of small boroughs, are enabled to exercise over the lower house.

The original constitution of England was highly aristocratical. The peers of this realm, when summoned to parliament, and on such occasions every peer was entitled to his writ, were the necessary counsellors and coadjutors of the king in all the functions that appertain to a government. In granting money for the public service, in changing by permanent statutes the course of the common law, they could only act in conjunction with the knights, citizens, and burgesses of the lower house of parliament. In redress of grievances, whether of so private a nature as to affect only single persons, or extending to a county or hundred, whether proceeding from the injustice of public officers or of powerful individuals, whether demanding punishment as crimes against the state, or merely restitution and damages to the injured party, the lords assembled in parliament were competent, as we find in our records, to exercise the same high powers, if they were not even more extensive and remedial, as the king's ordinary council, composed of his great officers, his judges, and perhaps some peers, was wont to do in the intervals of parliament. These two, the lords and the privy council, seem to have formed, in the session, one body or great council, wherein the latter had originally right of suffrage along with the former. In this judicial

thought so rare in high rank), is first recorded, and that twice over, in behalf of a family, in whom the love of constitutional freedom has become hereditary, and who may be justly said to have deserved like the Valerii at Rome, the sur-name of Publicolæ.

and executive authority, the commons had at no time any more pretence to interfere, than the council, or the lords by themselves, had to make ordinances, at least of a general and permanent nature, which should bind the subject to obedience. At the beginning of every parliament, numerous petitions were presented to the lords, or to the king and lords, since he was frequently there in person, and always presumed to be so, complaining of civil injuries and abuse of power. These were generally indorsed by appointed receivers of petitions, and returned by them to the proper court, whence relief was to be sought *. For an immediate inquiry and remedy seems to have been rarely granted, except in cases of an extraordinary nature, when the law was defective, or could not easily be enforced by the ordinary tribunals; the shortness of sessions, and multiplicity of affairs, preventing the upper house of parliament from entering so fully into these matters as the king's council had leisure to do.

It might, perhaps, be well questioned, notwithstanding the considerable opinion of sir M. Hale, whether the statutes directed against the prosecution of civil and criminal suits before the council are so worded as to exclude the original jurisdiction of the house of lords, though their principle is very adverse to it. But it is remarkable, that so far as the lords themselves could allege from the rolls of parliament, one only instance occurs between 4 Hen. IV. (1403) and 43 Eliz. (1602) where their house had entered upon any petition in the nature of an original suit; though in that (1 Ed. IV. 1461) they had certainly taken on them to determine a question cognizable in the common courts of justice. For a distinction seems to have been generally made between cases where relief might be had in the courts below, as to which it is contended by sir M. Hale that the lords could not have jurisdiction, and those where the injured party was without re-

* The form of appointing receivers and tryers of petitions, though intermitted during the reign of William III., was revived afterwards, and finally not discontinued without a debate in the house of lords, and a division, in 1740. Parl. Hist. xi. 1013.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

medy, either through defect of the law, or such excessive power of the aggressor, as could defy the ordinary process. During the latter part at least of this long interval, the council and court of star-chamber were in all their vigour, to which the intermission of parliamentary judicature may in a great measure be ascribed. It was owing also to the longer intervals between parliaments from the time of Henry VI., extending sometimes to five or six years, which rendered the redress of private wrongs by their means inconvenient and uncertain. In 1621 and 1624, the lords, grown bold by the general disposition in favour of parliamentary rights, made orders without hesitation on private petitions of an original nature. They continued to exercise this jurisdiction in the first parliaments of Charles I.; and in one instance, that of a riot at Banbury, even assumed the power of punishing a misdemeanor unconnected with privilege. In the long parliament, it may be supposed that they did not abandon this encroachment, as it seems to have been, on the royal authority, extending their orders both to the punishment of misdemeanors, and to the awarding of damages *.

The ultimate jurisdiction of the house of lords, either by removing into it causes commenced in the lower courts, or by writ of error complaining of a judgment given therein, seems to have been as ancient, and founded on the same principle of a paramount judicial authority delegated by the crown, as that which they exercised upon original petitions. It is to be observed that the council or star-chamber did not pretend to any direct jurisdiction of this nature; no record was ever removed thither upon assignment of errors in an inferior court. But after the first part of the fifteenth century, there was a considerable interval, during which this appellant jurisdiction of the lords seems to have gone into disuse, though probably known to the legal †. They began

* Hargrave, p. 60. The proofs are in the Lords' Journals.

† They were very rare after the accession of Henry V.; but one occurs in 10th Hen. VI. 1432, with which Hale's list concludes. Hargrave's Preface to Hale, p. 7.

again, about 1580, to receive writs of error from the court of king's bench, though for forty years more the instances were by no means numerous. But the statute passed in 1585, constituting the court of exchequer-chamber as an intermediate tribunal of appeal between the king's bench and the parliament, recognizes the jurisdiction of the latter, that is, of the house of lords, in the strongest terms *. To this power, therefore, of determining, in the last resort, upon writs of error from the courts of common law, no objection could possibly be maintained.

The revolutionary spirit of the long parliament brought forward still higher pretensions, and obscured all the land-marks of constitutional privilege. As the commons took on themselves to direct the execution of their own orders, the lords, afraid to be jostled out of that equality to which they were now content to be reduced, asserted a similar claim at the expense of the king's prerogative. They returned to their own house on the restoration with confused notions of their high jurisdiction, rather enhanced than abated by the humiliation they had undergone. Thus before the king's arrival, the commons having sent up for their concurrence a resolution that the persons and estates of the regicides should be seized, the upper house deemed it an encroachment on their exclusive judicature, and changed the resolution into "an order of the lords on complaint of the commons †." In a conference on this subject between the two houses, the commons denied their lordships to possess an exclusive jurisdiction, but did not press that matter ‡. But in fact this order was rather of a legislative than judicial nature; nor could the lords pretend to any jurisdiction in cases of treason. They artfully, however, overlooked these distinctions; and made orders almost daily, in the session of 1660, trenching on the executive power, and that

This editor justly observes, that the incomplete state of the votes and early journals renders the negative proof inconclusive; though we may be fully warranted in asserting, that from Henry V. to James I. there was very little exercise of judicial power in parliament, either civilly or criminally.

* 27th Eliz. c. 8.

† Lords' Journals, May 18, 1660.

‡ Commons' Journals, May 22.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

of the inferior courts. Not content with ordering the estates of all peers to be restored, free from seizure by sequestration, and with all arrears of rent, we find in their journals, that they did not hesitate on petition to stay waste on the estates of private persons; and to secure the tithes of livings, from which ministers had been ejected, in the hands of the churchwardens, till their title could be tried*. They acted, in short, as if they had a plenary authority in matters of freehold right, where any member of their own house was a party, and in every case as full an equitable jurisdiction as the court of chancery. Though in the more settled state of things which ensued these anomalous orders do not so frequently occur, we find several assumptions of power which show a disposition to claim as much as the circumstances of any particular case should lead them to think expedient for the parties, or honourable to themselves †.

The lower house of parliament, which hardly reckoned itself lower in dignity, and was something more than equal in substantial power, did not look without jealousy on these pretensions. They demurred to a privilege asserted by the lords of assessing themselves in bills of direct taxation; and having on one occasion reluctantly permitted an amendment of that nature to pass, took care to record their dissent from the principle by a special entry in the journal ‡. An amendment having been introduced into a bill for regulating the press, sent up by the commons in the ses-

* Lords' Journals, June 4, 6, 14, 20, 22, et alibi sæpies. "Upon information given that some persons in the late times had carried away goods from the house of the earl of Northampton, leave was given to the said earl, by his servants and agents, to make diligent and narrow search in the dwelling-houses of certain persons, and to break open any door or trunk that shall not be opened in obedience to the order." June 26. The like order was made next day for the marquis of Winchester, the earls of Derby and Newport, &c. A still more extraordinary vote was passed Aug. 16. Lord Mohun having complained of one Keigwin, and his attorney Danby, for suing him by common process in Michaelmas term, 1651, in breach of privilege of peerage, the house voted that he should have damages: nothing could be more scandalously unjust, and against the spirit of the bill of indemnity. Three presbyterian peers protested.

† They resolved, in the case of the earl of Pembroke, Jan. 30, 1678, that the single testimony of a commoner is not sufficient against a peer.

‡ Journals, Aug. 2 and 15, 1660.

sion of 1661, which exempted the houses of peers from search for unlicensed books, it was resolved not to agree to it, and the bill dropped for that time *. Even in far more urgent circumstances, while the parliament sat at Oxford in the year of the plague, a bill to prevent the progress of infection was lost, because the lords insisted that their houses should not be subjected to the general provisions for security †. These ill-judged demonstrations of a design to exempt themselves from that equal submission to the law which is required in all well-governed states, and had ever been remarkable in our constitution, naturally raised a prejudice against the lords, both in the other house of parliament, and among the common lawyers.

This half-suppressed jealousy soon disclosed itself in the famous controversy between the two houses about the case of Skinner and the East India company. This began by a petition of the former to the king, wherein he complained, that having gone as a merchant to the Indian seas, at a time when there was no restriction upon that trade, the East India company's agents had plundered his property, taken away his ships, and dispossessed him of an island which he had purchased from a native prince. Conceiving that he could have no sufficient redress in the ordinary courts of justice, he besought his sovereign to enforce reparation by some other means. After several ineffectual attempts by a committee of the privy council to bring about a compromise between the parties, the king transmitted the documents to the house of lords, with a recommendation to do justice to the petitioner. They proceeded accordingly to call on the East India company for an answer to Skinner's allegations. The company gave in what is technically called a plea to the jurisdiction, which the house over-ruled. The defendants then pleaded in bar, and contrived to delay the inquiry into the facts till the next session, when the proceedings having been renewed, and

* Journals, July 29, 1661.

† Id. Oct. 31, 1665.

CHAP. XIII. Charles II. Constitution

the plea to the lords' jurisdiction again offered, and over-ruled, judgment was finally given that the East India company should pay 5000*l.* damages to Skinner.

Meantime the company had presented a petition to the house of commons against the proceedings of the lords in this business. It was referred to a committee who had already been appointed to consider some other cases of a like nature. They made a report, which produced resolutions to this effect; That the lords, in taking cognizance of an original complaint, and that relievable in the ordinary course of law, had acted illegally, and in a manner to deprive the subject of benefit of the law. The lords in return voted "that the house of commons entertaining the scandalous petition of the East India company against the lords' house of parliament, and their proceedings, examinations, and votes thereupon had and made, are a breach of the privileges of the house of peers, and contrary to the fair correspondency which ought to be between the two houses of parliament, and unexampled in former times; and that the house of peers taking cognizance of the cause of Thomas Skinner, merchant, a person highly oppressed and injured in East India by the governor and company of merchants trading thither, and over-ruling the plea of the said company, and adjudging 5000*l.* damages thereupon against the said governor and company, is agreeable to the laws of the land, and well warranted by the law and custom of parliament, and justified by many parliamentary precedents ancient and modern."

Two conferences between the houses, according to the usage of parliament, ensued, in order to reconcile this dispute. But it was too material in itself, and aggravated by too much previous jealousy, for any voluntary compromise. The precedents alleged to prove an original jurisdiction in the peers were so thinly scattered over the records of centuries, and so contrary to the received principle of our constitution, that questions of fact are cognizable only by a jury, that their managers in the conferences seemed less to insist on the general right, than on a supposed in-

ability of the courts of law to give adequate redress to the present plaintiff; for which the judges had furnished some pretext, on a reference as to their own competence to afford relief, by an answer more narrow, no doubt, than would have been rendered at the present day. And there was really more to be said, both in reason and law, for this limited right of judicature, than for the absolute cognizance of civil suits by the lords. But the commons were not inclined to allow even of such a special exception from the principle for which they contended, and intimated that the power of affording a remedy in a defect of the ordinary tribunals could only reside in the whole body of the parliament.

The proceedings that followed were intemperate on both sides. The commons voted Skinner into custody for a breach of privilege, and resolved that whoever should be aiding in execution of the order of the lords against the East India company should be deemed a betrayer of the liberties of the commons of England, and an infringer of the privileges of the house. The lords, in return, committed sir Samuel Barnardiston, chairman of the company, and a member of the house of commons, to prison, and imposed on him a fine of 500*l*. It became necessary for the king to stop the course of this quarrel, which was done by successive adjournments and prorogations for fifteen months. But on their meeting again in October 1669, the commons proceeded instantly to renew the dispute. It appeared that Barnardiston, on the day of the adjournment, had been released from custody, without demand of his fine, which, by a trick rather unworthy of those who had resorted to it, was entered as paid on the records of the exchequer. This was a kind of victory on the side of the commons; but it was still more material that no steps had been taken to enforce the order of the lords against the East India company. The latter sent down a bill concerning privilege and judicature in parliament, which the other house rejected on a second reading. They in return passed a bill vacating the proceedings against Barnardiston, which met with a like fate. In conclusion, the king

CHAP. XIII. Charles II. Constitution

recommended an erasure from the journals of all that had passed on the subject, and an entire cessation; an expedient which both houses willingly embraced, the one to secure its victory, the other to save its honour. From this time the lords have tacitly abandoned all pretensions to an original jurisdiction in civil suits *.

They have, however, been more successful in establishing a branch of their ultimate jurisdiction, which had less to be urged for it in respect of precedent, that of hearing appeals from courts of equity. It is proved by sir Matthew Hale and his editor, Mr. Hargrave, that the lords did not entertain petitions of appeal before the reign of Charles I., and not perhaps unequivocally before the long parliament †. They became very common from that time, though hardly more so than original suits; and as they bore no analogy, except at first glance, to writs of error, which come to the house of lords by the king's express commission under the great seal, could not well be defended on legal grounds. But on the other hand, it was reasonable that the vast power of the court of chancery should be subject to some control; and though a commission of review, somewhat in the nature of the court of delegates in ecclesiastical appeals, might have been and had been occasionally ordered by the crown ‡, yet if the ultimate jurisdiction of the peerage were convenient and salutary in cases of common law, it was difficult to assign any satisfactory reason why it should be less so in those which are technically denominated equitable §. Nor is it likely that the commons

* For the whole of this business, which is erased from the journals of both houses, see State Trials, v. 711; Parl. Hist. iv. 431. 443; Hatsell's Precedents, iii. 336; and Hargrave's Preface to Hale's Jurisdiction of the Lords, 101.

† Hale says, "I could never get to any precedent of greater antiquity than 3 Car. I. nay scarce before 16 Car. I. of any such proceeding in the lords' house." C. 33, and see Hargrave's Preface, 53.

‡ Id. c. 31.

§ It was ordered on a petition of Robert Roberts, esq. that directions be given to the lord chancellor, that he proceed to make a speedy decree in the court of chancery, according to equity and justice, notwithstanding there be not any precedent in the case. Against this lords Mohun and Lincoln severally protested; the latter very sensibly observing, that whereas it hath been the prudence and care of former parliaments to set limits and bounds to the jurisdiction of chancery, now this order of

would have disputed this usurpation, in which the crown had acquiesced, if the lords had not received appeals against members of the other house. Three instances of this took place about the year 1675; but that of Shirley against sir John Fagg is the most celebrated, as having given rise to a conflict between the two houses, as violent as that which had occurred in the business of Skinner. It began altogether on the score of privilege. As members of the house of commons were exempted from legal process during the session, by the general privilege of parliament, they justly resented the pretension of the peers to disregard this immunity, and compel them to appear as respondents in cases of appeal. In these contentions, neither party could evince its superiority but at the expense of innocent persons. It was a contempt of the one house to disobey its order, of the other to obey it. Four counsel, who had pleaded at the bar of the lords in one of the cases where a member of the other house was concerned, were taken into custody of the serjeant-at-arms by the speaker's warrant. The gentleman usher of the black rod, by warrant of the lords, empowering him to call all persons necessary to his assistance, set them at liberty. The commons apprehended them again, and to prevent another rescue, sent them to the Tower. The lords despatched their usher of the black rod to the lieutenant of the Tower, commanding him to deliver up the said persons. He replied, that they were committed by order of the commons, and he could not release them without their order, just as, if the lords were to commit any persons, he could not release them without their lordships' order. They addressed the king to remove the lieutenant, who, after some hesitation, declined to comply with their desire. In this difficulty, they had recourse, instead of the warrant of the lords' speaker, to a writ of habeas

directions, which implies a command, opens a gap to set up an arbitrary power in the chancery, which is hereby countenanced by the house of lords to act, not according to the accustomed rules or former precedents of that court, but according to his own will. Lords' Journals, 29th Nov. 1664.

CHAP. XIII. Charles II. Constitution

corpus returnable in parliament; a proceeding not usual, but the legality of which seems to be now admitted. The lieutenant of the Tower, who, rather unluckily for the lords, had taken the other side, either out of conviction, or from a sense that the lower house were the stronger and more formidable, instead of obeying the writ, came to the bar of the commons for directions. They voted, as might be expected, that the writ was contrary to law, and the privileges of their house. But, in this ferment of two jealous and exasperated assemblies, it was highly necessary, as on the former occasion, for the king to interpose by a prorogation for three months. This period, however, not being sufficient to allay their animosity, the house of peers took up again the appeal of Shirley in their next session. Fresh votes and orders of equal intemperance on both sides ensued, till the king by the long prorogation, from November 1675 to February 1677, put an end to the dispute. The particular appeal of Shirley was never revived, but the lords continued without objection to exercise their general jurisdiction over appeals from courts of equity *. The learned editor of Hale's Treatise on the Jurisdiction of the Lords expresses some degree of surprise at the commons' acquiescence in what they had treated as an usurpation. But it is evident from the whole course of proceeding, that it was the breach of privilege in citing their own members to appear which excited their indignation. It was but incidentally that they observed in a conference, "that the commons cannot find, by Magna Charta, or by any other law or ancient custom of parliament, that your lordships have any jurisdiction in cases of appeal from courts of equity." They afterwards indeed resolved, that there lies no appeal to the judicature of the lords in parliament from courts of equity †; and came ultimately, as their wrath increased, to a vote "that whosoever shall solicit, plead, or prosecute any appeal

* It was thrown out against them by the commons in their angry conferences about the business of Ashby and White, in 1704, but not with any serious intention of opposition.

† C. J. May 30.

against any commoner of England, from any court of equity, before the house of lords, shall be deemed and taken a betrayer of the rights and liberties of the commons of England, and shall be proceeded against accordingly *;" which vote the lords resolved next day to be "illegal, unparliamentary, and tending to a dissolution of the government †." But this was evidently rather an act of hostility arising out of the immediate quarrel, than the calm assertion of a legal principle ‡.

During the interval between these two dissensions, which the suits of Skinner and Shirley engendered, another difference had arisen, somewhat less violently conducted, but wherein both houses considered their essential privileges at stake. This concerned the long agitated question of the right of the lords to make alterations in money-bills. Though I cannot but think the importance of their exclusive privilege has been rather exaggerated by the house of commons, it deserves attention, more especially as the embers of that fire may not be so wholly extinguished as never again to show some traces of its heat.

In our earliest parliamentary records, the lords and commons, summoned in a great measure for the sake of relieving the king's necessities, appear to have made their several grants of supply without mutual communication, and the latter generally in a higher proportion than the former. These were not in the form of laws, nor did they obtain any formal assent from the king, to whom they were tendered in written indentures, entered after-

* Id. Nov. 19. Several divisions took place in the course of this business, and some rather close; the court endeavouring to allay the fire. The vote to take sergeant Pemberton into custody for appearing as counsel at the lords' bar was only carried by 154 to 146, on June 1.

† Lords' Journals, Nov. 20.

‡ Lords' and Commons' Journals, May and November, 1675. Parl. Hist. 721. 791. State Trials, vi. 1121. Hargrave's Preface to Hale, 135, and Hale's Treatise, c. 33.

It may be observed, that the lords learned a little caution in this affair. An appeal of one Cottington from the court of delegates to their house was rejected, by a vote that it did not properly belong to them, Shaftesbury alone dissentient. June 17, 1678. Yet they had asserted their right to receive appeals from inferior courts, that there might be no failure of justice, in terms large enough to embrace the ecclesiastical jurisdiction. May 6, 1675. And it is said that they actually had done so in 1628. Hargrave, 53.

CHAP. XIII. Charles II. Constitution

wards on the roll of parliament. The latest instance of such distinct grants from the two houses, as far as I can judge from the rolls, is in the 18th year of Edward III. * But in the 22d year of that reign, the commons alone granted three fifteenths of their goods, in such a manner as to show beyond a doubt that the tax was to be levied solely upon themselves †. After this time, the lords and commons are jointly recited in the rolls to have granted them, sometimes, as it is expressed, upon deliberation had together. In one case, it is said, that the lords, with one assent, and afterwards the commons, granted a subsidy on exported wool ‡. A change of language is observable in Richard II.'s reign, when the commons are recited to grant, with the assent of the lords; and this seems to indicate, not only that in practice the vote used to originate with the commons, but that their proportion at least of the tax being far greater than that of the lords, especially in the usual impositions on wool and skins, which ostensibly fell on the exporting merchant, the grant was to be deemed mainly theirs, subject only to the assent of the other house of parliament. This is, however, so explicitly asserted in a remarkable passage on the roll of 9 Hen. IV., without any apparent denial, that it cannot be called in question by any one §. The language of the rolls continues to be the same in the following reigns; the commons are the granting, the lords the consenting power. It is even said by the court of king's bench, in a year-book of Edward IV., that a grant of money by the commons would be binding without assent of the lords; meaning of course as to commoners only, though the position seems a little questionable even with the limitation. I have been almost led to suspect, by considering this remarkable exclusive privilege of originating grants of money to the crown, as well as by the language of some passages in the rolls of parliament relating to them, that no part of the direct taxes, the tenths or

* Parl. Hist. ii. 148.
† Id. 200.
‡ Id. 300. (43 Edw. 3.)
§ Rot. Parl. iii. 611. View of Middle Ages, ii. 310.

fifteenths of goods, were assessed upon the lords temporal and spiritual, except where they are positively mentioned, which is frequently the case.* But as I do not remember to have seen that any where asserted by those who have turned their attention to the antiquities of our constitution, it may possibly be an unfounded surmise, or at least only applicable to the earlier period of our parliamentary records.

These grants continued to be made as before, by the consent indeed of the houses of parliament, but not as legislative enactments. Most of the few instances where they appear among the statutes are where some condition is annexed, or some relief of grievances so interwoven with them, that they make part of a new law*. In the reign of Henry VII., they are occasionally inserted among the statutes, though still without any enacting words†. In that of Henry VIII., the form is rather more legislative, and they are said to be enacted by the authority of parliament, though the king's name is not often mentioned till about the conclusion of his reign‡; after which a sense of the necessity of expressing his legislative authority seems to have led to its introduction in some part or other of the bill§. The

* 14 E. 3. stat. 1. c. 21: this statute is remarkable for a promise of the lords not to assent in future to any charge beyond the old custom, without assent of the commons in full parliament. Stat. 2, same year; the king promises to lay on no charge but by assent of the lords and commons. 18 E. 3. stat. 2. c. 1; the commons grant two-fifteenths of the commonalty, and two-tenths of the cities and boroughs. "Et en cas que notre seigneur le roi passe la mer, de paier a mesmes les tems les quinzisme et disme del second an, et nemy en autre maniere. Issint que les deniers de ce levez soient despendus, en les besoignes a eux monstez a cest parlement, par avis des grauntz a ce assignez, et que les aides dela Trente soient mys en defense de north." This is a remarkable precedent for the usage of appropriation, which had escaped me, though I have elsewhere quoted that in 5 Rich. 2. stat. 2. c. 2 & 3. In two or three instances, we find grants of tenths and fifteenths in the statutes, without any other matter, as 14 E. 3. stat. 1. c. 20; 27 E. 3. stat. 1. c. 4.

† 7 H. 7. c. 11; 12 H. 7. c. 12.

‡ I find only one exception, 5 H. 8. c. 17, which was in the common form: Be it enacted by the king our sovereign lord, and by the assent, &c.

In 37 H. 8. c. 25, both lords and commons are said to grant, and they pray that their grant "may be ratified and confirmed by his majesty's royal assent, so to be enacted and authorised by virtue of this present parliament as in such cases heretofore has been accustomed."

CHAP. XIII. Charles II. Constitution

lords and commons are sometimes both said to grant, but more frequently the latter, with the former's assent, as continued to be the case through the reigns of Elizabeth and James I. In the first parliament of Charles I., the commons began to omit the name of the lords in the preamble of bills of supply, reciting the grant as if wholly their own, but in the enacting words adopted the customary form of statutes. This, though once remonstrated against by the upper house, has continued ever since to be the practice.

The originating power as to taxation was thus indubitably placed in the house of commons; nor did any controversy arise upon that gronnd. But they maintained also that the lords could not make any amendment whatever in bills sent up to them for imposing, directly or indirectly, a charge upon the people. There seems no proof that any difference between the two houses on this score had arisen before the restoration; and in the convention parliament, the lords made several alterations in undoubted money-bills, to which the commons did not object. But in 1661, the lords having sent down a bill for paving the streets of Westminster, to which they desired the concurrence of the commons, the latter, on reading the bill a first time, "observing that it went to lay a charge upon the people, and conceiving that it was a privilege inherent in their house that bills of that nature should be first considered there," laid it aside, and caused another to be brought in *. When this was sent up to the lords, they inserted a clause, to which the commons disagreed as contrary to their privileges, because the people cannot have any tax or charge imposed upon them, but originally by the house of commons. The lords resolved this assertion of the commons to be against the inherent privileges of the house of peers, and mentioned one precedent of a similar bill in the reign of Mary, and two in that of Elizabeth, which had begun with

* Commons' Journals, 24, 29 July. Lords' Journals, 30 July.

them. The present bill was defeated by the unwillingness of either party to recede; but for a few years after, though the point in question was still agitated, instances occur where the commons suffered amendments in what were now considered as money-bills to pass, and others where the lords receded from them rather than defeat the proposed measure. In April 1671, however, the lords having reduced the amount of an imposition on sugar, it was resolved by the other house, "That in all aids given to the king by the commons, the rate or tax ought not to be altered by the lords *." This brought on several conferences between the houses, wherein the limits of the exclusive privilege claimed by the commons were discussed with considerable ability, and less heat than in the disputes concerning judicature; but, as I cannot help thinking, with a decided advantage both as to precedent and constitutional analogy on the side of the peers †. If the commons, as in early times, had merely granted their own money, it would be reasonable that their house should have, as it claimed to have, "a fundamental right as to the matter, the measure, and the time." But that the peers, subject to the same burthens as the rest of the community, and possessing no trifling proportion of the general wealth, should have no other alternative than to refuse the necessary supplies of the revenue, or to have their exact proportion, with all qualifications and circumstances attending their grant, presented to them unalterably by the other

* They expressed this with strange latitude in a resolution some years after, that all aids and supplies to his majesty in parliament are *the sole gift of the commons*. Parl. Hist. 1005. As they did not mean to deny that the lords must concur in the bill, much less that they must pay their quota, this language seems indefensible.

† Lords' and Commons' Journals, April 17th and 22d, 1679. Parl. Hist. iv. 480. Hatsell's Precedents, iii. 109, 368, 409.

In a pamphlet by lord Anglesea, if I mistake not, entitled "Case stated of the Jurisdiction of the House of Lords in point of Impositions," 1696, a vigorous and learned defence of the right of the lords to make alterations in money-bills, it is admitted that they cannot increase the rates, since that would be to originate a charge on the people, which they cannot do. But it is even said in the year-book, 33 H. 6, that if the commons grant tonnage for four years, and the lords reduce the term to two years, they need not send the bill down again. This of course could not be supported in modern times.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

house of parliament, was an anomaly that could hardly rest on any other ground of defence than such a series of precedents as establish a constitutional usage; while, in fact, it could not be made out that such a pretension was ever advanced by the commons before the present parliament. In the short parliament of April 1640, the lords having sent down a message, requesting the other house to give precedency in the business they were about to matter of supply, it had been highly resented, as an infringement of their privilege, and Mr. Pym was appointed to represent their complaint at a conference. Yet even then, in the fervour of that critical period, the boldest advocate of popular privileges who could have been selected was content to assert, that the matter of subsidy and supply ought to begin in the house of commons *.

There seems to be still less pretext for the great extension given by the commons to their acknowledged privilege of originating bills of supply. The principle was well adapted to that earlier period when security against mis-government could only be obtained by the vigilant jealousy and uncompromising firmness of the commons. They came to the grant of subsidy with real or feigned reluctance, as the stipulated price of redress of grievances. They considered the lords, generally speaking, as too intimately united with the king's ordinary council, which indeed sat with them, and had perhaps, as late as Edward III.'s time, a deliberate voice. They knew the influence, or intimidating ascendancy of the peers, over many of their own members. It may be doubted, in fact, whether the lower house shook off, absolutely and permanently, all sense of subordination, or at least deference to the upper, till about the close of the reign of Elizabeth. But I must confess, that in applying the wise and ancient maxim, that the commons alone can empower the king to levy the people's money, to a private bill for lighting and

* Parl. Hist. ii. 563.

cleansing a certain town, or cutting dikes in a fen, to local and limited assessments for local benefit, as to which the crown has no manner of interest, nor has any thing to do with the collection, there was more disposition shown to make encroachments, than to guard against those of others. They began soon after the revolution to introduce a still more extraordinary construction of their privilege, not receiving from the house of lords any bill which imposes a pecuniary penalty on offenders, nor permitting them to alter the application of such as have been imposed below *.

These restrictions upon the other house of parliament, however, are now become, in their own estimation, the standing privileges of the commons. Several instances have occurred during the last century, though not, I believe, very lately, when bills, chiefly of a private nature, have been unanimously rejected, and even thrown over the table by the speaker, because they contained some provision, in which the lords had trespassed upon these alleged rights †. They are, as may be supposed, very differently regarded in the neighbouring chamber. The lords have never acknowledged any further privilege than that of originating bills of supply. But the good sense of both parties, and of an enlightened nation, who must witness and judge of their disputes,

* The principles laid down by Hatsell are: 1. That in bills of supply, the lords can make no alteration but to correct verbal mistakes: 2. That in bills, not of absolute supply, yet imposing burthens, as turnpike acts, &c., the lords cannot alter the quantum of the toll, the persons to manage it, &c.; but in other clauses they may make amendments: 3. That where a charge may indirectly be thrown on the people by a bill, the commons object to the lords making amendments: 4. That the lords cannot insert pecuniary penalties in a bill, or alter those inserted by the commons. iii. 137. He seems to boast that the lords during the last century have very faintly opposed the claim of the commons. But surely they have sometimes done so in practice by returning a money-bill, or what the lower house call one, amended; and the commons have had recourse to the evasion of throwing out such bill, and bringing in another with the amendments inserted in it; which does not look very triumphant.

† The last instance mentioned by Hatsell is in 1790, when the lords had amended a bill for regulating Warwick gaol by changing the rate to be imposed from the land owners to the occupiers. iii. 131. I am not at present aware of any subsequent case, but rather suspect that such might be found.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

as well as the natural desire of the government to prevent in the outset any altercation that must impede the course of its measures, have rendered this little jealousy unproductive of those animosities which it seemed so happily contrived to excite. The one house, without admitting the alleged privilege, has generally been cautious not to give a pretext for eagerly asserting it; and the other, on the trifling occasions where it has seemed, perhaps unintentionally, to be infringed, has commonly resorted to the moderate course of passing a fresh bill to the same effect, after satisfying its dignity by rejecting the first.

It may not be improper to choose the present occasion for a summary view of the constitution of both houses of parliament under the lines of Tudor and Stuart. Of their earlier history the reader may find a brief, and not, I believe, very incorrect account in a work to which this is a kind of sequel.

The number of temporal lords summoned by writ to the parliaments of the house of Plantagenet was exceedingly various, nor was any thing more common in the fourteenth century than to omit those who had previously sat in person, and still more their descendants. They were rather less numerous for this reason, under the line of Lancaster, when the practice of summoning those who were not hereditary peers did not so much prevail as in the preceding reigns. Fifty-three names, however, appear in the parliament of 1454, the last held before the commencement of the great contest between York and Lancaster. In this troublous period of above thirty years, if the whole reign of Edward IV. is to be included, the chiefs of many powerful families lost their lives in the field or on the scaffold, and their honours perished with them by attainder. New families, adherents of the victorious party, rose in their place, and sometimes an attainder was reversed by favour, so that the peers of Edward's reign were not much fewer than the number I have mentioned. Henry VII. summoned but twenty-nine to his first parliament, including some whose attainder had never been

judicially reversed; a plain act of violence, like his previous usurpation of the crown. In his subsequent parliaments, the peerage was increased by fresh creations, but never much exceeded forty. The greatest number summoned by Henry VIII. was fifty-one, which continued to be nearly the average in the two next reigns, and was very little augmented by Elizabeth. James, in his thoughtless profusion of favour, made so many new creations, that eighty-two peers sat in his first parliament, and ninety-six in his latest. From a similar facility in granting so cheap a reward of service, and in some measure perhaps from the policy of counteracting a spirit of opposition to the court, which many of the lords had begun to manifest, Charles called no less than one hundred and seventeen peers to the parliament of 1628, and one hundred and nineteen to that of November 1640. Many of these honours were sold by both these princes; a disgraceful and dangerous practice, unheard of in earlier times, by which the princely peerage of England might have been gradually levelled with the herd of foreign nobility. This, however, has rarely been suspected since the restoration. In the parliament of 1661, we find one hundred and thirty-nine lords summoned.

The spiritual lords, who, though forming another estate of parliament, have always been so united with the temporality that the suffrages of both upon every question are told indistinctly and numerically, composed in general, before the reformation, a majority of the upper house; though there was far more irregularity in the summonses of the mitred abbots and priors than in those of the barons. But by the surrender and dissolution of the monasteries, about thirty-six votes of the clergy, on an average, were withdrawn from the parliament; a loss ill compensated to them by the creation of five new bishopricks. Thus, the number of the temporal peers being continually augmented, while that of the prelates was confined to twenty-six, the direct influence of the church on the legislature has become comparatively

small; and that of the crown, which, by the pernicious system of translations and other means, is generally powerful with the episcopal bench, has, in this respect at least, undergone some diminution. It is easy to perceive from this view of the case, that the destruction of the monasteries, as they then stood, was looked upon as an indispensable preliminary to the reformation, no peaceable efforts towards which could have been effectual, without altering the relative proportions of the spiritual and temporal aristocracy.

The house of lords, during this period of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, were not supine in rendering their collective and individual rights independent of the crown. It became a fundamental principle, according, indeed, to ancient authority, though not strictly observed in ruder times, that every peer of full age is entitled to his writ of summons at the beginning of a parliament, and that the house will not proceed on business, if any one is denied it*. The privilege of voting by proxy, which was originally by special permission of the king, became absolute, though subject to such limitations as the house itself may impose. The writ of summons, which, as I have observed, had in earlier ages, if usage is to determine that which can rest on nothing but usage, given only a right of sitting in the parliament for which it issued, was held, about the end of Elizabeth's reign, by a construction founded on later usage, to convey an inheritable peerage, which was afterwards adjudged to descend upon heirs general, female as well as male; an extension which sometimes raises intricate questions of descent, and though no materially bad consequences have flowed from it, is perhaps one of the blemishes in the constitution of parliament. Doubts whether a

* See the case of the earl of Arundel in parliament of 1626. In one instance the house took notice that a writ of summons had been issued to the earl of Mulgrave, he being under age, and addressed the king that he would be pleased to be sparing of writs of this nature for the future. 20 Oct. 1667. The king made an excuse that he did not know the earl was much under age, and would be careful for the future. 29 Oct.

peerage could be surrendered to the king, and whether a territorial honour, of which hardly any remain, could be alienated along with the land on which it depended, were determined in the manner most favourable to the dignity of the aristocracy. They obtained also an important privilege, first of recording their dissent in the journals of the house, and afterwards of inserting the grounds of it. Instances of the former occur not unfrequently at the period of the reformation, but the latter practice was little known before the long parliament. A right that Cato or Phocion would have prized, though it may sometimes have been frivolously or factiously exercised!

The house of commons, from the earliest records of its regular existence in the 23d year of Edward I., consisted of seventy-four knights, or representatives from all the counties of England, except Chester, Durham, and Monmouth, and of a varying number of deputies from the cities and boroughs, sometimes in the earliest period of representation amounting to as many as two hundred and sixty; sometimes, by the negligence or partiality of the sheriffs in omitting places that had formerly returned members, to not more than two-thirds of that number. New boroughs, however, as being grown into importance, or from some private motive, acquired the franchise of election; and at the accession of Henry VIII. we find two hundred and twenty-four citizens and burgesses from one hundred and eleven towns, London sending four, none of which have since intermitted their privilege.

I must so far concur with those whose general principles as to the theory of parliamentary reform leave me far behind, as to profess my opinion, that the change which appears to have taken place in the English government towards the end of the thirteenth century was founded upon the maxim, that all who possessed landed or moveable property ought, as freemen, to be bound by no laws, and especially by no taxation, to which they had not consented through their representatives. If we look at the con-

CHAP. XIII.
Charles II. Constitution

stituents of a house of commons under Edward I. or Edward III., and consider the state of landed tenures and of commerce at that period, we shall perceive that, excepting women, who have generally been supposed capable of no political right but that of reigning, almost every one who contributed towards the tenths and fifteenths granted by the parliament might have exercised the franchise of voting for those who sat in it. Admitting that in corporate boroughs the franchise may have been usually vested in the freemen rather than the inhabitants, yet this distinction, so important in later ages, was of little consequence at a time when all traders, that is all who possessed any moveable property worth assessing, belonged to the former class. I do not pretend that no one was contributory to a subsidy, who did not possess a vote; but that the far greater portion was levied on those who, as freeholders or burgesses, were reckoned in law to have been consenting to its imposition. It would be difficult, probably, to name any town of the least consideration, in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, which did not, at some time or other, return members to parliament. This is so much the case, that if, in running our eyes along the map, we find any sea-port, as Sunderland or Falmouth, or any inland town, as Leeds or Birmingham, which has never enjoyed the elective franchise, we may conclude at once, that it has emerged from obscurity since the reign of Henry VIII.

Though no considerable town, I believe, was intentionally left out, except by the sheriffs' partiality, it is not to be supposed that all boroughs that made returns were considerable. Several that are currently said to be decayed were never much better than at present. Some of these were the ancient demesne of the crown, the tenants of which not being suitors to the county-courts, nor voting in the election of knights for the shire, were, still on the same principle of consent to public burthens, called upon to send their own representatives. Others received the privilege along with their charter of incorporation, in the hope that they would thrive more than proved to be the event; and possibly,

even in such early times, the idea of obtaining influence in the commons through the votes of their burgesses might sometimes suggest itself.

That amidst all this care to secure the positive right of representation so little provision should have been made as to its relative efficiency, that the high-born and opulent gentry should have been so vastly out-numbered by peddling traders, that the same number of two should have been deemed sufficient for the counties of York and Rutland, for Bristol and Gatton, are facts more easy to wonder at than to explain; for though the total ignorance of the government as to the relative population might be perhaps a sufficient reason for not making an attempt at equalization, yet if the representation had been founded on any thing like a numerical principle, there would have been no difficulty in reducing it to the proportion furnished by the books of subsidy for each county and borough, or at least in a rude approximation towards a more rational distribution.

Henry VIII. gave a remarkable proof that no part of the kingdom, subject to the English laws and parliamentary burthens, ought to want its representation, by extending the right of election to the whole of Wales, the counties of Chester and Monmouth, and even the towns of Berwick and Calais. It might be possible to trace the reason, though I have never met with any, why the county of Durham was passed over. The attachment of those northern parts to popery seems as likely as any other. Thirty-three were thus added to the commons. Edward VI. created fourteen boroughs, and restored ten that had disused their privilege. Mary added twenty-one, Elizabeth sixty, and James twenty-seven members *.

* It is doubted by Mr. Merewether (*arguendo*) whether Edward and Mary created so many new boroughs as appears; because the returns under Henry VII. and Henry VIII. are lost. But the motive operated more strongly in the later reigns. West Looe Case, 80.

CHAP. XIII. Charles II. Constitution

These accessions to the popular chamber of parliament after the reign of Henry VIII. were by no means derived from a popular principle, such as had influenced its earlier constitution. We may account perhaps on this ground for the writs addressed to a very few towns, such as Westminster. But the design of that great influx of new members from petty boroughs, which began in the short reigns of Edward and Mary, and continued under Elizabeth, must have been to secure the authority of government, especially in the successive revolutions of religion. Five towns only in Cornwall made returns at the accession of Edward VI.; twenty-one at the death of Elizabeth. It will not be pretended that the wretched villages, which corruption and perjury still hardly keep from famine, were seats of commerce and industry in the sixteenth century. But the county of Cornwall was more immediately subject to a coercive influence, through the indefinite and oppressive jurisdiction of the stannary-court. Similar motives, if we could discover the secrets of those governments, doubtless operated in most other cases. A slight difficulty seems to have been raised, in 1563, about the introduction of representatives from eight new boroughs at once by charters from the crown, but soon waved, with the complaisance usual in those times. Many of the towns which had abandoned their privilege at a time when they were compelled to the payment of daily wages to their members during the session were now desirous of recovering it, when that burthen had ceased and the franchise had become valuable. And the house, out of favour to popular rights, laid it down in the reign of James I. as a principle, that every town, which has at any time returned members to parliament, is entitled to a writ as a matter of course. The speaker accordingly issued writs to Hertford, Pomfret, Ilchester, and some other places, on their petition. The restorations of boroughs in this manner, down to 1641, are fifteen in number. But though the doctrine that an elective right cannot be lost by disuse is still

current in parliament, none of the very numerous boroughs which have ceased to enjoy that franchise since the days of the three first Edwards have from the restoration downwards made any attempt at retrieving it; nor is it by any means likely that they would be successful in the application. Charles I., whose temper inspired him rather with a systematic abhorrence of parliaments than with any notion of managing them by influence, created no new boroughs. The right indeed would certainly have been disputed, however frequently exercised. In 1673 the county and city of Durham, which had strangely been unrepresented to so late an æra, were raised by act of parliament to the privileges of their fellow-subjects*. About the same time a charter was granted to the town of Newark, enabling it to return two burgesses. It passed with some little objection at the time; but four years afterwards, after two debates, it was carried on the question, by 125 to 73, that by virtue of the charter granted to the town of Newark, it hath right to send burgesses to serve in parliament †. Notwithstanding this apparent recognition of the king's prerogative to summon burgesses from a town not previously represented, no later instance of its exercise has occurred; and it would unquestionably have been resisted by the commons, not, as is vulgarly supposed, because the act of union with Scotland has limited the English members to 513, which is not the case, but upon the broad maxims of exclusive privilege in matters relating to their own body, which the house was become powerful enough to assert against the crown.

It is doubtless a problem of no inconsiderable difficulty to determine, with perfect exactness, by what class of persons the electoral franchise in ancient boroughs was originally possessed; yet not perhaps so much so as the carelessness of some, and the artifices of others, have caused it to appear. The different opinions on this

* 25 Car. 2. c. 9. A bill had passed the commons in 1624 for the same effect, but failed through the dissolution.

† Journals, 26th Feb. and 20th March, 1676-7.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

controverted question may be reduced to the four following theses. 1. The original right as enjoyed by boroughs represented in the parliaments of Edward I., and all of later creation, where one of a different nature has not been expressed in the charter from which they derive the privilege, was in the inhabitants householders resident in the borough, and paying scot and lot, by those words including local rates, and probably general taxes. 2. The right sprung from the tenure of certain freehold lands or burgages within the borough, and did not belong to any but such tenants. 3. It was derived from charters of incorporation, and belonged to the community or freemen of the corporate body. 4. It did not extend to the generality of freemen, but was limited to the governing part, or municipal magistracy. The actual right of election, as fixed by determinations of the house of commons before 1772, and by committees under the Grenville act since, is variously grounded upon some of these four principal rules, each of which has been subject to subordinate modifications, which produce still more complication and irregularity.

Of these propositions, the first was laid down by a celebrated committee of the house of commons in 1624, the chairman whereof was serjeant Glanville, and the members, as appears by the list in the journals, the most eminent men, in respect of legal and constitutional knowledge that were ever united in such a body. It is called by them the common-law right, and that which ought always to obtain, where prescriptive usage to the contrary cannot be shown. But it has met with very little favour from the house of commons since the restoration. The second has the authority of lord Holt in the case of Ashby and White, and of some other lawyers, who have turned their attention to the subject. It countenances what is called the right of burgage tenure; the electors in boroughs of this description being such as hold burgages, or ancient tenements, within the borough. The next theory, which attaches the primary franchise to the freemen of corporations, has, on the whole, been most received in modern times, if we look

either at the decisions of the proper tribunal, or the current doctrine of lawyers. The last proposition is that of Dr. Brady, who in a treatise of boroughs, written to serve the purposes of James II., though not published till after the revolution, endeavoured to settle all elective rights on the narrowest and least popular basis. This work gained some credit, which its perspicuity and acuteness would deserve, if these were not disgraced by a perverse sophistry and suppression of truth.

It does not appear at all probable, that such varying and indefinite usages, as we find in our present representation of boroughs, could have begun simultaneously, when they were first called to parliament by Edward I. and his two next descendants. There would have been what may be fairly called a common law right, even were we to admit that some variation from it may, at the very commencement, have occurred in particular places. The earliest writ of summons directed the sheriff to make a return from every borough within his jurisdiction, without any limitation to such as had obtained charters, nor any rule as to the electoral body. Charters, in fact, incorporating towns seem to have been by no means common in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries; and though they grew more frequent afterwards, yet the first that gave expressly a right of returning members to parliament was that of Wenlock under Edward IV. These charters, it has been contended, were incorporations of the inhabitants, and gave no power either to exclude any of them, or to admit non-resident strangers, according to the practice of later ages. But however this may be, it is an undeniable truth, that the word burgess (burgensis), long before the elective franchise, or the character of a corporation existed, meant literally the free inhabitant householder of a borough. We may, I believe, reject with confidence what I have reckoned as the third proposition; namely, that the elective franchise belonged, as of common right, to the freemen of corporations; and still more that of Brady, which few would be found to support at the present day.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

There can, I should conceive, be little pretence for affecting to doubt, that the burgesses of Domesday-book, of the various early records cited by Madox and others, and of the writs of summons to Edward's parliament, were inhabitants of tenements within the borough. But it may remain to be proved, that any were entitled to the privileges or rank of burgesses who held less than an estate of freehold in their possessions. The burgage-tenure, of which we read in Littleton, was evidently freehold; and it is not to be assumed that the lessees of dwellings for a term of years, whose interest, in contemplation of law, is far inferior to a freehold, were looked upon as sufficiently domiciled within the borough to obtain the appellation of burgesses. It appears from Domesday, that the burgesses, long before any incorporation, held lands in common belonging to their town; they had also their guild or market-house, and were entitled in some places to tolls and customs. These permanent rights seem naturally restrained to those who possessed an absolute property in the soil. There can surely be no question as to mere tenants at will, liable to be removed from their occupation at the pleasure of the lord; and it is perhaps unnecessary to mention, that the tenancy from year to year, so usual at present, is of very recent introduction. As to estates for a term of years, even of considerable duration, they were probably not uncommon in the time of Edward I., yet far out-numbered, as I should conceive, by those of a freehold nature. Whether these lessees were contributory to the ancient local burthens of scot and lot, as well as to the tallages exacted by the king, and tenths afterwards imposed by parliament in respect of moveable estate, it seems not easy to determine; but if they were so, as appears more probable, it was not only consonant to the principle, that no freeman should be liable to taxation without the consent of his representatives, to give them a share in the general privilege of the borough, but it may be inferred with sufficient evidence from several records, that the privilege and the burthen were absolutely commensurate; men having been

specially discharged from contributing to tallages, because they did not participate in the liberties of the borough, and others being expressly declared subject to those impositions, as the condition of their being admitted to the rights of burgesses*. It might, however, be conjectured, that a difference of usage between those boroughs, where the ancient exclusive rights of burgage tenants were maintained, and those where the equitable claim of taxable inhabitants possessing only a chattel interest received attention, might ultimately produce those very opposite species of franchise, which we find in the scot and lot boroughs, and in those of burgage tenure. If the franchise, as we now denominate it, passed in the thirteenth century for a burthen, subjecting the elector to bear his part in the payment of wages to the representative, the above conjecture will be equally applicable, by changing the words right and claim into liability †.

It was according to the natural course of things, that the mayors or bailiffs, as returning officers, with some of the principal burgesses, especially where incorporating charters had given them a pre-eminence, would take to themselves the advantage of serving a courtier, or neighbouring gentleman, by returning him

* Madox Firma Burgi, p. 270, et post.

† The popular character of the elective franchise in early times has been maintained by two writers of considerable research and ability; Mr. Luders, Reports of Election Cases, and Mr. Merewether, in his Sketch of the History of Boroughs, and Report of the West Looe Case. The former writer has the following observations, vol. i. p. 99. "The ancient history of boroughs does not confirm the opinion above referred to, which lord chief justice Holt delivered in the case of Ashby v. White; viz. that inhabitants not incorporated cannot send members to parliament but by prescription. For there is good reason to believe, that the elections in boroughs were in the beginning of representation popular; yet in the reign of Edward I. there were not perhaps thirty corporations in the kingdom. Who then elected the members of boroughs not incorporated? Plainly the inhabitants, or burghers, [according to their tenure or situation] for at that time every inhabitant of a borough was called a burgess; and Hobart refers to this usage in support of his opinion in the case of Dungannon. The manner in which they exercised this right was the same as that in which the inhabitants of a town, at this day, hold a right of common, or other such privilege, which many possess who are not incorporated." The words in brackets, which are not in the printed edition, are inserted by the author himself in a copy bequeathed to the Inner Temple library. The remainder of Mr. Luders's note, though too long for this place, is very good, and successfully repels the *corporate* theory.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

to parliament, and virtually exclude the general class of electors, indifferent to public matters, and without a suspicion that their individual suffrages could ever be worth purchase. It is certain, that a seat in the commons was an object of ambition in the time of Edward IV., and I have little doubt that it was so in many instances much sooner. But there existed not the means of that splendid corruption which has emulated the Crassi and Luculli of Rome. Even so late as 1571, Thomas Long, a member for Westbury, confessed that he had given four pounds to the mayor and another person for his return. The elections were thus generally managed, not often perhaps by absolute bribery, but through the influence of the government, and of the neighbouring aristocracy; and while the freemen of the corporation, or resident householders, were frequently permitted, for the sake of form, to concur in the election, there were many places where the smaller part of the municipal body, by whatever names distinguished, acquired a sort of prescriptive right through an usage, of which it was too late to show the commencement *.

* The following passage from Vowell's treatise, on the order of the parliament, published in 1571, and reprinted in Holingshed's Chronicles of Ireland, (vi. 345,) seems to indicate, that at least in practice, the election was in the principal or governing body of the corporation. "The sheriff of every county having received his writ, ought forthwith to send his precepts and summons to the mayors, bailiffs, and head officers of every city, town corporate, borough, and such places as have been accustomed to send burgesses within his county, that they do choose and elect among themselves two citizens for every city, and two burgesses for every borough, according to their old custom and usage. And these head officers ought then to assemble themselves, *and the aldermen and common council of every city or town*; and to make choice among themselves of two able and sufficient men of every city or town, to serve for and in the said parliament."

Now, if these expressions are accurate, it certainly seems that, at this period, the great body of freemen or inhabitants were not partakers in the exercise of their franchise. And the following passage, if the reader will turn to it, wherein Vowell adverts to the form of a county election, is so differently worded in respect to the election by the freeholders at large, that we may fairly put a literal construction upon the former. In point of fact, I have little doubt that elections in boroughs were for the most part very closely managed in the sixteenth century, and probably much earlier. This, however, will not by any means decide the question of right. For we know that in the reigns of Henry IV. and Henry V. returns for the great county of York were made by the proxies of a few peers, and a few knights; and there is a still more anomalous case in the reign of Elizabeth, when a lady Packington sealed the indenture for the county of Worcester. Carew's Hist. of Elections, part ii. p. 282.

It was perceived, however, by the assertors of the popular cause under James I. that, by this narrowing of the electoral franchise, many boroughs were subjected to the influence of the privy council, which, by restoring the householders to their legitimate rights, would strengthen the interests of the country. Hence lord Coke lays it down in his fourth institute, that "if the king newly incorporate an ancient borough, which before sent burgesses to parliament, and granteth that certain selected burgesses shall make election of the burgesses of parliament, where all the burgesses elected before, this charter taketh not away the election of the other burgesses. And so, if a city or borough hath power to make ordinances, they cannot make an ordinance that a less member shall elect burgesses for the parliament than made the election before; for free elections of members of the high court of parliament are pro bono publico, and not to be compared to other cases of election of mayors, bailiffs, &c. of corporations*." He adds, however, "by original grant or by custom, a selected number of burgesses may elect and bind the residue." This restriction was admitted by the committee over which Glanville presided in 1624†. But both they and lord Coke believed the representation of boroughs to be from a date before what is called legal memory, that is, the accession of Richard I. It is not easy to reconcile their principle, that an elective right once subsisting could not be limited by any thing short of immemorial prescription, with some of their own determinations, and still less with those which have subsequently

But no one would pretend that the right of election was in these persons, or supposed by any human being to be so.

The difficulty to be got over by those who defend the modern decisions of committees is this. We know that in the reign of Edward I. more than one hundred boroughs made returns to the writ. If most of these were not incorporated, nor had any aldermen, capital burgesses and so forth, by whom were the elections made? Surely by the freeholders, or other inhabitants. And if they were so made in the reign of Edward I. how has the franchise been restrained afterwards?

* 4 Inst. 48. Glanville, p. 53. 66. That no private agreement, or by-law of the borough, can restrain the right of election, is laid down in the same book, p. 17.

† Glanville's case of Bletchingly, p. 33.

CHAP. XIII.

Charles II. Constitution

occurred, in favour of a restrained right of suffrage. There seems, on the whole, great reason to be of opinion that where a borough is so ancient as to have sent members to parliament before any charter of incorporation proved, or reasonably presumed to have been granted, or where the word burgensis is used without any thing to restrain its meaning in an ancient charter, the right of election ought to have been acknowledged either in the resident householders, paying general and local taxes, or in such of them as possessed an estate of freehold within the borough. And whatever may have been the primary meaning of the word burgess, it appears consonant to the popular spirit of the English constitution, that, after the possessors of leasehold interests became so numerous and opulent, as to bear a very large share in the public burthens, they should have enjoyed commensurate privileges; and that the resolution of Mr. Glanville's committee in favour of what they called the common law right should have been far more uniformly received, and more consistently acted upon, not merely as agreeable to modern theories of liberty, from which some have intimated it to have sprung, but as grounded on the primitive spirit and intention of the law of parliament.

In the reign of Charles II. the house of commons seems to have become less favourable to this species of franchise. But after the revolution, when the struggle of parties was renewed every three years throughout the kingdom, the right of election came more continually into question, and was treated with the grossest partiality by the house, as subordinate to the main interests of the rival factions. Contrary determinations, for the sole purpose of serving these interests, as each grew in its turn more powerful, frequently occurred; and at this time the ancient right of resident householders seems to have grown into disrepute, and given way to that of corporations, sometimes at large, sometimes only in a limited and very small number. A slight check was imposed on this scandalous and systematic injustice by the act 2 G. ii. c. 2,

which renders the last determination of the house of commons conclusive as to the right of election *. But this enactment confirmed many decisions that cannot be reconciled with any sensible rule. The same iniquity continued to prevail in cases beyond its pale; the fall of sir Robert Walpole from power was reckoned to be settled, when there appeared a small majority against him on the right of election at Chippenham, a question not very logically connected with the merits of his administration; and the house would to this day have gone on trampling on the franchises of their constituents, if a statute had not been passed through the authority and eloquence of Mr. Grenville, which has justly been known by his name. I shall not enumerate the particular provisions of this excellent law, which, in point of time, does not fall within the period of my present work; it is generally acknowledged, that, by transferring the judicature in all cases of controverted elections, from the house to a sworn committee of fifteen members, the reproach of partiality has been a good deal lightened, though not perhaps effaced.

* This clause in an act imposing severe penalties on bribery was inserted by the house of lords with the insidious design of causing the rejection of the whole bill, if the commons, as might be expected, should resent such an interference with their privileges. The ministry accordingly endeavoured to excite this sentiment; but those who had introduced the bill very wisely thought it better to sacrifice a point of dignity, rather than lose so important a statute. It was, however, only carried by two voices to agree with the amendment. Parl. Hist. viii. 754.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE REIGN OF JAMES II.

Designs of the King—Parliament of 1685—*King's Intention to repeal the Test Act—Deceived as to the Dispositions of his Subjects—Prorogation of Parliament—Dispensing Power confirmed by the Judges—Ecclesiastical Commission—King's Scheme of establishing Popery—Dismissal of Lord Rochester—Prince of Orange alarmed—Plan of setting the Princess aside—Rejected by the King—Overtures of the Malcontents to Prince of Orange—Declaration for Liberty of Conscience—Addresses in favour of it—New modelling of the Corporations—Affair of Magdalen College—Infatuation of the King—His Coldness towards Louis—Invitation signed to the Prince of Orange—Birth of Prince of Wales—Justice and Necessity of the Revolution—Favourable Circumstances attending it—Its salutary Consequences—Proceedings of the Convention—Ended by the Elevation of William and Mary to the Throne.*

THE great question that has been brought forward at the end of the last chapter, concerning the right and usage of election in boroughs, was perhaps of less practical importance in the reign of Charles the Second, than we might at first imagine, or than it might become in the present age. Whoever might be the legal electors, it is undoubted that a great preponderance was virtually lodged in the select body of corporations. It was the knowledge of this that produced the corporation act soon after the restoration, to exclude the presbyterians, and the more violent measures of quo warranto, at the end of Charles's reign. If by placing creatures of the court in municipal offices, or by intimidating the former corporators through apprehensions of forfeiting

their common property and lucrative privileges, what was called a loyal parliament could be procured, the business of government, both as to supply and enactment or repeal of laws, would be carried on far more smoothly, and with less scandal, than by their entire disuse. Few of those who assumed the name of tories were prepared to sacrifice the ancient fundamental forms of the constitution. They thought it equally necessary that a parliament should exist, and that it should have no will of its own, or none at least except for the preservation of that ascendancy of the established religion, which even their loyalty would not consent to surrender.

It is not easy to determine whether James II. had resolved to complete his schemes of arbitrary government, by setting aside even the nominal concurrence of the two houses of parliament in legislative enactments, and especially in levying money on his subjects. Lord Halifax had given him much offence towards the close of the late reign, and was considered from thenceforth as a man unfit to be employed, because in the cabinet, on a question, whether the people of New England should be ruled in future by an assembly, or by the absolute pleasure of the crown, he had spoken very freely against unlimited monarchy *. James indeed could hardly avoid perceiving that the constant acquiescence of an English house of commons in the measures proposed to it, a respectful abstinence from all intermeddling with the administration of affairs, could never be relied upon or obtained at all, without much of that dexterous management and influence which he thought it both unworthy and impolitć to exert. It seems clearly that he had determined on trying their obedience merely as an experiment, and by no means to put his authority in any manner within their control. Hence he took the bold step of issuing a proclamation for the payment of customs, which, by law, expired at the late king's death †; and Barillon mentions se-

* Fox, Appendix, p. 8.

† "The legal method," says Burnet, "was to have made entries, and to have taken bonds for those duties to be paid when the parliament should meet and renew the grant." Mr. Onslow remarks on this, that he should have said, the least illegal and the only justifiable method. To which the Oxford editor

CHAP. XIV. James II.

veral times, that he was resolved to continue in the possession of the revenue, whether the parliament should grant it or no. He was equally decided not to accept it for a limited time. This, as his principal ministers told the ambassador, would be to establish the necessity of convoking parliament from time to time, and thus to change the form of government, by rendering the king dependent upon it; rather than which it would be better to come at once to the extremity of a dissolution, and maintain the possession of the late king's revenues by open force *. But the extraordinary conduct of this house of commons, so unlike any that had met in England for the last century, rendered any exertion of violence on this score quite unnecessary.

The behaviour of that unhonoured parliament, which held its two short sessions in 1685, though in a great measure owing to the fickleness of the public mind, and rapid ascendancy of tory principles during the late years, as well as to a knowledge of the king's severe and vindictive temper, seems to confirm the assertion strongly made at the time within its walls, that many of the members had been unduly returned †. The notorious facts

subjoins, that it was the proposal of lord-keeper North, while the other, which was adopted, was suggested by Jefferies. This is a mistake. North's proposal was to collect the duties under the proclamation, but to keep them apart from the other revenues in the exchequer until the next session of parliament. There was surely little difference in point of illegality between this and the course adopted. It was alleged, that the merchants, who had paid duty, would be injured by a temporary importation duty free; and certainly it was inconvenient to make the revenue dependent on such a contingency as the demise of the crown. But this neither justifies the proclamation, nor the disgraceful acquiescence of the next parliament in it.

The king was thanked in several addresses for directing the customs to be levied, particularly in one from the benchers and barristers of the Middle Temple. London Gazette, March 11. This was drawn by sir Bartholomew Shower, and presented by sir Humphrey Mackworth. Life of James, vol. ii. p. 17. The former was active as a lawyer in all the worst measures of these two reigns. Yet, after the revolution, they both became tory patriots, and jealous assertors of freedom against the government of William III. Barillon, however, takes notice, that this illegal continuance of the revenue produced much discontent. Fox's Appendix, 39; and Rochester told him, that North and Halifax would have urged the king to call a parliament, in order to settle the revenue on a lawful basis, if that resolution had not been taken by himself. Id. p. 20. The king thought it necessary to apologise to Barillon for convoking parliament. Id. p. 18. Dalrymple, p. 100.

* Dalrymple, p. 142. The king alludes to this possibility of a limited grant with much resentment and threatening, in his speech on opening the session.

† Fox, Appendix, p. 93. Lonsdale, p. 5.

indeed, as to the forfeiture of corporations throughout the kingdom, and their re-grant under such restrictions as might serve the purpose of the crown, stand in need of no confirmation. Those who look at the debates and votes of this assembly, their large grant of a permanent revenue to the annual amount of two millions, rendering a frugal prince, in time of peace, entirely out of all dependence on his people, their timid departure from a resolution taken to address the king on the only matter for which they were really solicitous, the enforcement of the penal laws, on a suggestion of his displeasure *, their bill intitled, for the preservation of his majesty's person, full of dangerous innovations in the law of treason, especially one most unconstitutional clause, that any one moving in either house of parliament to change the descent of the crown should incur the penalties of that offence †, their supply of £700,000, after the suppression of

* For this curious piece of parliamentary inconsistency, see Reresby's Memoirs, p. 113, and Barillon in the appendix to Fox, p. 95. "Il s'est passé avant hier une chose de grande consequence dans la chambre basse: il fut proposé le matin que la chambre se mettoit en comité l'après diner pour considérer la harangue du roy sur l'affaire de la religion, et savoir ce qui devoit etrê entendu par le terme *de religion protestante*. La résolution fut prise unanimement, et sans contradiction, de faire une adresse au roy pour le prier de faire une proclamation pour l'exécution des loix contre tous les non-conformistes généralement, c'est-à-dire, contre tous ceux qui ne sont pas ouvertement de l'église Anglicane; cela enferme les presbitériens et tous les sectaires, aussi bien que les catholiques Romains. La malice de cette résolution fut aussitôt reconnu du roy d'Angleterre, et de ses ministres; les principaux de la chambre basse furent mandés, et ceux que sa majesté Britannique croit être dans ses interêts; il leur fit une reprimande sévère de s'être laissés séduire et entraîner à une résolution si dangereuse et si peu admissible. Il leur déclara que si l'on persistoit à lui faire une pareille adresse, il répondroit à la chambre basse en termes si décisifs et si fermes qu'on ne retourneroit pas à lui faire une pareille adresse. La manière dont sa majesté Britannique s'explique produisit son effet hier matin, et la chambre basse rejeta tout d'une voix ce que avoit été resolu en comité le jour auparavant."

The only man who behaved with distinguished spirit in this wretched parliament was one in whose political life there is little else to praise, sir Edward Seymour. He opposed the grant of the revenues for life, and spoke strongly against the illegal practices in the elections. Fox, 90. 93.

† Fox, Appendix, p. 156. "Provided always, and be it further enacted, that if any peer of this realm, or member of the house of commons, shall move or propose in either house of parliament the disherison of the rightful and true heir of the crown, or to alter or change the descent or succession of the crown in the right line; such offence shall be deemed and adjudged high treason, and every person being indicted and convicted of such treason, shall be proceeded against, and shall suffer and forfeit

CHAP. XIV. James II.

Monmouth's rebellion, for the support of a standing army*, will be inclined to believe, that had James been as zealous for the church of England as his father, he would have succeeded in establishing a power so nearly despotic, that neither the privileges of parliament, nor much less those of private men, would have stood in his way. The prejudice which the two last Stuarts had acquired in favour of the Roman religion, so often deplored by thoughtless or insidious writers, as one of the worst consequences of their father's ill fortune, is to be accounted rather among the most signal links in the chain of causes through which a gracious Providence has favoured the consolidation of our liberties and welfare. Nothing less than a motive more universally operating than the interests of civil freedom would have stayed the compliant spirit of this unworthy parliament, or rallied, for a time at least, the supporters of indefinite prerogative under a banner they abhorred. We know that the king's intention was to obtain the repeal of the habeas corpus act, a law which he reckoned as destructive of monarchy, as the test was of the catholic religion †. And I see no reason to suppose that he would have failed of this, had he not given alarm to his high-church parliament, by a premature manifestation of his [illegible]n to fill the civil and military employments with the professors of his own mode of faith.

It has been doubted by Mr. Fox, whether James had, in this part of his reign, conceived the projects commonly imputed to him, of overthrowing, or injuring by any direct acts of power, the protestant establishment of this kingdom. Neither the copious

as in other cases of high treason mentioned in this act."

See what lord Lonsdale says, p. 8, of this bill, which he, among others, contrived to weaken by provisos so that it was given up.

* Parl. Hist. 1372. The king's speech had evidently shown that the supply was only demanded for this purpose. The speaker, on presenting the bill for settling the revenue in the former session, claimed it as a merit that they had not inserted any appropriating clauses. Parl. Hist. 1359.

† Reresby, p. 110. Barillon, in Fox's Appendix, p. 93. 127, &c. Le feu roi d'Angleterre et celui-ci m'ont souvent dit, qu'un gouvernement ne peut subsister avec une telle loi. Dalrymple, p. 171.

extracts from Barillon's correspondence with his own court, published by sir John Dalrymple and himself, nor the king's own memoirs, seem, in his opinion, to warrant a conclusion that any thing farther was intended than to emancipate the Roman catholics from the severe restrictions of the penal laws, securing the public exercise of their worship from molestation, and to replace them upon an equality as to civil offices, by abrogating the test-act of the late reign *. We find, nevertheless, a remarkable conversation of the king himself with the French ambassador, which leaves an impression on the mind that his projects were already irreconcilable with that pledge of support he had rather unadvisedly given to the Anglican church at his accession. This interpretation of his language is confirmed by the expressions used at the same time by Sunderland, which are more unequivocal, and point at the complete establishment of the catholic religion †.

* This opinion has been well supported by Mr. Serjeant Heywood (Vindication of Mr. Fox's History, p. 154). In some few of Barillon's letters to the king of France, he speaks of James's intention établir la religion catholique; but these perhaps may be explained by a far greater number of passages, where he says only établir le libre exercise de la religion catholique, and by the general tenor of his correspondence. But though the primary object was toleration, I have no doubt but that they conceived this was to end in establishment. See what Barillon says, p. 84, though the legal reasoning is false, as might be expected from a foreigner. It must, at all events, be admitted, that the conduct of the king after the formation of the catholic junto in 1686 demonstrates an intention of overthrowing the Anglican establishment.

† Il [le roy] me répondit à ce que je venois de dire, que je connoissois le fonds de ses intentions pour l'établissement de la religion catholique; qu'il n'esperoit en venir à bout que par l'assistance de V.M., que je voyois qu'il venoit de donner des emplois dans ses troupes aux catholiques aussi bien qu'aux protestans; que cette egalité fâchoit beaucoup de gens, mais qu'il n'avoit pas laissé passer une occasion si importante sans s'en prevaloir; qu'il feroit de même à l'egard des choses praticables, et que je voyois plus clair sur cela dans ses desseins que ses propres ministres, s'en etant souvent ouvert avec moi sans reserve, p. 104. In a second conversation immediately afterwards, the king repeated, que je connoissois le fond de ses desseins, et que je pouvois repondre que tout son but etoit d'etablir la religion catholique; qu'il ne perdroit aucune occasion de le faire . . .que peu à peu il va à son but, et que ce qu'il fait presentement emporte necessairement l'exercice libre de la religion catholique qui se trouvera établi avant qu'un acte de parlement l'autorise; que je connois sois assez l'Angleterre pour savoir que la possibilité d'avoir des emplois et des charges fera plus de catholiques que la permission de dire des masses publiques; que cependant il s'attendoit que V. M. ne l'abandonneroit pas, &c. p. 106. Sunderland entered on the same subject, saying, " Je ne sais pas si l'on voit en France les choses comme elles sont ici; mais je defie ceux qui les voyent de près

CHAP. XIV. James II.

The particular care displayed by James in this conversation, and indeed in so many notorious instances, to place the army, as far as possible, in the command of catholic officers, has very much the appearance of his looking towards the employment of force in overthrowing the protestant church, as well as the civil privileges of his subjects. Yet he probably entertained confident hopes, in the outset of his reign, that he might not be driven to this necessity, or at least should only have occasion to restrain a fanatical populace. He would rely on the intrinsic excellence of his own religion, and still more on the temptations that his favour would hold out. For the repeal of the test would not have placed the two religions on a fair level. Catholics, however little qualified, would have filled, as in fact they did under the dispensing power, most of the principal stations in the court, law, and army. The king told Barillon he was well enough acquainted with England to be assured, that the admissibility to office would

de ne pas connoitre que le roy mon maître n'a rien dans le cœur si avant que l'envie d'etablir la religion catholique; qu'il ne peut même, selon le bon sens et la droite raison, avoir d'autre but; que sans cela il ne sera jamais en sûreté, et sera toujours exposé au zèle indiscret de ceux qui échaufferont les peuples contre la catholicité, tant qu'elle ne sera pas *plus* pleinement etablie; il y a une autre chose certaine c'est que ce plan là ne peut réussir que par un concert et une liaison étroite avec le roi votre maître; c'est un projet qui ne peut convenir qu'à lui, ni réussir que par lui. Toutes les autres puissances s'y opposeront ouvertement, on le traverseront sous main. On sait bien que cela ne convient point au prince d'Orange; mais s'il ne sera pas en état de l'empecher si on veut se conduire en France comme il est necessaire, c'est-à-dire, menager l'amitié du roy d'Angleterre, et le contenir dans son projet. Je vois clairement l'apprehension que beaucoup de gens ont d'une liaison avec la France, et les efforts qu'on fait pour l'affoiblir; mais cela ne sera au pouvoir de personne si on n'en a pas envie ce France; c'est sur quoi il faut que vous vous expliquiez nettement, que vous fassiez connoître que le roi votre maître veut aider de bonne foi le roi d'Angleterre à établir fermement la religion catholique.

The word *plus* in the above passage is not in Dalrymple's extract from this letter, vol. ii. part ii. p. 174. 187. Yet for omitting this word Serjeant Heywood (not having attended to Dalrymple), censures Mr. Rose as if it had been done purposely. Vindic. of Fox, p. 154. But this is not quite judicious or equitable, since another critic might suggest that it was purposely interpolated. No one of common candour would suspect this of Mr. Fox; but his copyist, I presume, was not infallible. The word *plus* is evidently incorrect. The catholic religion was not established at all in any possible sense; what room could there be for the comparative? M. Mazure, who has more lately perused the letters of Barillon at Paris, prints the passage without *plus*. Hist. de la Revol. ii. 36. Certainly the whole conversation here ascribed to Sunderland points at something far beyond the free exercise of the Roman catholic religion.

make more catholics than the right of saying mass publicly. There was, on the one hand, a prevailing laxity of principle in the higher ranks, and a corrupt devotedness to power for the sake of the emoluments it could dispense, which encouraged the expectation of such a nominal change in religion as had happened in the sixteenth century. And, on the other, much was hoped by the king from the church itself. He had separated from her communion in consequence of the arguments which her own divines had furnished; he had conversed with men bred in the school of Laud, and was slow to believe that the conclusions which he had, not perhaps illogically, derived from the semi-protestant theology of his father's reign, would not appear equally irresistible to all minds, when free from the danger and obloquy that had attended them. Thus by a voluntary return of the clergy and nation to the bosom of the catholic church, he might both obtain an immortal renown, and secure his prerogative against that religious jealousy which had always been the aliment of political factions*. Till this revolution, however, could be brought about, he determined to court the church of England, whose boast of exclusive and unlimited loyalty could hardly be supposed entirely hollow, in order to obtain the repeal of the penal laws and disqualifications which affected that of Rome. And though the maxims of religious toleration had been always in his mouth, he did not hesitate to propitiate her with the most acceptable sacrifice, the persecution of non-conforming ministers. He looked upon the dissenters as men of republican principles; and if he could have made his bargain for the free

* It is curious to remark, that both James and Louis considered the re-establishment of the catholic religion and of the royal authority as closely connected, and parts of one great system. Barillon in Fox, Append. 19. 57. Mazure, i. 346. Mr. Fox maintains (Hist. p. 102), that the great object of the former was absolute power, rather than the interests of popery. Doubtless, if James had been a protestant, his encroachments on the rights of his subjects would not have been less than they were, though not exactly of the same nature; but the main object of his reign can hardly be denied to have been either the full toleration, or the national establishment of the church of Rome. Mr. Fox's remark must, at all events, be limited to the year 1685.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

exercise of the catholic worship, I see no reason to doubt, that he would never have announced his general indulgence to tender consciences *.

But James had taken too narrow a view of the mighty people whom he governed. The laity of every class, the tory gentleman almost equally with the presbyterian artizan, entertained an inveterate abhorrence of the Romish superstition. Their first education, the usual tenor of preaching, far more polemical than at present, the books most current, the tradition of ancient cruelties and conspiracies, rendered this a cardinal point of religion even with those who had little beside. Many still gave credit to the popish plot, and with those who had been compelled to admit its general falsehood, there remained, as is frequently the case, an indefinite sense of dislike and suspicion, like the swell of waves after a storm, which attached itself to all the objects of that calumny †. This was of course enhanced by

* Fox, Appendix, p. 33. Ralph, 869. The prosecution of Baxter for what was called reflecting on the bishops is an instance of this. State Trials, ii. 494. Notwithstanding James's affected zeal for toleration, he did not scruple to congratulate Louis on the success of his very different mode of converting heretics. Yet I rather believe him to have been really averse to persecution, though with true Stuart insincerity he chose to flatter his patron. Dalrymple, p. 177. A book by Claude, published in Holland, entitled "Plaintes des Protestans cruellement opprimés dans le royaume de France," was ordered to be burned by the hangman, on the complaint of the French ambassador, and the translator and printer to be inquired after and prosecuted. Lond. Gazette, May 8, 1686. Jefferies objected to this in council as unusual, but the king was determined to gratify his most christian brother. Mazure, ii. 122. It is said also, that one of the reasons for the disgrace of lord Halifax was his speaking warmly about the revocation of the edict of Nantes. Id. p. 55. Yet James sometimes blamed this himself, so as to displease Louis. Id. p. 56. In fact, it very much tended to obstruct his own views for the establishment of a religion, which had just shown itself in so odious a form. For this reason, though a brief was read in churches for the sufferers, special directions were given that there should be no sermon. It is even said, that he took on himself the distribution of the money collected for the refugees, in order to stop the subscription; or at least that his interference had that effect. The enthusiasm for the French protestants was such, that single persons subscribed 500 or 1000 pounds; which, relatively to the opulence of the kingdom, almost equals any munificence of this age. Id. p. 123.

† It is well known, that the house of commons in 1685 would not pass the bill for reversing lord Stafford's attainder, against which a few peers had entered a very spirited protest. Parl. Hist. 1361. Barillon says, this was parce que dans le préambulé il y a en des mots insérés qui semblent favoriser la religion catholique; cela seul a retardé la rehabilitation du comte de

the insolent and injudicious confidence of the Romish faction, especially the priests, in their demeanour, their language, and their publications. Meanwhile a considerable change had been wrought in the doctrinal system of the Anglican church since the restoration. The men most conspicuous in the reign of Charles II. for their writings, and for their argumentative eloquence in the pulpit, were of the class who had been denominated Latitudinarian divines; and while they maintained the principles of the Remonstrants in opposition to the school of Calvin, were powerful and unequivocal supporters of the protestant cause against Rome. They made none of the dangerous concessions which had shaken the faith of the duke and duchess of York, they regretted the disuse of no superstitious ceremony, they denied not the one essential characteristic of the reformation, the right of private judgment, they avoided the mysterious jargon of a real presence in the Lord's Supper. Thus such an agreement between the two churches, as had been projected at different times, was become far more evidently impracticable, and the separation more broad and defined *. These men, as well as others who do not properly belong to the same class, were now distinguished by their courageous and able defences of the reformation. The

Stafford dont tous sont d'accord à l'égard du fonds. Fox, App. p. 110. But there was another reason, which might have weight. Stafford had been convicted on the evidence, not only of Oates, who had been lately found guilty of perjury, but of several other witnesses, especially Dugdale and Turberville. And these men had been brought forward by the government against lord Shaftesbury and College, the latter of whom had been hanged on their testimony. The reversal of lord Stafford's attainder, just as we now think it, would have been a disgrace to these crown prosecutions; and a conscientious tory would be loth to vote for it.

* "In all the disputes relating to that mystery before the civil wars, the church of England protestant writers owned the real presence, and only abstracted from the *modus* or manner of Christ's body being present in the eucharist, and therefore durst not say but it might be there by transubstantiation as well as by any other way... It was only of late years that such principles have crept into the church of England, which having been blown into the parliament house, had raised continual tumults about religion ever since; those unlearned and fanatical notions were never heard of till doctor Stillingfleet's late invention of them, by which he exposed himself to the lash not only of the Roman catholics, but to that of many of the church of England controvertists too." Life of James, ii. 146.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

victory, in the judgment of the nation, was wholly theirs. Rome had indeed her proselytes, but such as it would have been more honourable to have wanted. The people heard sometimes with indignation, or rather with contempt, that an unprincipled minister, a temporizing bishop, or a licentious poet had gone over to the side of a monarch, who made conformity with his religion the only certain path to his favour.

The short period of a four years' reign may be divided by several distinguishing points of time, which make so many changes in the posture of government. From the king's accession to the prorogation of parliament on November 30, 1685, he had acted apparently in concurrence with the same party that had supported him in his brother's reign, of which his own seemed the natural and almost undistinguishable continuation. This party, which had become incomparably stronger than the opposite, had greeted him with such unbounded professions *, the temper of its representatives had been such in the first session of parliament, that a prince less obstinate than James might

* See London Gazettes, 1685, passim; the most remarkable are inserted by Ralph and Kennet. I am sure the addresses which we have witnessed in this age among a neighbouring people are not on the whole more fulsome and disgraceful. Addresses, however, of all descriptions, as we well know, are generally the composition of some zealous individual, whose expressions are not to be taken as entirely those of the subscribers Still these are sufficient to manifest the general spirit of the times.

The king's popularity at his accession, which all contemporary writers attest, is strongly expressed by lord Lonsdale. "The great interest he had in his brother, so that all applications to the king seemed to succeed only as he favoured them, and the general opinion of him to be a prince steady above all others to his word, made him at that time the most popular prince that had been known in England for a long time. And from men's attempting to exclude him, they at this juncture of time made him their darling; no more was his religion terrible; his magnanimous courage, and the hardships he had undergone, were the discourse of all men. And some reports of a misunderstanding betwixt the French king and him, occasioned originally by the marriage of the lady Mary to the prince of Orange, industriously spread abroad to amuse the ignorant, put men in hopes of what they had long wished, that by a conjunction of Holland and Spain, &c. we might have been able to reduce France to the terms of the Pyrenean treaty, which was now become the terror of Christendom, we never having had a prince for many ages that had so great a reputation for experience and a martial spirit." P. 3. This last sentence is a truly amusing contrast to the real truth; James having been in his brother's reign the most obsequious and unhesitating servant of the French king.

have expected to succeed in attaining an authority which the nation seemed to offer. A rebellion speedily and decisively quelled confirms every government; it seemed to place his own beyond hazard. Could he have been induced to change the order of his designs, and accustom the people to a military force, and to a prerogative of dispensing with statutes of temporal concern, before he meddled too ostensibly with their religion, he would possibly have gained both the objects of his desire. Even conversions to popery might have been more frequent, if the gross solicitations of the court had not made them dishonourable. But neglecting the hint of a prudent adviser, that the death of Monmouth left a far more dangerous enemy behind, he suffered a victory, that might have ensured him success, to inspire an arrogant confidence that led on to destruction. Master of an army, and determined to keep it on foot, he naturally thought less of a good understanding with parliament *. He had already rejected the proposition of employing bribery among the members, an expedient very little congenial to his presumptuous temper and notions of government †. They were assembled, in his opinion, to testify the nation's loyalty, and thankfulness to

* On voit qu'insensiblement les Catholiques auront les armes à la main; c'est un état bien différent de l'oppression où ils étoient, et dont les protestans zélés recoivent une grande mortification; ils voyent bien que le roy d'Angleterre fera le reste quand il le pourra. La levée des troupes, qui seront bientot complettes, fait juger que le roy d'Angleterre veut être en etat de se faire obéir, et de n'être pas gêné par les loix qui se trouveront contraires à ce qu'il veut établir. Barillon in Fox's Appendix, 111. Il me paroit (he says, June 25), que le roy d'Angleterre a été fort aisé d'avoir une pretexte de lever des troupes, et qu'il croit que l'entreprise le M. le duc de Monmouth ne servira qu'à le rendre plus maitre de son pays. And on July 30: le projet du roy d'Angleterre est d'abolir entièrement les milices, dont il a reconnu l'inutilité et le danger en cette derniere occasion; et de faire, s'il est possible, que le parlement etablisse le fond destiné pour les milices à l'entretien des troupes reglées. Tout cela change entièrement l'etat de ce pays ici, et met les Anglois dans une condition bien différente de celle où ils ont été jusques à present. Ils le connoissent, et voyent bien qu'un roy de differente religion que celle du pays, et qui se trouve armé, ne renoncera pas aisément aux avantages que lui donne la défaite des rebelles, et les troupes qu'il a sur pied. And afterwards: Le roi d'Angleterre m'a dit que quoiqu'il arrive, il conservera les troupes sur pied, quand même le parlement ne lui donneroit pour les entretenir. Il connoit bien que le parlement verra mal volontiers cet etablissement, mais il veut être assuré du dedans de son pays, et il croit ne le pouvoir être sans cela. Dalrymple, 169, 170.

† Fox's App. 69. Dalrymple, 153.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

their gracious prince for not taking away their laws and liberties. But if a factious spirit of opposition should once prevail, it could not be his fault if he dismissed them till more becoming sentiments should again gain ground*. Hence, he did not hesitate to prorogue, and eventually to dissolve the most compliant house of commons that had been returned since his family had sat on the throne, at the cost of £700,000, a grant of supply which thus fell to the ground, rather than endure any opposition on the subject of the test and penal laws. Yet, from the strength of the court in all divisions, it must seem not improbable to us that he might, by the usual means of management, have carried both of those favourite measures, at least through the lower house of parliament. For the crown lost the most important division only by one vote, and had in general a majority. The very address about unqualified officers, which gave the king such offence as to bring on a prorogation, was worded in the most timid manner, the house having rejected unanimously the words first inserted by their committee, requesting that his majesty would be pleased not to continue them in their employments, for a vague petition that "he would be graciously pleased to give such directions, that no apprehensions or jealousies may remain in the hearts of his majesty's good and faithful subjects †."

* It had been the intention of Sunderland and the others to dissolve parliament, as soon as the revenue for life should be settled, and to rely in future on the assistance of France. Fox's App. 59, 60. Mazure, i. 432. But this was prevented partly by the sudden invasion of Monmouth, which made a new session necessary, and gave hopes of a large supply for the army, partly by the unwillingness of the king of France to advance as much money as the English government wanted. In fact the plan of continual prorogations answered as well.

† Journals, Nov. 14. Barillon says, that the king answered this humble address, "avec des marques de fierté et de colore sur le visage, qui faisoit assez connoitre ses sentimens." Dalrymple, 172. See too his letter in Fox, 139.

A motion was made to ask the lords' concurrence in this address, which according to the journals was lost by 212 to 138. In the life of James, ii. 55, it is said that it was carried against the motion by only four voices; and this I find confirmed by a manuscript account of the debates (Sloane MSS. 1470), which gives the numbers 212 to 208. The journal probably is mis-printed, as the court and country parties were very equal. It is said in this manuscript that those who opposed the address, opposed also the motion for requesting the lords' concurrence in it; but James represents it otherwise, as a device of the court to quash the proceeding.

The second period of this reign extends from the prorogation of parliament to the dismissal of the earl of Rochester from the treasury in 1686. During this time James, exasperated at the reluctance of the commons to acquiesce in his measures, and the decisive opposition of the church, threw off the half restraint he had imposed on himself, and showed plainly that, with a bench of judges to pronounce his commands, and an army to enforce them, he would not suffer the mockery of constitutional limitations to stand any longer in his way. Two important steps were made this year towards the accomplishment of his designs, by the judgment of the court of king's bench in the case of sir Edward Hales, confirming the right of the crown to dispense with the test act, and by the establishment of the new ecclesiastical commission.

The kings of England, if not immemorially, yet from a very early æra in our records had exercised a prerogative unquestioned by parliament, and recognised by courts of justice, that of granting dispensations from the prohibitions and penalties of particular laws. The language of ancient statutes was usually brief and careless, with few of those attempts to regulate prospective contingencies, which, even with our pretended modern caution, are so often imperfect; and as the sessions were never regular, sometimes interrupted for several years, there was a kind of necessity, or great convenience, in deviating occasionally from the rigour of a general prohibition; more often perhaps some motive of interest or partiality would induce the crown to infringe on the legal rule. This dispensing power, however, grew up, as it were, collaterally to the sovereignty of the legislature, which it sometimes appeared to overshadow. It was of course asserted in large terms by counsellors of state, and too frequently by the interpreters of law. Lord Coke, before he had learned the bolder tone of his declining years, lays it down, that no act of parliament can bind the king from any prerogative which is inseparable from his person, so that he may not dispense with it

CHAP. XIV. James II.

by a non-obstante; such is his sovereign power to command any of his subjects to serve him for the public weal, which solely and inseparably is annexed to his person, and cannot be restrained by any act of parliament. Thus, although the statute 23 H. 6, c. 8, provides that all patents to hold the office of sheriff for more than one year shall be void, and even enacts that the king shall not dispense with it, yet it was held by all the judges in the reign of Henry VII., that the king may grant such a patent for a longer term on good grounds, whereof he alone is the judge. So also the statutes which restrain the king from granting pardons in case of murder have been held void, and doubtless the constant practice has been to disregard them *.

This high and dangerous prerogative, nevertheless, was subject to several limitations, which none but the grosser flatterers of monarchy could deny. It was agreed among lawyers that the king could not dispense with the common law, nor with any statute prohibiting that which was *malum in se*, nor with any right or interest of a private person or corporation †. The rules, however, were still rather complicated, the boundaries indefinite, and therefore varying according to the political character of the judges. For many years dispensations had been confined to taking away such incapacity as either the statutes of a college, or some law of little consequence, perhaps almost obsolete, might happen to have created. But when a collusive action was brought against sir Edward Hales, a Roman catholic, in the name of his servant, to recover the penalty of 500*l.* imposed by the test act, for accepting the commission of colonel of a regiment, without the previous qualification of receiving the sacrament in the church of England, the whole importance of the alleged prerogative became visible, and the fate of the established constitution seemed to hang upon the decision. The plaintiff's advocate, Northey, was known to have received his fee from the other side, and was

* Coke, 12 Rep. 18.

† Vaughan's Reports. Thomas v. Sorrell, 333.

thence suspected, perhaps unfairly, of betraying his own cause*; but the chief justice Herbert showed that no arguments against this prerogative would have swayed his determination. Not content with treating the question as one of no difficulty, he grounded his decision in favour of the defendant upon principles that would extend far beyond the immediate case. He laid it down that the kings of England were sovereign princes, that the laws of England were the king's laws; that it was consequently an inseparable prerogative of the crown to dispense with penal laws in particular cases, for reasons of which it was the sole judge. This he called the ancient remains of the sovereign power and prerogative of the kings of England, which never yet was taken from them, nor could be. There was no law, he said, that might not be dispensed with by the supreme law-giver (meaning evidently the king, since the proposition would otherwise be impertinent); though he made a sort of distinction as to those which affected the subject's private right. But the general maxims of slavish churchmen and lawyers were asserted so broadly, that a future judge would find little difficulty in making use of this precedent to justify any stretch of arbitrary power †.

It is by no means evident, that the decision in this particular case of Hales, which had the approbation of eleven judges out of twelve, was against law ‡. The course of former precedents seems rather to furnish its justification. But the less untenable such a judgment in favour of the dispensing power might appear, the more necessity would men of reflection perceive of making some great change in the relations of the people towards their sovereign. A prerogative of setting aside the enactments of parliament, which in trifling matters, and for the sake of conferring a benefit on individuals, might be suffered to exist with little mischief, became

* Burnet and others. This hardly appears by Northey's argument.

† State Trials, xi. 1165—1280. 2 Shower's Reports, 475.

‡ The dissentient judge was Street; and Powell doubted. The king had privately secured this opinion of the bench in his favour before the action was brought. Life of James, ii. 79.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

intolerable when exercised in contravention of the very principle of those statutes which had been provided for the security of fundamental liberties or institutions. Thus the test act, the great achievement as it had been reckoned of the protestant party, for the sake of which the most subservient of parliaments had just then ventured to lose the king's favour, became absolutely nugatory and ineffective, by a construction which the law itself did not reject. Nor was it easy to provide any sufficient remedy by means of parliament, since it was the doctrine of the judges, that the king's inseparable and sovereign prerogatives in matters of government could not be taken away or restrained by statute. The unadvised assertion in a court of justice of this principle, which though not by any means novel, had never been advanced in a business of such universal concern and interest, may be said to have sealed the condemnation of the house of Stuart. It made the coexistence of an hereditary line, claiming a sovereign prerogative paramount to the liberties they had vouchsafed to concede, incompatible with the security or probable duration of those liberties. This incompatibility is the true basis of the revolution in 1688.

But whatever pretext the custom of centuries or the authority of compliant lawyers might afford for these dispensations from the test, no legal defence could be made for the ecclesiastical commission of 1686. The high commission court of Elizabeth had been altogether taken away by an act of the long parliament, which went on to provide that no new court should be erected with the like power, jurisdiction, and authority. Yet the commission issued by James II. followed very nearly the words of that which had created the original court under Elizabeth, omitting a few particulars of little moment*. It is not known, I be-

* State Trials, xi. 1132, et seq. The members of the commission were the primate Sancroft (who never sat), Crew and Sprat, bishops of Durham and Rochester, the chancellor Jeffreys, the earls of Rochester and Sunderland, and chief justice Herbert. Three were to form a quorum, but the chancellor necessarily to be one. Ralph, 929. The earl of Mulgrave was introduced afterwards.

lieve, at whose suggestion the king adopted this measure. The pre-eminence reserved by the commission to Jefferies, whose presence was made necessary to all their meetings, and the violence with which he acted in all their transactions on record, seems to point him out as its great promoter; though it is true, that at a later period, Jefferies seems to have perceived the destructive indiscretion of the popish counsellors. It displayed the king's change of policy, and entire separation from that high church party, to whom he was indebted for the throne; since the manifest design of the ecclesiastical commission was to bridle the clergy, and silence the voice of protestant zeal. The proceedings against the bishop of London, and other instances of hostility to the established religion, are well known.

Elated by success and general submission, exasperated by the reluctance and dissatisfaction of those on whom he had relied for an active concurrence with his desires, the king seems at least by this time to have formed the scheme of subverting, or impairing as far as possible, the religious establishment. He told Barillon, alluding to the ecclesiastical commission, that God had permitted all the statutes which had been enacted against the catholic religion to become the means of its re-establishment*. But the most remarkable evidence of this design was the collation of Massey, a recent convert, to the deanery of Christ Church, with a dispensation from all the statutes of uniformity and other ecclesiastical laws so ample, that it made a precedent, and such it was doubtless intended to be, for bestowing any benefices upon members of the church of Rome. This dispensation seems to have been not generally known at the time; Burnet has stated the circumstances of Massey's promotion inaccurately, and no historian, I believe, till the publication of the instrument after the middle of the last century, was fully aware of the degree in which the king had trampled upon the securities of the established church in this transaction†.

* Mazure, ii. 130.

† Henry earl of Clarendon's papers, ii. 278. In

CHAP. XIV. James II.

A deeper impression was made by the dismissal of Rochester from his post of lord treasurer, so nearly consequent on his positive declaration of adherence to the protestant religion, after the dispute held in his presence at the king's particular command, between divines of both persuasions, that it had much the appearance of a resolution taken at court to exclude from the high offices of the state all those who gave no hope of conversion *. Clarendon had already given way to Tyrconnel in the government of Ireland; the privy seal was bestowed on a catholic peer, lord Arundel; lord Bellasys, of the same religion, was now placed at the head of the commission of the treasury; Sunderland, though he did not yet cease to conform, made no secret of his pretended change of opinion; the council board, by virtue of the dispensing power, was filled with those who would refuse the test; a small junto of catholics, with father Petre, the king's confessor, at their head, took the management of almost all affairs upon themselves †; men, whose known want of principle gave reason to

Gutch's Collectanea Curiosa, vol. i. p. 287, we find not only this license to Massey, but one to Obadiah Walker, master of University College, and to two fellows of the same, and one of Brazen-nose College, to absent themselves from church, and not to take the oaths of supremacy and allegiance, or do any other thing to which by the laws and statutes of the realm, or those of the college, they are obliged. There is also, in the same book, a dispensation for one Sclater, curate of Putney, and rector of Esher, from using the common prayer, &c. &c. Id. p. 290. These are in May 1686, and subscribed by Powis, the solicitor-general. The attorney-general, Sawyer, had refused, as we learn from Reresby, p. 133; the only contemporary writer, perhaps, who mentions this very remarkble aggression on the established church.

* The catholic lords, according to Barillon, had represented to the king, that nothing could be done with parliament so long as the treasurer caballed against the designs of his majesty. James promised to dismiss him, if he did not change his religion. Mazure, ii. 170. The queen had previously been rendered his enemy by the arts of Sunderland, who persuaded her that lord and lady Rochester had favoured the king's intimacy with the countess of Dorchester, in order to thwart the popish intrigue. Id. 149. "On voit," says Barillon, on the treasurer's dismissal, "que la cabale catholique a entierement prevalu. On s'attendoit depuis quelque temps à ce qui est arrivé au comte de Rochester; mais l'execution fait encore une nouvelle impression sur les esprits." P. 181.

† Life of James, 74. Barillon frequently mentions this cabal, as having in effect the whole conduct of affairs in their hands. Sunderland belonged to them; but Jefferies, being reckoned on the protestant side, had, I believe, very little influence for at least the two latter years of the king's reign. "Les affaires de ce pays-ci," says Bonrepos, in 1686, "ne voulent à present que sur la religion. Le roi est absolument gouverné par les catholiques. My lord Sunderland ne se maintient que par ceux-ci, et par son devouement a faire tout se

expect their compliance, were raised to bishoprics; there could be no rational doubt of a concerted scheme to depress and discountenance the established church. The dismissal of Rochester, who had gone great lengths to preserve his power and emoluments, and would in all probability have concurred in the establishment of arbitrary power under a protestant sovereign *, may be reckoned the most unequivocal evidence of the king's intentions; and from thence we may date the decisive measures that were taken to counteract them.

It was, I do not merely say the interest, but the clear right and bounden duty of the prince of Orange to watch over the internal politics of England, on account of the near connexion which his own birth and his marriage with the presumptive heir had created. He was never to be reckoned a foreigner as to this country, which, even in the ordinary course of succession, he might be called to govern. From the time of his union with the princess Mary, he was the legitimate and natural ally of the whig party; alien in all his sentiments from his two uncles, neither of whom, especially James, treated him with much regard, on account merely of his attachment to religion and liberty, for he might have secured their affection by falling into their plans. Before such differences as subsisted between these personages, the bonds of relationship fall asunder like flax; and William would have had at least the sanction of many precedents in

qu'il croit etre agreable sur ce point. Il a le secret des affaires de Rome." Mazure, ii. 124. "On feroit ici," says Barillon, the same year, "ce que on fait en France [that is, I suppose, dragonner et fusiller les heritiques] si l'on pouvoit esperer de réussir." P. 127.

* Rochester makes so very bad a figure in all Barillon's correspondence, that there really seems no want of candour in this supposition. He was evidently the most active co-operator in the connexion of both the brothers with France, and seems to have had as few compunctious visitings, where the church of England was not concerned, as Sunderland himself. Godolphin was too much implicated, at least by acquiescence, in the counsels of this reign; yet we find him suspected of not wishing "se passer entierement de parlement, et à rompre nettement avec le prince d'Orange." Fox, Append. p. 60.

If Rochester had gone over to the Romanists, many probably would have followed; on the other had, his steadiness retained the wavering. It was one of the first great disappointments with which the king met. But his dismissal from the treasury created a sensible alarm. Dalrymple, 179.

history, if he had employed his influence to excite sedition against Charles or James, and to thwart their administration. Yet his conduct appears to have been merely defensive, nor had he the remotest connexion with the violent and factious proceedings of Shaftesbury and his partisans. He played a very dexterous, but apparently very fair game throughout the last years of Charles, never losing sight of the popular party, through whom alone he could expect influence over England during the life of his father-in-law, while he avoided any direct rupture with the brothers, and every reasonable pretext for their taking offence.

It has never been established by any reputable testimony, though perpetually asserted, nor is it in the least degree probable, that William took any share in prompting the invasion of Monmouth *. But it is nevertheless manifest that he derived the greatest advantage from this absurd rebellion and from its failure; not only as it removed a mischievous adventurer, whom the multitude's idle predilection had elevated so high, that factious men would, under every government, have turned to account his ambitious imbecillity, but as the cruelty with which this unhappy enterprise was punished rendered the king odious †, while

* Lord Dartmouth wrote to say, that Fletcher told him there were good grounds to suspect that the prince underhand encouraged the expedition with design to ruin the duke of Monmouth; and this Dalrymple believes, p. 136. It is needless to observe, that such subtle and hazardous policy was totally out of William's character, nor is there much more reason to believe what is insinuated by James himself (Macpherson's Extracts, p. 144; Life of James, ii. 34), that Sunderland had been in secret correspondence with Monmouth; unless indeed it were, as seems hinted in the latter work, with the king's knowledge.

† The number of persons who suffered the sentence of the law, in the famous western assize of Jefferies, has been differently stated; but according to a list in the Harleian Collection, n. 4689, it appears to be as follows: at Winchester, one (Mrs. Lisle) executed; at Salisbury, none; at Dorchester, 74 executed, 171 transported; at Exeter, 14 executed, 7 transported; at Taunton, 144 executed, 284 transported; at Wells, 97 executed, 393 transported. In all, 330 executed, 855 transported; besides many that were left in custody for want of evidence. It may be observed, that the prisoners sentenced to transportation appear to have been made over to some gentlemen of interest at court, among others sir Christopher Musgrave, who did not blush to beg the grant of their unfortunate countrymen, to be sold as slaves in the colonies.

The apologists of James II. have endeavoured to lay the entire blame of these cruelties on Jefferies, and to represent the king as ignorant of them. Roger North tells a story of his brother's interference,

the success of his arms inspired him with false confidence, and neglect of caution. Every month, as it brought forth evidence of James's arbitrary projects, increased the number of those who looked for deliverance to the prince of Orange, either in the course of succession or by some special interference. He had, in fact, a stronger motive for watching the councils of his father-in-law than has generally been known. The king was, at his accession, in his fifty-fifth year, and had no male children; nor did the queen's health give much encouragement to hope for them. Every dream of the nation's voluntary return to the church of Rome must have vanished, even if the consent of a parliament could be obtained, which was nearly vain to think of; or if open force and the aid of France should enable James to subvert the established religion, what had the catholics to anticipate from his death, but that fearful re-action which had ensued upon the accession of Elizabeth? This had already so much disheartened the moderate part of their body, that they were most anxious not to urge forward a change for which the kingdom was not ripe, and which was so little likely to endure, and used their influence to promote a reconciliation between the king and prince of Orange, contenting themselves with that free exercise of their worship which was permitted in Holland*. But the ambitious

which is plainly contradicted by known dates, and the falsehood of which throws just suspicion on his numerous anecdotes. See State Trials, xi. 303. But the king speaks with apparent approbation of what he calls Jefferies's campaign in writing to the prince of Orange (Dalrymple, 165); and I have heard that there are extant additional proofs of his perfect acquaintance with the details of those assizes; nor indeed can he be supposed ignorant of them. Jefferies himself, before his death, declared, that he had not been half bloody enough for him by whom he was employed. Burnet, 651 (note to Oxford edition, vol. iii.). The king, or his biographer in his behalf, makes a very awkward apology for the execution of major Holmes, which is shown by himself to have been a gross breach of faith. Life of James, ii. 43.

It is unnecessary to dwell on what may be found in every history; the trials of Mrs. Lisle, Mrs. Gaunt, and alderman Cornish; the former before Jefferies, the two latter before Jones, his successor as chief justice of K. B., a judge nearly as infamous as the former, though not altogether as brutal. Both Mrs. Lisle and Cornish's convictions were without evidence, and consequently reversed after the revolution. State Trials, vol. xi.

* Several proofs of this appear in the correspondence of Barillon. Fox, 135. Mazure, ii. 22. The nuncio, M. d'Adda,

CHAP. XIV. James II.

priesthood who surrounded the throne had bolder projects. A scheme was formed early in the king's reign, to exclude the princess of Orange from the succession in favour of her sister Anne, in the event of the latter's conversion to the Romish faith. The French ministers at our court, Barillon and Bonrepos, gave ear to this hardy intrigue. They flattered themselves that both Anne and her husband were favourably disposed. But in this they were wholly mistaken. No one could be more unconquerably fixed in her religion than that princess. The king himself, when the Dutch ambassador, Van Citers, laid before him a document, probably drawn up by some catholics of his court, in which these audacious speculations were developed, declared his indignation at so criminal a project. It was not even in his power, he let the prince afterwards know by a message, or in that of parliament, according to the principles which had been maintained in his own behalf, to change the fundamental order of succession to the crown *. Nothing indeed can more forcibly paint the desperation of the popish faction than their entertainment of so preposterous a scheme. But it naturally increased the solicitude of William about the intrigues of the English cabinet. It does not appear that any direct overtures were made to the prince of

was a moderate man, and united with the moderate catholic peers, Bellasis, Arundel, and Powis. Id. 127. This party urged the king to keep on good terms with the prince of Orange, and to give way about the test. Id. 184. 255. They were disgusted at father Petre's introduction into the privy council; 308. 353. But it has ever been the misfortune of that respectable body to suffer unjustly for the follies of a few. Barillon admits, very early in James's reign, that many of them disliked the arbitrary proceedings of the court; ils pretendent etre bons Anglois, c'est à dire, ne pas desirer que le roi d'Angleterre ote à la nation ses privilèges et ses libertés. Mazure, i. 404.

William openly declared his willingness to concur in taking off the penal laws, provided the test might remain. Burnet, 694. Dalrymple, 184. Mazure, ii. 216. 250. 346. James replied, that he must have all or nothing. Id. 353.

* I do not know that this intrigue has been brought to light before the recent valuable publication of M. Mazure, certainly not with such full evidence. See i. 417. ii. 128. 160. 165. 167. 182. 188. 192. Barillon says to his master in one place:— C'est une matiere fort delicate à traiter. Je sais pourtant qu'on en parle au roi d'Angleterre, et qu'avec le temps on ne desespere pas de trouver des moyens pour faire passer la couronne sur la tête d'un heritier catholique. Il faut pour cela venir à bout de beaucoup des choses, qui ne sont encore que commencées.

Orange, except by a very few malecontents, till the embassy of Dykvelt from the States, in the spring of 1687. It was William's object to ascertain, through that minister, the real state of parties in England. Such assurances as he carried back to Holland gave encouragement to an enterprise that would have been equally injudicious and unwarrantable without them *. Danby, Halifax, Nottingham, and others of the tory, as well as whig factions, entered into a secret correspondence with the prince of Orange; some from a real attachment to the constitutional limitations of monarchy; some from a conviction that, without open apostasy from the protestant faith, they could never obtain from James the prizes of their ambition. This must have been the predominant motive with lord Churchill, who never gave any proof of solicitude about civil liberty; and his influence taught the princess Anne to distinguish her interests from those of her father. It was about this time also that even Sunderland entered upon a mysterious communication with the prince of Orange; but whether he afterwards served his present master only to betray him, as has been generally believed, or sought rather to propitiate, by clandestine professions, one who might in the course of events become such, is not perhaps what the evidence already known to the world will enable us to determine †. The apologists of James have often represented Sunderland's treachery as extending back to the commencement of this reign, as if he had entered upon the king's service with no other aim than to put him on measures that would naturally lead to his ruin. But the simpler hypothesis is probably nearer the truth: a corrupt and artful statesman could have no better prospect for his own advantage than the power and popularity of a government which he administered; it was a

* Burnet, Dalrymple, Mazure.

† The correspondence began by an affectedly obscure letter of lady Sunderland to the prince of Orange, dated March 7, 1687. Dalrymple, 187. The meaning however cannot be misunderstood. Sunderland himself sent a short letter of compliment by Dykvelt, May 28, referring to what that envoy had to communicate. Churchill, Nottingham, Rochester, Devonshire, and others, wrote also by Dykvelt. Halifax was in correspondence at the end of 1686.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

conviction of the king's incorrigible and infatuated adherence to designs which the rising spirit of the nation rendered utterly infeasible; an apprehension that, whenever a free parliament should be called, he might experience the fate of Strafford as an expiation for the sins of the crown, that determined him to secure as far as possible his own indemnity upon a revolution which he could not have withstood *.

The dismissal of Rochester was followed up at no great distance by the famous declaration for liberty of conscience, suspending the execution of all penal laws concerning religion, and freely pardoning all offences against them, in as full a manner as if each individual had been named. He declared also his will and pleasure that the oaths of supremacy and allegiance, and the several tests enjoined by statutes of the late reign, should no longer be required of any one before his admission to offices of trust. The motive of this declaration was not so much to relieve the Roman catholics from penal and incapacitating statutes, which, since the king's accession and the judgment of the court of King's Bench in favour of Hales, were virtually at an end, as by extending to the protestant dissenters the same full measure of toleration, to enlist under the standard of arbitrary power those who had been its most intrepid and steadiest adversaries. It was after the prorogation of parliament that he had begun to caress

* Sunderland does not appear, by the extracts from Barillon's letters, published by M. Mazure, to have been the adviser of the king's most injudicious measures. He was united with the queen, who had more moderation than her husband. It is said by Barillon, that both he and Petre were against the prosecution of the bishops, ii. 448. The king himself ascribes this step to Jefferies, and seems to glance also at Sunderland as its adviser. Life of James, ii. 156. He speaks more explicitly as to Jefferies in Macpherson's Extracts, 151. Yet Lord Clarendon's Diary, ii. 49, tends to acquit Jefferies. Probably the king had nobody to blame but himself. One cause of Sunderland's continuance in the apparent support of a policy which he knew to be destructive was his poverty. He was in the pay of France, and even importunate for its money. Mazure, 372. Dalrymple, 270 et post. Louis only gave him half what he demanded. Without the blindest submission of the king, he was every moment falling; and this drove him into a step as injudicious as it was unprincipled, his pretended change of religion, which was not publicly made till June 1688, though he had been privately reconciled, it is said, (Mazure, ii. 463,) more than a year before by father Petre.

that party, who in the first months of his reign had endured a continuance of their persecution *. But the clergy in general detested the non-conformists still more than the papists, and had always abhorred the idea of even a parliamentary toleration. The present declaration went much farther than the recognized prerogative of dispensing with prohibitory statutes. Instead of removing the disability from individuals by letters patent, it swept away at once, in effect, the solemn ordinances of the legislature. There was indeed a reference to the future concurrence of the two houses, whenever he should think it convenient for them to meet; but so expressed, as rather to insult, than pay respect to their authority †. And no one could help considering the declaration of a similar nature just published in Scotland as the best commentary on the present. In that he suspended all laws against the Roman catholics and moderate presbyterians, "by his sovereign authority, prerogative royal, and absolute power, which all his subjects were to obey without reserve;" and in its whole tenor spoke, in as unequivocal language as his grandfather was accustomed to use, his contempt of all pretended limitations on his will ‡. Though the constitution of Scotland was not so well balanced as our own, it was notorious that the crown did not legally possess so absolute a power in that kingdom, and men might conclude that, when he should think it less necessary to observe some measures with his English subjects, he would address them in the same strain.

Those, indeed, who knew by what course his favour was to be sought, did not hesitate to go before, and light him, as it were, to the altar on which their country's liberty was to be the victim. Many of the addresses which fill the columns of the London

* "This defection of those his majesty had hitherto put the greatest confidence in [Clarendon and Rochester], and the sullen disposition of the church of England party in general, made him think it necessary to reconcile another; and yet he hoped to do it in such a manner as not to disgust quite the church-man neither." Life of James, ii. 102.

† London Gazette, March 18, 1687. Ralph, 945.

‡ Ralph, 943. Mazure, ii. 207.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

Gazette in 1687, on occasion of the declaration of indulgence, flatter the king with assertions of his dispensing power. The benchers and barristers of the Middle Temple, under the direction of the prostitute Shower, were again foremost in the race of infamy. They thank him "for asserting his own royal prerogatives, the very life of the law, and of their profession, which prerogatives, as they were given by God himself, so no power upon earth could diminish them, but they must always remain entire and inseparable from his royal person; which prerogatives as the addressers had studied to know, so they were resolved to defend, by asserting with their lives and fortunes that divine maxim, *a Deo rex, a rege lex**."

These addresses, which, to the number of some hundreds, were sent up from every description of persons, the clergy, the non-conformists of all denominations, the grand juries, the justices of the peace, the corporations, the inhabitants of towns, in consequence of the declaration, afford a singular contrast to what we know of the prevailing dispositions of the people in that year, and of their general abandonment of the king's cause before the end of the next. Those from the clergy, indeed, disclose their ill-humour at the unconstitutional indulgence, limiting their thanks to some promises of favour the king had used towards the established church. But as to the rest, we should have cause to blush for the servile hypocrisy of our ancestors, if there were not good reason to believe that these addresses were sometimes the work of a small minority in the name of the rest, and that the grand juries and the magistracy in general had been so garbled for the king's purposes in this year, that they formed a very inadequate representation of that great class from which they ought to be taken †. It was, however, very natural that they should de-

* London Gazette, June 9, 1687. Shower had been knighted a little before, on presenting, as recorder of London, an address from the grand jury of Middlesex, thanking the king for his declaration. Id. May 12.

† London Gazettes of 1687 and 1688 passim. Ralph, 946, 368. These ad-

ceive the court. The catholics were eager for that security which nothing but an act of the legislature could afford; and James, who, as well as his minister, had a strong aversion to the measure, seems about the latter end of the summer of 1687 to have made a sudden change in his scheme of government, and resolved once more to try the disposition of a parliament. For this purpose, having dissolved that from which he could expect nothing hostile to the church, he set himself to manage the election of another in such a manner, as to ensure his main object, the security of the Romish religion *.

"His first care," says his biographer Innes, "was to purge the corporations from that leaven which was in danger of corrupting the whole kingdom; so he appointed certain regulators to inspect the conduct of several borough towns, to correct abuses where it was practicable, and where not, by forfeiting their charters, to turn out such rotten members as infected the rest. But in this, as in most other cases, the king had the fortune to choose persons not too well qualified for such an employment, and extremely disagreeable to the people; it was a sort of motley council made up of catholics and presbyterians, a composition which was sure never to hold long together, or that could probably unite in any method suitable to both their interests; it served, therefore, only

dresses grew more ardent after the queen's pregnancy became known. They were renewed of course after the birth of the prince of Wales. But scarce any appear after the expected invasion was announced. The Tories (to whom add the dissenters) seem to have thrown off the mask at once, and deserted the king whom they had so grossly flattered as instantaneously as parasites on the stage desert their patron on the first tidings of his ruin.

The dissenters have been a little ashamed of their compliance with the declaration, and of their silence in the popish controversy during this reign. Neal, 755, 768: and see Biogr. Brit. art. *Alsop.* The best excuses are that they had been so harassed, it was not in human nature to refuse a mitigation of suffering on almost any terms; that they were by no means unanimous in their transitory support of the court; and that they gladly embraced the first offers of an equal indulgence held out to them by the church.

* "The king now finding that nothing which had the least appearance of novelty, though never so well warranted by the prerogative, would go down with the people, unless it had the parliamentary stamp on it, resolved to try if he could get the penal laws and test taken off by that authority." Life of James, ii. 134. But it seems by M. Mazure's authorities, that neither the king nor lord Sunderland wished to convoke a parliament, which was pressed forward by the eager catholics. ii. 399.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

to increase the public odium by their too arbitrary ways of turning out and putting in; and yet those who were thus intruded, as it were, by force, being of the presbyterian party, were by this time become as little inclinable to favour the king's intentions as the excluded members *."

This endeavour to violate the legal rights of electors, as well as to take away other vested franchises, by new modelling corporations through commissions granted to regulators, was the most capital delinquency of the king's government, because it tended to preclude any reparation for the rest, and directly attacked the fundamental constitution of the state †. But, like all his other measures, it displayed not more ill-will to the liberties of the nation, than inability to overthrow them. The catholics were so small a body, and so weak, especially in corporate towns, that the whole effect produced by the regulators was to place municipal power and trust in the hands of the non-conformists, those precarious and unfaithful allies of the court, whose resentment of past oppression, hereditary attachment to popular principles of government, and inveterate abhorrence of popery, were not to be effaced by an unnatural coalition. Hence though they availed themselves, and surely without reproach, of the toleration held out to them, and even took the benefit of the scheme of regulation, so as to fill the corporation of London, and many others, they were, as is confessed above, too much of Englishmen and protestants for the purposes of the court. The wiser part of the churchmen made secret overtures to their party, and by assurances of a toleration, if not also of a comprehension within the Anglican pale, won them over to a hearty concurrence in the great project that was on foot ‡. The king found it neces-

* Life of James, p. 139.

† Ralph, 965, 966. The object was to let in the dissenters. This was evidently a desperate game: James had ever mortally hated the sectaries as enemies to monarchy, and they were irreconcilably adverse to all his schemes.

‡ Burnet. Life of James, 169. Lord Halifax, as is supposed, published a letter of advice to the dissenters, warning them against a coalition with the court, and promising all indulgence from the church. Ralph, 950. Somers Tracts, viii. 50. D'Oyly's Life of Sancroft, i. 326.

sary to descend so much from the haughty attitude he had taken at the outset of his reign, as personally to solicit men of rank and local influence for their votes on the two great measures of repealing the test and penal laws. The country gentlemen, in their different counties, were tried with circular questions, whether they would comply with the king in their elections, or, if themselves chosen, in parliament. Those who refused such a promise were erased from the lists of justices and deputy-lieutenants *. Yet his biographer admits, that he received little encouragement to proceed in the experiment of a parliament †; and it is said by the French ambassador, that evasive answers were returned to these questions, with such uniformity of expression, as indicated an alarming degree of concert ‡.

It is unnecessary to dwell on circumstances so well known as the expulsion of the fellows of Magdalen College §. It was less extensively mischievous than the new modelling of corporations, but perhaps a more glaring act of despotism. For though the crown had been accustomed from the time of the reformation to send very peremptory commands to ecclesiastical foundations, and even to dispense with their statutes at discretion, with so little resistance, that few seemed to doubt of its prerogative; though Elizabeth would probably have treated the fellows of any college much in the same manner as James II., if they had proceeded to an election in defiance of her recommendation; yet the right was not the less clearly theirs, and the struggles of a century would have been thrown away, if James II. was to govern

* Ralph, 967. Lonsdale, p. 15. "It is to be observed," says the author of this memoir, "that most part of the offices in the nation, as justices of the peace, deputy-lieutenants, mayors, aldermen, and freemen of towns, are filled with Roman catholics and dissenters, after having suffered as many regulations as were necessary for that purpose. And thus stands the state of this nation in this month of September, 1688." P. 34. Notice is given in the London Gazette for December 11, 1687, that the lists of justices and deputy-lieutenants would be revised.

† Life of James, 183.

‡ Mazure, ii. 302.

§ The reader will find almost every thing relative to the subject in that incomparable repertory, the State Trials, xii. 1; also some notes in the Oxford edition of Burnet.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

as the Tudors, or even as his father and grandfather had done before him. And though Parker, bishop of Oxford, the first president whom the ecclesiastical commissioners obtruded on the college, were still nominally a protestant *, his successor Gifford was an avowed member of the church of Rome. The college was filled with persons of the same persuasion; mass was said in the chapel, and the established religion was excluded with a degree of open force which entirely took away all security for its preservation in any other place. This latter act, especially, of the Magdalen drama, in a still greater degree than the nomination of Massey to the deanery of Christ church, seems a decisive proof that the king's repeated promises of contenting himself with a toleration of his own religion would have yielded to his insuperable bigotry and the zeal of his confessor. We may perhaps add to these encroachments upon the act of uniformity the design imputed to him of conferring the archbishopric of York on father Petre; yet there would have been difficulties that seem insurmountable in the way of this, since the validity of Anglican orders not being acknowledged by the church of Rome, Petre would not have sought consecration at the hands of Sancroft, nor, had he done so, would the latter have conferred it on him, even if the chapter of York had gone through the indispensable form of an election †.

The infatuated monarch was irritated by that which he should have taken as a terrible warning, this resistance to his will from the university of Oxford. That sanctuary of pure unspotted loyalty, as some would say, that sink of all that was most abject in servility, as less courtly tongues might murmur, the university of Oxford, which had but four short years back, by a

* Parker's Reasons for Abrogating the Test are written in such a tone, as to make his readiness to abandon the protestant side very manifest, even if the common anecdotes of him should be exaggerated.

† It seems, however, confirmed by Mazure, ii. 390, with the addition, that Petre, like a second Wolsey, aspired also to be chancellor. The pope, however, would not make him a bishop, against the rules of the order of jesuits to which he belonged. Id. 241. James then tried, through lord Castlemain, to get him a cardinal's hat, but with as little success.

solemn decree in convocation, poured forth anathemas on all who had doubted the divine right of monarchy, or asserted the privileges of subjects against their sovereigns, which had boasted in its addresses of an obedience without any restrictions or limitations, which but recently had seen a known convert to popery and a person disqualified in other ways installed by the chapter without any remonstrance in the deanery of Christ church, was now the scene of a firm though temperate opposition to the king's positive command, and soon after the willing instrument of his ruin. In vain the pamphleteers, on the side of the court, upbraided the clergy with their apostasy from the principles they had so much vaunted. The imputation it was hard to repel; but if they could not retract their course without shame, they could not continue in it without destruction*. They were driven to extremity by the order of May 4, 1688, to read the declaration of indulgence in their churches†. This, as is well known, met with great resistance, and by inducing the primate and six other bishops to present a petition to the king against it, brought on that famous persecution, which, more perhaps than all his former actions, cost him the allegiance of the Anglican church. The proceedings upon the trial of those prelates are so familiar as to require no particular notice‡. What is most worthy of remark is, that the very party who had most extolled the royal prerogative, and often in such terms as if all limitations of it were only to subsist at pleasure, became now the instruments of bringing it down within the compass and

* "Above twenty years together," says Sir Roger L'Estrange, perhaps himself a disguised catholic, in his reply to the reasons of the clergy of the diocese of Oxford against petitioning, (Somers Tracts, viii. 45), "without any regard to the nobility, gentry, and commonalty, our clergy have been publishing to the world, that the king can do greater things than are done in his declaration; but now the scene is altered, and they are become more concerned to maintain their reputation even with the commonalty than with the king." See also in the same volume, p. 19. "A remonstrance from the church of England to both houses of parliament," 1685; and p. 145, "A new test of the church of England's loyalty;" both, especially the latter, bitterly reproaching her members for their apostasy from former professions.

† Ralph, 982.

‡ See State Trials, xii. 183. D'Oyly's Life of Sancroft, i. 250.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

control of the law. If the king had a right to suspend the execution of statutes by proclamation, the bishops' petition might not indeed be libellous, but their disobedience and that of the clergy could not be warranted, and the principal argument both of the bar and the bench rested on the great question of that prerogative.

The king, meantime, was blindly hurrying on at the instigation of his own pride and bigotry, and of some ignorant priests, confident in the fancied obedience of the church, and in the hollow support of the dissenters, after all his wiser counsellors, the catholic peers, the nuncio, perhaps the queen herself, had grown sensible of the danger, and solicitous for temporizing measures. He had good reason to perceive that neither the fleet nor the army could be relied upon; to cashier the most rigidly protestant officers, to draft Irish troops into the regiments, to place all important commands in the hands of catholics, were difficult and even desperate measures, which rendered his designs more notorious, without rendering them more feasible. It is among the most astonishing parts of this unhappy sovereign's impolicy, that he sometimes neglected, even offended, never steadily and sufficiently courted, the sole ally that could by possibility have co-operated in his scheme of government. In his brother's reign, James had been the most obsequious and unhesitating servant of the French king. Before his own accession, his first step was to implore, through Barillon, a continuance of that support and protection, without which he could undertake nothing which he had designed in favour of the catholics. He received a present of 500,000 livres with tears of gratitude, and telling the ambassador he had not disclosed his real designs to his ministers, pressed for a strict alliance with Louis, as the means of accomplishing them*. Yet with a strange inconsistency, he drew off gradually from these professions, and not only kept on rather cool

* Fox, App. 29; Dalrymple, 107; Mazure, i. 396. 433.

terms with France during part of his reign, but sometimes played a double game by treating of a league with Spain.

The secret of this uncertain policy, which has not been well known till very lately, is to be found in the king's character. James had a high sense of the dignity pertaining to a king of England, and much of the national pride, as well as that of his rank. He felt the degradation of importuning an equal sovereign for money, which Louis gave less frequently and in smaller measure than it was demanded. It is natural for a proud man not to love those before whom he has abased himself. James, of frugal habits, and master of a great revenue, soon became more indifferent to a French pension. Nor was he insensible to the reproach of Europe, that he was grown the vassal of France and had tarnished the lustre of the English crown*. Had he been himself protestant, or his subjects catholic, he would probably have given the reins to that jealousy of his ambitious neighbour, which, even in his peculiar circumstances, restrained him from the most expedient course: I mean expedient, on the hypothesis that to overthrow the civil and religious institutions of his people was to be the main object of his reign. For it was idle to attempt this without the steady co-operation of France; and those sentiments

* Several proofs of this occur in the course of M. Mazure's work. When the Dutch ambassador, Van Citers, showed him a paper, probably forged to exasperate him, but purporting to be written by some catholics, wherein it was said that it would be better for the people to be vassals of France than slaves of the devil, he burst out into rage. "'Jamais! non, jamais! je ne ferai rien qui me puisse mettre au dessous des rois de France et d'Espagne. Vassal! vassal de la France!' s'ecria-t-il avec emportement. 'Monsieur! si le parlement avoit voulu, s'il vouloit encore, j'aurois porté, je porterois encore la monarchie à un degré de consideration qu'elle n'a jamais eu sous aucune des rois mes prédécesseurs, et votre état y trouveroit peut-être sa propre securité.'" Vol. ii. 165. Sunderland said to Barillon, "Le roi d'Angleterre se reproche de ne pas être en Europe tout ce qu'il devoit être, et souvent il se plaint que le roi votre maître n'a pas pour lui assez de consideration." Id. 313. On the other hand, Louis was much mortified that James made so few applications for his aid. His hope seems to have been, that by means of French troops, or troops at least in his pay, he should get a footing in England, and this was what the other was too proud and jealous to permit. "Comme le roi," he said, in 1687, "ne doute pas de mon affection et du désir que j'ai de voir la religion catholique bien établie en Angleterre, il faut croire qu'il se trouve assez de force et d'autorité pour exécuter ses desseins, puisqu'il n'a pas recours à moi." P. 258; also 174. 225. 320.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

of dignity and independence which at first sight appear to do him honour, being without any consistent magnanimity of character, served only to accelerate his ruin, and confirm the persuasion of his incapacity *. Even in the memorable year 1688, though the veil was at length torn from his eyes on the verge of the precipice, and he sought in trembling the assistance he had slighted, his silly pride made him half unwilling to be rescued; and when the French ambassador at the Hague, by a bold manœuvre of diplomacy, asserted to the States that an alliance already subsisted between his master and the king of England, the latter took offence at the unauthorized declaration, and complained privately, that Louis treated him as an inferior †. It is probable that a more ingenuous policy in the court of Whitehall, by determining the king of France to declare war sooner on Holland, would have prevented the expedition of the prince of Orange ‡.

* James affected the same ceremonial as the king of France, and received the latter's ambassador sitting and covered. Louis only said, smiling, "Le roi mon frère est fier, mais il aime assez les pistoles de France." Mazure, i. 423. A more extraordinary trait of James's pride is mentioned by Dangeau, whom I quote from the Quarterly Review, xix. 470. After his retirement to St. Germains, he wore violet in court mournings, which, by etiquette, was confined to the kings of France. The courtiers were a little astonished to see *solem geminum*, though not at a loss where to worship. Louis, of course, had too much magnanimity to express resentment. But what a picture of littleness of spirit does this exhibit in a wretched pauper, who could only escape by the most contemptible insignificance the charge of most ungrateful insolence!

† Mazure, iii. 50. James was so much out of humour at D'Avaux's interference, that he asked his confidents "if the king of France thought he could treat him like the cardinal of Furstenburg," a creature of Louis XIV. whom he had set up for the electorate of Cologne. Id. 69. He was in short so much displeased with his own ambassador at the Hague, Skelton, for giving into this declaration of D'Avaux, that he not only recalled, but sent him to the Tower. Burnet is therefore mistaken, p. 768, in believing that there was actually an alliance, though it was very natural that he should give credit to what an ambassador asserted in a matter of such importance. In fact, a treaty was signed between James and Louis, Sept. 13, by which some French ships were to be under the former's orders. Mazure, iii. 67.

‡ Louis continued to find money, though despising James and disgusted with him. Probably with a view to his own grand interests, he should, nevertheless, have declared war against Holland in October, which must have put a stop to the armament. But he had discovered that James with extreme meanness had privately offered, about the end of September, to join the alliance against him as the only resource. This wretched action is first brought to light by M. Mazure, iii. 104. He excused himself to the king of France by an assurance that he was not acting sincerely towards Holland. Louis, though he

He continued to receive strong assurances of attachment from men of rank in England, but wanted that direct invitation to enter the kingdom with force, which he required both for his security and his justification. No men who thought much about their country's interests or their own would be hasty in venturing on so awful an enterprise. The punishment and ignominy of treason, the reproach of history, too often the sworn slave of fortune, awaited its failure. Thus Halifax and Nottingham found their conscience or their courage unequal to the crisis, and drew back from the hardy conspiracy that produced the revolution *. Nor, perhaps, would the seven eminent persons, whose names are subscribed to the invitation addressed on the 30th of June, 1688, to the prince of Orange, the earls of Danby, Shrewsbury, and Devonshire, lords Delamere and Lumley, the bishop of London, and admiral Russell, have committed themselves so far, if the recent birth of a prince of Wales had not made some measures of force absolutely necessary for the common interests of the nation and the prince of Orange †. It cannot be said without absurdity, that James was guilty of any offence in becoming father of this child; yet it was evidently that which rendered his other offences inexpiable. He was now considerably advanced in life, and the decided resistance of his subjects made it improbable that he could do much essential injury to the established constitution during the remainder of it. The mere certainty of all reverting to a protestant heir would be an effectual guarantee of the An-

gave up his intention of declaring war, behaved with great magnanimity and compassion towards the falling bigot.

* Halifax all along discouraged the invasion, pointing out that the king made no progress in his schemes. Dalrymple, passim. Nottingham said he would keep the secret, but could not be a party to a treasonable undertaking. Id. 228. Burnet, 764; and wrote as late as July to advise delay and caution. Notwithstanding the splendid success of the opposite counsels, it would be judging too servilely by the event not to admit that they were tremendously hazardous.

† The invitation to William seems to have been in debate some time before the prince of Wales's birth; but it does not follow that it would have been despatched if the queen had born a daughter; nor do I think that it should have been.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

glican church. But the birth of a son to be nursed in the obnoxious bigotry of Rome, the prospect of a regency under the queen, so deeply implicated, according to common report, in the schemes of this reign, made every danger appear more terrible. From the moment that the queen's pregnancy was announced, the catholics gave way to enthusiastic unrepressed exultation, and by the confidence with which they prophesied the birth of an heir, furnished a pretext for the suspicions which a disappointed people began to entertain *. These suspicions were very general, they extended to the highest ranks, and are a conspicuous instance of that prejudice which is chiefly founded on our wishes. Lord Danby, in a letter to William, of March 27, insinuates his doubt of the queen's pregnancy. After the child's birth, the seven subscribers to the association inviting the prince to come over, and pledging themselves to join him, say that not one in a thousand believe it to be the queen's; lord Devonshire separately held language to the same effect †. The princess Anne talked with little restraint of her suspicions, and made no scruple of imparting them to her sister ‡. Though no one can hesitate at present to acknowledge that the prince of Wales's legitimacy is out of all question, there was enough to raise a reasonable apprehension in the presumptive heir, that a party not really very scrupulous, and through religious animosity supposed to be still less so, had been induced by the unbounded prospect of advantage to draw the king, who had been wholly their slave, into one of those frauds which bigotry might call pious §.

* Ralph, 980. Mazure, ii. 367.

† Dalrymple, 216, 228. The prince was urged in the memorial of the seven to declare the fraud of the queen's pregnancy to be one of the grounds of his expedition. He did this; and it is the only part of his declaration that is false.

‡ State Trials, xii. 151. Mary put some very sensible questions to her sister, which show her desire of reaching the truth in so important a matter. They were answered in a style which shows that Anne did not mean to lessen her sister's suspicions. Dalrymple, 305. Her conversation with lord Clarendon on this subject, after the depositions had been taken, is a proof that she had made up her mind not to be convinced. Henry Earl of Clarendon's Diary, 77. 79. State Trials, ubi supra.

§ M. Mazure has collected all the pass-

The great event, however, of what has been emphatically denominated in the language of our public acts the Glorious Revolution stands in need of no vulgar credulity, no mistaken prejudice for its support. It can only rest on the basis of a liberal theory of government, which looks to the public good as the great end for which positive laws and the constitutional order of states have been instituted. It cannot be defended without rejecting the slavish principles of absolute obedience, or even that pretended modification of them which imagines some extreme case of intolerable tyranny, some, as it were, lunacy of despotism, as the only plea and palliation of resistance. Doubtless the administration of James II. was not of this nature. Doubtless he was not a Caligula, or a Commodus, or an Ezzelin, or a Galeazzo Sforza, or a Christiern II. of Denmark, or a Charles IX. of France, or one of those almost innumerable tyrants whom men have endured in the wantonness of unlimited power. No man had been deprived of his liberty by any illegal warrant. No man, except in the single though very important instance of Magdalen College, had been despoiled of his property. I must also add, that the government of James II. will lose little by comparison with that of his father. The judgment in favour of his prerogative to dispense with the test was far more according to received notions of law, far less injurious and unconstitutional than that which gave a sanction to ship-money. The injunction to read the declaration of indulgence in churches was less offensive to scrupulous men than the similar command to read the declaration of Sunday sports in the time of Charles I. Nor was any one punished for a refusal to comply with the one, while the prisons had been filled with those who had disobeyed the other. Nay, what is more, there are much stronger

ages in the letters of Barillon and Bonrepos to the court of France relative to the queen's pregnancy, ii. 366; and those relative to the birth of the prince of Wales, p. 457. It is to be observed that this took place more than a month before the time expected.

presumptions of the father's than of the son's intention to lay aside parliaments, and set up an avowed despotism. It is indeed amusing to observe, that many who scarcely put bounds to their eulogies of Charles I. have been content to abandon the cause of one who had no faults in his public conduct but such as seemed to have come by inheritance. The characters of the father and son were very closely similar; both proud of their judgment as well as their station, and still more obstinate in their understanding than in their purpose; both scrupulously conscientious in certain great points of conduct, to the sacrifice of that power which they had preferred to every thing else; the one far superior in relish for the arts and for polite letters, the other more diligent and indefatigable in business; the father exempt from those vices of a court to which the son was too long addicted; not so harsh, perhaps, or prone to severity in his temper, but inferior in general sincerity and adherence to his word. They were both equally unfitted for the condition in which they were meant to stand—the limited kings of a wise and free people, the chiefs of the English commonwealth.

The most plausible argument against the necessity of so violent a remedy for public grievances, as the abjuration of allegiance to a reigning sovereign, was one that misled half the nation in that age, and is still sometimes insinuated by those whose pity for the misfortunes of the house of Stuart appears to predominate over every other sentiment which the history of the revolution should excite. It was alleged that the constitutional mode of redress by parliament was not taken away; that the king's attempts to obtain promises of support from the electors and probable representatives showed his intention of calling one; that the writs were in fact ordered before the prince of Orange's expedition; that after the invader had reached London, James still offered to refer the terms of reconciliation with his people to a free parliament, though he could have no hope of evading any that might be proposed; that by reversing illegal judg-

ments, by annulling unconstitutional dispensations, by reinstating those who had been unjustly dispossessed, by punishing wicked advisers, above all, by passing statutes to restrain the excesses and cut off the dangerous prerogatives of the monarchy, as efficacious, or more so, than the bill of rights and other measures that followed the revolution, all risk of arbitrary power, or of injury to the established religion, might have been prevented without a violation of that hereditary right which was as fundamental in the constitution as any of the subjects' privileges. It was not necessary to enter upon the delicate problem of absolute non-resistance, or to deny that the conservation of the whole was paramount to all positive laws. The question to be proved was that a regard to this general safety exacted the means employed in the revolution, and constituted that extremity which, in the opinion of these reasoners, could alone justify such a deviation from the standard rules of law and religion.

It is evidently true, that James had made very little progress, or rather experienced a signal defeat, in his endeavour to place the professors of his own religion on a firm and honourable basis. There seems the strongest reason to believe, that far from reaching his end through the new parliament, he would have experienced those warm assaults on the administration which generally distinguished the house of commons under his father and brother. But as he was in no want of money, and had not the temper to endure what he thought the language of republican faction, we may be equally sure that a short and angry session would have ended with a more decided resolution on his side to govern in future without such impracticable counsellors. The doctrine imputed of old to lord Strafford, that after trying the good-will of parliament in vain, a king was absolved from the legal maxims of government, was always at the heart of the Stuarts. His army was numerous, according at least to English notions; he had already begun to fill it with popish officers and soldiers; the militia, though less to be depended

CHAP. XIV. James II.

on, was under the command of lord and deputy lieutenants carefully selected; above all, he would at the last have recourse to France; and though the experiment of bringing over French troops was very hazardous, it is difficult to say that he might not have succeeded with all these means in preventing or putting down any concerted insurrection. But at least the renewal of civil bloodshed and the anarchy of rebellion seemed to be the alternative of slavery, if William had never earned the just title of our deliverer. It is still more evident, that after the invasion had taken place, and a general defection had exhibited the king's inability to resist, there could have been no such compromise as the Tories fondly expected, no legal and peaceable settlement in what they called a free parliament, leaving James in the real and recognised possession of his constitutional prerogatives. Those who have grudged William III. the laurels that he won for our service are ever prone to insinuate that his unnatural ambition would be content with nothing less than the crown, instead of returning to his country after he had convinced the king of the error of his counsels, and obtained securities for the religion and liberties of England. The hazard of the enterprise, and most hazardous it truly was, was to have been his; the profit and advantage our own. I do not know that William absolutely expected to place himself on the throne, because he could hardly anticipate that James would so precipitately abandon a kingdom wherein he was acknowledged and had still many adherents. But undoubtedly he must, in consistency with his magnanimous designs, have determined to place England in its natural station, as a party in the great alliance against the power of Louis XIV. To this one object of securing the liberties of Europe, and chiefly of his own country, the whole of his heroic life was directed with undeviating, undisheartened firmness. He had in view no distant prospect, when the entire succession of the Spanish monarchy would be claimed by that insatiable prince, whose renunciation at the treaty of the Pyrenees

was already maintained to be invalid. Against the present aggressions and future schemes of this neighbour the league of Augsburg had just been concluded. England, a free, a protestant, a maritime kingdom, would, in her natural position, as a rival of France, and deeply concerned in the independence of the Netherlands, become a leading member of this confederacy. But the sinister attachments of the house of Stuart had long diverted her from her true interests, and rendered her councils disgracefully and treacherously subservient to those of Louis. It was therefore the main object of the prince of Orange to strengthen the alliance by the vigorous co-operation of this kingdom; and with no other view, the emperor, and even the pope, had abetted his undertaking. But it was impossible to imagine that James would have come with sincerity into measures so repugnant to his predilections and interests. What better could be expected than a recurrence of that false and hollow system which had betrayed Europe, and dishonoured England, under Charles II.? or rather, would not the sense of injury and thraldom have inspired still more deadly aversion to the cause of those to whom he must have ascribed his humiliation? There was as little reason to hope that he would abandon the long cherished schemes of arbitrary power, and the sacred interests of his own faith. We must remember, that when the adherents or apologists of James II. have spoken of him as an unfortunately misguided prince, they have insinuated what neither the notorious history of those times, nor the more secret information since brought to light, will in any degree confirm. It was indeed a strange excuse for a king of such mature years, and so trained in the most diligent attention to business. That in some particular instances he acted under the influence of his confessor, Petre, is not unlikely; but the general temper of his administration, his notions of government, the objects he had in view, were perfectly his own, and pursued rather in spite of much dissuasion and many warnings, than through the suggestions of any treacherous counsellors.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

Both with respect, therefore, to the prince of Orange and to the English nation, James II. was to be considered an enemy whose resentment could never be appeased, and whose power, consequently, must be wholly taken away. It is true, that if he had remained in England, it would have been extremely difficult to deprive him of the nominal sovereignty. But in this case, the prince of Orange must have been invested, by some course or other, with all its real attributes. He undoubtedly intended to remain in this country, and could not otherwise have preserved that entire ascendancy which was necessary for his ultimate purposes. The king could not have been permitted, with any common prudence, to retain the choice of his ministers, or the command of his army, or his negative voice in laws, or even his personal liberty; by which I mean, that his guards must have been either Dutch, or at least appointed by the prince and parliament. Less than this it would have been childish to require; and this would not have been endured by any man even of James's spirit, or by the nation, when the re-action of loyalty should return, without continued efforts to get rid of an arrangement far more revolutionary and subversive of the established monarchy than the king's deposition.

In the revolution of 1688 there was an unusual combination of favouring circumstances, and some of the most important, such as the king's sudden flight, not within prior calculation, which render it no precedent for other times and occasions in point of expediency, whatever it may be in point of justice. Resistance to tyranny by overt rebellion incurs not only the risks of failure, but those of national impoverishment and confusion, of vindictive retaliation, and such aggressions, perhaps inevitable, on private right and liberty, as render the name of revolution and its adherents odious. Those, on the other hand, who call in a powerful neighbour to protect them from domestic oppression, may too often expect to realize the horse of the fable, and endure a subjection more severe, permanent and ignominious, than what they

shake off. But the revolution effected by William III. united the independent character of a national act with the regularity and the coercion of anarchy which belong to a military invasion. The United Provinces were not such a foreign potentate as could put in jeopardy the independence of England; nor could his army have maintained itself against the inclinations of the kingdom, though it was sufficient to repress any turbulence that would naturally attend so extraordinary a crisis. Nothing was done by the multitude; no new men, soldiers or demagogues, had their talents brought forward by this rapid and pacific revolution; it cost no blood, it violated no right, it was hardly to be traced in the course of justice; the formal and exterior character of the monarchy remained nearly the same in so complete a regeneration of its spirit. Few nations can hope to ascend up to the sphere of a just and honourable liberty, especially when long use has made the track of obedience familiar, and they have learned to move as it were only by the clank of the chain, with so little toil and hardship. We reason too exclusively from this peculiar instance of 1688, when we hail the fearful struggles of other revolutions with a sanguine and confident sympathy. Nor is the only error upon this side. For, as if the inveterate and cankerous ills of a commonwealth could be extirpated with no loss and suffering, we are often prone to abandon the popular cause in agitated nations with as much fickleness as we embraced it, when we find that intemperance, irregularity, and confusion, from which great revolutions are very seldom exempt. These are indeed so much their usual attendants, the re-action of a self-deceived multitude is so probable a consequence, the general prospects of success in most cases so precarious, that wise and good men are more likely to hesitate too long, than to rush forward too eagerly. Yet "whatever be the cost of this noble liberty, we must be content to pay it to Heaven."

It is unnecessary even to mention those circumstances of this great event, which are minutely known to almost all my readers.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

They were all eminently favourable in their effect to the regeneration of our constitution; even one of temporary inconvenience, namely, the return of James to London, after his detention by the fishermen near Feversham. This, as Burnet has observed, and as is easily demonstrated by the writings of that time, gave a different colour to the state of affairs, and raised up a party which did not before exist, or at least was too disheartened to show itself*. His first desertion of the kingdom had disgusted every one, and might be construed into a voluntary cession. But his return to assume again the government put William under the necessity of using that intimidation which awakened the mistaken sympathy of a generous people. It made his subsequent flight, though certainly not what a man of courage enough to give his better judgment free play would have chosen, appear excusable and defensive. It brought out too glaringly, I mean for the satisfaction of prejudiced minds, the undeniable fact, that the two houses of convention deposed and expelled their sovereign. Thus the great schism of the jacobites, though it must otherwise have existed, gained its chief strength; and the revolution, to which at the outset a coalition of whigs and tories had conspired, became in its final result, in the settlement of the crown upon William and Mary, almost entirely the work of the former party.

* Some short pamphlets, written at this juncture to excite sympathy for the king, and disapprobation of the course pursued with respect to him, are in the Somers Collection, vol. ix. But this force put upon their sovereign first wounded the consciences of Sancroft and the other bishops, who had hitherto done as much, as in their station they well could, to ruin the king's cause and paralyze his arms. Several modern writers have endeavoured to throw an interest about James at the moment of his fall, either from a lurking predilection for all legitimately crowned heads, or from a notion that it becomes a generous historian to excite compassion for the unfortunate. There can be no objection to pitying James, if this feeling is kept unmingled with any blame of those who were the instruments of his misfortune. It was highly expedient for the good of this country, because the revolution settlement could not otherwise be attained, to work on James's sense of his deserted state by intimidation; and for that purpose the order conveyed by three of his own subjects, perhaps with some rudeness of manner, to leave Whitehall was necessary. The drift of several accounts of the revolution that may be read is to hold forth Mulgrave, Craven, Arran, and Dundee to admiration, at the expense of William and of those who achieved the great consolidation of English liberty.

But while the position of the new government was thus rendered less secure, by narrowing the basis of public opinion whereon it stood, the liberal principles of policy which the whigs had espoused became incomparably more powerful, and were necessarily involved in the continuance of the revolution settlement. The ministers of William III. and of the house of Brunswick had no choice but to respect and countenance the doctrines of Locke, Hoadley, and Molesworth. The assertion of passive obedience to the crown grew obnoxious to the crown itself. Our new line of sovereigns scarcely ventured to hear of their hereditary right, and dreaded the cup of flattery that was drugged with poison. This was the greatest change that affected our monarchy by the fall of the house of Stuart. The laws were not so materially altered as the spirit and sentiments of the people. Hence those who look only at the former have been prone to underrate the magnitude of this revolution. The fundamental maxims of the constitution, both as they regard the king and the subject, may seem nearly the same, but the disposition with which they were received and interpreted was entirely different.

It was in this turn of feeling, in this change, if I may so say, of the heart, far more than in any positive statutes and improvements of the law, that I consider the revolution to have been eminently conducive to our freedom and prosperity. Laws and statutes as remedial, nay more closely limiting the prerogative than the bill of rights and act of settlement, might possibly have been obtained from James himself, as the price of his continuance on the throne, or from his family as that of their restoration to it. But what the revolution did for us was this; it broke a spell that had charmed the nation. It cut up by the roots all that theory of indefeasible right, of paramount prerogative, which had put the crown in continual opposition to the people. A contention had now subsisted for five hundred years, but particularly during the four last reigns, against the aggressions of arbitrary power. The sovereigns of this country had never

CHAP. XIV. James II.

patiently endured the control of parliament; nor was it natural for them to do so, while the two houses of parliament appeared historically, and in legal language, to derive their existence as well as privileges from the crown itself. They had at their side the pliant lawyers, who held the prerogative to be uncontrollable by statutes, a doctrine of itself destructive to any scheme of reconciliation and compromise between a king and his subjects; they had the churchmen, whose casuistry denied that the most intolerable tyranny could excuse resistance to a lawful government. These two propositions could not obtain general acceptation without rendering all national liberty precarious.

It has been always reckoned among the most difficult problems in the practical science of government, to combine an hereditary monarchy with security of freedom, so that neither the ambition of kings shall undermine the people's rights, nor the jealousy of the people overturn the throne. England had already experience of both these mischiefs. And there seemed no prospect before her but either their alternate recurrence, or a final submission to absolute power, unless by one great effort she could put the monarchy for ever beneath the law, and reduce it to an integrant portion, instead of the primary source and principle of the constitution. She must reverse the favoured maxim: A Deo rex, a rege lex, and make the crown itself appear the creature of the law. But our ancient monarchy, strong in a possession of seven centuries, and in those high and paramount prerogatives which the consenting testimony of lawyers and the submission of parliaments had recognised, a monarchy from which the house of commons and every existing peer, though not perhaps the aristocratic order itself, derived its participation in the legislature, could not be bent to the republican theories, which have been not very successfully attempted in some modern codes of constitution. It could not be held, without breaking up all the foundations of our polity, that the monarchy emanated from the parliament, or even from the people. But by the revolution and

by the act of settlement, the rights of the actual monarch, of the reigning family, were made to emanate from the parliament and the people. In technical language, in the grave and respectful theory of our constitution, the crown is still the fountain from which law and justice spring forth. Its prerogatives are in the main the same as under the Tudors and the Stuarts; but the right of the house of Brunswick to exercise them can only be deduced from the convention of 1688.

The great advantage therefore of the revolution, as I would explicitly affirm, consists in that which was reckoned its reproach by many, and its misfortune by more; that it broke the line of succession. No other remedy could have been found, according to the temper and prejudices of those times, against the unceasing conspiracy of power. But when the very tenure of power was conditional, when the crown, as we may say, gave recognizances for its good behaviour, when any violent and concerted aggressions on public liberty would have ruined those who could only resist an inveterate faction by the arms which liberty put in their hands, the several parts of the constitution were kept in cohesion by a tie far stronger than statutes, that of a common interest in its preservation. The attachment of James to popery, his infatuation, his obstinacy, his pusillanimity, nay even the death of the duke of Glocester, the life of the prince of Wales, the extraordinary permanence and fidelity of his party, were all the destined means through which our present grandeur and liberty, our dignity of thinking on matters of government, have been perfected. Those liberal tenets, which at the æra of the revolution were maintained but by one denomination of English party, and rather perhaps on authority of not very good precedents in our history, than of sound general reasoning, became in the course of the next generation almost equally the creed of the other, whose long exclusion from government taught them to solicit the people's favour, and by the time that jacobitism was extinguished, had passed into received maxims of English politics. None at least

CHAP. XIV. James II.

would care to call them in question within the walls of parliament, nor have their opponents been of much credit in the paths of literature. Yet as since the extinction of the house of Stuart's pretensions, and other events of the last half century, we have seen those exploded doctrines of indefeasible hereditary right revived under another name, and some have been willing to misrepresent the transactions of the revolution and the act of settlement as if they did not absolutely amount to a deposition of the reigning sovereign, and an election of a new dynasty by the representatives of the nation in parliament, it may be proper to state precisely the several votes, and to point out the impossibility of reconciling them to any gentler construction.

The lords spiritual and temporal, to the number of about ninety, and an assembly of all who had sat in any of king Charles's parliament, with the lord mayor and fifty of the common council, requested the prince of Orange to take upon him the administration after the king's second flight, and to issue writs for a convention in the usual manner*. This was on the 26th of December, and the convention met on the 22d of January. Their first care was to address the prince to take the administration of affairs, and disposal of the revenue into his hands, in order to give a kind of parliamentary sanction to the power he already exercised. On the 28th of January the commons, after a debate in which the friends of the late king made but a faint opposition, came to their great vote: That king James II. having endeavoured to subvert the constitution of this kingdom, by breaking the original contract between king and people, and by the advice of jesuits and other wicked persons having violated the fundamental laws, and having withdrawn himself out of the kingdom,

* Parl. Hist. v. 26. The former address on the king's first quitting London, signed by the peers and bishops, who met at Guildhall, Dec. 11, did not in express terms desire the prince of Orangeto assume the government, or to call a parliament, though it evidently tended to that result, censuring the king and extolling the prince's conduct. Id. 19. It was signed by the archbishop, his last public act. Burnet has exposed himself to the lash of Ralph by stating this address of Dec. 11 incorrectly.

has abdicated the government, and that the throne is thereby vacant. They resolved unanimously the next day, that it hath been found by experience inconsistent with the safety and welfare of this protestant kingdom to be governed by a popish prince *. This vote was a remarkable triumph of the whig party, who had contended for the exclusion bill, and on account of that endeavour to establish a principle which no one was now found to controvert, had been subjected to all the insults and reproaches of the opposite faction. The lords agreed with equal unanimity to this vote, which, though it was expressed only as an abstract proposition, led by a practical inference to the whole change that the whigs had in view. But upon the former resolution several important divisions took place. The first question put, in order to save a nominal allegiance to the late king, was, whether a regency with the administration of regal power under the style of king James II. during the life of the said king James, be the best and safest way to preserve the protestant religion and the laws of this kingdom? This was supported both by those peers who really meant to exclude the king from the enjoyment of power, such as Nottingham, its great promoter, and by those who, like Clarendon, were anxious for his return upon terms of security for their religion and liberty. The motion was lost by fifty-one to forty-nine; and this seems to have virtually decided, in the judgment of the house, that James had lost the throne †. The lords then resolved that there was an original contract between the king and people, by fifty-five to forty-six; a position that seems rather too theoretical, yet necessary at that time, as denying the divine origin of monarchy, from which its absolute and indefeasible authority had been plausibly derived. They concurred without much debate in the rest of the

* Commons Journals; Parl. Hist.

† Somerville and several other writers have not accurately stated the question, and suppose the lords to have debated whether the throne, on the hypothesis of its vacancy, should be filled by a king or a regent. Such a mode of putting the question would have been absurd. I observe that M. Mazure has been deceived by these authorities.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

commons' vote, till they came to the clause that he had abdicated the government, for which they substituted the word deserted. They next omitted the final and most important clause, that the throne was thereby vacant, by a majority of fifty-five to forty-one. This was owing to the party of lord Danby, who asserted a devolution of the crown on the princess of Orange. It seemed to be tacitly understood by both sides that the infant child was to be presumed spurious. This at least was a necessary supposition for the tories, who sought in the idle rumours of the time an excuse for abandoning his right. As to the whigs, though they were active in discrediting this unfortunate boy's legitimacy, their own broad principles of changing the line of succession rendered it, in point of argument, a superfluous inquiry. The tories, who had made little resistance to the vote of abdication, when it was proposed in the commons, recovering courage by this difference between the two houses, and perhaps by observing the king's party to be stronger out of doors than it had appeared to be, were able to muster 151 voices against 282 in favour of agreeing with the lords in leaving out the clause about the vacancy of the throne*. There was still, however, a far greater preponderance of the whigs in one part of the convention, than of the tories in the other. In the famous conference that ensued between committees of the two houses upon these amendments, it was never pretended that the word abdication was used in its ordinary sense, for a voluntary resignation of the crown. The commons did not practise so pitiful a subterfuge. Nor could the lords explicitly maintain, whatever might be the wishes of their managers, that the king was not expelled and excluded as much by their own word desertion, as by that which the lower house had employed. Their own previous vote against a regency was decisive

* Parl. Hist. 61. The chief speakers on this side were old sir Thomas Clarges, brother-in-law of general Monk, who had been distinguished as an opponent of administration under Charles and James, and Mr. Finch, brother of lord Nottingham, who had been solicitor general to Charles, but was removed in the late reign.

upon this point*. But as abdication was a gentler term than forfeiture, so desertion appeared a still softer method of expressing the same idea. Their chief objection to the former word was that it led, or might seem to lead, to the vacancy of the throne, against which their principal arguments were directed. They contended that in our government there could be no interval or vacancy, the heir's right being complete by a demise of the crown; so that it would at once render the monarchy elective if any other person were designated to the succession. The commons did not deny that the present case was one of election, though they refused to allow that the monarchy was thus rendered perpetually elective. They asked, supposing a right to descend upon the next heir, who was that heir to inherit it; and gained one of their chief advantages by the difficulty of evading this question. It was indeed evident, that if the lords should carry their amendments, an inquiry into the legitimacy of the prince of Wales could by no means be dispensed with. Unless that could be disproved more satisfactorily than they had reason to hope, they must come back to the inconveniences of a regency, with the prospect of bequeathing interminable confusion to their posterity. For if the descendants of James should continue in the Roman catholic religion, the nation might be placed in the ridiculous situation of acknowledging a dynasty of exiled kings, whose lawful prerogative would be withheld by another race of protestant regents. It was indeed strange to apply the provisional substitution of a regent in cases of infancy or imbecility of mind to a prince of mature age, and full capacity for the exercise of power. Upon the king's return to England, this delegated authority must cease of itself, unless supported by votes of parliament as violent and incompatible with the regular constitution as his deprivation of the royal title, but far less secure for the subject, whom the statute of Henry VII. would shelter in paying obedience to a king

* James is called "the late king" in a resolution of the lords on Feb. 2.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

de facto, while the fate of sir Henry Vane was an awful proof that no other name could give countenance to usurpation. A great part of the nation not thirty years before had been compelled by acts of parliament* to declare upon oath their abhorrence of that traitorous position, that arms might be taken up by the king's authority against his person or those commissioned by him, through the influence of those very tories or loyalists who had now recourse to the identical distinction between the king's natural and political capacity, for which the presbyterians had incurred so many reproaches.

In this conference, however, if the whigs had every advantage on the solid grounds of expediency, or rather political necessity, the tories were as much superior in the mere argument, either as it regarded the common sense of words, or the principles of our constitutional law. Even should we admit that an hereditary king is competent to abdicate the throne in the name of all his posterity, this could only be intended of a voluntary and formal cession, not such a constructive abandonment of his right by misconduct as the commons had imagined. The word forfeiture might better have answered this purpose; but it had seemed too great a violence on principles which it was more convenient to undermine than to assault. Nor would even forfeiture bear out by analogy the exclusion of an heir, whose right was not liable to be set aside at the ancestor's pleasure. It was only by recurring to a kind of paramount, and what I may call hyper-constitutional law, a mixture of force and regard to the national good, which is the best sanction of what is done in revolutions, that the vote of the commons could be defended. They proceeded not by the stated rules of the English government, but the general rights of mankind. They looked not so much to Magna Charta, as the original compact of society, and rejected Coke and Hale for Hooker and Grotius.

* 13 Car. II. c. i.; 17 Car. II. c. ii.

The house of lords, after this struggle against principles undoubtedly very novel in the discussions of parliament, gave way to the strength of circumstance and the steadiness of the commons. They resolved not to insist on their amendments to the original vote; and followed this up by a resolution that the prince and princess of Orange shall be declared king and queen of England, and all the dominions thereunto belonging *. But the commons with a noble patriotism delayed to concur in this hasty settlement of the crown, till they should have completed the declaration of those fundamental rights and liberties for the sake of which alone they had gone forward with this great revolution †. That declaration being at once an exposition of the misgovernment which had compelled them to dethrone the late king, and of the conditions upon which they elected his successors, was incorporated in the final resolution to which both houses came on the 13th of February, extending the limitation of the crown as far as the state of affairs required: That William and Mary, prince and princess of Orange, be, and be declared king and queen of England, France, and Ireland, and the dominions thereunto belonging, to hold the crown and dignity of the said kingdoms and dominions to them, the said prince and princess, during their lives, and the life of the survivor of them; and that the sole and full exercise of the regal power be only in and executed by the said prince of Orange, in the names of the said prince and princess, during their joint lives; and after their decease the said crown and royal dignity of the said kingdoms and dominions to be to the heirs of the

* This was carried by sixty-two to forty-seven, according to lord Clarendon, several of the tories going over, and others who had been hitherto absent coming down to vote. Forty peers protested, including twelve bishops, out of seventeen present. Trelawney, who had voted against the regency, was one of them; but not Compton, Lloyd of St. Asaph, Crewe, Sprat, or Hall; the three former, I believe, being in the majority. Lloyd had been absent when the vote passed against a regency, out of unwillingness to disagree with the majority of his brethren; but he was entirely of Burnet's mind. The votes of the bishops are not accurately stated in most books, which has induced me to mention them here. Lords' Journals, Feb. 6.

† It had been resolved, Jan. 29, that before the committee proceed to fill the throne now vacant, they will proceed to secure our religion, laws, and liberties.

CHAP. XIV. James II.

body of the said princess; for default of such issue, to the princess Anne of Denmark, and the heirs of her body; and for default of such issue, to the heirs of the body of the said prince of Orange.

Thus, to sum up the account of this extraordinary change in our established monarchy, the convention pronounced, under the slight disguise of a word unusual in the language of English law, that the actual sovereign had forfeited his right to the nation's allegiance. It swept away by the same vote the reversion of his posterity and of those who could claim the inheritance of the crown. It declared that, during an interval of nearly two months, there was no king of England, the monarchy lying, as it were, in abeyance from the 23d of December to the 13th of February. It betowed the crown on William, jointly with his wife indeed, but so that her participation of the sovereignty should be only in name *. It postponed the succession of the princess Anne during his life. Lastly, it made no provision for any future devolution of the crown in failure of issue from those to whom it was thus limited, leaving that to the wisdom of future parliaments. Yet only eight years before, nay much less, a large part of the nation had loudly proclaimed the incompetency of a full parliament,

* See Burnet's remarkable conversation with Bentinck, wherein the former warmly opposed the settlement of the crown on the prince of Orange alone, as Halifax had suggested. But nothing in it is more remarkable than that the bishop does not perceive that this was virtually done; for it would be difficult to prove that Mary's royalty differed at all from that of a queen consort, except in having her name in the style. She was exactly in the same predicament as Philip had been during his marriage with Mary I. Her admirable temper made her acquiesce in this exclusion from power, which the sterner character of her husband demanded; and with respect to the conduct of the convention, it must be observed, that the nation owed her no particular debt of gratitude, nor had she any better claim than her sister to fill a throne by election, which had been declared vacant. In fact, there was no middle course between what was done, and following the precedent of Philip, as to which Bentinck said, he fancied the prince would not like to be his wife's gentleman usher; for a divided sovereignty was a monstrous and impracticable expedient in theory, however the submissive disposition of the queen might have prevented its mischiefs. Burnet seems to have had a puzzled view of this, for he says afterwards: "it seemed to be a double-bottomed monarchy, where there were two joint sovereigns; but those who know the queen's temper and principles had no apprehensions of divided counsels, or of a distracted government." Vol. ii. 2. The convention had not trusted to the queen's temper and principles. It required a distinct act of parliament (2 W. and M. c. 6.) to enable her to exercise the regal power during the king's absence from England.

with a lawful king at its head, to alter the lineal course of succession. No whig had then openly professed the doctrine that not only a king, but an entire royal family might be set aside for public convenience. The notion of an original contract was denounced as a republican chimera. The deposing of kings was branded as the worst birth of popery and fanaticism. If other revolutions have been more extensive in their effect on the established government, few perhaps have displayed a more rapid transition of public opinion. For it cannot be reasonably doubted that the majority of the nation went along with the vote of their representatives. Such was the termination of that contest which the house of Stuart had obstinately maintained against the liberties, and of late, against the religion of England; or rather, of that far more ancient controversy between the crown and the people which had never been wholly at rest since the reign of John. During this long period, the balance, except in a few irregular intervals, had been swayed in favour of the crown; and though the government of England was always a monarchy limited by law, though it always, or at least since the admission of the commons into the legislature, partook of the three simple forms, yet the character of a monarchy was evidently prevalent over the other parts of the constitution. But since the revolution of 1688, and particularly from thence to the death of George II., it seems equally just to say, that the predominating character has been aristocratical; the prerogative being in some respects too limited, and in others too little capable of effectual exercise, to counterbalance the hereditary peerage, and that class of great territorial proprietors, who, in a political division, are to be reckoned among the proper aristocracy of the kingdom. This, however, will be more fully explained in the two succeeding chapters, which are to terminate the present work.

CHAPTER XV.

ON THE REIGN OF WILLIAM III.

Declaration of Rights—Bill of Rights—Military Force without Consent declared illegal—Discontent with the new Government—Its Causes—Incompatibility of the Revolution with received Principles—Character and Errors of William—Jealousy of the Whigs—Bill of Indemnity—Bill for restoring Corporations—Settlement of the Revenue—Appropriation of Supplies—Dissatisfaction of the King—No republican Party in Existence—William employs Tories in Ministry—Intrigues with the late King—Schemes for his Restoration—Attainder of Sir John Fenwick—Ill Success of the War—Its Expenses—Treaty of Ryswick—Jealousy of the Commons—Army reduced—Irish Forfeitures resumed—Parliamentary Inquiries—Treaties of Partition—Improvements in Constitution under William—Bill for Triennial Parliaments—Law of Treason—Statute of Edward III.—Its constructive Interpretation—Statute of William III.—Liberty of the Press—Law of Libel—Religious Toleration—Attempt at Comprehension—Schism of the Non-jurors—Laws against Roman Catholics—Act of Settlement—Limitations of Prerogative contained in it—Privy Council superseded by a Cabinet—Exclusion of Placemen and Pensioners from Parliament—Independence of Judges—Oath of Abjuration.

CHAP. XV. William.

THE Revolution is not to be considered as a mere effort of the nation on a pressing emergency to rescue itself from the violence of a particular monarch; much less as grounded upon the danger of the Anglican church, its emoluments and dignities, from the bigotry of a hostile religion. It was rather the triumph of those principles which, in the language of the present day, are denominated liberal or constitutional, over those of absolute monarchy, or of monarchy not effectually controlled by stated boundaries. It was the termination of a contest between the regal power and that of parliament, which could not have been brought to so favourable an issue by any other means. But while the chief renovation in the spirit of our government was likely to spring from breaking

the line of succession, while no positive enactments would have sufficed to give security to freedom with the legitimate race of Stuart on the throne, it would have been most culpable, and even preposterous, to permit this occasion to pass by, without asserting and defining those rights and liberties which the very indeterminate nature of the king's prerogative at common law, as well as the unequivocal extension it had lately received, must continually place in jeopardy. The house of lords, indeed, as I have observed in the last chapter, would have conferred the crown on William and Mary, leaving the redress of grievances to future arrangement; and some eminent lawyers in the commons, Maynard and Pollexfen, seem to have had apprehensions of keeping the nation too long in a state of anarchy *. But the great majority of the commons wisely resolved to go at once to the root of the nation's grievances, and show their new sovereign that he was raised to the throne for the sake of those liberties, by violating which his predecessor had forfeited it.

The declaration of rights presented to the prince of Orange by the marquis of Halifax, as speaker of the lords, in the presence of both houses, on the 18th of February, consists of three parts: a recital of the illegal and arbitrary acts committed by the late king, and of their consequent vote of abdication; a declaration, nearly following the words of the former part, that such enumerated acts are illegal; and a resolution, that the throne shall be filled by the prince and princess of Orange, according to the limitations mentioned in the last chapter. Thus the declaration of rights was indissolubly connected with the revolution-settlement, as its motive and its condition.

The lords and commons in this instrument declare: That the pretended power of suspending laws and the execution of laws, by regal authority, without consent of parliament, is illegal; That the pretended power of dispensing with laws by regal authority,

* Parl. Hist. v. 54.

CHAP. XV. William.

as it hath been assumed and exercised of late, is illegal; That the commission for creating the late court of commissioners for ecclesiastical causes, and all other commissions and courts of the like nature, are illegal and pernicious; That levying of money for or to the use of the crown, by pretence of prerogative, without grant of parliament, for longer time or in any other manner than the same is or shall be granted, is illegal; That it is the right of the subjects to petition the king, and that all commitments or prosecutions for such petitions are illegal; That the raising or keeping a standing army within the kingdom in time of peace, unless it be with consent of parliament, is illegal; That the subjects which are protestants may have arms for their defence suitable to their condition, and as allowed by law; That elections of members of parliament ought to be free; That the freedom of speech or debates, or proceedings in parliament, ought not to be impeached or questioned in any court or place out of parliament; That excessive bail ought not to be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted; That juries ought to be duly impanelled and returned, and that jurors which pass upon men in trials of high treason ought to be freeholders; That all grants and promises of fines and forfeitures of particular persons, before conviction, are illegal and void; And that for redress of all grievances, and for the amending, strengthening, and preserving of the laws, parliaments ought to be held frequently *.

This declaration was, some months afterwards, confirmed by a regular act of the legislature in the bill of rights, which establishes at the same time the limitation of the crown according to the vote of both houses, and adds the important provision; That all persons who shall hold communion with the church of Rome, or shall marry a papist, shall be excluded, and for ever incapable to possess, inherit, or enjoy the crown and government of this realm; and in all such cases, the people of these realms shall be absolved

* Parl. Hist. v. 108.

from their allegiance, and the crown shall descend to the next heir. This was as near an approach to a generalization of the principle of resistance as could be admitted with any security for public order.

The bill of rights contained only one clause extending rather beyond the propositions laid down in the declaration. This relates to the dispensing power, which the lords had been unwilling absolutely to condemn. They softened the general assertion of its illegality, sent up from the other house, by inserting the words "as it has been exercised of late*." In the bill of rights, therefore, a clause was introduced, that no dispensation by non obstante to any statute should be allowed, except in such cases as should be specially provided for by a bill to be passed during the present session. This reservation went to satisfy the scruples of the lords, who did not agree without difficulty to the complete abolition of a prerogative, so long recognized, and in many cases so convenient†. But the palpable danger of permitting it to exist in its indefinite state, subject to the interpretation of time-serving judges, prevailed with the commons over this consideration of conveniency; and though in the next parliament the judges were ordered by the house of lords to draw a bill for the king's dispensing in such cases wherein they should find it necessary, and for abrogating such laws as had been usually dispensed with and were become useless, the subject seems to have received no further attention‡.

Except in this article of the dispensing prerogative, we cannot say, on comparing the bill of rights with what is proved to be the law by statutes, or generally esteemed to be such on the authority of our best writers, that it took away any legal power of the crown, or enlarged the limits of popular and parliamentary privilege. The most questionable proposition, though at the same

* Journals, 11 and 12 Feb. 1688-9.
† Parl. Hist. 345.
‡ Lords' Journals, 22 Nov. 1689.

CHAP. XV. William.

time one of the most important, was that which asserts the illegality of a standing army in time of peace, unless with consent of parliament. It seems difficult to perceive in what respect this infringed on any private man's right, or by what clear reason, for no statute could be pretended, the king was debarred from enlisting soldiers by voluntary contract for the defence of his dominions, especially after an express law had declared the sole power over the militia, without giving any definition of that word, to reside in the crown. This had never been expressly maintained by Charles II.'s parliaments; though the general repugnance of the nation to what was certainly an innovation might have provoked a body of men, who did not always measure their words, to declare its illegality *. It was, however, at least

* The guards retained out of the old army disbanded at the king's return have been already mentioned to have amounted to about 5000 men, though some assert their number at first to have been considerably less. No objection seems to have been made at the time to the continuance of these regiments. But in 1667, on the insult offered to the coasts by the Dutch fleet, a great panic arising, 12,000 fresh troops were hastily levied. The commons, on July 25, came to an unanimous resolution, that his majesty be humbly desired by such members as are his privy council, that when a peace is concluded, the new-raised forces be disbanded. The king four days after, in a speech to both houses, said, he wondered what one thing he had done since his coming into England, to persuade any sober person that he did intend to govern by a standing army; he said he was more an Englishman than so. He desired for as much as concerned him, to preserve the laws, &c. Parl. Hist. iv. 363. Next session the two houses thanked him for having disbanded the late raised forces. Id. 369. But in 1673, during the second Dutch war, a considerable force having been levied, the house of commons, after a warm debate, resolved, Nov. 3, that a standing army was a grievance. Id. 604. And on February following, that the continuing of any standing forces in this nation, other than the militia, is a great grievance and vexation to the people; and that this house do humbly petitition his majesty to cause immediately to be disbanded that part of them that were raised since Jan. 1, 1663. Id. 665. This was done not long afterwards; but early in 1678, on the pretext of entering into a war with France, he suddenly raised an army of 20,000 men, or more according to some accounts, which gave so much alarm to the parliament, that they would only vote supplies on condition that these troops should be immediately disbanded. Id. 985. The king however employed the money without doing so, and maintained in the next session, that it had been necessary to keep them on foot, intimating at the same time that he was now willing to comply, if the house thought it expedient to disband the troops; which they accordingly voted with unanimity to be necessary for the safety of his majesty's person and preservation of the peace of the government. Nov. 25. Id. 1049. James showed in his speech to parliament, Nov. 9, 1685, that he intended to keep on foot a standing army. Id. 1371. But though that house of commons was very differently composed from those in his brother's reign, and voted as large a supply as the king required, they resolved that a bill be brought in to render the militia more

unconstitutional, by which, as distinguished from illegal, I mean a novelty of much importance, tending to endanger the established laws. And it is manifest that the king could never inflict penalties by martial law, or generally by any other course, on his troops, nor quarter them on the inhabitants, nor cause them to interfere with the civil authorities; so that, even if the proposition so absolutely expressed may be somewhat too wide, it still should be considered as virtually correct*. But its distinct assertion in the bill of rights put a most essential restraint on the monarchy, and rendered it in effect for ever impossible to employ any direct force or intimidation against the established laws and liberties of the people.

A revolution so thoroughly remedial, and accomplished with so little cost of private suffering, so little of angry punishment or oppression of the vanquished, ought to have been hailed with unbounded thankfulness and satisfaction. The nation's deliverer and chosen sovereign, in himself the most magnanimous and heroic character of that age, might have expected no return but

useful; an oblique and timid hint of their disapprobation of a regular force, against which several members had spoken.

I do not find that any one, even in debate, goes the length of denying that the king might by his prerogative maintain a regular army; none at least of the resolutions in the commons can be said to have that effect.

* It is expressly against the petition of right, to quarter troops on the citizens, or to inflict any punishment by martial law. No court martial, in fact, can have any coercive jurisdiction except by statute, unless we should resort to the old tribunal of the constable and marshal. And that this was admitted, even in bad times, we may learn by an odd case in sir Thomas Jones's Reports, 147. (Pasch. 33 Car. 2. 1681.) An action was brought for assault and false imprisonment. The defendant pleaded that he was lieutenant-governor of the isle of Scilly, and that plaintiff was a soldier belonging to the garrison, and that it was the ancient custom of the castle, that if any soldier refused to render obedience, the governor might punish him by imprisonment for a reasonable time, which he had therefore done. The plaintiff demurred, and had judgment in his favour. By demurring, he put it to the court to determine whether this plea, which is obviously fabricated in order to cover the want of any general right to maintain discipline in this manner, were valid in point of law; which they decided, as it appears, in the negative.

In the next reign, however, an attempt was made to punish deserters capitally, not by a court martial, but on the authority of an ancient act of parliament. Chief-justice Herbert is said to have resigned his place in the king's bench rather than come into this. Wright succeeded him, and two deserters, having been convicted, were executed in London. Ralph, 961. I cannot discover that there was any thing illegal in the proceeding, and therefore question a little Herbert's motive. See 3 Inst. 96.

CHAP. XV. William.

admiration and gratitude. Yet this was very far from the case; in no period of time under the Stuarts were public discontent and opposition of parliament more prominent than in the reign of William III.; and that high-souled prince enjoyed far less of his subjects' affection than Charles II. No part of our history, perhaps, is read upon the whole with less satisfaction than these thirteen years, during which he sat upon his elective throne. It will be sufficient for me to sketch generally the leading causes, and the errors both of the prince and people, which hindered the blessings of the revolution from being duly appreciated by its contemporaries.

A. D. The votes of the two houses, that James had abdicated, or, in plainer words, forfeited his royal authority, that the crown was vacant, that one out of the regular line of succession should be raised to it, were so untenable by any known law, so repugnant to the principles of the established church, that a nation accustomed to think upon matters of government only as lawyers and churchmen dictated could not easily reconcile them to its preconceived notions of duty. The first burst of resentment against the late king was mitigated by his fall; compassion and even confidence began to take place of it; his adherents, some denying or extenuating the faults of his administration, others more artfully representing them as capable of redress by legal measures, having recovered from their consternation, took advantage of the necessary delay before the meeting of the convention, and of the time consumed in its debates, to publish pamphlets and circulate rumours in his behalf*. Thus, at the moment when

* See several in the Somers Tracts, vol. x. One of these, a Letter to a Member of the Convention, by Dr. Sherlock, is very ably written, and puts all the consequences of a change of government, as to popular dissatisfaction, &c. much as they turned out, though of course failing to show that a treaty with the king would be less open to objection. Sherlock declined for a time to take the oaths, but complying afterwards, and writing in vindication, or at least excuse of the revolution, incurred the hostility of the jacobites, and impaired his own reputation by so interested a want of consistency; for he had been the most eminent champion of passive obedience. Even the distinction he found out, of the lawfulness of allegiance to a king de facto, was contrary to his former doctrine.

William and Mary were proclaimed, though it is highly probable that a majority of the kingdom sustained the bold votes of its representatives, there was yet a very powerful minority who believed the constitution to be most violently shaken, if not irretrievably destroyed, and the rightful sovereign to have been excluded by usurpation. The clergy were moved by pride and shame, by the just apprehension that their influence over the people would be impaired, by jealousy or hatred of the non-conformists, to deprecate so practical a confutation of the doctrines they had preached, especially when an oath of allegiance to their new sovereign came to be imposed; and they had no alternative but to resign their benefices, or wound their reputation and consciences by submission upon some casuistical pretext *. Eight bishops, including the primate and several of those who had been foremost in the defence of the church during the late reign, with about four hundred clergy, some of them highly distinguished, chose the more honourable course of refusing the new oaths; and thus began the schism of the non-jurors, more mischievous in its commencement than its continuance, and not so dangerous to the government of William III. and George I. as the false submission of less sincere men †.

* 1 W. and M. c. 8.

† The necessity of excluding men so conscientious, and several of whom had very recently sustained so conspicuously the brunt of the battle against king James, was very painful; and motives of policy, as well as generosity, were not wanting in favour of some indulgence towards them. On the other hand, it was dangerous to admit such a reflection on the new settlement, as would be cast by its enemies, if the clergy, especially the bishops, should be excused from the oath of allegiance. The house of lords made an amendment in the act requiring this oath, dispensing with it in the case of ecclesiastical persons, unless they should be called upon by the privy council. This, it was thought, would furnish a security for their peaceable demeanour, without shocking the people and occasioning a dangerous schism. But the commons resolutely opposed this amendment, as an unfair distinction, and derogatory to the king's title. Parl. Hist. 218. Lords' Journals, 17 April, 1689. The clergy, however, had six months more time allowed them, in order to take the oath, than the possessors of lay offices.

Upon the whole, I think the reasons for deprivation greatly preponderated. Public prayers for the king by name form part of our liturgy; and it was surely impossible to dispense with the clergy's reading them, which was as obnoxious as the oath of allegiance. Thus the beneficed priests must have been excluded; and it was hardly required to make an exception for the sake of a few bishops, even if difficulties of the same kind would not have occurred in the exer-

CHAP. XV. William.

It seems undeniable, that the strength of this jacobite faction sprung from the want of apparent necessity for the change of government. Extreme oppression produces an impetuous tide of resistance, which bears away the reasonings of the casuists. But the encroachments of James II., being rather felt in prospect than much actual injury, left men in a calmer temper, and disposed to weigh somewhat nicely the nature of the proposed remedy. The revolution was, or at least seemed to be, a case of political expediency, and expediency is always a matter of uncertain argument. In many respects it was far better conducted, more peaceably, more moderately, with less passion and severity towards the guilty, with less mixture of democratic turbulence, with less innovation on the regular laws, than if it had been that extreme case of necessity which some are apt to require. But it was obtained on this account with less unanimity and heartfelt concurrence of the entire nation.

B. The demeanour of William, always cold and sometimes harsh, his foreign origin (a sort of crime in English eyes) and foreign favourites, the natural and almost laudable prejudice against one who had risen by the misfortunes of a very near relation, a desire of power not very judiciously displayed by him, conspired to keep alive this disaffection; and the opposite party, regardless of all the decencies of political lying, took care to aggravate it by the

cise of their jurisdiction, which hangs upon, and has a perpetual reference to the supremacy of the crown.

The king was impowered to reserve a third part of the value of their benefices to any twelve of the recusant clergy. 1 W. and M. c. 8. s. 16. But this could only be done at the expense of their successors; and the behaviour of the non-jurors, who strained every nerve in favour of the dethroned king, did not recommend them to the government. The deprived bishops, though many of them through their late behaviour were deservedly esteemed, cannot be reckoned among the eminent characters of our church for learning or capacity. Sancroft, the most distinguished of them, had not made any remarkable figure, and none of the rest had any pretensions to literary credit. Those who filled their places were incomparably superior. Among the non-juring clergy a certain number were considerable men; but upon the whole, the well-affected part of the church, not only at the revolution but for fifty years afterwards, contained by far its most useful and able members. Yet the effect of this expulsion was highly unfavourable to the new government; and it required all the influence of a latitudinarian school of divinity, led by Locke, which was very strong among the laity under William, to counteract it.

vilest calumnies against one, who, though not exempt from errors, must be accounted the greatest man of his own age. It is certain that his government was in very considerable danger for three or four years after the revolution, and even to the peace of Ryswick. The change appeared so marvellous, and contrary to the bent of men's expectation, that it could not be permanent. Hence he was surrounded by the timid and the treacherous, by those who meant to have merits to plead after a restoration, and those who meant at least to be secure. A new and revolutionary government is seldom fairly dealt with. Mankind, accustomed to forgive almost every thing in favour of legitimate prescriptive power, exact an ideal faultlessness from that which claims allegiance on the score of its utility. The personal failings of its rulers, the negligences of their administration, even the inevitable privations and difficulties which the nature of human affairs, or the misconduct of their predecessors create, are imputed to them with invidious minuteness. Those who deem their own merit unrewarded become always a numerous and implacable class of adversaries; those whose schemes of public improvement have not been followed think nothing gained by the change, and return to a restless censoriousness, in which they have been accustomed to place delight. With all these it was natural that William should have to contend; but we cannot with justice impute all the unpopularity of his administration to the disaffection of one party, or the fickleness and ingratitude of another. It arose in no slight degree from errors of his own.

The king had been raised to the throne by the vigour and zeal of the whigs; but the opposite party were so nearly upon an equality in both houses, that it would have been difficult to frame his government on an exclusive basis. It would also have been highly impolitic, and, with respect to some few persons, ungrateful, to put a slight upon those who had an undeniable majority in the most powerful classes. William acted, therefore, on a wise and liberal principle, in bestowing offices of trust on lord Danby, so

CHAP. XV. William.

meritorious in the revolution, and on lord Nottingham, whose probity was unimpeached; while he gave the whigs, as was due, a decided preponderance in his council. Many of them, however, with that indiscriminating acrimony which belongs to all factions, could not endure the elevation of men who had complied with the court too long, and seemed by their tardy opposition * to be rather the patriots of the church than of civil liberty. They remembered that Danby had been impeached as a corrupt and dangerous minister; that Halifax had been involved, at least by holding a confidential office at the time, in the last and worst part of Charles's reign. They saw Godolphin, who had concurred in the commitment of the bishops, and every other measure of the late king, still in the treasury; and though they could not reproach Nottingham with any misconduct, were shocked that his conspicuous opposition to the new settlement should be rewarded with the post of secretary of state. The mismanagement of affairs in Ireland during 1689, which was very glaring, furnished specious grounds for suspicion that the king was betrayed †. It is probable that he was so, though not at that time by the chiefs of his ministry. This was the beginning of that dissatisfaction with the government of William, on the part of those who had the most zeal for his throne, which eventually became far more harassing than the conspiracies of his real enemies. Halifax gave way to the prejudices of the commons, and retired from power. These prejudices were no doubt unjust, as they respected a man so sound in principle, though not uniform in conduct, and who had withstood the arbitrary maxims of Charles and James in that

* Burnet. Ralph, 174. 179.

† The parliamentary debates are full of complaints as to the mismanagement of all things in Ireland. These might be thought hasty or factious, but marshal Schomberg's letters to the king yield them strong confirmation. Dalrymple, Appendix, 26, &c. William's resolution to take the Irish war on himself saved not only that country but England. Our own constitution was won on the Boyne. The star of the house of Stuart grew pale for ever on that illustrious day, when James displayed again the pusillanimity which had cost him his English crown. Yet the best friends of William dissuaded him from going into Ireland, so imminent did the peril appear at home. Dalrymple, Id. 97. "Things," says Burnet, "were in a very ill disposition towards a fatal turn."

cabinet of which he unfortunately continued too long a member. But his fall is a warning to English statesmen, that they will be deemed responsible to their country for measures which they countenance by remaining in office, though they may resist them in council.

The same honest warmth which impelled the whigs to murmur at the employment of men sullied by their compliance with the court made them unwilling to concur in the king's desire of a total amnesty. They retained the bill of indemnity in the commons; and excepting some by name, and many more by general clauses, gave their adversaries a pretext for alarming all those whose conduct had not been irreproachable. Clemency is indeed for the most part the wisest, as well as the most generous policy; yet it might seem dangerous to pass over with unlimited forgiveness that servile obedience to arbitrary power, especially in the judges, which, as it springs from a base motive, is best controlled by the fear of punishment. But some of the late king's instruments had fled with him, others were lost and ruined; it was better to follow the precedent set at the restoration, than to give them a chance of regaining public sympathy by a prosecution out of the regular course of law *. In one instance, the expulsion of sir Robert Sawyer from the house, the majority displayed a just resentment against one of the most devoted adherents of the prerogative, so long as civil liberty alone was in danger. Sawyer had been latterly very conspicuous in defence of the church; and it was expedient to let the nation see, that the days of Charles II. were not entirely forgotten †. Nothing was concluded as to the

* See the debates on this subject in the Parliamentary History, which is a transcript from Anchitel Grey. The whigs, or at least some hot-headed men among them, were certainly too much actuated by a vindictive spirit, and consumed too much time on this necessary bill.

† The prominent instance of Sawyer's delinquency, which caused his expulsion, was his refusal of a writ of error to sir Thomas Armstrong. Parl. Hist. 516. It was notorious, that Armstrong suffered by a legal murder; and an attorney-general in such a case could not be reckoned as free from personal responsibility as an ordinary advocate, who maintains a cause for his fee. The first resolution had been to give reparation out of the estates of the judges and

CHAP. XV. William.

indemnity in this parliament; but in the next, William took the matter into his own hands by sending down an act of grace.

I scarcely venture, at this distance from the scene, to pronounce an opinion as to the clause introduced by the whigs into a bill for restoring corporations, which excluded for the space of seven years all who had acted or even concurred in surrendering charters from municipal offices of trust. This was no doubt intended to maintain their own superiority by keeping the church or tory faction out of corporations. It evidently was not calculated to assuage the prevailing animosities. But on the other hand, the cowardly submissiveness of the others to the quo warrantos seemed at least to deserve this censure; and the measure could by no means be put on a level in point of rigour with the corporation act of Charles II. As the dissenters, unquestioned friends of the revolution, had been universally excluded by that

prosecutors to Armstrong's family; which was, perhaps rightly, abandoned.

The house of lords, who, having a power to examine upon oath, are supposed to sift the truth in such inquiries better than the commons, were not remiss in endeavouring to bring the instruments of Stuart tyranny to justice. Besides the committee appointed on the very second day of the convention, 23 Jan. 1689, to investigate the supposed circumstances of suspicion as to the death of lord Essex, a committee renewed afterwards, and formed of persons by no means likely to have abandoned any path that might lead to the detection of guilt in the late king, another was appointed in the second session of the same parliament (Lords' Journals, 2 Nov. 1689) "to consider who were the advisers and prosecutors of the *murders* of lord Russell, col. Sidney, Armstrong, Cornish, &c. and who were the advisers of issuing out writs of quo warrantos against corporations, and who were their regulators, and also who were the public assertors of the dispensing power." The examinations taken before this committee are printed in the Lords' Journals, 20 Dec. 1689; and there certainly does not appear any want of zeal to convict the guilty. But neither the law nor the proofs would serve them. They could establish nothing against Dudley North, the tory sheriff of 1683, except that he had named lord Russell's panel himself, which, though irregular and doubtless ill-designed, had unluckily a precedent in the conduct of the famous whig sheriff, Slingsby Bethell; a man who, like North, though on the opposite side, cared more for his party than for decency and justice. Lord Halifax was a good deal hurt in character by this report, and never made a considerable figure afterwards. Burnet, 34. His mortification led him to engage in an intrigue with the late king, which was discovered; yet I suspect that, with his usual versatility, he again abandoned that cause before his death. Ralph, 467. The act of grace (2 W. and M. c. 10.) contained a small number of exceptions, too many indeed for its name; but probably there would have been difficulty in prevailing on the houses to pass it generally; and no one was ever molested afterwards on account of his conduct before the revolution.

statute, and the tories had lately been strong enough to prevent their readmission, it was not unfair for the opposite party, or rather for the government, to provide some security against men, who, in spite of their oaths of allegiance, were not likely to have thoroughly abjured their former principles. This clause, which modern historians generally condemn as oppressive, had the strong support of Mr. Somers, then solicitor-general. It was, however, lost through the court's conjunction with the tories in the lower house, and the bill itself fell to the ground in the upper; so that those who had come into corporations by very ill means retained their power, to the great disadvantage of the revolution party, as the next elections made appear *.

But if the whigs behaved in these instances with too much of that passion which, though offensive and mischievous in its excess, is yet almost inseparable from patriotism and incorrupt sentiments in so numerous an assembly as the house of commons, they amply redeemed their glory by what cost them the new king's favour, their wise and admirable settlement of the revenue.

The first parliament of Charles II. had fixed on 1,200,000l. as the ordinary revenue of the crown, sufficient in times of no peculiar exigency for the support of its dignity and for the public defence. For this they provided various resources; the hereditary excise on liquors, granted in lieu of the king's feudal rights, other excise and custom duties granted for his life, the post-office, the crown lands, the tax called hearth-money, or two shillings for every house, and some of smaller consequence. These in the beginning of that reign fell short of the estimate, but before its termination, by the improvement of trade and stricter management of the customs, they certainly exceeded that sum. For the revenue of James from these sources, on an average of the four

* Parl. Hist. 508, et post. Journals, 2 and 10 Jan. 1689-90. Burnet's account is confused and inaccurate, as is very commonly the case: he trusted, I believe, almost entirely to his memory. Ralph and Somerville are scarce ever candid towards the whigs in this reign.

CHAP. XV. William.

years of his reign, amounted to 1,500,964l.; to which something more than 400,000l. is to be added for the produce of duties imposed for eight years by his parliament of 1685*.

William appears to have entertained no doubt, that this great revenue, as well as all the power and prerogative of the crown, became vested in himself as king of England, or at least ought to be instantly settled by parliament according to the usual method†. There could indeed be no pretence for disputing his right to the hereditary excise, though this seems to have been questioned in debate; but the commons soon displayed a considerable reluctance to grant the temporary revenue for the king's life. This had been done for several centuries in the first parliament of every reign. But the accounts for which they called on this occasion exhibited so considerable an increase of the receipts on one hand, so alarming a disposition of the expenditure on the other, that they deemed it expedient to restrain a liberality, which was not only likely to go beyond their intention, but to place them, at least in future times, too much within the power of the crown. Its average expenses appeared to have been 1,700,000l. Of this 610,000l. was the charge of the late king's army, and 83,493l. of the ordnance. Nearly 90,000l. was set under the suspicious head of secret service, imprested to Mr. Guy, secretary of the treasury‡. Thus it was evident, that, far from sinking below the proper level, as had been the general complaint of the court in the Stuart reigns, the revenue was greatly and dangerously above it; and its excess might either be consumed in unnecessary luxury, or be diverted to the worse purposes of despotism and corruption.

* Parl. Hist. 150.

† Burnet, 13. Ralph, 138. 194. Some of the lawyers endeavoured to persuade the house, that the revenue having been granted to James for his life, devolved to William during the natural life of the former; a technical subtlety against the spirit of the grant. Somers seems not to have come into this; but it is hard to collect the sense of speeches from Grey's memoranda. Parl. Hist. 139. It is not to be understood that the tories universally were in favour of a grant for life, and the whigs against it. But as the latter were the majority, it was in their power, speaking of them as a party, to have carried the measure.

‡ Parl. Hist. 187.

They had indeed just declared a standing army to be illegal. But there could be no such security for the observance of this declaration, as the want of means in the crown to maintain one. Their experience of the interminable contention about supply, which had been fought with various success between the kings of England and their parliaments for some hundred years, dictated a course to which they wisely and steadily adhered, and to which perhaps above all other changes at this revolution, the augmented authority of the house of commons must be ascribed.

They began by voting that 1,200,000l. should be the annual revenue of the crown in time of peace; and that one half of this should be appropriated to the maintenance of the king's government and royal family, or what is now called the civil list, the other to the public defence and contingent expenditure *. The breaking out of an eight years' war rendered it impossible to carry into effect these resolutions as to the peace establishment; but they did not lose sight of their principle, that the king's regular and domestic expenses should be determined by a fixed annual sum, distinct from the other departments of public service. They speedily improved upon their original scheme of a definite revenue, by taking a more close and constant superintendence of these departments, the navy, army, and ordnance. Estimates of the probable expenditure were regularly laid before them, and the supply granted was strictly appropriated to each particular service.

This great and fundamental principle, as it has long been justly considered, that the money voted by parliament is appropriated, and can only be applied, to certain specified heads of expenditure, was introduced, as I have before mentioned, in the reign of Charles II., and generally, though not in every instance, adopted by his parliament. The unworthy house of commons that sat in 1685, not content with a needless augmentation of the revenue,

* Parl. Hist. 193.

CHAP. XV. William.

took credit with the king for not having appropriated their supplies. But from the revolution it has been the invariable usage. The lords of the treasury, by a clause annually repeated in the appropriation act of every session, are forbidden, under severe penalties, to order by their warrant any monies in the exchequer, so appropriated, from being issued for any other service, and the officers of the exchequer to obey any such warrant. This has given the house of commons so effectual a control over the executive power, or, more truly speaking, has rendered it so much a participator in that power, that no administration can possibly subsist without its concurrence; nor can the session of parliament be intermitted for an entire year, without leaving both the naval and military force of the kingdom unprovided for. In time of war, or in circumstances that may induce war, it has not been very uncommon to deviate a little from the rule of appropriation, by a grant of considerable sums on a vote of credit, which the crown is thus enabled to apply at its discretion during the recess of parliament; and we have had also too frequent experience, that the charges of public service have not been brought within the limits of the last year's appropriation. But the general principle has not perhaps been often transgressed without sufficient reason; and a house of commons would be deeply responsible to the country, if through supine confidence it should abandon that high privilege which has made it the arbiter of court factions, and the regulator of foreign connexions. It is to this transference of the executive government, for the phrase is hardly too strong, from the crown to the two houses of parliament, and especially the commons, that we owe the proud attitude which England has maintained since the revolution, so extraordinarily dissimilar, in the eyes of Europe, to her condition under the Stuarts. The supplies meted out with niggardly caution by former parliaments to sovereigns whom they could not trust, have flowed with redundant profuseness, when they could judge of their necessity and direct their application. Doubtless the

demand has always been fixed by the ministers of the crown, and its influence has retrieved, in some degree, the loss of authority; but it is still true that no small portion of the executive power, according to the established laws and customs of our government, has passed into the hands of that body which prescribes the application of the revenue, as well as investigates at its pleasure every act of the administration *.

The convention parliament continued the revenue, as it already stood, until December, 1690 †. Their successors complied so far with the king's expectation, as to grant the excise duties, besides those that were hereditary, for the lives of William and Mary, and that of the survivor ‡. The customs they only continued for four years. They provided extraordinary supplies for the conduct of the war on a scale of armament, and consequently of expenditure, unparalleled in the annals of England. But the hesitation, and, as the king imagined, the distrust they had shown in settling the ordinary revenue, sunk deep into his mind, and chiefly alienated him from the whigs, who were stronger and more conspicuous than their adversaries in the two sessions of 1689. If we believe Burnet, he felt so indignantly what appeared a systematic endeavour to reduce his power below the ancient standard of the monarchy, that he was inclined to abandon the government, and leave the nation to itself. He knew well, as he told that bishop, what was to be alleged for the two forms of government, a monarchy and a commonwealth, and would not determine which was prefer-

* Hatsell's Precedents, iii. 80 et alibi. Hargrave's Juridical Arguments, i. 394.

† 1 W. and M. sess. 2. c. 2. This was intended as a provisional act "for the preventing all disputes and questions concerning the collecting, levying, and assuring the public revenue due and payable in the reigns of the late kings Charles II. and James II., whilst the better settling the same is under the consideration of the present parliament."

‡ 2 W. and M. c. 3. As a mark of respect, no doubt, to the king and queen, it was provided that if both should die, the successor should only enjoy this revenue of excise till December, 1693. In the debate on this subject in the new parliament, the tories, except Seymour, were for settling the revenue during the king's life; but many whigs spoke on the other side. Parl. Hist. 552. The latter justly urged, that the amount of the revenue ought to be well known before they proceed to settle it for an indefinite time. The tories, at that time, had great hopes of the king's favour, and took this method of securing it.

CHAP. XV. William.

able; but of all forms he thought the worst was that of a monarchy without the necessary powers *.

The desire of rule in William III. was as magnanimous and public-spirited as ambition can ever be in a human bosom. It was the consciousness not only of having devoted himself to a great cause, the security of Europe, and especially of Great Britain and Holland, against unceasing aggression, but of resources in his own firmness and sagacity which no other person possessed. A commanding force, a copious revenue, a supreme authority in councils, were not sought, as by the crowd of kings, for the enjoyment of selfish vanity and covetousness, but as the only sure instruments of success in his high calling, in the race of heroic enterprise which Providence had appointed for the elect champion of civil and religious liberty. We can hardly wonder that he should not quite render justice to the motives of those who seemed to impede his strenuous energies; that he should resent as ingratitude those precautions against abuse of power by him, the recent deliverer of the nation, which it had never called for against those who had sought to enslave it.

But reasonable as this apology may be, it was still an unhappy error of William that he did not sufficiently weigh the circumstances which had elevated him to the English throne, and the alteration they had inevitably made in the relations between the crown and the parliament. Chosen upon the popular principle of general freedom and public good, on the ruins of an ancient hereditary throne, he could expect to reign on no other terms than as the chief of a commonwealth, with no other authority than the sense of the nation and of parliament deemed congenial to the new constitution. The debt of gratitude to him was indeed immense, and not sufficiently remembered; but it was due for having enabled the nation to regenerate itself, and to place barriers against future assaults, to provide securities against future mis-

* Burnet, 35.

government. No one could seriously assert that James II. was the only sovereign of whom there had been cause to complain. In almost every reign, on the contrary, which our history records, the innate love of arbitrary power had produced more or less of oppression. The revolution was chiefly beneficial as it gave a stronger impulse to the desire of political liberty, and rendered it more extensively attainable. It was certainly not for the sake of replacing James by William with equal powers of doing injury, that the purest and wisest patriots engaged in that cause, but as the sole means of making a royal government permanently compatible with freedom and justice. The bill of rights had pretended to do nothing more than stigmatise some recent proceedings; were the representatives of the nation to stop short of other measures because they seemed novel and restrictive of the crown's authority, when for the want of them the crown's authority had nearly freed itself from all restriction? Such was their true motive for limiting the revenue, and such the ample justification of those important statutes enacted in the course of this reign, which the king, unfortunately for his reputation and peace of mind, too jealously resisted.

It is by no means unusual to find mention of a commonwealth or republican party, as if it existed in some force at the time of the revolution, and throughout the reign of William III.; nay some writers, such as Hume, Dalrymple and Somerville, have, by putting them in a sort of balance against the Jacobites, as the extremes of the whig and tory factions, endeavoured to persuade us that the one was as substantial and united a body as the other. It may, however, be confidently asserted, that no republican party had any existence; if by that word we are to understand a set of men whose object was the abolition of our limited monarchy. There might unquestionably be persons, especially among the independent sect, who cherished the memory of what they called the good old cause, and thought civil liberty irreconcilable with any form of regal government. But these were too inconsiderable

CHAP. XV. William.

and too far removed from political influence to deserve the appellation of a party. I believe it would be difficult to name five individuals to whom even a speculative preference of a commonwealth may with great probability be ascribed. Were it otherwise, the numerous pamphlets of this period would bear witness to their activity. Yet with the exception, perhaps, of one or two, and those rather equivocal, we should search, I suspect, the collections of that time in vain for any manifestations of a republican spirit. If indeed an ardent zeal to see the prerogative effectually restrained, to vindicate that high authority of the house of commons over the executive administration which it has in fact claimed and exercised, to purify the house itself from corrupt influence, if a tendency to dwell upon the popular origin of civil society, and the principles which Locke, above other writers, had brought again into fashion, be called republican, as in a primary but less usual sense of the word they may, no one can deny that this spirit eminently characterised the age of William III. And schemes of reformation emanating from this source were sometimes offered to the world, trenching more perhaps on the established constitution than either necessity demanded or prudence warranted. But these were anonymous and of little influence, nor did they ever extend to the absolute subversion of the throne*.

William, however, was very early led to imagine, whether through the insinuations of lord Nottingham, as Burnet pretends, or the natural prejudice of kings against those who do not comply with them, that there not only existed a republican party, but that it numbered many supporters among the principal whigs. He dissolved the convention-parliament, and gave his confidence for

* See the Somers Tracts, but still more the Collection of State Tracts in the time of William III., in three volumes folio. These are almost entirely on the whig side, and many of them, as I have intimated in the text, lean so far toward republicanism, as to assert the original sovereignty of the people in very strong terms, and to propose various changes in the constitution, such as a greater equality in the representation. But I have not observed any one which recommends, even covertly, the abolition of hereditary monarchy.

some time to the opposite faction *. But among these a real disaffection to his government prevailed so widely, that he could with difficulty select men sincerely attached to it. The majority professed only to pay allegiance as to a sovereign de facto, and violently opposed the bill of recognition in 1690, both on account of the words rightful and lawful king which it applied to William, and of its declaring the laws passed in the last parliament to have been good and valid †. They had influence enough with the king to defeat a bill proposed by the whigs, by which an oath of ab-

* The sudden dissolution of this parliament cost him the hearts of those who had made him king. Besides several temporary writings, especially the Impartial Inquiry of the Earl of Warrington, an honest and intrepid whig (Ralph, ii. 188), we have a letter from Mr. Wharton (afterwards marquis of Wharton) to the king, in Dalrymple, Appendix, p. 80, on the change in his councils at this time, written in a strain of bold and bitter expostulation, especially on the score of his employing those who had been the servants of the late family, alluding probably to Godolphin, who was indeed open to much exception. "I wish," says lord Shrewsbury in the same year, "you could have established your party upon the moderate and honest-principled men of both factions; but as there be a necessity of declaring, I shall make no difficulty to own my sense, that your majesty and the government are much more safe depending upon the whigs, whose designs, if any against, are improbable and remoter, than with the tories, who many of them, questionless, would bring in king James; and the very best of them, I doubt, have a regency still in their heads; for though I agree them to be the properest instruments to carry the prerogative high, yet I fear they have so unreasonable a veneration for monarchy, as not altogether to approve the foundation yours is built upon." Shrewsbury Correspond. 15.

† Parl. Hist. 575. Ralph, 194. Burnet, 41. Two remarkable protests were entered on the journals of the lords on occasion of this bill; one by the whigs, who were out-numbered on a particular division, and another by the tories on the passing of the bill. They are both vehemently expressed, and are among the not very numerous instances wherein the original whig and tory principles have been opposed to each other. The tory protest was expunged by order of the house. It is signed by eleven peers and six bishops, among whom were Stillingfleet and Lloyd. The whig protest has but ten signatures. The convention had already passed an act for preventing doubts concerning their own authority, 1 W. and M. stat. 1. c. 1. which could of course have no more validity than they were able to give it. This bill had been much opposed by the tories. Parl. Hist. v. 122.

In order to make this clearer, it should be observed, that the convention which restored Charles II. not having been summoned by his writ, was not reckoned by some royalist lawyers capable of passing valid acts; and consequently all the statutes enacted by it were confirmed by the authority of the next. Clarendon lays it down as undeniable, that such confirmation was necessary. Nevertheless, this objection having been made in the court of king's bench to one of their acts, the judges would not admit it to be disputed, and said, that the act being made by king, lords, and commons, they ought not now to pry into any defects of the circumstances of calling them together, neither would they suffer a point to be stirred, wherein the estates of so many were concerned. Heath v. Pryn, 1 Ventris, 15.

CHAP. XV. William.

juration of James's right was to be taken by all persons in trust *. It is by no means certain that even those who abstained from all connexion with James after his loss of the throne would have made a strenuous resistance in case of his landing to recover it †. But we know that a large proportion of the tories were engaged in a confederacy to support him. Almost every peer, in fact, of any consideration among that party, with the exception of lord Nottingham, is implicated by the secret documents which Macpherson and Dalrymple have brought to light; especially Godolphin, Carmarthen, and Marlborough, the second at that time first minister of William, as he might justly be called, the last with circumstances of extraordinary and abandoned treachery towards his country, as well as his allegiance ‡. Two of the most

* Great indulgence was shown to the assertors of indefeasible right. The lords resolved, that there should be no penalty in the bill to disable any person from sitting and voting in either house of parliament. Journals, May 5, 1690. The bill was rejected in the commons by 192 to 178. Journals, April 26. Parl. Hist. 594. Burnet, 41, ibid.

† Some English subjects took James's commission, and fitted out privateers which attacked our ships. They were taken, and it was resolved to try them as pirates, when Dr. Oldys, the king's advocate, had the assurance to object that this could not be done, as if James had still the prerogatives of a sovereign prince by the law of nations. He was of course turned out, and the men hanged; but this is one instance among many of the difficulty under which the government laboured through the cursed distinction of *facto* and *jure*. Ralph, 423. The boards of customs and excise were filled by Godolphin with Jacobites. Shrewsb. Corresp. 51.

‡ The name of Carmarthen is perpetually mentioned among those whom the late king reckoned his friends. Macpherson's Papers, i. 457, &c. Yet this conduct was so evidently against his interest, that we may perhaps believe him insincere. William was certainly well aware, that an extensive conspiracy had been formed against his throne. It was of great importance to learn the persons involved in it and their schemes. May we not presume, that lord Carmarthen's return to his ancient allegiance was feigned, in order to get an insight into the secrets of that party? This has already been conjectured by Somerville (p. 395) of lord Sunderland, who is also implicated by Macpherson's publication; and doubtless with higher probability, for Sunderland, always a favourite of William, could not without insanity have plotted the restoration of a prince he was supposed to have betrayed. It is evident that William was perfectly master of the cabals of St. Germain's. That little court knew it was betrayed, and the suspicion fell on lord Godolphin. Dalrymple, 189. But I think Sunderland and Carmarthen more likely.

I should be inclined to suspect, that by some of this double treachery the secret of princess Anne's repentant letter to her father reached William's ears. She had come readily, or at least without opposition, into that part of the settlement which postponed her succession after the death of Mary, for the remainder of the king's life. It would indeed have been absurd to expect that William was to descend from his throne in her favour; and

distinguished whigs (and if the imputation is not fully substantiated, it is not fully refuted) that her opposition could not have been of much avail. But when the civil list and revenue came to be settled, the tories made a violent effort to secure an income of 70,000*l.* a year to her and her husband. Parl. Hist. 492. As this on one hand seemed beyond all fair proportion to the income of the crown, so the whigs were hardly less unreasonable in contending that she should depend altogether on the king's generosity; especially as by letters patent in the late reign, which they affected to call in question, she had a revenue of about 30,000*l.* In the end the house resolved to address the king, that he would make the princess's income 50,000*l.* in the whole. This, however, left an irreconcilable enmity, which the artifices of Marlborough and his wife were employed to aggravate. They were accustomed, in the younger sister's little court, to speak of the queen with severity, and of the king with rude and odious epithets. Marlborough, however, went much farther. He brought that narrow and foolish woman into his own dark intrigues with St. Germain's. She wrote to her father, whom she had grossly, and almost openly, charged with imposing a spurious child as prince of Wales, supplicating his forgiveness, and professing repentance for the part she had taken. Life of James, 476. Macpherson's Papers, i. 241.

If this letter, as cannot seem improbable, became known to William, we shall have a more satisfactory explanation of the queen's invincible resentment toward her sister than can be found in any other part of their history. Mary refused to see the princess on her death-bed; which shows more bitterness than suited her mild and religious temper, if we look only to their public squabbles about the Churchills as its motive. Burnet, 90. Conduct of Duchess of Marlborough, 41. But the queen must have deeply felt the unhappy, though necessary, state of enmity in which she was placed towards her father. She had borne a part in a great and glorious enterprise, obedient to a woman's highest duty, and had admirably performed those of the station to which she was called; but still with some violation of natural sentiments, and some liability to the reproach of those who do not fairly estimate the circumstances of her situation:

Infelix! utcunque ferant ea facta minores.

Her sister, who had voluntarily trod the same path, who had misled her into a belief of her brother's illegitimacy, had now, from no real sense of duty, but out of pique and weak compliance with cunning favourites, solicited in a clandestine manner the late king's pardon, while his malediction resounded in the ears of the queen. This feebleness and duplicity made a sisterly friendship impossible.

As for lord Marlborough, he was among the first, if we except some Scots renegades, who abandoned the cause of the revolution. He had so signally broken the ties of personal gratitude in his desertion of the king on that occasion, that, according to the severe remark of Hume, his conduct required for ever afterwards the most upright, the most disinterested, and most public-spirited behaviour to render it justifiable. What then must we think of it, if we find in the whole of this great man's political life nothing but ambition and rapacity in his motives, nothing but treachery and intrigue in his means! He betrayed and abandoned James because he could not rise in his favour without a sacrifice that he did not care to make; he abandoned William and betrayed England because some obstacles stood yet in the way of his ambition. I do not mean only, when I say that he betrayed England, that he was ready to lay her independence and liberty at the feet of James II. and Louis XIV., but that in one memorable instance he communicated to the court of St. Germain's, and through that to the court of Versailles, the secret of an expedition against Brest, which failed in consequence with the loss of the commander and eight hundred men. Dalrymple, iii. 13. Life of James, 522. Macpherson, i. 487. In short, his whole life was such a picture of meanness and treachery, that one must rate military services very high indeed to preserve any esteem for his memory.

The private memoirs of James II. as well as the papers published by Macpher-

CHAP. XV. William.

tiated against others* by name, we know generally that many were liable to it) forfeited a high name among their contemporaries, in the eyes of a posterity which has known them better; the earl or duke of Shrewsbury, from that strange feebleness of soul which hung like a spell upon his nobler qualities, and admiral Russell, from insolent pride and sullenness of temper. Both these were engaged in the vile intrigues of a faction they abhorred; but Shrewsbury soon learned again to revere the sovereign he had contributed to raise, and withdrew from the contamination of Jacobitism. It does not appear that he betrayed that trust which William is said with extraordinary magnanimity to have reposed on him, after a full knowledge of his connexion with the court of St. Germain's†. But Russell, though compelled to

son show us how little treason, and especially a double treason, is thanked or trusted by those whom it pretends to serve. We see that neither Churchill nor Russell obtained any confidence from the banished king. Their motives were always suspected, and something more solid than professions of loyalty was demanded, though at the expense of their own credit. James could not forgive Russell for saying that if the French fleet came out he must fight. Macpherson, i. 242. If Providence in its wrath had visited this island once more with a Stuart restoration, we may be sure that these perfidious apostates would have been no gainers by the change.

* During William's absence in Ireland, in 1690, some of the whigs conducted themselves in a manner to raise suspicions of their fidelity, as appears by those most interesting letters of Mary, published by Dalrymple, which display her entire and devoted affection to a husband of cold and sometimes harsh manners, but capable of deep and powerful attachment, of which she was the chief object. I have heard that the late proprietor of these royal letters was offended, but not judiciously, with their publication; and that the black box of king William that contained them has disappeared from Kensington. The names of the duke of Bolton, his son the marquis of Winchester, the earl of Monmouth, lord Montagu, and major Wildman, occur as objects of the queen's or her minister's suspicion. Dalrymple, Appendix, 107, &c. But Carmarthen was desirous to throw odium on the whigs; and none of these, except on one occasion lord Winchester, appear to be mentioned in the Stuart Papers. Even Monmouth, whose want both of principle and sound sense might cause reasonable distrust, and who lay, at different times of his life, under this suspicion of a Jacobite intrigue, is never mentioned in Macpherson, or any other book of authority, within my recollection. Yet it is evident generally that there was a disaffected party among the whigs, or, as in the Stuart Papers they were called, republicans, who entertained the baseless project of restoring James upon terms. These were chiefly what were called compounders, to distinguish them from the thorough-paced royalists, or old tories. One person whom we should least expect is occasionally spoken of as inclined to a king whom he had been ever conspicuous in opposing—the earl of Devonshire; but the Stuart agents often wrote according to their wishes rather than their knowledge; and it seems hard to believe what is not rendered probable by any part of his public conduct, and agrees so little with the general consistency of his family.

† This fact apparently rests on good

win the battle of La Hogue against his will, took care to render his splendid victory as little advantageous as possible. The credulity and almost wilful blindness of faction is strongly manifested in the conduct of the house of commons as to the quarrel between this commander and the board of admiralty. They chose to support one who was secretly a traitor, because he bore the name of whig, tolerating his infamous neglect of duty and contemptible excuses, in order to pull down an honest, though not very able minister, who belonged to the tories*. But they saw clearly that the king was betrayed, though mistaken, in this instance, as to the persons, and were right in concluding that the men who had effected the revolution were in general most likely to maintain it; or, in the words of a committee of the whole house, "That his majesty be humbly advised, for the necessary support of his government, to employ in his councils and management of his affairs such persons only whose principles oblige them to stand by him and his right against the late king James, and all other pretenders whatsoever †." It is plain from this and other votes of the commons, that the tories had lost that majority which they seem to have held in the first session of this parliament ‡.

It is not, however, to be inferred from this extensive combination in favour of the banished king, that his party embraced the

authority; it is repeatedly mentioned in the Stuart Papers, and in the Life of James. Yet Shrewsbury's letter to William, after Fenwick's accusation of him, seems hardly consistent with the king's knowledge of the truth of that charge in its full extent. I think that he served his master faithfully as secretary, at least after some time, though his warm recommendation of Marlborough, "who has been with me since this news [the failure of the attack on Brest] to offer his services with all the expressions of duty and fidelity imaginable," (Shrewsbury Correspondence, 47), is somewhat suspicious, aware as he was of that traitor's connexions.

* Commons' Journals, Nov. 28 et post. Dalrymple, iii. 11. Ralph, 346.

† Commons' Journals, Jan. 11, 1692-3.

‡ Burnet says, "the elections of parliament (1690) went generally for men who would probably have declared for king James, if they could have known how to manage matters for him." P. 41. This is quite an exaggeration; though the tories, some of whom were at this time in place, did certainly succeed in several divisions. But parties had now begun to be split; the Jacobite tories voting with the malecontent whigs. Upon the whole, this house of commons, like the next which followed it, was well affected to the revolution-settlement and to public liberty. Whig and tory were becoming little more than nicknames.

CHAP. XV. William.

majority of the nation, or that he could have been restored with any general testimonies of satisfaction. The friends of the revolution were still by far the more powerful body. Even the secret emissaries of James confess that the common people were strongly prejudiced against his return. His own enumeration of peers attached to his cause cannot be brought to more than thirty, exclusive of catholics*; and the real Jacobites were, I believe, in a far less proportion among the commons. The hopes of that wretched victim of his own bigotry and violence rested less on the loyalty of his former subjects, or on their disaffection to his rival, than on the perfidious conspiracy of English statesmen and admirals, of lord-lieutenants and governors of towns, and on so numerous a French army, as an ill-defended and disunited kingdom would be incapable to resist. He was to return, not as his brother, alone and unarmed, strong only in the consentient voice of the nation, but amidst the bayonets of 30,000 French auxiliaries. These were the pledges of just and constitutional rule, whom our patriot Jacobites invoked against the despotism of William III. It was from a king of the house of Stuart, from James II., from one thus encircled by the soldiers of Louis XIV., that we were to receive the guarantee of civil and religious liberty. Happily the determined love of arbitrary power, burning unextinguished amidst exile and disgrace, would not permit him to promise, in any distinct manner, those securities which a large portion of his own adherents required. The Jacobite faction was divided between compounders and non-compounders; the one insisting on the necessity of holding forth a promise of such new enactments upon the king's restoration, as might remove all jealousies as to the rights of the church and people; the other, more agreeably to James's temper,

* Macpherson's State Papers, i. 459. These were all tories, except three or four. The great end James and his adherents had in view was to persuade Louis into an invasion of England; their representations, therefore, are to be taken with much allowance, and in some cases we know them to be false; as when James assures his brother of Versailles that three parts at least in four of the English clergy had not taken the oaths to William. Id. 409.

rejecting every compromise with what they called the republican party at the expense of his ancient prerogative *. In a declaration which he issued from St. Germains in 1692 there was so little acknowledgment of error, so few promises of security, so many exceptions from the amnesty he offered, that the wiser of his partisans in England were willing to insinuate that it was not authentic †. This declaration, and the virulence of Jacobite pamphlets in the same tone, must have done harm to his cause ‡. He published another declaration next year at the earnest request of those who had seceded to his side from that of the revolution, in which he held forth more specific assurances of consenting to a limitation of his prerogative §. But no reflecting man could avoid

* Macpherson, 433. Somers Tracts, xi. 94. This is a pamphlet of the time, exposing the St. Germains faction, and James's unwillingness to make concessions. It is confirmed by the most authentic documents.

† Ralph, 350. Somers Tracts, x. 211.

‡ Many of these Jacobite tracts are printed in the Somers Collection, vol. x. The more we read of them, the more cause appears for thankfulness that the nation escaped from such a furious party. They confess, in general, very little error or misgovernment in James, but abound with malignant calumnies on his successor. The name of Tullia is repeatedly given to the mild and pious Mary. The best of these libels is styled "Great Britain's just Complaint," (p. 429), by sir James Montgomery, the false and fickle proto-apostate of whiggism. It is written with singular vigour, and even elegance; and rather extenuates than denies the faults of the late reign.

§ Ralph, 418. See the Life of James, 501. It contains chiefly an absolute promise of pardon, a declaration that he would protect and defend the church of England as established by law, and secure to its members all the churches, universities, schools, and colleges, together with its immunities, rights, and privileges, a promise not to dispense with the test, and to leave the dispensing power in other matters to be explained and limited by parliament, to give the royal assent to bills for frequent parliaments, free elections, and impartial trials, and to confirm such laws made under the present usurpation as should be tendered to him by parliament. "The king," he says himself, "was sensible he should be blamed by several of his friends for submitting to such hard terms; nor was it to be wondered at, if those who knew not the true condition of his affairs were scandalized at it; but after all he had nothing else to do." P. 505. He was so little satisfied with the articles in this declaration respecting the church of England, that he consulted several French and English divines, all of whom, including Bossuet, after some difference, came to an opinion that he could not in conscience undertake to protect and defend an erroneous church. Their objection, however, seems to have been rather to the expression than the plain sense; for they agreed that he might promise to leave the protestant church in possession of its endowments and privileges. Many too of the English Jacobites, especially the nonjuring bishops, were displeased with the declaration, as limiting the prerogative, though it contained nothing which they were not clamorous to obtain from William. P. 514. A decisive proof how little that party cared for civil liberty, and how little

CHAP. XV. William.

perceiving that such promises wrung from his distress were illusory and insincere, that in the exultation of triumphant loyalty, even without the sword of the Gaul thrown into the scale of despotism, those who dreamed of a conditional restoration, and of fresh guarantees for civil liberty, would find, like the presbyterians of 1660, that it became them rather to be anxious about their own pardon, and to receive it as a signal boon of the king's clemency. The knowledge thus obtained of James's incorrigible obstinacy seems gradually to have convinced the disaffected that no hope for the nation or for themselves could be drawn from his restoration*. His connexions with the treacherous counsellors of William grew weaker, and even before the peace of Ryswick it was evident that the aged bigot could never wield again the sceptre he had thrown away. The scheme of assassinating our illustrious sovereign, which some of James's desperate zealots had devised

would have satisfied them at the revolution, if James had put the church out of danger! The next paragraph is remarkable enough to be extracted for the better confirmation of what I have just said. "By this the king saw he had outshot himself more ways than one in this declaration, and therefore what expedient he would have found in case he had been restored, not to put a force either upon his conscience or honour, does not appear, because it never came to a trial; but this is certain, his church of England friends absolved him beforehand, and sent him word, that if he considered the preamble and the very terms of the declaration, he was not bound to stand by it, or to put it out verbatim as it was worded; that the changing some expressions and ambiguous terms, so long as what was principally aimed at had been kept to, could not be called a receding from his declaration, no more than a new edition of a book can be counted a different work, though corrected and amended. And indeed the preamble showed his promise was conditional, which they not performing, the king could not be tied; for my lord Middleton had writ, that if the king signed the declaration, those who took it engaged to restore him in three or four months after; the king did his part, but their failure must needs take off the king's future obligation."

In a Latin letter, the original of which is written in James's own hand, to Innocent XII., dated from Dublin, Nov. 26, 1689, he declares himself "Catholicam fidem reducere in tria regna statuisse." Somers Tracts, x. 552. Though this may have been drawn up by a priest, I suppose the king understood what he said. It appears also by lord Balcarras's Memoir, that lord Melfort had drawn up the declaration as to indemnity and indulgence in such a manner, that the king might break it whenever he pleased. Somers Tracts, xi. 517.

* The protestants were treated with neglect and jealousy, whatever might have been their loyalty, at the court of James, as they were afterwards at that of his son. The incorrigibility of this Stuart family is very remarkable. Kennet, 638 and 738, enumerates many instances. Sir James Montgomery, the earl of Middleton, and others, were shunned at the court of St. Germains as guilty of this sole crime of heresy, unless we add that of wishing for legal securities.

without his privity, as may charitably and even reasonably be supposed *, gave a fatal blow to the interests of that faction. It

* James himself explicitly denies, in the extracts from his Life published by Macpherson, all participation in the scheme of killing William, and says that he had twice rejected proposals for bringing him off alive; though it is not true that he speaks of the design with indignation, as some have pretended. It was very natural, and very conformable to the principles of kings, and others besides kings, in former times, that he should have lent an ear to this project; and as to James's moral and religious character, it was not better than that of Clarendon, whom we know to have countenanced similar designs for the assassination of Cromwell. In fact, the received code of ethics has been improved in this respect. We may be sure at least that those who ran such a risk for James's sake expected to be thanked and rewarded in the event of success. I cannot, therefore, agree with Dalrymple, who says that nothing but the fury of party could have exposed James to this suspicion. Though the proof seems very short of conviction, there are some facts worthy of notice. 1. Burnet positively charges the late king with privity to the conspiracy of Grandval, executed in Flanders for a design on William's life, 1692, (p. 95), and this he does with so much particularity, and so little hesitation, that he seems to have drawn his information from high authority. The sentence of the court-martial on Grandval also alludes to James's knowledge of the crime (Somers Tracts, x. 580), and mentions expressions of his, which, though not conclusive, would raise a strong presumption in any ordinary case. 2. William himself, in a memorial intended to have been delivered to the ministers of all the allied powers at Ryswick, in answer to that of James, (Id. xi. 103. Ralph, 730), positively imputes to the latter repeated conspiracies against his life; and he was incapable of saying what he did not believe. In the same memorial he shows too much magnanimity to assert that the birth of the prince of Wales was an imposture. P. 111, 3. A paper by Charnock, undeniably one of the conspirators, addressed to James, contains a marked allusion to William's possible death in a short time; which even Macpherson calls a delicate mode of hinting the assassination-plot to him. Macpherson, State Papers, i. 519. Compare also State Trials, xii. 1323. 1327. 1329. 4. Somerville, though a disbeliever in James's participation, has a very curious quotation from Lamberti, tending to implicate Louis XIV. p. 428; and we can hardly suppose that he kept the other out of the secret. Indeed, the crime is greater and less credible in Louis than in James. But devout kings have odd notions of morality; and their confessors, I suppose, much the same. I admit, as before, that the evidence falls short of conviction; and that the verdict, in the language of Scots law, should be, Not Proven; but it is too much for our Stuart apologists to treat the question as one absolutely determined. Documents may yet appear that will change its aspect.

I leave the above paragraph as it was written before the publication of M. Mazure's valuable History of the Revolution. He has therein brought to light a commission of James to Crosby, in 1693, authorising and requiring him "to seize and secure the person of the prince of Orange, and to bring him before us, taking to your assistance such other of our faithful subjects in whom you may place confidence." Hist. de la Revol. iii. 443. It is justly observed by M. Mazure, that Crosby might think no renewal of his authority necessary in 1696 to do that which he had been required to do in 1693. If we look attentively at James's own language, in Macpherson's extracts, without much regarding the glosses of Innes, it will appear that he does not deny in express terms that he had consented to the attempt in 1696 to seize the prince of Orange's person. In the commission to Crosby he is required not only to do this,

CHAP. XV. William.

was instantly seen that the murmurs of malecontent whigs had nothing in common with the disaffection of Jacobites. The nation resounded with an indignant cry against the atrocious conspiracy. An association abjuring the title of James, and pledging the subscribers to revenge the king's death, after the model of that in the reign of Elizabeth, was generally signed by both houses of parliament, and throughout the kingdom *. The adherents of the exiled family dwindled into so powerless a minority, that they could make no sort of opposition to the act of settlement, and did not recover an efficient character as a party till towards the latter end of the ensuing reign.

Perhaps the indignation of parliament against those who sought to bring back despotism through civil war and the murder of an heroic sovereign was carried too far in the bill for attainting sir John Fenwick of treason. Two witnesses, required by our law in a charge of that nature, Porter and Goodman, had deposed before the grand jury to Fenwick's share in the scheme of invasion, though there is no reason to believe that he was privy to the intended assassination of the king. His wife subsequently prevailed on Goodman to quit the kingdom; and thus it became impossible to obtain a conviction in the course of law. This was the apology for a special act of the legislature, by which he suffered the penalties of treason. It did not, like some other acts of attainder, inflict a punishment beyond the offence, but supplied the deficiency of legal evidence. It was sustained by the production of Goodman's examination before the privy-council, by the evidence of

but to bring him before the king. But is it possible to consider this language as any thing else than an euphemism for assassination?

Upon the whole evidence, therefore, I now think that James was privy to the conspiracy, of which the natural and inevitable consequence must have been foreseen by himself; but I leave the text as it stood, in order to show that I have not been guided by any prejudice against his character.

* Parl. Hist. 991. Fifteen peers and ninety-two commoners refused. The names of the latter were circulated in a printed paper, which the house voted to be a breach of their privilege, and destruction of the freedom and liberties of parliament. Oct. 30, 1696. This, however, shows the unpopularity of their opposition.

two grand-jurymen as to the deposition he had made on oath before them, and on which they had found the bill of indictment. It was also shown that he had been tampered with by lady Mary Fenwick to leave the kingdom. This was undoubtedly as good secondary evidence as can well be imagined; and though in criminal cases such evidence is not admissible by courts of law, it was plausibly urged that the legislature might prevent Fenwick from taking advantage of his own underhand management, without transgressing the moral rules of justice, or even setting the dangerous precedent of punishing treason upon a single testimony. Yet, upon the whole, the importance of adhering to the stubborn rules of law in matters of treason is so weighty, and the difficulty of keeping such a body as the house of commons within any less precise limits so manifest, that we may well concur with those who thought sir John Fenwick much too inconsiderable a person to warrant such an anomaly. The jealous sense of liberty prevalent in William's reign produced a very strong opposition to this bill of attainder; it passed in each house, especially in the lords, by a small majority *. Nor perhaps would it have been carried but for Fenwick's imprudent disclosure, in order to save his life, of some great statesmen's intrigues with the late king; a dis-

* Burnet; see the notes on the Oxford edition. Ralph, 692. The motion for bringing in the bill, Nov. 6, 1696, was carried by 169 to 61; but this majority lessened at every stage: and the final division was only 189 to 156. In the lords it passed by 68 to 61; several whigs, and even the duke of Devonshire, then lord steward, voting in the minority. Parl. Hist. 996—1154. Marlborough probably made prince George of Denmark support the measure. Shrewsbury Correspondence, 449. Many remarkable letters on the subject are to be found in this collection; but I warn the reader against trusting any part of the volume except the letters themselves. The editor has, in defiance of notorious facts, represented sir John Fenwick's disclosures as false, and twice charges him with prevarication (p. 404), using the word without any knowledge of its sense, in declining to answer questions put to him by members of the house of commons, which he could not have answered without inflaming the animosity that sought his life.

It is said, in a note of lord Hardwicke on Burnet, that "the king, before the session, had sir John Fenwick brought to the cabinet council, where he was present himself. But sir John would not explain his paper." See also Shrewsbury Correspondence, 419, et post. The truth was, that Fenwick having had his information at second-hand, could not prove his assertions, and feared to make his case worse by repeating them.

CHAP. XV. Will. III.

closure which he dared not, or was not in a situation to confirm, but which rendered him the victim of their fear and revenge. Russell, one of those accused, brought into the commons the bill of attainder; Marlborough voted in favour of it, the only instance wherein he quitted the tories; Godolphin and Bath, with more humanity, took the other side; and Shrewsbury, who could not easily vote against the court, absented himself from the house of lords *. It is now well known that Fenwick's discoveries went not a step beyond the truth. Their effect, however, was beneficial to the state, as by displaying a strange want of secrecy in the court of St. Germains, Fenwick never having had any direct communication with those he accused, it caused Godolphin and Marlborough to break off their dangerous course of perfidy †.

Amidst these scenes of dissension and disaffection, and amidst the public losses and decline which aggravated them, we have scarce any object to contemplate with pleasure, but the magnanimous and unconquerable soul of William. Mistaken in some parts of his domestic policy, unsuited by some failings of his character for the English nation, it is still to his superiority in virtue and energy over all her own natives in that age that England is indebted for the preservation of her honour and liberty; not at

* Godolphin, who was then first commissioner of the treasury, not much to the liking of the whigs, seems to have been tricked by Sunderland into retiring from office on this occasion. Id. 415. Shrewsbury, secretary of state, could hardly be restrained by the king and his own friends from resigning the seals as soon as he knew of Fenwick's accusation. His behaviour shows either a consciousness of guilt, or an inconceivable cowardice. Yet at first he wrote to the king, pretending to mention candidly all that had passed between him and the earl of Middleton, which in fact amounted to nothing. P. 147. This letter, however, seems to show that a story which has been several times told, and is confirmed by the biographer of James II. and by Macpherson's Papers, that William compelled Shrewsbury to accept office in 1693, by letting him know that he was aware of his connexion with St. Germains, is not founded in truth. He could hardly have written in such a style to the king with that fact in his way. Monmouth, however, had some suspicion of it, as appears by the hints he furnished to sir J. Fenwick towards establishing the charges. P. 450. Lord Dartmouth, full of inveterate prejudices against the king, charges him with personal pique against sir John Fenwick, and with instigating members to vote for the bill. Yet it rather seems that he was, at least for some time, by no means anxious for it. Shrewsbury Correspondence: and compare Coxe's Life of Marlborough, i. 63.

† Life of James, ii. 558.

the crisis only of the revolution, but through the difficult period that elapsed until the peace of Ryswick. A war of nine years, generally unfortunate, unsatisfactory in its result, carried on at a cost unknown to former times, amidst the decay of trade, the exhaustion of resources, the decline, as there seems good reason to believe, of population itself, was the festering wound that turned a people's gratitude into factiousness and treachery. It was easy to excite the national prejudices against campaigns in Flanders, especially when so unsuccessful, and to inveigh against the neglect of our maritime power. Yet unless we could have been secure against invasion, which Louis would infallibly have attempted, had not his whole force been occupied by the grand alliance, and which in the feeble condition of our navy and commerce at one time could not have been impracticable, the defeats of Steenkirk and Landen might probably have been sustained at home. The war of 1689, and the great confederacy of Europe, which William alone could animate with any steadiness and energy, were most evidently and undeniably the means of preserving the independence of England. That danger, which has sometimes been in our countrymen's mouths with little meaning, of becoming a province to France, was then close and actual; for I hold the restoration of the house of Stuart to be but another expression for that ignominy and servitude.

The expense, therefore, of this war must not be reckoned unnecessary, nor must we censure the government for that small portion of our debt which it was compelled to entail on posterity *.

* The debt at the king's death amounted to 16,394,702*l.*, of which above three millions were to expire in 1710. Sinclair's Hist. of Revenue, i. 425, (third edition). Of this sum 664,263*l.* was incurred before the revolution, being a part of the money of which Charles II. had robbed the public creditor by shutting up the exchequer. Interest was paid upon this down to 1683, when the king stopped it. The legislature ought undoubtedly to have done justice more effectually and speedily than by passing an act in 1699, which was not to take effect till December 25, 1705, from which time the excise was charged with three per cent. interest on the principal sum of 1,328,526*l.* subject to be redeemed by payment of a moiety. No compensation was given for the loss of so many years' interest. 12 and 13 W. III. c. 12 §. 15. Sinclair, i. 397. State Trials, xiv. 1, et post. According to a particular statement

CHAP. XV. William.

It is to the honour of William's administration, and of his parliaments, not always clear-sighted, but honest and zealous for the public weal, that they deviated so little from the praiseworthy, though sometimes impracticable policy of providing a revenue commensurate with the annual expenditure. The supplies annually raised during the war were about five millions, more than double the revenue of James II. But a great decline took place in the produce of the taxes by which that revenue was levied. In 1693 the customs had dwindled to less than half their amount before the revolution, the excise duties to little more than half*. This rendered heavy impositions on land inevitable; a tax always obnoxious, and keeping up disaffection in the most powerful class of the community. The first land-tax was imposed in 1690 at the rate of three shillings in the pound on the rental, and it continued ever afterwards to be annually granted, at different rates, but commonly at four shillings in the pound, till it was made perpetual in 1798. A tax of twenty per cent. might well seem grievous; and the notorious inequality of the assessment in different counties tended rather to aggravate the burthen upon those whose contribution was the fairest. Fresh schemes of finance were devised, and, on the whole, patiently borne by a jaded people. The Bank of England rose under the auspices of the whig party, and materially relieved the immediate exigencies of the government, while it palliated the general distress, dis-

in Somers Tracts, xii. 383, the receipts of the exchequer, including loans, during the whole reign of William, amounted to rather more than 72,000,000*l.* The author of the Letter to the Rev. T. Carte, in answer to the latter's Letter to a Bystander, estimates the sums raised under Charles II., from Christmas, 1660, to Christmas, 1684, at 46,233,923*l.* Carte had made them only 32,474,265*l.* But his estimate is evidently false and deceptive. Both reckon the gross produce, not the exchequer payments. This controversy was about the year 1742. According to Sinclair, Hist. of Revenue, i. 309, Carte had the last word; but I cannot conceive how he answered the above-mentioned letter to him. Whatever might be the relative expenditure of the two reigns, it is evident that the war of 1689 was brought on, in a great measure, by the corrupt policy of Charles II.

* Davenant, Essay on Ways and Means. In another of his tracts, vol. ii. 266, edit. 1771, this writer computes the payments of the state in 1688 at one shilling in the pound of the national income; but after the war at two shillings and sixpence.

counting bills and lending money at an easier rate of interest. Yet its notes were depreciated twenty per cent. in exchange for silver, and exchequer tallies at least twice as much, till they were funded at an interest of eight per cent.* But these resources generally falling very short of calculation, and being anticipated at such an exorbitant discount, a constantly increasing deficiency arose, and public credit sunk so low, that about the year 1696 it was hardly possible to pay the fleet and army from month to month, and a total bankruptcy seemed near at hand. These distresses again were enhanced by the depreciation of the circulating coin, and by the bold remedy of a re-coinage, which made the immediate stagnation of commerce more complete. The mere operation of exchanging the worn silver coin for the new, which Mr. Montague had the courage to do without lowering the standard, cost the government two millions and a half. Certainly the vessel of our commonwealth has never been so close to shipwreck as in this period; we have seen the storm raging in still greater terror round our heads, but with far stouter planks and tougher cables to confront and ride through it.

Those who accused William of neglecting the maritime force of England knew little what they said, or cared little about its truth †. A soldier and a native of Holland, he naturally looked to the Spanish Netherlands as the theatre on which the battle of

* Godfrey's Short Account of Bank of England, in Somers Tracts, xi. 5. Kennet's Complete Hist. iii. 723. Ralph, 681. Shrewsbury Papers. Macpherson's Annals of Commerce, A. D. 1697. Sinclair's Hist. of Revenue.

† "Nor is it true that the sea was neglected; for I think during much the greater part of the war which began in 1689 we were entirely masters of the sea, by our victory in 1692, which was only three years after it broke out; so that for seven years we carried the *broom*. And for any neglect of our sea affairs otherwise, I believe, I may in few words prove that all the princes since the Conquest never made so remarkable an improvement to our naval strength as king William. He [Swift] should have been told, if he did not know, what havoc the Dutch had made of our shipping in king Charles the Second's reign; and that his successor, king James the Second, had not in his whole navy fitted out to defeat the designed invasion of the prince of Orange an individual ship of the first or second rank, which all lay neglected, and mere skeletons of former services, at their moorings. These this abused prince repaired at an immense charge, and brought them to their pristine magnificence." Answer to Swift's Conduct of the Allies, in Somers Tracts, xiii. 247.

CHAP. XV. William.

France and Europe was to be fought. It was by the possession of that country and its chief fortresses that Louis aspired to hold Holland in vassalage, to menace the coasts of England, and to keep the Empire under his influence. And if with the assistance of those brave regiments, who learned in the well-contested, though unfortunate battles of that war, the skill and discipline which made them conquerors in the next, it was found that France was still an overmatch for the allies, what would have been effected against her by the decrepitude of Spain, the perverse pride of Austria, and the selfish disunion of Germany? The commerce of France might perhaps have suffered more by an exclusively maritime warfare; but we should have obtained this advantage, which in itself is none, and would not have essentially crippled her force, at the price of abandoning to her ambition the quarry it had so long in pursuit. Meanwhile the naval annals of this war added much to our renown; Russell, glorious in his own despite at La Hogue, Rooke and Shovel kept up the honour of the English flag. After that great victory, the enemy never encountered us in battle; and the wintering of the fleet at Cadiz in 1694, a measure determined by William's energetic mind, against the advice of his ministers, and in spite of the fretful insolence of the admiral, gave us so decided a pre-eminence both in the Atlantic and Mediterranean seas, that it is hard to say what more could have been achieved by the most exclusive attention to the navy *. It is true that, especially during the first part of the war, vast losses were sustained through the capture of merchant ships; but this is the inevitable lot of a commercial country, and has occurred in every war, until the practice of placing the traders under con-

* Dalrymple has remarked the important consequences of this bold measure; but we have learned only by the publication of lord Shrewsbury's Correspondence, that it originated with the king, and was carried through by him against the mutinous remonstrances of Russell. See pp. 68. 104. 202. 210. 234. This was a most odious man; as ill-tempered and violent as he was perfidious. But the rudeness with which the king was treated by some of his servants is very remarkable. Lord Sunderland wrote to him at least with great bluntness. Hardwicke Papers, 444.

voy of armed ships was introduced. And when we consider the treachery which pervaded this service, and the great facility of secret intelligence which the enemy possessed, we may be astonished that our failures and losses were not more complete.

The treaty of Ryswick was concluded on at least as fair terms as almost perpetual ill fortune could warrant us to expect. It compelled Louis XIV. to recognize the king's title, and thus both humbled the court of St. Germains, and put an end for several years to its intrigues. It extinguished, or rather the war itself had extinguished, one of the bold hopes of the French court, the scheme of procuring the election of the dauphin to the empire. It gave at least a breathing time to Europe, so long as the feeble lamp of Charles II.'s life should continue to glimmer, during which the fate of his vast succession might possibly be regulated without injury to the liberties of Europe*. But to those who looked with the king's eyes on the prospects of the continent, this pacification could appear nothing else than a preliminary armistice of vigilance and preparation. He knew that the Spanish dominions, or at least as large a portion of them as could be grasped by a powerful arm, had been for more than thirty years the object of Louis XIV. The acquisitions of that monarch at Aix-la-Chapelle and Nimeguen had been comparatively trifling, and seem hardly enough to justify the dread that Europe felt of his aggressions. But in contenting himself for the time with a

* The peace of Ryswick was absolutely necessary, not only on account of the defection of the duke of Savoy, and the manifest disadvantage with which the allies carried on the war, but because public credit in England was almost annihilated, and it was hardly possible to pay the army. The extreme distress for money is forcibly displayed in some of the king's letters to lord Shrewsbury. P. 114, &c. These were in 1696, the very *nadir* of English prosperity; from which, by the favour of Providence and the buoyant energies of the nation, we have, though not quite with an uniform motion, culminated to our present height (1824).

If the treaty could have been concluded on the basis originally laid down, it would even have been honourable. But the French rose in their terms during the negotiation, and through the selfishness of Austria obtained Strasburgh, which they had at first offered to relinquish, and were very near getting Luxemburg. Shrewsbury Correspondence, 316, &c. Still the terms were better than those offered in 1693, which William has been censured for refusing.

CHAP. XV. William.

few strong towns, or a moderate district, he constantly kept in view the weakness of the king of Spain's constitution. The queen's renunciation of her right of succession was invalid in the jurisprudence of his court. Sovereigns, according to the public law of France, uncontrollable by the rights of others, were incapable of limiting their own. They might do all things but guarantee the privileges of their subjects or the independence of foreign states. By the queen of France's death her claim upon the inheritance of Spain was devolved upon the dauphin; so that ultimately, and virtually in the first instance, the two great monarchies would be consolidated, and a single will would direct a force much more than equal to all the rest of Europe. If we admit that every little oscillation in the balance of power has sometimes been too minutely regarded by English statesmen, it would be absurd to contend that such a subversion of it as the union of France and Spain under one head did not most seriously threaten both the independence of England and Holland and the protestant religion.

The house of commons which sat at the conclusion of the treaty of Ryswick, chiefly composed of whigs, and having zealously co-operated in the prosecution of the late war, could not be supposed lukewarm in the cause of liberty, or indifferent to the aggrandizement of France. But the nation's exhausted state seemed to demand an intermission of its burthens, and revived the natural and laudable disposition to frugality which had characterised in all former times an English parliament. The arrears of the war, joined to loans made during its progress, left a debt of about seventeen millions, which excited much inquietude, and evidently could not be discharged but by steady retrenchment and uninterrupted peace. But, more than this, a reluctance to see a standing army established prevailed among the great majority both of whigs and tories. It was unknown to their ancestors—this was enough for one party; it was dangerous to liberty—this alarmed the other. Men of ability and honest in-

tention, but, like most speculative politicians of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, rather too fond of seeking analogies in ancient history, influenced the public opinion by their writings, and carried too far the undeniable truth, that a large army at the mere control of an ambitious prince may often overthrow the liberties of a people *. It was not sufficiently remembered, that the bill of rights, the annual mutiny bill, the necessity of annual votes of supply for the maintenance of a regular army, besides, what was far more than all, the publicity of all acts of government, and the strong spirit of liberty burning in the people, had materially diminished a danger which it would not be safe entirely to contemn.

Such, however, was the influence of what may be called the constitutional antipathy of the English in that age to a regular army, that the commons, in the first session after the peace, voted that all troops raised since 1680 should be disbanded, reducing the forces to about 7000 men, which they were with difficulty prevailed upon to augment to 10,000 †. They resolved, at the same time, that, "in a just sense and acknowledgment of what great things his majesty has done for these kingdoms, a sum not exceeding 700,000l. be granted to his majesty during his life, for the support of the civil list." So ample a gift from an impoverished nation is the strongest testimony of their affection to the king ‡. But he was justly disappointed by the former vote, which, in the hazardous condition of Europe, prevented this country from wearing a countenance of preparation, more likely to avert than to bring on a second conflict. He permitted himself, however, to carry this resentment too far, and lost sight of that subordination

* Moyle now published his "Argument, showing that a standing army is inconsistent with a free government, and absolutely destructive to the constitution of the English monarchy," (State Tracts, ii. 564); and Trenchard his History of Standing Armies in England. Id. 653. Other pamphlets of a similar description may be found in the same volume.

† Journals, 11 Dec. 1697. Parl. Hist. 1167.

‡ Journals, 21 Dec. 1697. Parl. Hist. 5. 1168. It was carried by 225 to 86.

CHAP. XV. William.

to the law which is the duty of an English sovereign, when he evaded compliance with this resolution of the commons, and took on himself the unconstitutional responsibility of leaving sealed orders, when he went to Holland, that 16,000 men should be kept up, without the knowledge of his ministers, which they as unconstitutionally obeyed. In the next session a new parliament having been elected, full of men strongly imbued with what the courtiers styled commonwealth principles, or an extreme jealousy of royal power *, it was found impossible to resist a diminution of the army to 7000 troops †. These too were voted to be natives of the British dominions; and the king incurred the severest mortification of his reign, in the necessity of sending back his regiments of Dutch guards and French refugees. The messages that passed between him and the parliament bear witness how deeply he felt, and how fruitlessly he deprecated this act of unkindness and ingratitude, so strikingly in contrast with the deference that parliament has generally shown to the humours and prejudices of the crown, in matters of far higher moment ‡.

* "The elections fell generally," says Burnet, "on men who were in the interest of government; many of them had indeed some popular notions, which they had drank in under a bad government, and thought this ought to keep them under a good one; so that those who wished well to the public did apprehend great difficulties in managing them." Upon which Speaker Onslow has a very proper note: "They might happen to think," he says, "a good one might become a bad one, or a bad one might succeed to a good one. They were the best men of the age, and were for maintaining the revolution government by its own principles, and not by those of a government it had superseded." "The elections, we read in a letter of Mr. Montague, Aug. 1698, have made a humour appear in the countries that is not very comfortable to us who are in business. But yet after all, the present members are such as will neither hurt England nor this government, but I believe they must be handled very nicely." Shrewsbury Correspondence, 551. This parliament, however, fell into a great mistake about the reduction of the army, as Bolingbroke in his Letters on History very candidly admits, though connected with those who had voted for it.

† Journals, 17 Dec. 1698. Parl. Hist. 1191.

‡ Journals, 10 Jan. 18, 20, and 25 March. Lords' Journals, 8 Feb. Parl. Hist. 1167, 1191. Ralph, 808. Burnet, 219. It is now beyond doubt, that William had serious thoughts of quitting the government, and retiring to Holland, sick of the faction and ingratitude of this nation.—Shrewsbury Correspondence, 571. Hardwicke Papers, 362. This was in his character, and not like the vulgar story which that retailer of all gossip, Dalrymple, calls a well-authenticated tradition, that the king walked furiously round his room, exclaiming, "If I had a son, by G— the guards

The foreign troops were too numerous, and it would have been politic to conciliate the nationality of the multitude by reducing their number; yet they had claims which a grateful and generous people should not have forgotten: they were, many of them, the chivalry of protestantism, the Hugonot gentlemen who had lost all but their swords in a cause which we deemed our own; they were the men who had terrified James from Whitehall, and brought about a deliverance, which, to speak plainly, we had neither sense nor courage to achieve for ourselves, or which at least we could never have achieved without enduring the convulsive throes of anarchy.

There is, if not mere apology for the conduct of the commons, yet more to censure on the king's side, in another scene of humiliation which he passed through, in the business of the Irish forfeitures. These confiscations of the property of those who had fought on the side of James, though, in a legal sense, at the crown's disposal, ought undoubtedly to have been applied to the public service. It was the intention of parliament that two-thirds at least of these estates should be sold for that purpose; and William had, in answer to an address (Jan. 1690), promised to make no grant of them till the matter should be considered in the ensuing session. Several bills were brought in to carry the original resolutions into effect, but, probably through the influence of government, they always fell to the ground in one or other house of parliament. Meanwhile the king granted away the whole of these forfeitures, about a million of acres, with a culpable profuseness, to the enriching of his personal favourites, such as the earl of Portland and the countess of Orkney *. Yet

should not leave me." It would be vain to ask how this son would have enabled him to keep them against the bent of the parliament and people.

* The prodigality of William in grants to his favourites was an undeniable reproach to his reign. Charles II. had, however, with much greater profuseness, though much less blamed for it, given away almost all the crown lands in a few years after the restoration; and the commons could not now be prevailed upon to shake those grants, which was urged by the court, in order to defeat the resumption of those in the present reign. The length of time, undoubtedly, made a considerable difference. An enormous grant

CHAP. XV. William.

as this had been done in the exercise of a lawful prerogative, it is not easy to justify the act of resumption passed in 1699. The precedents for resumption of grants were obsolete and from bad times. It was agreed on all hands that the royal domain is not inalienable; if this were a mischief, as could not perhaps be doubted, it was one that the legislature had permitted with open eyes, till there was nothing left to be alienated. Acts therefore of this kind shake the general stability of possession, and destroy that confidence in which the practical sense of freedom consists, that the absolute power of the legislature, which in strictness is as arbitrary in England as in Persia, will be exercised in consistency with justice and lenity. They are also accompanied for the most part, as appears to have been the case in this instance of the Irish forfeitures, with partiality and misrepresentation as well as violence, and seldom fail to excite an odium, far more than commensurate to the transient popularity which attends them at the outset*.

But even if the resumption of William's Irish grants could be reckoned defensible, there can be no doubt that the mode adopted by the commons, of tacking, as it was called, the provisions for this purpose to a money bill, so as to render it impossible for the lords even to modify them, without depriving the king of his supply, tended to subvert the constitution and annihilate the rights of a co-equal house of parliament. This most reprehensible device, though not an unnatural consequence of their pretended

of the crown's domanial rights in North Wales to the earl of Portland excited much clamour in 1697, and produced a speech from Mr. Price, afterwards a baron of the exchequer, which was much extolled for its boldness, not rather to say, virulence and disaffection. This is printed in Parl. Hist. 978, and many other books. The king, on an address from the house of commons, revoked the grant, which indeed was not justifiable. His answer on this occasion, it may here be remarked, was by its mildness and courtesy a striking contrast to the insolent rudeness with which the Stuarts, one and all, had invariably treated the house. Yet to this vomit were many wretches eager to return.

* Parl. Hist. 1171, 1202, &c. Ralph, Burnet, Shrewsbury Correspondence. See also Davenant's Essay on Grants and Resumptions, and sundry pamphlets in Somers's Tracts, vol. ii. and State Tracts, temp. W. 3. vol. ii.

right to an exclusive concern in money bills, had been employed in a former instance during this reign*. They were again successful on this occasion; the lords receded from their amendments, and passed the bill at the king's desire, who perceived that the fury of the commons was tending to a terrible convulsion †. But the precedent was infinitely dangerous to their legislative power. If the commons, after some more attempts of the same nature, desisted from so unjust an encroachment, it must be attributed to that which has been the great preservative of the equilibrium in our government, the public voice of a reflecting people, averse to manifest innovation, and soon offended by the intemperance of factions. CHAP. XV. William.

The essential change which the fall of the old dynasty had wrought in our constitution displayed itself in such a vigorous spirit of inquiry and interference of parliament with all the course of government, as, if not absolutely new, was more uncontested and more effectual than before the revolution. The commons indeed under Charles II. had not wholly lost sight of the precedents which the long parliament had established for them; but not without continual resistance from the court, in which their right of examination was by no means admitted. But the tories throughout the reign of William evinced a departure from the ancient principles of their faction in nothing more than in asserting to the fullest extent the powers and privileges of the commons; and in the coalition they formed with the malecontent whigs, if the men of liberty adopted the nick-name of the men of prerogative, the latter did not less take up the maxims and feelings of the former. The bad success and suspected management of public affairs co-operated with the strong spirit of party to establish this important accession of authority to the house of commons. In June 1689, a special committee was appointed to inquire into the miscarriages of the war in Ireland, especially as

* In Feb. 1692.

† See the same authorities, especially the Shrewsbury Letters, p. 602.

CHAP. XV. William.

to the delay in relieving Londonderry. A similar committee was appointed in the lords. The former reported severely against col. Lundy, governor of that city, and the house addressed the king, that he might be sent over to be tried for the treasons laid to his charge *. I do not think there is any earlier precedent in the journals for so specific an inquiry into the conduct of a public officer, especially one in military command. It marks, therefore, very distinctly the change of spirit which I have so frequently mentioned. No courtier has ever since ventured to deny this general right of inquiry, though it is the constant practice to elude it. The right to inquire draws with it the necessary means, the examination of witnesses, records, papers, enforced by the strong arm of parliamentary privilege. In one respect alone these powers have fallen rather short; the commons do not administer an oath, and having neglected to claim this authority in the irregular times when they could make a privilege by a vote, they would now perhaps find difficulty in obtaining it by consent of the house of peers. They renewed this committee for inquiring into the miscarriages of the war in the next session †. They went very fully into the dispute between the board of admiralty and admiral Russell, after the battle of La Hogue ‡, and the year after investigated the conduct of his successor, Killigrew, and Delaval, in the command of the channel fleet §. They went, in the winter of 1694, into a very long examination of the admirals and the orders issued by the admiralty during the preceding year; and then voted that the sending the fleet to the Mediterranean, and the continuing it there this winter, has been to the honour and interest of his majesty and his kingdoms ‖. But it is hardly worth while to enumerate later instances of exercising a right which had become indisputable; and even before it rested on the

* Commons' Journals, June 1. Aug. 12.

† Id. Nov. 1.

‡ Parl. Hist. 657. Dalrymple. Commons and Lords' Journals.

§ Parl. Hist. 793. Delaval and Killigrew were jacobites, whom William generously but imprudently put into the command of the fleet.

‖ Commons' Journals, 27 Feb. 1694-5.

basis of precedent could not reasonably be denied to those who might advise, remonstrate, and impeach. CHAP. XV. William.

It is not surprising, that after such important acquisitions of power, the natural spirit of encroachment, or the desire to distress a hostile government, should have led to endeavours, which by their success would have drawn the executive administration more directly into the hands of parliament. A proposition was made by some peers, in December 1692, for a committee of both houses to consider of the present state of the nation, and what advice should be given to the king concerning it. This dangerous project was lost by 48 to 36, several tories and dissatisfied whigs uniting in a protest against its rejection *. The king had in his speech to parliament requested their advice in the most general terms; and this slight expression, though no more than is contained in the common writ of summons, was tortured into a pretext for so extraordinary a proposal as that of a committee of delegates, or council of state, which might soon have grasped the entire administration. It was at least a remedy so little according to precedent, or the analogy of our constitution, that some very serious cause of dissatisfaction with the conduct of affairs could be its only excuse.

Burnet has spoken with reprobation of another scheme engendered by the same spirit of inquiry and control, that of a council of trade, to be nominated by parliament, with powers for the effectual preservation of the interests of the merchants. If the members of it were intended to be immoveable, or if the vacancies were to be filled by consent of parliament, this would indeed have encroached on the prerogative in a far more eminent degree than the famous India bill of 1783, because its operation would have been more extensive and more at home. And even if they were only named in the first instance, as has been usual in parliamentary commissioners of account or inquiry, it would still be

* Parl. Hist. 941. Burnet, 105.

CHAP. XV. William.

material to ask, what extent of power for the preservation of trade was to be placed in their hands. The precise nature of the scheme is not explained by Burnet. But it appears by the Journals that this council were to receive information from merchants as to the necessity of convoys, and send directions to the board of admiralty, subject to the king's control, to receive complaints and represent the same to the king, and in many other respects to exercise very important and anomalous functions. They were not, however, to be members of the house. But even with this restriction, it was too hazardous a departure from the general maxims of the constitution *.

The general unpopularity of William's administration, and more particularly the reduction of the forces, afford an ample justification for the two treaties of partition which the tory faction, with scandalous injustice and inconsistency, turned to his reproach. No one could deny, that the aggrandizement of France by both of these treaties was of serious consequence. But according to English interests, the first object was to secure the Spanish Netherlands from becoming provinces of that power; the next to maintain the real independence of Spain and the Indies. Italy was but the last in order, and though the possession of Naples and Sicily, with the ports of Tuscany, as stipulated in the treaty of partition, would have rendered France absolute mistress of that whole country and of the Mediterranean sea, and essentially changed the balance of Europe, it was yet more tolerable than the acquisition of the whole monarchy in the name of a Bourbon prince, which the opening of the succession without previous arrangement was likely to produce. They at least, who shrunk from the thought of another war, and studiously depreciated the value of continental alliances, were the last who ought to have exclaimed against a treaty which had been ratified as the

* Burnet, 163. Commons' Journals, Jan. 31, 1695-6. An abjuration of K. James's title in very strong terms was proposed as a qualification for members of this council; but this was lost by 195 to 188.

sole means of giving us something like security without the cost of fighting for it. Nothing, therefore, could be more unreasonable than the clamour of a tory house of commons in 1701 (for the malecontent whigs were now so consolidated with the tories, as in general to bear their name) against the partition treaties; nothing more unfair than the impeachment of the four lords, Portland, Orford, Somers and Halifax on that account. But we must at the same time remark, that it is more easy to vindicate the partition treaties themselves, than to reconcile the conduct of the king and of some others with the principles established in our constitution. William had taken these important negotiations wholly into his own hands, not even communicating them to any of his English ministers, except lord Jersey, until his resolution was finally settled. Lord Somers, as chancellor, had put the great seal to blank powers, as a legal authority to the negotiators, which evidently could not be valid, unless on the dangerous principle that the seal is conclusive against all exception *. He had also sealed the ratification of the treaty, though not consulted upon it, and though he seems to have had objections to some of the terms; and in both instances he set up the king's command as a sufficient defence. The exclusion of all those, whom, whether called privy or cabinet counsellors, the nation holds responsible for its safety, from this great negotiation, tended to throw back the whole executive government into the single will of the sovereign, and ought to have exasperated the house of commons far more than the actual treaties of partition, which may probably have been the safest choice in a most perilous condition of Europe. The impeachments, however, were in most respects so ill substantiated by proof, that they have generally been reckoned a disgraceful instance of party spirit †.

* See speaker Onslow's Note on Burnet (Oxf. edit. 4. 468.), and lord Hardwicke's hint of his father's opinion. Id. 475. But see also lord Somers's plea as to this. State Trials, 13. 267.

† Parl. Hist. State Trials, 14. 233. The letters of William, published in the Hardwicke State Papers, are both the most authentic and the most satisfactory explanation of his policy during the three mo-

CHAP. XV. William.

The whigs, such of them at least as continued to hold that name in honour, soon forgave the mistakes and failings of their great deliverer, and indeed a high regard for the memory of William III. may justly be reckoned one of the tests by which genuine whiggism has always been recognised. By the opposite party he was rancorously hated, and their malignant calumnies still sully the stream of history *. Let us leave such as prefer Charles I. to William III. in the enjoyment of prejudices which are not likely to be overcome by argument. But it must ever be an honour to the English crown that it has been worn by so great a man. Compared with him, the statesmen who surrounded his throne, the Sunderlands, Godolphins, and Shrewsburys, even the Somerses and Montagues, sink into insignificance. He was, in truth, too great, not for the times wherein he was called to action, but for the peculiar condition of a king of England after the revolution; and as he was the last sovereign of this country whose understanding and energy of character have been very distin-

mentous years that closed the seventeenth century. It is said, in a note of lord Hardwicke on Burnet (Oxford edit. iv. 417), (from lord Somers's papers), that when some of the ministers objected to parts of the treaty, lord Portland's constant answer was, that nothing could be altered; upon which one of them said, if that was the case, he saw no reason why they should be called together. And it appears by the Shrewsbury papers, p. 371, that the duke, though secretary of state, and in a manner prime minister, was entirely kept by the king out of the secret of the negotiations which ended in the peace of Ryswick: whether, after all, there remained some lurking distrust of his fidelity, or from whatever other cause this took place, it was very anomalous and unconstitutional. And it must be owned, that by this sort of proceeding, which could have no sufficient apology but a deep sense of the unworthiness of mankind, William brought on himself much of that dislike which appears so ungrateful and unaccountable.

As to the impeachments, few have pretended to justify them; even Ralph is half ashamed of the party he espouses with so little candour towards their adversaries. The scandalous conduct of the tories in screening the earl of Jersey, while they impeached the whig lords, some of whom had really borne no part in a measure he had promoted, sufficiently displays the factiousness of their motives. See lord Haversham's speech on this. Parl. Hist. 1298.

* Bishop Fleetwood, in a sermon preached in 1703, says of William, "whom all the world of friends and enemies know how to value, except a *few English wretches.*" Kennet, 840. Boyer, in his History of the Reign of Queen Anne, p. 12, says, that the king spent most of his private fortune, computed at no less than two millions, in the service of the English nation. I should be glad to have found this vouched by better authority.

guished, so was he the last who has encountered the resistance of his parliament, or stood apart and undisguised in the maintenance of his own prerogative. His reign is no doubt one of the most important in our constitutional history, both on account of its general character, which I have slightly sketched, and of those beneficial alterations in our law to which it gave rise. These now call for our attention. CHAP. XV. William.

The enormous duration of seventeen years, for which Charles II. protracted his second parliament, turned the thoughts of all who desired improvements in the constitution towards some limitation on a prerogative which had not hitherto been thus abused. Not only the continuance of the same house of commons during such a period destroyed the connexion between the people and their representatives, and laid open the latter, without responsibility, to the corruption which was hardly denied to prevail, but the privilege of exemption from civil process made needy and worthless men secure against their creditors, and desirous of a seat in parliament as a complete safeguard to fraud and injustice. The term of three years appeared sufficient to establish a control of the electoral over the representative body, without recurring to the ancient but inconvenient scheme of annual parliaments, which men enamoured of a still more popular form of government than our own were eager to recommend. A bill for this purpose was brought into the house of lords in December 1689, but lost by the prorogation *. It passed both houses early in 1693, the whigs generally supporting, and the tories opposing it; but on this, as on many other great questions of this reign, the two parties were not so regularly arrayed against each other as on points of a more personal nature †. To this bill the king refused his assent; an exercise of prerogative which no ordinary circumstances can reconcile either with prudence or with a constitutional administration of government. But the commons, as it was easy

* Lords' Journals.

† Parl. Hist. 754.

CHAP. XV. William.

to foresee, did not abandon so important a measure; a similar bill received the royal assent in November 1694*. By the triennial bill it was simply provided, that every parliament should cease and determine within three years from its meeting. The clause contained in the act of Charles II. against the intermission of parliaments for more than three years is repeated; but it was not thought necessary to revive the somewhat violent and perhaps impracticable provisions by which the act of 1641 had secured their meeting; it being evident that even annual sessions might now be relied upon as indispensable to the machine of government.

This annual assembly of parliament was rendered necessary, in the first place, by the strict appropriation of the revenue according to votes of supply. It was secured, nextly, by passing the mutiny-bill, under which the army is held together, and subjected to military discipline, for a short term, seldom or never exceeding twelve months. These are the two effectual securities against military power; that no pay can be issued to the troops without a previous authorization by the commons in a committee of supply, and by both houses in an act of appropriation; and that no officer or soldier can be punished for disobedience, nor any court martial held, without the annual re-enactment of the mutiny-bill. Thus it is strictly true, that if the king were not to summon parliament every year, his army would cease to have a legal existence, and the refusal of either house to concur in the mutiny-bill would at once wrest the sword out of his grasp. By the bill of rights, it is declared unlawful to keep any forces in time of peace without consent of parliament. This consent, by an invariable and wholesome usage, is given only from year to year; and its necessity may be considered perhaps the most powerful of those causes which have transferred so much even of the executive power into the management of the two houses of parliament.

* 6 W. and M. c. 2.

The reign of William is also distinguished by the provisions introduced into our law for the security of the subject against iniquitous condemnations on the charge of high treason, and intended to perfect those of earlier times, which had proved insufficient against the partiality of judges. But upon this occasion it will be necessary to take up the history of our constitutional law on this important head from the beginning.

In the earlier ages of our law, the crime of high treason appears to have been of a vague and indefinite nature, determined only by such arbitrary construction as the circumstances of each particular case might suggest. It was held treason to kill the king's father, or his uncle; and Mortimer was attainted for accroaching, as it was called, royal power; that is, for keeping the administration in his own hands, though without violence towards the reigning prince. But no people can enjoy a free constitution, unless an adequate security is furnished by their laws against this discretion of judges in a matter so closely connected with the mutual relation between the government and its subjects. A petition was accordingly presented to Edward III. by one of the best parliaments that ever sat, requesting that "whereas the king's justices in different counties adjudge men indicted before them to be traitors for divers matters not known by the commons to be treasonable, the king would, by his council, and the nobles and learned men (les grands et sages) of the land, declare in parliament what should be held for treason." The answer to this petition is in the words of the existing statute, which, as it is by no means so prolix as it is important, I shall place before the reader's eyes.

"Whereas divers opinions have been before this time in what case treason shall be said, and in what not, the king at the request of the lords and commons hath made a declaration in the manner as hereafter followeth; that is to say, when a man doth compass or imagine the death of our lord the king, of my lady his queen, or of their eldest son and heir: or if a man do violate

CHAP. XV. William.

the king's companion or the king's eldest daughter unmarried, or the wife of the king's eldest son and heir; or if a man do levy war against our lord the king in his realm, or be adherent to the king's enemies in his realm, giving to them aid and comfort in the realm or elsewhere, and thereof be proveably attainted of open deed by people of their condition. And if a man counterfeit the king's great or privy seal, or his money; and if a man bring false money into this realm, counterfeit to the money of England, as the money called Lusheburgh, or other like to the said money of England, knowing the money to be false, to merchandize or make payment in deceipt of our said lord the king and of his people. And if a man slay the chancellor, treasurer, or the king's justices of the one bench or the other, justices in eyre, or justices of assise, and all other justices assigned to hear and determine, being in their place doing their offices. And it is to be understood, that in the cases above rehearsed, it ought to be judged treason which extends to our lord the king and his royal majesty. And of such treason the forfeiture of the escheats pertaineth to our lord the king, as well of the lands and tenements holden of others as of himself*."

It seems impossible not to observe, that the want of distinct arrangement natural to so unphilosophical an age, and which renders many of our old statutes very confused, is eminently displayed in this strange conjunction of offences; where to counterfeit the king's seal, which might be for the sake of private fraud, and even his coin, which must be so, is ranged along with all that really endangers the established government, with conspiracy and insurrection. But this is an objection of little magnitude, compared with one that arises out of an omission in enumerating the modes whereby treason could be committed. In most other offences, the intention, however manifest, the contrivance, however deliberate, the attempt, however casually

* Rot. Parl. ii. 239. 3 Inst. 1.

rendered abortive, form so many degrees of malignity, or at least of mischief, which the jurisprudence of most countries, and none more than England, has been accustomed to distinguish from the perpetrated action by awarding an inferior punishment, or even none at all. Nor is this distinction merely founded on a difference in the moral indignation with which we are impelled to regard an inchoate and a consummate crime, but is warranted by a principle of reason, since the penalties attached to the completed offence spread their terror over all the machinations preparatory to it; and he who fails in his stroke has had the murderer's fate as much before his eyes as the more dexterous assassin. But those who conspire against the constituted government connect in their sanguine hope the assurance of impunity with the execution of their crime, and would justly deride the mockery of an accusation which could only be preferred against them when their banners were unfurled, and their force arrayed. It is as reasonable, therefore, as it is conformable to the usages of every country, to place conspiracies against the sovereign power upon the footing of actual rebellion, and to crush those by the penalties of treason, who, were the law to wait for their opportunity, might silence or pervert the law itself. Yet in this famous statute we find it only declared treasonable to compass or imagine the king's death, while no project of rebellion appears to fall within the letter of its enactments, unless it ripen into a substantive act of levying war.

I am less inclined to attribute this material omission to the laxity which I have already remarked to be usual in our older laws, than to apprehensions entertained by the barons, that if a mere design to levy war should be rendered treasonable, they might be exposed to much false testimony and arbitrary construction. But strained constructions of this very statute, if such were their aim, they did not prevent. I do not now advert to the more extravagant convictions under this statute in some violent reigns; but it gradually became an established doctrine with

CHAP. XV. William.

lawyers, that a conspiracy to levy war against the king's person, though not in itself a distinct treason, may be given in evidence as an overt act of compassing his death. Great as the authorities may be on which this depends, and reasonable as it surely is that such offences should be brought within the pale of high treason, yet I must confess, that this doctrine has ever appeared to me utterly irreconcilable with any fair interpretation of the statute. It has indeed, by some, been chiefly confined to cases where the attempt meditated is directly against the king's person, for the purpose of deposing him, or of compelling him, while under actual duress, to a change of measures; and this was construed into a compassing of his death, since any such violence must endanger his life, and because, as has been said, the prisons and graves of princes are not very distant *. But it seems not very reasonable to found a capital conviction on such a sententious remark; nor is it by any means true that a design against a king's life is necessarily to be inferred from the attempt to get possession of his person. So far, indeed, is this from being a general rule, that in a multitude of instances, especially during the minority or imbecility of a king, the purposes of conspirators would be wholly defeated by the death of the sovereign whose name they designed to employ. But there is still less pretext for applying the same construction

* 3 Inst. 12. 1 Hale's Pleas of Crown, 120. Foster, 195. Coke lays it down positively, p. 14, that a conspiracy to levy war is not high treason, as an overt act of compassing the king's death. "For this were to confound the several classes or membra dividentia." Hale objects, that Coke himself cites the case of lords Essex and Southampton, which seems to contradict that opinion. But it may be answered, in the first place, that a conspiracy to levy war was made high treason during the life of Elizabeth; and secondly, that Coke's words as to that case are, that they "intended to go to the court where the queen was, and to have taken her into their power, and to have removed divers of her council, and *for that end did assemble a multitude of people:* this being raised to the end aforesaid, was a sufficient overt act of compassing the death of the queen." The earliest case is that of Storie, who was convicted of compassing the queen's death on evidence of exciting a foreign power to invade the kingdom. But he was very obnoxious, and the precedent is not good. Hale, 122.

It is also held, that an actual levying war may be laid as an overt act of compassing the king's death, which indeed follows a fortiori from the former proposition; provided it be not a constructive rebellion, but one really directed against the royal authority. Hale, 123.

to schemes of insurrection, when the royal person is not directly the object of attack, and where no circumstance indicates any hostile intention towards his safety. This ample extension of so penal a statute was first given, if I am not mistaken, by the judges in 1663, on occasion of a meeting by some persons at Farley Wood in Yorkshire *, in order to concert measures for a rising. But it was afterwards confirmed in Harding's case, immediately after the revolution, and has been repeatedly laid down from the bench in subsequent proceedings for treason, as well as in treatises of very great authority †. It has therefore all the weight of established precedent; yet I question whether another instance can be found in our jurisprudence of giving so large a construction, not only to a penal, but to any other statute ‡. Nor does it speak in favour of this construction, that temporary laws have been enacted on various occasions to render a conspiracy to levy war treasonable, for which purpose, according to this current doctrine, the statute of Edward III. needed no supplemental provision. Such acts were passed under Elizabeth, Charles II., and George III., each of them limited to the existing reign §. But it is very seldom that, in an hereditary monarchy, the reigning prince ought to be secured by any peculiar provisions; and though

* Hale, 121.

† Foster's Discourse on High Treason, 196. State Trials, xii. 646. 790. 818; xiii. 62, (sir John Friend's case) et alibi. This important question having arisen on lord Russell's trial, gave rise to a controversy between two eminent lawyers, sir Bartholomew Shower and sir Robert Atkins; the former maintaining, the latter denying, that a conspiracy to depose the king and to seize his guards was an overt act of compassing his death. State Trials, ix. 719. 818.

See also Phillipps's State Trials, ii. 39. 78; a work to which I might have referred in other places, and which shows the well known judgment and impartiality of the author.

‡ In the whole series of authorities, however, on this subject, it will be found that the probable danger to the king's safety from rebellion was the ground-work upon which this constructive treason rested; nor did either Hale or Foster, Pemberton or Holt, ever dream that any other death was intended by the statute than that of nature. It was reserved for a modern crown lawyer to resolve this language into a metaphysical personification, and to argue that the king's person being interwoven with the state, and its sole representative, any conspiracy against the constitution must of its own nature be a conspiracy against his life. State Trials, xxiv. 1133.

§ 13 Eliz. c. 1.; 13 Car. 2. c. 1.; 36 G. 3. c. 7.

CHAP. XV. William.

the remarkable circumstances of Elizabeth's situation exposed her government to unusual perils, there seems an air of adulation or absurdity in the two latter instances. Finally, the act of 57 G. III. c. 6. has confirmed, if not extended, what stood on rather a precarious basis, and rendered perpetual that of 36 G. III. c. 7, which enacts, "that if any person or persons whatsoever, during the life of the king, and until the end of the next session of parliament after a demise of the crown, shall, within the realm or without, compass, imagine, invent, devise, or intend death or destruction, or any bodily harm tending to death or destruction, maim or wounding, imprisonment or restraint of the person of the same our sovereign lord the king, his heirs and successors, or to deprive or depose him or them from the style, honour, or kingly name of the imperial crown of this realm, or of any other of his majesty's dominions or countries, or to levy war against his majesty, his heirs and successors, within this realm, in order, by force or constraint, to compel him or them to change his or their measures or counsels, or in order to put any force or constraint upon, or to intimidate or overawe, both houses, or either house of parliament, or to move or stir any foreigner or stranger with force to invade this realm, or any other his majesty's dominions or countries under the obeisance of his majesty, his heirs and successors; and such compassings, imaginations, inventions, devices, and intentions, or any of them, shall express, utter, or declare, by publishing any printing or writing, or by any overt act or deed; being legally convicted thereof upon the oaths of two lawful and credible witnesses, shall be adjudged a traitor, and suffer as in cases of high treason."

This from henceforth will become our standard of constitutional law, instead of the statute of Edward III., the latterly received interpretations of which it sanctions and embodies. But it is to be noted as the doctrine of our most approved authorities, that a conspiracy for many purposes which, if carried into effect, would incur the guilt of treason, will not of itself amount to it.

The constructive interpretation of compassing the king's death appears only applicable to conspiracies, whereof the intent is to depose or to use personal compulsion towards him, or to usurp the administration of his government*. But though insurrections in order to throw down all enclosures, to alter the established law or change religion, or in general for the reformation of alleged grievances of a public nature, wherein the insurgents have no special interest, are in themselves treasonable, yet the previous concert and conspiracy for such purpose could, under the statute of Edward III., only pass for a misdemeanour. Hence, while it has been positively laid down, that an attempt by intimidation and violence to force the repeal of a law is high treason †, though directed rather against the two houses of parliament than the king's person, the judges did not venture to declare, that a mere conspiracy and consultation to raise a force for that purpose would amount to that offence ‡. But the statutes of 36 and 57 Geo. III. determine the intention to levy war, in order to put any force upon or to intimidate either house of parliament, manifested by any overt act, to be treason, and so far have undoubtedly extended the scope of the law. We may hope that so ample a legislative declaration on the law of treason will put an end to the preposterous interpretations which have found too much countenance on some not very distant occasions. The crime of compassing and imagining the king's death must be manifested by some overt act; that is, there must be something done in execution of a traitorous purpose. For as no hatred towards the person of the sovereign, nor any longings for his death, are the imagination which the law here intends, it seems to follow that loose words or writings, in which such hostile feelings may be embodied, unconnected with any positive design, cannot amount to treason. It is now, therefore, gene-

* Hale, 123. Foster, 213.

† Lord George Gordon's case, State Trials, xxi. 649.

‡ Hardy's Case, Id. xxiv. 208. The language of Eyre is sufficiently remarkable.; his courage was more wanting than his will.

CHAP. XV. William.

rally agreed, that no words will constitute that offence, unless as evidence of some overt act of treason; and the same appears clearly to be the case with respect at least to unpublished writings *.

The second clause of the statute, or that which declares the levying of war against the king within the realm to be treason, has given rise, in some instances, to constructions hardly less strained than those upon compassing his death. It would indeed be a very narrow interpretation, as little required by the letter, as warranted by the reason of this law, to limit the expression of levying war to rebellions, whereof the deposition of the sovereign, or subversion of his government, should be the deliberate object. Force, unlawfully directed against the supreme authority, constitutes this offence; nor could it have been admitted as an excuse for the wild attempt of the earl of Essex, on this charge of levying war, that his aim was not to injure the queen's person, but to drive his adversaries from her presence. The only questions as to this kind of treason are; first, what shall be understood by force? and secondly, where it shall be construed to be directed against the government? And the solution of both these, upon consistent principles, must so much depend on the circumstances which vary the character of almost every case, that it seems natural to distrust the general maxims that have been delivered by lawyers. Many decisions in cases of treason, before the revolution, were made by men so servile and corrupt, they violate so grossly all natural right, and all reasonable interpretation of law, that it has generally been accounted among the most important benefits of that event to have restored a purer admi-

* Foster, 198. He seems to concur in Hale's opinion, that words which being spoken will not amount to an overt act to make good an indictment for compassing the king's death, yet if reduced into writing, and published, will make such an overt act, "if the matters contained in them import such a compassing." Hale's Pleas of Crown, 118. But this is indefinitely expressed; and the case of Williams, under James I., which Hale cites in corroboration of this, will hardly be approved by any constitutional lawyer.

nistration of criminal justice. But though the memory of those who pronounced these decisions is stigmatized, their authority, so far from being abrogated, has influenced later and better men; and it is rather an unfortunate circumstance, that precedents which, from the character of the times when they occurred, would lose at present all respect, having been transfused into text-books, and formed perhaps the sole basis of subsequent decisions, are still, in not a few points, the invisible foundation of our law. No lawyer, I conceive, prosecuting for high treason in this age, would rely on the case of the duke of Norfolk, under Elizabeth, or that of Williams under James I., or that of Benstead under Charles I.; but he would certainly not fail to dwell on the authorities of sir Edward Coke and sir Matthew Hale. Yet these eminent men, and especially the latter, aware that our law is mainly built on adjudged precedent, and not daring to reject that which they would not have themselves asserted, will be found to have rather timidly exercised their judgment in the construction of this statute, yielding a deference to former authority which we have transferred to their own.

These observations are particularly applicable to that class of cases so repugnant to the general understanding of mankind, and, I believe, of most lawyers, wherein trifling insurrections for the purpose of destroying brothels or meeting-houses have been held treasonable under the clause of levying war. Nor does there seem any ground for the defence which has been made for this construction, by taking a distinction, that although a rising to effect a partial end by force is only a riot, yet where a general purpose of the kind is in view it becomes rebellion; and thus, though to pull down the enclosures in a single manor be not treason against the king, yet to destroy all enclosures throughout the kingdom would be an infringement of his sovereign power. For however solid this distinction may be, yet in the class of cases to which I allude, this general purpose was neither attempted to be made out in evidence, nor rendered probable by the circum-

CHAP. XV. William.

stances, nor was the distinction ever taken upon the several trials. A few apprentices rose in London in the reign of Charles II., and destroyed some brothels *. A mob of watermen and others, at the time of Sacheverell's impeachment, set on fire several dissenting meeting-houses †. Every thing like a formal attack on the established government is so much excluded in these instances by the very nature of the offence, and the means of the offenders, that it is impossible to withhold our reprobation from the original decision, upon which, with too much respect for unreasonable and unjust authority, the later cases have been established. These indeed still continue to be cited as law, but it is much to be doubted whether a conviction for treason will ever again be obtained, or even sought for, under similar circumstances. One reason indeed for this, were there no weight in any other, might suffice; the punishment of tumultuous risings, attended with violence, has been rendered capital by the riot-act of George I. and other statutes; so that, in the present state of the law, it is generally more advantageous for the government to treat an offence as felony than as treason.

It might for a moment be doubted, upon the statute of Edward VI., whether the two witnesses whom the act requires must not depose to the same overt acts of treason. But as this would

* Hale, 134. It is observable that Hale himself, as chief baron, differed from the other judges in this case.

† This is the well-known case of Damaree and Purchase, State Trials, xv. 520. Foster, 213. A rabble had attended Sacheverell from Westminster to his lodgings in the Temple. Some among them proposed to pull down the meeting-houses; a cry was raised, and several of these were destroyed. It appeared to be their intention to pull down all within their reach. Upon this overt act of levying war the prisoners were convicted; some of the judges differing as to one of them, but merely on the application of the evidence to his case. Notwithstanding this solemn decision, and the approbation with which sir Michael Foster has stamped it, some difficulty would arise in distinguishing this case, as reported, from many indictments under the riot-act for mere felony, and especially from those of the Birmingham rioters in 1791, where the similarity of motives, though the mischief in the latter instance was far more extensive, would naturally have suggested the same species of prosecution as was adopted against Damaree and Purchase. It may be remarked, that neither of these men was executed; which, notwithstanding the sarcastic observation of Foster, might possibly be owing to an opinion, which every one but a lawyer must have entertained, that their offence did not amount to treason.

give an undue security to conspirators, so it is not necessarily implied by the expression; nor would it be indeed the most unwarrantable latitude that has been given to this branch of penal law, to maintain, that two witnesses to any distinct acts comprised in the same indictment would satisfy the letter of this enactment. But a more wholesome distinction appears to have been taken before the revolution, and is established by the statute of William, that, although different overt acts may be proved by two witnesses, they must relate to the same species of treason, so that one witness to an alleged act of compassing the king's death cannot be conjoined with another deposing to an act of levying war, in order to make up the required number *. As for the practice of courts of justice before the restoration, it was so much at variance with all principles, that few prisoners were allowed the benefit of this statute †; succeeding judges fortunately deviated more from their predecessors in the method of conducting trials than they have thought themselves at liberty to do in laying down rules of law.

Nothing had brought so much disgrace on the councils of government, and on the administration of justice, nothing more forcibly spoken the necessity of a great change, than the prosecutions for treason during the latter years of Charles II., and in truth during the whole course of our legal history. The statutes of Edward III. and Edward VI., almost set aside by sophistical constructions, required the corroboration of some more explicit law; and some peculiar securities were demanded for innocence against that conspiracy of the court with the prosecutor, which is so much to be dreaded in all trials for political crimes. Hence the attainders of Russell, Sidney, Cornish, and Armstrong were reversed by the convention-parliament without opposition; and men attached to liberty and justice, whether of the whig or tory name, were anxious to prevent any future recurrence of those

* 7 W. 3. c. 3. § 4. Foster, 257.

† Foster, 234.

CHAP. XV. William.

iniquitous proceedings, by which the popular frenzy at one time, the wickedness of the court at another, and in each instance with the co-operation of a servile bench of judges, had sullied the honour of English justice. A better tone of political sentiment had begun indeed to prevail, and the spirit of the people must ever be a more effectual security than the virtue of the judges; yet, even after the revolution, if no unjust or illegal convictions in cases of treason can be imputed to our tribunals, there was still not a little of that rudeness towards the prisoner, and manifestation of a desire to interpret all things to his prejudice, which had been more grossly displayed by the bench under Charles II. The jacobites, against whom the law now directed its terrors, as loudly complained of Treby and Pollexfen, as the whigs had of Scroggs and Jefferies, and weighed the convictions of Ashton and Anderton against those of Russell and Sidney *.

Ashton was a gentleman, who, in company with lord Preston, was seized in endeavouring to go over to France with an invitation from the jacobite party. The contemporary writers on that side, and some historians who incline to it, have represented his conviction as grounded upon insufficient, because only upon presumptive evidence. It is true, that in most of our earlier cases of treason, treasonable facts have been directly proved; whereas it was left to the jury in that of Ashton, whether they were satisfied of his acquaintance with the contents of certain papers taken on his person. There does not, however, seem to be any reason why presumptive inferences are to be rejected in charges of treason, or

* "Would you have trials secured?" says the author of the Jacobite Principles vindicated (Somers Tracts, 10. 526). "It is the interest of all parties care should be taken about them, or all parties will suffer in their turns. Plunket, and Sidney, and Ashton were doubtless all murdered, though they were never so guilty of the crimes wherewith they were charged; the one tried twice, the other found guilty upon one evidence, and the last upon nothing but presumptive proof." Even the prostitute lawyer, sir Bartholomew Shower, had the assurance to complain of uncertainty in the law of treason. Id. 572. And Roger North, in his Examen, p. 411, labours hard to show that the evidence in Ashton's case was slighter than in Sidney's.

why they should be drawn with more hesitation than in other grave offences; and if this be admitted, there can be no doubt that the evidence against Ashton was such as is ordinarily reckoned conclusive. It is stronger than that offered for the prosecution against O'Quigley at Maidstone, in 1798, a case of the closest resemblance; and yet I am not aware, that the verdict in that instance was thought open to censure. No judge, however, in modern times, would question, much less reply upon the prisoner, as to material points of his defence, as Holt and Pollexfen did in this trial; the practice of a neighbouring kingdom, which, in our more advanced sense of equity and candour, we are agreed to condemn *.

It is perhaps less easy to justify the conduct of chief-justice Treby in the trial of Anderton for printing a treasonable pamphlet. The testimony came very short of satisfactory proof, according to the established rules of English law, though by no means such as men in general would slight. It chiefly consisted of a comparison between the characters of a printed work found concealed in his lodgings, and certain types belonging to his press; a comparison manifestly less admissible than that of hand-writing, which is always rejected, and indeed totally inconsistent with the rigour of English proof. Besides the common objections made to a comparison of hands, and which apply more forcibly to printed characters, it is manifest that types cast in the same font must always be exactly similar. But, on the other hand, it seems unreasonable absolutely to exclude, as our courts have done, the comparison of hand-writing as inadmissible evidence; a rule which is every day eluded by fresh rules, not much more rational in themselves, which have been invented to get rid of its inconvenience. There seems however much danger in the construction which draws printed libels, unconnected with any conspiracy, within the pale of treason, and especially the treason of com-

* State Trials, xii. 646.—See 668 and 799.

CHAP. XV. William.

passing the king's death, unless where they directly tend to his assassination. No later authority can, as far as I remember, be adduced for the prosecution of any libel, as treasonable, under the statute of Edward III. But the pamphlet for which Anderton was convicted was certainly full of the most audacious jacobitism, and might perhaps fall, by no unfair construction, within the charge of adhering to the king's enemies; since no one could be more so than James, whose design of invading the realm had been frequently avowed by himself*.

A bill for regulating trials upon charges of high treason passed the commons with slight resistance by the crown lawyers in 1691 †. The lords introduced a provision in their own favour, that upon the trial of a peer in the court of the high steward, all such as were entitled to vote should be regularly summoned; it having been the practice to select twenty-three at the discretion of the crown. Those who wished to hinder the bill availed themselves of the jealousy which the commons in that age entertained of the upper house of parliament, and persuaded them to disagree with this just and reasonable amendment ‡. It fell to the ground, therefore, on this occasion; and though more than once revived in subsequent sessions, the same difference between the two houses continued to be insuperable §. In the new parliament that met in 1695, the commons had the good sense to recede from an irrational jealousy. Notwithstanding the reluctance of the ministry, for which perhaps the very dangerous position of the king's government furnishes an apology, this excellent statute was enacted as an additional guarantee (in such bad times as might again occur) to those who are prominent in their country's

* State Trials, xii. 1245. Ralph, 420. Somers Tracts, x. 472. The jacobites took a very frivolous objection to the conviction of Anderton, that printing could not be treason within the statute of Edward III., because it was not invented for a century afterwards. According to this rule, it could not be treason to shoot the king with a pistol, or poison him with an American drug.

† Parl. Hist. v. 698.

‡ Id. 675.

§ Id. 712. 737. Commons' Journals, Feb. 8, 1695.

cause, against the great danger of false accusers and iniquitous judges*. It provides that all persons indicted for high treason shall have a copy of their indictment delivered to them five days before their trial, a period extended by a subsequent act to ten days, and a copy of the panel of jurors two days before their trial; that they shall be allowed to have their witnesses examined on oath, and to make their defence by counsel. It clears up any doubt that could be pretended on the statute of Edward VI., by requiring two witnesses, either both to the same overt act, or the first to one, the second to another overt act of the same treason (that is, the same kind of treason), unless the party shall voluntarily confess the charge†. It limits prosecutions for treason to the term of three years, except in the case of an attempted assassination on the king. It includes the contested provision for the trial of peers by all who have a right to sit and vote in parliament. A later statute, 7 Anne, c. 21, which may be mentioned here as the complement of the former, has added a peculiar privilege to the accused, hardly less material than any of the rest. Ten days before the trial, a list of the witnesses intended to be brought for proving the indictment, with their professions and places of abode, must be delivered to the prisoner, along with the copy of the indictment. The operation of this clause was suspended till after the death of the pretended prince of Wales.

Notwithstanding a hasty remark of Burnet, that the design of this bill seemed to be to make men as safe in all treasonable prac-

* Parl. Hist. 965. Journal, 17 Feb. 1696. Stat. 7. W. 3. c. 3. Though the court opposed this bill, it was certainly favoured by the zealous whigs, as much as by the opposite party.

† When several persons of distinction were arrested on account of a jacobite conspiracy in 1690, there was but one witness against some of them. The judges were consulted, whether they could be indicted for a high misdemeanour on this single testimony, as Hampden had been in 1685, the attorney-general Treby maintaining this to be lawful. Four of the judges were positively against this, two more doubtfully the same way, one altogether doubtful, and three in favour of it. The scheme was very properly abandoned; and at present, I suppose, nothing can be more established than the negative. Dalrymple, append. 186.

CHAP. XV. William.

tices as possible, it ought to be considered a valuable accession to our constitutional law; and no part, I think, of either statute will be reckoned inexpedient, when we reflect upon the history of all nations, and more especially of our own. The history of all nations, and more especially of our own, in the fresh recollection of those who took a share in these acts, teaches us that false accusers are always encouraged by a bad government, and may easily deceive a good one. A prompt belief in the spies whom they perhaps necessarily employ, in the voluntary informers who dress up probable falsehoods, is so natural and constant in the offices of ministers, that the best are to be heard with suspicion when they bring forward such testimony. One instance at least had occurred since the revolution, of charges unquestionably false in their specific details, preferred against men of eminence by impostors, who panted for the laurels of Oates and Turberville *. And as men who are accused of conspiracy against a government are generally such as are beyond question disaffected to it, the indiscriminating temper of the prejudging people, from whom juries must be taken, is as much to be apprehended, when it happens to be favourable to authority, as that of the government itself, and requires as much the best securities, imperfect as the best are, which prudence and patriotism can furnish to innocence. That the prisoner's witnesses should be examined on oath will of course not be disputed, since, by a subsequent statute, that strange and unjust anomaly in our criminal law has been removed in all cases as well as in treason; but the judges had sometimes not been ashamed to point out to the jury, in derogation of the credit of those whom a prisoner called in his behalf, that they were not speaking under the same sanction as those for the crown. It was not less reasonable that the defence should be conducted by counsel; since that excuse which is often made for denying the assistance of counsel on charges of felony, namely, the

* State Trials, xii. 1051.

moderation of prosecutors and the humanity of the bench, could never be urged in those political accusations, wherein the advocates for the prosecution contend with all their strength for victory, and the impartiality of the court is rather praised when it is found, than relied upon beforehand*. Nor does there lie any sufficient objection even to that which many dislike, the furnishing a list of the witnesses to the prisoner, when we set on the other side the danger of taking away innocent lives by the testimony of suborned and infamous men, and remember also that a guilty person can rarely be ignorant of those who will bear witness against him; or if he could, that he may always discover those who have been examined before the grand jury, and that no others can in any case be called on the trial.

The subtlety of crown-lawyers in drawing indictments for treason, and the willingness of judges to favour such prosecutions, have considerably eluded the chief difficulties which the several statutes appear to throw in their way. The government has at least had no reason to complain that the construction of those enactments has been too rigid. The overt acts laid in the indictment are expressed so generally, that they give sometimes little insight into the particular circumstances to be adduced in evidence; and though the act of William is positive, that no evidence shall be given of any overt act not laid in the indictment, it has been held allowable, and is become the constant practice, to bring forward such evidence, not as substantive charges, but on the pretence of its tending to prove certain other acts specially alleged. The disposition to extend a constructive interpretation to the statute

* The dexterity with which lord Shaftesbury (the author of the Characteristics), at that time in the house of commons, turned a momentary confusion which came upon him while speaking on this bill, into an argument for extending the aid of counsel to those who might so much more naturally be embarrassed on a trial for their lives, is well known. All well-informed writers ascribe this to Shaftesbury. But Johnson, in the Lives of the Poets, has, through inadvertence, as I believe, given lord Halifax (Montagu) the credit of it, and some have since followed him. As a complete refutation of this mistake, it is sufficient to say, that Mr. Montagu *opposed* the bill. His name appears as a teller on two divisions, 31 Dec. 1691, and 18 Nov. 1692.

CHAP. XV. William.

of Edward III. has continued to increase, and was carried, especially by chief-justice Eyre in the trials of 1794, to a length at which we lose sight altogether of the plain meaning of words, and apparently much beyond what Pemberton or even Jefferies had reached. In the vast mass of circumstantial testimony which our modern trials for high treason display, it is sometimes difficult to discern, whether the great principle of our law, requiring two witnesses to overt acts, has been adhered to; for certainly it is not adhered to, unless such witnesses depose to acts of the prisoner, from which an inference of his guilt is immediately deducible *. There can be no doubt that state prosecutions have long been conducted with an urbanity and exterior moderation unknown to the age of the Stuarts, or even to that of William; but this may by possibility be compatible with very partial wresting of the law, and the substitution of a sort of political reasoning for that strict interpretation of penal statutes which the subject has a right to demand. No confidence in the general integrity of a government, much less in that of its lawyers, least of all any belief in the guilt of an accused person, should beguile us to remit that vigilance which is peculiarly required in such circumstances †.

For this vigilance, and indeed for almost all that keeps up in us, permanently and effectually, the spirit of regard to liberty and the public good, we must look to the unshackled and independent energies of the press. In the reign of William III., and through the influence of the popular principle in our constitution, this finally became free. The licensing act, suffered to expire in 1679, was revived in 1685 for seven years. In 1692, it was continued till the end of the session of 1693. Several attempts were afterwards

* It was said by Scroggs and Jefferies, that if one witness prove that A. bought a knife, and another that he intended to kill the king with it, these are two witnesses within the statute of Edward VI. But this has been justly reprobated.

† Upon some of the topics touched in the foregoing pages, besides Hale and Foster, see Luders' Considerations on the Law of Treason in Levying War, and many remarks in Phillipps's State Trials Reviewed; besides much that is scattered through the notes of Mr. Howell's great collection. Mr. Phillipps's work, however, was not published till after my own was written.

made to renew its operation, which the less courtly whigs combined with the tories and jacobites to defeat *. Both parties indeed employed the press with great diligence in this reign; but while one degenerated into malignant calumny and misrepresentation, the signal victory of liberal principles is manifestly due to the boldness and eloquence with which they were promulgated. Even during the existence of a censorship, a host of unlicensed publications, by the negligence or connivance of the officers employed to seize them, bore witness to the inefficacy of its restrictions. The bitterest invectives of jacobitism were circulated in the first four years after the revolution †.

The liberty of the press consists, in a strict sense, merely in an exemption from the superintendence of a licenser. But it cannot be said to exist in any security, or sufficiently for its principal ends, where discussions of a political or religious nature, whether general or particular, are restrained by too narrow and severe limitations. The law of libel has always been indefinite; an evil probably beyond any complete remedy, but which evidently renders the liberty of free discussion rather more precarious in its exercise than might be wished. It appears to have been the received doctrine in Westminster-Hall before the revolution, that no man might publish a writing reflecting on the government, nor upon the character, or even capacity and fitness, of any one employed in it. Nothing having passed to change the law, the law remained as before. Hence in the case of Tutchin, it is laid down by Holt, that to possess the people with an ill opinion of the government, that is, of the ministry, is a libel. And the attorney-general, in his speech for the prosecution, urges, that

* Commons' Journals, 9 Jan. and 11 Feb. 1694-5. A bill to the same effect sent down from the lords was thrown out, 17 April, 1695. Another bill was rejected on the second reading in 1697. Id. 3 April.

† Somers Tracts passim. John Dunton the bookseller, in the History of his Life and Errors, hints that unlicensed books could be published by a douceur to Robert Stephens, the messenger of the press, whose business it was to inform against them.

CHAP. XV. William.

there can be no reflection on those that are in office under her majesty, but it must cast some reflection on the queen who employs them. Yet in this case the censure upon the administration, in the passages selected for prosecution, was merely general, and without reference to any person, upon which the counsel for Tutchin vainly relied*.

It is manifest that such a doctrine was irreconcilable with the interests of any party out of power, whose best hope to regain it is commonly by prepossessing the nation with a bad opinion of their adversaries. Nor would it have been possible for any ministry to stop the torrent of a free press, under the secret guidance of a powerful faction, by a few indictments for libel. They found it generally more expedient and more agreeable to borrow weapons from the same armoury, and retaliate with unsparing invective and calumny. This was first practised (first, I mean, with the avowed countenance of government) by Swift in the Examiner, and some of his other writings. And both parties soon went such lengths in this warfare, that it became tacitly understood, that the public characters of statesmen, and the measures of administration, are the fair topics of pretty severe attack. Less than this, indeed, would not have contented the political temper of the nation, gradually and without intermission becoming more democratical, and more capable, as well as more accustomed, to judge of its general interests, and of those to whom they were intrusted. The just limit between political and private censure has been far better drawn in these later times, licentious as we still may justly deem the press, than in an age when courts of justice had not deigned to acknowledge, as they do at present, its theoretical liberty. No writer, except of the

* State Trials, xiv. 1103. 1128. Mr. Justice Powell told the Rev. Mr. Stephens, in passing sentence on him for a libel on Harley and Marlborough, that to traduce the queen's ministers was a reflection on the queen herself. It is said, however, that this and other prosecutions were generally blamed, for the public feeling was strong in favour of the liberty of the press. Boyer's Reign of Queen Anne, p. 286.

most broken reputation, would venture at this day on the malignant calumnies of Swift.

Meanwhile the judges naturally adhered to their established doctrine, and, in prosecutions for political libels, were very little inclined to favour what they deemed the presumption, if not the licentiousness, of the press. They advanced a little farther than their predecessors, and, contrary to the practice both before and after the revolution, laid it down at length as an absolute principle, that falsehood, though always alleged in the indictment, was not essential to the guilt of the libel; refusing to admit its truth to be pleaded, or given in evidence, or even urged by way of mitigation of punishment*. But as the defendant could only be convicted by the verdict of a jury, and jurors both partook of the general sentiment in favour of free discussion, and might in certain cases have acquired some prepossessions as to the real truth of the supposed libel, which the court's refusal to enter upon it could not remove, they were often reluctant to find a verdict of guilty; and hence arose by degrees a sort of contention which sometimes showed itself upon trials, and divided both the profession of the law and the general public. The judges and lawyers, for the most part, maintained that the province of the jury was only to determine the fact of publication, and also whether what are called the innuendoes were properly filled up, that is, whether the libel meant that which it was alleged in the indictment to mean, not whether such meaning were criminal or innocent, a question of law which the court were exclusively competent to decide. That the jury might acquit at their plea-

* Pemberton, as I have elsewhere observed, permitted evidence to be given as to the truth of an alleged libel in publishing that sir Edmondbury Godfrey had murdered himself. And what may be reckoned more important, in a trial of the famous Fuller on a similar charge, Holt repeatedly (not less than five times) offered to let him prove the truth if he could. State Trials, xiv. 534. But on the trial of Franklin, in 1731, for publishing a libel in the Craftsman, lord Raymond positively refused to admit of any evidence to prove the matters to be true, and said he was only abiding by what had been formerly done in other cases of the like nature. Id. xvii. 659.

CHAP. XV. William.

sure, was undeniable; but it was asserted that they would do so in violation of their oaths and duty, if they should reject the opinion of the judge by whom they were to be guided as to the general law. Others of great name in our jurisprudence, and the majority of the public at large, conceiving that this would throw the liberty of the press altogether into the hands of the judges, maintained that the jury had a strict right to take the whole matter into their consideration, and determine the defendant's criminality or innocence according to the nature and circumstances of the publication. This controversy, which perhaps hardly arose within the period to which the present work relates, was settled by Mr. Fox's libel bill in 1792. It declares the right of the jury to find a general verdict upon the whole matter; and though, from causes easy to explain, it is not drawn in the most intelligible and consistent manner, was certainly designed to turn the defendant's intention, as it might be laudable or innocent, seditious or malignant, into a matter of fact for their inquiry and decision.

The revolution is justly entitled to honour as the era of religious, in a far greater degree than of civil liberty; the privileges of conscience having had no earlier magna charta and petition of right whereto they could appeal against encroachment. Civil, indeed, and religious liberty had appeared, not as twin sisters and co-heirs, but rather in jealous and selfish rivalry; it was in despite of the law, it was through infringement of the constitution, by the court's connivance, by the dispensing prerogative, by the declarations of indulgence under Charles and James, that some respite had been obtained from the tyranny which those who proclaimed their attachment to civil rights had always exercised against one class of separatists, and frequently against another.

At the time when the test law was enacted, chiefly with a view against popery, but seriously affecting the protestant nonconformists, it was the intention of the house of commons to afford relief to the latter by relaxing in some measure the strict-

ness of the act of uniformity in favour of such ministers as might be induced to conform, by granting an indulgence of worship to those who should persist in their separation. This bill, however, dropped in that session. Several more attempts at an union were devised by worthy men of both parties in that reign, but with no success. It was the policy of the court to withstand a comprehension of dissenters, nor would the bishops admit of any concession worth the others' acceptance. The high church party would not endure any mention of indulgence*. In the parlia-

* See the pamphlets of that age passim. One of these, entitled The Zealous and Impartial Protestant, 1681, the author of which, though well known, I cannot recollect, after much invective, says, "Liberty of conscience and toleration are things only to be talked of and pretended to by those that are under; but none like or think it reasonable that are in authority. 'Tis an instrument of mischief and dissettlement, to be courted by those who would have change, but no way desirable by such as would be quiet, and have the government undisturbed. For it is not consistent with public peace and safety without a standing army; conventicles being eternal nurseries of sedition and rebellion." P. 30. "To strive for toleration," he says in another place, "is to contend against all government. It will come to this, whether there should be a government in the church or not? for if there be a government, there must be laws; if there be laws, there must be penalties annexed to the violation of those laws; otherwise the government is precarious and at every man's mercy; that is, it is none at all.... The constitution should be made firm, whether with any alterations or without them, and laws put in punctual vigorous execution. Till that is done all will signify nothing. The church hath lost all through remissness and non-execution of laws; and by the contrary course things must be reduced, or they never will. To what purpose are parliaments so concerned to prepare good laws, if the officers who are intrusted with the execution neglect that duty, and let them lie dead? This brings laws and government into contempt, and it were much better the laws were never made; by these the dissenters are provoked, and being not restrained by the exacting of the penalties, they are fiercer and more bent upon their own ways than they would be otherwise. But it may be said the execution of laws of conformity raiseth the cry of persecution; and will not that be scandalous? Not so scandalous as anarchy, schism, and eternal divisions and confusions both in church and state. Better that the unruly should clamour than that the regular should groan, and all should be undone." P. 33. Another tract, "Short Defence of the Church and Clergy of England, 1679," declares for union (in his own way), but against a comprehension, and still more a toleration. "It is observable that whereas the best emperors have made the severest laws against all manner of sectaries, Julian the apostate, the most subtle and bitter enemy that Christianity ever had, was the man that set up this way of toleration." P. 87. Such was the temper of this odious faction. And at the time they were instigating the government to fresh severities, by which, I sincerely believe, they meant the pillory or the gallows, for nothing else was wanting, scarce a gaol in England was without nonconformist ministers. One can hardly avoid rejoicing that some of these men, after the revolution, experienced not indeed the per-

CHAP. XV. William.

ment of 1680, a bill to relieve protestant dissenters from the penalties of the 35th of Elizabeth, the most severe act in force against them, having passed both houses, was lost off the table of the house of lords, at the moment that the king came to give his assent; an artifice by which he evaded the odium of an explicit refusal*. Meanwhile the non-conforming ministers, and in many cases their followers, experienced a harassing persecution under the various penal laws that oppressed them; the judges, especially in the latter part of this reign, when some good magistrates were gone, and still more the justices of the peace, among whom a high-church ardour was prevalent, crowding the gaols with the pious confessors of puritanism †. Under so rigorous an administration of statute law, it was not unnatural to take the shelter offered by the declaration of indulgence; but the dissenters never departed from their ancient abhorrence of popery and arbitrary power, and embraced the terms of reconciliation and alliance which the church, in its distress, held out to them. A scheme of comprehension was framed under the auspices of archbishop Sancroft before the revolution. Upon the completion of the new settlement it was determined, with the apparent concurrence of the church, to grant an indulgence to separate con-

secution, but the poverty they had been so eager to inflict on others.

The following passage from a very judicious tract on the other side, "Discourse of the Religion of England, 1667," may deserve to be extracted. "Whether cogent reason speaks for this latitude be it now considered. How momentous in the balance of this nation those protestants are which are dissatisfied in the present ecclesiastical polity. They are every where spread through city and country; they make no small part of all ranks and sorts of men; by relations and commerce they are so woven into the nation's interest, that it is not easy to sever them without unravelling the whole. They are not excluded from the nobility, among the gentry they are not a few; but none are of more importance than they in the trading part of the people and those that live by industry, upon whose hands the business of the nation lies much. It hath been noted, that some who bear them no good will have said that the very air of corporations is infected with their contagion. And in whatsoever degree they are, high or low, ordinarily for good understanding, steadiness, and sobriety, they are not inferior to others of the same rank and quality; neither do they want the rational courage of Englishmen." P. 23.

* Parl. Hist. iv. 1311. Ralph, 559.

† Baxter; Neal; Palmer's Non-conformist's Memorial.

venticles, and at the same time, by enlarging the terms of conformity, to bring back those whose differences were not irreconcilable within the pale of the Anglican communion.

The act of toleration was passed with little difficulty, though not without the murmurs of the bigoted churchmen *. It exempts from the penalties of existing statutes against separate conventicles, or absence from the established worship, such as should take the oath of allegiance, and subscribe the declaration against popery, and such ministers of separate congregations as should subscribe the thirty-nine articles of the church of England, except three, and part of a fourth. It gives also an indulgence to quakers without this condition. Meeting-houses are required to be registered, and are protected from insult by a penalty. No part of this toleration is extended to papists, or to such as deny the Trinity. We may justly deem this act a very scanty measure of religious liberty; yet it proved more effectual through the lenient and liberal policy of the eighteenth century; the subscription to articles of faith, which soon became as obnoxious as that to matters of a more indifferent nature, having been practically dispensed with, though such a genuine toleration as Christianity and philosophy alike demand had no place in our statute-book before the reign of George III.

It was found more impracticable to overcome the prejudices which stood against any enlargement of the basis of the English church. The bill of comprehension, though nearly such as had been intended by the primate, and conformable to the plans so often in vain devised by the most wise and moderate churchmen, met with a very cold reception. Those among the clergy who disliked the new settlement of the crown, and they were by far the greater part, played upon the ignorance and apprehensions of the gentry. The king's suggestion in a speech from the

* Parl. Hist. v. 263. Some of the tories wished to pass it only for seven years. The high-church pamphlets of the age grumble at the toleration.

CHAP. XV. William.

throne, that means should be found to render all protestants capable of serving him in Ireland, as it looked towards a repeal or modification of the test act, gave offence to the zealous churchmen*. A clause proposed in the bill for changing the oaths of supremacy and allegiance, in order to take away the necessity of receiving the sacrament in the church, as a qualification for office, was rejected by a great majority of the lords, twelve whig peers protesting †. Though the bill of comprehension proposed to parliament went no farther than to leave a few scrupled ceremonies at discretion, and to admit presbyterian ministers into the church without pronouncing on the invalidity of their former ordination, it was mutilated in passing through the upper house, and the commons, after entertaining it for a time, substituted an address to the king, that he would call the houses of convocation "to be advised with in ecclesiastical matters ‡." It was of course necessary to follow this recommendation. But the lower house of convocation, as might be foreseen, threw every obstacle in the way of the king's enlarged policy. They chose a man as their prolocutor who had been forward in the worst conduct of the university of Oxford. They displayed in every thing a factious temper, which held the very names of concession and conciliation in abhorrence. Meanwhile a commission of divines, appointed under the great seal, had made a revision of the liturgy, in order to eradicate every thing which could give a plausible ground of offence, as well as to render the service more perfect. Those of the high-church faction had soon seceded from this commission; and its deliberations were doubtless the more honest and rational for their absence. But, as the complacence of parliament towards ecclesiastical authority had shown that no legislative measure could be forced against the resistance of the lower house of convocation, it was not thought expedient to lay before that synod of insolent priests the revised liturgy, which they would have employed as

* Burnet. Parl. Hist. 184. † Parl. Hist. 196. ‡ Id. 212. 216.

an engine of calumny against the bishops and the crown. The scheme of comprehension, therefore, fell absolutely and finally to the ground *.

A similar relaxation of the terms of conformity would, in the reign of Elizabeth, or even at the time of the Savoy conferences, have brought back so large a majority of dissenters, that the separation of the remainder could not have afforded any colour of alarm to the most jealous dignitary. Even now it is said that two-thirds of the non-conformists would have embraced the terms of reunion. But the motives of dissent were already somewhat changed, and came to turn less on the petty scruples of the elder puritans, than on a dislike to all subscriptions of faith and compulsory uniformity. The dissenting ministers, accustomed to independence, and finding not unfrequently in the contributions of their disciples a better maintenance than court favour and private patronage have left for diligence and piety in the establishment, do not seem to have much regretted the fate of this measure. None of their friends, in the most favourable times, have ever made an attempt to renew it. There are, indeed, serious reasons why the boundaries of religious communion should be as widely extended as is consistent with its end and nature; and among these the hardship and detriment of excluding conscientious men from the ministry is not the least. Nor is it less evident that from time to time, according to the progress of knowledge and reason, to remove defects and errors from the public service of the church, even if they have not led to scandal or separation, is the bounden duty of its governors. But none of these considerations press much on the minds of statesmen; and it was not to be expected that any administration should prosecute a religious reform for its own sake, at the hazard of that tranquillity and exterior unity which is in general the sole end

* Burnet. Ralph. But a better account of what took place in the convocation and among the commissioners will be found in Kennet's Compl. History, 557. 588, &c.

CHAP. XV. William.

for which they would deem such a reform worth attempting. Nor could it be dissembled, that, as long as the endowments of a national church are supposed to require a sort of politic organization within the commonwealth, and a busy spirit of faction for their security, it will be convenient for the governors of the state, whenever they find this spirit adverse to them, as it was at the revolution, to preserve the strength of the dissenting sects as a counterpoise to that dangerous influence, which in protestant churches, as well as that of Rome, has sometimes set up the interest of one order against that of the community. And though the church of England made a high vaunt of her loyalty, yet, as lord Shrewsbury told William of the tories in general, he must remember that he was not their king; of which indeed he had abundant experience.

A still more material reason against any alteration in the public liturgy and ceremonial religion at that feverish crisis, unless with a much more decided concurrence of the nation than could be obtained, was the risk of nourishing the schism of the non-jurors. These men went off from the church on grounds merely political, or at most on the pretence that the civil power was incompetent to deprive bishops of their ecclesiastical jurisdiction, to which none among the laity, who did not adopt the same political tenets, were likely to pay attention. But the established liturgy was, as it is at present, in the eyes of the great majority, the distinguishing mark of the Anglican church, far more indeed than episcopal government, whereof so little is known by the mass of the people, that its abolition would make no perceptible difference in their religion. Any change, though for the better, would offend those prejudices of education and habit, which it requires such a revolutionary commotion of the public mind as the sixteenth century witnessed to subdue, and might fill the jacobite conventicles with adherents to the old church. It was already the policy of the non-juring clergy to hold themselves up in this respectable light, and to treat the Tillotsons and Burnets as equally schismatic in

discipline and unsound in theology. Fortunately, however, they fell into the snare which the established church had avoided; and deviating, at least in their writings, from the received standard of Anglican orthodoxy, into what the people saw with most jealousy, a sort of approximation to the church of Rome, gave their opponents an advantage in controversy, and drew farther from that part of the clergy, who did not much dislike their political creed. They were equally injudicious and neglectful of the signs of the times, when they promulgated such extravagant assertions of sacerdotal power, as could not stand with the regal supremacy, or any subordination to the state. It was plain, from the writings of Leslie and other leaders of their party, that the mere restoration of the house of Stuart would not content them without undoing all that had been enacted as to the church from the time of Henry VIII.; and thus the charge of innovation came evidently home to themselves *.

The convention parliament would have acted a truly politic, as well as magnanimous part, in extending this boon, or rather this right, of religious liberty to the members of that unfortunate church, for whose sake the late king had lost his throne. It would have displayed to mankind, that James had fallen, not as a catholic, nor for seeking to bestow toleration on catholics, but as a violator of the constitution. William, in all things superior to his subjects, knew that temporal, and especially military fidelity, would be in almost every instance proof against the seductions of

* Leslie's Case of the Regale and Pontificate is a long dull attempt to set up the sacerdotal order above all civil power, at least as to the exercise of its functions, and especially to get rid of the appointment of bishops by the crown, or, by parity of reasoning, of priests by laymen. He is indignant even at laymen choosing their chaplains, and thinks they ought to take them from the bishop; objecting also to the phrase, my chaplain, as if they were servants: "otherwise the expression is proper enough to say my chaplain, as I say my parish priest, my bishop, my king, or my God; which argues my being under their care and direction, and that I belong to them, not they to me." P. 182. It is full of enormous misrepresentation as to the English law.

CHAP. XV. William.

bigotry. The Dutch armies have always been in a great measure composed of catholics, and many of that profession served under him in the invasion of England. His own judgment for the repeal of the penal laws had been declared even in the reign of James. The danger, if any, was now immensely diminished; and it appears in the highest degree probable, that a genuine toleration of their worship, with no condition but the oath of allegiance, would have brought over the majority of that church to the protestant succession, so far at least as to engage in no schemes inimical to it. The wiser catholics would have perceived, that under a king of their own faith, or but suspected of an attachment to it, they must continue the objects of perpetual distrust to a protestant nation. They would have learned that conspiracy and jesuitical intrigue could but keep alive calumnious imputations, and diminish the respect which a generous people would naturally pay to their sincerity and their misfortune. Had the legislators of that age taken a still larger sweep, and abolished at once those tests and disabilities, which, once necessary bulwarks against an insidious court, were no longer demanded in the more republican model of our government, the jacobite cause would have suffered, I believe, a more deadly wound than penal statutes and double taxation were able to inflict. But this was beyond the philosophers; how much beyond the statesmen of the time!

The tories, in their malignant hatred of our illustrious monarch, turned his connivance at popery into a theme of reproach *. It was believed, and probably with truth, that he had made to his catholic allies promises of relaxing the penal laws; and the jacobite intriguers had the mortification to find that William had his party at Rome, as well as her exiled confessor of St. Germains. After the peace of Ryswick many priests came over, and shewed themselves with such incautious publicity, as alarmed the bigotry

* See Burnet (Oxf. iv. 409.) and lord Dartmouth's note.

of the house of commons, and produced the disgraceful act of 1700 against the growth of popery *. The admitted aim of this statute was to expel the catholic proprietors of land, comprising many very ancient and wealthy families, by rendering it necessary for them to sell their estates. It first offers a reward of 100*l.* to any informer against a priest exercising his functions, and adjudges the penalty of perpetual imprisonment. It requires every person educated in the popish religion, or professing the same, within six months after he shall attain the age of eighteen years, to take the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and subscribe the declaration set down in the act of Charles II. against transubstantiation and the worship of saints; in default of which he is incapacitated, not only to purchase, but to inherit or take lands under any devise or limitation. The next of kin being a protestant shall enjoy such lands during his life †. So unjust, so unprovoked a persecution is the disgrace of that parliament. But the spirit of liberty and tolerance was too strong for the tyranny of the law; and this statute was not executed according to its purpose. The catholic land-holders neither renounced their religion, nor abandoned their inheritances. The judges put such constructions upon the clause of forfeiture as eluded its efficacy;

* No opposition seems to have been made in the house of commons; but we have a protest from four peers against it. Burnet, though he offers some shameful arguments in favour of the bill, such as might justify any tyranny, admits that it contained some unreasonable severities, and that many were really adverse to it. A bill proposed in 1705, to render the late act against papists effective, was lost by 119 to 43 (Parl. Hist. vi. 514); which shows that men were ashamed of what they had done. A proclamation, however, was issued in 1711, immediately after Guiscard's attempt to kill Mr. Harley, for enforcing the penal laws against Roman catholics, which was very scandalous, as tending to impute that crime to them. Boyer's Reign of Anne, p. 429. And in the reign of George I. (1722) 100,000*l.* was levied by a particular act on the estates of papists and nonjurors. This was only carried by 188 to 172. Sir Joseph Jekyll and Mr. Onslow, afterwards speaker, opposing it, as well as lord Cowper in the other house. 9 G. I. c. 18. Parl. Hist. viii. 51. 353. It was quite impossible that those who sincerely maintained the principles of toleration should long continue to make any exception; though the exception in this instance was wholly on political grounds, and not out of bigotry, it did not the less contravene all that Taylor and Locke had taught men to cherish.

† 11 and 12 W. III. c. 4. It is hardly necessary to add that this act was repealed in 1779.

CHAP. XV. William.

and, I believe, there were scarce any instances of a loss of property under this law. It has been said, and I doubt not with justice, that the catholic gentry, during the greater part of the eighteenth century, were as a separated and half proscribed class among their equals, their civil exclusion hanging over them in the intercourse of general society*; but their notorious, though not unnatural, disaffection to the reigning family will account for much of this, and their religion was undoubtedly exercised with little disguise or apprehension. The laws were perhaps not much less severe and sanguinary than those which oppressed the protestants of France; but in their actual administration, what a contrast between the government of George II. and Louis XV., between the gentleness of an English court of King's Bench, and the ferocity of the parliaments of Aix and Thoulouse!

The immediate settlement of the crown at the revolution extended only to the descendants of Anne and of William. The former was at that time pregnant, and became in a few months the mother of a son. Nothing, therefore, urged the convention-parliament to go any farther in limiting the succession. But the king, in order to secure the elector of Hanover to the grand alliance, was desirous to settle the reversion of the crown on his wife the princess Sophia and her posterity. A provision to this effect was inserted in the bill of rights by the house of lords. But the commons rejected the amendment with little opposition; not, as Burnet idly insinuates, through the secret wish of a republican party (which never existed, or had no influence) to let the monarchy die a natural death; but from a just sense that the provision was unnecessary, and might become inexpedient†.

* Butler's Memoirs of Catholics, ii. 64.

† While the bill regulating the succession was in the house of commons, a proviso was offered by Mr. Godolphin, that nothing in this act is intended to be drawn into example or consequence hereafter, to prejudice the right of any protestant prince or princess in their hereditary succession to the imperial crown of those realms. This was much opposed by the whigs, both because it tended to let in the son of James II., if he should become a protestant, and for a more secret reason, that they did not like to recognise the continuance of any hereditary right. It

During the life of the young duke of Glocester the course of succession appeared clear. But upon his untimely death in 1700, the manifest improbability that the limitations already established could subsist beyond the lives of the king and princess of Denmark made it highly convenient to preclude intrigue, and cut off the hopes of the jacobites, by a new settlement of the crown on a protestant line of princes. Though the choice was truly free in the hands of parliament, and no pretext of absolute right could be advanced on any side, there was no question that the princess Sophia was the fittest object of the nation's preference. She was indeed very far removed from any hereditary title. Besides the pretended prince of Wales, and his sister, whose legitimacy no one disputed, there stood in her way the duchess of Savoy, daughter of Henrietta duchess of Orleans, and several of the Palatine family. These last had abjured the reformed faith of which their ancestors had been the strenuous assertors; but it seemed not improbable that some one might return to it; and if all hereditary right of the ancient English royal line, the descendants of Henry VII., had not been extinguished, it would have been necessary to secure the succession of any prince, who should profess the protestant religion at the time when the existing limitations should come to an end. Nor indeed, on the supposition that the next heir had a right to enjoy the crown, would the act of settlement have been required*. According to the tenor and intention of this statute, all prior claims of inheritance, save that of the issue of king William and the princess Anne, being set aside and annulled, the princess Sophia became the source of a new royal line. The throne of England and Ireland, by virtue of the paramount will of parliament, stands entailed upon the heirs of her body, being protestants.

was rejected by 179 to 125. Parl. Hist. v. 249. The lords' amendment in favour of the princess Sophia was lost without a division. Id. 339.

* The duchess of Savoy put in a very foolish protest against any thing that should be done to prejudice *her* right. Ralph, 924.

CHAP. XV. William.

In them the right is as truly hereditary, as it ever was in the Plantagenets or the Tudors. But they derive it not from these ancient families. The blood indeed of Cerdic and of the Conqueror flows in the veins of his present majesty. Our Edwards and Henries illustrate the almost unrivalled splendour and antiquity of the house of Brunswic. But they have transmitted no more right to the allegiance of England than Boniface of Este or Henry the Lion. That rests wholly on the act of settlement, and resolves itself into the sovereignty of the legislature. We have therefore an abundant security, that no prince of the house of Brunswic will ever countenance the silly theories of imprescriptible right, which flattery and superstition seem still to render current in other countries. He would brand his own brow with the names of upstart and usurper. For the history of the revolution, and of that change in the succession which ensued upon it, will for ages to come be fresh and familiar as the recollections of yesterday. And if the people's choice be, as surely it is, the primary foundation of magistracy, it is perhaps more honourable to be nearer the source, than to deduce a title from some obscure chieftain, through a long roll of tyrants and ideots.

The majority of that house of commons which passed the bill of settlement consisted of those, who having long opposed the administration of William, though with very different principles both as to the succession of the crown and its prerogative, were now often called by the general name of tories. Some, no doubt, of these were adverse to a measure which precluded the restoration of the house of Stuart, even on the contingency that its heir might embrace the protestant religion. But this party could not show itself very openly; and Harley, the new leader of the tories, zealously supported the entail of the crown on the princess Sophia. But it was determined to accompany this settlement with additional securities for the subject's liberty. The bill of rights was reckoned hasty and defective; some matters of great importance had been omitted, and in the twelve years which had

since elapsed new abuses had called for new remedies. Eight articles were therefore inserted in the act of settlement, to take effect only from the commencement of the new limitation to the house of Hanover. Some of them, as will appear, sprung from a natural jealousy of this unknown and foreign line; some should strictly not have been postponed so long; but it is necessary to be content with what it is practicable to obtain. These articles are the following.

That whosoever shall hereafter come to the possession of this crown shall join in communion with the church of England as by law established.

That in case the crown and imperial dignity of this realm shall hereafter come to any person, not being a native of this kingdom of England, this nation be not obliged to engage in any war for the defence of any dominions or territories which do not belong to the crown of England, without the consent of parliament.

That no person who shall hereafter come to the possession of this crown shall go out of the dominions of England, Scotland, or Ireland, without consent of parliament.

That from and after the time that the further limitation by this act shall take effect, all matters and things relating to the well governing of this kingdom, which are properly cognizable in the privy council by the laws and customs of this realm, shall be transacted there, and all resolutions taken thereupon shall be signed by such of the privy council as shall advise and consent to the same.

That after the said limitation shall take effect as aforesaid, no person born out of the kingdoms of England, Scotland, or Ireland, or the dominions thereunto belonging, (although he be naturalized or made a denizen,—except such as are born of English parents), shall be capable to be of the privy council, or a member of either house of parliament, or to enjoy any office or place of trust, either civil or military, or to have any grant of lands,

CHAP. XV. William.

tenements, or hereditaments, from the crown, to himself, or to any other or others in trust for him.

That no person who has an office or place of profit under the king, or receives a pension from the crown, shall be capable of serving as a member of the house of commons.

That after the said limitation shall take effect as aforesaid, judges' commissions be made quamdiu se bene gesserint, and their salaries ascertained and established; but upon the address of both houses of parliament, it may be lawful to remove them.

That no pardon under the great seal of England be pleadable to an impeachment by the commons in parliament *.

The first of these provisions was well adapted to obviate the jealousy which the succession of a new dynasty, bred in a protestant church not altogether agreeing with our own, might excite in our susceptible nation. A similar apprehension of foreign government produced the second article, which so far limits the royal prerogative, that any minister who could be proved to have advised or abetted a declaration of war in the specified contingency would be criminally responsible to parliament †. The third article was repealed very soon after the accession of George I., whose frequent journeys to Hanover were an abuse of the graciousness with which the parliament consented to annul the restriction ‡.

* 12 and 13 W. III. c. 2.

† It was frequently contended in the reign of George II. that subsidiary treaties for the defence of Hanover, or rather such as were covertly designed for that and no other purpose, as those with Russia and Hesse Cassel in 1755, were at least contrary to the spirit of the act of settlement. On the other hand, it was justly answered, that, although in case Hanover should be attacked on the ground of a German quarrel, unconnected with English politics, we were not bound to defend her; yet, if a power at war with England should think fit to consider that electorate as part of the king's dominions, which perhaps according to the law of nations might be done, our honour must require that it should be defended against such an attack. This is true; and yet it shows very forcibly that the separation of the two ought to have been insisted upon; since the present connexion engages Great Britain in a very disadvantageous mode of carrying on its wars, without any compensation of national wealth or honour; except indeed that of employing occasionally in its service a very brave and efficient body of troops.

‡ 1 G. I. c. 51.

A very remarkable alteration that had been silently wrought in the course of the executive government gave rise to the fourth of the remedial articles in the act of settlement. According to the original constitution of our monarchy, the king had his privy council composed of the great officers of state, and of such others as he should summon to it, bound by an oath of fidelity and secrecy, by whom all affairs of weight, whether as to domestic or exterior policy, were debated, for the most part, in his presence, and determined, subordinately of course to his pleasure, by the vote of the major part. It could not happen but that some counsellors more eminent than the rest should form juntos or cabals, for more close and private management, or be selected as more confidential advisers of their sovereign; and the very name of a cabinet council, as distinguished from the larger body, may be found as far back as the reign of Charles I. But the resolutions of the crown, whether as to foreign alliances or the issuing of proclamations and orders at home, or any other overt act of government, were not finally taken without the deliberation and assent of that body, whom the law recognized as its sworn and notorious counsellors. This was first broken in upon after the re. oration, and especially after the fall of Clarendon, a strenuous assertor of the rights and dignity of the privy council. "The king," as he complains, "had in his nature so little reverence and esteem for antiquity, and did in truth so much contemn old orders, forms, and institutions, that the objection of novelty rather advanced than obstructed any proposition *." He wanted to be absolute on the French plan, for which both he and his brother, as the same historian tells us, had a great predilection, rather than obtain a power little less arbitrary, so far at least as private rights were concerned, on the system of his three predecessors. The delays and the decencies of a regular council, the continual hesitation of lawyers, whose cowardice renders them as unfit for

* Life of Clarendon, 319.

CHAP. XV. William.

crime as for virtue, were not suited to his temper, his talents, or his designs. And it must indeed be admitted, that the privy council, even as it was then constituted, was too numerous for the practical administration of supreme power. Thus by degrees it became usual for the ministry or cabinet to obtain the king's final approbation of their measures, before they were laid, for a merely formal ratification, before the council. It was one object of sir William Temple's short-lived scheme in 1679 to bring back the ancient course; the king pledging himself on the formation of his new privy council to act in all things by its advice.

During the reign of William, this distinction of the cabinet from the privy council, and the exclusion of the latter from all business of state, became more fully established*. This, however, produced a serious consequence as to the responsibility of the advisers of the crown; and at the very time when the controlling and chastising power of parliament was most effectually recognized, it was silently eluded by the concealment in which the objects of its inquiry could wrap themselves. Thus, in the instance of a treaty, which the house of commons might deem mischievous and dishonourable, the chancellor setting the great seal to it would of course be responsible; but it is not so evident, that the first lord of the treasury, or others more immediately advising the crown on the course of foreign policy, could be liable to impeachment, with any prospect of success, for an act in which

* "The method is this," says a member in debate, "things are concerted in the cabinet, and then brought to the council; such a thing is resolved in the cabinet, and brought and put on them for their assent, without showing any of the reasons. That has not been the method of England. If this method be, you will never know who gives advice." Parl. Hist. v. 731.

In sir Humphrey Mackworth's [or perhaps Mr. Harley's] Vindication of the Rights of the Commons of England, 1701, Somers Tracts, xi. 276, the constitutional doctrine is thus laid down, according to the spirit of the recent act of settlement. "As to the setting of the great seal of England to foreign alliances, the lord chancellor, or lord keeper for the time being, has a plain rule to follow, that is, humbly to inform the king that he cannot legally set the great seal of England to a matter of that consequence unless the same be first debated and resolved in council; which method being observed, the chancellor is safe, and the council answerable." P. 293.

their participation could not be legally proved. I do not mean that evidence may not possibly be obtained which would affect the leaders of a cabinet, as in the instances of Oxford and Bolingbroke; but that the cabinet itself having no legal existence, and its members being surely not amenable to punishment in their simple capacity of privy counsellors, which they generally share, in modern times, with a great number even of their adversaries, there is no tangible character to which responsibility is attached; nothing, except a signature or the setting of a seal, from which a bad minister need entertain any further apprehension than that of losing his post and reputation *. It may be that no absolute corrective is practicable for this apparent deficiency in our constitutional security; but it is expedient to keep it well in mind, because all ministers speak loudly of their responsibility, and are apt upon faith of this imaginary guarantee to obtain a previous confidence from parliament, which they may in fact abuse with impunity. For should the bad success or detected guilt of their measures raise a popular cry against them, and censure or penalty be demanded by their opponents, they will infallibly shroud their persons in the dark recesses of the cabinet, and employ every art to shift off the burthen of individual liability.

William III., from the reservedness of his disposition as well as from the great superiority of his capacity for affairs to any of our former kings, was far less guided by any responsible counsellors than the spirit of our constitution requires. In the business of the partition treaty, which, whether rightly or otherwise,

* This very delicate question as to the responsibility of the cabinet, or what is commonly called the ministry, *in solidum*, if I may use the expression, was canvassed in a remarkable discussion within our memory, on the introduction of the late chief justice of the King's Bench into that select body; Mr. Fox strenuously denying the proposition, and lord Castlereagh, with others now living, maintaining it. Parl. Debates, A. D. 1806. I cannot possibly comprehend how an article of impeachment for sitting as a cabinet minister could be drawn; nor do I conceive that a privy counsellor has a right to resign his place at the board; so that it would be highly unjust and illegal to presume a participation in culpable measures from the mere circumstance of belonging to it. Even if notoriety be a ground, as has been sometimes contended, for impeachment, it cannot be sufficient for conviction.

CHAP. XV. William.

the house of commons reckoned highly injurious to the public interest, he had not even consulted his cabinet; nor could any minister, except the earl of Portland and lord Somers, be proved to have had a concern in the transaction; for though the house impeached lord Orford and lord Halifax, they were not in fact any farther parties to it than by being in the secret, and the former had shown his usual intractability by objecting to the whole measure. This was undoubtedly such a departure from sound constitutional usage, as left parliament no control over the executive administration. It was endeavoured to restore the ancient principle by this provision in the act of settlement, that, after the accession of the house of Hanover, all resolutions as to government should be debated in the privy council, and signed by those present. But whether it were that real objections were found to stand in the way of this article, or that ministers shrunk back from so definite a responsibility, they procured its repeal a very few years afterwards*. The plans of government are discussed and determined in a cabinet council, forming indeed part of the larger body, but unknown to the law by any distinct character or special appointment. I conceive, though I have not the means of tracing the matter clearly, that this change has prodigiously augmented the direct authority of the secretaries of state, especially as to the interior department, who communicate the king's pleasure in the first instance to subordinate officers and magistrates, in cases which, down at least to the time of Charles I., would have been determined in council. But proclamations and orders still emanate, as the law requires, from the privy council; and on some rare occasions, even of late years, matters of domestic policy have been referred to their advice. It is generally understood, however, that no counsellor is to attend except when summoned†; so that, unnecessarily numerous as

* 4 Anne, c. 8. 6 Anne, c. 7.

† This is the modern usage, but of its origin I cannot speak. On one remarkable occasion, while Anne was at the point of death, the dukes of Somerset and Argyle went down to the council-chamber without

the council has become, in order to gratify vanity by a titular honour, these special meetings consist only of a few persons besides the actual ministers of the cabinet, and give the latter no apprehension of a formidable resistance. Yet there can be no reasonable doubt, that every counsellor is as much answerable for the measures adopted by his consent, and especially when ratified by his signature, as those who bear the name of ministers, and who have generally determined upon them before he is summoned.

The experience of William's partiality to Bentinck and Keppel, in the latter instance not very consistent with the good sense and dignity of his character, led to a strong measure of precaution against the probable influence of foreigners under the new dynasty; the exclusion of all persons not born within the dominions of the British crown from every office of civil and military trust, and from both houses of parliament. No other country, as far as I recollect, has adopted so sweeping a disqualification; and it must, I think, be admitted, that it goes a greater length than liberal policy can be said to warrant. But the narrow prejudices of George I. were well restrained by this provision from gratifying his corrupt and servile German favourites with lucrative offices *.

The next article is of far more importance, and would, had it continued in force, have perpetuated that struggle between the different parts of the legislature, especially the crown and house of commons, which the new limitations of the monarchy were intended to annihilate. The baneful system of rendering the parliament subservient to the administration, either by offices

summons to take their seats; but it seems to have been intended as an unexpected manœuvre of policy.

* It is provided by 1 G. I. stat. 2. c. 4. that no bill of naturalization shall be received without a clause disqualifying the party from sitting in parliament, &c. "for the better preserving the said clause in the said act entire and inviolate." This provision, which is rather supererogatory, was of course intended to show the determination of parliament not to be governed, ostensibly at least, by foreigners under their foreign master.

CHAP. XV. William.

and pensions held at pleasure, or by more clandestine corruption, had not ceased with the house of Stuart. William, not long after his accession, fell into the worst part of this management, which it was most difficult to prevent, and, according to the practice of Charles's reign, induced by secret bribes the leaders of parliamentary opposition to betray their cause on particular questions. The tory patriot, sir Christopher Musgrave, trod in the steps of the whig patriot, sir Thomas Lee. A large expenditure appeared every year, under the head of secret service money, which was pretty well known, and sometimes proved, to be disposed of, in great part, among the members of both houses *. No check was put on the number or quality of placemen in the lower house. New offices were continually created, and at unreasonable salaries. Those who desired to see a regard to virtue and liberty in the parliament of England could not be insensible to the enormous mischief of this influence. If some apology might be offered for it in the precarious state of the revolution government, this did not take away the possibility of future danger, when the monarchy should have regained its usual sta-

* Parl. Hist. 807. 840. Burnet says, p. 42, that sir John Trevor, a tory, first put the king on this method of corruption. Trevor himself was so venal, that he received a present of 1000 guineas from the city of London, being then speaker of the commons, for his service in carrying a bill through the house; and upon its discovery, was obliged to put the vote, that he had been guilty of a high crime and misdemeanour. This resolution being carried, he absented himself from the house, and was expelled. Parl. Hist. 900. Commons' Journals, 12th March, 1694-5. The duke of Leeds, that veteran of secret iniquity, was discovered about the same time to have taken bribes from the East India company, and impeached in consequence; I say discovered, for there seems little or no doubt of his guilt. The impeachment, however, was not prosecuted for want of evidence. Parl. Hist. 881. 911. 933. Guy, secretary of the treasury, another of Charles II.'s court, was expelled the house on a similar imputation. Id. 886. Lord Falkland was sent to the Tower for begging £2000 of the king. Id. 841. A system of infamous peculation among the officers of government came to light through the inquisitive spirit of parliament in this reign; not that the nation was worse and more corrupt than under the Stuarts, but that a profligacy, which had been engendered and had flourished under their administration, was now dragged to light and punishment. Long sessions of parliament and a vigilant party-spirit exposed the evil, and have finally, in a great measure, removed it, though Burnet's remark is still not wholly obsolete. "The regard," says that honest bishop, "that is shown to the members of parliament among us, makes that few abuses can be inquired into or discovered."

bility. But in seeking for a remedy against the peculiar evil of the times, the party in opposition to the court during this reign, whose efforts at reformation were too frequently misdirected, either through faction or some sinister regards towards the deposed family, went into the preposterous extremity of banishing all servants of the crown from the house of commons. Whether the bill for free and impartial proceedings in parliament, which was rejected by a very small majority of the house of lords in 1693, and having in the next session passed through both houses, met with the king's negative, to the great disappointment and displeasure of the commons, was of this general nature, or excluded only certain specified officers of the crown, I am not able to determine, though the prudence and expediency of William's refusal must depend entirely upon that question *. But in the act of settlement, the clause is quite without exception; and if it had ever taken effect, no minister could have had a seat in the house of commons, to bring forward, explain, or defend the measures of the executive government. Such a separation and want of intelligence between the crown and parliament must either have destroyed the one or degraded the other. The house of commons would either, in jealousy and passion, have armed the strength of the people to subvert the monarchy, or, losing that

* Parl. Hist. 748. 829. The house resolved, "that whoever advised the king not to give the royal assent to the act touching free and impartial proceedings in parliament, which was to redress a grievance, and take off a scandal upon the proceedings of the commons in parliament, is an enemy to their majesties and the kingdom." They laid a representation before the king, showing how few instances have been in former reigns of denying the royal assent to bills for redress of grievances, and the great grief of the commons "for his not having given the royal assent to several public bills, and particularly the bill touching free and impartial proceedings in parliament, which tended so much to the clearing the reputation of this house, after their having so freely voted to supply the public occasions." The king gave a courteous but evasive answer, as indeed it was natural to expect; but so great a flame was raised in the commons, that it was moved to address him for a further answer, which however there was still a sense of decorum sufficient to prevent.

Though the particular provisions of this bill do not appear, I think it probable that it went too far in excluding military as well as civil officers.

CHAP. XV. William.

effective control over the appointment of ministers, which has sometimes gone near to their nomination, would have fallen almost into the condition of those states-general of ancient kingdoms, which have met only to be cajoled into subsidies, and give a passive consent to the propositions of the court. It is one of the greatest safeguards of our liberty, that eloquent and ambitious men, such as aspire to guide the councils of the crown, are from habit and use so connected with the houses of parliament, and derive from them so much of their renown and influence, that they lie under no temptation, nor could without insanity be prevailed upon to diminish the authority and privileges of that assembly. No English statesman, since the revolution, can be liable to the very slightest suspicion of an aim, or even a wish, to establish absolute monarchy on the ruins of our constitution. Whatever else has been done, or designed to be done amiss, the rights of parliament have been out of danger. They have, whenever a man of powerful mind shall direct the cabinet, and none else can possibly be formidable, the strong security of his own interest, which no such man will desire to build on the caprice and intrigue of a court. And as this immediate connexion of the advisers of the crown with the house of commons, so that they are, and ever profess themselves, as truly the servants of one as of the other, is a pledge for their loyalty to the entire legislature, as well as to their sovereign (I mean, of course, as to the fundamental principles of our constitution), so has it preserved for the commons their preponderating share in the executive administration, and elevated them in the eyes of foreign nations, till the monarchy itself has fallen comparatively into shade. The pulse of Europe beats according to the tone of our parliament; the counsels of our kings are there revealed, and by that kind of previous sanction which it has been customary to obtain, become, as it were, the resolutions of a senate, and we enjoy the individual pride and dignity which belong to

republicans, with the steadiness and tranquillity which the supremacy of a single person has been supposed peculiarly to bestow.

But if the chief ministers of the crown are indispensably to be present in one or other house of parliament, it by no means follows that the doors should be thrown open to all those subaltern retainers who, too low to have had any participation in the measures of government, come merely to earn their salaries by a sure and silent vote. Unless some limitation could be put on the number of such officers, they might become the majority of every parliament, especially if its duration were indefinite or very long. It was always the popular endeavour of the opposition, or, as it was usually denominated, the country party, to reduce the number of these dependents, and as constantly the whole strength of the court was exerted to keep them up. William, in truth, from his own errors, and from the disadvantage of the times, would not venture to confide in an unbiassed parliament. On the formation, however, of a new board of revenue, in 1694, for managing the stamp-duties, its members were incapacitated from sitting in the house of commons *. This, I believe, is the first instance of exclusion on account of employment, and a similar act was obtained in 1699, extending this disability to the commissioners and some other officers of excise †. But when this absolute exclusion of all civil and military officers by the act of settlement was found, on cool reflection, too impracticable to be maintained, and a revision of that article took place in the year 1706, the house of commons were still determined to preserve at least the principle of limitation, as to the number of placemen within their walls. They gave way, indeed, to the other house in a considerable degree, receding, with some unwillingness, from a clause specifying expressly the description of offices which should not create a disqualification, and consenting to an entire

* 4 and 5 W. and M. c. 21. † 11 and 12 W. III. c. 2. § 50.

CHAP. XV. William.

repeal of the original article*. But they established two provisions of great importance, which still continue the great securities against an overwhelming influence: first, that every member of the house of commons accepting an office under the crown, except a higher commission in the army, shall vacate his seat, and a new writ shall issue; secondly, that no person holding an office created since the 25th of October, 1705, shall be capable of being elected or re-elected at all. They excluded at the same time all such as held pensions during the pleasure of the crown, and to check the multiplication of placemen, enacted, that no greater number of commissioners should be appointed to execute any office than had been employed in its execution at some time before that parliament†. These restrictions ought to be rigorously and jealously maintained, and to receive a construction, in doubtful cases, according to their constitutional spirit; not as if they were of a penal nature towards individuals, an absurdity in which the careless and indulgent temper of modern times might sometimes acquiesce.

It had been the practice of the Stuarts, especially in the last years of their dynasty, to dismiss judges, without seeking any

* The house of commons introduced into the act of security, as it was called, a long clause, carried on a division by 167 to 160, Jan. 24, 1706, enumerating various persons who should be eligible to parliament; the principal officers of state, the commissioners of treasury and admiralty, and a limited number of other placemen. The lords thought fit to repeal the whole prohibitory enactment. It was resolved in the commons, by a majority of 205 to 183, that they would not agree to this amendment. A conference accordingly took place, when the managers of the commons objected, Feb. 7, that a total repeal of that provision would admit such an unlimited number of officers to sit in their house, as might destroy the free and impartial proceedings in parliament, and endanger the liberties of the commons of England. Those on the lords' side gave their reasons to the contrary at great length, Feb. 11. The commons determined, Feb. 18, to insert the provision vacating the seat of a member accepting office, and resolved not to insist on their disagreements as to the main clause. Three protests were entered in the house of lords against inserting the word "repealed" in reference to the prohibitory clause, instead of "regulated and altered," all by tory peers. It is observable, that as the provision was not to take effect till the house of Hanover should succeed to the throne, the sticklers for it might be full as much influenced by their ill-will to that family as by their zeal for liberty.

† 4 Anne, c. 8; 6 Anne, c. 7.

other pretence, who showed any disposition to thwart government in political prosecutions. The general behaviour of the bench had covered it with infamy. Though the real security for an honest court of justice must be found in their responsibility to parliament and to public opinion, it was evident that their tenure in office must, in the first place, cease to be precarious, and their integrity rescued from the severe trial of forfeiting the emoluments upon which they subsisted. In the debates previous to the declaration of rights, we find that several speakers insisted on making the judges' commissions *quamdiu se bene gesserint*, that is, during life or good behaviour, instead of *durante placito*, at the discretion of the crown. The former, indeed, is said to have been the ancient course till the reign of James I. But this was omitted in the hasty and imperfect bill of rights. The commissions, however, of William's judges ran *quamdiu se bene gesserint*. But the king gave an unfortunate instance of his very injudicious tenacity of bad prerogatives, in refusing his assent, in 1692, to a bill that had passed both houses, for establishing this independence of the judges by law and confirming their salaries *. We owe this important provision to the act of settlement; not, as ignorance and adulation have perpetually asserted, to his late majesty George III. No judge can be dismissed from office, except in consequence of a conviction for some offence, or the address of both houses of parliament, which is tantamount to an act of the legislature †. It is always to be kept in mind that they are still accessible to the hope of further promotion, to the zeal of political attachment, to the flattery of princes and ministers; that the bias of their prejudices, as elderly and peaceable men, will, in a plurality of cases, be on the side of power;

* Burnet, 86. It was represented to the king, he says, by some of the judges themselves that it was not fit they should be out of all dependence on the court.

† It was originally resolved that they should be removable on the address of either house, which was changed afterwards to both houses. Comm. Journ. 12th March, and 10th May.

CHAP. XV. William.

that they have very frequently been trained, as advocates, to vindicate every proceeding of the crown; from all which we should look on them with some little vigilance, and not come hastily to a conclusion, that, because their commissions cannot be vacated by the crown's authority, they are wholly out of the reach of its influence. I would by no means be misinterpreted, as if the general conduct of our courts of justice since the revolution, and especially in later times, which in most respects have been the best times, were not deserving of that credit it has usually gained; but possibly it may have been more guided and kept straight than some are willing to acknowledge by the spirit of observation and censure which modifies and controls our whole government.

The last clause in the act of settlement, that a pardon under the great seal shall not be pleadable in bar of an impeachment, requires no particular notice beyond what has been said on the subject in a former chapter *.

In the following session a new parliament having been assembled, in which the tory faction had less influence than in the last, and Louis XIV. having, in the mean time, acknowledged the son of James as king of England, the natural resentment of this insult and breach of faith was shown in a more decided assertion of revolution principles than had hitherto been made. The pretended king was attainted of high treason, a measure absurd as a law, but politic as a denunciation of perpetual enmity †. It was made high treason to correspond with him, or remit money for his service. And a still more vigorous measure was adopted, an

* It was proposed in the lords, as a clause in the bill of rights, that pardons upon an impeachment should be void, but lost by 50 to 17; on which twelve peers, all whigs, entered a protest. Parl. Hist. 482.

† 13 W. III. c. 3. The lords introduced an amendment into this bill, to attaint also Mary of Este, the late queen of James II. But the commons disagreed, on the ground that it might be of dangerous consequence to attaint any one by an amendment, in which case such due consideration cannot be had, as the nature of an attainder requires. The lords, after a conference, gave way; but brought in a separate bill to attaint Mary of Este, which passed with a protest of the tory peers. Lords' Journals, Feb. 6, 12, 20, 1701-2.

oath to be taken, not only by all civil officers, but by all ecclesiastics, members of the universities, and schoolmasters, acknowledging William as lawful and rightful king, and denying any right or title in the pretended prince of Wales*. The tories, and especially lord Nottingham, had earnestly contended, in the beginning of the king's reign, against those words in the act of recognition, which asserted William and Mary to be rightfully and lawfully king and queen. They opposed the association at the time of the assassination-plot, on account of the same epithets, taking a distinction which satisfied the narrow understanding of Nottingham, and served as a subterfuge for more cunning men, between a king whom they were bound in all cases to obey, and one whom they could style rightful and lawful. These expressions were in fact slightly modified on that occasion; yet fifteen peers and ninety-two commoners declined, at least for a time, to sign it. The present oath of abjuration, therefore, was a signal victory of the whigs who boasted of the revolution over the tories who excused it†. The renunciation of the hereditary right, for at this time few of the latter party believed in the young man's spuriousness, was complete and unequivocal. The dominant faction might enjoy perhaps a charitable pleasure in exposing many of their adversaries, and especially the high-church clergy, to the disgrace and remorse of perjury. Few or none, however, who had taken the oath of allegiance, refused this additional cup of bitterness, though so much less defensible, according to the principles they had employed to vindicate their compliance in the former instance; so true it is, that in matters of conscience, the first scruple is the only one which it costs much to overcome. But the imposition of this test, as was evident in a few years, did not check the boldness, or diminish

* 13 W. III. c. 6.

† Sixteen lords, including two bishops, Compton and Sprat, protested against the bill containing the abjuration oath. The first reason of their votes was afterwards expunged from the journals by order of the house. Lords' Journals, 24th Feb. 3d March, 1701-2.

CHAP. XV. William.

the numbers, of the Jacobites; and I must confess, that of all sophistry that weakens moral obligation, that is the most pardonable which men employ to escape from this species of tyranny. The state may reasonably make an entire and heartfelt attachment to its authority the condition of civil trust; but nothing more than a promise of peaceable obedience can justly be exacted from those who ask only to obey in peace. There was a bad spirit abroad in the church, ambitious, factious, intolerant, calumnious; but this was not necessarily partaken by all its members, and many excellent men might deem themselves hardly dealt with in requiring their denial of an abstract proposition, which did not appear so totally false according to their notions of the English constitution and the church's doctrine *.

* Whiston mentions, that Mr. Baker, of St. John's, Cambridge, a worthy and learned man, as well as others of the college, had thoughts of taking the oath of allegiance on the death of king James; but the oath of abjuration coming out the next year, had such expressions as he still scrupled. Whiston's Memoirs. Biog. Brit. (Kippis's edition), art. Baker.

CHAPTER XVI.

ON THE STATE OF THE CONSTITUTION IN THE REIGNS OF ANNE, GEORGE I. AND GEORGE II.

Termination of Contest between the Crown and Parliament—Distinctive Principles of Whigs and Tories—Changes effected in these by Circumstances—Impeachment of Sacheverell displays them again—Revolutions in the Ministry under Anne—War of the Succession—Treaty of Peace broken off—Renewed again by the Tory Government—Arguments for and against the Treaty of Utrecht—The Negotiation mismanaged—Intrigues of the Jacobites—Some of the Ministers engage in them—Just Alarm for the Hanover Succession—Accession of George I.—Whigs come into Power—Great Disaffection in the Kingdom—Impeachment of Tory Ministers—Bill for septennial Parliaments—Peerage Bill—Jacobitism among the Clergy—Convocation—its Encroachments—Hoadley—Convocation no longer suffered to sit—Infringements of the Toleration by Statutes under Anne—They are repealed by the Whigs—Principles of Toleration fully established—Banishment of Atterbury—Decline of the Jacobites—Prejudices against the reigning Family—Jealousy of the Crown—Changes in the Constitution whereon it was founded—Permanent military Force—Apprehensions from it—Establishment of Militia—Influence over Parliament by Places and Pensions—Attempts to restrain it—Place Bill of 1743*—Secret Corruption—Commitments for Breach of Privilege—of Members for Offences—of Strangers for Offences against Members—or for Offences against the House—Kentish Petition of* 1701*—Dispute with Lords about Aylesbury Election—Proceedings against Mr. Murray in* 1751*—Commitments for Offences unconnected with the House—Privileges of the House not controllable by Courts of Law—Danger of stretching this too far—Extension of penal Laws—Diminution of personal Authority of the Crown—Causes of this—Party Connexions—Influence of political Writings—Publication of Debates—Increased Influence of the middle Ranks.*

THE act of settlement was the seal of our constitutional laws, the complement of the revolution itself and the bill of rights, the last great statute which restrains the power of the crown, an

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

manifests, in any conspicuous degree, a jealousy of parliament in behalf of its own and the subjects' privileges. The battle had been fought and gained; the statute-book, as it becomes more voluminous, is less interesting in the history of our constitution; the voice of petition, complaint, or remonstrance is seldom to be traced in the journals; the crown in return desists altogether, not merely from the threatening or objurgatory tone of the Stuarts, but from that dissatisfaction sometimes apparent in the language of William; and the vessel seems riding in smooth water, moved by other impulses, and liable perhaps to other dangers than those of the ocean-wave and the tempest. The reigns, accordingly, of Anne, George I. and George II., afford rather materials for dissertation, than consecutive facts for such a work as the present, and may be sketched in a single chapter, though by no means the least important, which the reader's study and reflection must enable him to fill up. Changes of an essential nature were in operation during the sixty years of these three reigns, as well as in that beyond the limits of this undertaking, which in length measures them all; some of them greatly enhancing the authority of the crown, or rather of the executive government, while others had so opposite a tendency, that philosophical speculators have not been uniform in determining on which side was the sway of the balance.

No clear understanding can be acquired of the political history of England without distinguishing, with some accuracy of definition, the two great parties of whig and tory. But this is not easy, because those denominations being sometimes applied to factions in the state, intent on their own aggrandizement, sometimes to the principles they entertained or professed, have become equivocal, and do by no means, at all periods and on all occasions, present the same sense; an ambiguity which has been increased by the lax and incorrect use of familiar language. We may consider the words, in the first instance, as expressive

of a political theory or principle, applicable to the English government. They were originally employed at the time of the bill of exclusion, though the distinction of the parties they denote is evidently at least as old as the Long Parliament. Both of these parties, it is material to observe, agreed in the maintenance of the constitution; that is, in the administration of government by an hereditary sovereign, and in the concurrence of that sovereign with the two houses of parliament in legislation; as well as in those other institutions which have been reckoned most ancient and fundamental. A favourer of unlimited monarchy was not a tory, nor her was a republican a whig. Lord Clarendon was a tory, Hobbes was not; bishop Hoadley was a whig, Milton was not. But they differed mainly in this; that to a tory the constitution, inasmuch as it was the constitution, was an ultimate point, beyond which he never looked, and from which he thought it altogether impossible to swerve; whereas a whig deemed all forms of government subordinate to the public good, and therefore liable to change, when they should cease to promote that object. Within those bounds which he, as well as his antagonist, meant not to transgress, and rejecting all unnecessary innovation, the whig had a natural tendency to political improvement, the tory an aversion to it. The one loved to descant on liberty and the rights of mankind, the other on the mischiefs of sedition and the rights of kings. Though both, as I have said, admitted a common principle, the maintenance of the constitution, yet this made the privileges of the subject, that the crown's prerogative his peculiar care. Hence it seemed likely that, through passion and circumstance, the tory might aid in establishing despotism, or the whig in subverting monarchy. The former was generally hostile to the liberty of the press, and to freedom of inquiry, especially in religion; the latter their friend. The principle of the one, in short, was melioration, of the other conservation.

But the distinctive characters of whig and tory were less plainly seen, after the revolution and act of settlement, in relation to

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

the crown, than to some other parts of our polity. The tory was ardently, and in the first place, the supporter of the church in as much pre-eminence and power as he could give it. For the church's sake, when both seemed as it were on one plank, he sacrificed his loyalty; for her he was always ready to persecute the catholic, and if the times permitted not to persecute, yet to restrain and discountenance the non-conformist. He came unwillingly into the toleration, which the whig held up as one of the great trophies of the revolution. The whig spurned at the haughty language of the church, and treated the dissenters with moderation, or perhaps with favour. This distinction subsisted long after the two parties had shifted their ground as to civil liberty and royal power. Again, a predilection for the territorial aristocracy, and for a government chiefly conducted by their influence, a jealousy of new men, of the mercantile interest, of the commonalty, never failed to mark the genuine tory. It has been common to speak of the whigs as an aristocratical faction. Doubtless the majority of the peerage from the revolution downwards were of that denomination. But this is merely an instance wherein the party and the principle are to be distinguished. The natural bias of the aristocracy is towards the crown; but, except in most of the reign of Anne, the crown might be reckoned with the whig party. No one who reflects on the motives which are likely to influence the judgment of classes in society would hesitate to predict that an English house of lords would contain somewhat a larger proportion of men inclined to the tory principle than of the opposite school; and we do not find that experience contradicts this anticipation.

It will be obvious, that I have given to each of these political principles a moral character, and considered them as they would subsist in upright and conscientious men, not as we may find them "in the dregs of Romulus," suffocated by selfishness or distorted by faction. The whigs appear to have taken a far more comprehensive view of the nature and ends of civil society;

their principle is more virtuous, more flexible to the variations of time and circumstance, more congenial to large and masculine intellects. But it may probably be no small advantage, that the two parties, or rather the sentiments which have been presumed to actuate them, should have been mingled, as we find them, in the complex mass of the English nation, whether the proportions may or not have been always such as we might desire. They bear some analogy to the two forces which retain the planetary bodies in their orbits; the excess of one would disperse them into chaos, that of the other would drag them to a centre. And though I cannot reckon these old appellations by any means characteristic of our political factions in the nineteenth century, the names whig and tory are often well applied to individuals. Nor can it be otherwise, since they are founded not only on our laws and history, with which most have some acquaintance, but in the diversities of condition and of moral temperament generally subsisting among mankind.

It is however one thing to prefer the whig principle, another to justify, as an advocate, the party which bore that name. So far as they were guided by that principle, I hold them far more friendly to the great interests of the commonwealth than their adversaries. But in truth, the peculiar circumstances of these four reigns after the revolution, the spirit of faction, prejudice, and animosity, above all, the desire of obtaining or retaining power, which if it be ever sought as a means, is soon converted into an end, threw both parties very often into a false position, and gave each the language and sentiments of the other, so that the two principles are rather to be traced in writings, and those not wholly of a temporary nature, than in the debates of parliament. In the reigns of William and Anne, the whigs, speaking of them generally as a great party, had preserved their original character unimpaired far more than their opponents. All that had passed in the former reign served to humble the tories, and to enfeeble their principle. The revolution itself, and the votes

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

upon which it was founded, the bill of recognition in 1690, the repeal of the non-resisting test, the act of settlement, the oath of abjuration, were solemn adjudications, as it were, against their creed. They took away the old argument, that the letter of the law was on their side. If this indeed were all usurpation, the answer was ready; but those who did not care to make it, or by their submission put it out of their power, were compelled to sacrifice not a little of that which had entered into the definition of a tory. Yet even this had not a greater effect than that systematic jealousy and dislike of the administration, which made them encroach, according to ancient notions, and certainly their own, on the prerogative of William. They learned in this no unpleasing lesson to popular assemblies, to magnify their own privileges and the rights of the people. This tone was often assumed by the friends of the exiled family, and in them it was without any dereliction of their object. It was natural that a jacobite should use popular topics in order to thwart and subvert an usurping government. His faith was to the crown, but to the crown on a right head. In a tory who voluntarily submitted to the reigning prince, such an opposition to the prerogative was repugnant to the maxims of his creed, and placed him, as I have said, in a false position. This is of course applicable to the reigns of George I. and II., and in a greater degree, in proportion as the tory and jacobite were more separated than they had been perhaps under William.

The tories gave a striking proof how far they might be brought to abandon their theories, in supporting an address to the queen that she would invite the princess Sophia to take up her residence in England; a measure so unnatural as well as imprudent, that some have ascribed it to a subtlety of politics which I do not comprehend. But we need not, perhaps, look farther than to the blind rage of a party just discarded, who, out of pique towards their sovereign, made her more irreconcilably their enemy, and while they hoped to brand their opponents with inconsistency,

forgot that the imputation would redound with tenfold force on themselves. The whigs justly resisted a proposal so little called for at that time, but it led to an act for the security of the succession, designating a regency in the event of the queen's decease, and providing that the actual parliament, or the last, if none were in being, should meet immediately, and continue for six months, unless dissolved by the successor *.

In the conduct of this party, generally speaking, we do not, I think, find any abandonment of the cause of liberty. The whigs appear to have been zealous for bills excluding placemen from the house, or limiting their numbers in it; and the abolition of the Scots privy-council, an odious and despotic tribunal, was owing in a great measure to the authority of lord Somers †. In these measures, however, the tories generally co-operated, and it is certainly difficult in the history of any nation, to separate the influence of sincere patriotism from that of animosity and thirst of power. But one memorable event in the reign of Anne gave an opportunity for bringing the two theories of government into collision, to the signal advantage of that which the whigs professed; I mean the impeachment of Dr. Sacheverell. Though with a view to the interests of their ministry, this prosecution was very unadvised, and has been deservedly censured, it was of high importance in a constitutional light, and is not only the most authentic exposition, but the most authoritative rati-

* 4 Anne, c. 8. Parl. Hist. 457, et post., Burnet, 429.

† 6 Anne, c. 6. Parl. Hist. 613. Somerville, 296. Hardw. Papers, ii. 473. Cunningham attests the zeal of the whigs for abolishing the Scots privy council, though he is wrong in reckoning lord Cowper among them, whose name appears in the protest on the other side, ii. 135, &c. The distinction of old and modern whigs appeared again in this reign, the former professing, and in general feeling, a more steady attachment to the principles of civil liberty. Sir Peter King, sir Joseph Jekyll, Mr. Wortley, Mr. Hampden, and the historian himself, were of this description, and consequently did not always support Godolphin. P. 210, &c. Mr. Wortley brought in a bill, which passed the commons in 1710, for voting by ballot. It was opposed by Wharton and Godolphin in the lords, as dangerous to the constitution, and thrown out. Wortley, he says, went the next year to Venice, on purpose to inquire into the effects of the ballot which prevailed universally in that republic. P. 285.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

fication of the principles upon which the revolution is to be defended *.

The charge against Sacheverell was not for impugning what was done at the revolution, which he affected to vindicate, but for maintaining that it was not a case of resistance to the supreme power, and consequently no exception to his tenet of an unlimited passive obedience. The managers of the impeachment had therefore not only to prove that there was resistance in the revolution, which could not of course be sincerely disputed, but to assert the lawfulness, in great emergencies, or what is called in politics necessity, of taking arms against the law—a delicate matter to treat of at any time, and not least so by ministers of state and law officers of the crown, in the very presence, as they knew, of their sovereign †. We cannot praise too highly their speeches upon this charge; some shades, rather of discretion than discordance, may be perceptible; and we may distinguish the warmth of Lechmere, or the openness of Stanhope, from the caution of Walpole, who betrays more anxiety than his colleagues

* Parl. Hist. vi. 805. Burnet, 537. State Trials, xv. 1. It is said in Coxe's Life of Marlborough, iii. 141, that Marlborough and Somers were against this prosecution. This writer goes out of his way to make a false and impertinent remark on the managers of the impeachment, as giving encouragement by their speeches to licentiousness and sedition. Id. 166.

† "The managers appointed by the house of commons," says an ardent jacobite, "behaved with all the insolence imaginable. In their discourse they boldly asserted, even in her majesty's presence, that if the right to the crown was hereditary and indefeasible, the prince beyond seas, meaning the king, and not the queen, had the legal title to it, she having no claim thereto, but what she owed to the people; and that by the revolution principles, on which the constitution was founded and to which the laws of the land agreed, the people might turn out or lay aside their sovereigns as they saw cause. Though, no doubt of it, there was a great deal of truth in these assertions, it is easy to be believed that the queen was not well pleased to hear them maintained, even in her own presence and in so solemn a manner, before such a great concourse of her subjects. For though princes do cherish these and the like doctrines, whilst they serve as the means to advance themselves to a crown, yet being once possessed thereof, they have as little satisfaction in them as those who succeed by an hereditary unquestionable title." Lockhart Papers, i. 312.

It is probable enough that the last remark has its weight, and that the queen did not wholly like the speeches of some of the managers; and yet nothing can be more certain than that she owed her crown in the first instance, and the preservation of it at that very time, to those insolent doctrines which wounded her royal ear; and that the genuine loyalists would soon have lodged her in the Tower.

to give no offence in the highest quarter; but in every one the same fundamental principles of the whig creed, except on which indeed the impeachment could not rest, are unambiguously proclaimed. "Since we must give up our right to the laws and liberties of this kingdom," says sir Joseph Jekyll, "or which is all one, be precarious in the enjoyment of them, and hold them only during pleasure, if this doctrine of unlimited non-resistance prevails, the commons have been content to undertake this prosecution *." "The doctrine of unlimited, unconditional passive obedience," says Mr. Walpole, "was first invented to support arbitrary and despotic power, and was never promoted or countenanced by any government that had not designs some time or other of making use of it †." And thus general Stanhope still more vigorously: "As to the doctrine itself of absolute non-resistance, it should seem needless to prove by arguments, that it is inconsistent with the law of reason, with the law of nature, and with the practice of all ages and countries. Nor is it very material what the opinions of some particular divines, or even the doctrine generally preached in some particular reigns, may have been concerning it. It is sufficient for us to know what the practice of the church of England has been when it found itself oppressed. And indeed one may appeal to the practice of all churches, of all states, and of all nations in the world, how they behaved themselves when they found their civil and religious constitutions invaded and oppressed by tyranny. I believe we may further venture to say, that there is not at this day subsisting any nation or government in the world, whose first original did not receive its foundation either from resistance or compact; and as to our purpose, it is equal if the latter be admitted. For wherever compact is admitted, there must be admitted likewise a right to defend the rights accruing by such compact. To argue the municipal laws of a country in this case is idle. Those laws were

* State Trials, xv. 95. † Id. 115.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

only made for the common course of things, and can never be understood to have been designed to defeat the end of all laws whatsoever, which would be the consequence of a nation's tamely submitting to a violation of all their divine and human rights *." Mr. Lechmere argues to the same purpose in yet stronger terms †.

But if these managers for the commons were explicit in their assertion of the whig principle, the counsel for Sacheverell by no means unfurled the opposite banner with equal courage. In this was chiefly manifested the success of the former. They had recourse to the petty chicane of arguing that he had laid down a general rule of obedience, without mentioning its exceptions; that the revolution was a case of necessity, and that they fully approved what was done therein. They set up a distinction which, though at that time perhaps novel, has sometimes since been adopted by tory writers; that resistance to the supreme power was indeed utterly illegal on any pretence whatever, but that the supreme power in this kingdom was the legislature, not the king; and that the revolution took effect by the concurrence of the lords and commons ‡. This is of itself a descent from the high ground of toryism, and would not have been held by the sincere bigots of that creed. Though specious, however, the argument is a sophism, and does not meet the case of the revolution. For though the supreme power may be said to reside in the legislature, yet the prerogative within its due limits is just as much part of the constitution, and the question of resistance to

* State Trials, 127.

† Id. 61.

‡ State Trials, 196. 229. It is observed by Cunningham, p. 286, that Sacheverell's counsel, except Phipps, were ashamed of him, which is really not far from the case. Mr. serjeant Pratt, he says, refused a good fee to plead for him; "a rare example of honesty among lawyers." Id. 290. "The doctor, says Lockhart, employed sir Simon, afterwards lord Harcourt, and sir Constantine Phipps as his counsel, who defended him the best way they could, though they were hard put to it to maintain the hereditary right and unlimited doctrine of non-resistance, and not condemn the revolution. And the truth on it is, these are so inconsistent with one another, that the chief arguments alleged in this and other parallel cases came to no more than this, that the revolution was an exception from the nature of government in general, and the constitution and laws of Britain in particular, which necessity, in that particular case, made expedient and lawful." Ibid.

lawful authority remains as before. Even if this resistance had been made by the two houses of parliament, it was but the case of the civil war, which had been explicitly condemned by more than one statute of Charles II. But as Mr. Lechmere said in reply, it was undeniable that the lords and commons did not join in that resistance at the revolution as part of the legislative and supreme power, but as part of the collective body of the nation *. And sir John Holland had before observed, "that there was a resistance at the revolution was most plain, if taking up arms in Yorkshire, Nottinghamshire, Cheshire, and almost all the counties of England; if the desertion of a prince's own troops to an invading prince, and turning their arms against their sovereign, be resistance †." It might in fact have been asked, whether the dukes of Leeds and Shrewsbury, then sitting in judgment on Sacheverell (and who afterwards voted him not guilty) might not have been convicted of treason, if the prince of Orange had failed of success ‡? The advocates indeed of the prisoner made so many concessions, as amounted to an abandonment of all the general question. They relied chiefly on numerous passages in the homilies, and most approved writers of the Anglican church, asserting the duty of unbounded passive obedience. But the managers eluded these in their reply with decent respect §. The

* State Trials, 407.

† Id. 110.

‡ Cunningham says that the duke of Leeds spoke strongly in favour of the revolution, though he voted Sacheverell not guilty. P. 298. Lockhart observes, that he added success to necessity, as an essential point for rendering the revolution lawful.

§ The homilies are so much more vehement against resistance than Sacheverell was, that it would have been awkward to pass a rigorous sentence on him. In fact, he or any other clergyman had a right to preach the homily against rebellion instead of a sermon. As to their laying down general rules without adverting to the exceptions, an apology which the managers set up for them, it was just as good for Sacheverell; and the homilies expressly deny all possible exceptions. Tillotson had a plan of dropping these old compositions, which in some doctrinal points, as well as in the tenet of non-resistance, do not represent the sentiments of the modern church, though, in a general way, it subscribes to them; but the times were not ripe for this, or some other of that good prelate's designs. Wordsworth's Eccles. Biog. vol. vi. The quotations from the homilies and other approved works by Sacheverell's counsel are irresistible, and must have increased the party spirit of the clergy. "No conjuncture of circumstances what-

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

lords voted Sacheverell guilty by a majority of 67 to 59; several voting on each side rather according to their present faction than their own principles. They passed a slight sentence, interdicting him only from preaching for three years. This was deemed a sort of triumph by his adherents; but a severe punishment on a wretch so insignificant would have been misplaced, and the sentence may be compared to the nominal damages sometimes given in a suit instituted for the trial of a great right.

The shifting combinations of party in the reign of Anne, which affected the original distinctions of whig and tory, though generally known, must be shortly noticed. The queen, whose understanding and fitness for government were below mediocrity, had been attached to the tories, and bore an antipathy to her predecessor. Her first ministry, her first parliament, gave presage of a government to be wholly conducted by that party. But this prejudice was counteracted by the persuasions of that celebrated favourite, the wife of Marlborough, who, probably from some personal resentments, had thrown her influence into the scale of the whigs. The well known records of their conversation and correspondence present a strange picture of good-natured feebleness on one side, of ungrateful insolence on the other. But the interior of a court will rarely endure daylight. Though Godolphin and Marlborough, in whom the queen reposed her entire confidence, had been thought tories, they became gradually alienated from that party, and communicated their own feelings to the queen. The house of commons very reasonably declined to make an hereditary grant to the latter out of the revenues of the post-office in 1702, when he had performed no extraordinary services, though they acceded to it without

ever," says bishop Sanderson, "can make that expedient to be done at any time that is of itself, and in the kind, unlawful. For a man to take up arms offensive or defensive against a lawful sovereign, being a thing in its nature simply and de toto genére unlawful, may not be done by any man, at any time, in any case, upon any colour or pretence whatsoever." State Trials, 231.

hesitation after the battle of Blenheim *. This gave some offence to Anne; and the chief tory leaders in the cabinet, Rochester, Nottingham, and Buckingham, displaying a reluctance to carry on the war with such vigour as Marlborough knew to be necessary, were soon removed from office. Their revengeful attack on the queen, in the address to invite the princess Sophia, made a return to power hopeless for several years. Anne, however, entertained a desire very natural to an English sovereign, yet in which none but a weak one will expect to succeed, of excluding chiefs of parties from her councils. Disgusted with the tories, she was loth to admit the whigs; and thus Godolphin's administration, from 1704 to 1708, was rather sullenly supported, sometimes indeed thwarted, by that party. Cowper was made chancellor against the queen's wishes †; but the junto, as it was called, of five eminent whig peers, Somers, Halifax, Wharton, Orford, and Sunderland, were kept out through the queen's dislike, and in some measure, no question, through Godolphin's jealousy. They forced themselves into the cabinet about 1708, and effected the dismissal of Harley and St. John, who, though not of the regular tory school in connexion or principle, had already gone along with that faction in the late reign, and were now reduced by their dismissal to unite with it ‡. The whig ministry of queen Anne, so often talked of, cannot in fact be said to have existed more than two years, from 1708 to 1710; her previous admini-

* Parl. Hist. vi. 57. They did not scruple, however, to say what cost nothing but veracity and gratitude, that Marlborough had retrieved the honour of the nation. This was justly objected to, as reflecting on the late king, but carried by 180 to 80. Id. 58. Burnet.

† Coxe's Marlborough, i. 483. Mr. Smith was chosen speaker by 248 to 205, a slender majority; but some of the ministerial party seem to have thought him too much a whig. Id. 485. Parl. Hist. 450. The whig newspapers were long hostile to Marlborough.

‡ Burnet rather gently slides over these jealousies between Godolphin and the whig junto; and Tindal, his mere copyist, is not worth mentioning. But Cunningham's History, and still more the letters published in Coxe's Life of Marlborough, show better the state of party-intrigues, which the Parliamentary History also illustrates, as well as many pamphlets of the time. Somerville has carefully compiled as much as was known when he wrote.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

stration having been at first tory, and afterwards of a motley complexion, though depending for existence on the great whig interest, which it in some degree proscribed. Every one knows that this ministry was precipitated from power through the favourite's abuse of her ascendancy, become at length intolerable to the most forbearing of queens and mistresses, conspiring with another intrigue of the bed-chamber, and the popular clamour against Sacheverell's impeachment. It seems rather an humiliating proof of the sway which the feeblest prince enjoys even in a limited monarchy, that the fortunes of Europe should have been changed by nothing more noble than the insolence of one waiting-woman and the cunning of another. It is true that this was effected by throwing the weight of the crown into the scale of a powerful faction; yet the house of Bourbon would probably not have reigned beyond the Pyrenees, but for Sarah and Abigail at queen Anne's toilet.

The object of the war, as it is commonly called, of the Grand Alliance, commenced in 1702, was, as expressed in an address of the house of commons, for preserving the liberties of Europe, and reducing the exorbitant power of France*. The occupation of the Spanish dominions by the duke of Anjou, on the authority of the late king's will, was assigned as its justification, together with the acknowledgment of the pretended prince of Wales, as successor to his father James. Charles, archduke of Austria, was recognised as king of Spain; and as early as 1705, the restoration of that monarchy to his house is declared in a speech from the throne to be not only safe and advantageous, but glorious to England†. Louis XIV. had perhaps at no time much hope of retaining for his grandson the whole inheritance he claimed; and on several occasions made overtures for negotiation, but such as indicated his design of rather sacrificing the detached possessions

* Parl. Hist. vi. 4.

† Nov. 27. Parl. Hist. 477.

of Italy and the Netherlands, than Spain itself and the Indies *. After the battle of Oudenarde, however, and the loss of Lille in the campaign of 1708, the exhausted state of France and discouragement of his court induced him to acquiesce in the cession of the Spanish monarchy, as a basis of treaty. In the conferences of the Hague in 1709, he struggled for a time to preserve Naples and Sicily; but ultimately admitted the terms imposed by the allies, with the exception of the famous thirty-seventh article of the preliminaries, binding him to procure, by force or persuasion, the resignation of the Spanish crown by his grandson within two months. This proposition he declared to be both dishonourable and impracticable; and the allies refusing to give way, the negotiation was broken off. It was renewed the next year at Gertruydenburg, but the same obstacle still proved insurmountable †.

It has been the prevailing opinion in modern times, that the English ministry, rather against the judgment of their allies of Holland, insisted upon a condition not indispensable to their security, and too ignominious for their fallen enemy to accept. Some may perhaps incline to think, that even had Philip of Anjou been suffered to reign in Naples, a possession rather honourable than important, the balance of power would not have been seriously affected, and the probability of durable peace been increased. This, however, it was not necessary to discuss. The main question is as to the power which the allies possessed of securing the Spanish monarchy for the archduke, if they had consented to waive the thirty-seventh article of the preliminaries. If indeed they could have been considered as a single potentate, it was doubtless possible, by means of keeping up great armies on the frontier, and by the delivery of cautionary towns, to have prevented the king of France from lending assistance to his grandson. But self-

* Coxe's Marlborough, i. 453. ii. 110. Cunningham, ii. 52. 83.

† Memoires de Torcy, vol. ii. passim. Coxe's Marlborough, vol. iii. Bolingbroke's Letters on History, and Lord Walpole's Answer to them. Cunningham. Somerville, 340.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, G. I., II.

interested and disunited as confederacies generally are, and as the grand alliance had long since become, this appeared a very dangerous course of policy, if Louis should be playing an underhand game against his engagements. And this it was not then unreasonable to suspect, even we should believe, in despite of some plausible authorities, that he was really sincere in abandoning so favourite an interest. The obstinate adherence of Godolphin and Somers to the preliminaries may possibly have been erroneous; but it by no means deserves the reproach that has been unfairly bestowed on it; nor can the whigs be justly charged with protracting the war to enrich Marlborough, or to secure themselves in power*.

The conferences at Gertruydenburg were broken off in July, 1710, because an absolute security for the evacuation of Spain

* The late biographer of Marlborough asserts that he was against breaking off the conferences in 1709, though clearly for insisting on the cession of Spain. (iii. 40.) Godolphin, Somers, and the whigs in general, expected Louis XIV. to yield the thirty-seventh article. Cowper, however, was always doubtful of this. Id. 176.

It is very hard to pronounce, as it appears to me, on the great problem of Louis's sincerity in this negotiation. No decisive evidence seems to have been brought on the contrary side. The most remarkable authority that way is a passage in the Memoires of St. Phelipe, iii. 263. who certainly asserts that the king of France had, without the knowledge of any of his ministers, assured his grandson of a continued support. But the question returns as to St. Phelipe's means of knowing so important a secret. On the other hand, I cannot discover in the long correspondence between madame de Maintenon and the princesse des Ursins the least corroboration of these suspicions, but much to the contrary effect. Nor does Torcy drop a word, though writing when all was over, by which we should infer that the court of Versailles had any other hopes left in 1709, than what still lingered in their hearts from the determined spirit of the Castilians themselves.

It appears by the Memoires de Noailles, iii. 10. (edit. 1777) that Louis wrote to Philip, 26 Nov. 1708, hinting that he must reluctantly give him up, in answer to one wherein the latter had declared that he would not quit Spain while he had a drop of blood in his veins. And on the French ambassador at Madrid, Amelot, remonstrating against the abandonment of Spain, with an evident intimation that Philip could not support himself alone, the king of France answered that he must end the war at any price. 15 Apr. 1709. Id. 34. In the next year, after the battle of Saragosa, which seemed to turn the scale wholly against Philip, Noailles was sent to Madrid in order to persuade that prince to abandon the contest. Id. 107. There were some in France who would even have accepted the thirty-seventh article, of whom madame de Maintenon seems to have been. P. 117. We may perhaps think that an explicit offer of Naples, on the part of the allies, would have changed the scene; nay, it seems as if Louis would have been content at this time with Sardinia and Sicily. P. 108.

by Philip appeared to be wanting, and within six months a fresh negotiation was secretly on foot, the basis of which was his retention of that kingdom. For the administration presided by Godolphin had fallen meanwhile; new counsellors, a new parliament, new principles of government. The tories had from the beginning come very reluctantly into the schemes of the grand alliance; though no opposition to the war had ever been shown in parliament, it was very soon perceived that the majority of that denomination had their hearts bent on peace *. But instead of renewing the negotiation in concert with the allies, which indeed might have been impracticable, the new ministers fell upon the course of a clandestine arrangement, in exclusion of all the other powers, which led to the signature of preliminaries in September, 1711, and afterwards to the public congress of Utrecht, and the celebrated treaty named from that town. Its chief provisions are too well known to be repeated.

The arguments in favour of a treaty of pacification, which should abandon the great point of contest, and leave Philip in possession of Spain and America, were neither few nor inconsiderable. 1. The kingdom had been impoverished by twenty years of uninterruptedly augmented taxation; the annual burthens being triple in amount of those paid before the revolution. Yet amidst these sacrifices we had the mortification of finding a debt rapidly increasing, whereof the mere interest far exceeded the ancient revenues of the crown, to be bequeathed, like an hereditary curse, to unborn ages. Though the supplies had been raised with less difficulty than in the late reign, and the condition of trade was less unsatisfactory, the landed proprietors saw with

* A contemporary historian of remarkable gravity observes: "It was strange to see how much the desire of French wine, and the dearness of it, alienated many men from the duke of Marlborough's friendship." Cunningham, ii. 220. The hard drinkers complained that they were poisoned by port; these formed almost a party; Dr. Aldrich, dean of Christchurch, surnamed the priest of Bacchus, Dr. Ratcliffe, general Churchill, &c. "And all the bottle companions, many physicians, and great numbers of the lawyers and inferior clergy, and, in fine, the loose women too, were united together in the faction against the duke of Marlborough."

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

indignation the silent transfer of their wealth to new men, and hated the glory that was bought by their own degradation. Was it not to be feared that they might hate also the revolution, and the protestant succession that depended on it, when they tasted these fruits it had borne? Even the army had been recruited by violent means unknown to our constitution, yet such as the continual loss of men, with a population at the best stationary, had perhaps rendered necessary *.

2. The prospect of reducing Spain to the archduke's obedience was grown unfavourable. It was at best an odious work, and not very defensible on any maxims of national justice, to impose a sovereign on a great people in despite of their own repugnance, and what they deemed their loyal obligation. Heaven itself might shield their righteous cause, and baffle the selfish rapacity of human politics. But what was the state of the war at the close of 1710? The surrender of 7000 English under Stanhope at Brihuega had ruined the affairs of Charles, which in fact had at no time been truly prosperous, and confined him to the single province sincerely attached to him, Catalonia. As it was certain that Philip had spirit enough to continue the war, even if abandoned by his grandfather, and would have the support of almost the entire nation, what remained but to carry on a very doubtful contest for the subjugation of that extensive kingdom? In Flanders, no doubt, the genius of Marlborough kept still the ascendant; yet France had her Fabius in Villars; and the capture of three or four small fortresses in a whole campaign did not presage a rapid destruction of the enemy's power.

* A bill was attempted in 1704 to recruit the army by a forced conscription of men from each parish, but laid aside as unconstitutional. Boyer's Reign of Queen Anne, p. 123. It was tried again in 1707 with like success. P. 319. But it was resolved instead to bring in a bill for raising a sufficient number of troops out of such persons as have no lawful calling or employment. Stat. 4 Anne, c. 10. Parl. Hist. 335. The parish officers were thus enabled to press men for the land service; a method hardly more constitutional than the former, and liable to enormous abuses. The act was temporary, but renewed several times during the war. It was afterwards revived in 1757 (30 Geo. II. c. 8.) but never, I believe, on any later occasion.

3. It was acknowledged that the near connexion of the monarchs on the thrones of France and Spain could not be desired for Europe. Yet the experience of ages had shown how little such ties of blood determined the policy of courts; a Bourbon on the throne of Spain could not but assert the honour and even imbibe the prejudices of his subjects; and as the two nations were in all things opposite, and must clash in their public interests, there was little reason to fear a subserviency in the cabinet of Madrid, which, even in that absolute monarchy, could not be displayed against the general sentiment.

4. The death of the emperor Joseph, and election of the archduke Charles in his room, which took place in the spring of 1711, changed in no small degree the circumstances of Europe. It was now a struggle to unite the Spanish and Austrian monarchies under one head. Even if England might have little interest to prevent this, could it be indifferent to the smaller states of Europe that a family not less ambitious and encroaching than that of Bourbon should be so enormously aggrandized? France had long been to us the only source of apprehension; but to some states, to Savoy, to Switzerland, to Venice, to the principalities of the empire, she might justly appear a very necessary bulwark against the aggressions of Austria. The alliance could not be expected to continue faithful and unanimous, after so important an alteration in the balance of power.

5. The advocates of peace and adherents of the new ministry stimulated the national passions of England by vehement reproaches of the allies. They had thrown, it was contended, in despite of all treaties, an unreasonable proportion of expense upon a country not directly concerned in their quarrel, and rendered a negligent or criminal administration their dupes or accomplices. We were exhausting our blood and treasure to gain kingdoms for the house of Austria, which insulted, and the best towns of Flanders for the States-general, who cheated us. The barrier treaty of lord Townshend was so extravagant, that one

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

might wonder at the presumption of Holland in suggesting its articles, much more at the folly of our government in acceding to them. It laid the foundation of endless dissatisfaction on the side of Austria, thus reduced to act as the vassal of a little republic in her own territories, and to keep up fortresses at her own expense which others were to occupy. It might be anticipated, that, at some time, a sovereign of that house would be found more sensible to ignominy than to danger, who would remove this badge of humiliation by dismantling the fortifications which were thus to be defended. Whatever exaggeration might be in these clamours, they were sure to pass for undeniable truths with a people jealous of foreigners, and prone to believe itself imposed upon, from a consciousness of general ignorance and credulity.

These arguments were met by answers not less confident, though less successful at the moment than they have been deemed convincing by the majority of politicians in later ages. It was denied that the resources of the kingdom were so much enfeebled; the supplies were still raised without difficulty; commerce had not declined; public credit stood high under the Godolphin ministry; and it was especially remarkable, that the change of administration, notwithstanding the prospect of peace, was attended by a great fall in the price of stocks. France, on the other hand, was notoriously reduced to the utmost distress; and, though it were absurd to allege the misfortunes of our enemy by way of consolation for our own, yet the more exhausted of the two combatants was naturally that which ought to yield; and it was not for the honour of our free government that we should be outdone in magnanimous endurance for the sake of the great interests of ourselves and our posterity by the despotism we so boastfully scorned*. The king of France had now for half a century been

* Every contemporary writer bears testimony to the exhaustion of France, rendered still more deplorable by the unfavourable season of 1709, which produced a famine. Madame de Maintenon's letters to the princess des Ursins are full of the pub-

pursuing a system of encroachment on the neighbouring states, which the weakness of the two branches of the Austrian house, and the perfidiousness of the Stuarts, not less than the valour of his troops and skill of his generals, had long rendered successful. The tide had turned for the first time in the present war; victories more splendid than were recorded in modern warfare had illustrated the English name. Were we spontaneously to relinquish these great advantages, and two years after Louis had himself consented to withdraw his forces from Spain, our own arms having been in the mean time still successful on the most important scene of the contest, to throw up the game in despair, and leave him far more the gainer at the termination of this calamitous war, than he had been after those triumphant campaigns which his vaunting medals commemorate? Spain of herself could not resist the confederates, even if unanimous in support of Philip, which was denied as to the provinces composing the kingdom of Aragon, and certainly as to Catalonia; it was in Flanders that Castile was to be conquered; it was France that we were to overcome; and now that her iron barrier had been broken through, when Marlborough was preparing to pour his troops upon the defenceless plains of Picardy, could we doubt that Louis must in good earnest abandon the cause of his grandson, as he had already pledged himself in the conferences of Gertruydenburg?

2. It was easy to slight the influence which the ties of blood exert over kings. Doubtless they are often torn asunder by ambition or wounded pride. But it does not follow that they have no efficacy, and the practice of courts in cementing alliances by intermarriage seems to show that they are not reckoned indifferent. It might, however, be admitted, that a king of Spain, such as she had been a hundred years before, would probably be led by the tendency of his ambition into a course of policy hostile

lic misery, which she did not soften, out of some vain hope that her inflexible correspondent might relent at length, and prevail on the king and queen of Spain to abandon their throne.

CHAP. XVI.

Anne, Geo. I., II.

to France. But that monarchy had long been declining; great rather in name, and extent of dominion, than intrinsic resources, she might perhaps rally for a short period under an enterprising minister; but with such inveterate abuses of government, and so little progressive energy among the people, she must gradually sink lower in the scale of Europe, till it might become the chief pride of her sovereigns that they were the younger branches of the house of Bourbon. To cherish this connexion would be the policy of the court of Versailles; there would result from it a dependent relation, an habitual subserviency of the weaker power, a family compact of perpetual union, always opposed to Great Britain. In distant ages, and after fresh combinations of the European commonwealth should have seemed almost to efface the recollection of Louis XIV. and the war of the succession, the Bourbons on the French throne might still claim a sort of primogenitary right to protect the dignity of the junior branch by interference with the affairs of Spain, and a late posterity of those who witnessed the peace of Utrecht might be entangled by its improvident concessions.

3. That the accession of Charles to the empire rendered his possession of the Spanish monarchy in some degree less desirable, need not be disputed, though it would not be easy to prove that it could endanger England, or even the smaller states, since it was agreed on all hands that he was to be master of Milan and Naples. But against this perhaps imaginary mischief the opponents of the treaty set the risk of seeing the crowns of France and Spain united on the head of Philip. In the years 1711 and 1712 the dauphin, the duke of Burgundy, and the duke of Berry, were swept away. An infant stood alone between the king of Spain and the French succession. The latter was induced with some unwillingness to sign a renunciation of this contingent inheritance. But it was notoriously the doctrine of the French court that such renunciations were invalid; and the sufferings of Europe were chiefly due to this tenet of indefeasible royalty. It was very pos-

sible that Spain would never consent to this union, and that a fresh league of the great powers might be formed to prevent it; but if we had the means of permanently separating the two kingdoms in our hands, it was strange policy to leave open this door for a renewal of the quarrel.

But whatever judgment we may be disposed to form as to the political necessity of leaving Spain and America in the possession of Philip, it is impossible to justify the course of that negotiation which ended in the peace of Utrecht. It was at best a dangerous and inauspicious concession, demanding every compensation that could be devised, and which the circumstances of the war entitled us to require. France was still our formidable enemy; the ambition of Louis was still to be dreaded, his intrigues to be suspected. That an English minister should have thrown himself into the arms of this enemy, at the first overture of negotiation; that he should have renounced advantages upon which he might have insisted; that he should have restored Lille, and almost attempted to procure the sacrifice of Tournay; that throughout the whole correspondence and in all personal interviews with Torcy he should have shown the triumphant queen of Great Britain more eager for peace than her vanquished adversary; that the two courts should have been virtually conspiring against those allies without whom we had bound ourselves to enter on no treaty; that we should have withdrawn our troops in the midst of a campaign, and even seized upon the towns of our confederates, while we left them exposed to be overcome by a superior force; that we should have first deceived those confederates by the most direct falsehood in denying our clandestine treaty, and then dictated to them its acceptance, are facts so disgraceful to Bolingbroke, and in somewhat a less degree to Oxford, that they can hardly be palliated by establishing the expediency of the treaty itself.

For several years after the treaty of Ryswick, those intrigues of ambitious and discontented statesmen, and of a misled faction in favour of the exiled family, grew much colder; the old age of

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

James and the infancy of his son being alike incompatible with their success. The jacobites yielded a sort of provisional allegiance to the daughter of their king, deeming her as it were a regent in the heir's minority, and willing to defer the consideration of his claim till he should be competent to make it, or to acquiesce in her continuance upon the throne, if she could be induced to secure his reversion *. Meanwhile, under the name of tories and high-church men, they carried on a more dangerous war by sapping the bulwarks of the revolution settlement. The disaffected clergy poured forth sermons and libels, to impugn the principles of the whigs or traduce their characters. Twice a year especially, on the 30th of January and 29th of May, they took care that every stroke upon rebellion and usurpation should tell against the expulsion of the Stuarts and the Hanover succession. They inveighed against the dissenters and the toleration. They set up pretences of loyalty towards the queen, descanting sometimes on her hereditary right, in order to throw a slur on the settlement. They drew a transparent veil over their designs, which might screen them from prosecution, but could not impose, nor was meant to impose, on the reader. Among these the most distinguished was Leslie, author of a periodical sheet, called the Rehearsal, printed weekly from 1704 to 1708; and as he, though a non-juror, and unquestionable jacobite, held only the same language as Sacheverell, and others who affected obedience to the government, we cannot much be deceived in assuming that their views were entirely the same †.

The court of St. Germains, in the first years of the queen, preserved a secret connexion with Godolphin and Marlborough,

* It is evident from Macpherson's Papers, that all hopes of a restoration in the reign of Anne were given up in England. They soon revived, however, as to Scotland, and grew stronger about the time of the union.

† The Rehearsal is not written in such a manner as to gain over many proselytes. The scheme of fighting against liberty with her own arms had not yet come into vogue; or rather Leslie was too mere a bigot to practise it. He is wholly for arbitrary power; but the common stuff of his journal is high-church notions of all descriptions. This could not win many in the reign of Anne.

though justly distrustful of their sincerity; nor is it by any means clear that they made any strong professions*. Their evident determination to reduce the power of France, their approximation towards the whigs, the averseness of the duchess to jacobite principles, taught at length that unfortunate court how little it had to expect from such ancient friends. The Scots, on the other hand, were eager for the young king's immediate restoration; and their assurances finally produced his unsuccessful expedition to the coast in 1708†. This alarmed the queen, who at least had no thoughts of giving up any part of her dominions, and probably exasperated the two ministers‡. Though Godolphin's partiality to the Stuart cause was always suspected, the proofs of his intercourse with their emissaries are not so strong as against Marlborough, who, as late as 1711, declared himself more positively than he seems hitherto to have done in favour of their restoration§. But the extreme selfishness and treachery of his character makes it difficult to believe that he had any further

* Macpherson, i. 608. If Carte's anecdotes are true, which is very doubtful, Godolphin, after he was turned out, declared his concern at not having restored the king; that he thought Harley would do it, but by French assistance, which he did not intend; that the tories had always distressed him, and his administration had passed in a struggle with the whig junto. Id. 170. Somerville says, he was assured that Carte was reckoned credulous and ill-informed by the Jacobites. P. 273. It seems indeed, by some passages in Macpherson's Papers, that the Stuart agents either kept up an intercourse with Godolphin, or pretended to do so. Vol. ii. 2, et post. But it is evident that they had no confidence in him.

It must be observed, however, that lord Dartmouth, in his notes on Burnet, repeatedly intimates that Godolphin's secret object in his ministry was the restoration of the house of Stuart, and that with this view he suffered the act of security in Scotland to pass, which raised such a clamour, that he was forced to close with the whigs in order to save himself. It is said also by a very good authority, lord Hardwicke (note on Burnet, Oxf. edit. v. 352) that there was something not easy to be accounted for in the conduct of the ministry preceding the attempt on Scotland in 1708; giving us to understand in the subsequent part of the note that Godolphin was suspected of connivance with it. And this is confirmed by Ker of Kersland, who directly charges the treasurer with extreme remissness, if not something worse. Memoirs, i. 54. See also Lockhart's Commentaries (in Lockhart Papers, i. 308.) Yet it seems almost impossible to suspect Godolphin of such treachery, not only towards the protestant succession, but his mistress herself.

† Macpherson, ii. 74 et post. Hooke's Negotiations. Lockhart's Commentaries. Ker of Kersland's Memoirs, 45. Burnet. Cunningham. Somerville.

‡ Burnet, 502.

§ Macpherson, ii. 158. 228. 283. and see Somerville, 272.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

view than to secure himself in the event of a revolution which he judged probable. His interest, which was always his deity, did not lie in that direction; and his great sagacity must have perceived it.

A more promising overture had by this time been made to the young claimant from an opposite quarter. Mr. Harley, about the end of 1710, sent the abbé Gaultier to marshal Berwick (natural son of James II. by Marlborough's sister) with authority to treat about the restoration; Anne of course retaining the crown for her life, and securities being given for the national religion and liberties. The conclusion of peace was a necessary condition. The jacobites in the English parliament were directed in consequence to fall in with the court, which rendered it decidedly superior. Harley promised to send over in the next year a plan for carrying that design into effect. But neither at that time, nor during the remainder of the queen's life, did this dissembling minister take any further measures, though still in strict connexion with that party at home, and with the court of St. Germains*. It was necessary, he said, to proceed gently, to make the army their own, to avoid suspicions which would be fatal. It was manifest that the course of his administration was wholly inconsistent with his professions; the friends of the house of Stuart felt that he betrayed, though he did not delude them; but it was the misfortune of this minister, or rather the just and natural reward of crooked counsels, that those he meant to serve could neither believe in his friendship, nor forgive his appearances of enmity. It is doubtless not easy to pronounce on the real intentions of men so destitute of sincerity as Harley and Marlborough; but in believing the former favourable to the protestant succession, which he had so eminently contributed to establish, we accede to the judgment of those contemporaries who

* Memoirs of Berwick, 1778 (English translation.) And compare Lockhart's Commentaries, p. 368. Macpherson, sub ann. 1712 and 1713, passim.

were best able to form one, and especially of the very jacobites with whom he tampered. And this is so powerfully confirmed by most of his public measures, his averseness to the high tories, and their consequent hatred of him, his irreconcilable disagreement with those of his colleagues who looked most to St. Germains, his frequent attempts to renew a connexion with the whigs, his contempt of the jacobite creed of government, and the little prospect he could have had of retaining power on such a revolution, that, so far at least as may be presumed from what has hitherto become public, there seems no reason for counting the earl of Oxford among those from whom the house of Hanover had any treachery to apprehend*.

* The pamphlets on Harley's side, and probably written under his inspection, for at least the first year after his elevation to power, such as one entitled "Faults on both Sides," ascribed to Richard Harley, his relation, (Somers Tracts, xii. 678), "Spectator's Address to the Whigs on Occasion of the stabbing Mr. Harley," or the "Secret History of the October Club," 1711 (I believe by De Foe), seem to have for their object to reconcile as many of the whigs as possible to his administration, and to display his aversion to the violent tories. There can be no doubt that his first project was to have excluded the more acrimonious whigs, such as Wharton and Sunderland, as well as the duke of Marlborough and his wife, and coalesced with Cowper and Somers, both of whom were also in favour with the queen. But the steadiness of the whig party, and their resentment of his duplicity, forced him into the opposite quarters, though he never lost sight of his schemes for reconciliation.

The dissembling nature of this unfortunate statesman rendered his designs suspected. The whigs, at least in 1713, in their correspondence with the court of Hanover, speak of him as entirely in the jacobite interest. Macpherson, ii. 472. 509. Cunningham, who is not on the whole unfavourable to Harley, says, that "men of all parties agreed in concluding that his designs were in the Pretender's favour. And it is certain that he affected to have it thought so." P. 303. Lockhart also bears witness to the reliance placed on him by the jacobites, and argues with some plausibility (p. 377) that the duke of Hamilton's appointment as ambassador to France, in 1712, must have been designed to further their object, though he believed that the death of that nobleman, in a duel with lord Mohun, just as he was setting out for Paris, put a stop to the scheme, and "questions if it was ever heartily re-assumed by lord Oxford." "This I know, that his lordship regretting to a friend of mine the duke's death, next day after it happened, told him that it disordered all their schemes, seeing Great Britain did not afford a person capable to discharge the trust which was committed to his grace, which sure was somewhat very extraordinary; and what other than the king's restoration could there be of so very great importance, or require such dexterity in managing, is not easy to imagine. And indeed it is more than probable that before his lordship could pitch upon one he might depend on in such weighty matters, the discord and division which happened betwixt him and the other ministers of state diverted or suspended his design of serving the king." Lockhart's

CHAP. XVI.

Anne, 1712. I., II.

The Pretender, meanwhile, had friends in the tory government more sincere, probably, and zealous than Oxford. In the year 1712, lord Bolingbroke, the duke of Buckingham, president of the council, and the duke of Ormond, were engaged in this connexion *. The last of these, being in the command of the

Commentaries, p. 410. But there is more reason to doubt whether this design to serve the king ever existed.

* If we may trust to a book printed in 1717, with the title, "Minutes of Monsieur Mesnager's Negotiations with the Court of England towards the Close of the last Reign, written by himself," that agent of the French cabinet entered into an arrangement with Bolingbroke in March, 1712, about the Pretender. It was agreed that Louis should ostensibly abandon him, but should not be obliged, in case of the queen's death, not to use endeavours for his restoration. Lady Masham was wholly for this; but owned "the rage and irreconcilable aversion of the greatest part of the common people to her (the queen's) brother was grown to a height." But I must confess, that, although Macpherson has extracted the above passage, and a more judicious writer, Somerville, quotes the book freely as genuine (Hist. of Anne, p. 581, &c.), I found in reading it what seemed to me the strongest grounds of suspicion. It is printed in England, without a word of preface to explain how such important secrets came to be divulged, or by what means the book came before the world; the correct information as to English customs and persons frequently betrays a native pen; the truth it contains, as to jacobite intrigues, might have transpired from other sources, and in the main was pretty well suspected, as the Report of the Secret Committee on the Impeachments in 1715 shows; so that, upon the whole, I cannot but reckon it a forgery in order to injure the tory leaders.

But however this may be, we find Bolingbroke in correspondence with the Stuart agents in the latter part of 1712. Macpherson, 366. And his own correspondence with lord Strafford shows his dread and dislike of Hanover. (Bol. Corr. ii. 487, et alibi.) The duke of Buckingham wrote to St. Germains in July that year, with strong expressions of his attachment to the cause, and pressing the necessity of the prince's conversion to the protestant religion. Macpherson, 327. Ormond is mentioned in the duke of Berwick's letters as in correspondence with him; and Lockhart says there was no reason to make the least question of his affection to the king, whose friends were consequently well pleased at his appointment to succeed Marlborough in the command of the army, and thought it portended some good designs in favour of him. Id. 376.

Of Ormond's sincerity in this cause there can indeed be little doubt; but there is almost as much reason to suspect that of Bolingbroke as of Oxford, except that, having more rashness and less principle, he was better fitted for so dangerous a counter-revolution. But in reality he had a perfect contempt for the Stuart and tory notions of government, and would doubtless have served the house of Hanover with more pleasure, if his prospects in that quarter had been more favourable. It appears that in the session of 1714, when he had become lord of the ascendant, he disappointed the zealous royalists by his delays as much as his more cautious rival had done before. Lockhart, 470. This writer repeatedly asserts that a majority of the house of commons, both in the parliament of 1710 and that of 1713, wanted only the least encouragement from the court to have brought about the repeal of the act of settlement. But I think this very doubtful, and I am quite convinced that the nation would not have acquiesced in it. Lockhart is sanguine, and ignorant of England.

It must be admitted that part of the

army, little glory as that brought him, might become an important auxiliary. Harcourt, the chancellor, though the proofs are not, I believe, so direct, has always been reckoned in the same interest. Several of the leading Scots peers, with little disguise, avowed their adherence to it; especially the duke of Hamilton, who, luckily perhaps for the kingdom, lost his life in a duel, at the moment when he was setting out on an embassy to France. The rage expressed by that faction at his death betrays the hopes they had entertained from him. A strong phalanx of tory members, called the October Club, though by no means entirely jacobite, were chiefly influenced by those who were such. In the new parliament of 1713, the queen's precarious health excited the Stuart partisans to press forward with more zeal. The masque was more than half drawn aside, and vainly urging the ministry to fulfil their promises while yet in time, they cursed the insidious cunning of Harley and the selfish cowardice of the queen. Upon her they had for some years relied. Lady Masham, the bosom favourite, was entirely theirs; and every word, every look of the sovereign, had been anxiously observed, in the hope of some indication that she would take the road which affection and conscience, as they fondly argued, must dictate. But whatever may have been the sentiments of Anne, her secret was never divulged, nor is there, as I apprehend, however positively the contrary is sometimes asserted, any decisive evidence whence we may infer that she even intended her brother's restoration *. The

cabinet were steady to the protestant succession. Lord Dartmouth, lord Powlett, lord Trevor, and the bishop of London were certainly so; nor can there be any reasonable doubt, as I conceive, of the duke of Shrewsbury. On the other side, besides Ormond, Harcourt, and Bolingbroke, were the duke of Buckingham, sir William Wyndham, and probably Mr. Bromley.

* It is said that the duke of Leeds, who was now in the Stuart interest, had sounded her in 1711, but with no success in discovering her intention. Macpherson, 212. The duke of Buckingham pretended, in the above mentioned letter to St. Germains, June 1712, that he had often pressed the queen on the subject of her brother's restoration, but could get no other answer than, "you see he does not make the least step to oblige me;" or, "he may thank himself for it: he knows I always loved him better than the other." Id. 328. This alludes to the Pretender's pertinacity, as the writer thought it, in adhering to his re-

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

weakest of mankind have generally an instinct of self-preservation which leads them right, and perhaps more than stronger minds possess; and Anne could scarcely help perceiving that her own deposition from the throne would be the natural consequence of once admitting the reversionary right of one whose claim was equally good to the possession. The assertors of hereditary descent could acquiesce in her usurpation no longer than they found it necessary for their object; if her life should be protracted to an ordinary duration, it was almost certain that Scotland first, and afterwards England, would be wrested from her impotent grasp. Yet, though I believe the queen to have been sensible of this, it is impossible to pronounce that either through pique against the house of Hanover, or inability to resist her own counsellors, she might not have come into the scheme of altering the succession.

ligion; and it may be very questionable, whether he had ever such conversation with the queen at all. But, if he had, it does not lead to the supposition, that under all circumstances she meditated his restoration. If the book under the name of Mesnager is genuine, which I much doubt, Mrs. Masham had never been able to elicit any thing decisive of her majesty's inclinations; nor do any of the Stuart correspondents in Macpherson pretend to know her intentions with certainty. The following passage in Lockhart seems rather more to the purpose. On his coming to parliament in 1710, with a "high monarchical address," which he had procured from the county of Edinburgh, "the queen told me, though I had almost always opposed her measures, she did not doubt of my affection to her person, and hoped I would not concur in the design against Mrs. Masham, or for bringing over the prince of Hanover. At first I was somewhat surprised, but recovering myself, I assured her I should never be accessary to the imposing any hardship or affront upon her; and as for the prince of Hanover, her majesty might judge from the address I had read, that I should not be acceptable to my constituents if I gave my consent for bringing over any of that family, either now or at any time hereafter. At that she smiled, and I withdrew; and then she said to the duke (Hamilton), she believed I was an honest man and a fair dealer, and the duke replied, he could assure her I liked her majesty and all her father's bairns." P. 317. It appears in subsequent parts of this book, that Lockhart and his friends were confident of the queen's inclinations in the last year of her life, though not of her resolution.

The truth seems to be, that Anne was very dissembling, as Swift repeatedly says in his private letters, and as feeble and timid persons in high station generally are, that she hated the house of Hanover, and in some measure feared them; but that she had no regard for the Pretender (for it is really absurd to talk like Somerville of natural affection under all the circumstances), and feared him a great deal more than the other; that she had however some scruples about his right, which were counterbalanced by her attachment to the church of England; consequently, that she was wavering among opposite impulses, but with a predominating timidity which would have probably kept all right.

But if neither the queen nor her lord treasurer were inclined to take that vigorous course which one party demanded, they at least did enough to raise just alarm in the other; and it seems strange to deny that the protestant succession was in danger. As lord Oxford's ascendancy diminished, the signs of impending revolution became less equivocal. Adherents of the house of Stuart were placed in civil and military trust; an Irish agent of the Pretender was received in the character of envoy from the court of Spain; the most audacious manifestations of disaffection were overlooked*. Several even in parliament spoke with contempt and aversion of the house of Hanover†. It was surely not un-

* The duchess of Gordon, in June 1711, sent a silver medal to the faculty of advocates at Edinburgh, with a head on one side, and the inscription, Cujus est; on the other, the British isles, with the word Reddite. The dean of faculty, Dundas of Arniston, presented this medal, and there seems reason to believe that a majority of the advocates voted for its reception. Somerville, p. 452. Bolingbroke, in writing on the subject to a friend, it must be owned, speaks of the proceeding with due disapprobation. Bolingbroke Correspondence, i. 343. No measures however were taken to mark the court's displeasure.

"Nothing is more certain," says Bolingbroke in his letter to sir William Wyndham, perhaps the finest of his writings, "than this truth, that there was at that time *no formed design* in the party, whatever views some particular men might have, against his majesty's accession to the throne." P. 22. This is in effect to confess a great deal; and in other parts of the same letter, he makes admissions of the same kind, though he says that he and other tories had determined, before the queen's death, to have no connexion with the Pretender, on account of his religious bigotry. P. 111.

† Lockhart gives us a speech of sir William Whitelock in 1714, bitterly inveighing against the elector of Hanover, who, he hoped, would never come to the crown. Some of the whigs cried out on this that he should be brought to the bar; when Whitelock said he would not recede an inch; he hoped the queen would outlive that prince, and in comparison to her he did not value all the princes of Germany one farthing. P. 469. Swift, in "Some Free Thoughts upon the Present State of Affairs," 1714, speaks with much contempt of the house of Hanover and its sovereign, and suggests, in derision, that the infant son of the electoral prince might be invited to take up his residence in England. He pretends in this tract, as in all his writings, to deny entirely that there was the least tendency towards jacobitism, either in any one of the ministry, or even any eminent individual out of it; but with so impudent a disregard of truth, that I am not perfectly convinced of his own innocence as to that intrigue. Thus, in his Inquiry into the behaviour of the queen's last ministry, he says, "I remember, during the late treaty of peace, discoursing at several times with some very eminent persons of the opposite side, with whom I had long acquaintance. I asked them seriously, whether they or any of their friends did in earnest believe, or suspect the queen or the ministry to have any favourable regards towards the Pretender? They all confessed for themselves, that they believed nothing of the matter, &c." He then tells us, that he had the curiosity to ask almost

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

reasonable in the whig party to meet these assaults of the enemy with something beyond the ordinary weapons of an opposition. They affected no apprehensions that it was absurd to entertain. Those of the opposite faction, who wished well to the protestant interest, and were called Hanoverian tories, came over to their side, and joined them on motions that the succession was in danger *. No one hardly, who either hoped or dreaded the consequences, had any doubts upon this score; and it is only a few moderns who have assumed the privilege of setting aside the persuasion of contemporaries upon a subject which contemporaries were best able to understand †. Are we then to censure the whigs for urging on the elector of Hanover, who, by a strange apathy or indifference, seemed negligent of the great prize reserved for him; or is the bold step of demanding a writ of summons for the electoral prince as duke of Cambridge to pass for a factious insult on the queen, because, in her imbecility, she was leaving the crown to be snatched at by the first comer, even if she were not, as they suspected, in some conspiracy to bestow it

every person in great employment, whether they knew or had heard of any one particular man, except professed nonjurors, that discovered the least inclination towards the Pretender; and the whole number they could muster up did not amount to above five or six, among whom one was a certain old lord lately dead, and one a private gentleman, of little consequence and of a broken fortune, &c. (Vol. 15. p. 94. edit. 12mo. 1765.) This acute observer of mankind well knew, that lying is frequently successful in the ratio of its effrontery and extravagance. There are, however, some passages in this tract, as in others written by Swift, in relation to that time, which serve to illustrate the obscure machinations of those famous last years of the queen.

* On a motion in the house of lords that the protestant succession was in danger, April 5, 1714, the ministry had only a majority of 76 to 69, several bishops and other tories voting against them. Parl. Hist. vi. 1334. Even in the commons the division was but 256 to 208. Id. 1347.

† Somerville has a separate dissertation on the danger of the protestant succession, intended to prove that it was in no danger at all, except through the violence of the whigs in exasperating the queen. It is true that Lockhart's Commentaries were not published at this time, but he had Macpherson before him, and the Memoirs of Berwick, and even gave credit to the authenticity of Mesnager, which I do not. But this sensible, and on the whole impartial writer, had contracted an excessive prejudice against the whigs of that period as a party, though he seems to adopt their principles. His dissertation is a laboured attempt to explain away the most evident facts, and to deny what no one of either party at that time would probably have in private denied.

on a proscribed heir*? I am much inclined to believe, that the great majority of the nation were in favour of the protestant succession; but if the princes of the house of Brunswic had seemed to retire from the contest, it might have been impracticable to resist a predominant faction in the council and in parliament: especially if the son of James, listening to the remonstrances of his English adherents, could have been induced to renounce a faith which, in the eyes of too many, was the sole pretext for his exclusion †.

The queen's death, which came at last perhaps rather more quickly than was foreseen, broke for ever the fair prospects of her family. George I., unknown and absent, was proclaimed without a single murmur, as if the crown had passed in the most regular descent. But this was a momentary calm. The jacobite party recovering from the first consternation, availed itself of its usual arms, and of those with which the new king injudiciously

* The queen was very ill about the close of 1713; in fact, it became evident, as it had long been apprehended, that she could not live much longer. The Hanoverians, both whigs and tories, urged that the electoral prince should be sent for; it was thought that whichever of the competitors should have the start upon her death would succeed in securing the crown. Macpherson, 385. 546, 557. et alibi. Can there be a more complete justification of this measure, which Somerville and the tory writers treat as disrespectful to the queen? The Hanoverian envoy, Schatz, demanded the writ for the electoral prince without his master's orders; but it was done with the advice of all the whig leaders, Id. 592, and with the sanction of the electress Sophia, who died immediately after. "All who are for Hanover believe the coming of the electoral prince to be advantageous; all those against it are frightened at it." Id. 596. It was doubtless a critical moment, and the court of Hanover might be excused for pausing in the choice of dangers, as the step must make the queen decidedly their enemy. She was greatly offended, and forbad the Hanoverian minister to appear at court. Indeed she wrote to the elector, on May 19, expressing her disapprobation of the prince's coming over to England, and "her determination to oppose a project so contrary to her royal authority, however fatal the consequences may be." Id. 621. Oxford and Bolingbroke intimate the same. Id. 593. and see Bolingbroke Correspondence, iv. 512. a very strong passage. The measure was given up, whether from unwillingness on the part of George to make the queen irreconcilable, or, as is at least equally probable, out of jealousy of his son. The former certainly disappointed his adherents by more apparent apathy than their ardour required; which will not be surprising, when we reflect that, even upon the throne, he seemed to care very little about it. Macpherson, sub ann. 1714. passim.

† He was strongly pressed by his English adherents to declare himself a protestant. He wrote a very good answer. Macpherson, 436. Madame de Maintenon says, some catholics urged him to the same course, par une politique poussée un peu trop loin. Lettres à la Princesse des Ursins, ii. 428.

CHAP. XVI.

Anne, Geo. I., II.

supplied it. Many of the tories who would have acquiesced in the act of settlement seem to have looked on a leading share in the administration as belonging of right to what was called the church-party, and complained of the formation of a ministry on the whig principle. In later times, also, it has been not uncommon to censure George I. for governing, as it is called, by a faction. Nothing can be more unreasonable than this reproach. Was he to select those as his advisers who had been, as we know and as he believed, in a conspiracy with his competitor? Was lord Oxford, even if the king thought him faithful, capable of uniting with any public men, hated as he was on each side? Were not the tories as truly a faction as their adversaries, and as intolerant during their own power*? Was there not, above all, a danger, that if some of one denomination were drawn by pique and disappointment into the ranks of the jacobites, the whigs, on the other hand, so ungratefully and perfidiously recompensed for their arduous services to the house of Hanover, might think all royalty irreconcilable with the principles of freedom, and raise up a republican party, of which the scattered elements were sufficiently discernible in the nation†? The exclusion, indeed, of the whigs would have been so monstrous, both in honour and policy, that the censure has generally fallen on their alleged

* The rage of the tory party against the queen and lord Oxford for retaining whigs in office is notorious from Swift's private letters, and many other authorities. And Bolingbroke, in his letter to sir W. Wyndham, very fairly owns their intention "to fill the employments of the kingdom, down to the meanest, with tories." "We imagined," he proceeds, "that such measures, joined to the advantages of our numbers and our property, would secure us against all attempts during her reign; and that we should soon become too considerable not to make our terms in all events which might happen afterwards; concerning which, to speak truly, I believe few or none of us had any very settled resolution." P. 11. It is rather amusing to observe, that those who called themselves the tory or church party seem to have fancied they had a natural right to power and profit, so that an injury was done them when these rewards went another way; and I am not sure that something of the same prejudice has not been perceptible in times a good deal later.

† Though no republican party, as I have elsewhere observed, could with any propriety be said to exist, it is easy to perceive that a certain degree of provocation from the crown might have brought one together in no slight force. These two propositions are perfectly compatible.

monopoly of public offices. But the mischiefs of a disunited, hybrid ministry had been sufficiently manifest in the two last reigns; nor could George, a stranger to his people and their constitution, have undertaken without ruin that most difficult task of balancing parties and persons to which the great mind of William had proved unequal. Nor it is true that the tories, as such, were proscribed; those who chose to serve the court met with court favour, and in the very outset the few men of sufficient eminence who had testified their attachment to the succession received equitable rewards; but, most happily for himself and the kingdom, most reasonably according to the principles on which alone his throne could rest, the first prince of the house of Brunswic gave a decisive preponderance in his favour to Walpole and Townshend above Harcourt and Bolingbroke.

The strong symptoms of disaffection which broke out in a few months after the king's accession, and which can be ascribed to no grievance, unless the formation of a whig ministry was to be termed one, prove the taint of the late times to have been deep seated and extensive*. The clergy, in very many instances,

* This is well put by bishop Willis in his speech on the bill against Atterbury. Parl. Hist. viii. 305. In a pamphlet entitled English Advice to the Freeholders (Somers Tracts, xiii. 521), ascribed to Atterbury himself, a most virulent attack is made on the government, merely because what he calls the church party had been thrown out of office. "Among all who call themselves whigs," he says, "and are of any consideration as such, name me the man I cannot prove to be an inveterate enemy to the church of England, and I will be a convert that instant to their cause." It must be owned, perhaps, that the whig ministry might better have avoided some reflections on the late times in the addresses of both houses; and still more some not very constitutional recommendations to the electors, in the proclamation calling the new parliament in 1714. Parl. Hist. vi. 44. 50. "Never was prince more universally well received by subjects than his present majesty on his arrival, and never was less done by a prince to create a change in people's affections. But so it is, a very observable change hath happened. Evil infusions were spread on the one hand, and, it may be, there was too great a stoicism or contempt of popularity on the other." Argument to prove the Affections of the People of England to be the best Security for the Government, p. 11. (1716). This is the pamphlet written to recommend lenity towards the rebels, which Addison has answered in the Freeholder. It is invidious, and perhaps secretly jacobite. Bolingbroke observes, in the letter already quoted, that the Pretender's journey from Bar, in 1714, was a mere farce, no party being ready to receive him; but "the menaces of the whigs, backed by some very rash declarations [those of the king]. and little circumstances of humour, which frequently

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

were a curse rather than a blessing to those over whom they were set; and the people, while they trusted that from those polluted fountains they could draw the living waters of truth, became the dupes of factious lies and sophistry. Thus encouraged, the heir of the Stuarts landed in Scotland, and the spirit of that people being in a great measure jacobite and very generally averse to the union, he met with such success as, had their independence subsisted, would probably have established him on the throne. But Scotland was now doomed to wait on the fortunes of her more powerful ally; and on his invasion of England, the noisy partisans of hereditary right discredited their faction by its cowardice. Few rose in arms to support the rebellion, compared with those who desired its success, and did not blush to see the gallant savages of the Highlands shed their blood that a supine herd of priests and country gentlemen might enjoy the victory. The severity of the new government after the rebellion has been often blamed; but I know not whether, according to the usual rules of policy, it can be proved that the execution of two peers and thirty other persons, taken with arms in flagrant rebellion, was an unwarrantable excess of punishment. There seems a latent insinuation in those who have argued on the other side, as if the jacobite rebellion, being founded on an opinion of right, was more excusable than an ordinary treason—a proposition which it would not have been quite safe for the reigning dynasty to acknowledge. Clemency, however, is the standing policy of constitutional governments, as severity is of despotism; and if the ministers of George I. might have extended it to part of the inferior sufferers (for surely those of higher rank were the first

offend more than real injuries, and by the entire change of all persons in employment, blew up the coals." P. 34. Then, he owns, the tories looked to Bar. "The violence of the whigs forced them into the arms of the Pretender." It is to be remarked on all this, that, by Bolingbroke's own account, the tories, if they had no "formed design" or "settled resolution" that way, were not very determined in their repugnance before the queen's death; and that the chief violence of which they complained was, that George chose to employ his friends rather than his enemies.

to be selected) with safety to their master, they would have done well in sparing him the odium that attends all political punishments *.

It will be admitted on all hands at the present day, that the charge of high treason in the impeachments against Oxford and Bolingbroke was an intemperate excess of resentment at their scandalous dereliction of the public honour and interest. The danger of a sanguinary revenge inflamed by party spirit is so tremendous, that the worst of men ought perhaps to escape, rather than suffer by a retrospective, or, what is no better, a constructive, extension of the law. The particular charge of treason was, that in the negotiation for peace they had endeavoured to procure the city of Tournay for the king of France; which was maintained to be an adhering to the queen's enemies, within the statute of Edward III.† But as this construction could hardly be brought within the spirit of that law, and the motive was certainly not treasonable or rebellious, it would have been incomparably more constitutional to treat so gross a breach of duty as a misdemeanour of the highest kind. This angry temper of the commons led ultimately to the abandonment of

* The trials after this rebellion were not conducted with quite that appearance of impartiality which we now exact from judges. Chief-baron Montagu reprimanded a jury for acquitting some persons indicted for treason; and Tindal, an historian very strongly on the court side, admits that the dying speeches of some of the sufferers made an impression on the people, so as to increase rather than lessen the number of jacobites. Continuation of Rapin, p. 501 (folio ed.). There seems however, upon the whole, to have been greater and less necessary severity after the rebellion of 1745; and upon this latter occasion it is impossible not to reprobate the execution of Mr. Ratcliffe, brother of that earl of Derwentwater who had lost his head in 1716, after an absence of thirty years from his country, to the sovereign of which he had never professed allegiance, nor could owe any, except by the fiction of our law.

† Parl. Hist. 73. It was carried against Oxford by 247 to 127, sir Joseph Jekyll strongly opposing it, though he had said before (Id. 67) that they had more than sufficient evidence against Bolingbroke on the statute of Edward III. A motion was made in the lords, to consult the judges whether the articles amounted to treason, but lost by 84 to 52. Id. 154. Lord Cowper on this occasion challenged all the lawyers in England to disprove that proposition. The proposal of reference to the judges was perhaps premature; but the house must surely have done this before their final sentence, or shown themselves more passionate than in the case of lord Strafford.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

the whole impeachment against lord Oxford; the upper house, though it had committed Oxford to the Tower, which seemed to prejudge the question as to the treasonable character of the imputed offence, having two years afterwards resolved that the charge of treason should be first determined, before they would enter on the articles of less importance; a decision with which the commons were so ill satisfied, that they declined to go forward with the prosecution. The resolution of the peers was hardly conformable to precedent, to analogy, or to the dignity of the house of commons, nor will it perhaps be deemed binding on any future occasion; but the ministers prudently suffered themselves to be beaten, rather than aggravate the fever of the people by a prosecution so full of delicate and hazardous questions *.

One of these questions, and by no means the least important, would doubtless have arisen upon a mode of defence alleged by the earl of Oxford in the house, when the articles of impeachment were brought up. "My lords," he said, "if ministers of state, acting by the immediate commands of their sovereign, are afterwards to be made accountable for their proceedings, it may, one day or other, be the case of all the members of this august assembly †." It was indeed undeniable, that the queen had been very desirous of peace, and a party, as it were, to all the counsels that tended to it. Though it was made a charge against the impeached lords, that the instructions to sign the secret preliminaries of 1711 with M. Mesnager, on the part of France, were not under the great seal, nor countersigned by any minister, they were certainly under the queen's signet, and had all the

* Parl. Hist. vii. 486. The division was 88 to 56. There was a schism in the whig party at this time; yet I should suppose the ministers might have prevented this defeat, if they had been anxious to do so. It seems, however, by a letter in Coxe's Memoirs of Walpole, vol. ii. p. 123, that the government were for dropping the charge of treason against Oxford, "it being very certain that there is not sufficient evidence to convict him of that crime," but for pressing those of misdemeanour.

† Parl. Hist. vii. 105.

authority of her personal command. This must have brought on the yet unsettled and very delicate question of ministerial responsibility in matters where the sovereign has interposed his own command; a question better reserved, it might then appear, for the loose generalities of debate, than to be determined with the precision of criminal law. Each party, in fact, had in its turn made use of the queen's personal authority as a shield; the whigs availed themselves of it to parry the attack made on their ministry after its fall, for an alleged mismanagement of the war in Spain before the battle of Almanza*; and the modern constitutional theory was by no means so established in public opinion as to bear the rude brunt of a legal argument. Anne herself, like all her predecessors, kept in her own hands the reins of power; jealous, as such feeble characters usually are, of those in whom she was forced to confide, especially after the ungrateful return of the duchess of Marlborough for the most affectionate condescension, and obstinate in her judgment, from the very consciousness of its weakness, she took a share in all business, frequently presided in meetings of the cabinet, and sometimes gave directions without their advice†. The de-

* Parl. Hist. vi. 972. Burnet, 560, makes some observations on the vote passed on this occasion, censuring the late ministers for advising an offensive war in Spain. "A resolution in council is only the sovereign's act, who upon hearing his counsellors deliver their opinions, forms his own resolution; a counsellor may indeed be liable to censure for what he may say at that board; but the resolution taken there has been hitherto treated with a silent respect; but by that precedent it will be hereafter subject to a parliamentary inquiry." Speaker Onslow justly remarks, that these general and indefinite sentiments are liable to much exception, and that the bishop did not try them by his whig principles. The first instance where I find the responsibility of some one for every act of the crown strongly laid down is in a speech of the duke of Argyle, in 1739. Parl. Hist. ix. 1138. "It is true," he says, "the nature of our constitution requires that public acts should be issued out in his majesty's name; but for all that, my lords, he is not the author of them."

† "Lord Bolingbroke used to say that the restraining orders to the duke of Ormond were proposed in the cabinet council, in the queen's presence, by the earl of Oxford, who had not communicated his intention to the rest of the ministers, and that lord Bolingbroke was on the point of giving his opinion against it, when the queen, without suffering the matter to be debated, directed these orders to be sent, and broke up the

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

fence set up by lord Oxford would undoubtedly not be tolerated at present, if alleged in direct terms, by either house of parliament, however it may sometimes be deemed a sufficient apology for a minister, by those whose bias is towards a compliance with power, to insinuate that he must either obey against his conscience, or resign against his will.

Upon this prevalent disaffection, and the general dangers of the established government, was founded that measure so frequently arraigned in later times, the substitution of septennial for triennial parliaments. The ministry deemed it too perilous for their master, certainly for themselves, to encounter a general election in 1717; but the arguments adduced for the alteration, as it was meant to be permanent, were drawn from its permanent expediency. Nothing can be more extravagant than what is sometimes confidently bolted out by the ignorant, that the legislature exceeded its rights by this enactment; or, if that cannot legally be advanced, that it at least violated the trust of the people, and broke in upon the ancient constitution. The law for triennial parliaments was of little more than twenty years' continuance. It was an experiment which, as was argued, had proved unsuccessful; it was subject, like every other law, to be repealed entirely, or to be modified at discretion. As a question of constitutional expediency, the septennial bill was doubtless open at the time to one serious objection. Every one admitted that a parliament subsisting indefinitely during a king's life, but exposed at all times to be dissolved at his pleasure, would become far too little independent of the people, and far too much so upon the crown. But if the period of its continuance

council. This story was told by the late lord Bolingbroke to my father." Note by lord Hardwicke on Burnet, (Oxf. edit. vi. 119.) The noble annotator has given us the same anecdote in the Hardwicke State Papers, ii. 482, but with this variance, that lord Bolingbroke there ascribes the orders to the queen herself, though he conjectured them to have proceeded from lord Oxford.

should thus be extended from three to seven years, the natural course of encroachment of those in power, or some momentous circumstances like the present, might lead to fresh prolongations, and gradually to an entire repeal of what had been thought so important a safeguard of its purity. Time has happily put an end to apprehensions, which are not on that account to be reckoned unreasonable *.

Many attempts have been made to obtain a return to triennial parliaments; the most considerable of which was in 1733, when the powerful talents of Walpole and his opponents were arrayed on this great question. It has been less debated in modern times than some others connected with parliamentary reformation. So long indeed as the sacred duties of choosing the representatives of a free nation shall be perpetually disgraced by tumultuary excess, or, what is far worse, by gross corruption and ruinous profusion, evils which no effectual pains are taken to redress, and which some apparently desire to perpetuate, were it only to throw discredit upon the popular part of the constitution, it would be evidently inexpedient to curtail the present duration of parliament. But even, independently of this not insuperable objection, it may well be doubted whether triennial elections would make much perceptible difference in the course of government, and whether that difference would on the whole be beneficial. It will be found, I believe, on a retrospect of the last hundred years, that the house of commons would have acted, in the main, on the same principles, had the elections been more frequent; and certainly the effects of a dissolution, when it has occurred in the regular order, have seldom been very important. It is also to be considered whether an assembly which so much takes to itself the character of a de-

* Parl. Hist. vii. 292. The apprehension that parliament, having taken this step, might go on still farther to protract its own duration, was not quite idle. We find from Coxe's Memoirs of Walpole, ii. 217, that, in 1720, when the first septennial house of commons had nearly run its term, there was a project of once more prolonging its life.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

liberative council on all matters of policy, ought to follow with the precision of a weather-glass the unstable prejudices of the multitude. There are many who look too exclusively at the functions of parliament, as the protector of civil liberty against the crown; functions, it is true, most important, yet not more indispensable than those of steering a firm course in domestic and external affairs, with a circumspectness and providence for the future, which no wholly democratical government has ever yet displayed. It is by a middle position between an oligarchical senate and a popular assembly, that the house of commons is best preserved both in its dignity and usefulness, subject indeed to swerve towards either character by that continual variation of forces which act upon the vast machine of our commonwealth. But what seems more important than the usual term of duration, is that this should be permitted to take its course, except in cases where some great change of national policy may perhaps justify its abridgment. The crown would obtain a very serious advantage over the house of commons, if it should become an ordinary thing to dissolve parliament for some petty ministerial interest, or to avert some unpalatable resolution. Custom appears to have established, and with some convenience, the substitution of six for seven years as the natural life of a house of commons; but an habitual irregularity in this respect might lead in time to consequences that most men would deprecate. And it may here be permitted to express a hope, that the necessary dissolution of parliament within six months of a demise of the crown will not long be thought congenial to the spirit of our modern government.

A far more unanimous sentence has been pronounced by posterity upon another great constitutional question, that arose under George I. Lord Sunderland persuaded the king to renounce his important prerogative of making peers; and a bill was supported by the ministry, limiting the house of lords, after the creation of a very few more, to its actual numbers. The Scots were to have

twenty-five hereditary, instead of sixteen elective, members of the house; a provision neither easily reconciled to the union, nor required by the general tenor of the bill. This measure was carried with no difficulty through the upper house, whose interests were so manifestly concerned in it. But a similar motive, concurring with the efforts of a powerful malecontent party, caused its rejection by the commons *. It was justly thought a proof of the king's ignorance or indifference in every thing that concerned his English crown, that he should have consented to so momentous a sacrifice; and Sunderland was reproached for so audacious an endeavour to strengthen his private faction at the expense of the fundamental laws of the monarchy. Those who maintained the expediency of limiting the peerage had recourse to uncertain theories as to the ancient constitution, and denied this prerogative to have been originally vested in the crown. A more plausible argument was derived from the abuse, as it was then generally accounted, of creating at once twelve peers in the late reign, for the sole end of establishing a majority for the court; a resource which would be always at the command of successive factions, till the British nobility might become as numerous and venal as that of some European states. It was argued that there was a fallacy in concluding the collective power of the house of lords to be augmented by its limitation, because every single peer would evidently become of more weight in the kingdom; that the wealth of the whole body must bear a less proportion to that of the nation, and would possibly not exceed that of the lower house, while on the other hand it might be indefinitely multiplied by fresh creations, that the crown would lose one great engine of corrupt influence over the commons, which could never be truly independent, while its principal members were looking on it as a stepping-stone to hereditary honours †.

* Parl. Hist. vii. 589.

† The arguments on this side are urged by Addison, in the Old Whig; and by the author of a tract, entitled Six Questions Stated and Answered.

CHAP. XVI.

Anne, Geo. I., II.

Though these reasonings, however, are not destitute of considerable weight, and the unlimited prerogative of augmenting the peerage is liable to such abuses, at least in theory, as might overthrow our form of government; while, in the opinion of some, whether erroneous or not, it has actually been exerted with too little discretion, the arguments against any legal limitation seem more decisive. The crown has been carefully restrained by statutes, and by the responsibility of its advisers; the commons, if they transgress their boundaries, are annihilated by a proclamation; but against the ambition, or, what is much more likely, the perverse haughtiness of the aristocracy, the constitution has not furnished such direct securities. And as this would be prodigiously enhanced by a consciousness of their power, and by a sense of self-importance which every peer would derive from it, after the limitation of their numbers, it might break out in pretensions very galling to the people, and in an oppressive extension of privileges which were already sufficiently obnoxious and arbitrary. It is true that the resource of subduing an aristocratical faction by the creation of new peers could never be constitutionally employed, except in the not very probable case of an equal balance; but it might usefully hang over the heads of the whole body, and deter them from any gross excesses of faction or oligarchical spirit. The nature of our government requires a general harmony between the two houses of parliament; and indeed any systematic opposition between them would of necessity bring on the subordination of one to the other in too marked a manner; nor had there been wanting, within the memory of man, several instances of such jealous and even hostile sentiments as could only be allayed by the inconvenient remedies of a prorogation or a dissolution. These animosities were likely to revive with more bitterness, when the country gentlemen and leaders of the commons should come to look on the nobility as a class into which they could not enter, and the latter should forget more and more, in their inaccessible dignity, the near approach of that

gentry to themselves in respectability of birth and extent of possessions *.

These innovations on the part of the new government were maintained on the score of its unsettled state, and want of hold on the national sentiment. It may seem a reproach to the house of Hanover, that, connected as it ought to have been with the names most dear to English hearts, the protestant religion and civil liberty, it should have been driven to try the resources of tyranny, and to demand more authority, to exercise more control, than had been necessary for the worst of their predecessors. Much of this disaffection was owing to the cold reserve of George I., ignorant of the language, alien from the prejudices of his people, and continually absent in his electoral dominions, to which he seemed to sacrifice the nation's interest and the security of his own crown. It is certain that the acquisition of the duchies of Bremen and Verden for Hanover, in 1716, exposed Great Britain to a very serious danger, by provoking the king of Sweden to join in a league for the restoration of the Pretender †. It might have been impossible, such was the precariousness of our revolution settlement, to have made the abdication of the electorate

* The speeches of Walpole and others, in the Parliamentary Debates, contain the whole force of the arguments against the peerage-bill. Steele, in the Plebeian, opposed his old friend and co-adjutor, Addison, who forgot a little in party and controversy their ancient friendship.

Lord Sunderland held out, by way of inducements to the bill, that the lords would part with scandalum magnatum, and permit the commons to administer an oath; and that the king would give up the prerogative of pardoning after an impeachment. Coxe's Walpole, ii. 172. Mere trifles, in comparison with the innovations projected.

† The letters in Coxe's Memoirs of Walpole, vol. ii., abundantly show the German nationality, the impolicy and neglect of his duties, the rapacity and petty selfishness of George I. The whigs were much dissatisfied; but fear of losing their places made them his slaves. Nothing can be more demonstrable, than that the king's character was the main cause of preserving jacobitism, as that of his competitor was of weakening it.

The habeas corpus was several times suspended in this reign, as it had been in that of William. Though the perpetual conspiracies of the jacobites afforded a sufficient apology for this measure, it was invidiously held up as inconsistent with a government which professed to stand on the principles of liberty. Parl. Hist. v. 153. 267. 604; vii. 276; viii. 38. But some of these suspensions were too long, especially the last, from Oct. 1722 to Oct. 1723. Sir Joseph Jekyll, with his usual zeal for liberty, moved to reduce the time to six months.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

a condition of the house of Brunswic's succession; but the consequences of that connexion, though much exaggerated by the factious and disaffected, were in various manners detrimental to English interests during these two reigns; and not the least, in that they estranged the affections of the people from sovereigns whom they regarded as still foreign.

The tory and jacobite factions, as I have observed, were powerful in the church. This had been the case ever since the revolution. The avowed non-jurors were busy with the press, and poured forth, especially during the encouragement they received in part of Anne's reign, a multitude of pamphlets, sometimes argumentative, more often virulently libellous. Their idle cry, that the church was in danger, which both houses, in 1704, thought fit to deny by a formal vote, alarmed a senseless multitude. Those who took the oaths were frequently known partisans of the exiled family; and those who affected to disclaim that cause defended the new settlement with such timid or faithless arms, as served only to give a triumph to the adversary. About the end of William's reign grew up the distinction of high and low churchmen; the first distinguished by great pretensions to sacerdotal power, both spiritual and temporal, by a repugnance to toleration, and by a firm adherence to the tory principle in the state; the latter by the opposite characteristics. These were pitched against each other in the two houses of convocation; an assembly which virtually ceased to exist under George I.

The convocation of the province of Canterbury (for that of York seems never to have been important) is summoned by the archbishop's writ, under the king's direction, along with every parliament, to which it bears analogy both in its constituent parts and in its primary functions. It consists (since the reformation) of the suffragan bishops, forming the upper house, of the deans, archdeacons, a proctor or proxy for each chapter, and two from each diocese, elected by the parochial clergy, who together constitute the lower house. In this assembly subsidies were

granted and ecclesiastical canons enacted. In a few instances, under Henry VIII. and Elizabeth, they were consulted as to momentous questions affecting the national religion; the supremacy of the former was approved in 1533, the articles of faith were confirmed in 1562, by the convocation. But their power to enact fresh canons without the king's licence was expressly taken away by a statute of Henry VIII.; and even subject to this condition, is limited by several later acts of parliament, such as the acts of uniformity under Elizabeth and Charles II., that confirming, and therefore rendering unalterable, the thirty-nine articles, those relating to non-residence and other church matters, and still more, perhaps, by the doctrine gradually established in Westminster Hall, that new ecclesiastical canons are not binding on the laity, so greatly that it will ever be impossible to exercise it in any effectual manner. The convocation, accordingly, with the exception of 1603, when they established some regulations, and of 1640, an unfortunate precedent, when they attempted some more, had little business but to grant subsidies, which, however, were, from the time of Henry VIII., always confirmed by an act of parliament; an intimation, no doubt, that the legislature did not wholly acquiesce in their power even of binding the clergy in a matter of property. This practice of ecclesiastical taxation was silently discontinued in 1664; at a time when the authority and pre-eminence of the church stood very high, so that it could not then have seemed the abandonment of an important privilege. From this time the clergy have been taxed at the same rate and in the same manner with the laity *.

* "It was first settled by a verbal agreement between archbishop Sheldon and the lord chancellor Clarendon, and tacitly given into by the clergy in general as a great ease to them in taxations. The first public act of any kind relating to it was an act of parliament in 1665, by which the clergy were, in common with the laity, charged with the tax given in that act, and were discharged from the payment of the subsidies they had granted before in convocation; but in this act of parliament of 1665 there is an express saving of the right of the clergy to tax themselves in convocation, if they think fit; but that has been never done since, nor attempted, as I know of, and the clergy have been constantly from that time charged with the

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

It was the natural consequence of this cessation of all business, that the convocation, after a few formalities, either adjourned itself or was prorogued by a royal writ; nor had it ever, with the few exceptions above noticed, sat for more than a few days, till its supply could be voted. But, about the time of the revolution, the party most adverse to the new order sedulously propagated a doctrine, that the convocation ought to be advised with upon all questions affecting the church, and ought even to watch over its interests as the parliament did over those of the kingdom *. The commons had so far encouraged this faction, as to refer to the convocation the great question of a reform in the liturgy for the sake of comprehension, as has been mentioned in the last chapter; and thus put a stop to the king's design. It was not suffered to sit much during the rest of that reign, to the great discontent of its ambitious hieragogues. The most celebrated of these, Atterbury, published a book, entitled the Right sand Privileges of an English Convocation, in answer to one by Wake, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury. The speciousness of the former, sprinkled with competent learning on the subject, a graceful style, and an artful employment of topics, might easily delude, at least, the willing reader. Nothing indeed could on

laity in all public aids to the crown by the house of commons. In consequence of this (but from what period I cannot say), without the intervention of any particular law for it, except what I shall mention presently, the clergy (who are not lords of parliament) have assumed, and without any objection enjoyed, the privilege of voting in the election of members of the house of commons, in virtue of their ecclesiastical freeholds. This has constantly been practised from the time it first began; there are two acts of parliament which suppose it to be now a right. The acts are, 10 Anne, c. 23; 18 Geo. II. c. 18. Gibson, bishop of London, said to me, that this [the taxation of the clergy out of convocation] was the greatest alteration in the constitution ever made without an express law." Speaker Onslow's note on Burnet (Oxf. edit. iv. 508).

* The first authority I have observed for this pretension is an address of the house of lords, 19 Nov. 1675, to the throne, for the frequent meeting of the convocation, and that they do make to the king such representations as may be for the safety of the religion established. Lords' Journals. This address was renewed Feb. 22, 1677. But what took place in consequence I am not apprised. It shows, however, some degree of dissatisfaction on the part of the bishops, who must be presumed to have set forward these addresses, at the virtual annihilation of their synod, which naturally followed from its relinquishment of self-taxation.

reflection appear more inconclusive than Atterbury's arguments. Were we even to admit the perfect analogy of a convocation to a parliament, it could not be doubted that the king may, legally speaking, prorogue the latter at his pleasure; and that if neither money were required to be granted nor laws to be enacted, a session would be very short. The church had by prescription a right to be summoned in convocation; but no prescription could be set up for its longer continuance than the crown thought expedient; and it was too much to expect that William III. was to gratify his half-avowed enemies with a privilege of remonstrance and interposition they had never enjoyed. In the year 1701 the lower house of convocation pretended to a right of adjourning to a different day from that fixed by the upper, and consequently of holding separate sessions. They set up other unprecedented claims to independence, which were checked by a prorogation *. Their aim was in all respects to assimilate themselves to the house of commons, and thus both to set up the convocation itself as an assembly collateral to parliament, and in the main independent of it, and to maintain their co-ordinate power and equality in synodical dignity to the prelates' house. The succeeding reign, however, began under tory auspices; and the convocation was in more activity for some years than at any former period. The lower house of that assembly still distinguished itself by the most factious spirit, and especially by insolence towards the bishops, who passed in general for whigs, and whom, while pretending to assert the divine rights of episcopacy, they laboured to deprive of that pre-eminence in the Anglican synod which the ecclesiastical constitution of the kingdom had bestowed on them †. None was more prominent in their debates than Atterbury himself, whom,

* Kennet, 799. 842. Burnet, 280. This assembly had been suffered to sit, probably, in consequence of the tory maxims which the ministry of that year professed.

† Wilkins's Concilia, iv. Burnet, passim. Boyer's Life of Queen Anne, 225. Somerville, 82. 124.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

in the zenith of tory influence, at the close of her reign, the queen reluctantly promoted to the see of Rochester.

The new government at first permitted the convocation to hold its sittings. But they soon excited a flame which consumed themselves by an attack on Hoadley, bishop of Bangor, who had preached a sermon abounding with those principles concerning religious liberty of which he had long been the courageous and powerful assertor*. The lower house of convocation thought fit to denounce, through the report of a committee, the dangerous tenets of this discourse, and of a work not long before published by the bishop. A long and celebrated war of pens instantly commenced, known by the name of the Bangorian controversy; managed, perhaps on both sides, with all the chicanery of polemical writers, and disgusting both from its tediousness and from the manifest unwillingness of the disputants to speak ingenuously what they meant†. But as the principles of Hoadley and his ad-

* The lower house of convocation, in the late reign, among their other vagaries, had requested "that some synodical notice might be taken of the dishonour done to the church by a sermon preached by Mr. Benjamin Hoadley at the Lawrence Jewry, Sept. 29, 1705, containing positions contrary to the doctrine of the church, expressed in the first and second parts of the homily against disobedience and wilful rebellion." Wilkins, iv. 634.

† These qualities are so apparent, that after turning over some forty or fifty tracts, and consuming a good many hours on the Bangorian controversy, I should find some difficulty in stating with precision the propositions in dispute. It is however evident, that a dislike, not perhaps exactly to the house of Brunswic, but to the tenor of George I.'s administration, and to Hoadley himself as an eminent advocate for it, who had been rewarded accordingly, was at the bottom a leading motive with most of the church party; some of whom, such as Hare, though originally of a whig connexion, might have had disappointments to exasperate them.

There was nothing whatever in Hoadley's sermon injurious to the established endowments and privileges, nor to the discipline and government, of the English church, even in theory. If this had been the case, he might be reproached with some inconsistency in becoming so large a partaker of her honours and emoluments. He even admitted the usefulness of censures for open immoralities, though denying all church authority to oblige any one to external communion, or to pass any sentence which should determine the condition of men with respect to the favour or displeasure of God. Hoadley's Works, ii. 465. 493. Another great question in this controversy was that of religious liberty, as a civil right, which the convocation explicitly denied. And another related to the much debated exercise of private judgment in religion, which, as one party meant virtually

vocates appeared, in the main, little else than those of protestantism and toleration, the sentence of the laity, in the temper that was then gaining ground as to ecclesiastical subjects, was soon pronounced in their favour, and the high-church party discredited themselves by an opposition to what now pass for the incontrovertible truisms of religious liberty. In the ferment of that age, it was expedient for the state to scatter a little dust over the angry insects; the convocation was accordingly prorogued in 1717, and has never again sat for any business *. Those who are imbued with high notions of sacerdotal power have sometimes deplored this extinction of the Anglican great council; and though its necessity, as I have already observed, cannot possibly be defended as an ancient part of the constitution, there are not wanting specious arguments for the expediency of such a synod. It might be urged, that the church, considered only as an integrant member of the commonwealth, and the greatest corporation within it, might justly claim that right of managing its own affairs which belongs to every other association; that the argument from abuse is not sufficient, and is rejected with indignation when applied, as historically it might be, to representative governments and to civil liberty; that in the present state of things, no reformation even of secondary importance can be effected without difficulty, nor any looked for in greater matters, both from the indifference of the legislature, and the reluctance of the clergy to admit its interposition.

It is answered to these suggestions, that we must take experience when we pōssess it, rather than analogy, for our guide; that ecclesiastical assemblies have, in all ages and countries, been mischievous, where they have been powerful, which that of our wealthy and numerous clergy must always be; that if, however, the convocation could be brought under the management of the

to take away, so the others perhaps unreasonably exaggerated. Some other disputes arose in the course of the combat, particularly the delicate problem of the value of sincerity, as a plea for material errors.

* Tindal, 539.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

state, which by the nature of its component parts might seem not unlikely, it must lead to the promotion of servile men, and the exclusion of merit still more than at present; that the severe remark of Clarendon, who observes, that of all mankind none form so bad an estimate of human affairs as churchmen, is abundantly confirmed by experience; that the representation of the church in the house of lords is sufficient for the protection of its interests; that the clergy have an influence which no other corporation enjoys over the bulk of the nation, and are apt to abuse it for the purposes of undue ascendancy, unjust restraint, or factious ambition; that the hope of any real good in reformation of the church by its own assemblies, to whatever sort of reform we may look, is utterly chimerical; finally, that as the laws now stand, which few would incline to alter, the ratification of parliament must be indispensable for any material change. It seems to admit of no doubt that these reasonings ought much to outweigh those on the opposite side.

In the last four years of the queen's reign, some inroads had been made on the toleration granted to dissenters, whom the high-church party held in abhorrence. They had for a long time inveighed against what was called occasional conformity, or the compliance of dissenters with the provisions of the test-act in order merely to qualify themselves for holding office, or entering into corporations. Nothing could, in the eyes of sensible men, be more advantageous to the church, if a reunion of those who had separated from it were advantageous, than this practice. Admitting even that the motive was self-interested, has an established government, in church or state, any better ally than the self-interestedness of mankind? Was it not what a presbyterian or independent minister would denounce as a base and worldly sacrifice? and if so, was not the interest of the Anglican clergy exactly in an inverse proportion to this? Any one competent to judge of human affairs would predict, what has turned out to be the case, that when the barrier was once taken down for the sake

of convenience, it would not be raised again for conscience; that the most latitudinarian theory, the most lukewarm dispositions in religion, must be prodigiously favourable to the reigning sect; and that the dissenting clergy, though they might retain, or even extend their influence over the multitude, would gradually lose it with those classes who could be affected by the test. But, even if the tory faction had been cool-headed enough for such reflections, it has, unfortunately, been sometimes less the aim of the clergy to reconcile those who differ from them, than to keep them in a state of dishonour and depression. Hence, in the first parliament of Anne, a bill to prevent occasional conformity more than once passed the commons; and on its being rejected by the lords, a great majority of William's bishops voting against the measure, it was sent up again, in a very reprehensible manner, tacked, as it was called, to a grant of money; so that, according to the pretension of the commons in respect to such bills, the upper house must either refuse the supply, or consent to what they disapproved *. This, however, having miscarried, and the next parliament being of better principles, nothing farther was done till 1711, when lord Nottingham, a vehement high-churchman, having united with the whigs against the treaty of peace, they were injudicious enough to gratify him by concurring in a bill to prevent occasional conformity †. This was followed up by the ministry in a more decisive attack on the toleration, an act for preventing the growth of schism, which extended and confirmed one of Charles II., enforcing on all schoolmasters, and even on all teachers in private families, a declaration of conformity to the established church, to be made before the bishop, from whom a licence for exercising that profession was also to be obtained ‡. It is impossible to doubt for an instant, that if the

* Parl. Hist. vi. 362.

† 10 Anne, c. 2.

‡ 12 Anne, c. 7. Parl. Hist. vi. 1349. The schism act, according to Lockhart, was promoted by Bolingbroke, in order to gratify the high tories, and to put lord Oxford under the necessity of declaring himself one way or other. "Though the earl of Oxford voted for it himself, he concurred with those who endeavoured to restrain

CHAP. XVI.

Anne. Geo. I., II.

queen's life had preserved the tory government for a few years, every vestige of the toleration would have been effaced.

These statutes, records of their adversaries' power, the whigs, now lords of the ascendant, determined to abrogate. The dissenters were unanimously zealous for the house of Hanover and for the ministry; the church of very doubtful loyalty to the crown, and still less affection to the whig name. In the session of 1719, accordingly, the act against occasional conformity, and that restraining education, were repealed*. It had been the intention to have also repealed the test act; but the disunion then prevailing among the whigs had caused so formidable an opposition even to the former measures, that it was found necessary to abandon that project. Walpole, more cautious and moderate than the ministry of 1719, perceived the advantage of reconciling the church as far as possible to the royal family, and to his own government; and it seems to have been an article in the tacit compromise with the bishops, who were not backward in exerting their influence for the crown, that he should make no attempt to abrogate the laws which gave a monopoly of power to the Anglican communion. We may presume also that the prelates undertook not to obstruct the acts of indemnity passed from time to time in favour of those who had not duly qualified themselves for the offices they held, and which, after some time becoming regular, have in effect thrown open the gates to protestant dissenters, though still subject to be closed by either house of parliament, if any jealousies should induce them to refuse their assent to this annual enactment †.

some parts which they reckoned too severe; and his friends in both houses, particularly his brother auditor Harley, spoke and voted against it very earnestly." P. 462.

* 5 Geo. I. c. 4. The whigs out of power, among whom was Walpole, factiously and inconsistently opposed the repeal of the schism act, so that it passed with much difficulty. Parl. Hist. vii. 569.

† The first act of this kind appears to have been in 1727. 1 Geo. II. c. 23. It was repeated next year, intermitted the next, and afterwards renewed in every year of that reign except the fifth, the seventeenth, the twenty-second, the twenty-third, the twenty-sixth, and the thirtieth. Whether these occasional interruptions were intended to prevent the nonconformists from relying upon it, or were caused by some accidental circumstance, must be left to conjecture. I believe that the renewal has been regular every year since the accession of George III.

Meanwhile the principles of religious liberty, in all senses of the word, gained strength by this eager controversy, naturally pleasing as they are to the proud independence of the English character, and congenial to those of civil freedom, which both parties, tory as much as whig, had now learned sedulously to maintain. The non-juring and high-church factions among the clergy produced few eminent men, and lost credit, not more by the folly of their notions than by their general want of scholarship and disregard of their duties. The university of Oxford was tainted to the core with jacobite prejudices; but it must be added that it never stood so low in respectability as a place of education *. The government, on the other hand, was studious to promote distinguished men; and doubtless the hierarchy in the first sixty years of the eighteenth century might very advantageously be compared, in point of conspicuous ability, with that of an equal period that ensued. The maxims of persecution were silently abandoned, as well as its practice; Warburton, and others of less name, taught those of toleration with as much boldness as Hoadley, but without some of his more invidious tenets;

* We find in Gutch's Collectanea Curiosa, vol. i. p. 53, a plan, ascribed to lord chancellor Macclesfield, for taking away the election of heads of colleges from the fellows, and vesting the nomination in the great officers of state, in order to cure the disaffection and want of discipline which was justly complained of. This remedy would have been perhaps the substitution of a permanent for a temporary evil. It appears also that archbishop Wake wanted to have had a bill, in 1716, for asserting the royal supremacy, and better regulating the clergy of the two universities (Coxe's Walpole, ii. 122); but I do not know that the precise nature of this is any where mentioned. I can scarcely quote Amherst's Terræ Filius as authority; it is a very clever, though rather libellous, invective against the university of Oxford at that time; but from internal evidence, as well as the confirmation which better authorities afford it, I have no doubt that it contains much truth.

Those who have looked much at the ephemeral literature of these two reigns must be aware of many publications fixing the charge of prevalent disaffection on this university, down to the death of George II.; and Dr. King, the famous jacobite master of St. Mary Hall, admits that some were left to reproach him for apostasy in going to court on the accession of the late king in 1760. The general reader will remember the Isis by Mason, and the Triumph of Isis by Warton; the one a severe invective, the other an indignant vindication: but in this instance, notwithstanding the advantages which satire is supposed to have over panegyric, we must award the laurel to the worse cause, and, what is more extraordinary, to the worse poet.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

the more popular writers took a liberal tone; the names of Locke and Montesquieu acquired immense authority; the courts of justice discountenanced any endeavour to revive oppressive statutes; and, not long after the end of George the Second's reign, it was adjudged in the house of lords, upon the broadest principles of toleration laid down by lord Mansfield, that nonconformity with the established church is recognized by the law, and not an offence at which it connives.

Atterbury, bishop of Rochester, the most distinguished of the party denominated high-church, became the victim of his restless character and implacable disaffection to the house of Hanover. The pretended king, for some years after his competitor's accession, had fair hopes from different powers of Europe,—France, Sweden, Russia, Spain, Austria,—each of whom, in its turn, was ready to make use of this instrument, and from the powerful faction who panted for his restoration. This was unquestionably very numerous, though we have not as yet the means of fixing with certainty on more than comparatively a small number of names. But a conspiracy for an invasion from Spain and a simultaneous rising was detected in 1722, which implicated three or four peers, and among them the bishop of Rochester *. The evidence, however, though tolerably convincing, being insufficient for a conviction by process of law, it was thought expedient to pass a bill of pains and penalties against this prelate, as well as others against two of his accomplices. The proof, besides

* Layer, who suffered on account of this plot, had accused several peers, among others lord Cowper, who complained to the house of the publication of his name; and indeed, though he was at that time strongly in opposition to the court, the charge seems wholly incredible. Lord Strafford, however, was probably guilty; Lords North and Orrery certainly so. Parl. Hist. viii. 203. There is even ground to suspect that Sunderland, to use Tindal's words, "in the latter part of his life had entered into correspondencies and designs which would have been fatal to himself or to the public." P. 657. This is mentioned by Coxe, i. 165; and certainly confirmed by Lockhart, ii. 68. 70. But the reader will hardly give credit to such a story as Horace Walpole has told, that he coolly consulted sir Robert, his political rival, as to the part they should take on the king's death. Lord Orford's Works, iv. 287.

many corroborating circumstances, consisted in three letters relative to the conspiracy, supposed to be written by his secretary Kelly, and appearing to be dictated by the bishop. He was deprived of his see, and banished the kingdom for life *. This met with strong opposition, not limited to the enemies of the royal family, and is open to the same objection as the attainder of sir John Fenwick; the danger of setting aside those precious securities against a wicked government which the law of treason has furnished. As a vigorous assertion of the state's authority over the church we may commend the policy of Atterbury's deprivation; but perhaps this was ill purchased by a mischievous precedent. It is, however, the last act of a violent nature in any important matter which can be charged against the English legislature.

No extensive conspiracy of the jacobite faction seems ever to have been in agitation after the fall of Atterbury. The Pretender had his emissaries perpetually alert, and it is understood that an enormous mass of letters from his English friends is in existence †; but very few had the courage, or rather folly, to plunge into so desperate a course as rebellion. Walpole's prudent and vigilant administration, without transgressing the boundaries of that free constitution for which alone the house of

* State Trials, xvi. 324. Parl. Hist. viii. 195, et post. Most of the bishops voted against their restless brother; and Willis, bishop of Salisbury, made a very good but rather too acrimonious a speech on the bill. Id. 298. Hoadley, who was no orator, published two letters in the newspaper, signed Britannicus, in answer to Atterbury's defence; which, after all that had passed, he might better have spared. Atterbury's own speech is certainly below his fame, especially the peroration. Id. 267.

No one, I presume, will affect to doubt the reality of Atterbury's connexions with the Stuart family, either before his attainder or during his exile. The proofs of the latter were published by lord Hailes in 1768, and may be found also in Nicholls's edition of Atterbury's Correspondence, i. 148. Additional evidence is furnished by the Lockhart Papers, vol. ii. passim.

† The Stuart papers obtained lately from Rome, and now in His Majesty's possession, are said to furnish copious evidence of the jacobite intrigues, and to affect some persons not hitherto suspected. We have reason to hope that they will not be long withheld from the public, every motive for concealment being wholly at an end.

It is said that there were not less than fifty jacobites in the parliament of 1728. Coxe, ii. 294.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

Brunswic had been preferred, kept in check the disaffected. He wisely sought the friendship of cardinal Fleury, aware that no other power in Europe than France could effectually assist the banished family. After his own fall and the death of Fleury, new combinations of foreign policy arose; his successors returned to the Austrian connexion; a war with France broke out; the grandson of James II. became master, for a moment, of Scotland, and even advanced to the centre of this peaceful and unprotected kingdom. But this was hardly more ignominious to the government than to the jacobites themselves; none of them joined the standard of their pretended sovereign; and the rebellion of 1745 was conclusive, by its own temporary success, against the possibility of his restoration*. From this time the government, even when in search of pretexts for alarm, could hardly affect to dread a name grown so contemptible as that of the Stuart party. It survived, however, for the rest of the reign of George II. in those magnanimous compotations, which had always been the only evidence of its courage and fidelity.

Though the jacobite party had set before its eyes an object most dangerous to the public tranquillity, and which, could it have been attained, would have brought on again the contention

* The tories, it is observed in the MS. journal of Mr. Yorke (second earl of Hardwicke), showed no sign of affection to the government at the time when the invasion was expected in 1743, but treated it all with indifference. Parl. Hist. xiii. 668. In fact a disgraceful apathy pervaded the nation; and according to a letter from Mr. Fox to Mr. Winnington in 1745, which I only quote from recollection, it seemed perfectly uncertain, from this general passiveness, whether the revolution might not be suddenly brought about. Yet very few comparatively, I am persuaded, had the slightest attachment or prejudice in favour of the house of Stuart; but the continual absence from England, and the Hanoverian predilections of the two Georges, the feebleness and factiousness of their administration, and of public men in general, and an indefinite opinion of mis-government, raised through the press, though certainly without oppression or arbitrary acts, had gradually alienated the mass of the nation. But this would not lead men to expose their lives and fortunes; and hence the people of England, a thing almost incredible, lay quiet and nearly unconcerned, while the little army of Highlanders came every day nearer to the capital. It is absurd, however, to suppose that they could have been really successful by marching onward—though their defeat might have been more glorious at Finchley than at Culloden.

of the seventeenth century; though in taking oaths to a government against which they were in conspiracy, they showed a systematic disregard of obligation, and were as little mindful of allegiance, in the years 1715 and 1745, to the prince they owned in their hearts, as they had been to him whom they had professed to acknowledge, it ought to be admitted that they were rendered more numerous and formidable than was necessary by the faults of the reigning kings or of their ministers. They were not actuated for the most part, perhaps with very few exceptions, by the slavish principles of indefeasible right, much less by those of despotic power. They had been so long in opposition to the court, they had so often spoken the language of liberty, that we may justly believe them to have been its friends. It was the policy of Walpole to keep alive the strongest prejudice in the mind of George II., obstinately retentive of prejudice as such narrow and passionate minds always are, against the whole body of the tories. They were ill received at court, and generally excluded, not only from those departments of office which the dominant party have a right to keep in their power, but from the commission of the peace, and every other subordinate trust *. This illiberal and selfish course retained many, no doubt, in the Pretender's camp, who must have perceived both the improbability of his restoration, and the difficulty of reconciling it with the safety of our constitution. He was indeed, as well as his son, far less worthy of respect than the contemporary Brunswic kings: without absolutely wanting capacity or courage, he gave the most undeniable evidence of his legitimacy by constantly resisting the counsels of wise men, and yielding to those of priests; while his son, the fugitive of Culloden, despised and deserted by his own party, insulted by the court of France, lost with the advance of years even the respect and compassion which wait on

* See Parl. Hist. xiii. 1244; and other proofs might be brought from the same work, as well as from miscellaneous authorities of the age of George II.

CHAP. XVI. Anne. Geo. I., II.

unceasing misfortune, the last sad inheritance of the house of Stuart*. But they were little known in England, and from unknown princes men are prone to hope much: if some could anticipate a redress of every evil from Frederic Prince of Wales, whom they might discover to be destitute of respectable qualities,

* See in the Lockhart Papers, ii. 565, a curious relation of Charles Edward's behaviour in refusing to quit France after the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. It was so insolent and absurd, that the government was provoked to arrest him at the opera, and literally to order him to be bound hand and foot; an outrage which even his preposterous conduct could hardly excuse.

Dr. King was in correspondence with this prince for some years after the latter's foolish, though courageous, visit to London in September, 1750; which he left again in five days, on finding himself deceived by some sanguine friends. King says he was wholly ignorant of our history and constitution. "I never heard him express any noble or benevolent sentiment, the certain indications of a great soul and good heart; or discover any sorrow or compassion for the misfortune of so many worthy men who had suffered in his cause." Anecdotes of his own Times, p. 201. He goes on to charge him with love of money, and other faults. But his great folly in keeping a mistress, Mrs. Walkinshaw, whose sister was housekeeper at Leicester House, alarmed the jacobites. "These were all men of fortune and distinction, and many of them persons of the first quality, who attached themselves to the P. as to a person who they imagined might be made the instrument of saving their country. They were sensible that by Walpole's administration the English government was become a system of corruption; and that Walpole's successors, who pursued his plan without any of his abilities, had reduced us to such a deplorable situation that our commercial interest was sinking, our colonies in danger of being lost, and Great Britain, which, if her powers were properly exerted, as they were afterwards in Mr. Pitt's administration, was able to give laws to other nations, was become the contempt of all Europe." P. 208. This is in truth the secret of jacobitism. But possibly that party were not sorry to find a pretext for breaking off so hopeless a connexion, which they seem to have done about 1755. Mr. Pitt's great successes reconciled them to the administration, and his liberal conduct brought back those who had been disgusted by an exclusive policy. On the accession of a new king they flocked to St. James's; and probably scarcely one person of the rank of a gentleman, south of the Tweed, was found to dispute the right of the house of Brunswic after 1760. Dr. King himself, it may be observed, laughs at the old passive obedience doctrine (page 193); so far was he from being a jacobite of that school.

A few nonjuring congregations lingered on far into the reign of George III., presided by the successors of some bishops whom Lloyd of Norwich, the last of those deprived at the revolution, had consecrated in order to keep up the schism. A list of these is given in D'Oyly's Life of Sancroft, vol. ii. p. 34, whence it would appear that the last of them died in 1779. I can trace the line a little farther: a bishop of that separation, named Cartwright, resided at Shrewsbury in 1793, carrying on the business of a surgeon. State Trials, xxiii. 1073. I have heard of similar congregations in the west of England still later. He had however become a very loyal subject to king George: a singular proof of that tenacity of life by which religious sects, after dwindling down through neglect, excel frogs and tortoises; and that even when they have become almost equally cold-blooded!

it cannot be wondered at that others might draw equally flattering prognostics from the accession of Charles Edward. It is almost certain that if either the claimant or his son had embraced the protestant religion, and had also manifested any superior strength of mind, the German prejudices of the reigning family would have cost them the throne, as they did the people's affections. Jacobitism, in the great majority, was one modification of the spirit of liberty burning strongly in the nation at this period. It gave a rallying point to that indefinite discontent which is excited by an ill opinion of rulers, and to that disinterested, though ignorant, patriotism which boils up in youthful minds. The government in possession was hated, not as usurped, but as corrupt; the banished line was demanded, not so much because it was legitimate, but because it was the fancied means of redressing grievances and regenerating the constitution. Such notions were doubtless absurd, but it is undeniable that they were common, and had been so almost from the revolution. I speak only, it will be observed, of the English jacobites; in Scotland the sentiments of loyalty and national pride had a vital energy, and the Highland chieftains gave their blood, as freely as their southern allies did their wine, for the cause of their ancient kings.

No one can have looked in the most cursory manner at the political writings of these two reigns, or at the debates of parliament, without being struck by the continual predictions that our liberties were on the point of extinguishment, or at least by apprehensions of their being endangered. It might seem that little or nothing had been gained by the revolution, and by the substitution of an elective dynasty. This doubtless it was the interest of the Stuart party to maintain or insinuate; and in the conflict of factions, those who, with far opposite views, had separated from the court, seemed to lend them aid. The declamatory exaggerations of that able and ambitious body of men who co-operated against the ministry of sir Robert Walpole have long been rejected; and perhaps in the usual reflux of popular opinion,

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

his domestic administration (for in foreign policy his views, so far as he was permitted to act upon them, appear to have been uniformly judicious) has obtained of late rather an undue degree of favour. I have already observed, that, for the sake of his own ascendancy in the cabinet, he kept up unnecessarily the distinctions of the whig and tory parties, and thus impaired the stability of the royal house, which it was his chief care to support. And though his government was so far from any thing oppressive or arbitrary, that, considered either relatively to any former times, or to the extensive disaffection known to subsist, it was uncommonly moderate, yet feeling or feigning alarm at the jacobite intrigues on the one hand, at the democratic tone of public sentiment and of popular writings on the other, he laboured to preserve a more narrow and oligarchical spirit than was congenial to so great and brave a people; and trusted not enough, as indeed is the general fault of ministers, to the sway of good sense and honesty over disinterested minds. But as he never had a complete influence over his master, and knew that those who opposed him had little else in view than to seize the reins of power and manage them worse, his deviations from the straight course are more pardonable.

The clamorous invectives of this opposition, combined with the subsequent dereliction of avowed principles by many among them when in power, contributed more than any thing else in our history to cast obloquy and suspicion, or even ridicule, on the name and occupation of patriots. Men of sordid and venal characters always rejoice to generalise so convenient a maxim, as the non-existence of public virtue. It may not, however, be improbable, that many of those who took a part in this long contention were less insincere than it has been the fashion to believe, though led too far at the moment by their own passions and the necessity of colouring highly a picture meant for the multitude, and reduced afterwards to the usual compromises and concessions without which power in this country is ever unattainable. But

waving a topic too generally historical for the present chapter, it will be worth while to consider what sort of ground there might be for some prevalent subjects of declamation, and whether the power of government had not, in several respects, been a good deal enhanced since the beginning of the century. By the power of government I mean not so much the personal authority of the sovereign as that of his ministers, acting, perhaps, without his directions; which, since the reign of William, is to be distinguished, if we look at it analytically, from the monarchy itself.

I. The most striking acquisition of power by the crown in the new model of government, if I may use such an expression, is the permanence of a regular military force. The reader cannot need to be reminded, that no army existed before the civil war, that the guards in the reign of Charles II. were about 5000 men, that in the breathing-time between the peace of Ryswick and the war of the Spanish succession, the commons could not be brought to keep up more than 7000 troops. Nothing could be more repugnant to the national prejudices than a standing army. The tories, partly from regard to the ancient usage of the constitution, partly, no doubt, from a factious or disaffected spirit, were unanimous in protesting against it. The most disinterested and zealous lovers of liberty came with great suspicion and reluctance into what seemed so perilous an innovation. But the court, after the accession of the house of Hanover, had many reasons for insisting upon so great an augmentation of its power and security. It is remarkable to perceive by what stealthy advances this came on. Two long wars had rendered the army a profession for men in the higher and middling classes, and familiarized the nation to their dress and rank; it had achieved great honour for itself and the English name, and in the nature of mankind the patriotism of glory is too often an overmatch for that of liberty. The two kings were fond of warlike policy, the second of war itself; their schemes, and those of their ministers, demanded an imposing attitude in negotiation, which an army, it was thought,

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

could best give; the cabinet was for many years entangled in alliances, shifting sometimes rapidly, but in each combination liable to produce the interruption of peace. In the new system which rendered the houses of parliament partakers in the executive administration, they were drawn themselves into the approbation of every successive measure, either on the propositions of ministers, or as often happens, more indirectly, but hardly less effectually, by passing a negative on those of their opponents. The number of troops for which a vote was annually demanded, after some variations, in the first years of George I., was during the whole administration of sir Robert Walpole, except when the state of Europe excited some apprehension of disturbance, rather more than 17,000 men, independent of those on the Irish establishment, but including the garrisons of Minorca and Gibraltar. And this continued with little alteration to be our standing army in time of peace during the eighteenth century.

This army was always understood to be kept on foot, as it is still expressed in the preamble of every mutiny-bill, for better preserving the balance of power in Europe. The commons would not for an instant admit, that it was necessary, as a permanent force, in order to maintain the government at home. There can be no question, however, that the court saw its advantage in this light; and I am not perfectly sure that some of the multiplied negotiations on the continent in that age were not intended as a pretext for keeping up the army, or at least as a means of exciting alarm for the security of the established government. In fact there would have been rebellions in the time of George I., not only in Scotland, which perhaps could not otherwise have been preserved, but in many parts of the kingdom, had the parliament adhered with too pertinacious bigotry to their ancient maxims. Yet these had such influence, that it was long before the army was admitted by every one to be perpetual, and I do not know that it has ever been recognised as such in our statutes. Mr. Pulteney, so late as 1732, a man neither disaffected nor

democratical, and whose views extended no farther than a change of hands, declared, that he "always had been, and always would be, against a standing army of any kind; it was to him a terrible thing, whether under the denomination of parliamentary or any other, a standing army is still a standing army, whatever name it be called by; they are a body of men distinct from the body of the people; they are governed by different laws; blind obedience and an entire submission to the orders of their commanding officer is their only principle. The nations around us are already enslaved, and have been enslaved by those very means; by means of their standing armies they have every one lost their liberties; it is indeed impossible that the liberties of the people can be preserved in any country where a numerous standing army is kept up *."

This wholesome jealousy, though it did not prevent what was indeed for many reasons not to be dispensed with, the establishment of a regular force, kept it within bounds, which possibly the administration, if left to itself, would have gladly overleaped. A clause in the mutiny bill, first inserted in 1718, enabling courts martial to punish mutiny and desertion with death, which had hitherto been only cognizable as capital offences by the civil magistrate, was carried by a very small majority in both houses †. An act was passed in 1735, directing that no troops should come within two miles of any place, except the capital or a garrisoned town, during an election ‡; and on some occasions, both the commons and the courts of justice showed that they had not forgotten the maxims of their ancestors as to the supremacy of the civil power §. A more important measure was projected by men of

* Parl. Hist. viii. 904.

† Id. vii. 536.

‡ 8 G. II. c. 30. Parl. Hist. viii. 883.

§ The military having been called in to quell an alleged riot at a Westminster election in 1741, it was resolved, Dec. 22d, "that the presence of a regular body of armed soldiers at an election of members to serve in parliament is a high infringement of the liberties of the subject, a manifest violation of the freedom of elections, and an open defiance of the laws and constitution of this kingdom." The persons concerned in this having been ordered to attend the house, received on their knees a very severe reprimand from the speaker.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

independent principles, at once to secure the kingdom against attack, invaded as it had been by rebels in 1745, and thrown into the most ignominious panic on the rumours of a French armament in 1756, to take away the pretext for a large standing force, and perhaps to furnish a guarantee against any evil purposes to which, in future times, it might be subservient, by the establishment of a national militia, under the sole authority indeed of the crown, but commanded by gentlemen of sufficient estates, and not liable, except in war, to be marched out of its proper county. This favourite plan, with some reluctance on the part of the government, was adopted in 1757 *. But though, during the long periods of hostilities which have unfortunately ensued, this embodied force has doubtless placed the kingdom in a more respectable state of security, it has not much contributed to diminish the number of our regular forces; and from some defects in its constitution, arising out of too great attention to our ancient local divisions, and of too indiscriminate a dispensation with personal service, which has filled the ranks with the refuse of the community, the militia has grown unpopular and burthensome, rather considered of late by the government as a means of recruiting the army than as worthy of preservation in itself, and accordingly thrown aside in time of peace; so that the person who acquired great popularity as the author of this institution lived to see it worn out and gone to decay, and the principles, above all, upon which he had brought it forward, just enough remembered to be turned into ridicule. Yet the success of that magnificent organization which, in our own time, has been established in France, is sufficient to evince the possibility of a national militia; and we know with what spirit such a force was kept

Parl. Hist. ix. 326. Upon some occasion, the circumstances of which I do not recollect, chief justice Willes uttered some laudable sentiments as to the subordination of military power.

* Lord Hardwicke threw out the militia bill in 1756, thinking some of its clauses rather too republican, and, in fact, being adverse to the scheme. Parl. Hist. xv. 704. H. Walpole's Memoirs, ii. 45. Coxe's Memoirs of Lord Walpole, 450.

up for some years in this country, under the name of volunteers and yeomanry, on its only real basis, that of property, and in such local distribution as convenience pointed out.

Nothing could be more idle, at any time since the revolution, than to suppose that the regular army would pull the speaker out of his chair, or in any manner be employed to confirm a despotic power in the crown. Such power, I think, could never have been the waking dream of either king or minister. But as the slightest inroads upon private rights and liberties are to be guarded against in any nation that deserves to be called free, we should always keep in mind not only that the military power is subordinate to the civil, but as this subordination must cease where the former is frequently employed, that it should never be called upon in aid of the peace without sufficient cause. Nothing would more break down this notion of the law's supremacy than the perpetual interference of those who are really governed by another law; for the doctrine of some judges, that the soldier, being still a citizen, acts only in preservation of the public peace, as another citizen is bound to do, must be felt as a sophism, even by those who cannot find an answer to it. And, even in slight circumstances, it is not conformable to the principles of our government to make that vain display of military authority which disgusts us so much in some continental kingdoms *. But, not to dwell on this, it is more to our immediate purpose, that the executive power has acquired such a coadjutor in the regular army that it can, in no probable emergency, have much to apprehend from popular sedition. The increased facilities of transport, and several improvements in military art and science, which will occur to the reader, have, in later times, greatly enhanced this advantage.

* Nothing can be more *un-English* than an innovation of no long standing, which I never observe without disgust, the presence of sentinels at the doors of the British Museum, and even at exhibitions of pictures. Though this proceeds only from the silliest vanity, it is pity that, among the numberless modes in which that quality can display itself, it should not have chosen one less unbecoming.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

II. It must be apparent to every one, that since the restoration, and especially since the revolution, an immense power has been thrown into the scale of both houses of parliament, though practically in more frequent exercise by the lower, in consequence of their annual session during several months, and of their almost unlimited rights of investigation, discussion, and advice. But if the crown should by any means become secure of an ascendancy in this assembly, it is evident that although the prerogative, technically speaking, might be diminished, the power might be the same, or even possibly more efficacious; and that this result must be proportioned to the degree and security of such an ascendancy. A parliament absolutely, and in all conceivable circumstances, under the control of the sovereign, whether through intimidation or corrupt subservience, could not, without absurdity, be deemed a co-ordinate power, or, indeed, in any sense, a restraint upon his will. This is, however, an extreme supposition, which no man, unless both grossly factious and ignorant, will ever pretend to have been realised. But as it would equally contradict notorious truth to assert that every vote has been disinterested and independent, the degree of influence which ought to be permitted, or which has at any time existed, becomes one of the most important subjects in our constitutional policy.

I have mentioned, in the last chapter, both the provisions inserted in the act of settlement, with the design of excluding altogether the possessors of public office from the house of commons, and the modifications of them by several acts of the queen. These were deemed by the country party so inadequate to restrain the dependents of power from overspreading the benches of the commons, that perpetual attempts were made to carry the exclusive principle to a far greater length. In the two next reigns, if we can trust to the uncontradicted language of debate, or even to the descriptions of individuals in the lists of each parliament, we must conclude that a very undue proportion of dependants on

the favour of government were made its censors and counsellors. There was still, however, so much left of an independent spirit, that bills for restricting the number of placemen, or excluding pensioners, met always with countenance; they were sometimes rejected by very slight majorities; and, after a time, sir Robert Walpole found it expedient to reserve his opposition for the surer field of the other house*. After his fall, it was imputed, with some justice, to his successors, that they shrunk in power from the bold reformation which they had so frequently endeavoured; the king was indignantly averse to all retrenchment of his power, and they wanted probably both the inclination and the influence to cut off all corruption. Yet we owe to this ministry the place-bill of 1743, which, derided as it was at the time, seems to have had a considerable effect; excluding a great number of inferior officers from the house of commons, which has never since contained so revolting a list of court-deputies as it did in the age of Walpole†.

But while this acknowledged influence of lucrative office might be presumed to operate on many stanch adherents of the actual administration, there was always a strong suspicion, or rather

* By the act of 6 Anne, c. 7. all persons holding pensions from the crown during pleasure were made incapable of sitting in the house of commons; which was extended by 1 Geo. I. c. 56, to those who held them for any term of years. But the difficulty was to ascertain the fact; the government refusing information. Mr. Sandys accordingly proposed a bill in 1730, by which every member of the commons was to take oath that he did not hold any such pension, and that, in case of accepting one, he would disclose it to the house within fourteen days. This was carried by a small majority through the commons, but rejected in the other house, which happened again in 1734 and in 1740. Parl. Hist. viii. 789; ix. 369; xi. 510. The king, in an angry note to Lord Townshend, on the first occasion, calls it "this villanous bill." Coxe's Walpole, ii. 537, 673. A bill of the same gentleman to limit the number of placemen in the house had so far worse success, that it did not reach the Serbonian bog. Parl. Hist. xi. 328. Bishop Sherlock made a speech against the prevention of corrupt practices by the pension bill, which, whether justly or not, excited much indignation, and even gave rise to the proposal of a bill for putting an end to the translation of bishops. Id. viii. 847.

† 25 Geo. II. c. 22. The king came very reluctantly into this measure; in the preceding session of 1742, Sandys, now become chancellor of the exchequer, had opposed it, though originally his own; alleging, in no very parliamentary manner, that the new ministry had not yet been able to remove his majesty's prejudices. Parl. Hist. xii. 896.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

a general certainty, of absolute corruption. The proofs in single instances could never, perhaps, be established; which, of course, is not surprising. But no one seriously called in question the reality of a systematic distribution of money by the crown to the representatives of the people; nor did the corrupters themselves, in whom the crime seems always to be deemed less heinous, disguise it in private *. It is true that the appropriation of supplies and the established course of the exchequer render the greatest part of the public revenue secure from misdirection; but under the head of secret service money, a very large sum was annually expended without account, and some other parts of the civil list were equally free from all public examination †. The committee of secrecy appointed after the resignation of sir Robert Walpole endeavoured to elicit some distinct evidence of this misapplication; but the obscurity natural to such transactions, and the guilty collusion of subaltern accomplices, who shrouded themselves in the protection of the law, defeated every hope of punishment, or even personal disgrace ‡. This practice of direct bribery continued, beyond doubt, long afterwards, and is generally supposed to have ceased about the termination of the American war.

* Mr. Fox declared to the duke of Newcastle, when the office of secretary of state, and what was called the management of the house of commons was offered to him, "that he never desired to touch a penny of the secret service money, or to know the disposition of it farther than was necessary to *enable him to speak to the members without being ridiculous.*" Dodington's Diary, 15th March, 1754. H. Walpole confirms this, in nearly the same words. Mem. of Last Ten Years, i. 332.

† In Coxe's Memoirs of sir R. Walpole, iii. 609, we have the draught, by that minister, of an intended vindication of himself after his retirement from office, in order to show the impossibility of misapplying public money, which, however, he does not show; and his elaborate account of the method by which payments are made out of the exchequer, though valuable in some respects, seems rather intended to lead aside the unpractised reader.

‡ This secret committee were checked at every step for want of sufficient powers. It is absurd to assert, like Mr. Coxe, that they advanced accusations which they could not prove, when the means of proof were withheld. Scrope and Paxton, the one secretary, the other solicitor to the treasury, being examined about very large sums traced to their hands, and other matters, refused to answer questions, and a bill to indemnify evidence was lost in the upper house. Parl. Hist. xii. 625, et post.

There is hardly any doctrine with respect to our government more in fashion than that a considerable influence of the crown (meaning of course a corrupt influence), in both houses of parliament, and especially in the commons, has been rendered indispensable by the vast enhancement of their own power over the public administration. It is doubtless most expedient that many servants of the crown should be also servants of the people; and no man who values the constitution would separate the functions of ministers of state from those of legislators. The glory that waits on wisdom and eloquence in the senate should always be the great prize of an English statesman, and his high road to the sovereign's favour. But the maxim that private vices are public benefits is as sophistical as it is disgusting; and it is self-evident both that the expectation of a clandestine recompense, or what in effect is the same thing, of a lucrative office, cannot be the motive of an upright man in his vote, and that if an entire parliament should be composed of such venal spirits, there would be an end of all control upon the crown. There is no real cause to apprehend that a virtuous and enlightened government would find difficulty in resting upon the reputation justly done to it; especially when we throw into the scale that species of influence which must ever subsist, the sentiment of respect and loyalty to a sovereign, of friendship and gratitude to a minister, of habitual confidence in those intrusted with power, of averseness to confusion and untried change, which have in fact more extensive operation than any sordid motives, and which must almost always render them unnecessary.

III. The co-operation of both houses of parliament with the executive government enabled the latter to convert to its own purpose what had often in former times been employed against it, the power of inflicting punishment for breach of privilege. But as the subject of parliamentary privilege is of no slight importance, it will be convenient on this occasion to bring the whole before the reader in as concise a summary as possible,

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo I. II.

distinguishing the power as it relates to offences committed by members of either house, or against them singly, or the houses of parliament collectively, or against the government and the public.

1. It has been the constant practice of the house of commons to repress disorderly or indecent behaviour by a censure delivered through the speaker. Instances of this are even noticed in the journals under Edward VI. and Mary; and it is in fact essential to the regular proceedings of any assembly. In the former reign they also committed one of their members to the Tower. But in the famous case of Arthur Hall in 1581, they established the first precedent of punishing one of their own body for a printed libel derogatory to them as a part of the legislature; and they inflicted the threefold penalty of imprisonment, fine, and expulsion*. From this time forth it was understood to be the law and usage of parliament, that the commons might commit to prison any one of their members for misconduct in the house, or relating it. The right of imposing a fine was very rarely asserted after the instance of Hall. But that of expulsion, no earlier precedent whereof has been recorded, became as indubitable as frequent and unquestioned usage could render it. It was carried to a great excess by the long parliament, and again in the year 1680. These, however, were times of extreme violence, and the prevailing faction had an apology in the designs of the court, which required an energy beyond the law to counteract them. The offences too, which the whigs thus punished in 1680, were in their effect against the power and even existence of parliament. The privilege was far more unwarrantably exerted by the opposite party in 1714, against sir Richard Steele, expelled the house for writing the Crisis, a pamphlet reflecting on the ministry. This was, perhaps, the first instance wherein the house of commons so identified itself with

* See vol. i. p. 292.

the executive administration, independently of the sovereign's person, as to consider itself libelled by those who impugned its measures *.

In a few instances an attempt was made to carry this farther, by declaring the party incapable of sitting in parliament. It is hardly necessary to remark, that upon this rested the celebrated question of the Middlesex election in 1769. If a few precedents, and those not before the year 1680, were to determine all controversies of constitutional law, it is plain enough from the journals, that the house have assumed the power of incapacitation. But as such an authority is highly dangerous and unnecessary for any good purpose, and as, according to all legal rules, so extraordinary a power could not be supported except by a sort of prescription which cannot be shown, the final resolution of the house of commons, which condemned the votes passed in times of great excitement, appears far more consonant to just principles.

2. The power of each house of parliament over those who do not belong to it is of a more extensive consideration, and has lain open, in some respects, to more doubt than that over its own members. It has been exercised, in the first place, very frequently, and from an early period, in order to protect the members personally, and in their properties, from any thing which has been construed to interfere with the discharge of their functions. Every obstruction in these duties, by assaulting, challenging, insulting any single representative of the commons, has from the middle of the sixteenth century downwards, that is, from the beginning of their regular journals, been justly deemed a breach of privilege, and an offence against the whole body. It has been punished generally by commitment, either to the custody of the house's officer, the serjeant-at-arms, or to the king's prison. This

* Parl. Hist. vi. 1265. Walpole says, in speaking for Steele, "the liberty of the press is unrestrained; how then shall a part of the legislature dare to punish that as a crime, which is not declared to be so by any law framed by the whole?"

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

summary proceeding is usually defended by a technical analogy to what are called attachments for contempt, by which every court of record is entitled to punish by imprisonment, if not also by fine, any obstruction to its acts or contumacious resistance of them. But it tended also to raise the dignity of parliament in the eyes of the people, at times when the government, and even the courts of justice, were not greatly inclined to regard it, and has been almost a necessary safeguard against the insolence of power. The majority are bound to respect, and indeed have respected, the rights of every member, however obnoxious to them, on all questions of privilege. Even in the case most likely to occur in the present age, that of libels, which, by no unreasonable stretch, come under the head of obstructions, it would be unjust that a patriotic legislator, exposed to calumny for his zeal in the public cause, should be necessarily driven to a troublesome and uncertain process at law, when the offence so manifestly affects the real interests of parliament and the nation. The application of this principle must of course require a discreet temper, which was not perhaps always observed in former times, especially in the reign of William III. Instances at least of punishment for breach of privilege by personal reflections are never so common as in the journals of that turbulent period.

The most usual mode, however, of incurring the animadversion of the house was by molestations in regard to property. It was the most ancient privilege of the commons to be free from all legal process, during the term of the session and for forty days before and after, except on charges of treason, felony, or breach of the peace. I have elsewhere mentioned the great case of Ferrers, under Henry VIII., wherein the house first, as far as we know, exerted the power of committing to prison those who had been concerned in arresting one of its members; and have shown, that after some little intermission, this became their recognized and customary right. Numberless instances occur of its exer-

cise *. It was not only a breach of privilege to serve any sort of process upon them, but to put them under the necessity of seeking redress at law for any civil injury. Thus abundant cases are found in the journals, where persons have been committed to prison for entering on the estates of members, carrying away timber, lopping trees, digging coal, fishing in their waters. Their servants, and even their tenants, if the trespass were such as to affect the landlord's property, had the same protection †. The grievance of so unparalleled an immunity must have been notorious, since it not only deprived creditors of any possible redress, after sessions became annual, and the prorogations were always managed with a regard to the limited term of privilege, but enabled rapacious men to establish unjust claims in respect of property; the alleged trespasses being generally founded on some disputed right. The house were finally roused to a sense of the iniquity they were sanctioning. On a complaint of breach of privilege by trespassing on a fishery (Jan. 25, 1768), they heard evidence on both sides, and determined that no breach of privilege had been committed; thus indirectly taking on them the decision of a freehold right. A few days after they came to a resolution, "that in case of any complaint of a breach of privilege, hereafter to be made by any member of this house, if the house shall adjudge there is no ground for such complaint, the house will order satisfaction to the person complained of for his costs and expenses incurred by reason of such complaint ‡." But little opportunity was given to try the effect of this resolution, an act having passed in two years afterwards, which has

* Vol. i. p. 288.

† The instances are so numerous, that to select a few would perhaps give an inadequate notion of the vast extension which privilege received. In fact, hardly any thing could be done disagreeable to a member, of which he might not inform the house, and cause it to be punished.

‡ Journals, 11th Feb. It had been originally proposed, that the member making the complaint should pay the party's costs and expenses, which was amended, I presume, in consequence of some doubt as to the power of the house to enforce it.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

altogether taken away the exemption from legal process, except as to the immunity from personal arrest, which still continues to be the privilege of both houses of parliament *.

3. A more important class of offences against privilege is of such as affect either house of parliament collectively. In the reign of Elizabeth we have an instance of one committed for disrespectful words against the commons. A few others, either for words spoken or published libels, occur in the reign of Charles I., even before the long parliament; but those of 1641 can have little weight as precedents, and we may say nearly the same of the unjustifiable proceedings in 1680. Even since the revolution we find too many proofs of encroaching pride or intemperate passion, to which a numerous assembly is always prone, and which the prevalent doctrine of the house's absolute power in matters of privilege has not contributed much to restrain. The most remarkable may be briefly noticed.

The commons of 1701, wherein a tory spirit was strongly predominant, by what were deemed its factious delays in voting supplies, and in seconding the measures of the king for the security of Europe, had exasperated all those who saw the nation's safety in vigorous preparations for war, and led at last to the most angry resolution of the lords, which one house of parliament in a matter not affecting its privileges has ever recorded against the other †. The grand jury of Kent, and other freeholders of the county, presented accordingly a petition on the 8th of May, 1701, imploring them to turn their loyal addresses into bills of supply (the only phrase in the whole petition that could be construed into

* 10 G. 3. c. 50.

† Resolved, That whatever ill consequences may arise from the so long deferring the supplies for the year's service are to be attributed to the fatal counsel of putting off the meeting of a parliament so long, and to unnecessary delays of the house of commons. Lords' Journals, 23 June, 1701. The commons had previously come to a vote, that all the ill consequences which may at this time attend the delay of the supplies granted by the commons for the preserving the public peace, and maintaining the balance of Europe, are to be imputed to those who, to procure an indemnity for their own enormous crimes, have used their utmost endeavours to make a breach between the two houses. Commons' Journals, June 20.

disrespect), and to enable his majesty to assist his allies before it should be too late. The tory faction was wrought to fury by this honest remonstrance. They voted that the petition was scandalous, insolent, and seditious, tending to destroy the constitution of parliament, and to subvert the established government of this realm; and ordered that Mr. Colepepper, who had been most forward in presenting the petition, and all others concerned in it, should be taken into custody of the serjeant*. Though no attempt was made on this occasion to call the authority of the house into question by habeas corpus or other legal remedy, it was discussed in pamphlets and in general conversation, with little advantage to a power so arbitrary, and so evidently abused in the immediate instance†.

* Journals, 8 May. Parl. Hist. v. 1250. Ralph, 947. This historian, who generally affects to take the popular side, inveighs against this petition, because the tories had a majority in the commons. His partiality arising out of a dislike to the king is very manifest throughout the second volume. He is forced to admit afterwards, that the house disgusted the people by their votes on this occasion. P. 976.

† History of the Kentish Petition. Somers Tracts, xi. 242. Legion's Paper. Id. 264. Vindication of the Rights of the Commons (either by Harley or sir Humphrey Mackworth). Id. 276. This contains in many respects constitutional principles; but the author holds very strong language about the right of petitioning. After quoting the statute of Charles II. against tumults on pretence of presenting petitions, he says: "By this statute it may be observed, that not only the number of persons is restrained, but the occasion also for which they may petition; which is for the alteration of matters established in church or state, for want whereof some inconvenience may arise to that county from which the petition shall be brought. For it is plain by the express words and meaning of that statute, that the grievance or matter of the petition must arise in the same county as the petition itself. They may indeed petition the king for a parliament to redress their grievances; and they may petition that parliament to make one law that is advantageous, and repeal another that is prejudicial to the trade or interest of that county; but they have no power by this statute, nor by the constitution of the English government, to direct the parliament in the general proceedings concerning the whole kingdom; for the law declares, that a general consultation of all the wise representatives of parliament is more for the safety of England than the hasty advice of a number of petitioners of a private county, of a grand-jury, or of a few justices of the peace, who seldom have a true state of the case represented to them." P. 313.

These are certainly what must appear in the present day very strange limitations of the subject's right to petition either house of parliament. But it is really true, that such a right was not generally recognised, nor frequently exercised, in so large an extent as is now held unquestionable. We may search whole volumes of the journals, while the most animating topics were in discussion, without finding a single instance of such an interposition of the constituent with the representative body. In this

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

A very few years after this high exercise of authority, it was called forth in another case, still more remarkable and even less warrantable. The house of commons had an undoubted right of

particular case of the Kentish petition, the words in the resolution, that it tended to destroy the constitution of parliament and subvert the established government, could be founded on no pretence but its unusual interference with the counsels of the legislature. With this exception, I am not aware (stating this however with some diffidence) of any merely political petition before the Septennial bill in 1717, against which several were presented from corporate towns; one of which was rejected on account of language that the house thought indecent; and as to these it may be observed, that towns returning members to parliament had a particular concern in the measure before the house. They relate however, no doubt, to general policy, and seem to establish a popular principle which stood on little authority. I do not of course include the petitions to the long parliament in 1640, nor one addressed to the Convention, in 1689, from the inhabitants of London and Westminster, pressing their declaration of William and Mary; both in times too critical to furnish regular precedents. But as the popular principles of government grew more established, the right of petitioning on general grounds seems to have been better recognised; and instances may be found, during the administration of sir Robert Walpole, though still by no means frequent. Parl. Hist. xii. 119. The city of London presented a petition against the bill for naturalization of the Jews, in 1753, as being derogatory to the Christian religion, as well as detrimental to trade. Id. xiv. 1417. It caused, however, some animadversion; for Mr. Northey, in the debate next session on the proposal to repeal this bill, alluding to this very petition, and to the comments Mr. Pelham made on it, as "so like the famous Kentish petition, that if they had been treated in the same manner it would have been what they deserved," observes, in reply, that the "right of petitioning either the king or the parliament in a decent and submissive manner, and without any riotous appearance against any thing they think may affect their religion and liberties, will never, I hope, be taken from the subject." Id. xv. 149; see also 376. And it is very remarkable, that notwithstanding the violent clamour excited by that unfortunate statute, no petitions for its repeal are to be found in the journals. They are equally silent with regard to the marriage act, another topic of popular obloquy. Some petitions appear to have been presented against the bill for naturalization of foreign protestants; but probably on the ground of its injurious effect on the parties themselves. The great multiplication of petitions on matters wholly unconnected with particular interests cannot, I believe, be traced higher than those for the abolition of the slave trade in 1787; though a few were presented for reform about the end of the American war, which would undoubtedly have been rejected with indignation in any earlier stage of our constitution. It may be remarked also, that petitions against bills imposing duties are not received, probably on the principle that they are intended for the general interests, though affecting the parties who thus complain of them. Hatsell, iii. 200.

The convocation of public meetings for the debate of political questions, as preparatory to such addresses or petitions, is still less according to the practice and precedents of our ancestors, nor does it appear that the sheriffs or other magistrates are more invested with a right of convening or presiding in assemblies of this nature than any other persons; though, within the bounds of the public peace, it would not perhaps be contended that they have ever been unlawful. But that their origin can be distinctly traced higher than the year 1769 I am not prepared to assert. It will of course be understood, that this note is merely historical, and without reference to the expediency of that change in our constitutional theory it illustrates.

determining all disputed returns to the writ of election, and consequently of judging upon the right of every vote. But as the house could not pretend that it had given this right, or that it was not, like any other franchise, vested in the possessor by a legal title, no pretext of reason or analogy could be set up for denying that it might also come, in an indirect manner at least, before a court of justice, and be judged by the common principles of law. One Ashby, however, a burgess of Aylesbury, having sued the returning-officer for refusing his vote; and three judges of the King's Bench, against the opinion of chief-justice Holt, having determined for different reasons that it did not lie, a writ of error was brought in the house of lords, when the judgment was reversed. The house of commons took this up indignantly, and passed various resolutions, asserting their exclusive right to take cognizance of all matters relating to the election of their members. The lords repelled these by contrary resolutions: That by the known laws of this kingdom, every person having a right to give his vote, and being wilfully denied by the officer who ought to receive it, may maintain an action against such officer to recover damage for the injury; That the contrary assertion is destructive of the property of the subject, and tends to encourage corruption and partiality in returning officers; That the declaring persons guilty of breach of privilege for prosecuting such actions, or for soliciting and pleading in them, is a manifest assuming a power to control the law, and hinder the course of justice, and subject the property of Englishmen to the arbitrary votes of the house of commons. They ordered a copy of these resolutions to be sent to all the sheriffs, and be communicated by them to all the boroughs in their respective counties.

A prorogation soon afterwards followed, but served only to give breathing time to the exasperated parties; for it must be observed, that though a sense of dignity and privilege no doubt swelled the majorities in each house, the question was very much involved in the general whig and tory course of politics. But

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

Ashby, during the recess, having proceeded to execution on his judgment, and some other actions having been brought against the returning officer of Aylesbury, the commons again took it up, and committed the parties to Newgate. They moved the court of King's Bench for a habeas corpus, upon the return to which, the judges, except Holt, thought themselves not warranted to set them at liberty against the commitment of the house *. It was threatened to bring this by writ of error before the lords, and in the disposition of that assembly, it seems probable that they would have inflicted a severe wound on the privileges of the lower house, which must in all probability have turned out a sort of suicide upon their own. But the commons interposed by resolving to commit to prison the counsel and agents concerned in prosecuting the habeas corpus, and by addressing the queen not to grant a writ of error. The queen properly answered, that as this matter, relating to the course of judicial proceedings, was of the highest consequence, she thought it necessary to weigh very carefully what she should do. The lords came to some important resolutions: That neither house of parliament hath any power by any vote or declaration to create to themselves any new privilege that is not warranted by the known laws and customs of parliament; That the house of commons, in committing to Newgate certain persons for prosecuting an action at law, upon pretence that their so doing was contrary to a declaration, a contempt of the jurisdiction, and a breach of the privileges of that house, have assumed to themselves alone a legislative power, by pretending to attribute the force of law to their declaration, have claimed a jurisdiction, not warranted by the constitution, and have assumed a new privilege, to which they can show no title by the law and custom of parliament; and have thereby, as far as in them lies, subjected the rights of Englishmen, and the freedom of their persons, to the arbitrary votes of the house of commons; That

* State Trials, xiv. 849.

every Englishman, who is imprisoned by any authority whatsoever, has an undoubted right to a writ of habeas corpus, in order to obtain his liberty by the due course of law; That for the house of commons to punish any person for assisting a prisoner to procure such a writ is an attempt of dangerous consequence, and a breach of the statutes provided for the liberty of the subject; That a writ of error is not of grace but of right, and ought not to be denied to the subject when duly applied for, though at the request of either house of parliament.

These vigorous resolutions produced a conference between the houses, which was managed with more temper than might have been expected from the tone taken on both sides. But neither receding in the slightest degree, the lords addressed the queen, requesting her to issue the writs of error demanded upon the refusal of the King's Bench to discharge the parties committed by the house of commons. The queen answered the same day, that she should have granted the writs of error desired by them, but finding an absolute necessity of putting an immediate end to the session, she was sensible there could have been no further proceeding upon them. The meaning of this could only be, that by a prorogation all commitments by order of the lower house of parliament are determined, so that the parties could stand in no need of a habeas corpus. But a great constitutional question was thus wholly eluded *.

We may reckon the proceedings against Mr. Alexander Murray, in 1751, among the instances wherein the house of commons has been hurried by passion to an undue violence. This gentleman had been active in a contested Westminster election, on an anti-ministerial and perhaps jacobite interest. In the course of an inquiry before the house, founded on a petition against the return, the high bailiff named Mr. Murray as having insulted him in the execution of his duty. The house resolved to hear Murray

* Parl. Hist. vi. 225, et post. State Trials, xiv. 695, et post.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

by counsel in his defence, and the high bailiff also by counsel in support of the charge, and ordered the former to give bail for his appearance from time to time. These, especially the last, were innovations on the practice of parliament, and justly opposed by the more cool-headed men. After hearing witnesses on both sides, it was resolved that Murray should be committed to Newgate, and should receive this sentence upon his knees. This command he steadily refused to obey, and thus drew on himself a storm of wrath at such insolence and audacity. But the times were no more, when the commons could inflict whippings and pillories on the refractory; and they were forced to content themselves with ordering that no person should be admitted to him in prison, which, on account of his ill health, they soon afterwards relaxed. The public voice is never favourable to such arbitrary exertions of mere power: at the expiration of the session, Mr. Murray, thus grown from an intriguing jacobite into a confessor of popular liberty, was attended home by a sort of triumphal procession amidst the applause of the people. In the next session he was again committed on the same charge, a proceeding extremely violent and arbitrary *.

It has been always deemed a most important and essential privilege of the houses of parliament, that they may punish in this summary manner by commitment all those who disobey their orders to attend as witnesses, or for any purposes of their constitutional duties. No inquiry could go forward before the house at large or its committees, without this power to enforce obedience, especially when the information is to be extracted from public officers against the secret wishes of the court. It is equally necessary (or rather more so, since evidence not being on oath in the lower house, there can be no punishment in the course of law) that the contumacy or prevarication of witnesses

* Parl. Hist. xiv. 888, et post. 1063. Walpole's Memoirs of the last Ten Years of George II., i. 15, et post.

should incur a similar penalty. No man would seek to take away this authority from parliament, unless he is either very ignorant of what has occurred in other times and his own, or is a slave in the fetters of some general theory.

But far less can be advanced for several exertions of power on record in the journals, which under the name of privilege must be reckoned by impartial men irregularities and encroachments, capable only at some periods of a kind of apology from the unsettled state of the constitution. The commons began in the famous or infamous case of Floyd to arrogate a power of animadverting upon political offences, which was then wrested from them by the upper house. But in the first parliament of Charles I. they committed Montagu (afterwards the noted semi-popish bishop) to the serjeant, on account of a published book, containing doctrines they did not approve*. For this was evidently the main point, though he was also charged with reviling two persons who had petitioned the house, which bore a distant resemblance to a contempt. In the long parliament, even from its commencement, every boundary was swept away; it was sufficient to have displeased the majority by act or word: but no precedents can be derived from a crisis of force struggling against force. If we descend to the reign of William III., it will be easy to discover instances of commitments, laudable in their purpose, but of such doubtful legality and dangerous consequence, that no regard to the motive should induce us to justify the precedent. Graham and Burton, the solicitors of the treasury in all the worst state prosecutions under Charles and James, and Jenner, a baron of the exchequer, were committed to the Tower by the council immediately after the king's proclamation, with an intention of proceeding criminally against them. Some months afterwards, the suspension of the habeas corpus, which had taken place by bill, having ceased, they moved the king's

* Journals, vii. 9th July, 1725.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

bench to admit them to bail; but the house of commons took this up, and, after a report of a committee as to precedents, put them in custody of the serjeant at arms *. On complaints of abuses in victualling the navy, the commissioners of that department were sent for in the serjeant's custody, and only released on bail ten days afterwards †. But without minutely considering the questionable instances of privilege that we may regret to find, I will select one wherein the house of commons appear to have gone far beyond either the reasonable or customary limits of privilege, and that with very little pretext of public necessity. In the reign of George I., a newspaper called Mist's Journal was notorious as the organ of the jacobite faction. A passage full of the most impudent longings for the Pretender's restoration having been laid before the house, it was resolved, May 28, 1721, "that the said paper is a false, malicious, scandalous, infamous, and traitorous libel, tending to alienate the affections of his majesty's subjects, and to excite the people to sedition and rebellion, with an intention to subvert the present happy establishment, and to introduce popery and arbitrary power." They went on after this resolution to commit the printer Mist to Newgate, and to address the king that the authors and publishers of the libel might be prosecuted ‡. It is to be observed, that no violation of privilege either was, or indeed could be alleged as the ground of this commitment, which seems to imply that the house conceived itself to be invested with a general power, at least in all political misdemeanors.

I have not observed any case more recent than this of Mist, wherein any one has been committed on a charge which could not possibly be interpreted as a contempt of the house, or a breach of its privilege. It became, however, the practice, without previously addressing the king, to direct a prosecution by the attorney-general for offences of a public nature, which

* Commons' Journals, 25th Oct. 1689. † Id. Dec. 5. ‡ Parl. Hist. vii. 803.

the commons had learned in the course of any inquiry, or which had been formally laid before them *. This seems to have been introduced about the beginning of the reign of Anne, and is undoubtedly a far more constitutional course than that of arbitrary punishment by over-straining their privilege. In some instances, libels have been publicly burned by the order of one or other house of parliament.

I have principally adverted to the powers exerted by the lower house of parliament, in punishing those guilty of violating their privileges. It will of course be understood that the lords are at least equal in authority. In some respects indeed they have gone beyond. I do not mean that they would be supposed at present to have cognizance of any offence whatever upon which the commons could not animadvert. Notwithstanding what they claimed in the case of Floyd, the subsequent denial by the commons, and abandonment by themselves, of any original jurisdiction, must stand in the way of their assuming such authority over misdemeanours, more extensively at least than the commons, as has been shown, have in some instances exercised it. But while the latter have, with very few exceptions, and none since the restoration, contented themselves with commitment during the session, the lords have sometimes imposed fines, and, on some occasions in the reign of George II., adjudged parties to imprisonment for a certain time. In one instance, so late as that reign, they sentenced a man to the pillory; and this had been done several times before. The judgments, however, of earlier ages give far less credit to the jurisdiction than they take from it. Besides the ever memorable case of Floyd, one John Blount, about the same time (27th Nov. 1621), was sentenced by the lords to imprisonment and hard labour in Bridewell during life †.

* Lords' Journals, 10th Jan. 1702. Parl. Hist. vi. 21.

† Hargrave's Juridical Arguments, vol. i. p. 1, &c.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

It may surprise those who have heard of the happy balance of the English constitution, of the responsibility of every man to the law, and of the security of the subject from all unlimited power, especially as to personal freedom, that this power of awarding punishment at discretion of the houses of parliament is generally reputed to be universal and uncontrollable. This indeed was by no means received at the time when the most violent usurpations under the name of privilege were first made; the power was questioned by the royalist party who became its victims, and, among others, by the gallant Welshman, judge Jenkins, whom the long parliament had shut up in the Tower. But it has been several times brought into discussion before the ordinary tribunals, and the result has been, that if the power of parliament is not unlimited in right, there is at least no remedy provided against its excesses.

The house of lords, in 1677, committed to the Tower four peers, among whom was the earl of Shaftesbury, for a high contempt; that is, for calling in question, during a debate, the legal continuance of parliament after a prorogation of more than twelve months. Shaftesbury moved the court of King's Bench to release him upon a writ of habeas corpus. But the judges were unanimously of opinion, that they had no jurisdiction to inquire into a commitment by the lords of one of their body, or to discharge the party during the session, even though there might be, as appears to have been the case, such technical informality on the face of the commitment, as would be sufficient, in an ordinary case, to set it aside*.

Lord Shaftesbury was at this time in vehement opposition to the court. Without insinuating that this had any effect upon the judges, it is certain that, a few years afterwards, they were less inclined to magnify the privileges of parliament. Some who had been committed, very wantonly and oppressively, by the commons

* State Trials, vi. 1369. 1 Modern Reports, 159.

in 1680, under the name of abhorrers, brought actions for false imprisonment against Topham, the serjeant-at-arms. In one of these he put in what is called a plea to the jurisdiction, denying the competence of the court of King's Bench, inasmuch as the alleged trespass had been done by order of the knights, citizens, and burgesses of parliament. But the judges overruled this plea, and ordered him to plead in bar to the action. We do not find that Topham complied with this; at least judgments appear to have passed against him in these actions *. The commons, after the revolution, entered on the subject, and summoned two of the late judges, Pemberton and Jones, to their bar. Pemberton answered that he remembered little of the case; but if the defendant should plead that he did arrest the plaintiff by order of the house, and should plead that to the jurisdiction of the King's Bench, he thought, with submission, he could satisfy the house that such a plea ought to be overruled, and that he took the law to be so very clearly. The house pressed for his reasons, which he rather declined to give. But on a subsequent day he fully admitted that the order of the house was sufficient to take any one into custody, but that it ought to be pleaded in bar, and not to the jurisdiction, which would be of no detriment to the party, nor affect his substantial defence. It did not appear, however, that he had given any intimation from the bench of so favourable a leaning towards the rights of parliament, and his present language might not uncharitably be ascribed to the change of times. The house resolved that the orders and proceedings of this house being pleaded to the jurisdiction of the court of King's Bench, ought not to be overruled; that the judges had been guilty of a breach of privilege, and should be taken into custody †.

I have already mentioned that, in the course of the controversy between the two houses on the case of Ashby and White, the

* State Trials, xii. 822. T. Jones, Reports, 208.

† Journals, 10th, 12th, 19th July, 1689.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

commons had sent some persons to Newgate for suing the returning officer of Aylesbury in defiance of their resolutions; and that on their application to the King's Bench to be discharged on their habeas corpus, the majority of the judges had refused it. Three judges, Powis, Gould, and Powell, held that the courts of Westminster Hall could have no power to judge of the commitments of the houses of parliament; that they had no means of knowing what were the privileges of the commons, and consequently could not know their boundaries; that the law and custom of parliament stood on its own basis, and was not to be decided by the general rules of law; that no one had ever been discharged from such a commitment, which was an argument that it could not be done. Holt, the chief justice, on the other hand maintained that no privilege of parliament could destroy a man's right, such as that of bringing an action for a civil injury; that neither house of parliament could separately dispose of the liberty and property of the people, which could only be done by the whole legislature; that the judges were bound to take notice of the customs of parliament, because they are part of the law of the land, and might as well be learned as any other part of the law. "It is the law," he said, "that gives the queen her prerogative; it is the law gives jurisdiction to the house of lords, as it is the law limits the jurisdiction of the house of commons." The eight other judges having been consulted, though not judicially, are stated to have gone along with the majority of the court, in holding that a commitment by either house of parliament was not cognizable at law. But from some of the resolutions of the lords on this occasion, which I have quoted above, it may seem probable that if a writ of error had been ever heard before them, they would have leaned to the doctrine of Holt, unless indeed withheld by the reflection that a similar principle might easily be extended to themselves *.

* State Trials, xiv. 849.

It does not appear that any commitment for breach of privilege was disputed until the year 1751, when Mr. Alexander Murray, of whom mention has been made, caused himself to be brought before the court of King's Bench on a habeas corpus. But the judges were unanimous in refusing to discharge him. "The house of commons," said Mr. Justice Wright, "is a high court, and it is agreed on all hands that they have power to judge of their own privileges; it need not appear to us what the contempt is for; if it did appear, we could not judge thereof."— "This court," said Mr. Justice Denison, "has no jurisdiction in the present case. We granted the habeas corpus, not knowing what the commitment was; but now it appears to be for a contempt of the privileges of the house of commons. What the privileges of either house are we do not know; nor need they tell us what the contempt was, because we cannot judge of it; for I must call this court inferior to the commons with respect to judging of their privileges, and contempts against them."— Mr. Justice Foster agreed with the two others, that the house could commit for a contempt, which, he said, Holt had never denied in such a case as this before them *. It would be unnecessary to produce later cases which have occurred since the reign of George II., and elicited still stronger expressions from the judges of their incapacity to take cognizance of what may be done by the houses of parliament.

Notwithstanding such imposing authorities, there have not been wanting some who have thought that the doctrine of uncontrollable privilege is both eminently dangerous in a free country, and repugnant to the analogy of our constitution. The manly language of lord Holt has seemed to rest on better principles of public utility, and even perhaps of positive law †. It is

* State Trials, viii. 30.

† This is very elaborately and dispassionately argued by Mr. Hargrave in his Juridical Arguments, above cited; also vol. ii. p. 183. "I understand it," he says, "to be clearly part of the law and custom of parliament that each house of parliament may inquire into and imprison for breaches

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

not, however, to be inferred that the right of either house of parliament to commit persons, even not of their own body, to prison, for contempts or breaches of privilege, ought to be called in question. In some cases this authority is as beneficial, and even indispensable, as it is ancient and established. Nor do I by any means pretend, that if the warrant of commitment merely recites the party to have been guilty of a contempt or breach of privilege, the truth of such allegation could be examined upon a return to a writ of habeas corpus, any more than in an ordinary case of felony. Whatever injustice may thus be done cannot have redress by any legal means; because the house of commons (or the lords, as it may be) are the fit judges of the fact, and must be presumed to have determined it according to right. But it is a more doubtful question whether, if they should pronounce an offence to be a breach of privilege, as in the case of the Aylesbury men, which a court of justice should perceive to be clearly none, or if they should commit a man on a charge of misdemeanour, and for no breach of privilege at all, as in the case of Mist the printer, such excesses of jurisdiction might not legally be restrained by the judges. If the resolutions of the lords in the business of Ashby and White are constitutional and true, neither house of parliament can create to itself any new privilege: a proposition surely so consonant to the rules of English law, which require prescription or statute as the basis for every right, that few will dispute it; and it must be still less lawful to exercise a jurisdiction over misdemeanours, by committing a party who would regularly be only held to bail on such a charge. Of

of privilege." But this he thinks to be limited by law, and after allowing it clearly in cases of obstruction, arrest, assault, &c. on members, admits also that "the judicative power as to writing, speaking, or publishing of gross reflections upon the whole parliament or upon either house, though perhaps originally questionable, seems now of too long a standing and of too much frequency in practice to be well counteracted." But after mentioning the opinions of the judges in Crosby's case, Mr. H. observes: "I am myself far from being convinced that commitment for contempts by a house of parliament, or by the highest court of judicature in Westminster Hall, either ought to be, or are thus wholly privileged from all examination and appeal."

this I am very certain, that if Mist, in the year 1721, had applied for his discharge on a habeas corpus, it would have been far more difficult to have opposed it on the score of precedent or of constitutional right, than it was for the attorney-general of Charles I., nearly one hundred years before, to resist the famous arguments of Selden and Littleton, in the case of the Buckinghamshire gentlemen committed by the council. If a few scattered acts of power can make such precedents as a court of justice must take as its rule, I am sure the decision, neither in this case, nor in that of ship-money, was as unconstitutional as we usually suppose: it was by dwelling on all authorities in favour of liberty, and by setting aside those which made against it, that our ancestors overthrew the claims of unbounded prerogative. Nor is this parallel less striking when we look at the tone of implicit obedience, respect, and confidence with which the judges of the eighteenth century have spoken of the houses of parliament, as if their sphere were too low for the cognizance of such a transcendent authority *. The same language, almost to the words, was heard from the lips of the Hydes and Berkeleys in the preceding age, in reference to the king and to the privy council. But as, when the spirit of the government was almost wholly monarchical, so since it has turned chiefly to an aristocracy, the courts of justice have been swayed towards the predominant influence; not, in general, by any undue motives, but because it is natural for them to support power, to shun offence, and to shelter themselves behind precedent. They have also sometimes had in

* Mr. Justice Gould, in Crosby's case, as reported by Wilson, observes: "It is true this court did, in the instance alluded to by the counsel at the bar [Wilkes's case, 2 Wilson, 151], determine upon the privilege of parliament in the case of a libel; but then that privilege was promulged and known; it existed in records and law-books, and was allowed by parliament itself. But *even in that case we now know that we were mistaken; for the house of commons have since determined, that privilege does not extend to matters of libel.*" It appears, therefore, that Mr. Justice Gould thought a declaration of the house of commons was better authority than a decision of the court of Common Pleas, as to a privilege which, as he says, existed in records and law-books.

view the analogy of parliamentary commitments to their own power of attachment for contempt, which they hold to be equally uncontrollable; a doctrine by no means so dangerous to the subjects' liberty, but liable also to no trifling objections *.

The consequences of this utter irresponsibility in each of the two houses will appear still more serious, when we advert to the unlimited power of punishment which it draws with it. The commons, indeed, do not pretend to imprison beyond the session: but the lords have imposed fines and definite imprisonment, and attempts to resist these have been unsuccessful †. If the matter is to rest upon precedent, or upon what overrides precedent itself, the absolute failure of jurisdiction in the ordinary courts, there seems nothing (decency and discretion excepted) to prevent their repeating the sentences of James I.'s reign, whipping, branding, hard labour for life. Nay, they might order the usher of the black rod to take a man from their bar, and hang him up in the lobby. Such things would not be done, and, being done, would not be endured; but it is much that any sworn ministers of the law should, even by indefinite language, have countenanced the legal possibility of tyrannous power in England. The temper of government itself, in modern times, has generally been mild, and this is probably the best ground of confidence in the discretion of parliament; but popular, that is, numerous bodies, are always prone to excess, both from the reciprocal influences of their passions, and the consciousness of irresponsibility; for which reasons a democracy, that is, the absolute government of the majority, is in general the most tyrannical of any. Public opinion,

* "I am far from subscribing to all the latitude of the doctrine of attachments for contempts of the king's courts of Westminster, especially the King's Bench, as it is sometimes stated, and it has been sometimes practised." Hargrave, ii. 213.

"The principle upon which attachments issue for libels on courts is of a more enlarged and important nature: it is *to keep a blaze of glory around them*, and to deter people from attempting to render them contemptible in the eyes of the people." Wilmot's Opinions and Judgments, p. 270. Yet the king, who seems as much entitled to this blaze of glory as his judges, is driven to the verdict of a jury before the most libellous insult on him can be punished.

† Hargrave, ubi supra.

it is true, in this country, imposes a considerable restraint; yet this check is somewhat less powerful in that branch of the legislature which has gone the farthest in chastising breaches of privilege. I would not be understood, however, to point at any more recent discussions on this subject; were it not, indeed, beyond the limits prescribed to me, it might be shown that the house of commons, in asserting its jurisdiction, has receded from much of the arbitrary power which it once arrogated, and which some have been disposed to bestow upon it.

IV. It is commonly and justly said, that civil liberty is not only consistent with, but in its terms implies, the restrictive limitations of natural liberty which are imposed by law. But as these are not the less real limitations of liberty, it can hardly be maintained that the subject's condition is not impaired by very numerous restraints upon his will, even without reference to their expediency. The price may be well paid; but it is still a price that it costs some sacrifice to pay. Our statutes have been growing in bulk and multiplicity with the regular session of parliament, and with the new system of government; all abounding with prohibitions and penalties, which every man is presumed to know, but which no man, the judges themselves included, can really know with much exactness. We literally walk amidst the snares and pitfalls of the law. Tl very doctrine of the more rigid casuists, that men are bound in conscience to respect all the institutions of their country, has become impracticable through their complexity and inconvenience; and we are content to shift off their penalties in the *mala prohibita* with as little scruple as some feel in risking those of graver offences. But what more peculiarly belongs to the present subject is the systematic encroachment upon ancient constitutional principles, which has for a long time been made through new enactments proceeding from the crown, chiefly in respect to the revenue *. These may

* This effect of continual new statutes is well pointed out in a speech ascribed to sir William Wyndham in 1734. "The learned gentleman spoke (he says) of

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

be traced indeed in the statute-book, at least as high as the restoration, and really began in the arbitrary times of revolution which preceded it. They have, however, been gradually extended along with the public burthens, and as the severity of these has prompted fresh artifices of evasion. It would be curious, but not within the scope of this work, to analyze our immense fiscal law, and to trace the history of its innovations. These consist partly in taking away the cognizance of offences against the revenue from juries, whose partiality in such cases there was in truth much reason to apprehend, and vesting it either in commissioners of the revenue itself, or in magistrates; partly in anomalous and somewhat arbitrary powers with regard to the collection; partly in deviations from the established rules of pleading and evidence, by throwing on the accused party in fiscal causes the burthen of proving his innocence, or by superseding the necessity of rigorous proof as to matters wherein it is ordinarily required; partly in shielding the officers of the crown, as far as possible, from their responsibility for illegal actions, by permitting special circumstances of justification to be given in evidence without being pleaded, or by throwing impediments of various kinds in the way of the prosecutor, or by subjecting him to unusual costs in the event of defeat.

the prerogative of the crown, and asked us if it had lately been extended beyond the bounds prescribed to it by law. Sir, I will not say that there have been lately any attempts to extend it beyond the bounds prescribed by law; but I will say, that these bounds have been of late so vastly enlarged, that there seems to be no great occasion for any such attempt. What are the many penal laws made within these forty years, but so many extensions of the prerogative of the crown, and as many diminutions of the liberty of the subject? And whatever the necessity was that brought us into the enacting of such laws, it was a fatal necessity; it has greatly added to the power of the crown, and particular care ought to be taken not to throw any more weight into that scale." Parl. Hist. ix. 463.

Among the modern statutes which have strengthened the hands of the executive power, we should mention the riot act, 1 Geo. I. stat. 2. c. 5. whereby all persons tumultuously assembled to the disturbance of the public peace, and not dispersing within one hour after proclamation made by a single magistrate, are made guilty of a capital felony. I am by no means controverting the expediency of this law; but, especially when combined with the prompt aid of a military force, it is surely a compensation for much that may seem to have been thrown into the popular scale.

These restraints upon personal liberty, and what is worse, these endeavours, as they seem, to prevent the fair administration of justice between the crown and the subject, have in general, more especially in modern times, excited little regard as they have passed through the houses of parliament. A sad necessity has over-ruled the maxims of ancient law; nor is it my business to censure our fiscal code, but to point out that it is to be counted as a set-off against the advantages of the revolution, and has in fact diminished the freedom and justice which we claim for our polity. And that its provisions have sometimes gone so far as to give alarm to not very susceptible minds may be shown from a remarkable debate in the year 1737. A bill having been brought in by the ministers to prevent smuggling, which contained some unusual clauses, it was strongly opposed, among other peers, by lord chancellor Talbot, himself, of course, in the cabinet, and by lord Hardwicke, then chief-justice, a regularly bred crown-lawyer, and in his whole life disposed to hold very high the authority of government. They objected to a clause subjecting any three persons, travelling with arms, to the penalty of transportation, on proof by two witnesses, that their intention was to assist in the clandestine landing, or carrying away prohibited or uncustomed goods. "We have in our laws," said one of the opposing lords, "no such thing as a crime by implication, nor can a malicious intention ever be proved by witnesses. Facts only are admitted to be proved, and from those facts the judge and jury are to determine with what intention they were committed; but no judge or jury can ever, by our laws, suppose, much less determine that an action, in itself innocent or indifferent, was attended with a criminal and malicious intention. Another security for our liberties is, that no subject can be imprisoned unless some felonious and high crime be sworn against him. This, with respect to private men, is the very foundation stone of all our liberties, and if we remove it, if we but knock off

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

a corner, we may probably overturn the whole fabric. A third guard for our liberties is that right which every subject has, not only to provide himself with arms proper for his defence, but to accustom himself to the use of those arms, and to travel with them whenever he has a mind." But the clause in question, it was contended, was repugnant to all the maxims of free government. No presumption of a crime could be drawn from the mere wearing of arms, an act not only innocent, but highly commendable, and therefore the admitting of witnesses to prove that any of these men were armed, in order to assist in smuggling, would be the admitting of witnesses to prove an intention, which was inconsistent with the whole tenor of our laws*. They objected to another provision, subjecting a party against whom information should be given that he intended to assist in smuggling, to imprisonment without bail, though the offence itself were in its nature bailable; to another, which made informations for assault upon officers of the revenue triable in any county of England; and to a yet more startling protection thrown round the same favoured class, that the magistrates should be bound to admit them to bail on charges of killing or wounding any one in the execution of their duty. The bill itself was carried by no great majority; and the provisions subsist at this day, or perhaps have received a further extension.

It will thus appear to every man who takes a comprehensive view of our constitutional history, that the executive government, though shorn of its lustre, has not lost so much of its real efficacy by the consequences of the revolution as is often supposed; at least, that with a regular army to put down insurrection, and an influence sufficient to obtain fresh statutes of restriction, if such should ever be deemed necessary, it is not exposed, in the ordinary course of affairs, to any serious hazard. But we must

* 9 Geo. II. c. 35, sect. 10, 13. Parl. Hist. ix. 1229. I quote this as I find it; but probably the expressions are not quite correct; for the reasoning is not so.

here distinguish the executive government, using that word in its largest sense, from the crown itself, or the personal authority of the sovereign. This is a matter of rather delicate inquiry, but too material to be passed by.

The real power of the prince, in the most despotic monarchy, must have its limits from nature, and bear some proportion to his courage, his activity, and his intellect. The tyrants of the East become puppets or slaves of their vizirs; or it turns to a game of cunning, wherein the winner is he who shall succeed in tying the bow-string round the other's neck. After some ages of feeble monarchs, the titular royalty is found wholly separated from the power of command, and glides on to posterity in its languid channel, till some usurper or conqueror stops up the stream for ever. In the civilized kingdoms of Europe, those very institutions which secure the permanence of royal families, and afford them a guarantee against manifest subjection to a minister, take generally out of the hands of the sovereign the practical government of his people. Unless his capacities are above the level of ordinary kings, he must repose on the wisdom and diligence of the statesmen he employs, with the sacrifice, perhaps, of his own prepossessions in policy, and against the bent of his personal affections. The power of a king of England is not to be compared with an ideal absoluteness, but with that which could be enjoyed in the actual state of society, by the same person in a less bounded monarchy.

The descendants of William the Conqueror on the English throne, down to the end of the seventeenth century, have been a good deal above the average in those qualities which enable or at least induce kings to take on themselves a large share of the public administration; as will appear by comparing their line with that of the house of Capet, or perhaps most others during an equal period. Without going farther back, we know that Henry VII., Henry VIII., Elizabeth, the four kings of the house of Stuart,

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

though not always with as much ability as diligence, were the master-movers of their own policy, not very susceptible of advice, and always sufficiently acquainted with the details of government to act without it. This was eminently the case also with William III., who was truly his own minister, and much better fitted for that office than those who served him. The king, according to our constitution, is supposed to be present in council, and was in fact usually, or very frequently, present, so long as the council remained as a deliberative body for matters of domestic and foreign policy. But when a junto or cabinet came to supersede that ancient and responsible body, the king himself ceased to preside, and received their advice separately, according to their respective functions of treasurer, secretary, or chancellor, or that of the whole cabinet through one of its leading members. This change, however, was gradual; for cabinet councils were sometimes held in the presence of William and Anne, to which other counsellors, not strictly of that select number, were occasionally summoned.

But on the accession of the house of Hanover, this personal superintendence of the sovereign necessarily came to an end. The fact is hardly credible, that George I. being incapable of speaking English, as sir Robert Walpole was of conversing in French, the monarch and his minister held discourse with each other in Latin *. It is impossible that, with so defective a means of communication (for Walpole cannot be supposed to have spoken readily a language very little familiar in this country), George could have obtained much insight into his domestic affairs, or been much acquainted with the characters of his subjects. We know, in truth, that he nearly abandoned the consideration of

* Coxe's Walpole, i. 296. H. Walpole's Works, iv. 476. The former however seems to rest on H. Walpole's verbal communication, whose want of accuracy, or veracity, or both, is so palpable, that no great stress can be laid on his testimony. I believe, however, that the fact of George I. and his minister conversing in Latin may be proved on other authority.

both, and trusted his ministers with the entire management of this kingdom, content to employ its great name for the promotion of his electoral interests. This continued in a less degree to be the case with his son, who, though better acquainted with the language and circumstances of Great Britain, and more jealous of his prerogative, was conscious of his incapacity to determine on matters of domestic government, and reserved almost his whole attention for the politics of Germany.

The broad distinctions of party contributed to weaken the real supremacy of the sovereign. It had been usual before the revolution, and in the two succeeding reigns, to select ministers individually at discretion; and though some might hold themselves at liberty to decline office, it was by no means deemed a point of honour and fidelity to do so. Hence men in the possession of high posts had no strong bond of union, and frequently took opposite sides on public measures of no light moment. The queen particularly was always loth to discard a servant on account of his vote in parliament; a conduct generous perhaps, but feeble, inconvenient, when carried to such excess, in our constitution, and in effect holding out a reward to ingratitude and treachery. But the whigs having come exclusively into office under the line of Hanover, which, as I have elsewhere observed, was inevitable, formed a sort of phalanx, which the crown was not always able to break, and which never could have been broken, but for that internal force of repulsion by which personal cupidity and ambition are ever tending to segregate the elements of factions. It became the point of honour among public men to fight uniformly under the same banner, though not perhaps for the same cause; if indeed there was any cause really fought for, but the advancement of a party. In this preference of certain denominations, or of certain leaders, to the real principles which ought to be the basis of political consistency, there was an evident deviation from the true standard of public virtue; but the ignominy attached to the dereliction of friends for the sake of emolument, though it

CHAP. XVI.

Anne, Geo. I., II.

was every day incurred, must have tended gradually to purify the general character of parliament. Meanwhile the crown lost all that party attachments gained; a truth indisputable on reflection, though while the crown and the party in power act in the same direction, the relative efficiency of the two forces is not immediately estimated. It was seen, however, very manifestly in the year 1746, when, after long bickering between the Pelhams and lord Granville, the king's favourite minister, the former, in conjunction with a majority of the cabinet, threw up their offices, and compelled the king, after an abortive effort at a new administration, to sacrifice his favourite, and replace those in power whom he could not exclude from it. The same took place in a later period of his reign, when after many struggles he submitted to the ascendancy of Mr. Pitt*.

* H. Walpole's Memoirs of the last Ten Years. Lord Waldegrave's Memoirs. In this well-written little book, which having been published, in the modern fashion, at a price disproportioned to its length, has not been sufficiently known, the character of George II. in reference to his constitutional position, is thus delicately drawn: "He has more knowledge of foreign affairs than most of his ministers, and has good general notions of the constitution, strength, and interest of this country; but being past thirty when the Hanover succession took place, and having since experienced the violence of party, the injustice of popular clamour, the corruption of parliaments, and the selfish motives of pretended patriots, it is not surprising that he should have contracted some prejudices in favour of those governments where the royal authority is under less restraint. Yet prudence has so far prevailed over these prejudices, that they have never influenced his conduct. On the contrary, many laws have been enacted in favour of public liberty; and in the course of a long reign there has not been a single attempt to extend the prerogative of the crown beyond its proper limits. He has as much personal bravery as any man, though his political courage seems somewhat problematical; however, it is a fault on the right side; for had he always been as firm and undaunted in the closet as he showed himself at Oudenarde and Dettingen, he might not have proved quite so good a king in this limited monarchy." P. 5. This was written in 1757.

The real tories, those I mean who adhered to the principles expressed by that name, thought the constitutional prerogative of the crown impaired by a conspiracy of its servants. Their notions are expressed in some Letters on the English Nation, published about 1756, under the name of Battista Angeloni, by Dr. Shebbeare, once a jacobite, and still so bitter an enemy of William III. and George I., that he stood in the pillory, not long afterwards, for a libel on those princes (among other things); on which Horace Walpole justly animadverts, as a stretch of the law by lord Mansfield destructive of all historical truth. Memoirs of the last Ten Years, ii. 328. Shebbeare however was afterwards pensioned, along with Johnson, by lord Bute, and at the time when these letters were written may possibly have been in the Leicester-house interest. Certain it is, that the self-interested cabal who belonged to that little court endeavoured too success-

It seems difficult for any king of England, however conscientiously observant of the lawful rights of his subjects, and of the limitations they impose on his prerogative, to rest always very content with this practical condition of the monarchy. The choice of his counsellors, the conduct of government are intrusted, he will be told, by the constitution to his sole pleasure. Yet both in the one and the other he finds a perpetual disposition to restrain his exercise of power; and though it is easy to demonstrate that the public good is far better promoted by the virtual control of parliament and the nation over the whole executive government, than by adhering to the letter of the constitution, it is not to be expected that the argument will be conclusive to a royal understanding. Hence he may be tempted to play rather a petty game, and endeavour to regain by intrigue and insincerity that power of acting by his own will, which he thinks unfairly wrested from him. A king of England, in the calculations of politics, is little more than one among the public men of the day; taller indeed, like Saul or Agamemnon, by the head and shoulders, and therefore with no slight advantages in the scramble; but not a match for the many, unless he can bring some dexterity to second his strength, and make the best of the self-interest and animosities of those with whom he has to deal. And of this there will generally be so much, that in the long run he will be found to succeed in the greater part of his desires. Thus George I. and George II., in whom the personal authority seems to have been at the lowest point it has ever reached, drew their ministers, not always willingly, into that course of continental politics which was supposed to serve the purposes of Hanover far better than of England. It is well known that the Walpoles and the Pelhams condemned in private this excessive predilection of their masters for their native

fully to persuade its chief and her son, that the crown was reduced to a state of vassalage, from which it ought to be emancipated; and the government of the duke of Newcastle, as strong in party-connexion as it was contemptible in ability and reputation, afforded them no bad argument. The consequences are well known, but do not enter into the plan of this work.

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

country, which alone could endanger their English throne*. Yet after the two latter brothers had inveighed against lord Granville, and driven him out of power for seconding the king's pertinacity in continuing the war of 1743, they went on themselves in the same track for at least two years, to the imminent hazard of losing for ever the Low Countries and Holland, if the French government, so indiscriminately charged with ambition, had not displayed extraordinary moderation at the treaty of Aix la Chapelle. The twelve years that ensued gave more abundant proofs of the submissiveness with which the schemes of George II. for the good of Hanover were received by his ministers, though not by his people; but the most striking instance of all is the

* Many proofs of this occur in the correspondence published by Mr. Coxe. Thus Horace Walpole writing to his brother sir Robert, in 1739, says: "King William had no other object but the liberties and balance of Europe; but, good God! what is the case now? I will tell you in confidence; little, low, partial electoral notions are able to stop or confound the best conducted project for the public." Memoirs of Sir R. Walpole, iii. 535. The Walpoles had, some years before, disapproved the policy of lord Townshend on account of his favouring the king's Hanoverian prejudices. Id. i. 334. And in the preceding reign both these whig leaders were extremely disgusted with the Germanism and continual absence of George I., Id. ii. 116. 297; though first Townshend, and afterward Walpole, according to the necessity, or supposed necessity, which controls statesmen, (that is, the fear of losing their places), became in appearance the passive instruments of royal pleasure.

It is now however known, that George II. had been induced by Walpole to come into a scheme, by which Hanover, after his decease, was to be separated from England. It stands on the indisputable authority of speaker Onslow. "A little while before sir Robert Walpole's fall, (and as a popular act to save himself, for he went very unwillingly out of his offices and power) he took me one day aside, and said, What will you say, speaker, if this hand of mine shall bring a message from the king to the house of commons, declaring his consent to having any of his family, after his death, to be made, by act of parliament, incapable of inheriting and enjoying the crown, and possessing the electoral dominions at the same time? My answer was, Sir, it will be as a message from heaven. He replied, It will be done. But it was not done; and I have good reason to believe, it would have been opposed, and rejected at that time, because it came from him, and by the means of those who had always been most clamorous for it; and thus perhaps the opportunity was lost: when will it come again? It was said that the prince at that juncture would have consented to it, if he could have had the credit and popularity of the measure, and that some of his friends were to have moved it in parliament, but that the design at St. James's prevented it. Notwithstanding all this, I have had some thoughts that neither court ever really intended the thing itself; but that it came on and went off, by a jealousy of each other in it, and that both were equally pleased that it did so, from an equal fondness (very natural) for their own native country." Notes on Burnet (iv. 490, Oxf. edit.) This story has been told before, but not in such a manner as to preclude doubt of its authenticity.

abandonment by Mr. Pitt himself of all his former professions in pouring troops into Germany. I do not inquire whether a sense of national honour might not render some of these measures justifiable, though none of them were advantageous; but it is certain that the strong bent of the king's partiality forced them on against the repugnance of most statesmen, as well as of the great majority in parliament and out of it.

Comparatively, however, with the state of prerogative before the revolution, we can hardly dispute that there has been a systematic diminution of the reigning prince's control, which, though it may be compensated or concealed in ordinary times by the general influence of the executive administration, is of material importance in a constitutional light. Independently of other consequences which might be pointed out as probable or contingent, it affords a real security against endeavours by the crown to subvert or essentially impair the other parts of our government. For though a king may believe himself and his posterity to be interested in obtaining arbitrary power, it is far less likely that a minister should desire to do so—I mean arbitrary, not in relation to temporary or partial abridgements of the subject's liberty, but to such projects as Charles I. and James II. attempted to execute. What indeed might be effected by a king, at once able, active, popular, and ambitious, should such ever unfortunately appear in this country, it is not easy to predict; certainly his reign would be dangerous, on one side or other, to the present balance of the constitution. But against this contingent evil, or the far more probable encroachments of ministers, which, though not going the full length of despotic power, might slowly undermine and contract the rights of the people, no positive statutes can be devised so effectual, as the vigilance of the people themselves and their increased means of knowing and estimating the measures of their government.

The publication of regular newspapers, partly designed for the communication of intelligence, partly for the discussion of

CHAP. XVI.

Anne, Geo. I., II.

political topics, may be referred, upon the whole, to the reign of Anne, when they obtained great circulation, and became the accredited organs of different factions. The tory ministers, towards the close of that reign, were annoyed at the vivacity of the press, both in periodical and other writings, which led to a stamp-duty, intended chiefly to diminish their number, and was nearly producing more pernicious restrictions, such as renewing the licensing-act, or compelling authors to acknowledge their names *. These, however, did not take place, and the government more honourably coped with their adversaries in the same warfare; nor with Swift and Bolingbroke on their side could they require, except indeed through the badness of their cause, any aid from the arm of power †.

In a single hour, these two great masters of language were changed from advocates of the crown to tribunes of the people; both more distinguished as writers in this altered scene of their fortunes, and certainly among the first political combatants with the weapons of the press whom the world has ever known. Bolingbroke's influence was of course greater in England, and, with all the signal faults of his public character, with all the factiousness which dictated most of his writings and the indefinite declamation or shallow reasoning which they frequently display, they have merits not always sufficiently acknowledged. He seems first to have made the tories reject their old tenets of exalted prerogative and hereditary right, and scorn the high-church theories which they had maintained under William and Anne. His Dissertation on Parties, and Letters on the History of England, are

* A bill was brought in for this purpose in 1712, which Swift, in his History of the Last Four Years, who never printed any thing with his name, naturally blames. It miscarried probably on account of this provision. Parl. Hist. vi. 1141. But the queen, on opening the session, in April, 1713, recommended some new law to check the licentiousness of the press. Id. 1173. Nothing however was done in consequence.

† Bolingbroke's letter to the Examiner, in 1710, excited so much attention, that it was answered by lord Cowper, then chancellor, in a letter to the Tatler. Somers Tracts, xiii. 75; where sir Walter Scott justly observes, that the fact of two such statesmen becoming the correspondents of periodical publications shows the influence they must have acquired over the public mind.

in fact written on whig principles, (if I know what is meant by that name), in their general tendency, however a politician, who had always some particular end in view, may have fallen into several inconsistencies. The same character is due to the Craftsman, and to most of the temporary pamphlets directed against sir Robert Walpole. They teemed, it is true, with exaggerated declamations on the side of liberty; but that was the side they took; it was to generous prejudices they appealed; nor did they ever advert to the times before the revolution, but with contempt or abhorrence. Libels there were indeed of a different class, proceeding from the jacobite school; but these obtained little regard; the jacobites themselves, or such as affected to be so, having more frequently espoused that cause from a sense of dissatisfaction with the conduct of the reigning family, than from much regard to the pretensions of the other. Upon the whole matter it must be evident to every person who is at all conversant with the publications of George II.'s reign, with the poems, the novels, the essays, and almost all the literature of the time, that what are called the popular or liberal doctrines of government were decidedly prevalent. The supporters themselves of the Walpole and Pelham administrations, though professedly whigs, and tenacious of revolution principles, made complaints, both in parliament and in pamphlets, of the democratical spirit, the insubordination to authority, the tendency to republican sentiments, which they alleged to have gained ground among the people. It is certain that the tone of popular opinion gave some countenance to these assertions, though much exaggerated to create alarm in the aristocratical classes, and furnish arguments against redress of abuses.

The two houses of parliament are supposed to deliberate with closed doors. It is always competent for any one member to insist that strangers be excluded; not on any special ground, but by merely enforcing the standing order for that purpose. It has been several times resolved, that it is a high breach of privilege

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I., II.

to publish any speeches or proceedings of the commons, though they have since directed their own votes and resolutions to be printed. Many persons have been punished by commitment for this offence; and it is still highly irregular, in any debate, to allude to the reports in newspapers, except for the purpose of animadverting on the breach of privilege *. Notwithstanding this pretended strictness, notices of the more interesting discussions were frequently made public; and entire speeches were sometimes circulated by those who had sought popularity in delivering them. After the accession of George I. we find a pretty regular account of debates in an annual publication, Boyer's Historical Register, which was continued to the year 1737. They were afterwards published monthly, and much more at length, in the London and the Gentleman's Magazines; the latter, as is well-known, improved by the pen of Johnson, yet not so as to lose by any means the leading scope of the arguments. It follows of course that the restriction upon the presence of strangers had been almost entirely dispensed with. A transparent veil was thrown over this innovation by disguising the names of the speakers, or more commonly by printing only initial and final letters. This ridiculous affectation of concealment was extended to many other words in political writings, and had not wholly ceased in the American war.

* It was resolved, nem. con., Feb. 26, 1729, That it is an indignity to, and a breach of the privilege of this house, for any person to presume to give, in written or printed newspapers, any account or minutes of the debates, or other proceedings of this house or of any committee thereof; and that upon discovery of the authors, &c. this house will proceed against the offenders with the utmost severity. Parl. Hist. viii. 683. There are former resolutions to the same effect. The speaker having himself brought the subject under consideration some years afterwards, in 1738, the resolution was repeated in nearly the same words; but after a debate, wherein, though no one undertook to defend the practice, the danger of impairing the liberty of the press was more insisted upon than would formerly have been usual; and sir Robert Walpole took credit to himself, justly enough, for respecting it more than his predecessors. Id. x. 800. Coxe's Walpole, i. 572. Edward Cave, the well-known editor of the Gentleman's Magazine, and the publisher of another magazine, was brought to the bar, April 30, 1747, for publishing the house's debates, when the former denied that he retained any person in pay to make the speeches, and after expressing his contrition was discharged on payment of fees. Id. xiv. 57.

It is almost impossible to over-rate the value of this regular publication of proceedings in parliament, carried as it has been in our own time to nearly as great copiousness and accuracy as is probably attainable. It tends manifestly and powerfully to keep within bounds the supineness and negligence, the partiality and corruption, to which every parliament, either from the nature of its composition or the frailty of mankind, must more or less be liable. Perhaps the constitution would not have stood so long, or rather would have stood like an useless and untenanted mansion, if this unlawful means had not kept up a perpetual intercourse, a reciprocity of influence between the parliament and the people. A stream of fresh air, boisterous perhaps sometimes as the winds of the north, yet as healthy and invigorating, flows in to renovate the stagnant atmosphere, and to prevent that *malaria* which self-interest and oligarchical exclusiveness are always tending to generate. Nor has its importance been less perceptible in affording the means of vindicating the measures of government, and securing to them, when just and reasonable, the approbation of the majority among the middle ranks, whose weight in the scale has been gradually enhanced during the last and present centuries.

This augmentation of the democratical influence, using that term as applied to the commercial and industrious classes in contradistinction to the territorial aristocracy, was the slow but certain effect of accumulated wealth and diffused knowledge, acting, however, on the traditional notions of freedom and equality which had ever prevailed in the English people. The nation, exhausted by the long wars of William and Anne, recovered strength in thirty years of peace that ensued, and in that period, especially under the prudent rule of Walpole, the seeds of our commercial greatness were gradually ripened. It was evidently the most prosperous season that England had ever experienced; and the progression, though slow, being uniform, the reign perhaps of George II. might not disadvantageously be compared, for the real happiness of the community, with that more brilliant but uncertain

CHAP. XVI. Anne, Geo. I. II.

and oscillatory condition which has ensued. A distinguished writer has observed that the labourer's wages have never, at least for many ages, commanded so large a portion of subsistence, as in this part of the eighteenth century *. The public debt, though it excited alarms from its magnitude, at which we are now accustomed to smile, and though too little care was taken for redeeming it, did not press very heavily on the nation, as the low rate of interest evinces, the government securities at three per cent. having generally stood above par. In the war of 1743, which from the selfish practice of relying wholly on loans did not much retard the immediate advance of the country, and still more after the peace of Aix la Chapelle, a striking increase of wealth became perceptible †. This was shown in one circumstance directly affecting the character of the constitution. The smaller boroughs, which had been from the earliest time under the command of neighbouring peers and gentlemen, or sometimes of the crown, were attempted by rich capitalists, with no other connexion or recommendation than one which is generally sufficient. This appears to have been first observed in the general election of 1747 and 1754 ‡; though the prevalence of bribery in a less degree is attested by the statute-book, and the journals of parliament from the revolution, it seems not to have broken down all flood-gates till the end of the reign of George II. or rather perhaps the first part of the next. The sale at least of seats in parliament, like any other transferable property, is never mentioned in any book that I remember to have seen of an earlier date than 1760. We may dispense therefore with the inquiry in what manner this extraordinary traffic has affected the constitution, observing only that its influence must have tended to counteract that of the ter-

* Malthus, Principles of Political Economy, (1820), p. 279.

† Macpherson, (or Anderson), Hist. of Commerce. Chalmers's Estimate of Strength of Great Britain. Sinclair's Hist. of Revenue, *cum multis aliis.*

‡ Tindal, apud Parl. Hist. xiv. 66. I have read the same in other books, but know not at present where to search for the passages.

ritorial aristocracy, which is still sufficiently predominant. The country gentlemen, who claimed to themselves a character of more independence and patriotism than could be found in any other class, had long endeavoured to protect their ascendancy by excluding the rest of the community from parliament. This was the principle of the bill, which, after being frequently attempted, passed into a law during the tory administration of Anne, requiring every member of the commons, except those for the universities, to possess, as a qualification for his seat, a landed estate, above all incumbrances, of 300*l.* a year*. By a later act of George II., with which it was thought expedient, by the government of the day, to gratify the landed interest, this property must be stated on oath by every member on taking his seat, and, if required, at his election †. The law is, however, notoriously evaded; and though much might be urged in favour of rendering a competent income the condition of eligibility, few would be found at present to maintain that the freehold qualification is not required both unconstitutionally, according to the ancient theory of representation, and absurdly, according to the present state of property in England. But I am again admonished, as frequently I have been in writing these last pages, to break off from subjects that might carry me too far away from the business of this history; and content with compiling and selecting the records of the past, to shun the difficult and ambitious office of judging the present, or of speculating upon the future.

* 9 Anne, c. 5. A bill for this purpose had passed the commons in 1696; the city of London and several other places petitioning against it. Journals, Nov. 21, &c. The house refused to let some of these petitions be read; I suppose on the ground that they related to a matter of general policy. These towns however had a very fair pretext for alleging that they were interested; and in fact a rider was added to the bill, that any merchant might serve for a place where he should be himself a voter, on making oath that he was worth 5000*l.* Id. Dec. 19.

† 33 G. II. c. 20.

CHAPTER XVII.

ON THE CONSTITUTION OF SCOTLAND.

Early State of Scotland—Introduction of Feudal System—Scots Parliament—Power of the Aristocracy—Royal Influence in Parliament—Judicial Power—Court of Session—Reformation—Power of the Presbyterian Clergy—Their Attempts at Independence on the State—Andrew Melvil—Success of James VI. in restraining them—Establishment of Episcopacy—Innovations of Charles I.—Arbitrary Government—Civil War—Tyrannical Government of Charles II.—Reign of James VII.—Revolution and Establishment of Presbytery—Reign of William III.—Act of Security—Union—Gradual Decline of Jacobitism.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

It is not very profitable to inquire into the constitutional antiquities of a country which furnishes no authentic historian, nor laws, nor charters, to guide our research, as is the case with Scotland before the twelfth century. The latest and most laborious of her antiquaries appears to have proved that her institutions were wholly Celtic until that era, and greatly similar to those of Ireland*. A total, though probably gradual, change must therefore have taken place in the next age, brought about by means which have not been satisfactorily explained. The crown became strictly hereditary, the governors of districts took the appellation of earls, the whole kingdom was subjected to a feudal tenure, the Anglo-Norman laws, tribunals, local and municipal magistracies, were introduced as far as the royal influence could prevail; above all, a surprising number of families, chiefly Norman, but some of Saxon or Flemish descent, settled upon estates

* Chalmers's Caledonia, vol. i. passim.

granted by the kings of Scotland, and became the founders of its aristocracy. It was, as truly as some time afterwards in Ireland, the encroachment of a Gothic and feudal polity upon the inferior civilization of the Celts, though accomplished with far less resistance, and not quite so slowly. Yet the Highland tribes long adhered to their ancient usages, nor did the laws of English origin obtain in some other districts two or three centuries after their establishment on both sides of the Forth *.

It became almost a necessary consequence from this adoption of the feudal system, and assimilation to the English institutions, that the kings of Scotland would have their general council or parliament upon nearly the same model as that of the Anglo-Norman sovereigns they so studiously imitated. If the statutes ascribed to William the Lion, contemporary with our Henry II., are genuine, they were enacted, as we should expect to find, with the concurrence of the bishops, abbots, barons, and other good men (probi homines) of the land; meaning doubtless the inferior tenants in capite †. These laws indeed are questionable, and there is a great want of unequivocal records till almost the end of the thirteenth century. The representatives of boroughs are first distinctly mentioned in 1326, under Robert I.; though some have been of opinion that vestiges of their appearance in parliament may be traced higher; but they are not enumerated among the classes present in one held in 1315 ‡. In the ensuing reign of David II., the three estates of the realm are expressly mentioned as the legislative advisers of the crown §.

A Scots parliament resembled an English one in the mode of convocation, in the ranks that composed it, in the enacting powers of the king, and the necessary consent of the three

* Id. 500, et post. Dalrymple's Annals of Scotland, 28. 30, &c.

† Chalmers, 741. Wight's Law of Election in Scotland, 28.

‡ Id. 25. Dalrymple's Annals, i. 139. 235. 283; ii. 55. 116. Chalmers, 743. Wight thinks they might perhaps only have had a voice in the imposition of taxes.

§ Dalrymple, ii. 241. Wight, 26.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

estates; but differed in several very important respects. No freeholders, except tenants in capite, had ever any right of suffrage; which may, not improbably, have been in some measure owing to the want of that Anglo-Saxon institution, the county-court. These feudal tenants of the crown came in person to parliament, as they did in England till the reign of Henry III., and sat together with the prelates and barons in one chamber. A prince arose in Scotland in the first part of the fifteenth century, resembling the English Justinian in his politic regard to strengthening his own prerogative and to maintaining public order. It was enacted by a law of James I., in 1427, that the smaller barons and free tenants "need not to come to parliament, so that of every sheriffdom there be sent two or more wise men, chosen at the head court," to represent the rest. These were to elect a speaker, through whom they were to communicate with the king and other estates *. This was evidently designed as an assimilation to the English house of commons. But the statute not being imperative, no regard was paid to this permission, and it is not till 1587 that we find the representation of the Scots counties finally established by law; though one important object of James's policy was never attained, the different estates of parliament having always voted promiscuously, as the spiritual and temporal lords in England.

But no distinction between the national councils of the two kingdoms was more essential than what seems to have been introduced into the Scots parliament under David II. In the year 1367 a parliament having met at Scone, a committee was chosen by the three estates, who seem to have had full powers delegated to them, the others returning home on account of the advanced season. The same was done in one held next year, without any assigned pretext. But in 1369 this committee was chosen only to prepare all matters determinable in parliament, or fit to be

* Statutes of Scotland, 127. Pinkerton's History of Scotland, i. 120. Wight, 30.

therein treated, for the decision of the three estates on the last day but one of the session *. The former scheme appeared possibly, even to those careless and unwilling legislators, too complete an abandonment of their function. But even modified as it was in 1369, it tended to devolve the whole business of parliament on this elective committee, subsequently known by the appellation of lords of the articles. It came at last to be the general practice, though some exceptions to this rule may be found, that nothing was laid before parliament without their previous recommendation; and there seems reason to think, that in the first parliament of James I., in 1424, such full powers were delegated to the committee as had been granted before in 1367 and 1368, and that the three estates never met again to sanction their resolutions †. The preparatory committee is not uniformly mentioned in the preamble of statutes made during the reign of this prince and his two next successors; but there may be no reason to infer from thence that it was not appointed. From the reign of James IV. the lords of articles are regularly named in the records of every parliament ‡.

It is said that a Scots parliament, about the middle of the fifteenth century, consisted of near one hundred and ninety persons §. We do not find, however, that more than half this number usually attended. A list of those present in 1472 gives but fourteen bishops and abbots, twenty-two earls and barons, thirty-four lairds or lesser tenants in capite, and eight deputies of boroughs ‖. The royal boroughs entitled to be represented in parliament were above thirty; but it was a common usage to choose the deputies of other towns as their proxies ¶. The great object with them, as well as with the lesser barons, was to save the cost and trouble of attendance. It appears indeed that they

* Dalrymple, ii. 261. Stuart on Public Law of Scotland, 344. Robertson's History of Scotland, i. 84.

† Wight, 62, 65.

‡ Id. 69.

§ Pinkerton, i. 373.

‖ Id. 360.

¶ Id. 372.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

formed rather an insignificant portion of the legislative body. They are not named as consenting parties in several of the statutes of James III.; and it seems that on some occasions they had not been summoned to parliament, for an act was passed in 1504, "that the commissaries and headsmen of the burghs be warned when taxes or constitutions are given, to have their advice therein, as one of the three estates of the realm *." This, however, is an express recognition of their right, though it might have been set aside by an irregular exercise of power.

It was a natural result from the constitution of a Scots parliament, together with the general state of society in that kingdom, that its efforts were almost uniformly directed to augment and invigorate the royal authority. Their statutes afford a remarkable contrast to those of England in the absence of provisions against the exorbitancies of prerogative †. Robertson has observed that the kings of Scotland, from the time at least of James I., acted upon a steady system of repressing the aristocracy; and though this has been called too refined a supposition, and attempts have been made to explain otherwise their conduct, it seems strange to deny the operation of a motive so

* Pinkerton, ii. 53.

† In a statute of James II. (1440) "the three estates conclude *that it is speedful* that our sovereign lord the king ride throughout the realm incontinent as shall be seen to the council where any rebellion, slaughter, burning, robbery, outrage, or theft has happened," &c. Statutes of Scotland, ii. 32. Pinkerton (i. 192), leaving out the words in italics, has argued on false premises. "In this singular decree we find the legislative body regarding the king in the modern light of a chief magistrate, bound equally with the meanest subject to obedience to the laws," &c. It is evident that the estates spoke in this instance as counsellors, not as legislators. This is merely an oversight of a very well-informed historian, who is by no means in the trammels of any political theory.

A remarkable expression, however, is found in a statute of the same king, in 1450; which enacts that any man rising in war against the king, or receiving such as have committed treason, or holding houses against the king, or assaulting castles or places where the king's power shall happen to be, *without the consent of the three estates*, shall be punished as a traitor. Pinkerton, i. 213. I am inclined to think that the legislators had in view the possible recurrence of what had very lately happened, that an ambitious cabal might get the king's person into their power. The peculiar circumstances of Scotland are to be taken into account when we consider these statutes, which are not to be looked at as mere insulated texts.

natural, and so readily to be inferred from their measures. The causes so well pointed out by this historian, and some that might be added, the defensible nature of great part of the country, the extensive possessions of some powerful families, the influence of feudal tenure and Celtic clanship, the hereditary jurisdictions, hardly controlled, even in theory, by the supreme tribunals of the crown, the custom of entering into bonds of association for mutual defence, the frequent minorities of the reigning princes, the necessary abandonment of any strict regard to monarchical supremacy during the struggle for independence against England, the election of one great nobleman to the crown and its devolution upon another, the residence of the two first of the Stuart name in their own remote domains, the want of any such effective counterpoise to the aristocracy as the sovereigns of England possessed in its yeomanry and commercial towns, placed the kings of Scotland in a situation which neither for their own or their people's interest they could be expected to endure. But an impatience of submitting to the insolent and encroaching temper of their nobles drove James I., before whose time no settled scheme of reviving the royal authority seems to have been conceived, and his two next descendants into some courses which, though excused or extenuated by the difficulties of their position, were rather too precipitate and violent, and redounded at least to their own destruction. The reign of James IV. from his accession in 1488 to his unhappy death at Flodden in 1513, was the first of tolerable prosperity; the crown having by this time obtained no inconsiderable strength, and the course of law being somewhat more established, though the aristocracy were abundantly capable of withstanding any material encroachment upon their privileges.

Though subsidies were of course occasionally demanded, yet from the poverty of the realm, and the extensive domains which the crown retained, they were much less frequent than in England, and thus one principal source of difference was removed;

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

nor do we read of any opposition in parliament to what the lords of articles thought fit to propound. Those who disliked the government stood aloof from such meetings, where the sovereign was in his vigour, and had sometimes crushed a leader of faction by a sudden stroke of power; confident that they could better frustrate the execution of laws than their enactment, and that questions of right and privilege could never be tried so advantageously as in the field. Hence it is, as I have already observed, that we must not look to the statute-book of Scotland for many limitations of monarchy. Even in one of James II., which enacts that none of the royal domains shall for the future be alienated, and that the king and his successors shall be sworn to observe this law, it may be conjectured that a provision rather derogatory in semblance to the king's dignity was introduced by his own suggestion, as an additional security against the importunate solicitations of the aristocracy whom the statute was designed to restrain *. The next reign was the struggle of an imprudent, and as far as his means extended, despotic prince, against the spirit of his subjects. In a parliament of 1487, we find, I think, almost a solitary instance of a statute that appears to have been directed against some illegal proceedings of the government. It is provided that all civil suits shall be determined by the ordinary judges, and not before the king's council †. James III. was killed the next year in attempting to oppose an extensive combination of the rebellious nobility. In the reign of James IV., the influence of the aristocracy shows itself rather more in legislation; and two peculiarities deserve notice, in which, as it is said, the legislative authority of a Scots parliament was far higher than that of our own. They were not only often consulted about peace or war, which in some instances was the case in England, but, at least in the sixteenth century, their approbation seems to have been necessary ‡.

* Pinkerton, i. 234. † Statutes of Scotland, ii. 177. ‡ Pinkerton, ii. 266.

This, though not consonant to our modern notions, was certainly no more than the genius of the feudal system and the character of a great deliberative council might lead us to expect; but a more remarkable singularity was that what had been propounded by the lords of articles, and received the ratification of the three estates, did not require the king's consent to give it complete validity. Such at least is said to have been the Scots constitution in the time of James VI., though we may demand very full proof of such an anomaly which the language of their statutes, expressive of the king's enacting power, by no means leads us to infer *.

The kings of Scotland had always their aula or curia regis, claiming a supreme judicial authority, at least in some causes, though it might be difficult to determine its boundaries, or how far they were respected. They had also bailiffs to administer justice in their own domains, and sheriffs in every county for the same purpose, wherever grants of regality did not exclude their jurisdiction. These regalities were hereditary and territorial; they extended to the infliction of capital punishment; the lord possessing them might reclaim or repledge (as it was called, from the surety he was obliged to give that he would himself do justice) any one of his vassals who was accused before another jurisdiction. The barons, who also had cognizance of most capital offences, and the royal boroughs enjoyed the same privilege. An appeal lay, in civil suits, from the baron's court to that of the sheriff or lord of regality, and ultimately to the parliament, or to a certain number of persons to whom it delegated its authority †. This appellant jurisdiction of parliament, as well as that of the king's privy council, which was original, came, by a series of provisions from the year 1425 to 1532, into the hands of a supreme tribunal thus gradually

* Pinkerton, ii. 400. Laing, iii. 32. 158, et alibi. Stuart on Public Law of Scotland.
† Kaims's Law Tracts. Pinkerton, i.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

constituted in its present form, the court of session. It was composed of fifteen judges, half of whom, besides the president, were at first churchmen, and soon established an entire subordination of the local courts in all civil suits. But it possessed no competence in criminal proceedings; the hereditary jurisdictions remained unaffected for some ages, though the king's two justiciaries, replaced afterwards by a court of six judges, went their circuits even through those counties wherein charters of regality had been granted. Two remarkable innovations seem to have accompanied, or to have been not far removed in time from, the first formation of the court of session; the discontinuance of juries in civil causes, and the adoption of so many principles from the Roman law, as have given the jurisprudence of Scotland a very different character from our own *.

In the reign of James V. it might appear probable that by the influence of laws favourable to public order, better enforced through the council and court of session than before, by the final subjugation of the house of Douglas and of the earls of Ross in the North, and some slight increase of wealth in the towns, conspiring with the general tendency of the sixteenth century throughout Europe, the feudal spirit would be weakened and kept under in Scotland, or display itself only in a parliamentary resistance to what might become in its turn dangerous, the encroachments of arbitrary power. But immediately afterwards a new and unexpected impulse was given; religious zeal, so blended with the ancient spirit of aristocratic independence, that the two motives are scarcely distinguishable, swept before it in the first whirlwind almost every vestige of the royal sovereignty. The Roman catholic religion was abolished with the forms indeed of a parliament, but of a parliament not summoned by the crown, and by acts that obtained not its assent. The Scots

* Kaims's Law Tracts. Pinkerton's Hist. of Scotland, i. 117. 237. 388. ii. 313. Robertson, i. 43. Stuart on Law of Scotland.

church had been immensely rich; its riches had led, as every where else, to neglect of duties and dissoluteness of life; and these vices had met with their usual punishment in the people's hatred *. The reformed doctrines gained a more rapid and general ascendancy than in England, and were accompanied with a more strenuous and uncompromising enthusiasm. It is probable that no sovereign retaining a strong attachment to the ancient creed would long have been permitted to reign; and Mary is entitled to every presumption, in the great controversy that belongs to her name, that can reasonably be founded on this admission. But without deviating into that long and intricate discussion, it may be given as the probable result of fair inquiry, that to impeach the characters of most of her adversaries would be a far easier task than to exonerate her own †.

* Robertson, i. 149. Mac'crie's Life of Knox, p. 15. At least one half of the wealth of Scotland was in the hands of the clergy, chiefly of a few individuals. Ibid.

† I have read a good deal on this celebrated controversy; but where so much is disputed, it is not easy to form an opinion on every point. But upon the whole I think there are only two hypotheses that can be advanced with any colour of reason. The first is, that the murder of Darnley was projected by Bothwell, Maitland, and some others, without the queen's express knowledge, but with a reliance on her passion for the former, which would lead her both to shelter him from punishment, and to raise him to her bed; and that, in both respects, this expectation was fully realized by a criminal connivance at the escape of one whom she must believe to have been concerned in her husband's death, and by a still more infamous marriage with him. This, it appears to me, is a conclusion that may be drawn by reasoning on admitted facts, according to the common rules of presumptive evidence. The second supposition is, that she had given a previous consent to the assassination. This is rendered probable by several circumstances, and especially by the famous letters and sonnets, the genuineness of which has been so warmly disputed. I must confess that they seem to me authentic, and that Mr. Laing's dissertation on the murder of Darnley has rendered Mary's innocence, even as to participation in that crime, an untenable proposition. No one of any weight, I believe, has asserted it since his time except Dr. Lingard, who manages the evidence with his usual adroitness, but by admitting the general authenticity of the letters, qualified by a mere conjecture of interpolation, has given up what his predecessors deemed the very key of the citadel.

I shall dismiss a subject so foreign to my purpose, with remarking a fallacy which affects almost the whole argument of Mary's most strenuous advocates. They seem to fancy that if the earls of Murray and Morton, and secretary Maitland of Lethington, can be proved to have been concerned in Darnley's murder, the queen herself is at once absolved. But it is generally agreed that Maitland was one of those who conspired with Bothwell for this purpose; and Morton, if he were not absolutely consenting, was by his own acknowledgment at

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

The history of Scotland from the reformation assumes a character not only unlike that of preceding times, but to which there is no parallel in modern ages. It became a contest, not between the crown and the feudal aristocracy as before, nor between the assertors of prerogative and of privilege, as in England, nor between the possessors of established power and those who deemed themselves oppressed by it, as is the usual source of civil discord, but between the temporal and spiritual authorities, the crown and the church; that in general supported by the legislature, this sustained by the voice of the people. Nothing of this kind, at least in any thing like so great a degree, has occurred in other protestant countries; the Anglican church being, in its original constitution, bound up with the state as one of its integrant parts, but subordinate to the whole; and the ecclesiastical order in the kingdoms and commonwealths of the continent being either destitute of temporal authority, or at least subject to the civil magistrate's supremacy.

Knox, the founder of the Scots' reformation, and those who concurred with him, both adhered to the theological system of Calvin, and to the scheme of polity he had introduced at Geneva, with such modifications as became necessary from the greater scale on which it was to be practised. Each parish had its minister, lay-elder, and deacon, who held their kirk-session for spiritual jurisdiction and other purposes; each ecclesiastical province its synod of mini ters and delegated elders presided by a superintendent; but the supreme power resided in the general assembly of the Scots' church, constituted of all ministers of parishes, with an admixture of delegated laymen, to which appeals from inferior judicatories lay, and by whose determinations or canons the whole were bound. The superintendents had such

his execution apprised of the conspiracy. With respect to Murray, indeed, there is not a shadow of evidence, nor had he any probable motive to second Bothwell's schemes; but even if his participation were presumed, it would not alter in the slightest degree the proofs as to the queen.

a degree of episcopal authority as seems implied in their name, but concurrently with the parochial ministers, and in subordination to the general assembly; the number of these was designed to be ten, but only five were appointed *. This form of church-polity was set up in 1560; but according to the irregular state of things at that time in Scotland, though fully admitted and acted upon, it had only the authority of the church with no confirmation of parliament; which seems to have been the first step of the former towards the independency it came to usurp. Meanwhile it was agreed that the Roman catholic prelates, including the regulars, should enjoy two thirds of their revenues, as well as their rank and seats in parliament; the remaining third being given to the crown, out of which stipends should be allotted to the protestant clergy. Whatever violence may be imputed to the authors of the Scots' reformation, this arrangement seems to display a moderation which we should vainly seek in our own. The new church was however but inadequately provided; and perhaps we may attribute some part of her subsequent contumacy and encroachment on the state to the exasperation occasioned by the latter's parsimony, or rather rapaciousness, in the distribution of ecclesiastical estates †.

It was doubtless intended by the planners of a presbyterian model, that the bishoprics should be extinguished by the death of the possessors, and their revenues be converted, partly to the maintenance of the clergy, partly to other public interests. But it suited better the men in power to keep up the old appellations for their own benefit. As the catholic prelates died away, they

* Spottiswood's Church History, 152. Mac'crie's Life of Knox, ii. 6. Life of Melville, i. 143. Robertson's Hist. of Scotland. Cook's History of the Reformation in Scotland. These three modern writers leave, apparently, little to require as to this important period of history; the first with an intenseness of sympathy, that enhances our interest, though it may not always command our approbation; the two last with a cooler and more philosophical impartiality.

† Mac'crie's Life of Knox, ii. 197, et alibi. Cook, iii. 308. According to Robertson, i. 291, the whole revenue of the protestant church, at least in Mary's reign, was but 24,000 pounds Scots, which seems almost incredible.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

were replaced by protestant ministers on private compacts to alienate the principal part of the revenues to those through whom they were appointed. After some hesitation, a convention of the church, in 1572, agreed to recognise these bishops, until the king's majority and a final settlement by the legislature, and to permit them a certain portion of jurisdiction, though not greater than that of the superintendent, and equally subordinate to the general assembly. They were not consecrated, nor would the slightest distinction of order have been endured by the church. Yet even this moderated episcopacy gave offence to ardent men, led by Andrew Melville, the second name to Knox in the ecclesiastical history of Scotland; and notwithstanding their engagement to leave things as they were till the determination of parliament, the general assembly soon began to restrain the bishops by their own authority, and finally to enjoin them, under pain of excommunication, to lay down an office which they voted to be destitute of warrant from the word of God, and injurious to the church. Some of the bishops submitted to this decree; others, as might be expected, stood out in defence of their dignity, and were supported both by the king and by all who conceived that the supreme power of Scotland, in establishing and endowing the church, had not constituted a society independent of the commonwealth. A series of acts in 1584, at a time when the court had obtained a temporary ascendant, seemed to restore the episcopal government in almost its pristine lustre. But the popular voice was loud against episcopacy; the prelates were discredited by their simoniacal alienations of church-revenues, and by their connexion with the court; the king was tempted to annex most of their lands to the crown by an act of parliament in 1587; Adamson, archbishop of St. Andrews, who had led the episcopal party, was driven to a humiliating retractation before the general assembly; and, in 1592, the sanction of the legislature was for the first time obtained to the whole scheme of presbyterian polity, and the laws of 1584 were for the most part abrogated.

The school of Knox, if so we may call the early presbyterian ministers of Scotland, was full of men breathing their master's spirit; acute in disputation, eloquent in discourse, learned beyond what their successors have been, and intensely zealous in the cause of reformation. They wielded the people at will, who, except in the Highlands, threw off almost with unanimity the old religion, and took alarm at the slightest indication of its revival. Their system of local and general assemblies infused together with the forms of a republic its energy and impatience of exterior control, combined with the concentration and unity of purpose that belongs to the most vigorous government. It must be confessed, that the unsettled state of the kingdom, the faults and weakness of the regents Lenox and Morton, the inauspicious beginning of James's personal administration under the sway of unworthy favourites, the real perils of the reformed church, gave no slight pretext for the clergy's interference with civil policy. Not merely in their representative assemblies, but in the pulpits, they perpetually remonstrated, in no guarded language, against the misgovernment of the court, and even the personal indiscretions of the king. This they pretended to claim as a privilege beyond the restraint of law. Andrew Melville, second only to Knox among the heroes of the presbyterian church, having been summoned before the council in 1584, to give an account of some seditious language alleged to have been used by him in the pulpit, declined its jurisdiction, on the ground that he was only responsible, in the first instance, to his presbytery for words so spoken, of which the king and council could not judge without violating the immunities of the church. Precedents for such an immunity it would not have been difficult to find; but they must have been sought in the archives of the enemy. It was rather early for the new republic to emulate the despotism she had overthrown. Such, however, is the uniformity with which the same passions operate on bodies of men in similar circumstances, and so greedily do those, whose birth has placed them far beneath the possession

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

of power, intoxicate themselves with its unaccustomed enjoyments. It has been urged in defence of Melville, that he only denied the competence of a secular tribunal in the first instance, and that after the ecclesiastical forum had pronounced on the spiritual offence, it was not disputed that the civil magistrate might vindicate his own authority *. But not to mention that Melville's claim, as I understand it, was to be judged by his presbytery in the first instance, and ultimately by the general assembly, from which, according to the presbyterian theory, no appeal lay to a civil court, it is manifest that the government would have come to a very disadvantageous conflict with a man to whose defence the ecclesiastical judicature had already pledged itself. For in the temper of those times it was easy to foresee the determination of a synod or presbytery.

James, however, and his counsellors were not so feeble as to endure this open renewal of those extravagant pretensions which Rome had taught her priesthood to assert. Melville fled to England, and a parliament that met the same year sustained the supremacy of the civil power with that violence and dangerous latitude of expression so frequent in the Scots statute-book. It was made treason to decline the jurisdiction of the king or council in any matter, to seek the diminution of the power of any of the three estates of parliament, which struck at all that had been done against episcopacy, to utter, or to conceal when heard from others in sermons or familiar discourse, any false or slanderous speeches to the reproach of the king, his council, or their proceedings, or to the dishonour of his parents and progenitors, or to meddle in the affairs of state. It was forbidden to treat or consult on any matter of state, civil or ecclesiastical, without the king's express command; thus rendering the general assembly for

* Mac'crie's Life of Melville, i. 287. 296. It is impossible to think without respect of this most powerful writer, before whom there are few living controversialists that would not tremble; but his presbyterian Hildebrandism is a little remarkable in this age.

its chief purposes, if not its existence, altogether dependent on the crown. Such laws not only annihilated the pretended immunities of the church, but went very far to set up that tyranny, which the Stuarts afterwards exercised in Scotland till their expulsion. These were in part repealed, so far as affected the church, in 1592; but the crown retained the exclusive right of convening its general assembly, to which the presbyterian hierarcny still gives but an evasive and reluctant obedience *.

These bold demagogues were not long in availing themselves of the advantage which they had obtained in the parliament of 1592, and through the troubled state of the realm. They began again to intermeddle with public affairs, the administration of which was sufficiently open to censure. This licence brought on a new crisis in 1596. Black, one of the ministers of St. Andrews, inveighing against the government from the pulpit, painted the king and queen, as well as their council, in the darkest colours, as dissembling enemies to religion. James, incensed at this attack, caused him to be summoned before the privy-council. The clergy decided to make common cause with the accused. The council of the church, a standing committee lately appointed by the general assembly, enjoined Black to decline the jurisdiction. The king by proclamation directed the members of this council to retire to their several parishes. They resolved, instead of submitting, that since they were convened by the warrant of Christ, in a most needful and dangerous time, to see unto the good of the church, they should obey God rather than man. The king offered to stop the proceedings, if they would but declare that they did not decline the civil jurisdiction absolutely, but only in the particular case, as being one of slander, and consequently of ecclesiastical competence. For Black had asserted before the council, that speeches delivered in the pulpits, although alleged to be treasonable, could not be judged by the king, until the church had

* Mac'crie's Life of Melville. Robertson. Spottiswood.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

first taken cognizance thereof. But these ecclesiastics, in the full spirit of the thirteenth century, determined by a majority not to recede from their plea. Their contest with the court soon excited the populace of Edinburgh, and gave rise to a tumult, which, whether dangerous or not to the king, was what no government could pass over without utter loss of authority.

It was in church assemblies alone that James found opposition. His parliament, as had invariably been the case in Scotland, went readily into all that was proposed to them; nor can we doubt that the gentry must for the most part have revolted from these insolent usurpations of the ecclesiastical order. It was ordained in parliament, that every minister should declare his submission to the king's jurisdiction in all matters civil and criminal, that no ecclesiastical judicatory should meet without the king's consent, and that a magistrate might commit to prison any minister reflecting in his sermons on the king's conduct. He had next recourse to an instrument of power more successful, frequently, than intimidation, and generally successful in conjunction with it; gaining over the members of the general assembly, some by promises, some by exciting jealousies, till they surrendered no small portion of what had passed for the privileges of the church. The crown obtained by their concession, which then seemed almost necessary to confirm what the legislature had enacted, the right of convoking assemblies, and of nominating ministers in the principal towns. James followed up this victory by a still more important blow. It was enacted, that fifty-one ministers, on being nominated by the king to titular bishoprics and other prelacies, might sit in parliament as representatives of the church. This seemed justly alarming to the zealots of parity; nor could the general assembly be brought to acquiesce without such very considerable restrictions upon these suspicious commissioners, by which name they prevailed to have them called, as might in some measure afford security against the revival of that episcopal domination towards which the endeavours of the

crown were plainly directed. But the king paid little regard to these regulations, and thus the name and parliamentary station of bishops were restored in Scotland after only six years from their abolition *.

A king like James, not less conceited of his wisdom than full of the dignity of his station, could not avoid contracting that insuperable aversion to the Scottish presbytery, which he expressed in his Basilicon Doron, before his accession to the English throne, and more vehemently on all occasions afterwards. He found a very different race of churchmen, well trained in the supple school of courtly conformity, and emulous flatterers both of his power and his wisdom. The ministers of Edinburgh had been used to pray that God would turn his heart: Whitgift, at the conference of Hampton Court, falling on his knees, exclaimed, that he doubted not his majesty spoke by the special grace of God. It was impossible that he should not redouble his endeavours to introduce so convenient a system of ecclesiastical government into his native kingdom. He began, accordingly, to prevent the meetings of the general assembly by continued prorogations. Some hardy presbyterians ventured to assemble of their own authority; which the lawyers construed into treason. The bishops were restored by parliament, in 1606, to a part of their revenues; the act annexing these to the crown being repealed. They were appointed by an ecclesiastical convention, more subservient to the crown than formerly, to be perpetual moderators of provincial synods. The clergy still gave way with reluctance; but the crown had an irresistible ascendancy in parliament; and in 1610 the episcopal system was thoroughly established. The powers of ordination, as well as jurisdiction, were solely vested in the prelates; a court of high commission was created on the English model; and though the general assembly of the church still continued, it was merely as a shadow,

* Spottiswood. Robertson. Mac'crie.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

and almost mockery, of its original importance. The bishops now repaired to England for consecration; a ceremony deemed essential in the new school that now predominated in the Anglican church; and this gave a final blow to the polity in which the Scottish reformation had been founded*. With far more questionable prudence, James, some years afterwards, forced upon the people of Scotland what were called the five articles of Perth, reluctantly adopted by a general assembly held there in 1617. These were matters of ceremony, such as the posture of kneeling in the eucharist, the rite of confirmation, and the observance of certain holidays; but enough to alarm a nation fanatically abhorrent of every approximation to the Roman worship, and already incensed by what they deemed the corruption and degradation of their church †.

That church, if indeed it preserved its identity, was wholly changed in character, and became as much distinguished in its episcopal form by servility and corruption, as during its presbyterian democracy by faction and turbulence. The bishops at its head, many of them abhorred by their own countrymen as apostates, and despised for their vices, looked for protection to the sister church of England in its pride and triumph. It had long been the favourite project of the court, as it naturally was of the Anglican prelates, to assimilate in all respects the two establishments. That of Scotland still wanted one essential characteristic, a regular liturgy. But in preparing what was called the service book, the English model was not closely followed; the variations having all a tendency towards the Romish worship. It is far more probable that Laud intended these to prepare the way for a similar change in England, than that, as some have surmised, the Scottish bishops, from a notion of independence, chose thus to distinguish their own ritual. What were the consequences of this unhappy innovation, attempted with that ignorance of man-

* Mac'crie's Life of Melville, ii. 378. Laing's History of Scotland, iii. 20. 35. 42. 62.
† Laing, 74, 89.

kind which kings and priests, when left to their own guidance, usually display, it is here needless to mention. In its ultimate results, it preserved the liberties and overthrew the monarchy of England. In its more immediate effects, it gave rise to the national covenant of Scotland; a solemn pledge of unity and perseverance in a great public cause, long since devised, when the Spanish armada threatened the liberties and religion of all Britain, but now directed against the domestic enemies of both. The episcopal government had no friends, even among those who served the king. To him it was dear by the sincerest conviction, and by its connexion with absolute power, still more close and direct than in England. But he had reduced himself to a condition where it was necessary to sacrifice his authority in the smaller kingdom, if he would hope to preserve it in the greater; and in this view he consented, in the parliament of 1641, to restore the presbyterian discipline of the Scottish church; an offence against his conscience (for such his prejudices led him to consider it) which he deeply afterwards repented, when he discovered how absolutely it had failed of serving his interests.

In the great struggle with Charles against episcopacy, the encroachments of arbitrary rule, for the sake of which, in a great measure, he valued that form of church polity, were not overlooked; and the parliament of 1641 procured some essential improvements in the civil constitution of Scotland. Triennial sessions of the legislature, and other salutary reformations, were borrowed from their friends and coadjutors in England. But what was still more important, was the abolition of that destructive control over the legislature, which the crown had obtained through the lords of articles. These had doubtless been originally nominated by the several estates in parliament, solely to expedite the management of business, and relieve the entire body from attention to it. But, as early as 1561, we find a practice established that the spiritual lords should choose the temporal, gene-

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

rally eight in number, who were to sit on this committee, and conversely; the burgesses still electing their own. To these it became usual to add some of the officers of state; and in 1617 it was established that eight of them should be on the list. Charles procured, without authority of parliament, a further innovation in 1633. The bishops chose eight peers, the peers eight bishops; and these appointed sixteen commissioners of shires and boroughs. Thus the whole power was devolved upon the bishops, the slaves and sycophants of the crown. The parliament itself met only on two days, the first and last of their pretended session, the one time in order to choose the lords of articles, the other, to ratify what they proposed *. So monstrous an anomaly could not long subsist in a high-spirited nation. This improvident assumption of power by low-born and odious men precipitated their downfal, and made the destruction of the hierarchy appear the necessary guarantee for parliamentary independence, and the ascendant of the aristocracy. But lest the court might, in some other form, regain this preliminary or initiative voice in legislation, which the experience of many governments has shown to be the surest method of keeping supreme authority in their hands, it was enacted in 1641, that each estate might choose lords of articles or not, at its discretion; but that all propositions should in the first instance be submitted to the whole parliament, by whom such only as should be thought fitting might be referred to the committee of articles for consideration.

This parliament, however, neglected to abolish one of the most odious engines that tyranny ever devised against public virtue, the Scots law of treason. It had been enacted by a statute of James I. in 1424, that all leasing-makers, and tellers of what might engender discord between the king and his people, should forfeit life and goods †. This act was renewed under James II. It was aimed at the factious aristocracy, who per-

* Wight, 69, et post.

† Statutes of Scotland, vol. ii. p. 8. Pinkerton, i. 115. Laing, iii. 117.

petually excited the people by invidious reproaches against the king's administration. But in 1584, a new antagonist to the crown having appeared in the presbyterian pulpits, it was determined to silence opposition by giving the statute of leasing-making, as it was denominated, a more sweeping operation. Its penalties were accordingly extended to such as should "utter untrue or slanderous speeches, to the disdain, reproach, and contempt of his highness, his parents and progenitors, or should meddle in the affairs of his highness or his estate." The "hearers and not reporters thereof" were subjected to the same punishment. It may be remarked, that these Scots statutes are worded with a latitude never found in England, even in the worst times of Henry VIII. Lord Balmerino, who had opposed the court in the parliament of 1633, retained in his possession a copy of an apology intended to have been presented by himself and other peers in their exculpation, but from which they had desisted, in apprehension of the king's displeasure. This was obtained clandestinely, and in breach of confidence, by some of his enemies; and he was indicted on the statute of leasing-making, as having concealed a slander against his majesty's government. A jury was returned with gross partiality; yet so outrageous was the attempted violation of justice, that Balmerino was only convicted by a majority of eight against seven. For in Scots juries a simple majority was sufficient, as it is still in all cases except treason. It was not thought expedient to carry this sentence into execution; but the kingdom could never pardon its government so infamous a stretch of power *. The statute itself, however, seems not to have shared the same odium; we do not find any effort made for its repeal, and the ruling party in 1641, unfortunately, did not scruple to make use of its sanguinary provisions against their own adversaries †.

* Laing, bid.

† Arnot's Criminal Trials, p. 122.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

The conviction of Balmerino is hardly more repugnant to justice than some other cases in the long reign of James VI. Eight years after the execution of the earl of Gowrie and his brother, one Sprot, a notary, having indiscreetly mentioned that he was in possession of letters, written by a person since dead, which evinced his participation in that mysterious conspiracy, was put to death for concealing them *. Thomas Ross suffered, in 1618, the punishment of treason for publishing at Oxford a blasphemous libel, as the indictment calls it, against the Scots nation †. I know not what he could have said worse than what their sentence against him enabled others to say, that, amidst a great vaunt of christianity and civilization, they took away men's lives by such statutes, and such constructions of them, as could only be paralleled in the annals of the worst tyrants. By an act of 1584, the privy council were empowered to examine an accused party on oath; and if he declined to answer any question, it was held denial of their jurisdiction, and amounted to a conviction of treason. This was experienced by two jesuits, Crighton and Ogilvy, in 1610 and 1615, the latter of whom was executed ‡. One of the statutes upon which he was indicted contained the singular absurdity of "annulling and rescinding every thing done, or hereafter to be done, in prejudice of the royal prerogative, in any time bygone or to come."

* The Gowrie conspiracy is well known to be one of the most difficult problems in history. Arnot has given a very good account of it, p. 20, and shown its truth, which could not reasonably be questioned, whatever motive we may assign for it. He has laid stress on Logan's letters, which appear to have been unaccountably slighted by some writers. I have long had a suspicion, founded on these letters, that the earl of Bothwell, a daring man of desperate fortunes, was in some manner concerned in the plot, of which the earl of Gowrie and his brother were the instruments.

† Arnot's Criminal Trials, p. 70.

‡ Arnot, p. 67, 329; State Trials, ii. 884. The prisoner was told that he was not charged for saying mass, nor for seducing the people to popery, nor for any thing that concerned his conscience, but for declining the king's authority, and maintaining treasonable opinions, as the statutes libelled on made it treason not to answer the king or his council in any matter which should be demanded.

It was one of the most monstrous iniquities of a monstrous jurisprudence, the Scots criminal law, to debar a prisoner from any defence inconsistent with the indictment; that is, he might deny a fact, but was not permitted to assert that, being true, it did not warrant the conclusion of guilt. Arnot, 354.

It was perhaps impossible that Scotland should remain indifferent in the great quarrel of the sister kingdom. But having set her heart upon two things incompatible in themselves from the outset, according to the circumstances of England, and both of them ultimately impracticable, the continuance of Charles on the throne and the establishment of a presbyterian church, she fell into a long course of disaster and ignominy, till she held the name of a free constitution at the will of a conqueror. Of the three most conspicuous among her nobility in this period, each died by the hand of the executioner; but the resemblance is in nothing besides, and the characters of Hamilton, Montrose, and Argyle, are not less contrasted than the factions of which they were the leaders. Humbled and broken down, the people looked to the re-establishment of Charles II. on the throne of his fathers, though brought about by the sternest minister of Cromwell's tyranny, not only as the augury of prosperous days, but as the obliteration of public dishonour.

They were miserably deceived in every hope. Thirty infamous years consummated the misfortunes and degradation of Scotland. Her factions have always been more sanguinary, her rulers more oppressive, her sense of justice and humanity less active, or at least shown less in public acts, than can be charged against England. The parliament of 1661, influenced by wicked statesmen and lawyers, left far behind the royalist commons of London, and rescinded as null the entire acts of 1641, on the absurd pretext that the late king had passed them through force. The Scots constitution fell back at once to a state little better than despotism. The lords of articles were revived, according to the same form of election as under Charles I. A few years afterwards the duke of Lauderdale obtained the consent of parliament to an act, that whatever the king and council should order respecting all ecclesiastical matters, meetings, and persons, should have the force of law. A militia, or rather army of 22,000 men, was established, to march wherever the council should appoint,

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

and the honour and safety of the king require. Fines to the amount of 85,000*l.*, an enormous sum in that kingdom, were imposed on the covenanters. The earl of Argyle brought to the scaffold by an outrageous sentence, his son sentenced to lose his life on such a construction of the ancient law against leasing-making as no man engaged in political affairs could be sure to escape, the worst system of constitutional laws administered by the worst men, left no alternative but implicit obedience or desperate rebellion.

The presbyterian church of course fell by the act which annulled the parliament wherein it had been established. Episcopacy revived, but not as it had once existed in Scotland; the jurisdiction of the bishops became unlimited; the general assemblies, so dear to the people, were laid aside*. The new prelates were odious as apostates, and soon gained a still more indelible title to popular hatred as persecutors. Three hundred and fifty of the presbyterian clergy, more than one-third of the whole number, were ejected from their benefices†. Then began the preaching in conventicles, and the secession of the excited and exasperated multitude from the churches; and then ensued the ecclesiastical commission with its inquisitorial vigilance, its fines and corporal penalties, and the free quarters of the soldiery, with all that can be implied in that word. Then came the fruitless insurrection, and the fanatical assurance of success, and the certain discomfiture by a disciplined force, and the consternation of defeat, and the unbounded cruelties of the conqueror. And this went on with perpetual aggravation, or very rare intervals, through the reign of Charles; the tyranny of Lauderdale far exceeding that of Middleton, as his own fell short of the duke of

* Laing, iv. 20. Kirkton, p. 141. "Whoso shall compare," he says, "this set of bishops with the old bishops established in the year 1612, shall find that these were but a sort of pigmies compared with our new bishops."

† Laing, iv. 32. Kirkton says 300. P. 149. These were what were called the young ministers, those who had entered the church since 1649. They might have kept their cures by acknowledging the authority of bishops.

York's. No part, I believe, of modern history for so long a period can be compared for the wickedness of government to the Scots administration of this reign. In proportion as the laws grew more rigorous against the presbyterian worship, its followers evinced more steadiness; driven from their conventicles, they resorted, sometimes by night, to the fields, the woods, the mountains; and as the troops were continually employed to disperse them, they came with arms which they were often obliged to use; and thus the hour, the place, the circumstance, deepened every impression, and bound up their faith with indissoluble associations. The same causes produced a dark fanaticism, which believed the revenge of its own wrongs to be the execution of divine justice; and as this acquired new strength by every successive aggravation of tyranny, it is literally possible that a continuance of the Stuart government might have led to something very like an extermination of the people in the western counties of Scotland. In the year 1676 letters of intercommuning were published; a writ forbidding all persons to hold intercourse with the parties put under its ban, or to furnish them with any necessary of life on pain of being reputed guilty of the same crime. But seven years afterwards, when the Cameronian rebellion had assumed a dangerous character, a proclamation was issued against all who had ever harboured or communed with rebels; courts were appointed to be held for their trial as traitors, which were to continue for the next three years. Those who accepted the test, a declaration of passive obedience repugnant to the conscience of the presbyterians, and imposed for that reason in 1681, were excused from these penalties; and by this means they were eluded.

The enormities of this detestable government are far too numerous, even in species, to be enumerated in this slight sketch; and of course most instances of cruelty have not been recorded. The privy council was accustomed to extort confessions by torture; that grim divan of bishops, lawyers, and peers sucking in the groans of each undaunted enthusiast, in hope that some im-

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

perfect avowal might lead to the sacrifice of other victims, or at least warrant the execution of the present. It is said that the duke of York, whose conduct in Scotland seems to efface those sentiments of pity and respect which other parts of his life might excite, used to assist himself on these occasions*. One Mitchell having been induced, by a promise that his life should be spared, to confess an attempt to assassinate Sharp the primate, was brought to trial some years afterwards, when four lords of the council deposed on oath that no such assurance had been given him; and Sharp insisted upon his execution. The vengeance ultimately taken on this infamous apostate and persecutor, though doubtless in violation of what is justly reckoned an universal rule of morality, ought at least not to weaken our abhorrence of the man himself.

The test above mentioned was imposed by parliament in 1681, and contained, among other things, an engagement never to attempt any alteration of government in church or state. The earl of Argyle, son of him who had perished by an unjust sentence, and himself once before attainted by another, though at that time restored by the king, was still destined to illustrate the house of Campbell by a second martyrdom. He refused to subscribe the test without the reasonable explanation that he would not bind himself from attempting, in his station, any improvement in church or state. This exposed him to an accusation of leasing-making (the old mystery of iniquity in Scots law) and of treason. He was found guilty through the astonishing audacity of the crown lawyers and servility of the judges and jury. It is not perhaps certain that his immediate execution would have ensued; but no man ever trusted securely to the mercies of the Stuarts, and Argyle escaped in disguise by the aid of his daughter-in-law. The council proposed that this lady should be publicly whipped; but there was an excess of atrocity in the Scots on the court side,

* Laing, iv. 116.

which no Englishman could reach; and the duke of York felt as a gentleman upon such a suggestion*. The earl of Argyle was brought to the scaffold a few years afterwards on this old sentence; but after his unfortunate rebellion, which of course would have legally justified his execution.

The Cameronians, a party rendered wild and fanatical through intolerable oppression, published a declaration, wherein, after renouncing their allegiance to Charles, and expressing their abhorrence of murder on the score of religion, they announced their determination of retaliating, according to their power, on such privy-counsellors, officers in command, or others, as should continue to seek their blood. The fate of Sharp was thus before the eyes of all who emulated his crimes; and in terror the council ordered, that whoever refused to disown this declaration on oath should be put to death in the presence of two witnesses. Every officer, every soldier, was thus intrusted with the privilege of massacre; the unarmed, the women and children, fell indiscriminately by the sword; and besides the distinct testimonies that remain of atrocious cruelty, there exists in that kingdom a deep traditional horror, the record, as it were, of that confused mass of crime and misery which has left no other memorial†.

A parliament summoned by James on his accession, with an intimation from the throne that they were assembled not only to express their own duty, but to set an example of compliance to England, gave, without the least opposition, the required proofs of loyalty. They acknowledged the king's absolute power, declared their abhorrence of any principle derogatory to it, professed an unreserved obedience in all cases, bestowed a large revenue for life. They enhanced the penalties against sectaries; a refusal to give evidence against traitors or other delinquents was made equivalent to a conviction of the same offence; it

* Life of James II., i. 710.

† Cloud of Witnesses, passim. De Foe's Hist. of Church of Scotland. Kirkton. Laing. Scott's notes in Minstrelsy of Scottish Border, &c. &c.

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

was capital to preach even in houses, or to hear preachers in the fields. The persecution raged with still greater fury in the first part of this reign. But the same repugnance of the episcopal party to the king's schemes for his own religion, which led to his remarkable change of policy in England, produced similar effects in Scotland. He had attempted to obtain from parliament a repeal of the penal laws and the test; but though an extreme servility or a general intimidation made the nobility acquiesce in his propositions, and two of the bishops were gained over, yet the commissioners of shires and boroughs, who voting promiscuously in the house, had, when united, a majority over the peers, so firmly resisted every encroachment of popery, that it was necessary to try other methods than those of parliamentary enactment. After the dissolution the dispensing power was brought into play; the privy council forbade the execution of the laws against the catholics; several of that religion were introduced to its board; the royal boroughs were deprived of their privileges, the king assuming the nomination of their chief magistrates, so as to throw the elections wholly into the hands of the crown. A declaration of indulgence, emanating from the king's absolute prerogative, relaxed the severity of the laws against presbyterian conventicles, and, annulling the oath of supremacy and the test of 1681, substituted for them an oath of allegiance, acknowledging his power to be unlimited. He promised at the same time that "he would use no force, nor invincible necessity against any man on account of his persuasion, or the protestant religion, nor would deprive the possessors of lands formerly belonging to the church." A very intelligible hint that the protestant religion was to exist only by this gracious sufferance.

The oppressed presbyterians gained some respite by this indulgence, though instances of executions under the sanguinary statutes of the late reign are found as late as the beginning of 1688. But the memory of their sufferings was indelible; they

accepted, but with no gratitude, the insidious mercy of a tyrant they abhorred. The Scots conspiracy with the prince of Orange went forwards simultaneously with that of England; it included several of the council, from personal jealousy, dislike of the king's proceedings as to religion, or anxiety to secure an indemnity they had little deserved in the approaching crisis. The people rose in different parts; the Scots nobility and gentry in London presented an address to the prince of Orange, requesting him to call a convention of the estates, and this irregular summons was universally obeyed.

The king was not without friends in this convention, but the whigs had from every cause a decided preponderance. England had led the way; William was on his throne; the royal government at home was wholly dissolved; and after enumerating in fifteen articles the breaches committed on the constitution, the estates came to a resolution: "That James VII., being a professed papist, did assume the royal power, and acted as king, without ever taking the oath required by law, and had by the advice of evil and wicked counsellors, invaded the fundamental constitution of the kingdom, and altered it from a legal limited monarchy to an arbitrary despotic power, and hath exerted the same to the subversion of the protestant religion, and the violation of the laws and liberties of the kingdom, whereby he hath forfaulted (forfeited) his right to the crown, and the throne has become vacant." It was evident that the English vote of a constructive abdication, having been partly grounded on the king's flight, could not without still greater violence be applied to Scotland; and consequently the bolder denomination of forfeiture was necessarily employed to express the penalty of his mis-government. There was, in fact, a very striking difference in the circumstances of the two kingdoms. In the one, there had been illegal acts and unjustifiable severities; but it was, at first sight, no very strong case for national resistance, which stood

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

rather on a calculation of expediency, than an instinct of self-preservation, or an impulse of indignant revenge. But in the other, it had been a tyranny dark as that of the most barbarous ages; despotism, which in England was scarcely in blossom, had borne its bitter and poisonous fruits: no word of slighter import than forfeiture could be chosen to denote the national rejection of the Stuart line.

A declaration and claim of rights was drawn up, as in England, together with the resolution that the crown be tendered to William and Mary, and descend afterwards in conformity with the limitations enacted in the sister kingdom. This declaration excluded papists from the throne, and asserted the illegality of proclamations to dispense with statutes, of the inflicting capital punishment without jury, of imprisonment without special cause or delay of trial, of exacting enormous fines, of nominating the magistrates in boroughs, and several other violent proceedings in the two last reigns. These articles the convention challenged as their undoubted right, against which no declaration nor precedent ought to operate. They reserved some other important grievances to be redressed in parliament. Upon this occasion, a noble fire of liberty shone forth to the honour of Scotland, amidst those scenes of turbulent faction or servile corruption which the annals of her parliament so perpetually display. They seemed emulous of English freedom, and proud to place their own imperfect commonwealth on as firm a basis.

One great alteration in the state of Scotland was almost necessarily involved in the fall of the Stuarts. Their most conspicuous object had been the maintenance of the episcopal church; the line was drawn far more closely than in England; in that church were the court's friends, out of it were its opponents. Above all, the people were out of it, and in a revolution brought about by the people, their voice could not be slighted. It was one of the articles, accordingly, in the de-

claration of rights, that prelacy and precedence in ecclesiastical office were repugnant to the genius of a nation reformed by presbyters, and an unsupportable grievance which ought to be abolished. William, there is reason to believe, had offered to preserve the bishops, in return for their support in the convention. But this, not more happily for Scotland than for himself and his successors, they refused to give. No compromise, or even acknowledged toleration, was practicable in that country between two exasperated factions; but if oppression was necessary, it was at least not on the majority that it ought to fall. But besides this, there was as clear a case of forfeiture in the Scots' episcopal church, as in the royal family of Stuart. The main controversy between the episcopal and presbyterian churches was one of dry antiquarian criticism, little more interesting than those about the Roman senate, or the Saxon wittenagemot, nor perhaps more capable of decisive solution; it was at least one as to which the bulk of mankind are absolutely incapable of forming a rational judgment for themselves. But mingled up as it has always been, and most of all in Scotland, with faction, with revolution, with power and emolument, with courage and devotion, and fear, and hate, and revenge, this arid dispute of pedants drew along with it the most glowing emotions of the heart, and the question became utterly out of the province of argument. It was very possible that episcopacy might be of apostolical institution; but for this institution houses had been burned and fields laid waste, and the gospel had been preached in wildernesses, and its ministers had been shot in their prayers, and husbands had been murdered before their wives, and virgins had been defiled, and many had died by the executioner, and by massacre, and in imprisonment, and in exile and slavery, and women had been tied to stakes on the sea-shore till the tide rose to overflow them, and some had been tortured and mutilated; it was a religion of the boots and the thumb-screw, which a good man must be very cool-blooded indeed if he did not hate and reject from

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

the hands which offered it. For after all, it is much more certain that the Supreme Being abhors cruelty and persecution, than that he has set up bishops to have a superiority over presbyters.

It was, however, a serious problem at that time, whether the presbyterian church, so proud and stubborn as she had formerly shown herself, could be brought under a necessary subordination to the civil magistrate, and whether the more fanatical part of it, whom Cargill and Cameron had led on, would fall again into the ranks of social life. But here experience victoriously confuted these plausible apprehensions. It was soon perceived, that the insanity of fanaticism subsides of itself, unless purposely heightened by persecution. The fiercer spirit of the sectaries was allayed by degrees; and though vestiges of it may probably still be perceptible by observers, it has never, in a political sense, led to dangerous effects. The church of Scotland, in her general assemblies, preserves the forms, and affects the language of the sixteenth century; but the Erastianism against which she inveighs secretly controls and paralyzes her vaunted liberties; and she cannot but acknowledge that the supremacy of the legislature is like the collar of the watch-dog, the price of food and shelter, and the condition upon which alone a religious society can be endowed and established by any prudent commonwealth *. The judicious admixture of laymen in these assemblies, and, in a far greater degree, the perpetual intercourse with England, which

* The practice observed in summoning or dissolving the great national assembly of the church of Scotland, which, according to the presbyterian theory, can only be done by its own authority, is rather amusing. "The moderator dissolves the assembly in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ the head of the church, and by the same authority appoints another to meet on a certain day of the ensuing year. The lord high commissioner then dissolves the assembly in the name of the king, and appoints another to meet on the same day." Arnot's Hist. of Edinburgh, p. 269. I am inclined to suspect, but with no very certain recollection of what I have been told, that Arnot has misplaced the order in which this is done, and that the lord commissioner is the first to speak. In the course of debate, however, no regard is paid to him, all speeches being addressed to the moderator.

has put an end to every thing like sectarian bigotry, and even exclusive communion, in the higher and middling classes, are the principal causes of that remarkable moderation which for many years has characterized the successors of Knox and Melville.

The convention of estates was turned by an act of its own into a parliament, and continued to sit during the king's reign. This, which was rather contrary to the spirit of a representative government than to the Scots constitution, might be justified by the very unquiet state of the kingdom and the intrigues of the jacobites. Many excellent statutes were enacted in this parliament, besides the provisions included in the declaration of rights; twenty-six members were added to the representation of the counties, the tyrannous acts of the two last reigns were repealed, the unjust attainders were reversed, the lords of articles were abolished. After some years, an act was obtained against wrongous imprisonment, still more effectual, perhaps, in some respects than that of the habeas corpus in England. The prisoner is to be released on bail within twenty-four hours on application to a judge, unless committed on a capital charge; and in that case must be brought to trial within sixty days. A judge refusing to give full effect to the act is declared incapable of public trust.

Notwithstanding these great improvements in the constitution, and the cessation of religious tyranny, the Scots are not accustomed to look back on the reign of William with much complacency. The regeneration was far from perfect; the court of session continued to be corrupt and partial; severe and illegal proceedings might sometimes be imputed to the council; and in one lamentable instance, the massacre of the Macdonalds in Glencoe, the deliberate crime of some statesmen tarnished not slightly the bright fame of their deceived master: though it was not for the adherents of the house of Stuart, under whom so many deeds of more extensive slaughter had been perpetrated, to fill Europe with their

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

invectives against this military execution *. The episcopal clergy, driven out injuriously by the populace from their livings, were permitted after a certain time to hold them again in some instances under certain conditions; but William, perhaps almost the only consistent friend of toleration in his kingdoms, at least among public men, lost by this indulgence the affection of one party, without in the slightest degree conciliating the other †. The true

* The king's instructions by no means warrant the execution, especially with all its circumstances of cruelty, but they contain one unfortunate sentence: "If Maclean [sic], of Glencoe, and that tribe can be well separated from the rest, it will be a proper vindication of the public justice to extirpate that seat of thieves." This was written, it is to be remembered, while they were exposed to the penalties of the law for the rebellion. But the massacre would never have been perpetrated, if lord Breadalbane and the master of Stair, two of the worst men in Scotland, had not used the foulest arts to effect it. It is an apparent great reproach to the government of William, that they escaped with impunity; but political necessity bears down justice and honour. Laing, iv. 246. Carstares' State Papers.

† Those who took the oaths were allowed to continue in their churches without compliance with the presbyterian discipline, and many more who not only refused the oaths but prayed openly for James and his family. Carstares, p. 40. But in 1693 an act for settling the peace and quiet of the church ordains, that no person be admitted or continued to be a minister or preacher unless he have taken the oath of allegiance, and subscribed the assurance that he held the king to be de facto et de jure, and also the confession of faith; and that he owns and acknowledges presbyterian church-government to be the only government of this church, and that he will submit thereto and concur therewith, and will never endeavour, directly or indirectly, the prejudice or subversion thereof. Id. 715. Laing, iv. 255.

This act seems not to have been strictly insisted upon; and the episcopal clergy, though their advocates did not forget to raise a cry of persecution, which was believed in England, are said to have been treated with singular favour. De Foe challenges them to show any one minister that ever was deposed for not acknowledging the church, if at the same time he offered to acknowledge the government and take the oaths; and says they have been often challenged on this head. Hist. of Church of Scotland, p. 319. In fact, a statute was passed in 1695, which confirmed all ministers who would qualify themselves by taking the oaths: and no less than 116 (according to Laing, iv. 259) did so continue; nay, De Foe reckons 165 at the ne of the union, p. 320.

The rigid presbyterians inveighed against any toleration, as much as they did against the king's authority over their own church. But the government paid little attention to their bigotry; besides the above mentioned episcopal clergymen, those who seceded from the church, though universally jacobites, and most dangerously so, were indulged with meeting-houses in all towns; and by an act of the queen, 10 Anne, c. 7, obtained a full toleration, on condition of praying for the royal family, with which they never complied. It was thought necessary to put them under some fresh restrictions in 1748, their zeal for the Pretender being notorious and universal, by an act 21 Geo. II. c. 34; which has very properly been repealed after the motive for it had wholly ceased, and even at first was hardly reconcilable with the general principles of religious liberty; though it ill becomes those to censure it who vindicate the penal laws of Elizabeth against popery.

cause, however, of the prevalent disaffection at this period was the condition of Scotland, an ancient, independent kingdom, inhabited by a proud, high-spirited people, relatively to another kingdom, which they had long regarded with enmity, still with jealousy, but to which, in despite of their theoretical equality, they were kept in subordination by an insurmountable necessity. The union of the two crowns had withdrawn their sovereign and his court; yet their government had been national, and on the whole with no great intermixture of English influence. Many reasons, however, might be given for a more complete incorporation, which had been the favourite project of James I., and was discussed, at least on the part of Scotland, by commissioners appointed in 1670. That treaty failed of making any progress, the terms proposed being such as the English parliament would never have accepted. At the revolution a similar plan was just hinted and abandoned. Meanwhile, the new character that the English government had assumed rendered it more difficult to preserve the actual connexion. A king of both countries, especially by origin more allied to the weaker, might maintain some impartiality in his behaviour towards each of them. But if they were to be ruled, in effect, nearly as two republics; that is, if the power of their parliaments should be so much enhanced as ultimately to determine the principal measures of state, which was at least the case in England, no one who saw their mutual jealousy, rising on one side to the highest exasperation, could fail to anticipate that some great revolution must be at hand; and that an union, neither federal nor legislative, but possessing every inconvenience of both, could not long be endured. The well known business of the Darien company must have undeceived every rational man who dreamed of any alternative but incorporation or separation. The Scots' parliament took care to bring on the crisis by the act of security in 1704. It was enacted, that on the queen's death without issue, the estates should meet to name a successor of the royal line, and a protestant; but that this should not be the same

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

person who would succeed to the crown of England, unless during her majesty's reign conditions should be established to secure from English influence the honour and independence of the kingdom, the authority of parliament, the religion, trade, and liberty of the nation. This was explained to mean a free intercourse with the plantations and the benefits of the navigation act. The prerogative of declaring peace and war was to be subjected for ever to the approbation of parliament, lest at any future time these conditions should be revoked.

Those who obtained the act of security were partly of the jacobite faction, who saw in it the hope of restoring at least Scotland to the banished heir; partly of a very different description, whigs in principle, and determined enemies of the Pretender, but attached to their country, jealous of the English court, and determined to settle a legislative union on such terms as became an independent state. Such an union was now seen in England to be indispensable; the treaty was soon afterwards begun, and after a long discussion of the terms between the commissioners of both kingdoms, the incorporation took effect on the 1st of May, 1707. It is provided by the articles of this treaty, confirmed by the parliaments, that the succession of the united kingdom shall remain to the princess Sophia, and the heirs of her body, being protestants; that all privileges of trade shall belong equally to both nations; that there shall be one great seal, and the same coin, weights, and measures; that the episcopal and presbyterian churches of England and Scotland shall be for ever established, as essential and fundamental parts of the union; that the united kingdom shall be represented by one and the same parliament, to be called the parliament of Great Britain; that the number of peers for Scotland shall be sixteen, to be elected for every parliament by the whole body, and the number of representatives of the commons forty-five, two-thirds of whom to be chosen by the counties, and one-third by the boroughs; that the crown be restrained from creating any new peers of Scotland; that both parts of the united

kingdom shall be subject to the same duties of excise, and the same customs on export and import; but that when England raises two millions by a land-tax, 48,000l. shall be raised in Scotland, and in like proportion.

Scotland.

It has not been unusual for Scotsmen, even in modern times, while they cannot but acknowledge the expediency of an union, and the blessings which they have reaped from it, to speak of its conditions as less favourable than their ancestors ought to have claimed. For this, however, there does not seem much reason. The ratio of population would indeed have given Scotland about one-eighth of the legislative body, instead of something less than one-twelfth; but no government except the merest democracy is settled on the sole basis of numbers; and if the comparison of wealth and of public contributions was to be admitted, it may be thought that a country, which stipulated for itself to pay less than one-fortieth of direct taxation, was not entitled to a much greater share of the representation than it obtained. Combining the two ratios of population and property, there seems little objection to this part of the union; and in general it may be observed of the articles of that treaty, what often occurs with compacts intended to oblige future ages, that they have rather tended to throw obstacles in the way of reformations for the substantial benefit of Scotland, than to protect her against encroachment and usurpation.

This, however, could not be securely anticipated in the reign of Anne; and no doubt the measure was an experiment of such hazard, that every lover of his country must have consented in trembling, or revolted from it with disgust. No past experience of history was favourable to the absorption of a lesser state (at least where the government partook so much of the republican form), in one of superior power and ancient rivalry. The representation of Scotland in the united legislature was too feeble to give any thing like security against the English prejudices and

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

animosities, if they should continue or revive. The church was exposed to the most apparent perils, brought thus within the power of a legislature so frequently influenced by one which held her not as a sister, but rather a bastard usurper of a sister's inheritance; and though her permanence was guaranteed by the treaty, yet it was hard to say, how far the legal competence of parliament might hereafter be deemed to extend, or at least how far she might be abridged of her privileges and impaired in her dignity*. If very few of these mischiefs have resulted from the union, it has doubtless been owing to the prudence of our government, and chiefly to the general sense of right, and the diminution both of national and religious bigotry during the last century. But it is always to be kept in mind, as the best justification of those who came into so great a sacrifice of natural patriotism, that they gave up no excellent form of polity, that the Scots constitution had never produced the people's happiness, that their parliament was bad in its composition, and in practice little else than a factious and venal aristocracy; that they had before them the alternatives of their present condition, with the prospect of unceasing discontent half suppressed by unceasing corruption, or of a more honourable, but very precarious separation of the two kingdoms, the renewal of national wars and border-feuds, at a cost the poorer of the two could never endure, and at a hazard of ultimate conquest, which, with all her pride and bravery, the experience of the last generation had shown to be no impossible term of the contest.

The union closes the story of the Scots constitution. From its own nature, not more than from the gross prostitution with

* Archbishop Tenison said, in the debates on the union, he thought the narrow notions of all churches had been their ruin, and that he believed the church of Scotland to be as true a protestant church as the church of England, though he could not say it was as perfect. Carstares, 759. This sort of language was encouraging; but the exclusive doctrine, or jus divinum, was sure to retain many advocates, and has always done so. Fortunately for Great Britain, it has not had the slightest effect on the laity in modern times.

which a majority had sold themselves to the surrender of their own legislative existence, it was long odious to both parties in Scotland. An attempt to dissolve it by the authority of the united parliament itself was made in a very few years, and not very decently supported by the whigs against the queen's last ministry. But after the accession of the house of Hanover, the jacobite party displayed such strength in Scotland, that to maintain the union was evidently indispensable for the reigning family. That party comprised a large proportion of the superior classes, and nearly the whole of the episcopal church, which, though fallen, was for some years considerable in numbers. The national prejudices ran in favour of their ancient stock of kings; conspiring with the sentiment of dishonour attached to the union itself, and jealousy of some innovations which a legislature they were unwilling to recognise thought fit to introduce. It is certain that jacobitism, in England little more, after the reign of George I., than an empty word, the vehicle of indefinite dissatisfaction in those who were never ready to encounter peril or sacrifice advantage for its affected principle, subsisted in Scotland as a vivid emotion of loyalty, a generous promptitude to act or suffer in its cause; and even when all hope was extinct, clung to the recollections of the past, long after the very name was only known by tradition, and every feeling connected with it had been wholly effaced to the south of the Tweed. It is believed, that some persons in that country kept up an intercourse with Charles Edward as their sovereign till his decease in 1787. They had given, forty years before, abundant testimonies of their activity to serve him. That rebellion is in more respects than one disgraceful to the British government; but it furnished an opportunity for a wise measure to prevent its recurrence, and to break down in some measure the aristocratical ascendancy, by abolishing the hereditary jurisdictions which, acccording to the genius of the feudal system, were exercised by territorial proprietors

CHAP. XVII. Scotland.

under royal charter or prescription. Much, however, still remains to be done, in order to place that now wealthy and well-instructed people on a footing with the English, as to the just participation of political liberty; but what would best conform to the spirit of the act of union might possibly sometimes contravene its letter.

CHAPTER XVIII.

ON THE CONSTITUTION OF IRELAND.

Ancient State of Ireland—Its Kingdoms and Chieftainships—Law of Tanistry and Gavel-kind—Rude State of Society—Invasion of Henry II.—Acquisitions of English Barons—Forms of English Constitution established—Exclusion of native Irish from them—Degeneracy of English Settlers—Parliament of Ireland—Disorderly State of the Island—The Irish regain Part of their Territories—English Law confined to the Pale—Poyning's Law—Royal Authority revives under Henry VIII.—Resistance of Irish to Act of Supremacy—Protestant Church established by Elizabeth—Effects of this Measure—Rebellions of her Reign—Opposition in Parliament—Arbitrary Proceedings of Sir Henry Sidney—James I.—Laws against Catholics enforced—English Law established throughout Ireland—Settlements of English in Munster, Ulster, and other Parts—Injustice attending them—Constitution of Irish Parliament—Charles I. promises Graces to the Irish—Does not confirm them—Administration of Strafford—Rebellion of 1641—*Subjugation of Irish by Cromwell—Restoration of Charles II.—Act of Settlement—Hopes of Catholics under Charles and James—War of* 1689, *and final Reduction of Ireland—Penal Laws against Catholics—Dependence of Irish on English Parliament—Growth of a patriotic Party in* 1753.

THE antiquities of Irish history, imperfectly recorded, and rendered more obscure by controversy, seem hardly to belong to our present subject. But the political order or state of society among that people at the period of Henry II.'s invasion must be distinctly apprehended and kept in mind, before we can pass a judgment upon, or even understand, the course of succeeding events, and the policy of the English government in relation to that island.

It can hardly be necessary to mention (the idle traditions of a derivation from Spain having long been exploded) that the Irish are descended from one of those Celtic tribes, which occupied

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

Gaul and Britain some centuries before the Christian era. Their language, however, is so far dissimilar from that spoken in Wales, though evidently of the same root, as to render it probable that the emigration, whether from this island or from Armorica, was in a remote age; while its close resemblance to that of the Scottish Highlanders, which hardly can be called another dialect, as unequivocally demonstrates a nearer affinity of the two nations. It seems to be generally believed, though the antiquaries are far from unanimous, that the Irish are the parent tribe, and planted their colony in Scotland since the commencement of our era.

About the end of the eighth century, some of those swarms of Scandinavian descent which were poured out in such unceasing and irresistible multitudes on France and Britain began to settle on the coasts of Ireland. These colonists were known by the name of Ostmen, or men from the east, as in France they were called Normans from their northern origin. They occupied the sea-coast from Antrim easterly round to Limerick, and by them the principal cities of Ireland were built. They waged war for some time against the aboriginal Irish in the interior; but though better acquainted with the arts of civilized life, their inferiority in numbers caused them to fail at length in this contention, and the piratical invasions from their brethren in Norway becoming less frequent in the eleventh and twelfth centuries, they had fallen into a state of dependence on the native princes.

The island was divided into five provincial kingdoms, Leinster, Munster, Ulster, Connaught, and Meath; one of whose sovereigns was chosen king of Ireland in some general meeting, probably, of the nobility or smaller chieftains, and of the prelates. But there seems to be no clear tradition as to the character of this national assembly, though some maintain it to have been triennially held. The monarch of the island had tributes from the inferior kings, and a certain supremacy, especially in the defence of the country against invasion; but the constitution was of a federal nature, and each was independent in ruling his people,

or in making war on his neighbours. Below the kings were the chieftains of different septs or families, perhaps in one or two degrees of subordination, bearing a relation which may be loosely called feudal to each other and to the crown *.

These chieftainships, and perhaps even the kingdoms themselves, though not partible, followed a very different rule of succession than that of primogeniture. They were subject to the law of tanistry, of which the principle is defined to be, that the demesne lands and dignity of chieftainship descended to the eldest and most worthy of the same blood; these epithets not being used, we may suppose, synonymously, but in order to indicate that the preference given to seniority was to be controlled by a due regard to desert. No better mode, it is evident, of providing for a perpetual supply of those civil quarrels, in which the Irish are supposed to place so much of their enjoyment, could have been devised. Yet, as these grew sometimes a little too frequent, it was not unusual to elect a tanist, or reversionary successor, in the lifetime of the reigning chief, as has been the practice of more civilized nations. An infant was never allowed to hold the sceptre of an Irish kingdom, but was necessarily postponed to his uncle or other kinsman of mature age; as was the case also in England, even after the consolidation of the Anglo-Saxon monarchy †.

The land-owners who did not belong to the noble class bore the same name as their chieftain, and were presumed to be of the same lineage. But they held their estates by a very different and an extraordinary tenure; that of Irish gavel-kind. On the decease of a proprietor, instead of an equal partition among his

* Sir James Ware's Antiquities of Ireland. Leland's Hist. of Ireland; Introduction. Ledwich's Dissertations.

† Id. Auct.: also Davis's Reports, 29, and his "Discovery of the true Causes why Ireland was never entirely subdued till his Majesty's happy Reign," 169. Sir John Davis, author of the philosophical poem, Γνωθι Σεαυτον, was chief justice of Ireland under James I. The tract just quoted is well known as a concise and luminous exposition of the history of that country from the English invasion.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

children, as in the gavel-kind of English law, the chief of the sept, according to the generally received explanation, made, or was intitled to make, a fresh division of all the lands within his district, allotting to the heirs of the deceased a portion of the integral territory along with the other members of the tribe. It seems impossible to conceive that these partitions were renewed on every death of one of the sept. But they are asserted to have at least taken place so frequently, as to produce a continual change of possession, and consequently to preclude altogether the improvement of the soil. The policy of this custom doubtless sprung from too jealous a solicitude as to the excessive inequality of wealth, and from the habit of looking on the tribe as one family of occupants, not wholly divested of its original right by the necessary allotment of lands to particular cultivators. It bore some analogy to the institution of the year of jubilee in the Mosaic code, and, what may be thought more immediate, was almost exactly similar to the rule of succession which is laid down in the ancient laws of Wales *.

In the territories of each sept, judges called Brehons, and taken out of certain families, sat with primeval simplicity upon turfen benches in some conspicuous situation, to determine controversies. Their usages are almost wholly unknown, for what have been published as fragments of the Brehon law seem open to great suspicion at least of being interpolated †. It is notorious,

* Ware. Leland. Ledwich. Davis's Discovery, ibid. Reports, 49. It is remarkable that Davis seems to have been aware of an analogy between the custom of Ireland and Wales, and yet that he only quotes the statute of Rutland, 12 Edw. I., which by itself does not prove it. It is however proved, if I understand the passage, by one of the Leges Walliæ, published by Wotton, p. 139. A gavel or partition was made on the death of every member of a family for three generations, after which none could be enforced. But these parceners were to be all in the same degree, so that nephews could not compel their uncle to a partition, but must wait till his death, when they were to be put on an equality with their cousins; and this, I suppose, is meant by the expression in the statute of Rutland, quod hæreditates remaneant partibiles inter *consimiles hæredes*.

† Leland seems to favour the authenticity of the supposed Brehon laws published by Vallancey. Introduction, 29. The style is said to be very distinguishable from the Irish of the twelfth or thirteenth century, and the laws themselves to have no allusion to the settlement of foreigners in

that according to the custom of many states in the infancy of civilization, the Irish admitted the composition or fine for murder, instead of capital punishment; and this was divided, as in other countries, between the kindred of the slain and the judge.

In the twelfth century it is evident that the Irish nation had made far less progress in the road of improvement than any other of Europe in circumstances of climate and position so little unfavourable. They had no arts, that deserve the name, nor any commerce, their best line of sea-coast being occupied by the Norwegians. They had no fortified towns, nor any houses or castles of stone, the first having been erected at Tuam a very few years before the invasion of Henry *. Their conversion to Christianity indeed, and the multitude of cathedral and conventual churches erected throughout the island, had been the cause, and probably the sole cause, of the rise of some cities, or villages with that name, such as Armagh, Cashel, and Trim. But neither the chiefs nor the people loved to be confined within their precincts, and chose rather to dwell in scattered cabins amidst the free solitude of bogs and mountains. As we might expect, their qualities

Ireland, or to coined money; whence some ascribe them to the eighth century. On the other hand, Ledwich proves that some parts must be later than the tenth century. Dissertations, i. 270. And others hold them to be not older than the thirteenth. Campbell's Historical Sketch of Ireland, 41. It is also maintained that they are very unfaithfully translated. But when we find the Anglo-Saxon and Norman usages, relief, aid, wardship, trial by jury, and that unanimous, and a sort of correspondence in the ranks of society with those of England, which all we read elsewhere of the ancient Irish seems to contradict, it is impossible to resist the suspicion that they are either extremely interpolated, or were compiled in a late age, and among some of the septs who had most intercourse with the English. We know that the degenerate colonists, such as the earls of Desmond, adopted the Brehon law in their territories; but this would probably be with some admixture of that to which they had been used.

* "The first pile of lime and stone that ever was in Ireland was the castle of Tuam, built in 1161 by Roderic O'Connor, the monarch." Introduction to Cox's History of Ireland. I do not find that any later writer controverts this, as far as the aboriginal Irish are concerned; but doubtless the Norwegian Ostmen had stone churches, and there seems little doubt that some at least of the famous round towers so common in Ireland were erected by them. See Ledwich's Dissertations, vii. 143; and the book called Grose's Antiquities of Ireland, also written by Ledwich. Piles of stone without mortar are excluded by Cox's expression. In fact, the Irish had very few stone houses, or even regular villages and towns, before the time of James I. Davis, 170.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

were such as belong to man by his original nature, and which he displays in all parts of the globe, where the state of society is inartificial: they were gay, generous, hospitable, ardent in attachment and hate, credulous of falsehood, prone to anger and violence, generally crafty, and cruel. With these very general attributes of a barbarous people, the Irish character was distinguished by a peculiar vivacity of imagination, an enthusiasm and impetuosity of passion, and a more than ordinary bias towards a submissive and superstitious spirit in religion.

This spirit may justly be traced in a great measure to the virtues and piety of the early preachers of the gospel in that country. Their influence, though at this remote age, and with our imperfect knowledge, it may hardly be distinguishable amidst the licentiousness and ferocity of a rude people, was necessarily directed to counteract those vices, and cannot have failed to mitigate and compensate their evil. In the seventh and eighth centuries, while a total ignorance seemed to overspread the face of Europe, the monasterie sand schools of Ireland preserved, in the best manner they could, such learning as had survived the revolutions of the Roman world. But the learning of monasteries had never much efficacy in dispelling the ignorance of the laity; and indeed even in them it had decayed long before the twelfth century. The clergy were respected and numerous; the bishops alone amounting at one time to no less than 300*; and it has been maintained by our most learned writers, that they were wholly independent of the see of Rome, till a little before the English invasion, one of their primates thought fit to solicit the pall from thence on his consecration, according to the discipline long practised in other western churches.

It will be readily perceived that the government of Ireland must have been almost entirely aristocratical, and not very unlike that of the feudal confederacies in France during the ninth and

* Ledwich, i. 395.

tenth centuries. It was perhaps still more oppressive. The ancient condition of the common people of Ireland, says sir James Ware, was very little different from slavery *. Unless we believe this condition to have been greatly deteriorated under the rule of their native chieftains after the English settlement, for which there seems no good reason, we must give little credit to the fanciful pictures of prosperity and happiness in that period of aboriginal independence which the Irish, in their discontent with later times, have been apt to draw. They had, no doubt, like all other nations, good and wise princes, as well as tyrants and usurpers. But we find by their annals, that out of two hundred ancient kings, of whom some brief memorials are recorded, not more than thirty came to a natural death †; while, for the later period, the oppression of the Irish chieftains, and of those degenerate English who trod in their steps, and emulated the vices they should have restrained, is the one constant theme of history. Their exactions kept the peasants in hopeless poverty, their tyranny in perpetual fear. The chief claimed a right of taking from his tenants provisions for his own use at discretion, or of sojourning in their houses. This was called coshery, and is somewhat analogous to the royal prerogative of purveyance.. A still more terrible oppression was the quartering of the lords' soldiers on the people, sometimes mitigated by a composition, called by the Irish bonaght ‡. For the perpetual warfare of these petty chieftains had given rise to the employment of mercenary troops, partly natives, partly from Scotland, known by the uncouth names of kerns and gallow glasses, who proved the scourge of Ireland down to its final subjugation by Elizabeth.

This unusually backward condition of society furnished but an inauspicious presage for the future. Yet we may be led by the analogy of other countries to think it probable, that, if Ireland had not tempted the cupidity of her neighbours, there would have

* Antiquities of Ireland, ii. 76.
† Ledwich, i. 260.
‡ Ware, ii. 74. Davis's Discovery, 174. Spenser's State of Ireland, 390.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

arisen in the course of time some Egbert or Harold Harfager to consolidate the provincial kingdoms into one hereditary monarchy, which by the adoption of better laws, the increase of commerce, and a frequent intercourse with the chief courts of Europe, might have taken as respectable a station as that of Scotland in the commonwealth of Christendom. If the two islands had afterwards become incorporated through intermarriage of their sovereigns, as would very likely have taken place, it might have been on such conditions of equality as Ireland, till lately, has never known, and certainly without that long tragedy of crime and misfortune which her annals unfold.

The reduction of Ireland, at least in name, under the dominion of Henry II. was not achieved by his own efforts. He had little share in it, beyond receiving the homage of Irish princes, and granting charters to his English nobility. Strongbow, Lacy, Fitz-Stephen, were the real conquerors, through whom alone any portion of Irish territory was gained by arms or treaty; and as they began the enterprise without the king, they carried it on also for themselves, deeming their swords a better security than his charters. This ought to be kept in mind, as revealing the secret of the English government over Ireland, and furnishing a justification for what has the appearance of a negligent abandonment of its authority. The few barons, and other adventurers, who by dint of forces hired by themselves, and, in some instances, by conventions with the Irish, settled their armed colonies in the island, thought they had done much for Henry II., in causing his name to be acknowledged, his administration to be established in Dublin, and in holding their lands by his grant. They claimed in their turn, according to the practice of all nations and the principles of equity, that those who had borne the heat of the battle should enjoy the spoil without molestation. Hence, the enormous grants of Henry and his successors, though so often censured for impolicy, were probably what they could scarce avoid; and though not perhaps absolutely stipulated as

the price of titular sovereignty, were something very like it *. But what is to be censured, and what at all hazards they were bound to refuse, was the violation of their faith to the Irish princes, in sharing among these insatiable barons their ancient territories, which, setting aside the wrong of the first invasion, were protected by their homage and submission, and sometimes by positive conventions. The whole island, in fact, with the exception of the county of Dublin and the maritime towns, was divided before the end of the thirteenth century, and most of it in the twelfth, among ten English families: earl Strongbow, who had some colour of hereditary title, according to our notions of law, by his marriage with the daughter of Dermot, king of Leinster, obtaining a grant of that province; Lacy acquiring Meath, which was not reckoned a part of Leinster, in the same manner; the whole of Ulster being given to de Courcy; the whole of Connaught to de Burgh; and the rest to six others. These, it must be understood, they were to hold in a sort of feudal suzerainty, parcelling them among their tenants of English race, and expelling the natives, or driving them into the worst parts of the country by an incessant warfare.

The Irish chieftains, though compelled to show some exterior signs of submission to Henry, never thought of renouncing their own authority or the customs of their forefathers, nor did he pretend to interfere with the government of their septs, content with their promise of homage and tribute, neither of which were afterwards paid. But in those parts of Ireland which he reckoned his own, it was his aim to establish the English laws, to render the lesser island, as it were, a counterpart in all its civil constitution, and mirror of the greater. The colony from England was already not inconsiderable, and likely to increase; the Ostmen, who inhabited the maritime towns, came very willingly, as all settlers of Teutonic origin have done, into the English customs and language;

* Davis, 135.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

and upon this basis, leaving the accession of the aboriginal people to future contingencies, he raised the edifice of the Irish constitution. He gave charters of privilege to the chief towns, began a division into counties, appointed sheriffs and judges of assize to administer justice, erected supreme courts at Dublin, and perhaps assembled parliaments *. His successors pursued the same course of policy; the great charter of liberties, as soon as granted by John at Runnymede, was sent over to Ireland, and the whole common-law, with all its forms of process, and every privilege it was deemed to convey, became the birth-right of the Anglo-Irish colonists †.

These had now spread over a considerable part of the island. Twelve counties appear to have been established by John, comprehending most of Leinster and Munster, while the two ambitious families of Courcy and de Burgh encroached more and more on the natives in the other provinces ‡. But the same necessity, which gratitude for the services, or sense of the power of the great families had engendered, for rewarding them by excessive grants of territory, led to other concessions that rendered them almost independent of the monarchy §. The franchise of a county palatine gave a right of exclusive civil and criminal jurisdiction, so that the king's writ should not run, nor his judges come within it, though judgment in its courts might be reversed by writ of error in the king's bench. The lord might enfeoff tenants to hold by knight's service of himself; he had almost all regalian rights;

* Leland, 80, et post. Davis, 100.

† 4 Inst. 349. Leland, 203. Harris's Hibernica, ii. 14.

‡ These counties are Dublin, Kildare, Meath (including Westmeath), Louth, Carlow, Wexford, Kilkenny, Waterford, Cork, Tipperary, Kerry, and Limerick. In the reign of Edward I. we find sheriffs also of Connaught and Roscommon. Leland, i. 19. Thus, except the northern province and some of the central districts, all Ireland was shire-ground, and subject to the crown in the thirteenth century, however it might fall away in the two next. Those who write confusedly about this subject pretend that the authority of the king at no time extended beyond the pale; whereas that name was not known, I believe, till the fifteenth century. Under the great earl of Pembroke, who died in 1219, the whole island was perhaps nearly as much reduced under obedience as in the reign of Elizabeth. Leland, 205.

§ Leland, 170.

the lands of those attainted for treason escheated to him; he acted in every thing rather as one of the great feudataries of France or Germany than a subject of the English crown. Such had been Chester, and only Chester, in England; but in Ireland this dangerous independence was permitted to Strongbow in Leinster, to Lacy in Meath, and at a later time to the Butlers and Geraldines in parts of Munster. Strongbow's vast inheritance soon fell to five sisters, who took to their shares, with the same palatine rights, the counties of Carlow, Wexford, Kilkenny, Kildare, and the district of Leix, since called the Queen's County *. In all these palatinates, forming by far the greater portion of the English territories, the king's process had its course only within the lands belonging to the church †. The English aristocracy of Ireland, in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, bears a much closer analogy to that of France in rather an earlier period than any thing which the history of this island can show.

Pressed by the inroads of these barons, and despoiled frequently of lands secured to them by grant or treaty, the native chiefs had recourse to the throne for protection, and would in all likelihood have submitted without repining to a sovereign who could have afforded it ‡. But John and Henry III., in whose reigns the independence of the aristocracy was almost complete, though insisting by writs and proclamations on a due observance of the laws, could do little more for their new subjects, who found a better chance of redress in standing on their own defence. The powerful septs of the north enjoyed their liberty. But those of Munster and Leinster, intermixed with the English, and encroached upon from every side, were the victims of constant injustice; and abandoning the open country for bog and mountain

* Davis, 140. William Marischal, earl of Pembroke, who married the daughter of earl Strongbow, left five sons and five daughters; the first all died without issue.

† Id. 147. Leland, 291.

‡ Id. 194. 209.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

pasture, grew more poor and barbarous in the midst of the general advance of Europe. Many remained under the yoke of English lords, and in a worse state than that of villenage, because still less protected by the tribunals of justice. The Irish had originally stipulated with Henry II. for the use of their own laws*. They were consequently held beyond the pale of English justice, and regarded as aliens at the best, sometimes as enemies, in our courts. Thus, as by the Brehon customs murder was only punished by a fine, it was not held felony to kill one of Irish race, unless he had conformed to the English law†. Five septs, to which the royal families of Ireland belonged, the names of O'Neal, O'Connor, O'Brien, O'Malachlin, and Mac Murrough, had the special immunity of being within the protection of our law, and it was felony to kill one of them. I do not know by what means they obtained this privilege; for some of these were certainly as far from the king's obedience as any in Ireland‡. But besides these, a vast number of charters of denization were granted to particular persons of Irish descent from the reign of Henry II. downwards, which gave them and their posterity the full birth-rights of English subjects;

* Leland, 225.

† Davis, 100. 109. He quotes the following record, from an assize at Waterford, in the 4th of Edw. II. (1311), which may be extracted, as briefly illustrating the state of law in Ireland better than any general positions. "Quod Robertus le Wayleys rectatus de morte Johannis filii Ivor Mac-Gillemory felonicè per ipsum interfecti, &c. Venit et bene cognovit quod prædictum Johannem interfecit; dicit tamen quod per ejus interfectionem feloniam committere non potuit, quia dicit, quod prædictus Johannes fuit purus Hibernicus, et non de libero sanguine, &c. Et cum dominus dicti Johannis, cujus Hibernicus idem Johannes fuit, die quo interfectus fuit, solutionem pro ipso Johanne Hibernico suo sic interfecto petere voluerit, ipse Robertus paratus erit ad respondendum de solutione prædictâ prout justitia suadebit. Et super hoc venit quidam Johannes le Poer, et dicit pro domino rege, quod prædictus Johannes filius Ivor Mac-Gillemory, et antecessores sui de cognomine prædicto a tempore quo dominus Henricus filius imperatricis, quondam dominus Hiberniæ, tritavus domini regis nunc, fuit in Hibernià, legem Anglicanam in Hibernià usque ad hanc diem habere, et secundum ipsam legem judicari et deduci debent." We have here both the general rule, that the death of an Irishman was only punishable by a composition to his lord, and the exception in behalf of those natives who had conformed to the English law.

‡ Id. 104. Leland, 82. It was necessary to plead in bar of an action, that the plaintiff was Hibernicus, et non de quinque sanguinibus.

nor does there seem to have been any difficulty in procuring these*. It cannot be said, therefore, that the English government, or those who represented it in Dublin, displayed any reluctance to emancipate the Irish from thraldom. Whatever obstruction might be interposed to this was from that assembly whose concurrence was necessary to every general measure, the Anglo-Irish parliament. Thus, in 1278, we find the first instance of an application from the community of Ireland, as it is termed, but probably from some small number of septs dwelling among the colony, that they might be admitted to live by the English law, and offering 8000 marks for this favour. The letter of Edward I. to the justiciary of Ireland on this is sufficiently characteristic both of his wisdom and his rapaciousness. He is satisfied of the expediency of granting the request, provided it can be done with the general consent of the prelates and nobles of Ireland, and directs the justiciary, if he can obtain that concurrence, to agree with the petitioners for the highest fine he can obtain, and for a body of good and stout soldiers †. But this necessary consent of the aristocracy was withheld. Excuses were made to evade the king's desire. It was wholly incompatible with their systematic encroachments on their Irish neighbours to give them the safeguard of the king's writ for their possessions. The Irish renewed their supplication more than once, both to Edward I. and Edward III.; they found the same readiness in the English court; they sunk at home through the same unconquerable oligarchy ‡. It is not to be imagined that the entire Irishry partook in this desire of renouncing their ancient customs. Besides the prejudices of nationality, there was a strong inducement to preserve the Brehon laws of tanistry, which suited better a warlike tribe than the hereditary succession of England. But it was

* Davis, 106. "If I should collect out of the records all the charters of this kind, I should make a volume thereof." They began as early as the reign of Henry III. Leland, 225.

† Leland, 243.

‡ Id. 289.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

the unequivocal duty of the legislature to avail itself of every token of voluntary submission, which, though beginning only with the subject septs of Leinster, would gradually incorporate the whole nation in a common bond of co-equal privileges with their conquerors.

Meanwhile, these conquerors were themselves brought under a moral captivity of the most disgraceful nature; and not as the rough soldier of Rome is said to have been subdued by the art and learning of Greece, the Anglo-Norman barons, that had wrested Ireland from the native possessors, fell into their barbarous usages, and emulated the vices of the vanquished. This degeneracy of the English settlers began very soon, and continued to increase for several ages. They intermarried with the Irish; they connected themselves with them by the national custom of fostering, which formed an artificial relationship of the strictest nature*; they spoke the Irish language; they affected the Irish dress and manner of wearing the hair†; they even adopted, in

* "There were two other customs proper and peculiar to the Irishry, which being the cause of many strong combinations and factions, do tend to the utter ruin of a commonwealth. The one was *fostering*, the other *gossipred*; both which have ever been of greater estimation among this people than with any other nation in the Christian world. For *fostering*, I did never hear or read that it was in that use or reputation in any other country, barbarous or civil, as it hath been, and yet is, in Ireland, where they put away all their children to fosterers; the potent and rich men selling, the meaner sort buying, the alterage and nursing of their children; and the reason is, because in the opinion of this people, *fostering* hath always been a stronger alliance than blood; and the foster-children do love and are beloved of their foster-fathers and their sept, more than of their own natural parents and kindred, and do participate of their means more frankly, and do adhere to them in all fortunes, with more affection and constancy. The like may be said of *gossipred* or compaternity, which though by the canon law it be a spiritual affinity, and a juror that was gossip to either of the parties might in former times have been challenged, as not indifferent, by our law, yet there was no nation under the sun that ever made so religious an account of it as the Irish." Davis, 179.

† "For that now there is no diversity in array between the English marchers and the Irish enemies, and so by colour of the English marchers, the Irish enemies do come from day to day into the English counties as English marchers, and do rob and kill by the highways, and destroy the common people by lodging upon them in the nights, and also do kill the husbands in the nights, and do take their goods to the Irish men, wherefore it is ordained and agreed, that no manner man that will be taken for an Englishman shall have no beard above his mouth; that is to say, that he have no hairs upon his upper lip, so that the said lip be once at least shaven every fortnight, or of equal growth with the nether lip. And if

some instances, Irish surnames; they harassed their tenants with every Irish exaction and tyranny; they administered Irish law, if any at all; they became chieftains, rather than peers; and neither regarded the king's summons to his parliaments, nor paid any obedience to his judges*. Thus the great family of de Burgh or Burke, in Connaught, fell off almost entirely from subjection; nor was that of the earls of Desmond, a younger branch of the house of Geraldine or Fitzgerald, much less independent of the crown, though by the title it enjoyed, and the palatine franchises granted to it by Edward III. over the counties of Limeric and Kerry, it seemed to keep up more show of English allegiance.

The regular constitution of Ireland was, as I have said, as nearly as possible a counterpart of that established in this country. The administration was vested in an English justiciary or lord deputy, assisted by a council of judges and principal officers, mixed with some prelates and barons, but subordinate to that of England, as the immediate advisers of the sovereign. The courts of Chancery, King's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer, were the same in both countries; but writs of error lay from judgments given in the second of these to the same court in England. For all momentous purposes, as to grant a subsidy, or enact a statute, it was as necessary to summon a parliament in the one island as in the other. An Irish parliament originally, like an English one, was but a more numerous council, to which the more distant as well as the neighbouring barons were summoned, whose consent, though dispensed with in ordinary acts of state, was both the pledge and the condition of their obedience to legislative provisions. In 1295, the sheriff of each county and liberty is directed to return two

any man be found among the English contrary hereunto, that then it shall be lawful to every man to take them and their goods as Irish enemies, and to ransom them as Irish enemies." Irish Statutes, 25 H. VI. c. 4.

* Davis, 152. 182. Leland, i. 256, &c. Ware, ii. 58.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

knights to a parliament held by Wogan, an active and able deputy *. The date of the admission of burgesses cannot be fixed with precision; but it was probably not earlier than the reign of Edward III. They appear in 1341, and the earl of Desmond summoned many deputies from corporations to his rebel convention held at Kilkenny in the next year†. The commons are mentioned as an essential part of parliament in an ordinance of 1359, before which time, in the opinion of lord Coke, "the conventions in Ireland were not so much parliaments as assemblies of great men‡." This, as appears, is not strictly correct; but in substance they were, perhaps, little else long afterwards.

The earliest statutes on record are of the year 1310, and from that year they are lost till 1429, though we know many parliaments to have been held in the mean time, and are acquainted by other means with their provisions. Those of 1310 bear witness to the degeneracy of the English lords, and to the laudable zeal of a feeble government for the reformation of their abuses. They begin with an act to restrain great lords from taking of prises, lodging, and sojourning with the people of the country against their will. "It is agreed and assented," the act proceeds, "that no such prises shall be henceforth made without ready payment and agreement, and that none shall harbour or sojourn at the house of any other by such malice against the consent of him which is owner of the house to destroy his goods; and if any shall do the same, such prises, and such manner of destruction, shall be holden for open robbery, and the king shall have the suit thereof, if others will not, nor dare not sue. It is agreed also, that none shall keep idle people nor kearn (foot-soldiers) in time of peace to live upon the poor of the country, but that those which will have them shall keep them at their own charges, so that their free tenants, nor farmers, nor other tenants, be not charged

* Leland, 253. † Cox's Hist. of Ireland, 117. 120. ‡ Id. 125. 129. Leland, 313.

with them." The statute proceeds to restrain great lords or others, except such as have royal franchises, from giving protections, which they used to compel the people to purchase, and directs that there shall be commissions of assize and gaol delivery through all the counties of Ireland *.

These regulations exhibit a picture of Irish miseries. The barbarous practices of coshering and bonaght, the latter of which was generally known in later times by the name of coyne and livery, had been borrowed from those native chieftains whom our modern Hibernians sometimes hold forth as the paternal benefactors of their country †. It was the crime of the Geraldines and the de Courcys to have retrograded from the comparative humanity and justice of England, not to have deprived the people of freedom and happiness they had never known. These degenerate English, an epithet by which they were always distinguished, paid no regard to the statutes of a parliament which they had disdained to attend, and which could not render itself feared. We find many similar laws in the fifteenth century, after the interval which I have noticed in the printed records. And, in the intervening period, a parliament held by Lionel duke of Clarence, second son of Edward III., at Kilkenny, in 1367, the most numerous assembly that had ever met in Ireland, was prevailed upon to pass a very severe statute against the insubordinate and degenerate colonists. It recites that the English of the realm of Ireland were become mere Irish in their language, names, apparel, and manner of living, that they had rejected the English laws, and allied themselves by intermarriage with the Irish. It prohibits, under the penalties of high treason, or at least of forfeiture of lands, all these approximations to the native inhabitants, as well as the connexions of fostering and gossipred. The English are restrained from permitting the Irish to graze

* Irish Statutes.

† Davis, 174. 189. Leland, 281. Maurice Fitz-Thomas, earl of Desmond, was the first of the English, according to Ware, ii. 76, who imposed the exaction of coyne and livery.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

their lands, from presenting them to benefices, or receiving them into religious houses, and from entertaining their bards. On the other hand, they are forbidden to make war upon their Irish neighbours without the authority of the state. And to enforce better these provisions, the king's sheriffs are empowered to enter all franchises for the apprehension of felons or traitors *.

This statute, like all others passed in Ireland, so far from pretending to bind the Irish, regarded them not only as out of the king's allegiance, but as perpetually hostile to his government. They were generally denominated the Irish enemy. This doubtless was not according to the policy of Henry II., nor of the English government a considerable time after his reign. Nor can it be said to be the fact, though from some confusion of times the assertion is often made, that the island was not subject, in a general sense, to that prince, and to the three next kings of England. The English were settled in every province; an imperfect division of counties and administration of justice subsisted; and even the Irish chieftains, though ruling their septs by the Brehon law, do not appear in that period to have refused the acknowledgment of the king's sovereignty. But, compelled to defend their lands against perpetual aggression, they justly renounced all allegiance to a government which could not redeem the original wrong of its usurpation by the benefits of protection. They became gradually stronger, they regained part of their lost territories, and after the æra of 1315, when Edward Bruce invaded the kingdom with a Scots army, and, though ultimately defeated, threw the government into a disorder from which it never recovered, their progress was so rapid, that in the space of thirty or forty years, the northern provinces, and even part of the southern, were entirely lost to the crown of England †.

* Irish Statutes. Davis, 202. Cox. Leland.

† Leland, i. 278. 296. 324. Davis, 152. 197.

It is unnecessary in so brief a sketch to follow the unprofitable annals of Ireland in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. Amidst the usual variations of war, the English interests were continually losing ground. Once only Richard II. appeared with a very powerful army, and the princes of Ireland crowded round his throne to offer homage *. But upon his leaving the kingdom, they returned of course to their former independence and hostility. The long civil wars of England in the next century consummated the ruin of its power over the sister island. The Irish possessed all Ulster, and shared Connaught with the degenerate Burkes. The sept of O'Brien held their own district of Thomond, now the county of Clare. A considerable part of Leinster was occupied by other independent tribes; while, in the south, the earls of Desmond, lords either by property or territorial jurisdiction of the counties of Kerry and Limeric, and in some measure of those of Cork and Waterford, united the turbulence of English barons with the savage manners of Irish chieftains, ready to assume either character as best suited their rapacity and ambition, reckless of the king's laws or his commands, but not venturing, nor, upon the whole, probably wishing, to cast off the name of his subjects. The elder branch of their house, the earls of Kildare, and another illustrious family, the Butlers, earls of Ormond, were apparently more steady in their obedience to the crown; yet, in the great franchises of the latter, comprising the counties of Kilkenny and Tipperary, the king's writ had no course, nor did he exercise any civil or military authority but by the permission of this mighty peer †. Thus in the reign of Henry VII., when the English authority over Ireland had reached its lowest point, it was, with the exception perhaps of a very few sea-ports, to all intents confined to the four

* Leland, 342. The native chieftains who came to Dublin are said to have been seventy-five in number; but the insolence of the courtiers, who ridiculed an unusual dress and appearance, disgusted them.

† Davis, 193.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

counties of the English pale, a name not older perhaps than the preceding century; those of Dublin, Louth, Kildare, and Meath, the latter of which at that time included West Meath. But even in these there were extensive marches, or frontier districts, the inhabitants of which were hardly distinguishable from the Irish, and paid them a tribute, called black-rent; so that the real supremacy of the English laws was not probably established beyond the two first of those counties, from Dublin to Dundalk on the coast, and for about thirty miles inland*. From this time, however, we are to date its gradual recovery. The more steady councils and firmer prerogative of the Tudor kings left little chance of escape from their authority either for rebellious peers of English race, or the barbarous chieftains of Ireland.

I must pause at this place to observe, that we shall hardly find in the foregoing sketch of Irish history, during the period of the Plantagenet dynasty (nor am I conscious of having concealed any thing essential), that systematic oppression and misrule which is every day imputed to the English nation and its government. The policy of our kings appears to have generally been wise and beneficent; but it is duly to be remembered, that those very limitations of their prerogative which constitute liberty must occasionally obstruct the execution of the best purposes, and that the co-ordinate powers of parliament, so justly our boast, may

* Leland, ii. 822, et post. Davis, 199. 229. 236. Holingshed's Chronicles of Ireland, p. 4. Finglas, a baron of the exchequer in the reign of Henry VIII., in his Breviate of Ireland, from which Davis has taken great part of his materials, says expressly, that, by the disobedience of the Geraldines and Butlers, and their Irish connexions, "the whole land is now of Irish rule, except the little English pale, within the counties of Dublin and Meath, and Uriel [Louth], which pass not thirty or forty miles in compass." The English were also expelled from Munster, except the walled towns. The king had no profit out of Ulster, but the manor of Carlingford, nor any in Connaught. This treatise, written about 1530, is printed in Harris's Hibernica. The proofs that, in this age, the English law and government were confined to the four shires, are abundant. It is even mentioned in a statute, 13 H. VIII. c. 2.

readily become the screen of private tyranny and inveterate abuse. This incapacity of doing good as well as harm has produced, comparatively speaking, little mischief in Great Britain, where the aristocratical element of the constitution is neither so predominant, nor so much in opposition to the general interest, as it may be deemed to have been in Ireland. But it is manifestly absurd to charge the Edwards and Henries, or those to whom their authority was delegated at Dublin, with the crimes they vainly endeavoured to chastise, much more to erect either the wild barbarians of the north, the O'Neals and O'Connors, or the degenerate houses of Burke and Fitzgerald, into patriot assertors of their country's welfare. The laws and liberties of England were the best inheritance to which Ireland could attain; the sovereignty of the English crown her only shield against native or foreign tyranny. It was her calamity that these advantages were long withheld, but the blame can never fall upon the government of this island.

In the contest between the houses of York and Lancaster, most of the English colony in Ireland had attached themselves to the fortunes of the White Rose; they even espoused the two pretenders who put in jeopardy the crown of Henry VII., and became of course obnoxious to his jealousy, though he was politic enough to forgive in appearance their disaffection. But as Ireland had for a considerable time rather served the purposes of rebellious invaders than of the English monarchy, it was necessary to make her subjection, at least so far as the settlers of the pale were concerned, more than a word. This produced the famous statute of Drogheda in 1495, known by the name of Poyning's law, from the lord deputy through whose vigour and prudence it was enacted. It contains a variety of provisions to restrain the lawlessness of the Anglo-Irish within the pale, for to no others could it immediately extend, and to confirm the royal sovereignty. All private hostilities without the deputy's licence were declared

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

illegal, but to excite the Irish to war was made high treason. Murders were to be prosecuted according to law, and not in the manner of the natives, by pillaging, or exacting a fine from the sept of the slayer. The citizens or freemen of towns were prohibited from receiving wages or becoming retainers of lords and gentlemen; and to prevent the ascendancy of the latter class, none who had not served apprenticeships were to be admitted as aldermen or freemen of corporations. The requisitions of coyne and livery, which had subsisted in spite of the statutes of Kilkenny, were again forbidden, and those statutes were renewed and confirmed. The principal officers of state and the judges were to hold their patents during pleasure, "because of the great inconveniences that had followed from their being for term of life, to the king's grievous displeasure." A still more important provision, in its permanent consequence, was made by enacting that all statutes lately made in England be deemed good and effectual in Ireland. It has been remarked that the same had been done by an Irish act of Edward IV. Some question might also be made, whether the word "lately" was not intended to limit this acceptation of English law. But in effect this enactment has made an epoch in Irish jurisprudence; all statutes made in England prior to the eighteenth year of Henry VII. being held equally valid in that country, while none of later date have any operation, unless specially adopted by its parliament; so that the law of the two countries has begun to diverge from that time, and after three centuries has been in several respects differently modified.

But even these articles of Poyning's law are less momentous than one by which it is peculiarly known. It is enacted that no parliament shall in future be holden in Ireland, till the king's lieutenant shall certify to the king under the great seal the causes and considerations, and all such acts as it seems to them ought to be passed thereon, and such be affirmed by the king

and his council, and his licence to hold a parliament be obtained. Any parliament holden contrary to this form and provision should be deemed void. Thus by securing the initiative power to the English council, a bridle was placed in the mouths of every Irish parliament. It is probable also, that it was designed as a check on the lord deputies, sometimes powerful Irish nobles, whom it was dangerous not to employ, but still more dangerous to trust. Whatever might be its motives, it proved in course of time the great means of preserving the subordination of an island, which from the similarity of constitution, and the high spirit of its inhabitants, was constantly panting for an independence which her more powerful neighbour neither desired, nor dared to concede *.

No subjects of the crown in Ireland enjoyed such influence at this time as the earls of Kildare, whose possessions lying chiefly within the pale, they did not affect an ostensible independence, but generally kept in their hands the chief authority of government, though it was the policy of the English court, in its state of weakness, to balance them in some measure by the rival family of Butler. But the self-confidence with which this exaltation inspired the chief of the former house laid him open to the vengeance of Henry VIII.; he affected, while lord-deputy, to be surrounded by Irish lords, to assume their wild manners, and to intermarry his daughters with their race. The counsellors of English birth or origin dreaded this suspicious approximation to their hereditary enemies; and Kildare, on their complaint, was compelled to obey his sovereign's order by repairing to London. He was committed to the Tower; on a premature report that he had suffered death, his son, a young man to whom he had delegated the administration, took up arms under the rash impulse of resentment; the primate was murdered by his wild followers, but the citizens of Dublin and the reinforcements sent from

* Irish Statutes. Davis, 230. Leland, ii. 102.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

England suppressed this hasty rebellion, and its leader was sent a prisoner to London. Five of his uncles, some of them not concerned in the treason, perished with him on the scaffold; his father had been more fortunate in a natural death; one sole surviving child of twelve years old, who escaped to Flanders, became afterwards the stock from which the great family of the Geraldines was restored *.

The chieftains of Ireland were justly attentive to the stern and systematic despotism which began to characterize the English government, displayed, as it thus was, in the destruction of an ancient and loyal house. But their intimidation produced contrary effects; they became more ready to profess allegiance, and to put on the exterior badges of submission; but more jealous of the crown in their hearts, more resolute to preserve their independence, and to withstand any change of laws. Thus in the latter years of Henry, after the northern Irish had been beaten by an able deputy, lord Leonard Grey, and the lordship of Ireland, the title hitherto borne by the successors of Henry II., had been raised by act of parliament to the dignity of a kingdom †, the native chiefs came in and submitted; the earl of Desmond, almost as independent as any of the natives, attended parliament, from which his ancestors had for some ages claimed a dispensation; several peerages were conferred, some of them on the old Irish families; fresh laws were about the same time enacted to establish the English dress and language, and to keep the colonists apart from Irish intercourse ‡; and after a disuse of two hun-

* Leland.

† Irish Statutes, 33 H. VIII. c. 1.

‡ Irish Statutes, 28 H. VIII. c. 15. 28. The latter act prohibits intermarriage or fostering with the Irish; which had indeed been previously restrained by other statutes. In one passed five years afterwards, it is recited that "the king's English subjects, by reason that they are inhabited in so little compass or circuit, and restrained by statute to marry with the Irish nation, and therefore of necessity must marry themselves together, so that in effect they all for the most part must be allied together; and therefore it is enacted, that consanguinity or affinity beyond the fourth degree shall be no cause of challenge on a jury." 33 H. VIII. c. 4. These laws were for many years of little avail, so far at least as they were meant to extend beyond the pale. Spenser's State of Ireland, p. 384, et post.

dred years, the authority of government was nominally recognized throughout Munster and Connaught*. Yet we find that these provinces were still in nearly the same condition as before; the king's judges did not administer justice in them, the old Brehon usages continued to prevail even in the territories of the new peers, though their primogenitary succession was evidently incompatible with Irish tanistry. A rebellion of two septs in Leinster under Edward VI. led to a more complete reduction of their districts, called Leix and O'Fally, which in the next reign were made shire-land, by the names of King's and Queen's county †. But at the accession of Elizabeth it was manifest that an arduous struggle would ensue between law and liberty; the one too nearly allied to cool-blooded oppression, the other to ferocious barbarism.

It may be presumed, as has been already said, from the analogy of other countries, that Ireland, if left to herself, would have settled in time under some one line of kings, and assumed, like Scotland, much of the feudal character, the best transitional state of a monarchy from rudeness and anarchy to civilization. And if the right of female succession had been established, it might possibly have been united to the English crown on a juster footing, and with far less of oppression or bloodshed than actually took place. But it was too late to dream of what might have been; in the middle of the sixteenth century Ireland could have no reasonable prospect of independence; nor could that independence have been any other than the most savage liberty, perhaps another denomination of servitude. It was doubtless for the interest of that people to seek the English

* Leland, ii. 178. 184.

† Id. 189. 211. 3 and 4 P. and M. c. 1 and 2. Meath had been divided into two shires, by separating the western part. 34 H. VIII. c. 1. "Forasmuch as the shire of Methe is great and large in circuit, and the west part thereof laid about or beset with divers of the king's rebels." Baron Finglas says, "Half Meath has not obeyed the king's laws these one hundred years or more." Breviate of Ireland, apud Harris, p. 85.

CHAP. XVIII.

Ireland.

constitution, which, at least in theory, was entirely accorded to their country, and to press with spontaneous homage round the throne of Elizabeth. But this was not the interest of their ambitious chieftains, whether of Irish or English descent, of a Slanes O'Neil, an earl of Tyrone, an earl of Desmond. Their influence was irresistible among a nation ardently sensible to the attachments of clanship, averse to innovation, and accustomed to dread and hate a government that was chiefly known by its severities. But the unhappy alienation of Ireland from its allegiance in part of the queen's reign would probably not have been so complete, or at least led to such permanent mischiefs, if the ancient national animosities had not been exasperated by the still more invincible prejudices of religion.

Henry VIII. had no sooner prevailed on the lords and commons of England to renounce their spiritual obedience to the Roman see, and to acknowledge his own supremacy, than as a natural consequence he proceeded to establish it in Ireland. In the former instance, many of his subjects, and even his clergy, were secretly attached to the principles of the reformation, as many others were jealous of ecclesiastical wealth, or eager to possess it. But in Ireland the reformers had made no progress; it had been among the effects of the pernicious separation of the two races, that the Irish priests had little intercourse with their bishops, who were nominated by the king, so that their synods are commonly recited to have been holden *inter Anglicos;* the bishops themselves were sometimes intruded by violence, more often dispossessed by it; a total ignorance and neglect prevailed in the church, and it is even found impossible to recover the succession of names in some sees *. In a nation so ill predisposed, it was difficult to bring about a compliance with the king's demand of abjuring their religion; ignorant, but not indifferent, the clergy, with Cromer the primate at their

* Leland, ii. 158.

head, and most of the lords and commons, in a parliament held at Dublin in 1536, resisted the act of supremacy; which was nevertheless ultimately carried by the force of government. Its enemies continued to withstand the new schemes of reformation, more especially in the next reign, when they went altogether to subvert the ancient faith. As it appeared dangerous to summon a parliament, the English liturgy was ordered by a royal proclamation; but Dowdall, the new primate, as stubborn an adherent of the Romish church as his predecessor, with most of the other bishops and clergy, refused obedience, and the reformation was never legally established in the short reign of Edward. His eldest sister's accession reversed of course what had been done, and restored tranquillity in ecclesiastical matters; for the protestants were too few to be worth persecution, nor were even those molested who fled to Ireland from the fires of Smithfield.

Another scene of revolution ensued in a very few years. Elizabeth having fixed the protestant church on a stable basis in England, sent over the earl of Sussex to hold an Irish parliament in 1560. The disposition of such an assembly might be presumed hostile to the projected reformations; but contrary to what had occurred on this side of the channel, though the peers were almost uniformly for the old religion, a large majority of the bishops are said to have veered round with the times, and supported, at least by conformity and acquiescence, the creed of the English court. In the house of commons pains had been taken to secure a majority; ten only out of twenty counties, which had at that time been formed, received the writ of summons; and the number of seventy-six representatives of the Anglo-Irish people was made up by the towns, many of them under the influence of the crown, some perhaps containing a mixture of protestant population. The English laws of supremacy and uniformity were enacted in nearly the same words; and thus the common prayer was at once set up instead of the mass, but with a singular

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

reservation, that in those parts of the country where the minister had no knowledge of the English language, he might read the service in Latin. All subjects were bound to attend the public worship of the church, and every other was interdicted *.

There were doubtless three arguments in favour of this compulsory establishment of the protestant church, which must have appeared so conclusive to Elizabeth and her council, that no one in that age could have disputed them without incurring, among other hazards, that of being accounted a lover of unreasonable paradoxes. The first was, that the protestant religion being true, it was the queen's duty to take care that her subjects should follow no other; the second, that being an absolute monarch, or something like it, and a very wise princess, she had a better right to order what doctrine they should believe, than they could have to choose for themselves; the third, that Ireland being as a handmaid, and a conquered country, must wait, in all important matters, on the pleasure of the greater island, and be accommodated to its revolutions. And as it was natural that the queen and her advisers should not reject maxims which all the rest of the world entertained, merely because they were advantageous to themselves, we need not perhaps be very acrimonious in censuring the laws whereon the church of Ireland is founded. But it is still equally true that they involve a principle essentially unjust, and that they have enormously aggravated, both in the age of Elizabeth and long afterwards, the calamities and the disaffection of Ireland. An ecclesiastical establishment, that is, the endowment and privileges of a particular religious society, can have no advantages, relatively at least to the community where it exists, but its tendency to promote in that community good order and virtue, religious knowledge and edification. But to accomplish this end in any satisfactory manner, it must be their church, and not that merely of

* Leland, 224. Irish Statutes, 2 Eliz.

the government; it should exist for the people, and in the people, and with the people. This indeed is so manifest, that the government of Elizabeth never contemplated the separation of a great majority as licensed dissidents from the ordinances established for their instruction. It was undoubtedly presumed, as it was in England, that the church and commonwealth, according to Hooker's language, were to be two denominations of the same society; and that every man in Ireland who appertained to the one ought to embrace, and in due season would embrace, the communion of the other. There might be ignorance, there might be obstinacy, there might be feebleness of conscience for a time; and perhaps some connivance would be shewn to these; but that the prejudices of a majority should ultimately prevail so as to determine the national faith, that it should even obtain a legitimate indulgence for its own mode of worship, was abominable before God, and incompatible with the sovereign authority.

This sort of reasoning, half bigotry, half despotism, was nowhere so preposterously displayed as in Ireland. The numerical majority is not always to be ascertained with certainty, and some regard may fairly, or rather necessarily, be had to rank, to knowledge, to concentration. But in that island, the disciples of the reformation were in the most inconsiderable proportion among the Anglo-Irish colony, as well as among the natives; their church was a government without subjects, a college of shepherds without sheep. I am persuaded that this was not intended nor expected to be a permanent condition; but such were the difficulties which the state of that unhappy nation presented, or such the negligence of its rulers, that scarce any pains were taken in the age of Elizabeth, nor indeed in subsequent ages, to win the people's conviction, or to eradicate their superstitions, except by penal statutes and the sword. The Irish language was universally spoken without the pale; it had

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

even made great progress within it; the clergy were principally of that nation; yet no translation of the scriptures, the chief means through which the reformation had been effected in England and Germany, nor even of the regular liturgy, was made into that tongue; nor was it possible, perhaps, that any popular instruction should be carried far in Elizabeth's reign, either by public authority, or by the ministrations of the reformed clergy. Yet neither among the Welsh, nor the Scots Highlanders, though Celtic tribes, and not much better in civility of life at that time than the Irish, was the ancient religion long able to withstand the sedulous preachers of reformation.

It is evident from the history of Elizabeth's reign, that the forcible dispossession of the Catholic clergy, and their consequent activity in deluding a people too open at all times to their counsels, aggravated the rebellious spirit of the Irish, and rendered their obedience to the law more unattainable. But even independently of this motive, the Desmonds and Tyrones would have tried, as they did, the chances of insurrection, rather than abdicate their unlicensed, but ancient chieftainship. It must be admitted, that if they were faithless in promises of loyalty, the crown's representatives in Ireland set no good example; and when they saw the spoliations of property by violence or pretext of law, the sudden executions on alleged treasons, the breaches of treaty, sometimes even the assassinations, by which a despotic policy went onward in its work of subjugation, they did but play the usual game of barbarians in opposing craft and perfidy, rather more gross perhaps and notorious, to the same engines of a dissembling government*. Yet if we can put any trust in our

* Leland gives several instances of breach of faith in the government. A little tract, called a Brief Declaration of the Government of Ireland, written by captain Lee in 1594, and published in Desiderata Curiosa Hibernica, vol. i. censures the two last deputies (Grey and Fitzwilliams) for their ill usage of the Irish, and unfolds the despotic character of the English government. "The cause they

own testimonies, the great Irish families were by mismanagement and dissension the curse of their vassals. Sir Henry Sidney represents to the queen, in 1567, the wretched condition of the southern and western counties in the vast territories of the earls of Ormond, Desmond, and Clanricarde*. "An unmeasurable tract," he says, "is now waste and uninhabited, which of late years was well tilled and pastured." "A more pleasant nor a more desolate land I never saw than from Youghall to Limerick†." "So far hath that policy, or rather lack of policy in keeping dissension among them prevailed, as now albeit all that are alive would become honest and live in quiet, yet are there not left alive in those two provinces the twentieth person necessary to inhabit the same‡." Yet this was but the first scene of calamity. After the rebellion of the last earl of Desmond, the counties of Cork and Kerry, his ample patrimony, were so wasted by war and military executions, and famine and pestilence, that according to a contemporary writer who expresses

(the lords of the north) have to stand upon those terms, and to seek for better assurance, is the harsh practices used against others, by those who have been placed in authority to protect men for your majesty's service, which they have greatly abused in this sort. They have drawn unto them by protection three or four hundred of the country people, under colour to do your majesty service, and brought them to a place of meeting, where your garrison soldiers were appointed to be, who have there most dishonourably put them all to the sword; and this hath been by the consent and practice of the lord deputy for the time being. If this be a good course to draw those savage people to the state to do your majesty service, and not rather to enforce them to stand on their guard, I leave to your majesty." P. 90. He goes on to enumerate more cases of hardship and tyranny; many being arraigned and convicted of treason on slight evidence; many assaulted and killed by the sheriffs on commissions of rebellion; others imprisoned and kept in irons; among others, a youth, the heir of a great estate. He certainly praises Tyrone more than, from subsequent events, we should think just, which may be thought to throw some suspicion on his own loyalty; yet he seems to have been a protestant, and, in 1594, the views of Tyrone were ambiguous, so that captain Lee may have been deceived.

* Sidney Papers, i. 20.

† Id. 24.

‡ Id. 29. Spenser descants on the lawless violence of the superior Irish, and imputes, I believe with much justice, a great part of their crimes to his own brethren, if they might claim so proud a title, the bards: "whomsoever they find to be most licentious of life, most bold and lawless in his doings, most dangerous and desperate in all parts of disobedience and rebellious disposition, him they set up and glorify in their rhymes, him they praise to the people, and to young men make an example to follow." P. 394.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

the truth with hyperbolical energy, "the land itself, which before those wars was populous, well inhabited, and rich in all the good blessings of God, being plenteous of corn, full of cattle, well stored with fruit, and sundry other good commodities, is now become waste and barren, yielding no fruits, the pastures no cattle, the fields no corn, the air no birds, the seas, though full of fish, yet to them yielding nothing. Finally, every way the curse of God was so great, and the land so barren both of man and beast, that whosoever did travel from the one end unto the other of all Munster, even from Waterford to the head of Limerick, which is about six-score miles, he should not meet any man, woman, or child, saving in towns and cities; nor yet see any beast but the very wolves, the foxes, and other like ravening beasts*." The severity of sir Arthur Grey, at this time deputy, was such, that Elizabeth was assured he had left little for her to reign over, but ashes and carcasses; and though not by any means of too indulgent a nature, she was induced to recall him †. His successor, sir John Perrott, who held the viceroyalty only from 1584 to 1587, was distinguished for a sense of humanity and justice, together with an active zeal for the enforcement of law. Sheriffs were now appointed for the five counties into which Connaught had some years before been parcelled; and even for Ulster, all of which, except Antrim and Down, had hitherto been undivided, as well as ungoverned ‡. Yet even this ap-

* Holingshed, 460.

† Leland, 287. Spenser's Account of Ireland, p. 430, (vol. viii. of Todd's edition, 1805). Grey is the Arthegal of the Faery Queen, the representative of the virtue of justice in that allegory, attended by Talus with his iron flail, which indeed was unsparingly employed to crush rebellion. Grey's severity was signalized in putting to death seven hundred Spaniards who had surrendered at discretion in the fort of Smerwick. Though this might be justified by the strict laws of war, Philip not being a declared enemy, it was one of those extremities which justly revolt the common feelings of mankind. The queen is said to have been much displeased at it. Leland, 283. Spenser undertakes the defence of his patron Grey. State of Ireland, p. 434.

‡ Leland, 247. 293. An act had passed, 11 Eliz. c. 9, for dividing the whole island into shire ground, appointing sheriffs, justices of the peace, &c.; which however was not completed.

parently wholesome innovation aggravated at first the servitude of the natives, whom the new sheriffs were prone to oppress *. Perrott, the best of Irish governors, soon fell a sacrifice to a court intrigue and the queen's jealousy, and the remainder of her reign was occupied with almost unceasing revolts of the earl of Tyrone, head of the great sept of O'Neil in Ulster, instigated by Rome and Spain, and endangering, far more than any preceding rebellion, her sovereignty over Ireland.

The old English of the pale were little more disposed to embrace the reformed religion, or to acknowledge the despotic principles of a Tudor administration, than the Irish themselves; and though they did not join in the rebellions of those they so much hated, the queen's deputies had sometimes to encounter a more legal resistance. A new race of colonists had begun to appear in their train, eager for possessions, and for the rewards of the crown, contemptuous of the natives, whether aboriginal or of English descent, and in consequence the objects of their aversion or jealousy †. Hence in a parliament summoned by sir Henry Sidney in 1569, the first after that which had reluctantly established the protestant church, a strong country party, as it may be termed, was formed in opposition to the crown. They complained, with much justice, of the management by which irregular returns of members had been made; some from towns not incorporated, and which had never possessed the elective right; some self-chosen sheriffs and magistrates; some mere English strangers, returned for places which they had never seen. The judges, on reference to their opinion, declared the elections illegal

* Leland, 305. Their conduct provoked an insurrection both in Connaught and Ulster. Spenser, who shows always a bias towards the most rigorous policy, does injustice to Perrott. "He did tread down and disgrace all the English, and set up and countenance the Irish all that he could." P. 437. This has in all ages been the language, when they have been placed on an equality, or any thing approaching to an equality with their fellow subjects.

† Leland, 248.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

in the two former cases: but confirmed the non-resident burgesses, which still left a majority for the court.

The Irish patriots, after this preliminary discussion, opposed a new tax upon wines, and a bill for the suspension of Poyning's law. Hooker, an Englishman, chosen for Athenry, to whose account we are chiefly indebted for our knowledge of these proceedings, sustained the former in that high tone of a prerogative lawyer which always best pleased his mistress. "Her majesty," he said, "of her own royal authority might and may establish the same without any of your consents, as she hath already done the like in England; saving of her courtesy it pleaseth her to have it pass with your own consents by order of law, that she might thereby have the better trial and assurance of your dutifulness and goodwill towards her." This language from a stranger, unusual among a people proud of their birthright in the common constitution, and little accustomed even to legitimate obedience, raised such a flame, that the house was adjourned, and it was necessary to protect the utterer of such doctrines by a guard. The duty on wines, laid aside for the time, was carried in a subsequent session the same year; and several other statutes were enacted, which, as they did not affect the pale, may possibly have encountered no opposition. A part of Ulster, forfeited by Slanes O'Neil, a rebel almost as formidable in the first years of this reign as his kinsman Tyrone was near its conclusion, was vested in the crown; and some provisions were made for the reduction of the whole island into shires. Connaught, in consequence, which had passed for one county, was divided into five *.

In sir Henry Sidney's second government, which began in 1576, the pale was excited to a more strenuous resistance, by an attempt to subvert their liberties. It had long been usual to obtain a sum of money for the maintenance of the household and

* Holingshed's Chronicles of Ireland, 342. This part is written by Hooker himself. Leland, 240. Irish Statutes, 11 Eliz.

of the troops, by an assessment settled between the council and principal inhabitants of each district. This, it was contended by the government, was instead of the contribution of victuals which the queen, by her prerogative of purveyance, might claim at a fixed rate, much lower than the current price *. It was maintained on the other side to be a voluntary benevolence. Sidney now devised a plan to change it for a cess or permanent composition for every plough-land, without regard to those which claimed exemption from the burthen of purveyance, and imposed this new tax by order of council, as sufficiently warrantable by the royal prerogative. The land-owners of the pale remonstrated against such a violation of their franchises, and were met by the usual arguments. They appealed to the text of the laws; the deputy replied by precedents against law. "Her majesty's prerogative," he said, "is not limited by Magna Charta, nor found in Littleton's Tenures, nor written in the books of Assizes, but registered in the remembrances of her majesty's exchequer, and remains in the rolls of records of the Tower †." It was proved, according to him, by the most ancient and credible records in the realm, that such charges had been imposed from time to time, sometimes by the name of cess, sometimes by other names, and more often by the governor and council, and such of the nobility as came on summons, than by parliament. These irregularities did not satisfy the gentry of the pale, who refused compliance with the demand, and still alleged that it was contrary both to reason and law to impose any charge upon them without parliament or grand council. A deputation was sent to England in the name of all the subjects of the English pale. Sidney was not backward in representing their behaviour as the effect of disaffection; nor was Elizabeth likely to recede where both her authority and her revenue were apparently concerned. But after some demonstrations of resentment in committing the delegates to the Tower,

* Sidney Papers, i. 153. † Id. 179.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

she took alarm at the clamours of their countrymen, and aware that the king of Spain was ready to throw troops into Ireland, desisted with that prudence which always kept her passion in command, accepting a voluntary composition for seven years in the accustomed manner *.

James I. ascended the throne with as great advantages in Ireland as in his other kingdoms. That island was already pacified by the submission of Tyrone, and all was prepared for a final establishment of the English power upon the basis of equal laws and civilized customs; a reformation which in some respects the king was not ill fitted to introduce. His reign is perhaps on the whole the most important in the constitutional history of Ireland, and that from which the present scheme of society in that country is chiefly to be deduced.

1. The laws of supremacy and uniformity, copied from those of England, were incompatible with any exercise of the Roman catholic worship, or with the admission of any members of that church into civil trust. It appears indeed that they were by no means strictly executed during the queen's reign; yet the priests were of course excluded, so far as the English authority prevailed, from their churches and benefices; the former were chiefly ruined; the latter fell to protestant strangers, or to conforming ministers of native birth, dissolute and ignorant, as careless to

* Sidney Papers, 84. 117, &c. to 236. Holingshed, 389. Leland, 261. Sidney was much disappointed at the queen's want of firmness; but it is plain by the correspondence that Walsingham also thought he had gone too far. P. 192. The sum required seems to have been reasonable, about 2000*l.* a year from the five shires of the pale; and if they had not been stubborn, he thought all Munster also, except the Desmond territories, would have submitted to the payment. (P. 183.) "I have great cause," he writes, "to mistrust the fidelity of the greatest number of the people of this county's birth of all degrees; they be papists, as I may well term them, body and soul. For not only in matter of religion they be Romish, but for government they will change, to be under a prince of their own superstition. Since your highness' reign the papists never showed such boldness as now they do." P. 184. This however hardly tallies with what he says afterwards, p. 208: "I do believe for far the greatest number of the inhabitants of the English pale her highness hath as true and faithful subjects as any she hath subject to the crown;" unless the former passage refer chiefly to those without the pale, who in fact were exclusively concerned in the rebellions of this reign.

teach as the people were predetermined not to listen*. The priests, many of them engaged in a conspiracy with the court of Spain against the queen and her successor, and all deeming themselves unjustly and sacrilegiously despoiled, kept up the spirit of disaffection, or at least of resistance to religious innovation,

* "The church is now so spoiled," says sir Henry Sidney in 1576, "as well by the ruin of the temples, as the dissipation and embezzling of the patrimony, and most of all for want of sufficient ministers, as so deformed and overthrown a church there is not, I am sure, in any region where Christ is professed." Sidney Papers, i. 109. In the diocese of Meath, being the best inhabited country of all the realm, out of 224 parish churches, 105 were impropriate with only curates, of whom but eighteen could speak English, the rest being Irish rogues, who used to be papists; fifty-two other churches had vicars, and fifty-two more were in better state than the rest, yet far from well. Id. 112. Spenser gives a bad character of the protestant clergy, p. 412.

An act was passed 12 Eliz. c. 1, for erecting free schools in every diocese, under English masters; the ordinary paying one-third of the salary, and the clergy the rest. This, however, must have been nearly impracticable. Another act, 13 Eliz. c. 4, enables the archbishop of Armagh to grant leases of his lands out of the pale for a hundred years without assent of the dean and chapter, to persons of English birth, "or of the English and civil nation, born in this realm of Ireland," at the rent of 4*d.* an acre. It recites the chapter to be "except a very few of them, both by nation, education, and custom, Irish, Irishly affectioned, and small hopes of their conformities or assent unto any such devices as would tend to the placing of any such number of civil people there, to the disadvantage or bridling of the Irish." In these northern parts the English and protestant interests had so little influence, that the pope conferred three bishoprics, Derry, Clogher, and Raphoe, throughout the reign of Elizabeth. Davis, 254. Leland, ii. 248. What is more remarkable is, that two of these prelates were summoned to parliament in 1585, Id. 295; the first in which some Irish were returned among the commons.

The reputation of the protestant church continued to be little better in the reign of Charles I., though its revenues were much improved. Strafford gives the clergy a very bad character in writing to Laud. Vol. i. 187. And Burnet's Life of Bedell, transcribed chiefly from a contemporary memoir, gives a detailed account of that bishop's diocese (Kilmore), which will take off any surprise that might be felt at the slow progress of the reformation. He had about fifteen protestant clergy, but all English, unable to speak the tongue of the people, or to perform any divine offices or converse with them, "which is no small cause of the continuance of the people in popery still." P. 47. The bishop observed, says his biographer, "with much regret, that the English had all along neglected the Irish as a nation not only conquered but undisciplinable; and that the clergy had scarce considered them as a part of their charge; but had left them wholly into the hands of their own priests, without taking any other care of them but the making them pay their tithes. And indeed their priests were a strange sort of people, that knew generally nothing but the reading their offices, which were not so much as understood by many of them; and they taught the people nothing but the saying their paters and aves in Latin." P. 114. Bedell took the pains to learn himself the Irish language, and though he could not speak it, composed the first grammar ever made of it; had the common prayer read every Sunday in Irish, circulated catechisms, engaged the clergy to set up schools, and even undertook a translation of the Old Testament, which he would have published but for the opposition of Laud and Strafford. P. 121.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

throughout the kingdom *. The accession of James seemed a sort of signal for casting off the yoke of heresy; in Cork, Waterford, and other cities, the people, not without consent of the magistrates, rose to restore the catholic worship; they seized the churches, ejected the ministers, marched in public processions, and shut their gates against the lord deputy. He soon reduced them to obedience; but almost the whole nation was of the same faith, and disposed to struggle for a public toleration. This was beyond every question their natural right; and as certainly was it the best policy of England to have granted it, but the king-craft and the priest-craft of the day taught other lessons. Priests were ordered by proclamation to quit the realm; the magistrates and chief citizens of Dublin were committed to prison for refusing to frequent the protestant church. The gentry of the pale remonstrated at the court of Westminster; and though their delegates atoned for their self-devoted courage by imprisonment, the secret menace of expostulation seems to have produced, as usual, some effect, in a direction to the lord deputy that he should endeavour to conciliate the recusants by instruction. These penalties of recusancy, from whatever cause, were very little enforced; but the catholics murmured at the oath of supremacy, which shut them out from every distinction: though here again the execution of the law was sometimes mitigated, they justly thought themselves humiliated, and the liberties of their country endangered, by standing thus at the mercy of the crown. And it is plain that, even within the pale, the compulsory statutes were at least far better enforced than under the queen; while in those provinces within which the law now first began to have its course the difference was still more acutely perceived †.

* Leland, 413.

† Leland, 414, &c. In a letter from six catholic lords of the pale to the king in 1613, published in Desiderata Curiosa Hibernica, i. 158, they complain of the oath of supremacy, which, they say, had not been much imposed under the queen, but was now for the first time enforced in the remote parts of the country, so that the most sufficient gentry were excluded from magistracy, and meaner persons, if conformable, put instead. It is said on the

2. The first care of the new administration was to perfect the reduction of Ireland into a civilized kingdom. Sheriffs were appointed throughout Ulster; the territorial divisions of counties and baronies were extended to the few districts that still wanted them; the judges of assize went their circuits every where; the customs of tanistry and gavel-kind were determined by the court of King's Bench to be void; the Irish lords surrendered their estates to the crown, and received them back by the English tenures of knight-service or socage; an exact account was taken of the lands each of these chieftains possessed, that he might be invested with none but those he occupied; while his tenants, exempted from those uncertain Irish exactions, the source of their servitude and misery, were obliged only to an annual quit-rent, and held their own lands by a free tenure. The king's writ was obeyed, at least in profession, throughout Ireland; after four centuries of lawlessness and misgovernment, a golden period was anticipated by the English courtiers; nor can we hesitate to recognise the influence of enlightened, and sometimes of benevolent minds, in the scheme of government now carried into effect *.

other side, that the laws against recusants were very little enforced, from the difficulty of getting juries to present them. Id. 359. Carte's Ormond, 33. But this at least shows that there was some disposition to molest the catholics on the part of the government; and it is admitted, that they were excluded from offices, and even from practising at the bar, on account of the oath of supremacy. Id. 320; and compare the letter of six catholic lords with the answer of lord deputy and council in the same volume.

* Davis's Reports, ubi supra. Discovery of Causes, &c. 260. Carte's Life of Ormond, i. 14. Leland, 418. It had long been an object with the English government to extinguish the Irish tenures and laws. Some steps towards it were taken under Henry VIII.; but at that time there was too great a repugnance among the chieftains. In Elizabeth's instructions to the earl of Sussex on taking the government in 1560, it is recommended that the Irish should surrender their estates, and receive grants in tail male, but no greater estate. Desiderata Curiosa Hibernica, i. 1. This would have left a reversion in the crown, which could not have been cut off, I believe, by suffering a recovery. But as those who held by Irish tenure had probably no right to alienate their lands, they had little cause to complain. An act in 1569, 12 Eliz. c. 4, reciting the greater part of the Irish to have petitioned for leave to surrender their lands, authorizes the deputy by advice of the privy council to grant letters patent to the Irish and degenerate English, yielding certain reservations to the queen. Sidney mentions, in several of his letters, that the

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

But two unhappy maxims debased their motives, and discredited their policy; the first, that none but the true religion, or the state's religion, could be suffered to exist in the eye of the law; the second, that no pretext could be too harsh or iniquitous to exclude men of a different race or erroneous faith from their possessions.

3. The suppression of Slanes O'Neil's revolt in 1567 seems to have suggested the thought, or afforded the means, of perfecting the conquest of Ireland by the same methods that had been used to commence it, an extensive plantation of English colonists. The law of forfeiture came in very conveniently to further this great scheme of policy. O'Neil was attainted in the parliament of 1569; the territories which acknowledged him as chieftain, comprising a large part of Down and Antrim, were vested in the crown; and a natural son of sir Thomas Smith, secretary of state, who is said to have projected this settlement, was sent with a body of English to take possession of the lands thus presumed in law to be vacant. This expedition, however, failed of success; the native occupants not acquiescing in this doctrine of our lawyers *. But fresh adventurers settled in different parts of Ireland; and particularly after the earl of Desmond's rebellion in 1583, whose forfeiture was reckoned at 574,628 Irish acres, though it seems probable that this is more than double the actual confiscation †. These lands in the counties of Cork and Kerry, left almost desolate by the oppression of the Geraldines themselves, and the far greater cruelty of the government in subduing them, were parcelled out among English undertakers at low rents, but on condition of planting

Irish were ready to surrender their lands. Vol. i. 94. 105. 165.

The act 11 Jac. I. c. 5, repeals divers statutes that treat the Irish as enemies, some of which have been mentioned above. It takes all the king's subjects under his protection to live by the same law. Some vestiges of the old distinctions remained in the statute-book, and were eradicated in Strafford's parliament. 10 and 11 Car. I. c. 6.

* Leland, 254.

† See a note in Leland, ii. 302. The truth seems to be, that in this, as in other Irish forfeitures, a large part was restored to the tenants of the attainted parties.

eighty-six families on an estate of 12,000 acres; and in like proportion for smaller possessions. None of the native Irish were to be admitted as tenants; but neither this nor the other conditions were strictly observed by the undertakers, and the colony suffered alike by their rapacity and their neglect*. The oldest of the second race of English families in Ireland are found among the descendants of these Munster colonies. We find among them also some distinguished names, that have left no memorial in their posterity; sir Walter Raleigh, who here laid the foundation of his transitory success, and one not less in glory, and hardly less in misfortune, Edmund Spenser. In a country house once belonging to the Desmonds, on the banks of the Mulla, near Doneraile, the three first books of the Faery Queen were written; and here too the poet awoke to the sad realities of life, and has left us, in his Account of the State of Ireland, the most full and authentic document that illustrates its condition. This treatise abounds with judicious observations; but we regret the disposition to recommend an extreme severity in dealing with the native Irish, which ill becomes the sweetness of his muse.

The two great native chieftains of the north, the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnel, a few years after the king's accession, engaged, or were charged with having engaged, in some new conspiracy, and flying from justice, were attainted of treason. Five hundred thousand acres in Ulster were thus forfeited to the crown; and on this was laid the foundation of that great colony, which has rendered that province, from being the seat of the wildest natives, the most flourishing, the most protestant, and the most enlightened part of Ireland. This plantation, though projected no doubt by the king and by lord Bacon, was chiefly carried into effect by the lord deputy, sir Arthur Chichester, a man of great capacity, judgment, and prudence. He caused

* Leland, ii. 301.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

surveys to be taken of the several counties, fixed upon proper places for building castles or founding towns, and advised that the lands should be assigned, partly to English or Scots undertakers, partly to servitors of the crown, as they were called, men who had possessed civil or military offices in Ireland, partly to the old Irish, even some of those who had been concerned in Tyrone's rebellion. These and their tenants were exempted from the oath of supremacy imposed on the new planters. From a sense of the error committed in the queen's time by granting vast tracts to single persons, the lands were distributed in three classes, of 2000, 1500, and 1000 English acres; and in every county one-half of the assignments was to the smallest, the rest to the other two classes. Those who received 2000 acres were bound within four years to build a castle and bawn, or strong court-yard; the second class within two years to build a stone or brick house with a bawn; the third class a bawn only. The first were to plant on their lands within three years forty-eight able men, eighteen years old or upwards, born in England or the inland parts of Scotland; the others to do the same in proportion to their estates. All the grantees were to reside within five years, in person or by approved agents, and to keep sufficient store of arms; they were not to alienate their lands without the king's licence, nor to let them for less than twenty-one years; their tenants were to live in houses built in the English manner, and not dispersed, but in villages. The natives held their lands by the same conditions, except that of building fortified houses; but they were bound to take no Irish exactions from their tenants, nor to suffer the practice of wandering with their cattle from place to place. In this manner were these escheated lands of Ulster divided among a hundred and four English and Scots undertakers, fifty-six servitors, and two hundred and eighty-six natives. All lands which through the late anarchy and change of religion had been lost to the church were restored, and some further provision was made for the beneficed

clergy. Chichester, as was just, received an allotment in a far ampler measure than the common servants of the crown *.

This noble design was not altogether completed according to the platform. The native Irish, to whom some regard was shown by these regulations, were less equitably dealt with by the colonists, and by those other adventurers whom England continually sent forth to enrich themselves and maintain her sovereignty. Pretexts were sought to establish the crown's title over the possessions of the Irish; they were assailed through a law which they had but just adopted, and of which they knew nothing, by the claims of a litigious and encroaching prerogative, against which no prescription could avail, nor any plea of fairness and equity obtain favour in the sight of English-born judges. Thus, in the King and Queen's counties, and in those of Leitrim, Longford, and Westmeath, 385,000 acres were adjudged to the crown, and 66,000 in that of Wicklow. The greater part was indeed regranted to the native owners on a permanent tenure, and some apology might be found for this harsh act of power in the means it gave of civilizing those central regions, always the shelter of rebels and robbers; yet this did not take off the sense of forcible spoliation, which every foreign tyranny renders so intolerable. Surrenders were extorted by menaces; juries refusing to find the crown's title were fined by the council; many were dispossessed without any compensation, and sometimes by gross perjury, sometimes by barbarous cruelty. It is said that in the county of Longford the Irish had scarcely one-third of their former possessions assigned to them, out of three-fourths which had been intended by the king. Those who had been most faithful, those even who had conformed to the protestant church, were little better treated than the rest. Hence, though in many new plantations great signs of improvement were perceptible, though trade and tillage

* Carte's Life of Ormond, i. 15. Leland, 429. Farmer's Chronicle of sir Arthur Chichester's government in Desiderata Curiosa Hibernica, i. 32; an important and interesting narrative; also vol. ii. of the same collection, 37. Bacon's Works, i. 657.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

increased, and towns were built, a secret rankling for those injuries was at the heart of Ireland; and in these two leading grievances, the penal laws against recusants, and the inquisition into defective titles, we trace, beyond a shadow of doubt, the primary source of the rebellion in 1641 *.

4. Before the reign of James, Ireland had been regarded either as a conquered country, or as a mere colony of English, according to the persons or the provinces which were in question. The whole island now took a common character, that of a subordinate kingdom, inseparable from the English crown, and dependent also, at least as was taken for granted by our lawyers, on the English legislature; but governed after the model of our constitution, by nearly the same laws, and claiming entirely the same liberties. It was a natural consequence, that an Irish parliament should represent, or affect to represent, every part of the kingdom. None of Irish blood had ever sat, either lords or commoners, till near the end of Henry VIII.'s reign. The representation of the twelve counties, into which Munster and part of Leinster were divided, and of a few towns, which existed in the reign of Edward III., if not later, was reduced by the defection of so many English

* Leland, 437. 466. Carte's Ormond, 22. Desiderata Curiosa Hibernica, 238. 243. 378, et alibi, ii. 37, et post. In another treatise published in this collection, entitled a Discourse on the State of Ireland, 1614, an approaching rebellion is remarkably predicted. "The next rebellion, whensoever it shall happen, doth threaten more danger to the state than any that hath preceded; and my reasons are these: 1. They have the same bodies they ever had, and therein they have and had advantage over us. 2. From their infancies they have been and are exercised in the use of arms. 3. The realm, by reason of long peace, was never so full of youth as at this present. 4. That they are better soldiers than heretofore, their continual employments in the wars abroad assure us; and they do conceive that their men are better than ours. 5. That they are more politic, and able to manage rebellion with more judgment and dexterity than their elders, their experience and education are sufficient. 6. They will give the first blow, which is very advantageous to them that will give it. 7. The quarrel for the which they rebel will be under the veil of religion and liberty, than which nothing is esteemed so precious in the hearts of men. 8. And lastly, their union is such, as not only the old English dispersed abroad in all parts of the realm, but the inhabitants of the pale cities and towns, are as apt to take arms against us, which no precedent time hath ever seen, as the ancient Irish." Vol. i. 432. "I think that little doubt is to be made, but that the modern English and Scotch would in an instant be massacred in their houses." P. 438. This rebellion the author expected to be brought about by a league with Spain and with aid from France.

families to the limits of the four shires of the pale *. The old counties, when they returned to their allegiance under Henry VIII., and those afterwards formed by Mary and Elizabeth, increased the number of the commons; though in that of 1567, as has been mentioned, the writs for some of them were arbitrarily withheld. The two queens did not neglect to create new boroughs, in order to balance the more independent representatives of the old Anglo-Irish families by the English retainers of the court. Yet it is said, that in seventeen counties out of thirty-two, into which Ireland was finally parcelled, there was no town that returned burgesses to parliament before the reign of James I., and the whole number in the rest was but about thirty †. He created at once forty new boroughs, or possibly rather more; for the number of the commons, in 1613, appears to have been 232 ‡. It was several times afterwards augmented, and reached its complement of 300 in 1692 §. These grants of the elective franchise were made, not indeed improvidently, but with very sinister intents towards the freedom of parliament; two-thirds of an Irish house of commons, as it stood in the eighteenth century, being returned with the mere farce of election by wretched tenants of the aristocracy.

* The famous parliament of Kilkenny, in 1367, is said to have been very numerously attended. Leland, i. 319. We find indeed an act, 10 H. VII. c. 23, annulling what was done in a preceding parliament, for this reason, among others, that the writs had not been sent to all the shires, but to four only. Yet it appears that the writs would not have been obeyed in that age.

† Speech of sir John Davis (1612), on the parliamentary constitution of Ireland, in Appendix to Leland, vol. ii. p. 490. with the latter's observations on it. Carte's Ormond, i. 18. Lord Mountmorres's Hist. of Irish Parliament.

‡ In the letter of the lords of the pale to king James above mentioned, they express their apprehension that the erecting so many insignificant places to the rank of boroughs was with the view of bringing on fresh penal laws in religion; "and so the general scope and institution of parliament frustrated, they being ordained for the assurance of the subjects not to be pressed with any new edicts or laws, but such as should pass with their general consents and approbations." P. 158. The king's mode of replying to this constitutional language was characteristic. "What is it to you whether I make many or few boroughs? My council may consider the fitness, if I require it. But what if I had created 40 noblemen and 400 boroughs? The more the merrier, the fewer the better cheer." Desid. Cur. Hib. 308.

§ Mountmorres, i. 166. The whole number of peers in 1634 was 122, and those present in parliament that year were 66. They had the privilege not only of voting, but even protesting by proxy; and those who sent none were sometimes fined. Id. vol. i. 316.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

The province of Connaught, with the adjoining county of Clare, was still free from the intrusion of English colonists. The Irish had complied, both under Elizabeth and James, with the usual conditions of surrendering their estates to the crown in order to receive them back by a legal tenure. But as these grants, by some negligence, had not been duly enrolled in Chancery, though the proprietors had paid large fees for that security, the council were not ashamed to suggest, or the king to adopt, an iniquitous scheme of declaring the whole country forfeited, in order to form another plantation as extensive as that of Ulster. The remonstrances of those whom such a project threatened put a present stop to it; and Charles, on ascending the throne, found it better to hear the proposals of his Irish subjects for a composition. After some time, it was agreed between the court and the Irish agents in London, that the kingdom should voluntarily contribute 120,000l. in three years by equal payments, in return for certain graces, as they were called, which the king was to bestow. These went to secure the subject's title to his lands against the crown after sixty years' possession, and gave the people of Connaught leave to enrol their grants, relieving also the settlers in Ulster or other places from the penalties they had incurred by similar neglect. The abuses of the council-chamber in meddling with private causes, the oppression of the court of wards, the encroachments of military authority and excesses of the soldiers were restrained. A free trade with the king's dominions or those of friendly powers was admitted. The recusants were allowed to sue for livery of their estates in the court of wards, and to practise in courts of law, on taking an oath of mere allegiance instead of that of supremacy. Unlawful exactions and severities of the clergy were prohibited. These reformations of unquestionable and intolerable evils, as beneficial as those contained nearly at the same moment in the Petition of Right, would have saved Ireland long ages of calamity, if they had been as faithfully completed as they seemed to be graciously conceded. But Charles I. emu-

lated, on this occasion, the most perfidious tyrants. It had been promised by an article in these graces, that a parliament should be held to confirm them. Writs of summons were accordingly issued by the lord deputy; but with no consideration of that fundamental rule established by Poyning's law, that no parliament should be held in Ireland until the king's licence be obtained. This irregularity was of course discovered in England, and the writs of summons declared to be void. It would have been easy to remedy this mistake, if such it were, by proceeding in the regular course with a royal licence. But this was withheld; no parliament was called for a considerable time; and when the three years had elapsed during which the voluntary contribution had been payable, the king threatened to straighten his graces, if it were not renewed *.

He had now placed in the vice-royalty of Ireland that star of exceeding brightness, but sinister influence, the willing and able instrument of despotic power, lord Strafford. In his eyes the country he governed belonged to the crown by right of conquest; neither the original natives, nor even the descendants of the conquerors themselves, possessing any privileges which could interfere with its sovereignty. He found two parties extremely jealous of each other, yet each loth to recognise an absolute prerogative, and thus in some measure having a common cause. The protestants, not a little from bigotry, but far more from a persuasion that they held their estates on the tenure of a rigid religious monopoly, could not endure to hear of a toleration of popery, which, though originally demanded, was not even mentioned in the king's graces, and disapproved the indulgence shown by those graces to recusants, which is said to have been followed by an impolitic ostentation of the Romish worship †. They objected

* Carte's Ormond, i. 48. Leland, ii. 475, et post.

† Leland, iii. 4, et post. A vehement protestation of the bishops about this time, with Usher at their head, against any connivance at popery, is a disgrace to their memory. It is to be met with in many books. Strafford, however, was far from

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

to a renewal of the contribution, both as the price of this dangerous tolerance of recusancy, and as debarring the protestant subjects of their constitutional right to grant money only in parliament. Wentworth, however, insisted upon its payment for another year, at the expiration of which a parliament was to be called *.

The king did not come without reluctance into this last measure, hating as he did the very name of parliament; but the lord deputy confided in his own energy to make it innoxious and serviceable. They conspired together how to extort the most from Ireland, and concede the least; Charles, in truth, showing a most selfish indifference to any thing but his own revenue, and a most dishonourable unfaithfulness to his word †. The parliament met in 1634, with a strong desire of insisting on the confirmation of the graces they had already paid for; but Wentworth had so balanced the protestant and recusant parties, employed so skilfully the resources of fair promises and intimidation, that he procured six subsidies to be granted before a prorogation, without

any real liberality of sentiment. His abstinence from religious persecution was intended to be temporary as the motives whereon it was founded. "It will be ever far forth of my heart to conceive that a conformity in religion is not above all other things principally to be intended. For undoubtedly till we be brought all under one form of divine service, the crown is never safe on this side, &c. It were too much at once to distemper them by bringing plantations upon them, and disturbing them in the exercise of their religion, so long as it be without scandal; and so indeed very inconsiderate, as I conceive, to move in this latter till that former be fully settled, and by that means the protestant party become by much the stronger, which in truth I do not yet conceive it to be." Straff. Letters, ii. 39. He says, however, and I believe truly, that no man had been touched for conscience sake since he was deputy. Id. 112. Every parish, as we find by Bedell's Life, "had its priest and mass-house; in some places mass was said in the churches; the Romish bishops exercised their jurisdiction, which was fully obeyed; but "the priests were grossly ignorant and openly scandalous, both for drunkenness and all sort of lewdness." P. 41. 76. More than ten to one in his diocese, the county of Cavan, were recusants.

* Some at the council-board having intimated a doubt of their authority to bind the kingdom, "I was then put to my last refuge, which was plainly to declare that there was no necessity which induced me to take them to counsel in this business, for rather than fail in so necessary a duty to my master, I would undertake upon the peril of my head to make the king's army able to subsist, and to provide for itself amongst them without their help." Strafford Letters, i. 98.

† Id. i. 183. Carte, 61.

any mutual concession from the crown*. It had been agreed that a second session should be held for confirming the graces; but in this, as might be expected, the supplies having been provided, the request of both houses that they might receive the stipulated reward met with a cold reception; and ultimately the most essential articles, those establishing a sixty years' prescription against the crown, and securing the titles of proprietors in Clare and Connaught, as well as those which relieved the catholics in the court of wards from the oath of supremacy, were laid aside. Statutes, on the other hand, were borrowed from England, especially that of uses, which cut off the methods they had hitherto employed for evading the law's severity†.

Strafford had always determined to execute the project of the late reign with respect to the western counties. He proceeded to

* The protestants, he wrote word, had a majority of eight in the commons. He told them, "it was very indifferent to him what resolution the house might take, that there were two ends he had in view, and one he would infallibly attain,—either a submission of the people to his majesty's just demands, or a just occasion of breach, and either would content the king; the first was undeniably and evidently best for them." Id. 277, 278. In his speech to the two houses, he said, "His majesty expects not to find you muttering, or to name it more truly, mutinying in corners. I am commanded to carry a very watchful eye over these private and secret conventicles, to punish the transgression with a heavy and severe hand; therefore it behoves you to look to it." Id. 289. "Finally," he concludes, "I wish you had a right judgment in all things, yet let me not prove a Cassandra amongst you to speak truth and not be believed. However, speak truth I will, were I to become your enemy for it. Remember, therefore, that I tell you, you may easily make or mar this parliament. If you proceed with respect, without laying clogs and conditions upon the king, as wise men and good subjects ought to do, you shall infallibly set up this parliament eminent to posterity, as the very basis and foundation of the greatest happiness and prosperity that ever befell this nation. But if you meet a great king with narrow circumscribed hearts, if you will needs be wise and cautious above the moon [sic], remember again that I tell you, you shall never be able to cast your mists before the eyes of a discerning king; you shall be found out, your sons shall wish they had been the children of more believing parents; and in a time when you look not for it, when it will be too late for you to help, the sad repentance of an unadvised heart shall be yours, lasting honour shall be my master's."

These subsidies were reckoned at near 41,000*l.* each, and were thus apportioned: Leinster paid 13,000*l.* (of which 1000*l.* from the city of Dublin), Munster 11,000*l.*, Ulster 10,000*l.*, Connaught 6800*l.* Mountmorres, ii. 16.

† Irish Statutes, 10 Car. I., c. 1, 2, 3, &c. Strafford Letters, i. 279. 312. The king expressly approved the denial of the graces, though promised formerly by himself. Id. 345. Leland, iii. 20.

"I can now say," Strafford observes, (Id. 344.) "the king is as absolute here as any prince in the whole world can be; and may still be, if it be not spoiled on that side."

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

hold an inquisition in each county of Connaught, and summoned juries in order to preserve a mockery of justice in the midst of tyranny. They were required to find the king's title to all the lands, on such evidence as could be found and was thought fit to be laid before them; and were told, that what would be best for their own interests would be to return such a verdict as the king desired, what would be best for his, to do the contrary; since he was able to establish it without their consent, and wished only to invest them graciously with a large part of what they now unlawfully withheld from him. These menaces had their effect in all counties except that of Galway, where a jury stood out obstinately against the crown, and being in consequence, as well as the sheriff, summoned to the castle in Dublin, were sentenced to an enormous fine. Yet the remonstrances of the western proprietors were so clamorous, that no steps were immediately taken for carrying into effect the designed plantation, and the great revolutions of Scotland and England which soon ensued gave another occupation to the mind of lord Strafford *. It has never been disputed, that a more uniform administration of justice in ordinary cases, a stricter coercion of outrage, a more extensive commerce, evidenced by the augmentation of customs, above all the foundation of the great linen manufacture in Ulster, distinguished the period of his government †. But it is equally manifest, that neither the reconcilement of parties, nor their affection to the English crown, could be the result of his arbitrary domination; and that having healed no wound he found, he left others to break out after his removal. The despotic violence of this minister towards private persons, and those of great eminence, is in some instances well known by the proceedings on his impeachment, and in others is sufficiently familiar by our historical and biographical literature.

* Strafford Letters, i. 353. 370. 402. 442. 451. 454. 473.; ii. 113. 139. 366. Leland, iii. 30. 39. Carte, 82.

† It is however true that he discouraged the woollen manufacture, in order to keep the kingdom more dependent, and that this was part of his motive in promoting the other. Vol. ii. 19.

It is indeed remarkable, that we find among the objects of his oppression and insult all that most illustrates the contemporary annals of Ireland; the venerable learning of Usher, the pious integrity of Bedell, the experienced wisdom of Cork, and the early virtue of Clanricarde.

The parliament assembled by Strafford in 1640 began with loud professions of gratitude to the king for the excellent governor he had appointed over them; they voted subsidies to pay a large army raised to serve against the Scots, and seemed eager to give every manifestation of zealous loyalty*. But after their prorogation, and during the summer of that year, as rapid a tendency to a great revolution became visible, as in England; the commons, when they met again, seemed no longer the same men; and after the fall of their great viceroy, they coalesced with his English enemies to consummate his destruction. Hate smothered by fear, but inflamed by the same cause, broke forth in a remonstrance of the commons, presented through a committee, not to the king, but a superior power, the Long Parliament of England. The two houses united to avail themselves of the advantageous moment, and to extort, as they very justly might, from the necessities of Charles that confirmation of his promises which had been refused in his prosperity. Both parties, catholic as well as protestant, acted together in this national cause, shunning for the present to bring forward those differences which were not the less implacable for being thus deferred. The catalogue of temporal grievances was long enough to produce this momentary coalition: it might be groundless in some articles, it might be exaggerated in more, it might in many be of ancient standing; but few can pretend to deny that it exhibits a true picture of the mis-government of Ireland at all times, but especially under the earl of Strafford. The king in May, 1641, consented to the

* Leland, iii. 51. Strafford himself (ii. 397) speaks highly of their disposition.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

greater part of their demands; but unfortunately they were never granted by law*.

But the disordered condition of his affairs gave encouragement to hopes far beyond what any parliamentary remonstrances could realize; hopes long cherished when they had seemed vain to the world, but such as courage, and bigotry, and resentment would never lay aside. The court of Madrid had not abandoned its connexion with the disaffected Irish, especially of the priesthood; the son of Tyrone, and many followers of that cause, served in its armies; and there seems much reason to believe that, in the beginning of 1641, the project of insurrection was formed among the expatriated Irish, not without the concurrence of Spain, and perhaps of Richelieu†. The government had

* Carte's Ormond, 100. 140. Leland, iii. 54, et post. Mountmorres, ii. 29. A remonstrance of the commons to lord deputy Wandesford against various grievances was presented 7th November 1640, before lord Stafford had been impeached. Id. 39. As to confirming the graces, the delay, whether it proceeded from the king or his Irish representatives, seems to have caused some suspicion. Lord Clanricarde mentions the ill consequences that might result, in a letter to lord Bristol. Carte's Ormond, iii. 40.

† Sir Henry Vane communicated to the lords justices by the king's command, March 16, 1640-1, that advice had been received and confirmed by the ministers in Spain and elsewhere, which "deserved to be seriously considered, and an especial care and watchfulness to be had therein; that of late there have passed from Spain, and the like may well have been from other parts, an unspeakable number of Irish churchmen for England and Ireland, and some good old soldiers, under pretext of asking leave to raise men for the king of Spain; whereas, it is observed among the Irish friars there, a whisper was, as if they expected a rebellion in Ireland, and particularly in Connaught." Carte's Ormond, iii. 30. This latter, which Carte seems to have taken from a printed book, is authenticated in Clarendon State Papers, ii. 143. I have mentioned in another part of this work, Chap. VIII. the provocations which might have induced the cabinet of Madrid to foment disturbances in Charles's dominions. The lords justices are taxed by Carte with supineness in paying no attention to this letter, vol. i. 166; but how he knew that they paid none seems hard to say.

Another imputation has been thrown on the Irish government and on the parliament, for objecting to permit levies to be made for the Spanish service out of the army raised by Strafford, and disbanded in the spring of 1641, which the king had himself proposed. Carte, i. 133. Leland, 82; who follows the former implicitly, as he always does. The event indeed proved that it would have been far safer to let those soldiers, chiefly catholics, enlist under a foreign banner; but considering the long connexion of Spain with that party, and the apprehension always entertained that the disaffected might acquire military experience in her service, the objection does not seem so very unreasonable.

passed from the vigorous hands of Strafford into those of two lords justices, sir William Parsons and sir John Borlase, men by no means equal to the critical circumstances wherein they were placed, though possibly too severely censured by those who do not look at their extraordinary difficulties with sufficient candour. The primary causes of the rebellion are not to be found in their supineness or misconduct, but in the two great sins of the English government; in the penal laws as to religion, which pressed on almost the whole people, and in the systematic iniquity which despoiled them of their possessions. They could not be expected to miss such an occasion of revolt; it was an hour of revolution, when liberty was won by arms, and ancient laws were set at nought; the very success of their worst enemies, the covenanters in Scotland, seemed the assurance of their own victory, as it was the reproach of their submission *.

The rebellion broke out, as is well known, by a sudden massacre of the Scots and English in Ulster, designed no doubt by a vindictive and bigoted people to extirpate those races, and, if contemporary authorities are to be credited, falling little short of this in its execution. Their evident exaggeration has long been acknowledged, but possibly the scepticism of later writers has extenuated rather too much the horrors of this mas-

* The fullest writer on the Irish rebellion is Carte in his Life of Ormond, who had the use of a vast collection of documents belonging to that noble family, a selection from which forms his third volume. But he is extremely partial against all who leaned to the parliamentary or puritan side, and especially the lords justices, Parsons and Borlase, which renders him, to say the least, a very favourable witness for the catholics. Leland, with much candour towards the latter, but a good deal of the same prejudice against the presbyterians, is little more than the echo of Carte. A more vigorous, though less elegant historian, is Warner, whose impartiality is at least equal to Leland's, and who may perhaps, upon the whole, be reckoned the best modern authority. Sir John Temple's History of Irish Rebellion, and lord Clanricarde's Letters, with a few more of less importance, are valuable contemporary testimonies.

The catholics themselves might better leave their cause to Carte and Leland, than excite prejudices instead of allaying them by such a tissue of mis-representation and disingenuousness as Curry's Historical Account of the Civil Wars in Ireland.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

sacre *. It was certainly not the crime of the catholics generally; nor, perhaps, in the other provinces of Ireland are they chargeable with more cruelty than their opponents †. Whatever may have been the original intentions of the lords of the pale, or of the Anglo-Irish professing the old religion in general, which has been a problem in history, a few months only elapsed before they

* Sir John Temple reckons the number of protestants murdered, or destroyed in some manner, from the breaking out of the rebellion in October 1641, to the cessation in September 1643, at three hundred thousand, an evident and enormous exaggeration; so that the first edition being incorrectly printed, we might almost suspect a cipher to have been added by mistake, p. 15 (edit. Maseres). Clarendon says forty or fifty thousand were murdered in the first insurrection. Sir William Petty, in his Political Anatomy of Ireland, from calculations too vague to deserve confidence, puts the number massacred at thirty-seven thousand. Warner has scrutinized the examinations of witnesses, taken before a commission appointed in 1643, and now deposited in the library of Trinity College, Dublin, and, finding many of the depositions unsworn, and others founded on hearsay, has thrown more doubt than any earlier writer on the extent of the massacre. Upon the whole, he thinks twelve thousand lives of protestants the utmost that can be allowed for the direct or indirect effects of the rebellion, during the two first years, except losses in war (History of Irish Rebellion, p. 397); and of these only one-third by murder. It is to be observed, however, that no distinct accounts could be preserved in former depositions of so promiscuous a slaughter, and that the very exaggerations show its tremendous nature. The Ulster colony, a numerous and brave people, were evidently unable to make head for a considerable time against the rebels; which could hardly have been, if they had only lost a few thousand. It is idle to throw an air of ridicule, as is sometimes attempted, on the depositions, because they are mingled with some fabulous circumstances, such as the appearance of the ghosts of the murdered on the bridge at Cavan; which, by the way, is only told, in the depositions subjoined to Temple, as the report of the place, and was no cool-blooded fabrication, but the work of a fancy bewildered by real horrors.

Carte, who dwells at length on every circumstance unfavourable to the opposite party, despatches the Ulster massacre in a single short paragraph, and coolly remarks, that there were not many murders, "*considering the nature of such an affair*," in the first week of the insurrection. Life of Ormond, i. 175—177. This is hardly reconcilable to fair dealing. Curry endeavours to discredit even Warner's very moderate estimate, and affects to call him in one place, p. 184, "a writer highly prejudiced against the insurgents," which is grossly false. He praises Carte and Nalson, the only protestants he does praise, and bestows on the latter the name of impartial. I wonder he does not say that not one protestant was murdered. Dr. Lingard has lately given a short account of the Ulster rebellion, (History of England, x. 154), omitting all mention of the massacre, and endeavouring, in a note at the end of the volume, to disprove, by mere scraps of quotation, an event of such notoriety, that we must abandon all faith in public fame if it were really unfounded.

† Carte, i. 253, 266; iii. 51. Leland, 154. Sir Charles Coote and sir William St. Leger are charged with great cruelties in Munster. The catholic confederates spoke with abhorrence of the Ulster massacre. Leland, 161. Warner, 201. They behaved, in many parts, with humanity; nor indeed do we find frequent instances of violence, except in those counties where the proprietors had been dispossessed.

were almost universally engaged in the war *. The old distinctions of Irish and English blood were obliterated by those of religion; and it became a desperate contention whether the majority of the nation should be trodden to the dust by forfeiture and persecution, or the crown lose every thing beyond a nominal sovereignty over Ireland. The insurgents, who might once perhaps have been content with a repeal of the penal laws, grew naturally in their demands through success, or rather through the inability of the English government to keep the field, and began to claim the entire establishment of their religion; terms in themselves not unreasonable, nor apparently disproportionate to their circumstances, and which the king was, in his distresses, nearly ready to concede, but such as never could have been obtained from a third party, of whom they did not sufficiently think, the parlia-

* Carte and Leland endeavour to show that the Irish of the pale were driven into rebellion by the distrust of the lords justices, who refused to furnish them with arms, after the revolt in Ulster, and permitted the parliament to sit for one day only, in order to publish a declaration against the rebels. But the prejudice of these writers is very glaring. The insurrection broke out in Ulster, October 23, 1641; and in the beginning of December, the lords of the pale were in arms. Surely this affords some presumption, that Warner has reason to think them privy to the rebellion, or, at least, not very averse to it. P. 116. And with the suspicion that might naturally attach to all Irish catholics, could Borlase and Parsons be censurable for their declining to intrust them with arms, or rather doing so with some caution? Temple, 56. If they had acted otherwise, we should certainly have heard of their incredible imprudence. Again the catholic party, in the house of commons, were so cold in their loyalty, to say the least, that they objected to giving any appellation to the rebels worse than that of discontented gentlemen. Leland, 140. See too Clanricarde's Letters, p. 33, &c. In fact, several counties of Leinster and Connaught were in arms before the pale.

It has been thought by some, that the lords justices had time enough to have quelled the rebellion in Ulster before it spread farther. Warner, 130. Of this, as I conceive, we should not pretend to judge confidently. Certain it is, that the whole army in Ireland was very small, consisting of only nine hundred and forty-three horse, and two thousand two hundred and ninety-seven foot. Temple, 32. Carte, 194. I think sir John Temple has been unjustly depreciated; he was master of the rolls in Ireland at the time, and a member of the council,—no bad witness for what passed in Dublin; and he makes out a complete justification, as far as appears, for the conduct of the lords justices and council towards the lords of the pale and the catholic gentry. Nobody alleges that Parsons and Borlase were men of as much energy as lord Strafford; but those who sit down in their closets, like Leland and Warner, more than a century afterwards, to lavish the most indignant contempt on their memory, should have reflected a little on the circumstances.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

ment and people of England. The commons had, at the very beginning of the rebellion, voted that all the forfeited estates of the insurgents should be allotted to such as should aid in reducing the island to obedience, and thus rendered the war desperate on the part of the Irish*. No great efforts were made, however, for some years; but, after the king's person had fallen into their hands, the victorious party set themselves in earnest to effect the conquest of Ireland. This was achieved by Cromwell and his powerful army after several years, with such bloodshed and rigour, that, in the opinion of lord Clarendon, the sufferings of that nation, from the outset of the rebellion to its close, have never been surpassed but by those of the Jews in their destruction by Titus.

At the restoration of Charles II. there were in Ireland two people, one of native, or old English blood, the other of recent settlement; one catholic, the other protestant; one humbled by defeat, the other insolent with victory; one regarding the soil as his ancient inheritance, the other as his acquisition and reward. There were three religions; for the Scots of Ulster and the army of Cromwell had never owned the episcopal church, which for several years had fallen almost as low as that of Rome. There were claims, not easily set aside on the score of right, to the possession of lands, which the entire island could not satisfy. In England little more had been necessary than to revive a suspended constitution: in Ireland it was something beyond a new constitution and code of law that was required;

* "I perceived (says Preston, general of the Irish, writing to lord Clanricarde) that the catholic religion, the rights and prerogatives of his majesty, my dread sovereign, the liberties of my country, and whether there should be an Irishman or no, were the prizes at stake." Carte, iii. 120. Clanricarde himself expresses to the king, and to his brother, lord Essex, in January 1642, his apprehension that the English parliament meant to make it a religious war. Clanricarde's Letters, 61, et post. The letters of this great man, perhaps the most unsullied character in the annals of Ireland, and certainly more so than even his illustrious contemporary, the duke of Ormond, exhibit the struggles of a noble mind between love of his country and his religion on the one hand, loyalty and honour on the other. At a later period of that unhappy war, he thought himself able to conciliate both principles.

it was the titles and boundaries of each man's private right that were to be litigated and adjudged. The episcopal church was restored with no delay, as never having been abolished by law: and a parliament, containing no catholics, and not many vehement non-conformists, proceeded to the great work of settling the struggles of opposite claimants, by a fresh partition of the kingdom *.

The king had already published a declaration for the settlement of Ireland, intended as the basis of an act of parliament. The adventurers, or those who, on the faith of several acts passed in England in 1642, with the assent of the late king, had advanced money for quelling the rebellion, in consideration of lands to be allotted to them in certain stipulated proportions, and who had, in general, actually received them from Cromwell, were confirmed in all the lands possessed by them on the 7th of May, 1659, and all the deficiencies were to be supplied before the next year. The army was confirmed in the estates already allotted for their pay, with an exception of church lands, and some others. Those officers who had served in the royal army against the Irish before 1649 were to be satisfied for their pay, at least to the amount of five-eighths, out of lands to be allotted for that purpose. Innocent papists, that is, such as were not concerned in the rebellion, and whom Cromwell had arbitrarily transplanted into Connaught, were to be restored to their estates, and those who possessed them to be indemnified. Those who had submitted to the peace of 1648, and not been afterwards in arms, if they had not accepted lands in Connaught, were also to be restored, as soon as those who now possessed them should be satisfied for their expenses. Those who had served the king abroad, and thirty-six enumerated persons of the Irish nobility and gentry, were to be put on the same footing as the last. The precedency of restitution, an important point where the claims

* Carte, ii. 221. Leland, 420.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

exceeded the means of satisfying them, were to be in the order above specified *.

This declaration was by no means pleasing to all concerned. The loyal officers, who had served before 1649, murmured that they had little prospect of more than twelve shillings and sixpence in the pound, while the republican army of Cromwell would receive the full value. The Irish were more loud in their complaints: no one was to be held innocent who had been in the rebel quarters before the cessation of 1643, and other qualifications were added so severe, that hardly any could expect to come within them. In the house of commons the majority, consisting very much of the new interests, that is, of the adventurers and army, were in favour of adhering to the declaration. In the house of lords it was successfully urged, that by gratifying the new men to the utmost, no fund would be left for indemnifying the loyalists, or the innocent Irish. It was proposed, that if the lands, not yet disposed of, should not be sufficient to satisfy all the interests for which the king had meant to provide by his declaration, there should be a proportional defalcation out of every class for the benefit of the whole. These discussions were adjourned to London, where delegates of the different parties employed every resource of intrigue at the English court. The king's natural bias towards the religion of the Irish had rendered him their friend, and they seemed, at one time, likely to reverse much that had been intended against them; but their agents grew rash with hope, assumed a tone of superiority which ill became their condition, affected to justify their rebellion, and finally so much disgusted their sovereign, that he ordered the act of settlement to be sent back with little alteration, except the insertion of some more Irish nominees †.

The execution of this act was intrusted to English commissioners, from whom it was reasonable to hope for an impartiality

* Carte, ii. 216. Leland, 414. † Carte, 222, et post. Leland, 420, et post.

which could not be found among the interested classes. Notwithstanding the rigorous proofs nominally exacted, more of the Irish were pronounced innocent than the commons had expected, and the new possessors having the sway of that assembly, a clamour was raised that the popish interest had prevailed; some talked of defending their estates by arms, some even meddled in fanatical conspiracies against the government; it was insisted that a closer inquisition should be made, and stricter qualifications demanded. The manifest deficiency of lands to supply all the claimants for whom the act of settlement provided made it necessary to resort to a supplemental measure, called the act of explanation. The adventurers and soldiers relinquished one-third of the estates enjoyed by them on the 7th of May, 1659. Twenty Irish nominees were added to those who were to be restored by the king's favour; but all those who had not already been adjudged innocent, more than three thousand in number, were absolutely cut off from any hope of restitution. The great majority of these no question were guilty, yet they justly complained of this confiscation without a trial *. Upon the whole result, the Irish catholics having previously held about two-thirds of the kingdom, lost more than one-half of their possessions by forfeiture on account of their rebellion. If we can rely at all on the calculations, made almost in the infancy of political arithmetic by one of its most diligent investigators, they were diminished also by much more than one-third through the calamities of that period †.

* Carte, 258—316. Leland, 431, et post.

† The statements of lands forfeited and restored, under the execution of the act of settlement, are not the same in all writers. Sir William Petty estimates the superficies of Ireland at 10,500,000 Irish acres (being to the English measure nearly as eight to thirteen), whereof 7,500,000 are of good land, the rest being moor, bog, and lake. In 1641, the estates of the protestant owners and of the church were about one-third of these cultivable lands, those of catholics two-thirds. The whole of the latter were seized or sequestered by Cromwell and the parliament. After summing up the allotments made by the commissioners under the act of settlement, he concludes that, in 1672, the English, protestants, and church have 5,140,000 acres, and the papists nearly half as much. Political Anatomy of Ireland, c. 1. In lord Orrery's Letters, i. 187, et post, is a statement, which seems not altogether to tally with sir William

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

It is more easy to censure the particular inequalities, or even, in some respects, injustice of the act of settlement, than to point out what better course was to have been adopted. The re-adjustment of all private rights after so entire a destruction of their land-marks could only be effected by the coarse process of general rules. Nor does it appear, that the catholics, considered as a great mass, could reasonably murmur against the confiscation of half their estates, after a civil war wherein it is evident that so large a proportion of themselves were concerned *. Charles, it is true, had not been personally resisted by the insurgents; but, as chief of England, he stood in the place of Cromwell, and equally represented the sovereignty of the greater island over the lesser, which under no form of government it would concede.

The catholics, however, thought themselves oppressed by the act of settlement, and could not forgive the duke of Ormond for his constant regard to the protestant interests, and the supremacy of the English crown. They had enough to encourage them in the king's bias towards their religion, which he was able to manifest more openly than in England. Under the administration of lord Berkley in 1670, at the time of Charles's conspiracy with the king of France to subvert religion and

Petty's; nor is that of the latter clear and consistent in all its computations. Lawrence, author of "The Interest of Ireland Stated," a treatise published in 1682, says, "of 10,868,949 acres, returned by the last survey of Ireland, the Irish papists are possessed but of 2,011,108 acres, which is but a small matter above the fifth part of the whole." Part ii. p. 48. But as it is evidently below one-fifth, there must be some mistake. I suspect, that in one of these sums he reckoned the whole extent, and in the other only cultivable lands. Lord Clare, in his celebrated speech on the Union, greatly over-rates the confiscations.

Petty calculates, that above 500,000 of the Irish "perished and were wasted by the sword, plague, famine, hardship, and banishment, between the 23d day of October 1641, and the same day 1652;" and conceives the population of the island in 1641 to have been nearly 1,500,000, including protestants. But his conjectures are prodigiously vague.

* Petty is as ill satisfied with the restoration of lands to the Irish, as they could be with the confiscations. "Of all that claimed innocency, seven in eight obtained it. The restored persons have more than what was their own in 1641, by at least one-fifth. Of those adjudged innocents, not one in twenty were really so."

liberty, they began to menace an approaching change, and to aim at revoking, or materially weakening, the act of settlement. The most bigoted and insolent of the popish clergy, who had lately rejected with indignation an offer of more reasonable men to renounce the tenets obnoxious to civil governments, were countenanced at Dublin; but the first alarm of the new proprietors, as well as the general apprehension of the court's designs in England, soon rendered it necessary to desist from the projected innovations *. The next reign, of course, reanimated the Irish party; a dispensing prerogative set aside all the statutes; every civil office, the courts of justice, and the privy council, were filled with catholics; the protestant soldiers were disbanded; the citizens of that religion were disarmed; the tithes were withheld from their clergy; they were suddenly reduced to feel that bitter condition of a conquered and proscribed people, which they had long rendered the lot of their enemies †. From these enemies, exasperated by bigotry and revenge, they could have nothing but a full and exceeding measure of retaliation to expect; nor had they even the last hope that an English king, for the sake of his crown and country, must protect those who formed the strongest link between the two islands. A man violent and ambitious, without superior capacity, the earl of Tyrconnel, lord lieutenant in 1687, and commander of the army, looked only to his master's interests in subordination to those of his countrymen, and of his own. It is now ascertained, that doubtful of the king's success in the struggle for restoring popery in England, he had made secret overtures to some of the French agents for casting off all connexion with that kingdom, in case of James's death, and with the aid of Louis, placing the crown of Ireland on his own head ‡. The revolution in England was

* Carte, ii. 414, et post. Leland, 458. et post.

† Leland, 493, et post. Mazure, Hist. de la Revolut. ii. 113.

‡ M. Mazure has brought this remarkable fact to light. Bonrepos, a French emissary in England, was authorized by his court to proceed in a negotiation with

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

followed by a war in Ireland of three years' duration, and a war on both sides, like that of 1641, for self-preservation. In the parliament held by James at Dublin in 1690, the act of settlement was repealed, and above 2000 persons attainted by name; both, it has been said, perhaps with little truth, against the king's will, who dreaded the impetuous nationality that was tearing away the bulwarks of his throne *. But the magnanimous defence of Derry, and the splendid victory of the Boyne, restored the protestant cause: though the Irish, with the succour of French troops, maintained for two years a gallant resistance, they could not ultimately withstand the triple superiority of military talents, resources, and discipline. Their bravery, however, served to obtain the articles of Limerick on the surrender of that city; conceded by their noble-minded conqueror, against the disposition of those who longed to plunder and persecute their fallen enemy. By the first of these articles, "the Roman catholics of this kingdom shall enjoy such privileges in the exercise of their religion as are consistent with the laws of Ireland, or as they did enjoy in the reign of king Charles II.; and their majesties, as soon as their affairs will permit them to summon a parliament in this kingdom, will endeavour to procure the said Roman catholics such further security in that particular as may preserve them from any disturbance upon the account of their said religion." The second secures to the inhabitants of Limerick and other places then in possession of the Irish, and to all officers and soldiers then in arms, who should return to their majesties' obedience, and to all such as should

Tyrconnel for the separation of the two islands, in case that a protestant should succeed to the crown of England. He had accordingly a private interview with a confidential agent of the lord lieutenant at Chester, in the month of October, 1687. Tyrconnel undertook that in less than a year every thing should be prepared. Id. ii. 281. 288; iii. 430.

* Leland, 537. This seems to rest on the authority of Leslie, which is by no means good. Some letters of Barillon in 1687 show that James had intended the repeal of the act of settlement. Dalrymple, 257. 263.

be under their protection in the counties of Limerick, Kerry, Clare, Galway, and Mayo, all their estates, and all their rights, privileges, and immunities, which they held in the reign of Charles II., free from all forfeitures or outlawries incurred by them *.

This second article, but only as to the garrison of Limerick or other persons in arms, is confirmed by statute some years afterwards †. The first article seems, however, to be passed over. The forfeitures on account of the rebellion, estimated at 1,060,792 acres, were somewhat diminished by restitutions to the ancient possessors under the capitulation; the greater part were lavishly distributed to English grantees ‡. It appears from hence, that at the end of the seventeenth century, the Irish or Anglo-Irish catholics could hardly possess above one-sixth or one-seventh of the kingdom. They were still formidable from their numbers and their sufferings; and the victorious party saw no security but in a system of oppression, contained in a series of laws during the reigns of William and Anne, which have scarce a parallel in European history, unless it be that of the protestants in France, after the revocation of the edict of Nantes, who yet were but a feeble minority of the whole people. No papist was allowed to keep a school, or to teach any in private houses, except the children of the family §. Severe penalties were denounced against such as should go themselves or send others for education beyond seas in the Romish religion; and on probable information given to a magistrate, the burthen of proving the contrary was thrown on the accused; the offence not to be tried by a jury, but by justices at quarter sessions ‖. Intermarriages between persons of different religion, and possessing any estate in Ireland, were

* See the articles at length in Leland, 619. Those who argue from the treaty of Limerick against any political disabilities subsisting at present do injury to a good cause.

† Irish Stat. 9 W. III. c. 2.

‡ Parl. Hist. v. 1202.

§ 7 W. III. c. 4.

‖ Id.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

forbidden; the children, in case of either parent being protestant, might be taken from the other, to be educated in that faith *. No papist could be guardian to any child; but the court of chancery might appoint some relation or other person to bring up the ward in the protestant religion †. The eldest son, being a protestant, might turn his father's estate in fee simple into a tenancy for life, and thus secure his own inheritance. But if the children were all papists, the father's lands were to be of the nature of gavelkind, and descend equally among them. Papists were disabled from purchasing lands except for terms of not more than thirty-one years, at a rent not less than two-thirds of the full value. They were even to conform within six months after any title should accrue by descent, devise, or settlement, on pain of forfeiture to the next protestant heir; a provision which seems intended to exclude them from real property altogether, and to render the others almost supererogatory ‡. Arms, says the poet, remain to the plundered; but the Irish legislature knew that the plunder would be imperfect and insecure while arms remained; no papist was permitted to retain them, and search might be made at any time by two justices §. The bare celebration of catholic rites was not subjected to any fresh penalties; but regular priests, bishops, and others claiming jurisdiction, and all who should come into the kingdom from foreign parts, were banished on pain of transportation, in case of neglecting to comply, and of high treason in case of returning from banishment. Lest these provisions should be evaded, priests were required to be registered; they were forbidden to leave their own parishes, and rewards were held out to informers who should detect the violations of these statutes, to be levied on the popish inhabitants of the country ‖. To have exterminated the catholics by the sword, or expelled them, like the Moris-

* 9 W. III. c. 3. 2 Anne, c. 6.
† Id.
‡ Id.
§ 7 W. III. c. 5.
‖ 9 W. III. c. 1. 2 Anne, c. 3. s. 7. 8 Anne, c. 3.

coes of Spain, would have been little more repugnant to justice and humanity, but incomparably more politic.

It may easily be supposed, that no political privileges would be left to those who were thus debarred of the common rights of civil society. The Irish parliament had never adopted the act passed in the 5th of Elizabeth, imposing the oath of supremacy on the members of the commons. It had been full of catholics under the queen and her two next successors. In the second session of 1641, after the flames of rebellion had enveloped almost all the island, the house of commons were induced to exclude, by a resolution of their own, those who would not take that oath; a step which can only be judged in connexion with the general circumstances of Ireland at that awful crisis *. In the parliament of 1661, no catholic, or only one, was returned †; but the house addressed the lords justices to issue a commission for administering the oath of supremacy to all its members. A bill passed the commons in 1663, for imposing that oath in future, which was stopped by a prorogation, and the duke of Ormond seems to have been adverse to it ‡. An act of the English parliament after the revolution, reciting that "great disquiet and many dangerous attempts have been made to deprive their majesties and their royal predecessors of the said realm of Ireland by the liberty which the popish recusants there have had and taken to sit and vote in parliament," requires every member of both houses of parliament to take the new oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and to subscribe the declaration against transubstantiation before taking his seat §. This statute was adopted and enacted by the Irish parliament in 1782, after they had renounced the legislative supremacy of England under which it had been enforced. The elective franchise, which had been rather

* Carte's Ormond, i. 328. Warner, 212. These writers censure the measure as illegal and impolitic.

† Leland says none; but by lord Orrery's letters, i. 35, it appears that one papist and one anabaptist were chosen for that parliament, both from Tuam.

‡ Mountmorres, i. 158.

§ Ibid. 3 W. and M. c. 2.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

singularly spared in an act of Anne, was taken away from the Roman catholics of Ireland in 1715, or as some think, not absolutely till 1727*.

These tremendous statutes had in some measure the effect which their framers designed. The wealthier families, against whom they were principally levelled, conformed in many instances to the protestant church†. The catholics were extinguished as a political body; and though any willing allegiance to the house of Hanover would have been monstrous, and it is known that their bishops were constantly nominated to the pope by the Stuart princes‡, they did not manifest at any period, or even during the rebellions of 1715 and 1745, the least movement towards a disturbance of the government. Yet for thirty years after the accession of George I., they continued to be insulted in public proceedings under the name of the common enemy, sometimes oppressed by the enactment of new statutes, or the stricter execution of the old; till in the latter years of George II., their peaceable deportment, and the rise of a more generous spirit among the Irish protestants, not only sheathed the fangs of the law, but elicited expressions of esteem from the ruling powers, which they might justly consider as the pledge of a more tolerant policy. The mere exercise of their religion in an obscure manner had long been permitted without molestation§.

* Mountmorres, i. 163. Plowden's Hist. Review of Ireland, i. 263. The terrible act of the second of Anne prescribes only the oaths of allegiance and abjuration for voters at elections, s. 24.

† Such conversions were naturally distrusted. Boulter expresses alarm at the number of pseudo protestants who practised the law, and a bill was actually passed to disable any one, who had not professed that religion for five years, from acting as a barrister or solicitor. Letters, i. 226. "The practice of the law, from the top to the bottom, is almost wholly in the hands of these converts."

‡ Evidence of State of Ireland in Sessions of 1824 and 1825, p. 325. (as printed for Murray). In a letter of the year 1755, from a clergyman in Ireland to archbishop Herring, in the British Museum (Sloane MSS. 4164. 11.), this is also stated. The writer seems to object to a repeal of the penal laws, which the catholics were supposed to be attempting; and says they had the exercise of their religion as openly as the protestants, and monasteries in many places.

§ Plowden's Historical Review of State of Ireland, vol. i. passim.

Thus in Ireland there were three nations, the original natives, the Anglo-Irish, and the new English; the two former catholic, except some chiefly of the upper classes, who had conformed to the church; the last wholly protestant. There were three religions, the Roman catholic, the established or Anglican, and the presbyterian; more than one half of the protestants, according to the computation of those times, belonging to the latter denomination*. These however in a less degree were under the ban of the law as truly as the catholics themselves; they were excluded from all civil and military offices by a test act, and even their religious meetings were denounced by penal statutes. Yet the house of commons after the revolution always contained a strong presbyterian body, and unable, as it seems, to obtain an act of indemnity for those who had taken commissions in the militia, while the rebellion of 1715 was raging in Great Britain, had recourse to a resolution, that whoever should prosecute any dissenter for accepting such a commission is an enemy to the king and the protestant interest†. They did not even obtain a legal toleration till 1720‡. It seems as if the connexion of the two islands, and the whole system of constitutional laws in the lesser, subsisted only for the sake of securing the privileges and emoluments of a small number of ecclesiastics, frequently strangers, who performed no duties, and rendered no sort of return for their enormous monopoly. A great share, in fact, of the temporal government under George II. was thrown successively into the hands of two primates, Boulter and Stone; the one a worthy but narrow-minded man, who showed his egregious ignorance of policy in endeavouring to promote the wealth and happiness of the people, whom he at the same

* Sir William Petty, in 1672, reckons the inhabitants of Ireland at 1,100,000; of whom 200,000 English, and 100,000 Scots; above half the former being of the established church. Political Anatomy of Ireland, chap. ii. It is sometimes said in modern times, though I believe erroneously, that the presbyterians form a majority of protestants in Ireland; yet their proportion has probably diminished since the beginning of the eighteenth century.

† Plowden, 243.

‡ Irish Stat. 6 G. I. c. 5.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

time studied to depress and discourage in respect of political freedom; the other an able, but profligate and ambitious statesman, whose name is mingled, as an object of odium and enmity, with the first great struggles of Irish patriotism.

The new Irish nation, or rather the protestant nation, since all distinctions of origin have, from the time of the great rebellion, been merged in those of religion, partook, in large measure, of the spirit that was poured out on the advocates of liberty and the revolution in the sister kingdom. Their parliament was always strongly whig, and scarcely manageable during the later years of the queen. They began to assimilate themselves more and more to the English model, and to cast off by degrees the fetters that galled and degraded them. By Poyning's celebrated law, the initiative power was reserved to the English council. This act, at one time popular in Ireland, was afterwards justly regarded as destructive of the rights of their parliament, and a badge of the nation's dependence. It was attempted by the commons, in 1641, and by the catholic confederates in the rebellion, to procure its repeal; which Charles I. steadily refused, till he was driven to refuse nothing. In his son's reign, it is said, that "the council framed bills altogether; a negative alone on them and their several provisoes was left to parliament; only a general proposition for a bill by way of address to the lord lieutenant and council came from parliament; nor was it till after the revolution that heads of bills were presented; these last in fact resembled acts of parliament or bills, with only the small difference of 'We pray that it may be enacted,' instead of 'Be it enacted *.'" They assumed about the same time the examination of accounts, and of the expenditure of public money †.

Meanwhile, as they gradually emancipated themselves from

* Mountmorres, ii. 142. As one house could not regularly transmit heads of bills to the other, the advantage of a joint recommendation was obtained by means of conferences, which were consequently much more usual than in England. Id. 179.

† Id. 184.

the ascendancy of the crown, they found a more formidable power to contend with in the English parliament. It was acknowledged, by all at least of the protestant name, that the crown of Ireland was essentially dependent on that of England, and subject to any changes that might affect the succession of the latter. But the question as to the subordination of her legislature was of a different kind. The precedents and authorities of early ages seem not decisive; so far as they extend, they rather countenance the opinion, that English statutes were of themselves valid in Ireland. But from the time of Henry VI. or Edward IV., it was certainly established that they had no operation, unless enacted by the Irish parliament. This, however, would not legally prove that they might not be binding, if express words to that effect were employed; and such was the doctrine of lord Coke and of other English lawyers. This came into discussion about the eventful period of 1641. The Irish in general protested against the legislative authority of England, as a novel theory which could not be maintained*; and two treatises on the subject, one ascribed to lord chancellor Bolton, or more probably to an eminent lawyer, Patrick Darcy, for the independence of Ireland, another, in answer to it, by serjeant Mayart, may be read in the Hibernica of Harris†. Very few instances occurred before the revolution, wherein the English parliament thought fit to include Ireland in its enactments, and none perhaps wherein they were carried into effect. But after the revolution several laws of great importance were passed in England to bind the other kingdom, and acquiesced in without express opposition by its parliament. Molyneux, however, in his celebrated "Case of Ireland's being bound by Acts of Parliament in England stated," published in 1697, set up the claim of his country for absolute legislative independency. The house of commons, at Westminster, came to resolutions against this book, and with their high notions of parliamentary sovereignty,

* Carte's Ormond, iii. 55. † Vol. ii. Mountmorres, i. 360.

CHAP. XVIII.

Ireland.

were not likely to desist from a pretension, which, like the very similar claim to impose taxes in America, sprung in fact from the semi-republican scheme of constitutional law established by means of the revolution *. It is evident, that while the sovereignty and enacting power was supposed to reside wholly in the king, and only the power of consent in the two houses of parliament, it was much less natural to suppose a control of the English legislature over other dominions of the crown, having their own representation for similar purposes, than after they had become, in effect and in general sentiment, though not quite in the statute-book, co-ordinate partakers of the supreme authority. The Irish parliament, however, advancing as it were in a parallel line, had naturally imbibed the same sense of its own supremacy, and made at length an effort to assert it. A judgment from the court of Exchequer, in 1719, having been reversed by the house of lords, an appeal was brought before the lords in England, who affirmed the judgment of the exchequer. The Irish lords resolved that no appeal lay from the court of exchequer in Ireland to the king in parliament in Great Britain; and the barons of that court having acted in obedience to the order of the English lords, were taken into the custody of the Black Rod. That house next addressed the king, setting forth their reasons against admitting the appellant jurisdiction. But the lords in England, after requesting the king to confer some favour on the barons of the exchequer who had been censured and illegally imprisoned for doing their duty, ordered a bill to be brought in for better securing the dependency of Ireland upon the crown of Great Britain, which declares "that

* Journals, 27th June, 1698. Parl. Hist., v. 1181. They resolved at the same time, that the conduct of the Irish parliament, in pretending to re-enact a law made in England expressly to bind Ireland, had given occasion to these dangerous positions. On the 30th of June they addressed the king in consequence, requesting him to prevent any thing of the like kind in future. In this address, as first drawn, the legislative authority of the *kingdom of England* is asserted. But this phrase was omitted afterwards, I presume, as rather novel; though by doing so they destroyed the basis of their proposition, which could stand much better on the new theory of the constitution than the ancient.

the king's majesty, by and with the advice and consent of the lords spiritual and temporal and commons of Great Britain in parliament assembled, had, hath, and of right ought to have full power and authority to make laws and statutes of sufficient force and validity to bind the people and the kingdom of Ireland; and that the house of lords of Ireland have not nor of right ought to have any jurisdiction, to judge of, reverse, or affirm any judgment, sentence or decree, given or made in any court within the said kingdom; and that all proceedings before the said house of lords upon any such judgment, sentence or decree, are and are hereby declared to be, utterly null and void to all intents and purposes whatsoever*."

The English government found no better method of counteracting this rising spirit of independence, than by bestowing the chief posts in the state and church on strangers, in order to keep up what was called the English interest†. This wretched policy united the natives of Ireland in jealousy and discontent, which the later years of Swift were devoted to inflame. It was impossible that the kingdom should become, as it did under George II., more flourishing through its great natural fertility, its extensive manufacture of linen, and its facilities for commerce, though much restricted, the domestic alarm from the papists also being allayed by their utter prostration, without writhing under the indignity of its subordination; or that a house of commons, constructed so much on the model of the English, could hear patiently of liberties and privileges it did not enjoy. These aspirations for equality first, perhaps, broke out into audible complaints in the year 1753. The country was in so thriving a state, that there

* 5 G. I. c. 5. Plowden, 244. The Irish house of lords had, however, entertained writs of error as early as 1644, and appeals in equity from 1661. Mountmorres, i. 339. The English peers might have remembered that their own precedents were not much older.

† See Boulter's Letters, passim. His plan for governing Ireland was to send over as many English-born bishops as possible. "The bishops," he says, "are the persons on whom the government must depend for doing the public business here." I. 238. This of course disgusted the Irish church.

CHAP. XVIII. Ireland.

was a surplus revenue after payment of all charges. The house of commons determined to apply this to the liquidation of a debt. The government, though not unwilling to admit of such an application, maintained that the whole revenue belonged to the king, and could not be disposed of without his previous consent. In England, where the grants of parliament are appropriated according to estimates, such a question could hardly arise; nor would there, I presume, be the slightest doubt as to the control of the house of commons over a surplus income. But in Ireland, the practice of appropriation seems never to have prevailed, at least so strictly *; and the constitutional right might perhaps not unreasonably be disputed. After long and violent discussions, wherein the speaker of the commons and other eminent men bore a leading part on the popular side, the crown was so far victorious as to procure some motions to be carried, which seemed to imply its authority; but the house took care, by more special applications of the revenue, to prevent the recurrence of an undisposed surplus †. From this æra the great parliamentary history of Ireland begins, and is terminated after half a century by the union; a period fruitful of splendid eloquence, and of ardent, though not always uncompromising patriotism, but which, of course, is beyond the limits prescribed to these pages.

* Mountmorres, i. 424. † Plowden, 306 et post. Hardy's Life of lord Charlemont.

NOTE ON ΕΙΚΩΝ ΒΑΣΙΛΙΚΗ.

See Page 86 *of this Volume.*

I LEAVE this passage exactly as it was written about the end of 1822, two years before the publication of Dr. Wordsworth's Treatise intitled "Who Wrote Εικων Βασιλικη?" It contains, therefore, no other conclusion than my own reflections on the evidence had led me to infer. After attentively considering all that has lately been published on the subject, I remain full as decidedly satisfied as before, that no fact of this kind has ever been better established, than that Dr. Gauden was the author of the Icon. And the following observations may serve as a sketch of the controversy:

I. Gauden was a prolific and active pamphleteer who, though, his benefice lying in the parliament's quarters, he had not been altogether reckoned on the royalist side in the civil war, and had probably taken the covenant, was distinguished by his zeal to preserve the king's life, and by the intrepidity of his attacks on the army and commonwealth party. He was also forward in promoting the restoration. And he possessed a considerable reputation as well for learning as for liveliness of parts and facility of writing. Such men, by constantly appearing before the public on ephemeral subjects, acquire a notoriety which does not extend to posterity. The attempts of Dr. Wordsworth to depreciate his character are particularly injudicious, as they tend to render the promotion he obtained more surprising on any ground, except that which it is the aim of Dr. Wordsworth's book to exclude. I fairly admit that Gauden's advancement to a bishopric on the restoration does not seem to me in itself a remarkable circumstance. He was raised to the see of Exeter in the autumn of 1660.

II. His letters to lord Clarendon complaining of the inadequacy of his reward in this bishopric, and urging his great service in writing the Icon Basilice, which, after several allusions, he at length positively asserts, have long been before the public. In these he throws out evident menaces, that if not treated as he deserves, he may be provoked to disclose the secret, intimating also that his wife is mistress of it, and not more disposed than himself to put up with neglect. He appeals to Dr. Morley as having told him, that the chancellor was already informed of the fact, and that he (Gauden) might have any preferment he desired. He asserts, that the manuscript of the Icon, after the hand-writing had been partly disguised by his wife, was sent to the late king in the Isle of Wight, and delivered to him by Duppa, bishop of Winchester, that he had lately made it known to the king and duke of York, who had owned it as a great service.

Can any man believe that Clarendon, devoted to the memory of his late master, and of course much impressed with respect for this supposed record of his virtues, would acquiesce in so extraordinary a claim without inquiry? Morley and Duppa were living, the former his intimate friend; he saw the king and duke every day. Could Gauden, unless literally insane, have expected any other answer than a vehement reproof of his abandoned impudence, and a perpetual exclusion from favour? Instead of this, the chancellor, proud as he was, disgusted as he must have been at Gauden's rapacity and endeavours to extort promotion by threatening, writes to soothe him in the kindest terms, and with promises to do all in his power.

"Scit secreta domûs, atque inde timetur."

He adds the following sentence in reference to the great subject of his letter. "The particular which you often renewed, I do confess was imparted to me under secrecy, and of which I did not take myself to be at liberty to take notice; and truly, when it ceases to be a secret, I know nobody will be glad of it but Mr. Milton. I have very often wished that I had never been trusted with it." This, I take it, is as plain an admission as words can make, that he already knew, on sufficient authority, what the bishop asserts, that he was the author of the book going under the king's name. He might have had it from Morley, to whom Gauden refers; or more probably from the fountain-head, either bishop Duppa, or the late marquis of Hertford; both of whom could depose to it of their own knowledge. Gauden does not hesitate to ask about this time for the bishopric of Winchester, and though he does not obtain that, is promoted to Worcester, (no bad see), where he dies not long after. Other letters of his are extant, addressed to the earl of Bristol, dwelling, with nauseous vanity and meanness, on this great secret, with which that lord appears to have been acquainted. But as no answers to them appear, and they do not carry the proof beyond Gauden's own assertion, these are of less consequence; though, by the way, the late republication of them by Mr. Todd has been the means of renewing the controversy. The decisive part of the argument is based on the former letters; on the absurdity of imagining that Gauden would prefer so extraordinary and invidious a claim to lord Clarendon, on the authority of persons who might instantly have contradicted him; or that Clarendon should have admitted such a claim on any authority which did not appear to him irresistible. The opinions of the king and duke of York, which have long been known, would be important in a common question of evidence; but where there is moral demonstration, no ordinary probability much increases our conviction.

III. The external evidence does not depend on Gauden's sole testimony. It is confirmed by a circumstantial narrative drawn up by his widow, and preserved for many years in her family, but certainly not designed at least for immediate publication, nor open to any suspicion of interest, or any other motive which can affect its veracity. It is perhaps just possible that she might take the story on her husband's authority; but no one who reads her narrative will think it more than possible. It tallies exactly with what he says, in writing to lord Clarendon, of her share and privity in the transaction. But this is nothing in comparison with the confirmation afforded by Dr. Walker, who was curate to Gauden at the time of his writing the Icon, and who, above forty years afterwards, published an account which it is vain to controvert. Every unfair trick has been attempted, both at that time and lately, against this honest witness. He is sneered at under the name of the Essex Doctor. His veracity was impeached; and, now that it is thought decent to avoid that style of argument, one is adopted far less to the purpose; and he is represented as a very weak man, unable to tell what he saw and heard himself. (Wordsworth, p. 22. 65). I have read Walker's pamphlet, and will maintain, not only that it is a plain, clear, matter of fact statement, but that the author gives no proof of being a weak man; nay, that there is one passage, (Walker's True Account of Icon Basilice, p. 8,) on the difference between a natural and assumed style, which, as far as I have seen, is equal to any thing that has come from the pen of Dr. Wordsworth.

IV. This evidence, on behalf of Gauden, leaves such an impression on my mind, that I cannot imagine any contradiction that could do more than cause suspense of judgment. But on the king's side what is there? No doubt the vindicators of the Icon's authenticity have brought together a long series of testimonies, as they deem them, which, numerically reckoned, would exceed those in the opposite scale. But when we compare their weight, how great a difference! No one witness is adduced, whose testimony, like Walker's, is distinct, explicit, and received directly from himself. A number of persons have heard that the first part of the Icon was taken at Naseby, and restored afterwards to the king. It should seem at first, that there must be some foundation for such a rumour. But the whole is explained, when we find that the manuscript of sir Edward Walker's Historical Discourses, with interlineations by the

king, was really taken at Naseby, and restored to him by Fairfax two years afterwards; and that major Huntingdon's testimony, the only one that is not hearsay, plainly relates to this book. It was quite according to the natural growth and progress of stories, that they should be converted into the Icon Basilice. Again, a Mr. Levett, page to Charles at Carisbrook, is sure he has seen the king write it. But what certainty have we that he ever said so? And if he did, who vouches for Mr. Levett's correctness and veracity? And who pretends that the king wrote more than a small part of the Icon at Carisbrook? Sir Thomas Herbert contradicts Levett in some particulars, but remembers to have seen the Icon in the king's possession, though in a hand not like that he usually wrote; nay, that the king had bequeathed it to him among other things, though no one seems to have inquired after this manuscript, which the family would hardly have destroyed, and which, if really in the king's hand, would have gone far to settle the question. This is the most plausible piece of evidence on that side; but its force vanishes when we remember that, according to Gauden's own statement, the Icon was sent to Charles, and revised by him. Herbert also notices that the original title was Suspiria Regalia; a fact mentioned by Mrs. Gauden, and which strongly confirms the rest of her story. As to the crowd of hearsay tales, collected by Long, Hollingworth, and Wagstaffe, in the reign of William III., and since repeated by Dr. Wordsworth, they afford little or no presumption. It is true that *independent* testimonies, though separately not very forcible, may amount to a cumulative proof of no slight probability. But the fallacy lies in considering these independent. They are collected by violent party-men, in a violent party controversy. Every one knows the frenzy, as I may call it, of the non-juring and high-church faction about Charles I. They were also, in all respects, a faction eminent even among factions for disregard of veracity. Several of their misrepresentations as to evidence were exposed at the time by Walker and others, especially as to the important testimony of major Huntingdon, which he declared himself to have been untruly reported. (Walker, p. 32.) These tales are also full of inconsistency with each other, and with admitted facts. It is well for Dr. W. to slur over these blemishes, by talking with Paley about "the usual character of human testimony, substantial truth under circumstantial variety." P. 93. Such a maxim, if not applied with great discretion and much limitation, leads to absurdity, and would be laughed at in any court of justice. The tendency of any mixture of error in testimony is to lessen the probability of the whole. This diminution is in many cases so small, as not perceptibly to affect our belief. But where an essential circumstance in a story is evidently unfounded, as in the particular instance where Dr. W. applies his rule, it is to pull a stone out of an arch; the whole fabric must fall to the ground. Nor does this author, any more than other advocates, fail to forget his maxim, when he comes to point out any supposed inaccuracy or inconsistency in the opposite evidence.

V. But if we confess the external evidence on Gauden's side to be the stronger, is there not a conviction of the Icon's genuineness arising in every one's mind from reading it? Not certainly in mine. I repeat what I have said in the text, and what I thought before the renewal of the controversy, that it has all the air of a fictitious composition, especially to those who are acquainted with the character and genuine writings of the king. It is imbued with an unity of sentiment, a monotony, if I may so speak, of patience and fortitude, not very natural to any work written under such different circumstances at such long intervals, and, least of all, to one written by Charles the First. This no doubt is its great merit, and has given it as much of its reputation as has not sprung from party-spirit. We see before us a prince deeply injured, against whom the whole course of events, as well as the will of man, seems to be at war, calmly recording, at every fresh trial, the integrity of his designs; holding, as it were, his robe around him to perish with dignity; and, conscious that he has nothing to hope in life, appealing to those who shall behold this posthumous monument for justice to his memory. But, trusting little to the frail passions of mankind, he has recourse, at every pause, to the Searcher of hearts; and, like Prometheus, undaunted amidst the shock that crushes him, calls on the Eternal as the witness and redresser of his wrongs. Εσορᾶς μ' ὡς ἔκδικα

πάσχω. This effect Gauden has aimed to produce with considerable success. But was it the natural character of the king? We know him to have been confident almost to infatuation, averse on that account to all treaties, impatient of counsels that he deemed lukewarm or desponding, relying, in the most untoward state of his affairs, on every broken reed; and, when all human help seemed hopeless, still sure that Providence would not allow the unrighteous cause to prosper. Nor indeed, at the periods when the early chapters of the Icon are supposed to be written, was any man, in Charles's situation, likely to abandon all his hopes with the tranquil resignation that pervades his book. He might have written it at Carisbrook, or rather during the latter part of his continuance there, after the failure of the Scots' invasion; and then it was really written in his name. Those who read it forget the fiction of a work protracted through eight years of feverish vicissitude, and see only the captive sovereign, the destined victim of the axe.

But what is still more, the forger in his haste sometimes forgot this also. Let any man read the Icon, and say that it could be what it is maintained to be, a series of meditations written from time to time on the several events which each chapter commemorates. The second chapter, On Lord Strafford's Death, speaks of it as long past. "I have observed," he says, "that those who counselled me to sign that bill have been so far from receiving the rewards of such ingratiatings with the people, that no men have been harassed and crushed more than they. He only hath been least vexed by them who counselled me not to consent against the vote of my own conscience." Dr. Wordsworth, by the way, here shows a strange misapprehension, for a man who has evidently read a good deal about the times. He supposes archbishop Williams, lord Say, and sir Henry Vane the elder, to be the persons intended. But had Say and Vane (even supposing Charles to have been counselled by them, which, at least as to the latter, is unlikely) been harassed and crushed—the one in the highest power and influence with parliament during all the king's life; the other, for his son's sake, treated with such uniform respect as to be named on the council of state in 1649? Even Williams, whether Gauden meant him or not, had by no means been either harassed or crushed beyond the loss of his ecclesiastical dignities, having lived quietly on his estate in Wales, where, as it is well known, he took at one time an active part for the parliament. But I rather suspect that the forger had in his eye the earl of Holland, perhaps also the duke of Hamilton, whom he might surmise to have advised the king's assent to the bill of attainder, and who, in 1648, were truly harassed and crushed. But to proceed—The fourth chapter, On the Tumults, alludes to the deaths of some concerned, probably Pym and Hampden, and could not therefore have been written before 1644. In the seventh, On the Queen's Departure out of England, she is spoken of as still absent; consequently it was written before the summer of 1643. In the eighth, sir John Hotham's execution is mentioned, which took place early in January, 1645. The ninth, On raising Armies, speaks of the war as just imminent, and should have been written in the summer of 1642. The tenth seems to be a continuation of the former, when suddenly we find that the king had offered to give up the militia during his whole life, which he never did till November, 1647. This one anachronism is enough to set aside the book. In the eleventh, On the Nineteen Propositions, we come back to 1642; they are spoken of as just before him, and no one can doubt that this chapter is supposed to be written at that time; though a blunder appears in one place, where he intimates that he has given up some of his power for seven years, which alludes to his proposals at Uxbridge in 1645. In the twelfth chapter, the cessation with the Irish appears to have expired. These inconsistencies mark the haste with which the forgery was of necessity completed.

It has been common to say that the style and sentiments of the Icon are far superior to any thing of which Gauden was capable; and this has been the popular argument for its authenticity. But what do those who assert this know of Gauden and his writings? The latter, being almost entirely ephemeral, are very scarce; so much so, that I could not find more than three or four of his tracts in the British Museum, having searched

for them with the purpose of comparison. What use others have made of their more extensive knowledge we shall soon see. It is admitted that he was a man of abilities, and a copious writer; though with bad taste, and too florid and redundant a style. Is not this the character of the Icon? Scarce any book is more full of metaphors, and these generally frigid and common-place. The sun, the sea, the wind, are in perpetual requisition. Not a page is free from these ornaments. We have some acknowledged writings of the king's; his style, like that of his son James, is plain, short, English, without pedantry or affectation. If there is much in the Icon which Charles could not have written, I mean as to recondite allusion, command of language, and regular structure of periods, there is much that he would have disdained to write. I would not impute to the patron of Jones and Vandyke, to the admirer of Hooker and Shakspeare, such puerilities as the following: "I will rather choose to wear a crown of thorns with my Saviour, than to exchange that of gold (which is due to me) for one of lead, whose embased flexibleness shall be found to bend," &c. Chap. VI. "God knows as I can with truth wash my hands in innocency as to any guilt in that [the Irish] rebellion; so I might wash them in my tears, as to the sad apprehensions I had to see it spread so far and make such waste." Chap. XI. "I had the charity to interpret that most part of my subjects fought against my supposed errors, not my person, and intended *to mend me, not to end me.*" Chap. XV. And, above all, this happy stroke on his being delivered up by the Scots: "If I am sold by them, I am only sorry they should do it; and *that my price should be so much above my Saviour's.*" Chap. XXIII.—Could the sound taste and rational piety of Charles have stooped to this senseless cant?

This part of the argument, however, has lately been managed by Mr. Todd, (Letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury, 1826), in the most decisive manner; and presumptions carrying, in my judgment, conviction with them, have been adduced by him in a series of parallelisms between the language of the Icon and that of Gauden's known writings. There are thirty-seven in number, but a few will perhaps suffice to convince the reader; indeed I do not see how any man can resist the first I shall mention.

Gauden, in a sermon printed 1641, describes the magistrate "setting up the just terror of those laws, which may chase away those *owls, and bats, and feral birds* that love darkness."

"My reputation shall, like the sun, after *owls and bats* have had their freedom in the night and darker times, rise and recover itself to such a degree of splendour, as those *feral birds* shall be grieved to behold *." Icon, c. 15.

The following are from other writings of Gauden:

"Dressing the church as swine would dress a garden."

"As swine are to gardens and orderly plantations, so are tumults to parliaments." Icon, C. 4.

"I had rather you should see and prevent your sins in such glasses of free and fair remonstrances, than hear of them too late in the just wrath of God upon you and the kingdom."

"I believe the just avenger of all disorders will, in time, make those men and that city see their sin in the glass of their punishment." Ibid.

"Let all my iniquities be cast into the sea, even the red sea of my Saviour's blood."

"In the sea of our Saviour's blood drown our sins; and through this red sea of our own blood bring us at last to a state of piety, peace, and plenty." C. 12.

* Mr. Todd says that Milton, in commenting on this passage, changed *feral* into *fatal*, considering the other as an unauthorised word. But he would not have spared the writer on this account; and, in my edition, which is of 1649, though not one of the best, as it wants the odd Greek motto, I find *fatal*. I conjecture that Gauden altered the word to escape that juxta-position with his own sermon, which would lead to so irresistible a consequence as Mr. Todd has drawn.

"After a most savage and *cyclopick* manner death doth at once triumph over us."

"Poor mortals forget how soon the wheel may come about, and the same measure be meted to them which they mete to others. Adonizibek may live to see his own *thumbs and great toes cut off*."

"The soft dews and the liberal but gentle showers of the divine goodness."

"Reverence those who bear the name and office of fathers to church and state; love and honour them, if worthy; pray for them and bear with them, if bad and froward; cover and palliate, as Noah's more piteous and blessed sons did, a father's nakedness and infirmity; as Constantine the Great professed he was willing to do the failing of any bishop or churchman."

"Like some *cyclopick** monster whom nothing will serve to eat and drink." Ibid.

"They cannot but see the proportions of their evil dealings against me in the measure of God's retaliation upon them, who cannot hope long to enjoy their own *thumbs and toes*," &c. Id. Meditation on Death.

"The sweet and liberal dews of heaven." C. 17.

"The errors of the fathers of the church I would rather with Constantine cover with silence, and reform with meekness, than expose their persons and sacred function to vulgar contempt." C. 17.

It is inconceivable that two persons, so different in character and circumstances as Charles I. and Dr. Gauden, should so remarkably and so frequently coincide in allusion and expression; and, in a common question of literary imitation, almost any one of the above parallelisms would be reckoned conclusive. Mr. Todd has enlarged this list by help of a curious manuscript book of prayers, composed by Gauden, which has been brought to light by the discussion, and which, in a number of striking coincidences of language, identifies its author with the pseudo-Charles of the Icon.

It will be agreed, perhaps on all sides, that the Icon Basilike is superior, taken as a whole, to the acknowledged writings of Gauden, though the one has been absurdly extolled, and the other unjustly depreciated. But what inference does this furnish? Do men never write above themselves? Do they not frequently support a simulated character better than their own? What were Chatterton and Macpherson with their vizors off? Is it probable that the author of Junius ever again displayed equal skill in composition? I am no ardent admirer of those celebrated letters; but among five thousand guesses, they have never been ascribed to any man (except Mr. Burke) to whom the objection of inferiority, as to powers of style, has not been made. Literary history would supply many other instances; but we are really not driven to this argument; for in point of mere talent, and especially of language, there seems no great superiority in the Icon over the known writings of Gauden. Where it excels, is in the air of personated majesty. Gauden had more facility than imagination, more imagination than judgment, more judgment than taste, more of every thing than dignity and disinterestedness of soul. The real man, as we find him in his political tracts, or in his letters to lord Clarendon and lord Bristol—vulgar, scurrilous, low-minded, vain, insolent, querulous, craving, importunate—is different indeed from the feigned sovereign, the mild resigned royal sufferer of his invention. But is not this, again, conformable to our experience of mankind? Do all, who can form virtuous and noble conceptions, act by their standard in the current practice of their lives? The preacher, the poet, the novelist, the dramatist, afford unfortunately too many proofs to the contrary. Gauden had genius and learning to direct him how to counterfeit magnanimity; but a restless, unquiet temper, and too strong desire of advancement, were much in the way of his exhibiting it in his own life. In the Icon, he was the king on the stage; out of the Icon, he was the player in his garret.

* It seems not clear that any writer but Gauden has used the word *cyclopick*. Todd, p. 62.

This controversy must long since have ceased, if it had not been kept alive by a doting partiality for the name of Charles the First. In the eyes of some men, he is the model of spotless virtue on a throne. They cannot bear to lose his own testimony for those excellent dispositions, which the peevish inquirers into history have been apt to question. Hence they preposterously represent his consent to the publication of the Icon Basilike in his name as a heinous crime, of which he could not be supposed guilty; and a prince, whose life was full of assertions which he knew to be untrue, and of promises he never meant to perform, is held up as incapable of this most pardonable, I will say, most innocent deception. The book was sent to him, it was approved by him, it was revised by him (though circumstances did not permit the revised copy to be published, as he, of course, designed), what turpitude could there be in his suffering it to bear his name? He doubtless wished the nation to believe that he thought as the Icon made him think; and as to the literary honour which he thus assumed, it was not worth a moment's consideration.

I here conclude a note rather too prolix for this work. Those who are acquainted with the argument will know that I have omitted a great deal for the sake of brevity, and because it has been well treated by others, especially in the 44th volume of the Edinburgh Review. I cannot admit that any doubt remains as to this controversy. That a few advocates of the king's claim will still be found, is probable enough; but to me it appears like believing in the authenticity of Rowley's Poems, or in the text of the three witnesses, or that the duke of Monmouth was the Man in the Iron Mask, or that Horne Tooke wrote Junius, or like placing, any time these dozen years, the laurel of Waverley on a wrong head, or whatever else most stultifies in criticism. Let me presume to hope that Dr. Wordsworth, who possesses, and I doubt not most sincerely, an anxious desire that the truth may be fairly brought to light, will yield his assent to the public voice on a reconsideration of the evidence, and especially on weighing the surprising additions to it which Mr. Todd has adduced; and will remember that men have a right to expect a sound and discriminating logic from the successor of Barrow and Bentley in presiding over that great school of the severer discipline of the mind, Trinity College, Cambridge.

INDEX.

A.

Abbey Lands, appropriation of them considered, i. 79, 80, 82, 85, *note*; lawfulness of seizing, 80; distribution of, 84; retained by the parliament under Mary, ib.; increase the power of the nobility, &c. ib. 85; charity of the early possessors of, 87; confirmed by the pope to their new possessors, 112.

Abbots, surrenders of, to Henry VIII. probably unlawful, i. 77; seats of in parliament, and their majority over the temporal peers, 78 and *note*, 79.

Abbot, George, archbishop of Canterbury, sequestered, i. 450, and *note* †; his Calvinistic zeal, 512; popish tracts in his library, 525, *note*.

Abolition of military tenures, ii. 172.

Act of Indemnity, ii. 164; exclusion of the regicides from the, 165; commons vote to exclude seven, yet add several more, ib. and *note* *.

Act of Uniformity, ii. 200, and *note* *, ib.; clauses against the presbyterians, ib.; no person to hold any preferment in England without episcopal ordination, 201, and *note* *, 202; every minister compelled to give his assent to the book of Common Prayer on pain of being deprived of his benefice, 202, and *note* †, ib.; schoolmasters obliged to subscribe to, ib.

Act for suppressing conventicles renewed, ii. 253; opposed by bishop Wilkins, ib.; supported by Sheldon and others, ib.

Act of Supremacy, particulars of the, ii. 258.

Act of Security, persons eligible to parliament by the, ii. 544, and *note* *, ib.

Act of 1700 against the growth of popery, ii. 529, and *note* *, ib.; severity of its penalties, ib.; not carried into effect, ib.

Act of Settlement, ii. 530; limitations of the prerogative contained in it, 533, and *note* †, 534; remarkable cause of the fourth remedial article, 535; its precaution against the influence of foreigners, 539, and *note* *; importance of its sixth article, ib.

Act of Toleration a scanty measure of religious liberty, ii. 523.

Act for preventing the growth of schism, ii. 601.

Act against wrongous imprisonment in Scotland, ii. 691.

Act of security in Scotland, 1704, ii. 693; its particulars, 694.

Acts harsh against the native Irish in settlement of colonies, ii. 741.

Act for settlement of Ireland, ii. 755; its insufficiency, 757.

Act of explanation, 757; remarks on it, 758.

Acts replacing the crown in its prerogatives, ii. 189 (see Bills and Statutes).

Adamson, archbishop of St. Andrews, obliged to retract before the general assembly of the church of Scotland, ii. 670.

Addresses, numerous servile, from all parties to James II., ii. 418, and *note* †, ib.

Administration of Ireland, in whom vested, ii. 713.

Adultery, canon laws concerning, i. 110, 111, *note* *.

Agitators established in every regiment, ii. 61.

Aix la Chapelle, peace of, ii. 240.

Alienation, ancient English laws on, i. 12, 13.

Allegiance, extent and power of, i. 334, *note* †.

Allegiance, oath of, administered to papists under James I., i. 439, 440.

Allen, ——, his treacherous purposes against Elizabeth, i. 154, and *note* †.

Almanza, battle of, ii. 577.

Altars removed in churches, i. 93.

Alva, duke of, his designed invasion of England, i. 143, 144, *note* *, 149.
Ambassadors, exempt from criminal process, i. 172; extent of their privilege examined, ib. *note*.
Andrews, Dr. Launcelot, bishop of Winchester, his sentiments on transubstantiation, i. 520, *note* *; singular phrase in his epitaph, 521, *note* *; doctrines of, 522, *note* *.
Anjou, duke of, his proposed marriage with queen Elizabeth, i. 135, *note*, 146, 152, 249, 250, and *note*.
Anecdote of king Charles the First's letters to his queen, ii. 43, *note*.
Anecdotes, two, relating to king Charles I. and Cromwell, ii. 65, *note* †.
Anglesea, lord privy seal, statement of, in the case of lord Danby, ii. 280, *note* *.
Anglican church, ejected members of, their claims, ii. 178.
Anne, princess of Denmark, her repentant letter to James II., ii. 470, *note* ‡; a narrow-minded, foolish woman, ib.; her dark intrigues with the court of St. Germains, 470.
Anne, queen of Great Britain, her incapacity for government, ii. 560; her confidence in Godolphin and Marlborough, ib.; revolutions in her ministry, 561; alarmed at the expedition of the pretender, 573; her secret intentions with respect to the pretender never divulged, 577, and *note* *; her death, 581, and *note* *.
Appeals in civil suits in Scotland lay from the baron's court to that of sheriff or lord of regality, and ultimately to the parliament, ii. 665.
Aristocracy, English, in Ireland, their analogy to that of France, ii. 709.
Aristocracy of Scotland, system of repressing the, ii. 662; causes for it, ii. 663.
Aristocracy of Scotland, influence of the, in the reign of James IV.
Argyle, earl of, refuses to subscribe the test, ii. 684: convicted of treason upon the statute of leasing making and escapes, ib.; is executed after his rebellion upon this old sentence, 685.
Arlington, Henry Bennet, earl of, one of the cabal, ii. 238; obliged to change his policy, 261.
Arminian controversy, view of the, i. 432—436, and *notes*.
Arms, provided by freeholders, &c for defence of the nation, i. 595, 596, *note* †, 597.
Armstrong, sir Thomas, given up by the States, and executed without trial, ii. 331.
Army, conspiracy for bringing in, to overae the parliament, i. 573, 574, and *note*.
Army of Scotland enters England, ii. 19.
Army, parliamentary, new-modelled, ii. 33; advances towards London, ii. 60.
Army, proposals of the, to king Charles I. at Hampton-court, ii. 63; rejected by him, 65; innovating spirit in, 74; publishes a declaration for the settlement of the nation, 76; principal officers of, determine to bring the king to justice, 77, and *note* †, ib.
Army disbanded, ii. 175; origin of the present, ib.
Army, great, suddenly raised by Charles II., ii. 267, and *note* †, ib.
Army, intention of James II. to place the, under the command of catholic officers, ii. 398.
Army, standing, Charles the Second's necessity for, ii. 244; its illegality in time of peace, 452, and *note* *, ib. (see *Standing Army*); apprehensions from it, 613, and *note* §, ib.
Army reduced by the commons, ii. 487.
Army recruited by violent means, ii. 566, and *note* *.
Array, commissions of, i. 596.
Arrest, exemption from, claimed by the house of commons, i. 288—291; arrest, parliamentary privilege of exemption from, 325, 326.
Articles, lords of the, what they propounded when ratified by the three estates did not require the king's consent to give it validity, ii. 665; their origin and power, 661; regularly named in the records of every parliament from the reign of James IV., ib.; abolished, 691.
Articles of the church of England, real presence denied in the, i. 98; subsequently altered, ib. and *note*; original drawing up of the, 105, and *note* *; brought before parliament, 206, 207; statute for subscribing, 206; ministers deprived for refusing, 207, *note* †.
Articles, thirty-nine, denial of any of the, made excommunication, i. 327, *note* *.
Articles of the church on predestination, i. 433.
Articuli Cleri, account of the, i. 349.
Attainders against Russell, Sidney, Cornish, and Armstrong, reversed, ii. 509.
Atterbury, Dr. Francis, an account of his book entitled *Rights and Privileges of an English Convocation*, ii. 596; promoted to the see of Rochester, 598, and *note* *.
————, Bishop, his disaffection to the house of Hanover, ii. 604, and note *; deprived of his see, and banished for life, 605.
Ashby, a burgess of Aylesbury, sues the returning officer for refusing his vote, 627.
Ashley, Anthony, lord (afterwards earl of Shaftesbury), one of the cabal, ii. 238.

Ashley, serjeant, his speech in favour of prerogative, i. 421, *note* †.
Ashton, John, remarks on his conviction for high treason on presumptive evidence, ii. 510.
Association abjuring the title of James II., and pledging the subscribers to revenge the death of William III. generally signed, ii. 478, and *note* *.
Arundel, Thomas Howard, earl of, his committal to the Tower, i. 409.
Arundel, Henry Howard, earl of, his case in parliament, ii. 378, *note* *.
Artillery company established, i. 597.
Atkinson, ———, his speech in the house of commons against the statute for the queen's power, i. 124, 125, *note*.
Augsburg Confession, consubstantiation acknowledged in the, i. 96.
Augsburg, league of, ii. 433.
Aylmer, John, bishop of London, his persecution of papists, i. 153, *note*.
Aylmer, bishop, his covetousness and prosecution of the puritans, i. 217, 218, and *note* †; Elizabeth's tyranny to, 242, *note* *; his answer to Knox against female monarchy, 301; passage from his book on the limited power of the English crown, 302, 303.

B.

Bacon, sir Francis, lord Verulam, his praise of the laws of Henry VII. i. 11; his error concerning benevolence, 15, *note*; his account of causes belonging to the court of star chamber, 58; his apology for the execution of catholics, 176, *note* *; his character of lord Burleigh, 219; excellence and moderation of his *Advertisement on the Controversies of the Church of England*, 243, 244, and *note* *; disliked agreeing with the house of lords on a subsidy, 297; his desire for ecclesiastical reform, 321, *note* §; his scheme for an union of England and Scotland, 333, *note* *; his advice to James I. on summoning a parliament, 365; acquainted with the particulars of Overbury's murder, 380, and *note* †; impeached for bribery, 386; extenuation of, 387, *note*; his notice of the puritans, 427, *note*; recommends mildness towards the papists, 441, *note* *.
Bacon, sir Nicholas, abilities of, i. 118; great seal given to, ib. *note* *; suspected of favouring the house of Suffolk, 138; his reply to the speaker of the house of commons, 271.
Baillie, Robert, his account of the reception and impeachment of the earl of Strafford in England, i. 565, *note*.
Balmerino, lord, tried for treason on the Scotch statute of leasing-making, ii. 679.
Bancroft, Richard, archbishop of Canterbury, endeavours to increase the ecclesiastical jurisdiction, i. 348, 349, and *note*; puritan clergymen deprived by, 426, and *note*; defence of episcopacy, 428, *note*.
Bangorian controversy, ii. 598; character of it, ib. *note* †.
Bank of England, its origin, depreciation of its notes, ii. 482.
Banks, sir John, attorney general, his defence of the king's absolute power, i. 475.
Baptism by midwives abolished, i. 195, *note* †.
Barnes, Dr. Thomas, appointed to defend the marriage of Henry VIII. with Catherine of Arragon, i. 65, *note*; sentenced unheard, and burned for heresy, 32.
Barebones' parliament, ii. 98; apply themselves with vigour to reform abuses, 99; vote for the abolition of the court of chancery, 99; alarm the clergy, ib.; surrender their power to Cromwell, 100.
Barillon (the French ambassador) favours the opposition, ii. 271, *note* *; sums given to members of parliament mentioned by, 273; remarks on that corruption, ib.; suspicions against, 315; extract from, concerning an address from the commons to the king, 395, *note* *; his conversation with James II. 397, *note* †.
Barons of parliament, the title of, objected to, i. 389, *note* †.
Baronets created by James I. to raise money, i. 364, and *note* ‡.
Barons, English, their acquisitions in Ireland, ii. 706.
Barrier treaty of lord Townshend, ii. 567.
Bates, ——, case of, for refusing to pay custom, i. 342, and *note* †.
Beal, ——, his book against the ecclesiastical system of England, i. 159.
Beauchamp, William Seymour, lord, honours of his family restored to, i. 315.
Beggars caused by the alms of monasteries, i. 86; statute against giving to, ib. *note*.
Bell, Mr. his attack on licenses, i. 273, 274; elected speaker, 274, and *note* §.
Bellarmine, cardinal Robert, opposes the test-oath of James I. i. 440, and *note* †.
Bension, ——, his imprisonment by bishop Aylmer, i. 217.
Berkley, sir John, justice of the King's Bench, defends ship-money, i. 470, and *note* *; and the king's absolute power, 475.
Bedford, Francis Russell, second earl of, imprisoned under queen Mary on account of

his religion, i. 112; his death, i. 582, and *note* ‡.
Bedford, William Russell, fifth earl of, joins king Charles I. at Oxford, ii. 9; is ill received, 10; returns to the parliament, ib.
Bellay, Joachim du, bishop of Bayonne, reports that a revolt was expected in England on the divorce of Henry VIII. i. 72.
Benefices, first-fruits of, taken from the pope, i. 70.
Benevolences, oppression of, under Edward IV. i. 15; abolished under Richard III. and revived by Henry VII. ib.; granted by private persons, ib. *note*.
Benevolence, exaction so called in 1545, i. 25—27; consequences of refusing to contribute to it, 25; taken by queen Elizabeth, 264, *note*.
Benevolences required under James I. i. 368.
Bennet, Dr. ——, his proposal on the divorce of Henry VIII. i. 70, *note*.
Bennet, ——, an informer against papists, i. 165, *note* †.
Berkley, parliamentary impeachment of, i. 604. *note* *.
Berkley, Charles, first earl of, his administration in Ireland in 1670, ii. 758.
Berry, duke of, effect of his death in 1712 on the French succession, ii. 570.
Berwick, right of election extended to, by Henry VIII. ii. 381.
Berwick, treaty of, i. 545, and *note* †.
Best, Paul, ordinance against, for writing against the Trinity, ii. 54, *note* ‡.
Bible, 1535, church translation of the, proscribed, i. 89; liberty of reading, procured by Cromwell, and recalled by Henry VIII. ib. and *note*.
Bill of exclusion, drawn in favour of the duke of York's daughters, ii. 300; of rights, 450; of indemnity, 459; for regulating trials upon charges of high treason, 512; of 7th of queen Anne affording peculiar privileges to the accused, 513; to prevent occasional conformity, passes the commons, and is rejected by the lords, 601.
Bills against occasional conformity, and that restraining education, repealed by the whigs, ii. 602, and *note* *.
Birth of the pretender, suspicions attending the, ii. 427.
Birch, Dr. Thomas, confirms the genuineness of Glamorgan's commissions, ii. 46.
Bishops of England, authority of the pope in their election taken away, i. 71; their adherence to Rome the cause of their abolition by the Lutherans, 108; less offensive in England than Germany, ib.; defend church property in England, ib.; some inclined to the puritans, 196; conference of, with the house of commons, 225; commons opposed to the, 225, 227; puritans object to their title, 240, *note* *; character of, under Elizabeth, 241, and *note* ‡; tyranny of the queen towards them, 242, and *note* *; conference of, with the puritans at Hampton Court, 320, and *note*; moderated government of, proposed, 577, and *notes*; proceedings on abolishing, 578, 579; excluded from parliament, 579, and *note* ‡; reflections on that measure, 580, 581; impeachment of the twelve, 606, and *note* ||; proceedings of the, against the puritans, i. 427; jurisdiction of the, 503, and *note*; restored to their seats in the house of lords, ii. 190; their right of voting denied by the commons, in the case of lord Danby, 281; discussion on the same, ibid.; restored to Scotland after six years' abolition, 675; and to part of their revenues, ibid.; their protestations against any connivance at popery, 745, *note* †.
Bishops, popish, endeavour to discredit the English scriptures, i. 89, *note* *; refuse to officiate at Elizabeth's coronation, 118, ibid., *note* *; deprived under Elizabeth, 119; their subsequent treatment, 126.
Bishoprics despoiled in the reformation under Henry VI., i. 102.
Black, one of the ministers of St. Andrew's, summoned before the privy council of Scotland, ii. 673.
Blackstone, sir William, his misunderstanding of the statute of allegiance, 11th Henry VII., i. 10, note †; inadvertent assertion of, ii. 317.
Blair, sir Adam, impeached for high treason, ii. 317.
Bland, ——, fined by authority of parliament, i. 295.
Blount, John, sentenced by the lords to imprisonment and hard labour in Bridewell for life, ii. 633
Bolingbroke, Henry St. John lord, remarkable passage in his Letters on History, ii. 247, *note* †.; character of his writings, 652; engaged in correspondence with the pretender, 576, and *note* *; impeached of high treason, 585; his letters in the Examiner answered by lord Cowper, 652, *note* †.
Boleyn, Anne, time of her marriage with Henry VIII. considered, i. 66; interested in the reformed faith, 73; her weakness of character, 33, *note*; undoubted innocence of; her indiscretion; infamous proceedings upon her trial; her levities in discourse brought as charges against her; confesses a precontract with

lord Percy; her marriage with the king annulled, 34; act settling the crown on the king's children by, or any subsequent wife, 36.
Bolton, lord chancellor, his treatise on the independence of Ireland, ii. 767.
Bonaght, usage of, explained, ii. 705.
Bonaght and coshering, barbarous practice of, ii. 715.
Bonner, Edmund, bishop of London, his persecution, i. 104; treatment of, by Edward VI.'s council, 105, *note* *; royal letter to, for the prosecution of heretics, 114, *note* *; imprisoned in the Marshalsea, 126; denies bishop Horn to be lawfully consecrated, ibid.
Books of the reformed religion imported from Germany and Flanders, i. 88; statute against, *note* †, ibid.; books against the queen prohibited by statute, 148.
Books, restrictions on printing, selling, possessing, and importing, i. 255, 256, and *notes*.
Booth, sir George, rises in Cheshire in favour of Charles II., ii. 135.
Boroughs and burgesses, elections and wages of, under Elizabeth, i. 285, and *note*, 286.
Boroughs, twenty-two created in the reign of Edward II., 48; fourteen added to the number under Mary, ibid., and 381; state of those that return members to parliament, ii. 380; fourteen created by Edward VI., 381; many more by Elizabeth, ibid.
Boroughs royal of Scotland, common usage of the, to choose the deputies of other towns as their proxies, ii. 661.
Bossuet, Jacques, his invective against Cranmer, i. 105.
Boucher, Joan, execution and speech of, i. 104, and *note* *.
Boulter, primate of Ireland, his great share in the government of Ireland in the reign of George II., ii. 765; Stone, primate of Ireland, his great share in the government of Ireland in the reign of George II., 765; odium of his character, 766.
Bound, Dr., founder of the Sabbatarians, i. 429, *note* †.
Boyne, splendid victory of the, gained by William III., ii. 760.
Brady, Dr. Thomas, remark on his treatise on boroughs, ii. 385; remarks on his writings, 335.
Brehon, customs of, murder not held felony by the, ii. 710, and *note* †.
Brewers, complain of an imposition on malt, i. 391, *note*; proclamation concerning, 479.
Bribery, first precedent for a penalty on, i. 288; impeachments for, 386; prevalent in the court of Charles II., ii. 218; its prevalence at elections, 656.
Bridgeman, sir Orlando, succeeds Clarendon, ii. 238.
Brihuega, seven thousand English under Stanhope surrender at, ii. 566.
Bristol, John Lord Digby, earl of, refusal of summons to, &c., i. 409, 410, 411, *note* *.
Bristol, George Digby, earl of, converted to popery, ii. 207; attacks Clarendon, 228, *note* ‡.
Brodie, Mr., his exposure of the misrepresentations of Hume, i. 306, *note*.
Brown, sir Thomas, his abilities, i. 533.
Brownists and Barrowists, most fanatic of the puritans, i. 229, 230; emigrate to Holland, 230; execution of, ibid and *note* †.
Bruce, Edward, his invasion of Ireland, ii. 716.
Bucer, Martin, his permission of a concubine to the landgrave of Hesse, i. 73, *note*; objected to the English vestments of priests, 110; his doctrines concerning the Lord's Supper, 97, 98; politic ambiguity of, ibid. *note*; assists the reformation in England, 98; and in drawing up the forty-two articles, 105, *note* *.
Buckingham, Edward Stafford, duke of, his trial and execution under Henry VIII., i. 29, and *note*; his impeachment, 407, 408. 461, *note* *.
Buckingham, George Villiers, duke of, his connexion with Lord Bacon's impeachment, i. 386, 387, *note*; sets aside the protracted match with Spain, 399; deceit of, 406, and *note* *; his enmity to Spain, 441, 442, and *notes*; his scheme of seizing on American gold mines, 442, *note* †.
————, (son of the preceding), one of the cabal ministry, ii. 238; driven from the king's councils, 261; administration of, during the reign of Charles II., 351.
Buckingham, John Sheffield, duke of, engaged in the interest of the pretender, ii. 576, and *note* *.
Bull of Pius V. deposing Elizabeth, i. 144; prohibited in England by statute, 147.
Bullinger, Henry, objected to the English vestments of priests, i. 111.
Buonaparte, Napoleon, character of, compared with that of Oliver Cromwell.
Burchell, Peter, in danger of martial law under Elizabeth, i. 259, and *note* *.
Burgage tenure, ii. 384; opinion of the author concerning ancient, 390.
Burton, Henry, and Edward Bastwick, prosecuted by the star chamber, i. 493.
Butler, Mr. Charles, his candid character of Cranmer, i. 107, *note*; his discussion of the oath of supremacy, 121, *note*.
Bushell, a juryman, committed for nonpayment

of his fine imposed on him in the case of Penn and Mead, ii. 349.
Burgesses, wages of boroughs to, i. 285, *note* *; debate on non-resident, in the house of commons, 286.
Burgundy, duke of, effect of his death on the French succession, ii. 510.
Burnet, Dr. Gilbert, bishop of Salisbury, denies the answer of Henry VIII. to Luther, i. 64; and the king's bribery of the universities on his divorce, 66, *note* *; his doubts on the time of Anne Boleyn's marriage, ibid.; his valuation of the suppressed monasteries, 82; his observations on the persecutions of Mary, 114, *note* *; anecdote related by, 227; his remarkable conversation with Bentinck, 446, *note* *; remark of, on the statute for regulating trials in cases of high treason, 513.

C.

Cabal ministry, account of the, ii. 238.
Cabinet council, question of its responsibility, ii. 537, and *note* *, ibid.; members of the, answerable for the measures adopted by his consent, 539.
Calais, right of election extended to, ii. 381.
Calamy, Edmund, irregularly set at liberty by the king's order, ii. 210.
Calvin, John, adopts Bucer's doctrine on the Lord's Supper, i. 97; malignity of, 104; objected to the English vestments of priests, 111; incurred odium for the death of Servetus, 131.
Calvinism in England, i. 433—435, and *note* ‡, 436.
Calvinists, severe act against the, ii. 212.
Cambridge University, attached to protestantism, i. 198.
Camden, William, Clarenceux king of arms, remarks of, concerning Elizabeth's appointment of a successor, i. 136.
Cameronian rebellion, ii. 683; the Cameronians publish a declaration renouncing their allegiance to Charles II., 685.
Campion, Edmund, executed for popery, i. 156, 157; his torture, justified by lord Burleigh, 161, 162.
Canons, ecclesiastical, new code of, under James I., i. 326, 327, and *notes*; defending the king's absolute power, 347, and *note*.
Canon laws, commissioners appointed for framing a new series, i. 108, *note* †, 109 and *note* *; character of the canons, which were never enacted, ibid. 100, *note* *; amendments of, attempted, 205.
Carleton, sir Dudley, his unconstitutional speech on parliaments, i. 408, *note*.
Carte, Thomas, his censure of the character, &c. of queen Mary, i. 113, *note* †; his anecdotes of Godolphin and Harley, ii. 573, *note* *; his Life of the duke of Ormond, 751; the fullest writer on the Irish rebellion, ibid.
Carte and Leland, their account of the causes of the rebellion in Ireland in 1641, ii. 753, *note* *.
Cartwright, Thomas, founder of the puritans, i. 199; his character, ibid; his admonition, 200; his opposition to civil authority in the church, 201; his probable intent of its overthrow, ibid. *note* †; design of his labours, 203; objected to the seizure of church property, ibid. *note* *; summoned before the ecclesiastical commission, 222; disapproved of the puritan libels, 223; assertions of, concerning scripture, 232, *note*.
Catherine of Arragon, queen of Henry VIII.; his marriage with her, and cause of dislike, i. 64, 65, and *note*; divorce from, 66; doubts on her appearance before the legates, 68, *note*; feelings of the nation in her favour, 72.
Catholic religion, presumption of the establishment of, ii. 251.
Catholic religion, remarks on James the second's intention to re-establish, 398.
Catholics, laws of Elizabeth respecting the, i. chap. III. 116—182; a proud and obnoxious faction in the reign of Charles I., ii. 21; natural enemies to peace, ibid.; hated by both parties, 96; Charles I. gave much offence by accepting their proffered services, 28; promises of Charles II. to, 204; severe laws against, 205; loyalty of, ibid.; Charles II. bias in favour of, 206; laws against, enforced in Ireland, 736.
Catholics of Ireland, claim the re-establishment of their religion, ii. 753; aim at revoking the act of settlement, 759; their hopes under Charles II. and James II., 759; their possessions at the end of the seventeenth century, 761; severity of the laws against them during the reigns of William III. and Anne, ibid.; severe penalties imposed upon them, ibid.
Cavaliers, ruined, inadequate relief voted to, ii. 186.
Cavendish, Richard, proceedings concerning his office for writs, i. 301, *note*.
Cecil, William, lord Burleigh, his great talents, i. 118; paper of, on religious reform, ibid. *note* †; his memoranda concerning the debates on the succession under Elizabeth, 136, *note*; his conduct concerning Elizabeth's marriage, 133; arguments of, relating to the archduke Charles and the earl of Leicester, ibid. *note* §; procures an astro-

logical judgment on her marriage with the duke of Anjou, 135, *note*, 250; favours her marriage with the archduke Charles, 134, *note* *; suspected of favouring the house of Suffolk, 138 and *note* *; memorandum of, concerning the queen of Scots, 142; fears of, concerning the nation, 145, 146; his proceedings against Mary Stuart restrained by Elizabeth, 149; pamphlets of, in defence of Elizabeth, 160, 161, and *note*, 162; answered by cardinal Allen, and supported by Stubbe, 161, *note*; his memorial on the oath of supremacy, 162, 163; his advice for repressing of papists, 164; fidelity of his spies on Mary queen of Scots, 168; continues his severity to the papists, 180; his strictness over Cambridge University, 199, *note*; averse to the severity of Whitgift, 216, 217, *note* †; his apology for the puritans, 218; his constant pliancy towards Elizabeth, 219; his spoliation of church property, 240; project of, for raising money, 264; interests himself in affairs of private individuals, 265, and *note* *; his policy in doing so, 265; foresight the character of his administration, 266.

Cecil, Robert, (earl of Salisbury), his innocence of the gunpowder conspiracy, i. 439, *note*.

Celibacy of priests, its origin and evils considered, i. 99, and *note**.

Ceremonies, superstitious, abolished in England, i. 93.

Chambers, Richard, proceedings against, for refusing to pay customs, &c., i. 459, 460, 470.

Chancery, court of, its practice concerning charitable bequests, i. 85, *note*.

Chancery, origin and power of the court of, i. 371; dispute on the extent of its jurisdiction, 372, 373.

Chancery, abolition of the court of, voted, ii. 99.

Chantries, acts for abolishing, i. 101; disposition of their revenues, 102.

Charles I. king of England, constitution of England under, from 1625—29, i. chap. vii. 404—452; favourable features of his character, 404, and *note*; succeeds to the throne, in preparations for war, 405; privileges of parliament infringed by, 409, 410; determines to dissolve it, 411, and *note* †; demands a loan, and consequent tumult, 412, and *note* †, 413, 414; arbitrary proceedings of his council, 413, *note* †; summons a new parliament, 419, and *note* *; his dislike to the petition of right, 420—423; answer concerning tonnage and poundage, and prorogues the parliament, 425; his engagement to the Spanish papists when prince of Wales, 443; conditions for his marriage with the princess Henrietta Maria, 445; view of his third parliament compared with his character, 451; constitution of England under, from 1629—40, chap. viii. 453—553; declaration of, after the dissolution, 453, 454, and *note*; principal features of his foreign policy, 466, 467, 468; extenuation of his government, 478; his proclamations, 479; proceedings against the city, 482; offer of London to build the king a palace, ibid., *note* *; principal charges against his government, 483; his court, &c. suspected of favouring popery, 516, 517, 529, and *note*; supposed to have designed restoration of church lands, 524; attempts to draw him into the Romish church, 529, 530; aversion to calling a parliament, 546, 547; vain endeavour to procure a supply from, 549; dissolved, ibid.; his conduct to, 550, 551; his means for raising money, 552; summons the council of York, ibid.; assents to calling a parliament, 553; constitution of England under, from 1640—42, chap. ix., 554—615; his desire of saving lord Strafford, 569, *note*; recovers a part of his subjects' confidence, 582; remonstrance on the evils of his government, 583—585, and *notes*; his sincerity still suspected, 585—587; his attempt to seize members of parliament, 588, *note*, 589, and *note*; effects of, on the nation, 590; his sacrifices to the parliament, 600; nineteen propositions offered to, ibid.; powers claimed by, in the nineteen propositions, 601; comparative merits of his contest with the parliament, 602—615; his concessions important to his cause, 612, 613; his intentions of levying war considered, 612, *note*; probably too soon abandoned the parliament, 613—615; his success in the first part of the civil war, ii. 1; hard usage of, excites the sympathy of the aristocracy, 3; placed at the head of a considerable army, ibid.; retires from the field at Edgehill, ibid.; campaign of 1643 in his favour, ibid.; supposed error in besieging Gloucester, ibid.; affair at Brentford injurious to his reputation, 5; his strange promise to the queen, 6; success of, 9; denies the two houses the name of a parliament, ibid.; great error of, ibid.; earls of Holland, Bedford, and Clare join, ibid.; their bad reception, 10; they return to the parliament, ibid.; is inferior in substantial force, 11; impolicy of, ibid; his difficulties increased, 19; yeomanry and trading classes general against him, ibid.; remarks on the strength and resources of the two parties, 20; loses ground during winter, ibid.; makes a truce with the rebel catholics, ibid.; who are beaten at Namptwich, ibid.; distrust enter-

tained of him by his own adherents, ibid.; success over Essex in the west, ibid.; distraction of his councils at Oxford, 21; differences of his adherents, ibid.; summons the peers and commons to meet at Oxford, 22; they meet in considerable strength, and are eager for peace, 23; vote of parliament summoning him to appear at Westminster, ibid.; does not sustain much loss in the west, 32; his useless and inveterate habit of falsehood, 28; defeat of, at Naseby, 35; consequences of, ibid.; observations on his conduct after his defeat, ibid.; surrenders himself to the Scots, 38; reflections on his situation, ibid.; fidelity to the English church, 39; thinks of escaping, 41; imprudence of preserving the queen's letters which fell into the hands of parliament, 42, and *note* †; gives power to the queen to treat with the catholics, 43, and *note* *; disavows the powers granted to Glamorgan, 45; his insincerity and obstinacy, 47; delivered up to the parliament, 48; remarks on that event, ibid., and *notes* * †; offers made by the army to, 59; taken by Joyce, ibid.; army offers to restore him, ibid.; seized by Joyce, ibid.; treated with indulgence, 61; his indiscretion on that event, ibid., and *note* *; his ill reception of the proposals of the army at Hampton Court, 63; disdainfully refuses the propositions made to him, 65; escapes from Hampton Court, 66; his patient firmness, 67; concessions to the parliament, ibid.; declines passing four bills, ibid.; placed in solitary confinement, ibid.; remarks on his trial, 78; execution of, 80; reflections on his execution, character, and government, 80, and *note* *; his innovations on the law of Scotland, 677; state of the church in Ireland in the reign of, 735, *note* *; his promise of graces to the Irish, 744; his perfidy on the occasion, 745; arguments in favour of his being the author of Icon Basilike, 772; testimony of Mr. Levett, his page at Carisbrook, 773; testimony of sir Thomas Herbert, ibid.; the Icon revised by him, ibid.; his natural character compared with that displayed in the Icon Basilike, 774.

Charles II., king of England, seeks foreign assistance, ii. 103; attempts to interest the pope in his favour, 104; promises toleration to the catholics, ibid., and *note* †; his court at Brussels, 133; receives pledges from many friends in England, ibid.; pressed by the royalists to land in England, 136; will not permit the duke of York to land in England, ibid.; his reasons for this, ibid., and *note* †; fortunate in making no public engagements with foreign powers, 137; tries to bring over the leaders of the commonwealth, ibid.; hatred of the army to, 145; his restoration considered imminent, early in the year 1660, 147, and *note* *; difficulties attending his restoration, 148; constitution of the convention of parliament greatly in his favour, 151, and *notes* * †; remarks on his unconditional restoration, 152; his declaration from Breda, 164; proclamation soon after landing, 167; re-enters on the crown lands, 170; income settled on, 172; character of, by opposite parties, 177, and *note* ‡; promises to grant liberty of conscience, 178; his declaration in favour of a compromise, 182; renews his declaration from Breda, ibid., and *note* *; his conduct to the presbyterians, 183, and *notes* * † ‡; violates his promise by the execution of Vane, 188; his speech to parliament concerning the triennial act, 192; violates the spirit of his declarations, 204; his bad conduct to the presbyterians, ibid.; wishes to mitigate the penal laws against the catholics, 206; his inclination toward that mode of faith, ibid., 207, *note* *; scheme of, for granting a full toleration to the catholics, 207; publishes a declaration in favour of liberty of conscience, 209; private life of, 217; not averse to a commission of inquiry into the public accounts, 221; commons jealous of his designs, 223; solicits money from France, 234; intrigues with France, 240; his desire of absolute power, 241; complains of the freedom of political conversations, 242; Clarendon's advice to him on that subject, ibid.; advice of some courtiers to, on the fire of London, 243; unpopularity of, 244; endeavours to obtain aid from France, 245; desires to testify publicly his adherence to the Romish communion, ibid.; his conference with the duke of York, Clifford, and Arlington, for the advancement of the catholic faith, 246; his personal hatred to the Dutch, 248; joins with Louis to subvert Holland, ibid.; confesses to Louis XIVth's ambassador the national dislike to French alliance, 249; his evasive conduct to Louis XIV., 250; hopes of his court, 252; his prerogative opposed by the commons, 256; complains to the lords of the opposition of the commons, 257; gives way to the public voice about the suspension bill, 257, and *note* *; compelled to make peace with Holland, 262; his attachment to French interests, 263; receives money from

France, 266; his secret treaties with France, 275; his insincerity, ibid.; his proposal to Louis XIV. of a league to support Sweden, ibid.; his death anxiously wished for by the jesuits, 292; his unsteadiness, 302, and *note* *; tells Hyde it will not be in his power to protect the duke of York, 303; offers made by him in the case of exclusion, 305; implores the aid of Louis XIV. against his council and parliament, 310; his secret treaty with Louis XIV. ib.; his dissimulation, 312; no general infringements of public liberty during his reign, 347; consultations against his government begin to be held, 325; his connexion with Louis XIV. broken off, 339; his reconciliation with the duke of Monmouth, ib. and *note* *; his death, ib.; tyrannical form of his government in Scotland, 683; state of the protestants and catholics in Ireland at his restoration, 754; state, character, and religion of the parties in Ireland at the restoration of, ibid.; fresh partition of Ireland in his reign, 755; his declaration for the settlement of Ireland, ib.; claims of the different parties, ib.; not satisfactory to all concerned, 756; disgusted with the Irish agents, ib.

Charles IX. king of France, his persecution of the protestant faith, i. 146, 147.

Charles V. emperor of Germany, his influence over the pope on Henry VIII.'s divorce, i. 67; intercedes for the princess Mary to enjoy her religion, 103.

Charles, archduke of Austria, a suitor for the hand of Elizabeth, i. 133, 152; Cecil's arguments in his favour, ibid. *note* §; recognised as king of Spain, ii. 562; elected emperor, 567.

Charles Louis, elector palatine, suspected of aspiring to the throne, ii. 73, *note* *.

Charnock, one of the conspirators to assassinate William III., ii. 477, *note* *.

Chatelherault, verses displayed at the entry of Francis II. at, i. 139, *note*.

Chester, right of election extended to, ii. 381.

Chichester, sir Arthur, lord deputy, his capacity, ii. 739; the great colony of Ulster carried into effect by his means, ibid.; particulars of his measures for this great undertaking, 740.

Chieftains, Irish, compelled to defend their lands, ii. 716.

Chillingworth, Dr. William, his examination of popery, i. 533, 535, 536; effect of the covenant upon his fortunes, ii. 18.

Cholmley, sir Henry, his letter to the mayor of Chester on a loan to queen Elizabeth, i. 263, *note* *.

Christ Church College, Oxford, endowed by Wolsey from the suppressed monasteries, i. 75.

Church of England, view of, under Henry VIII., Edward VI., and queen Mary, i. chap. II., 61—115.

Church ceremonies and liturgy disliked by the reformers, i. 186, 188; proposal for abolishing, 189, *note* *; concession of beneficial, 191, 243; irregularly observed by the clergy, 192; Elizabeth's reported offer of abolishing, 242, *note* ‡.

Church of England, its tenets and homilies altered under Edward VI., i. 92; liturgy of, chiefly a translation of the Latin rituals, ibid. and *note*; images removed from, 93, and *note*; altars taken down and ceremonies abolished in the, ibid.; principally remodelled by Cranmer, 105; alterations in the, under Elizabeth, 118, *note* *; its liturgy amended, 119, and *note* *; entirely separated from Rome, 120; opposition of Cartwright to the, 201; moderate party of, the least numerous under Elizabeth, 204; attack on, by Strickland, 205; its abuses, ibid.; articles of, brought before parliament, 206, 207; innovations meditated in the, 576—582, and *notes*; parliamentary orders for protecting, 581, and *note*, 582, and *note* †.

Church of Scotland, its immense wealth, ii. 667; wholly changed in character, since the restoration of the bishops, 676; in want of a regular liturgy, ibid.; English model not closely followed; consequences of this, 677.

Church lands restored at the restoration, ii. 170.

Church plate stolen in the reformation under Edward VI., i. 102, *note* †.

Church revenues, spoliation of, in England, i. 240, 241.

Civil war under Charles I., its political justice discussed, i. 607—613, and *notes*; commencement of, 615; great danger of, in the reign of Charles II., ii. 314.

Clanricarde, marquis of, his unsullied character, ii. 754, *note* *.

Clare, earl of, joins the king, and is ill received, ii. 9; returns to the parliament, ibid.

Clarence, Lionel duke of, parliament held by, at Kilkenny, for reform of abuses, ii. 715.

Clarendon, Edward Hyde, earl of, character of his talents and works, i. 536, 537, and *note*; MSS. and interpolation of his History and Life, 537, *note*; imperfections and prejudices of the work, 538—542, and *notes*, 545, *note* †, 552, *note* †; observations on, ii. 36, *note* †; against Monk, 146; resolution of, to replace the church

in its property at the restoration, 170; his integrity, 185, and *note* ‡; the principal adviser of Charles II. 193; remarks on, 194; his prejudices, 196, *note* *; against any concession to the catholics, 207; averse to some of the clauses in the act of uniformity, 208; his bigotry to the tory party, 221; narrow prepossessions of, 222; opposes the commission of inquiry, ibid.; his downfall, 222; inveighs against a proviso in a money bill, 220; strongly attached to protestant principles, 228; decline of his power, 226; his notions of the English constitution, 227; will not favour the king's designs against the established religion, 228; coalition against, 229, and *note* *; severity of his treatment, ibid. and *note* *; his faults overlooked, 230; clandestine marriage of his daughter with the duke of York, 224, and *note* †; suspected of promoting the marriage of Miss Stewart and the duke of Richmond, 226; his oss of the king's favour, 228; his impeachment, 230; unfit for the government of a free country, ibid.; articles of his impeachment greatly exaggerated, 232; fears the hostility of the commons, ibid.; charged with effecting the sale of Dunkirk, ibid.; his close connexion with France, 234; conjectures on his policy, ibid.; advises Charles to solicit money from France, ibid.; his faults as a minister, 235; further remarks on his History of the Rebellion, ibid. and *note* *; his disregard for truth, ibid.; his pusillanimous flight, 236; banishment, ibid.; justification of it, ibid. and *note* †; severe remark of, on the clergy, 600.

Clarendon, Henry, earl of, succeeded by Tyrconnel in the government of Ireland, ii. 410.

Clark, baron of the exchequer, his speech on the royal power, i. 343.

Clement VII. (cardinal Julius) pope, his artful conduct towards Henry VIII. i. 65, 67; difficulties of deciding on the king's divorce, 66, 67; forced to give sentence against him, 67, 68; probably could not have recovered his authority in England. 70; last bulls of, in the reign of Henry VIII., 71; advice to the king on his divorce, 73, *note*.

Clement VIII. pope, favours Arabella Stuart's title to the English crown, 309; his project of conquering England, ibid. *note*.

Clergy, levy on their possessions under Henry VIII., i. 20, 22; immunity of the, from civil authority, 62; compelled to plead their privilege, ibid.; to be branded for felony, ibid.; benefit of, taken from robbers, &c. with exemptions, ibid.; their privileges tried and defeated, ibid. 63; popular opposition to the, 63; attacked in the house of commons, 69; convicted of a præmunire, ibid.; petition the king for mercy, and acknowledge him supreme head of the church, ibid.; cause of their dislike of the king's divorce, 72; unwilling to quit the catholic church, 73; jealousy excited by their wealth, 74; subdued by separation from Rome, and the dissolution of monasteries, 87; dramatic satires on the, 90, and *note* *; their answers to libels against them, 91; their importance aided by the Latin ritual, 92; their celibacy abolished by statute, 99; conciliated by this measure, ib.; conforming, but averse to the innovations of the reformation, 100; the superior, in England, less offensive than in Germany, 108; expelled by queen Mary for having married, 112, and *note* †; the same restored under Elizabeth, 120, *note*; protestant, emigration of to Germany, 184; division of, on the church service, ibid. 185; marriage of, disapproved by Elizabeth, 187, 242, *note* *; her injunctions concerning it, and illegitimacy of their children, ibid. *notes* † and ‡; their irregular observance of church ceremonies, 192; archbishop Parker's orders for their discipline, 193, 194; the puritan advised not to separate from the church of England, 195; deficiency and ignorance of, in the English church, 197, and *notes* † and ‡; certificates ordered of, ibid.; endeavours to supply their deficiency by meetings called Prophesyings, 211; *ex officio* oath given to the, 216; aid raised on the, under Elizabeth, 262, and *note* †; support the doctrine of absolute power in the king, 347; intended to promote their own authority, 348; disliked, from their doctrine of non-resistance, 448; deprived for refusing the Book of Sports, 513; oath imposed on the, by the Convocation, 576; episcopal, restored to their benefices at the restoration, ii. 176, 179; national outcry against the catholics raised by the, 296; refuse the oath of allegiance to William and Mary, 455, and *note* †; their jacobite principles, 584; the people misled by their lies and sophistry, ibid.; presbyterian, of Scotland, three hundred and fifty ejected from their benefices, 682; of Ireland, their state, 704.

Clifford, sir Thomas, one of the Cabal ministry, ii. 238.

Clifford, Thomas, lord treasurer, obliged to retire, ii. 259.

Cleves and Juliers, disputed succession in the duchies of, i. 359, and *note* *.

Cloths, impositions on, without consent of parliament, i. 341, and *note* *.
Club-men, people so called, who united to resist the marauders of both parties during the troubles, ii. 30, *note* †.
Coffee-houses, proclamation for shutting up, ii. 347.
Coke, sir Edward, his statement of the number of catholic martyrs under Elizabeth, i. 176, *note**; his defection from the court, and summary of his character, 360; defence of laws, and treatment of, by James, 361, and *note*; his report concerning arbitrary proclamations, 362, 363; his sentiments on benevolences, 369; objects to the privately conferring with judges, 370; opposes the extended jurisdiction of the court of chancery, 372, 373; his defence of the twelve judges, 375; suspension, restoration, and subsequent life and character, 376; his MSS., &c. seized, 482; extract from his fourth institute, ii. 389; his explanation of the law regarding the king's prerogative, 405; his timid judgment in the law of treason, 507.
Coleman, Edward, remarkable confession of, ii. 272; seizure of his letters, 291.
Colepepper, lord, dictatorial style of his letters to Charles I., ii. 40.
Colepepper, Mr., ordered into custody of the serjeant for presenting the Kentish petition, ii. 625, and *notes** †.
College, ——, gross iniquity practised on his trial, ii. 320, and *note**.
Collier, Jeremy, advocates auricular confession, i. 94 *note*, 95 *note*.
Commendam, royal power of granting, disputed, i. 374.
Commerce, its stagnation in the reign of William III., ii. 483.
Commission of public accounts, ii. 221.
Commission of divines revise the liturgy, ii. 524.
Commitments for breach of privilege, ii. 619.
Committee of secrecy appointed after the resignation of sir Robert Walpole, ii. 618, and *notes* †‡.
Commonality, risings of the, highly dangerous, i. 50, in Cornwall, ib.; in consequence of Wolsey's taxation, ib.; simultaneous in several counties, ib.
Companies, chartered, established in evasion of the statute of monopolies, i. 463, 464; revoked, 464.
Compositions for knighthood, i. 462, and *note**; taken away, 560.
Comprehension, bill of, clause proposed in the, for changing the oaths of supremacy and allegiance rejected, ii. 524.
Compton, sir William, expense of proving his will, i. 69, *note*.
Commoners of England, ancient extent of the, i. 5.
Commons of Ireland, their remonstrance of the long parliament of England, ii. 749.
Common council, two acts of the, considered as sufficient misdemeanours to warrant a forfeiture of the charter of the city of London, ii. 323.
Common law right, ii. 384.
Commonweath, engagement to live faithful to the, taken with great reluctance, ii. 91.
Commons, house of, rejects bills sent from the lords, i. 47; two witnesses required by the, in treason, ib.; rejects a bill for attainting Tunstal, bishop of Durham, ib.; unwilling to coincide with court measures, ib.; increased weight of, 48; persons belonging to the court elected as knights of shires, 49; persons in office form a large part of the, ib.; oath of supremacy imposed on the, 124; desirous that queen Elizabeth should marry, 133, *note**, 134, 268, 269; address of, to her to settle the succession, 138, 268, 269; puritan members address Elizabeth against the queen of Scots, 149; against the papists, 155; papists excluded from, and chiefly puritanical, 204; articles of the church examined by the, 206, 207; dissatisfied with the church, 225; articles, &c. for reforming, prepared by the, 226, 227; its disposition and duties, 266; character of, under Elizabeth, 267; imperfection of early parliamentary history, ib.; more copious under Elizabeth, 268; dispute of, with the queen on the succession, &c., 268, 273; Mr. Yelverton's defence of its privileges, 272, 273; vainly interferes in the reformation of ecclesiastical abuses, ib.; first complaint on abuses in her government, ib.; proceedings concerning queen Mary, 274; restricted as to bills on religious matters, ib.; its privileges defended by Peter Wentworth, 275, 277; examines him, &c. on his speech, 276; puritanical measures of reform in, 277; addresses the queen for a learned ministry, 278; members of the, imprisoned, 280; triumphant debate of, on monopolies, 282; subsidies solicited from the, 284; general view of its members under Elizabeth, ib. 285; increased by her, 285, and *note**; influence of the crown in, ib. *note* †, 286; bill against non-resident burgesses in, 286, 287; exemption of, from arrest during session claimed by, 288, 291; power of committal for contempt, &c. 291, 294; right of expulsion and determining their own elections, 295, 297; disagreements of, with the upper house, 297, 298, *note**; privileges of, concerning money bills, 297, 298; debate on

the election of Goodwin and Fortescue, 323, 324; proceedings of, on the arrest of sir Thomas Shirley, 325, 326; remonstrances of, against grievances, 327; proceedings of, on purveyance, 328; temper of the, concerning grants of money, ib. 332; vindication of its privileges to the king, 329, 331; proceedings on the design of an union with Scotland, 334, 335, and *note*; continual bickerings of, with the king, 335, 336; proceedings concerning Spanish grievances, 337, 339; ancient remonstrances of the, on unlawful tolls, 340; debate and remonstrance on imposition of James I., 344, 347; proceedings of, against Cowell's *Interpreter*, 351; grievances brought forward by, to be redressed, 352, 354; complaint of, against proclamations, 352—354; negotiation with the king for giving up feudal tenures, 355, 356; dissolution of parliament, 356; customs again disputed in the, 366, 367; parliament dissolved without a bill passing, 368; members of, arrested, ib.; proceedings against Mompesson, 384, 385; against lord Bacon, 386, 387; against Floyd, 388, 390, and *note* †; lords disagree to titles assumed by the, 389, *note* †; proceedings of, for reformation, 391, and *note* †; sudden adjournment of, by the king, and unanimous protestation, ib. 392; meet and debate on a grant for the German war, ib.; petitions against popery, 393; king's letter on, to the speaker, 393, 394; petition in reply, ib.; debate and protestation in consequence of the king's answer, 395, 396; adjourned and dissolved, 397; subsidies voted by the, 399, 400; summary of its proceedings under James I., 401, 403; first one of Charles I., 405; penurious measures and dissolution of, ib. 406; ill temper of, continued in the second, 407, and *note*; dissolution of, 411, and *note* †; a new parliament summoned, 419; proceedings of, on the petition of right, 420, 424; disputes the king's right to tonnage and poundage, ib.; prorogued, 425; assembled again and dissolved, 425; religious disputes commenced by, ib.; proceedings on bill for observance of Sunday, 432; remonstrates against Calvinism and popery, 436; view of the third parliament of Charles I. 451, 452, and *note*; the king's declaration after its dissolution, 453, 454, and *note* *; members of it committed and proceeded against, 454, 459; parliament of 1640 summoned, 547; confer upon grievances, 548; character of the members, ib. *note*; opposition of, to ship-money, 549; dissolution of, ib.; the king's conduct to, 550, 551; desire of the nation for a parliament, 553; the long parliament convoked, ib.; (see Long Parliament); attempt to seize five members of the, 588, 589, and *notes*; proceedings on the militia question, 591, *note*, 598, 599, and *notes* 600, *note* *; comparative of the dispute between Charles I. and the parliament, 602, 615; faults of, in the contest, 604, and *notes*, 607, and *notes*; resolve to disband part of the army, ii. 58; form schemes for getting rid of Cromwell, ibid., see also *notes* * † ‡, ibid.; vote not to alter the fundamental government, 69; abandon their impeachment against the seven peers, ibid.; restore eleven members to their seats, ibid.; large body of new members admitted, 74; favourable to the army, 75; petition to, ordered to be burnt by the hangman, ibid.; resolution of, against any farther addresses to the king, 76; lords agree to this vote, ibid.; observations of the members who sat on the trial of Charles, 78; vote that all just power is in the people, 87; vote for the abolition of monarchy, ibid.; constitutional party, secluded from the, 88; resolve that the house of peers is useless, 89; invested with supreme authority, 90; protected by the army, 91; members do not much exceed one hundred, 94; retain great part of the executive government, 94; charges of injustice against, 95; vote for their own dissolution, 97, and *note* †; give offence to the republicans, ibid.; their faults aggravated by Cromwell, ibid.; question the protector's authority, 102; agree with the lords, on the restoration, that the government ought to be in kings, lords, and commons, 159; pass several bills of importance, ibid.; prepare a bill for restoring ministers, 179, and *notes* * †; object to the scheme of indulgence, 210; their jealousy of popery, ib.; establish two important principles with regard to taxation, 219; appoint a committee to inspect accounts, 221; nominate commissioners, with full powers of inquiring into public accounts, ibid.; extraordinary powers of, 223; important privilege of right of impeachment established, 237; address of, to Charles II., about disbanding the army, 244; not unfriendly to the court, 254; loses the confidence of, 255; testify their sense of public grievances, 263; strongly averse to France and popery, 264, and *note* ‡; connexion of the popular party with France, 267, and *notes* † ‡; many leaders of the opposition receive money from France, 272; impeach lord Danby,

277; culpable violence of the, 281, 313; deny the right of the bishops to vote, ibid.; remarks on the jurisdiction of, ibid.; expel Withens, 312; take Thompson, Can, and others into custody, 314; encroachment of the, ibid., and *note* †, 315; their impeachment of Fitzharris, and their right to impeach discussed, 316; its dispute with, and resistance to, the lords, 362, 364; its proceedings in the case of Skinner and the East India company, 365; its proceedings in the case of Shirley and Fagg, 367; its violent dispute with the lords, 368, and *notes* * † ‡; its exclusive right as to money bills, 369; its originating power of taxation, 372; its state from the earliest records, 379; its numbers from Edward I. to Henry VIII., ibid.; remarks on state of representation, ibid.; its unequal representation, 381; accession of its members not derived from popular principle, 382; address of, to James II., concerning unqualified officers, 404; its augmented authority, 463; its true motive for limiting the revenue, 467; its jealousy of a standing army, 486; its conduct with regard to the Irish forfeitures, 490; special committee to inquire into the miscarriages of the war in Ireland, 491; power of the, to direct a prosecution by the attorney general, for offences of a public nature, 632.

Con, nuncio, from the court of Rome, i. 517, 530.

Confession, auricular, consideration of its benefits and mischiefs, i. 94, 95.

Confessions extorted by torture in Scotland, ii. 683.

Confirmatio cartarum, statute of, i. 339; cited in the case of Hampden, i. 472.

Conformity, proclamation for, by king James I. i. 320.

Conformity, bill to prevent occasional, rejected by the lords, ii. 601.

Connaught divided into five counties, ii. 732; province of, infamously declared forfeited, 744; inquisition held in each county of, by Strafford, 748.

Conspiracy, supposed to be concerted by the jesuits at St. Omers, ii. 291.

Conspirators, military, ii. 129; destitute of a leader, ibid.

Conspiracy to levy war against the king's person, may be given in evidence as an overt act of treason, ii. 502; not reconcilable to the interpretation of the statute, ibid., and *note* *; first instance of this interpretation, 503; confirmed in Harding's case, ibid for an invasion from Spain, 604, and *note* *.

Conscience, treatment and limits of, in government, i. 244, *note* †.

Consecration of churches and burial grounds, i. 520, *note*.

Constitution of England from Henry III. to Mary I., chap. i. 1—60; under James I. chap. vi. 307—403; under Charles I., chap. vii., 1625—29, 404—452, chap. viii. 1629—40, 453—553, chap. ix. 1640—42, 554—615; from the commencement of the civil war to the restoration, chap. x. 1—51; from the restoration to the death of Charles II., 163—390; from the accession of James II., to the revolution, 302—447; under William III., 448—548; under queen Anne, and George I. and II., 549, &c.; design of a party to change, ii. 75; nothing so destructive to, as the exclusion of the electoral body from their franchises, 325; original, highly aristocratical, 358; improvements in the, under William III., 497.

Constitution, forms of the English, established in Ireland, ii. 707.

Constitutional law, important discussions on the, in the case of lord Danby, ii. 278.

Constructive treason, first case of, ii. 503; confirmed in Harding's case, ibid., and *notes* † ‡; its great latitude, ibid.; confirmed by, and rendered perpetual by 36 and 57 George III., ibid.; Hardy's case of, 505, *note* †, and *note* *, 506.

Consubstantiation, Luther's doctrine so called, i. 96.

Constructive interpretation of the statute of Edward III. carried to great length by chief justice Eyre, ii. 616.

Controversy religious, conduct of, by the jesuits, &c., i. 532.

Controversy between the episcopal and presbyterian churches of Scotland, ii. 689.

Controversy relating to the author of Icon Basilike, sketch of the, ii. 771.

Convents, 376 inferior, suppressed, i. 77; vices of, greater than in large abbeys, &c. ibid., *note* †; evils of their indiscriminate suppression, i. 81; excellence of several at the dissolution, ibid.

Convention parliament, the proceedings of, ii. 164; dissolved, 184; attack on its legality, *note* *, ibid.; its impolicy in not extending the act of toleration to the catholics, 527; convention of 1688, proceedings of the, 440; question of the best and safest way to preserve the religion and laws of the kingdom, 441; original contract between the king and the people, ibid.; clause of abdication, 442; conference between the lords and commons, ibid.; house of lords give way to the commons, 445; summary of its proceedings, 446.

Conventicles, act against, ii. 211, and *note* * ; its severity, ibid., and 213; members suffer under it, 212; remarks on the, 214.
Convocation, houses of, to be advised with in ecclesiastical matters, ii. 524.
Convocation of the province of Canterbury, its history, ii. 594; commons refer to it the question of reforming the liturgy, 596; its encroachments, 597; aims at assimilating itself to the house of commons, ibid.; and finally prorogued in 1717, 599.
Cope, Mr., his measures for ecclesiastical reform in the house of commons, i. 277; committed to the Tower, 278.
Copley, Mr., power of the parliament over, i. 293.
Corporation act, ii. 190; severely affects the presbyterian party, 191.
Corporations, informations brought against several, ii. 324; forfeiture of their charters, ib.; receive new ones, 325; freemen of, primary franchise attached to the, 384; their great preponderance in elections, 392; their forfeiture and regrant under restrictions, 395; new-modelling of the, 419; bill for restoring particular clause in, 460.
Coronation oath, dispute on its meaning and construction, i. 601, 602, and *note* *.
Corporate property, more open than private to alteration, i. 80, 81.
Coshery, custom of, explained, ii. 705.
Coshering and bonaght, barbarous practice of, in Ireland, ii. 715.
Cotton, sir Robert, his books, &c. seized, i. 482.
Council of state, under the commonwealth, consisted principally of presbyterians, ii. 149.
Counsellors, Oxford, of Charles I., solicit the king for titles, ii. 12; their motives, ibid; their animosity to lord Holland, 11.
Court of Charles II., wicked and artful policy of, to secure itself from suspicion of popery, ii. 321.
Courts of law, the three, under the Plantagenets, how constituted, i. 6; mode of pleading in, ib. *note*.
Courts, inferior, under the Plantagenets, county courts, hundred courts, manor courts, their influence, i. 7.
Courts of Star Chamber, origin and powers of, i. 53, *note* *, 58, and *note* ‡, (see Star chamber).
Courts, ecclesiastical, their character and abuses, i. 228, and *note* †.
Court of parliament, the title disputed, i. 389, *note* †.
Court of supremacy, commission for, in 1583, i. 215, 216, *note* *.
Court, inns of, examined, concerning religion, i. 152.
Covenant, solemn league and, negotiations concerning the, ii. 14; particular account of, 15; want of precision in the language of, 16; imposed on all civil and military officers, ib.; number of the clergy ejected by, among whom were the most learned and virtuous men of that age, 17; burnt by the common hangman, 185.
Covenant of Scotland, national, its origin, ii. 677.
Covenanters, Scotch, heavily fined, ii. 682.
Coventry, Thomas, lord keeper, his address to the house of commons, i. 407, *note*.
Coventry, sir William, his objection to the arbitrary advice of Clarendon, ii. 242; outrageous assault on, ii. 254, and *note* *.
Coverdale, Miles, his translation of the Bible, i. 89.
Cowell, Dr. John, attributes absolute power to the king in his *Interpreter*, 1607, i. 350, and *note*; the book suppressed, 351, and *note*.
Cowper, William, lord, made chancellor, ii. 561.
Cox, Richard, bishop of Ely, defends church ceremonies and habits, i. 185, 186, 188; Elizabeth's violence to, 240, 241.
Coyne and livery, or coshering and bonaght, barbarous practice of, ii. 715.
Cranfield, lord, his arguments to the commons on a grant for German war, i. 392, *note* §.
Cranmer, Thomas, archbishop of Canterbury, probably voted for the death of Cromwell, i. 32, *note* †; letter on the marriage of Anne Boleyne, 66, *note* †; made archbishop, 71; active in Henry VIII.'s divorce, 73; induces Henry VIII. to sanction the principles of Luther, 88; and to direct the translation of the scriptures, 89; marriage of, 99; compelled to separate from his wife, ibid.; procures Edward VI. to burn Joan Boucher, 91, *note*; protests against the destruction of chantries, 102, *note* *; recommenced the abolition of the collegiate clergy, ibid., *note* †; liberality of, to the princess Mary, 103, and *note* ‡; censurable concerning Joan Boucher, &c., 104; one of the principal reformers of the English church, 105; his character variously depicted, ibid.; articles of the church drawn up by, ibid., *note* *; disingenuousness of his character, 106; protest of, before his consecration, ibid., and *note*; his want of firmness and recantations, 107, and *note*; character of, redeemed by his death, 104, 107; his moderation in the measures of reform, 107; compliance of,

with the royal supremacy, 108; some church ceremonies and habits retained by, 110.
Cranmer's Bible, 1539, peculiarities of, i. 90, *note*.
Cranmer, bishop, his sentiments on episcopacy, i. 428, *note*.
Craven, earl of, unjust sale of his estates, ii. 95, *note* *.
Crichton, ———, his memoir for invading England on behalf of the papists, i. 167, *note* *.
Crighton and Ogilvy, their case, ii. 680, and *note* ‡.
Croke, sir George, his sentence for Hampden in the cause of ship-money, i. 476, *note*.
Cromwell, Thomas, earl of Essex, his question to the judges respecting condemnations for treason, i. 31; himself the first victim of their opinion, 32; causes which led to his execution, ibid.; his visitation and suppression of the monastic orders, 75, 76; advises the distribution of abbey lands, &c. to promote the reformation, 84; his plan for the revenues of the lesser monasteries, ibid., *note* *; procures the dispersion of the Scriptures, with liberty to read them, 89, *note*.
Cromwell, Oliver, rising power of, ii. 23; excluded from the commons, but continues lieutenant-general, 34; historical difficulties in the conduct of, 61; wavers as to the settlement of the nation, 76; victory at Worcester, its consequences to, 92; two remarkable conversations of, with Whitelock and others, ibid.; complains of the officers of the army, 93; his discourse with Whitelock about taking the title of king, 93; policy of, 98, and *note* †; assumes the title of protector, 100; observations on his ascent to power, 101; calls a parliament, ibid.; his authority questioned, 102; dissolves the parliament, ibid.; project to assassinate, 105; divides the kingdom into districts, 107; appoints military magistrates, ibid.; their conduct, ibid.; his high court of justice, 109; executions by, ibid., see *note* *, 110; summons a parliament in 1656, ibid.; excludes above ninety members, ibid., and *note* *, 111; aspires to the title of king, ib.; generally supported in his assumption, ib. and *note* *, 112; scheme fails through opposition of the army, 113; abolishes the civil power of the major general, ib.; refuses the crown, 114, and *note* *; the charter of the Commonwealth under, changed to the petition and advice, 115; particulars of that measure, ib. and *note* *; his unlimited power, 116; oath of allegiance taken by members of parliament, ib.; his house of lords described, ib.; dissolves the parliament, 117; his great design a hereditary succession, 118; referred to a council of nine, ib.; his death, ib.; character, and foreign policy, ib.; management of the army, 120; paralleled with Buonaparte, ib. and *note* *, 122; does not refuse to hear the agents of Charles II., 134, and *note* †, ib.; his conquest of Ireland, 754.
Cromwell, Henry, deprived of his command in Ireland, 135.
Cromwell, Richard, succeeds his father, ii. 122; inexperience of, 123; no proof of his appointment by his father, ib. *note* *; gains some friends, 124; steadily supported by Pierrepoint and St. John, ib.; his conduct commended by Thurloe, 125, *note* *; was of a tolerant disposition, 177, and *note* †, ib.; meeting of the general officers excites alarm in his councils, 125; summons a parliament, which takes the oath of allegiance to him as protector, 126; proceedings of the parliament under, 127, and *notes* * ‡; disappoints the hopes of the royalists, 128.
Crown, officers of the, under the Plantagenets, violence used by, i. 5; juries influenced by, ib.
Crown of England, uncertain succession of the, between the houses of Scotland and Suffolk, i. 132, 138, 308, 311.
Crown and parliament, termination of the contest between the, ii. 549.
Crown, the, personal authority of, its diminution, ii. 647; the reason of it, ib.; of material constitutional importance, 651.
Crown, the, its jealousy of the prerogative, ii. 609.
Crucifix, its lawfulness in the English churches discussed, i. 186; Elizabeth's partiality for the, ib. and *note* ‡.
Customs, on woad and tobacco, i. 255, and *note* *; on clothes and wines, 262; treble, against the English law, 341, 342, *note*; arbitrary, imposed by James I., 342, and *note* ‡.
Cy Près, proceeding of, in the court of chancery, ii. 85, *note*.

D.

Damaree, Daniel, and George Purchase, their trial for high treason, ii. 508, *note* †.
Damport, Mr., his cautious motion concerning the laws, i. 278.
Danby, Thomas Osborne, earl of, his administration, ii. 262; his virtues as a minister, 265; marriage of the prince of Orange and princess Mary owing to his

influence, ib. and *note* *; Orange, prince of, his heroic conduct, 263; concerned in the king's receipt of money from France, 266, and *note* *; his character, 265; cause of his fall, 276; his letter to Montague, ib.; his impeachment, 277; argument he urged in his defence, ib.; questions arising from his impeachment, ib.; intemperance of the proceedings against him, 278; important discussions in the case of, 279, and *note* *, 280; pleads his pardon, ib.; lords resist this plea, 283; committed to the Tower, 278; confined in the Tower three years, 287; admitted to bail by judge Jefferies, ib.

Darien company, the business of the, ii. 693.

Davenant, Dr. John, bishop of Salisbury, censured for Calvinism, i. 436, *note*.

David II., parliament at Scone under him, ii. 660.

Dauphin, (son of Louis XIV.) effect of his death on the French succession, ii. 570.

Dead, prayers for the, in the first liturgy of Edward VI., i. 93; omitted on its revisal, 94.

Deaths of the dauphin, dukes of Burgundy and Berry, ii. 570; effect of their deaths on the French succession, ib.

Debt, public, alarm excited at its magnitude, ii. 656.

De Burgh, or Burke, family of, in Ireland, fall off from their subjection to the crown, ii. 713.

Declaration published by the army for the settlement of the nation, ii. 77; in favour of a compromise, 182; in favour of liberty of conscience, 209, and *note* ‡; of indulgence, 255; opposed by parliament, 256; of rights, 448.

Denization, charters of, granted to particular persons, ii. 710.

Dependence of Irish on English parliament, ii. 767.

Derry, noble defence of, ii. 760.

Desiderata Curiosa Hibernica, extract from that work, concerning the prediction of the rebellion in 1641, ii. *note* *.

Desmond, earl of, attends the Irish parliament, ii. 722; his rebellion in 1583, and forfeiture of his lands, 788; his lands parcelled out among English undertakers, ib.

Difference between the lords and commons on the *Habeas Corpus* bill, ii. 352.

Digby, John lord, his speech concerning Strafford, i. 57; letters taken on the rout of, at Sherborn, ii. 45, *note* †.

Digges, sir Dudley, his committal to the Tower, i. 408, 409.

Discontent of the royalists, ii. 171.

Discontent of the nation with the government of William III., ii. 453.

Discontent of the nation at the conduct of Charles II., ii. 216.

Discussions between the two houses of parliament on the exclusion of the regicides and others, ii. 166.

Dispensation, power of, preserved after the reformation, i. 205; attempt to take away, 206.

Dispensations granted by Charles I., i. 483.

Dissenters, first instance of prosecution of the, i. 196.

Dissensions between lords and commons of rare occurrence, ii. 356.

Divinity, study of, in the seventeenth century, i. 521, and *note* †, 522.

Divorce of Henry VIII. from queen Catherine, historical account of its rise, progress, and effects, i. 65—73.

Divorces, canon law concerning, under Edward VI., i. 110, *note;* Henry VIII.'s two, creating an uncertainty in the line of succession; Parliament enable the king to bequeath the kingdom by his will, i. 36.

Domesday Book, burgesses of, were inhabitants within the borough, ii. 386.

Dorset, Edward Sackville, earl of, a member of the star chamber, i. 492, *note* †.

Douay College, intrigues of the priests of, i. 147; account of the foundation, ibid., *note* †.

Dort, synod of, king James's conduct to the, i. 435, and *note* ‡.

Downing, sir George, proviso introduced by, into the subsidy bill, ii. 119.

Drury, —— execution of, i. 440. *note* ‡.

Dublin, citizens of, committed to prison for refusing to frequent the protestant church, ii. 736.

Dugdale, sir William, garter king of arms, his account of the earl of Hertford's marriage, i. 314, *note* †.

Dunkirk, sale of, by Charles II., 216; particulars relating to the sale of, ii. 233, and *note* *.

Durham, county and city of, right of election granted to the, ii. 383.

Dutch, mortgaged towns of, restored to the, i. 368; armies mostly composed of catholics, ii. 528; fleet insults our coasts, 232.

E

Ecclesiastical commission court, i. 215, 216, *note* *.

Ecclesiastical courts, their character and abuses, i. 228, *note* †; restrained by those of law, 348, 349; their jurisdiction, 503, *note*; commission of 1686 issued by James II., ii. 408.

Ecclesiastics of Ireland, their enormous monopoly, ii. 765.
Edgehill, battle of, ii. 3; its consequences in favour of Charles, 3.
Edward I., his letter to the justiciary of Ireland, granting permission to some septs to live under English law, ii. 711.
Edward II., king of England, legislature established by statute of, i. 4, and *note*.
Edward III., king of England, remarkable clause relating to treason in the act of, ii. 279.
Edward VI., king of England, attached to the reformed religion, i. 91; abilities of his letters and journal, ibid., *note*; harsh treatment of his sister Mary, and reluctance to execute Joan Boucher, ibid.; alterations in the English church under, 92; the reformation in his minority conducted with violence and rapacity, 101, 102; denies the princess Mary enjoying her own religion, 103; positive progress of the reformation under, 110; his laws concerning religion re-enacted, 119; omission of a prayer in his liturgy, ibid., *note* *; differences between the protestants commenced under, 184; his death prevented the Genevan system from spreading in the English church, ibid.
Effect of the press, ii. 341; its rapid progress, 342; restrictions upon it in the reign of Henry VIII., ibid., and *note* *.
Eikon Basilike, observations on the controversy relating to the author of that work, ii. 771; arguments in favour of Dr. Gauden being the author of it, ibid.; its original title and character, 773; various anachronisms in it, 774; inconsistencies in it mark the forgery, ibid.; its puerilities, 775; has no great superiority over the known writings of Dr. Gauden, 776. (See Icon Basilike).
Ejection of non-conformist clergy, ii. 203.
Election, rights of, ii. 382; four different theories relating to the, 384; their relative merits considered, 385.
Elections, regulated by Elizabeth's ministers, i. 285, and *note* †; debate concerning, 286; first penalty for bribery in, 288; right of determining, claimed by parliament, 295—297; interference of James I. in, 322, 323.
Elective franchise in ancient boroughs, difficult to determine by what class of persons the, was possessed, ii. 383; different opinions regarding the, ibid.
Elections, remarks on their management, ii. 388, and *note* *.
Eliot, sir John, his committal to the Tower, i. 408, 409; committal and proceedings against, 454—458.
Elizabeth, princess, treasonable to assert her legitimacy, i. 36.
Elizabeth, queen of England, population of the realm under, i. 8, *note*; revision of church articles under, 98; a dangerous prisoner to queen Mary, 113, 116, *note*; easily re-establishes protestantism, 115; laws of, respecting catholics, chap. iii., 116, 182; her popularity and protestant feelings, 116; suspected of being engaged in Wyatt's conspiracy, ibid., *note*; imprisoned and obliged to conform to the catholic faith, 117, *note*; announces her accession to the pope, but proceeds slowly in her religious reform, ibid.; her council and parliament generally protestant, 118; circumstances of her coronation, ibid., and *note* *; her acts of supremacy and uniformity, 119—121; oath of supremacy to, explained, 120, *note* *; restraint of Roman catholic worship in her first years, 121, 122; embassy to, from Pius IV., 123; her death prophesied by the Romanists, ibid., and *note* ‡; statute preventing, ibid., 124; conspiracy against, ibid., *note* *; letters of the emperor Ferdinand to, on behalf of the English catholics, 127, and *note* †; her answer against them, 128; circumstances of her reign affected her conduct towards them, 131; the crown settled on her by act 35th Henry VIII., 132; uncertainty of her succession, *ibid.*, 268; her marriage desired by the nation, 132, 133, and *note* *, 134, 135, 268; suitors to her, the archduke Charles, and Dudley, earl of Leicester, 133; her unwillingness to marry, and coquetry, ibid., 134, 135, 268; proposes marriage articles to the archduke, ibid., 134, *note* *, 152; astrological prediction on that match, ibid.; objects with her council, and to tolerate popery, ibid., and *note* †, 152; improbability of her having issue, 135, and *note*; match with the duke of Anjou proposed, 135, *note*, 146, 152, 249, 250, and *note*; pressed to decide on her successor, 135, 269; her difficulty in doing so, 136; proceedings of, against lady Grey, ibid. 137, 138; offended by the queen of Scots bearing the arms, &c. of England, 139; intrigues with the malcontents of France and Scotland to revenge herself on Mary, ibid. *note*, 140; not unfavourable to her succession, ibid.; courses open to, after Mary's abdication, 141; her death anticipated, 142, and *note* *; deposed by the bull of Pius V., 144; insurrections against, and dangerous state of England had she died, 145; doubtful state of the succession, ibid. 146; her want of foreign alliances, 146; statutes for her security against the papists, 147, 148, and *note*; addressed by the puritans against the queen of Scots, 149; restrains the parliament's proceedings against her, ibid. 274;

advised to provide for her security, 149, 150; inclined and encouraged to proceed against the papists, ibid. 151; her declaration for uniformity of worship, ibid.; on doubtful terms with Spain, 154; foreign policy of, justifiable, 155, *note*; her intent to avoid capital penalties for religion, 156; papists executed on her statutes, 156, 157; acknowledged queen by Campion the jesuit, 157, and *note* *; concealed enmity of the papists to, 158; torture used in her reign, 159; persecutions of, procure her to be published as a tyrant, 160; lord Burleigh's defences of, ibid. 161; her persecutions an argument against the reign of Henry IV. of France, 161, *note*; unworthy charge against, by the papists on her issue, ibid.; commands the torture to be disused, 162; an inquisition made after her enemies, and some executed, 165, 166; her assassination contemplated, 166, *note* †, 167; disaffection of the papists to, caused by her unjust aggressions on their liberty of conscience, 167, *note* *; an association formed to defend her person, 168, 169; her affectation concerning the death of queen Mary, 170, 171, *note* †; number of catholic martyrs under, 175, 176; character of her religious restraints, 181; her laws respecting protestant non-conformists, chap. iv., 183—245; her policy to maintain her ecclesiastical power, 183; protestants recalled by her accession, 185; difference of her tenets and ceremonies, ibid. and *note* †, 188, 189; disapproves of the clergy marrying, 187, 242, *note* *; coarse treatment of abp. Parker's wife, ibid. *note* ‡; probable cause of her retaining some ceremonies, 190; prevents the abolishing of licences and dispensations, 206; orders the suppression of prophesyings, 211—213; supported the Scottish clergy, 225; omits to summon parliament, ibid.; anxious for the good government of church and state, but jealous of interference, 226; her violence towards bishop Cox, 241; tyranny of, towards her bishops, 242, and *note* *; her reported offer to the puritans, 242, *note* ‡; Walsingham's letter in defence of her government, 244, and *note* †, 245; view of her civil government, chap. v., 246—306; character of her administration chiefly religious, 246; her advantages for possessing extended authority, 247; her course of government illustrated, 251, *note* ‡; unwarranted authority of some of her proclamations, 254—257; disposition to adopt martial law, 259, and *note* *; her illegal commission of, to sir Thomas Wilford, 260; did not assert arbitrary taxation, 262; her singular frugality, ibid. 271; borrowed money by privy seals, but punctual in re-payment, 263; instance of her returning money illegally collected, 264, *note*; dispute of, with the parliament on her marriage and succession, and the common prayer, 268—273; instances of her interference and authority over her parliaments, ibid. 274, 281, 285; resigned monopolies, 282; compelled to solicit subsidies of her later parliaments, 284; added to the members of the house of commons, 285; her monarchy limited, 301, *note*; supposed power of her crown, 304; Philip II. attempts to dethrone, 308, *note*; intended James I. for her successor, 310, and *note*; her popularity abated in her latter years, i. 317, and *note* †; probable causes of, 318; public debt left by, 332; probable reasons for her not imposing customs on foreign goods, 342; mutilation ordered by the star chamber, under, 488; reasons for establishing the protestant religion in Ireland in the reign of, ii. 726; alienation of part of Ireland in the reign of, 723.

Empson, sir Richard, and Edmond Dudley prostitute instruments of the avarice of Henry VII., i. 16; put to death on a frivolous charge of high treason, 18, and *note* ‡.

Enclosures, rebellion concerning, i. 100.

England, state of religion in, at the beginning of the 16th century, i. 61; preparations in, for a reformation of the church, ibid.; means of its emancipation from the papal power, 71; foreign politics of, under James I., 358, 359; legal provisions for its defence, 471, 472.

England, view of, previous to the long parliament, i. 538, 539, and *note* †, 540, 541, 551; divided into districts by Cromwell, ii. 107, see also *note* †, ibid.; state of, since the revolution in 1688, compared with its condition under the Stuarts, 464; its danger of becoming a province to France, 481; new emigrations to, 514, 515; proclamation against, ibid. and *note* †.

English nation not unsuited to a republican form of government, ii. 131; unwillingness of the, to force the reluctance of their sovereign, 300; English settlers in Ireland, their degeneracy, 712; settlements of, in Munster, Ulster, and other parts, 739; injustice attending them, 740.

Episcopacy, house of commons opposed to, i. 225, 227; divine right of, maintained, 427, and *note*, 428, 503, *note*, 522, and *note* †; moderation of, designed, 577, and *note* *; proceedings concerning, 578; bill for abolishing, ii. 14; revived in Scotland, 682; jurisdiction of the bishops unlimited, ibid.

Episcopal, discipline revives with the mon-

archy, ii. 179; clergy driven out injuriously by the populace from their livings, 692; permitted to hold them again, ibid.
Episcopalians headed by Selden, ii. 52, and *note* †.
Erastianism, the church of England in danger of, i. 121, *note*.
Erastians, party of, described, ii. 53, and *note* *.
Erudition of a Christian Man, 1540; reformed doctrines contained in, by authority of Henry VIII., i. 88; character of, ibid. *note* *.
Escheats, frauds of, under Henry VII., i. 16; act for amending, 18.
Essex, county of, extent of royal forests in, i. 463.
Essex, Robert Devereux, earl of Essex, injudicious conduct of, after the battle of Edgehill, ii. 3, *note* *; raises the siege of Gloucester, 13; suspected of being reluctant to complete the triumph of the parliament, 32, and *note* †.
Estates, the convention of, turned into a parliament, ii. 691; forfeited, in Ireland, allotted to those who would aid in reducing the island to obedience, 754.
Et Cætera oath imposed on the clergy, i. 576.
Europe, absolute sovereigns of, in the sixteenth century, i. 304, 305.
Exchequer, court of, trial in, on the king's prerogative of imposing duties, i. 342, and *note* †, 344, and *note* §; cause of ship-money tried in the court of, 471, and *note* *; court of, an intermediate tribunal between the king's bench and parliament, ii. 361.
Excise on liquor, first imposition of, in England, ii. 31, and *note* †; granted in lieu of military tenures, 173; prerogative of the crown reduced by the, 174.
Exclusion of the duke of York proposed, ii. 296, and *note* *, 298; discussion of the right of, 298; of placemen and pensioners, from parliament, 541, and *note* *.
Exeter, bishopric of, despoiled in the reformation, i. 102.
Ex Officio oath in the high commission court, i. 216; attacked in the house of commons, 227.
Expedients to avoid the exclusion, ii. 304; remark on the, 307.
Expulsion, right of, claimed by parliament, i. 295.

F.

Factions of Pym and Vane, ii. 12; cause of their aversion to pacific measures, ibid.
Fairfax, sir Thomas, and Oliver Cromwell, superiority of their abilities for war, ii. 33.
Falkland, Henry Carey, lord, account of, ii. 22, *note*.
Family of Love, said to have been employed by the papists, i. 131, *note* *.
Feckenham, John, abbot of Westminster, imprisoned under Elizabeth, i. 126, *note* †.
Felton, ——, executed for fixing the pope's bull on the bishop of London's palace, i. 147.
Fenwick, sir John, his attainder, ii. 478; strong opposition to it in parliament, 479, and *note* *; his imprudent disclosure, ibid.; truth of his discoveries, 480.
Ferdinand, emperor of Germany, writes to Elizabeth on behalf of the English catholics, i. 127, and *note* †; his liberal religious policy, 127, 128, and *note*.
Ferrers, George, his illegal arrest, i. 289, 290, *note* *.
Festivals in the church of England, i. 428, 429.
Feudal rights perverted under Henry VII. i. 16; system, the, introduction of, ii. 659; remarks on the probable cause of its decline, 666.
Filmer, sir Robert, remarks on his scheme of government, ii. 335.
Finch, Heneage, chief justice of the common pleas, adviser of ship-money, i. 468; defends the king's absolute power, 476; parliamentary impeachment of, 604, *note* *.
Fines, statute of, misunderstood, i. 12.
Fire of London, ii. 242; advice to Charles on the, ibid.; papists suspected, 243; odd circumstance connected with, ibid. *note* †.
Fish, statutes and proclamations for the eating of, in Lent, i. 430, 431, *note*.
Fisher, John, bishop of Rochester, his defence of the clergy, i. 69; beheaded for denying the ecclesiastical supremacy, 30.
Fitzharris, Edward, his impeachment, ii. 315; constitutional question on, discussed, 316.; no satisfactory elucidation of the libel for which he suffered, 318, and *notes* * and †.
Fitzstephen, his conquests in Ireland, ii. 706.
Flanders, books of the reformed religion printed in, i. 88.
Fleetwood, lieutenant-general Charles, his character, ii. 137, and *note* *, 138; opposes Cromwell's assuming the title of king, 114; the title of lord-general, with power over all commissions, proposed to be conferred on, 125.
Fleming, Thomas, chief baron of the exchequer, his speech on the king's power, i. 343.
Flesh, statutes, &c. against eating, in Lent, i. 429—431, *note*.

Fletcher, John, bishop of London, suspended by Elizabeth, i. 242, *note* *.
Floyd, Mr., violent proceedings of the parliament against, i. 388—390, and *note* †; the infamous case of, conduct of the commons in, ii. 631.
Forbes, sir David, fined by the star chamber, i. 490.
Forest laws, enforcement and oppression of, under Charles I., i. 462, 463, and *note* ‡; extent of forests fixed by act of parliament, 560.
Forfeiture of the charter of London, ii. 322; observations on the proceedings on, ibid.
Fortescue, sir John, question of his election, i. 323—325.
Fostering, Irish custom of, explained, ii. 712, *note* *; severe penalty against, 715.
Fox, Edward, bishop of Hereford, excites Wolsey to reform the monasteries, i. 75.
Fox, right honourable C. J., his doubt whether James II. aimed at subverting the protestant establishment examined, ii. 396; anecdote of, and the duke of Newcastle, concerning secret service money, 618.
France, its government despotic when compared with that of England, i. 299, 300; authors against the monarchy of, 300, *note**; public misery of, ii. 568, and *note* *.
Francis I., king of France, his mediation between the pope and Henry VIII., i. 67.
Francis II., king of France, display of his pretensions to the crown of England, i. 139, and *note*.
Franchise, elective, taken away from the catholics of Ireland, ii. 763, and *note* *, 764.
Freeholder, privileges of the English, i. 480, 481; under the Saxons bound to defend the nation, 595.
French government, moderation of the, at the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, ii. 650.
Fresh severities against dissenters, ii. 252.
Fuller, Mr., imprisonment of, by the star chamber, i. 377.
Fulham, destruction of trees, &c. at the palace of, by bishop Aylmer, i. 218, *note* †.
Frankfort, divisions of the protestants at, i. 185, and *note*.

G.

Garraway and Lee take money from the court for softening votes, ii. 264, and *note* *.
Gardiner, Stephen, bishop of Winchester, prevails on Henry VIII. to prohibit the English Bible, i. 89, *note*; forms a list of words in it unfit for translation, ib.; a supporter of the popish party, 91; in disgrace at the death of Henry VIII., ib.; character and virtues of, i. 104, 105, *note* †; his persecution palliated, 104.
Garnet, Henry, his probable guilt in the gunpowder plot, i. 438, *note* ‡.
Garrisons, ancient military force kept in, i. 594, 595.
Gauden, Dr. John, raised to the see of Exeter in 1660, ii. 771; his letters to lord Clarendon complaining of the inadequacy of his reward, ib.; threatens to reveal the secret, ib.; appeals to Dr. Morley, ib.; his manuscript of the Eikon Basilike sent to Charles I. in the Isle of Wight, ib.; Clarendon writes to soothe him, 772; solicits for the bishopric of Winchester, ib.; promoted to the see of Worcester, ib.; his wife's testimony in his favour, ib.
Gavel-kind, tenure of Irish, explained, ii. 702, and *note* *, ib.
Gavel-kind, Irish, determined to be void, ii. 737.
Gentry, or landowners, under the Plantagenets without any exclusive privilege, i. 5; disordered state of, under Henry VI. and Edward IV., 10; of England, became great under the Tudors, deriving their estates from the suppressed monasteries, 85; of the north of England, their turbulent spirit, 56; repressed by Henry VIII. and the court of star chamber, ib. 57, and *note*; why inclined to the reformation, 73, *note*.
George I., king of England, his accession to the crown, ii. 581; chooses a whig ministry, 582; great disaffection in the kingdom, 583, and *note* *; causes of his unpopularity, 593; habeas corpus act several times suspended in his reign, ib. *note* †; incapable of speaking English, trusted his ministers with the management of the kingdom, 647; his character, 648, *note* *.
George I. and II., kings of England, their personal authority at the lowest point, ii. 649.
Geraldines, family of the, restored, ii. 722.
Gerard, Mr. executed for plotting to kill Cromwell, ii. 106, and *note* ‡.
Germany, less prepared for a religious reformation than England, i. 61; books of the reformed religion printed in, 88; celibacy of priests rejected by the protestants of, 99; troops of, sent to quell commotions, 100, and *note* †; mass not tolerated by the Lutheran princes of, 103, and *note* †; reformation caused by the covetousness and pride of superior ecclesiastics, i. 107; war with, commons' grant for, in 1621, 392, 393.
Gertruydenburg, conferences broken off and renewed at, ii. 564; remark of Cunningham on the, 565, *note* *.
Glamorgan, Edward Somerset, earl of, dis-

covery of a secret treaty between him and the Irish catholics, ii. 44; certainty of, confirmed by Dr. Birch, 46, and *note* *.
Godfrey, sir Edmondbury, his very extraordinary death, ii. 292; not satisfactorily accounted for, ii. 293, and *notes* * †, ib.
Godolphin, Sidney, earl of, preserves a secret connexion with the court of James, ii. 572; his partiality to the Stuart cause suspected, 573.
Godstow nunnery, interceded for at the dissolution, i. 81.
Gold coin, Dutch merchants fined for exporting, i. 368.
Goodwin, sir Francis, question of his election, i. 323, 325, and *note* *.
Gookin, Mr. Vincent, curious letter of, to Henry Cromwell, ii. 113.
Gossipred, ii. 707, 708; severe penalty against, ii. 715.
Government of England, ancient form of, a limited monarchy, i. 298, 303, and *notes*, 306; erroneously asserted to have been absolute, 298, 299; always a monarchy limited by law, ii. 447; its predominating character aristocratical, ib.; consultations against the, of Charles II. begin to be held, 325; difficult problem in the practical science of, 488; new and revolutionary, remarks on a, 457; Locke and Montesquieu, authority of their names on that subject, 604; studious to promote distinguished men, 603; executive, not deprived of so much power by the revolution as is generally supposed, 644; arbitrary, of Scotland, 681.
Government, Irish, its zeal for the reformation of abuses, 714; of Ireland, benevolent scheme in the, 737, and *note* *.
Governors of districts in Scotland take the title of earls, ii. 658.
Gowrie, earl of, and his brother, executed for conspiracy, ii. 680, and *note* *.
Grafton, Thomas, his *Chronicle* imperfect, i. 19, *note* *.
Graham and Burton, solicitors to the treasury, committed to the Tower by the council, and afterwards put in custody of the serjeant by the commons, ii. 632.
Grammont, Memoirs of, character of that work, ii. 217, *note* *.
Granville, lord, favourite minister of George II. 648; bickering between him and the Pelhams, ib.
Gregory XIII., his explanation of the bull of Pius V., i. 158.
Grenville, right honourable George, his excellent statute respecting controverted elections, ii. 391.
Grey, lady Catherine, presumptive heiress to the English throne at the beginning of Elizabeth's reign, i. 132—268; proceedings of the queen against her, 136, 137, and *note* *; her party deprived of influence by their ignoble connexions, 138; legitimacy of her marriage and issue, 313, 314, *note* *, 315, *note* †; present representative of this claim, 316, *note* *; her former marriage with the earl of Pembroke, 316, *note* *.
Grey, Leonard, lord, deputy of Ireland, defeats the Irish, ii. 722.
Grey, sir Arthur, his severity in the government of Ireland, ii. 730.
Griffin, ——, star chamber information against, i. 487, *note* †.
Grimston, sir Harbottle, extract from his speech, ii. 144, *note* *; elected speaker, 157.
Grindal, Edmund, bishop of London, his letter concerning a private priest, i. 122.
Grindal, Edmund, archbishop of Canterbury, prosecutes the puritans, i. 208; tolerates their meetings called "prophesyings," 212; his consequent sequestration and independent character, ib. 213, and *note* *.
Gunpowder plot; probable conspirators in the, i. 438, and *note* ‡, 439.

H.

Habeas Corpus, trial on the right of, i. 415—418, 422, 454; act of, first sent up to the lords, ii. 263; power of the court of common pleas to issue writs of, 353; particulars of the, 354, and *note* *; its effectual remedies, 355; passed, 351, and *note* ‡; no new principle introduced by it, 353.
Hales, John, his defence of lady Catherine Grey, i. 137, and *note* ‡; his character and *Treatise on Schism*, 535, 536.
Hales, sir Edward, case of, ii. 406.
Hale, sir Matthew, and other judges, decide on the illegality of fining juries, ii. 349; his timid judgment in cases of treason, 597.
Hall, Arthur, proceedings of parliament against, i. 293, 294, and *note* *; famous case of, the first precedent of the commons punishing one of their own members, ii. 620.
Hall, Edward, his *Chronicle*, contains the best account of the events of the reign of Henry VIII., i. 19, *note* *; his account of the levy of 1525, 20, *note* †.
Hall, Dr. Joseph, bishop of Exeter, his defence of episcopacy, i. 522.
Halifax, George, Savile, marquis of, gives offence to James II., ii. 393; declaration of rights presented by, to the prince of Orange, 449; retires from power, 458.

Hamilton, James, duke of, engaged in the interest of the pretender, ii. 577; killed in a duel with lord Mohun, ibid.
Hampden, John, levy on, for ship-money, i. 470, and *note* †; trial of, for refusing payment, 471—477, and *notes*; mentioned by lord Strafford, 507.
Hampton Court conference with the puritans, i. 320.
Hanover, settlement of the crown on the house of, ii. 530; limitations of the prerogative contained in it, 533, and *note* †, 534; remarkable cause of the fourth remedial articles, 535.
Hanover, the house of, spoken of with contempt, ii. 579, and *note* †, ibid.; acquires the duchies of Bremen and Verden in 1716, 593.
Hanoverian succession in danger from the ministry of queen Anne, ii. 579, and *note* †.
Harding's case, constructive treason in, ii. 503, and *notes* † ‡.
Harcourt, Simon, lord chancellor, engaged in the interest of the pretender, ii. 577.
Hardwicke, (lord chief justice), his arguments in opposing a bill to prevent smuggling, ii. 643.
Harley, sir Robert, puritan spoliations of, i. 581, 582, and *note* *.
Harley, Robert, earl of Oxford, his censure on the parliamentary proceedings against Floyd, i. 390, *note* †.
Harmer, his valuation of monastic property in England, i. 74, 82.
Harrington, sir John, notice of James I. by, i. 318, *note* *.
Hatton, sir Christopher, his lenity towards papists, i. 180, and *note*; his forest amercement, 463; an enemy to the puritans, 215; his spoliation of church property, 240; attempt to assassinate, 259.
Heath, Thomas, seized with sectarian tracts, i. 131, *note*.
Heath, Robert, attorney general, his speech on the case of habeas corpus, i. 416, 417; on the petition of right, 455; denies the criminal jurisdiction of parliament, 458.
Henrietta Maria, queen of Charles I., conditions of her marriage with him, i. 445, and *note*; her imprudent zeal for popery, 587, *note* *; fear of impeachment, 589, *note* *; sent from England with the crown jewels, 603, and *note*; letter of, concerning the religion of Charles I., 529, *note*; Charles the First's strange promise not to make any peace without her mediation, ii. 6; impeachment of, for high treason, the most odious act of the long parliament, 8; her conduct, 35; and advice to Charles II., 36, and *note* *; writes several imperious letters to Charles II., 40; forbids him to think of escaping, 41, and *note* §; ill conduct of, 41, and *notes*; abandons all regard to English interest, 42; plan formed by, to deliver Jersey up to France, ibid.; power given her by the king to treat with the catholics, 43; anecdote of the king's letters to her, ib.
Henry II., king of England, institutes itinerant justices, i. 7; invasion of Ireland by, ii. 706.
Henry VI., clerical laws improved under, i. 62.
Henry VII., king of England, state of the kingdom at his accession, i. 9; parliament called by, not a servile one, ibid.; proceedings for securing the crown to his posterity, ibid.; his marriage, and vigilance in guarding the crown, made his reign reputable, but not tranquil, 10; statute of the 11th of, concerning the duty of allegiance, ibid.; Blackstone's reasoning upon it erroneous, that of Hawkins correct, ibid., *note* †; his policy over-rated, 11; did not much increase the power of the crown, ibid.; laws enacted by, over-rated by lord Bacon, ibid.; his mode of taxation, 14; subsidies being unpopular, he has recourse to benevolence, ibid.; and to amercements and forfeitures, 16; his avarice rendered his government unpopular, ibid.; made a profit of all offices, even bishoprics, 17; wealth amassed by him soon dissipated by his son, ibid.; council court formed by, existing at the fall of Wolsey, 57; not that of star chamber, nor maintainable by his act, 58, *note* †; his fatal suspicion, 59; enacts the branding of clerks convicted of felony, 62; probable policy of, in the marriage of Henry VIII., 65, and *note*; low point of his authority over Ireland, ii. 717; confined to the four counties of the English pale, 718.
Henry VIII., his foreign policy, i. 17; his profusion and love of magnificence, ibid.; acts passed by, to conciliate the discontents excited by his father, ibid.; extensive subsidies demanded of parliament by him, 18; exaction by, miscalled benevolence in 1545, 24, 25; instance of his ferocity of temper, 29, 30, 31, 33; reflections on his government and character, 38; did not conciliate his people's affections, ib.; was open and generous, but his foreign politics not sagacious, ib.; memory revered on account of the reformation, ib.; was uniformly successful in his wars, 39; as good a king as Francis I. ib. *note* *; suppresses the turbulence of the northern nobility, &c.,

56, 57; star chamber in full power under, 58, *note* †; his intention of beheading certain members of parliament, 59: fierce and lavish effects of his wayward humour, ibid., 60; religious contests the chief support of his authority, ibid.; lollards executed under, 62; controversial answer to Luther, 63, 64; ability of, for religious dispute, 64, *note**; apparent attachment of, to the Romish church, 64; his marriage, and aversion to Catherine of Arragon, ibid., 65; time of his marriage with Anne Boleyn, 66, and *note* †; sends an envoy with his submission to Rome, 67; throws off its authority on receiving the papal sentence, ibid.; his previous measures for doing so, 68, 69, 70; takes away the first fruits from Rome, 70; becomes supreme head of the English church, 69, 71, and *note* *; delays his separation from queen Catherine, from the temper of the nation, 72; expedient concerning his divorce, 73; proceeds in the Reformation from policy and disposition, 74; the history of his time written with partiality, ib. *note**; not enriched by the revenues of suppressed monasteries, 80; his alienation of their lands beneficial to England, ib.; should have divested rather than have confiscated their revenues, 81; doubtful state of his religious doctrines, and his inconsistent cruelty in consequence, 87; sanctions the principles of Luther, 88; bad policy of his persecutions, 89; prohibits the reading of Tindal's Bible, ib. *note* †; state of religion at his death, 91; his law on the celibacy of priests, 99; his reformed church most agreeable to the English, 113, *note**; his provisions for the descent of the crown, 132; his ministers' management of parliament, *note* †; supports the commons in their exemption from arrest, 289; his will disposing of the succession, 311; doubt concerning the signature of it, 312; account of his death, and of that instrument, ib. *note*; disregarded on the accession of James, 317; institution of the council of the north by, 498.

Henry IV., king of France, opposes the claim of Arabella Stuart on the English crown, i. 309; *notes*.

Henry, prince of Wales, son of James I., his death, i. 358, and *note*; suspicion concerning it, 379, 380, *note* *; design of marrying him to the infanta, 383, and *note* *.

Herbert, Edward, lord, of Cherbury, fictitious speeches in his *History of Henry VIII.*, i. 18, *note* §.

Herbert, chief justice, his judgment in the case of sir Edward Hales, ii. 407; remarks on his decision, ib.

Heresy, canon laws against, framed under Edward VI., i. 109, *note* *.

Hertford, Edward Seymour, earl of, his private marriage with lady Grey, i. 136; imprisonment and subsequent story of, 137, and *note* *; inquiry into the legitimacy of his issue, 314, and *note* †, 315, and *note* *; Dugdale's account of it, 314, *note* †.

Hexham abbey interceded for at the dissolution, i. 81.

Heyle, serjeant, his speech on the royal prerogative, i. 283, *note*.

Heylin, Dr. Peter, his notice of the Sabbatarian bill, i. 432, *note* †; his conduct towards Prynne, 492, 493.

Heywood, Mr., serjeant, extract from his Vindication of Mr. Fox's History, ii. 397, *note* *.

High commission, court of, 1583, its powerful nature, i. 215, 216, *note* *; act for abolishing the, 559, and *note* *.

High and low churchmen, their origin and description, ii. 594.

Hoadly, Benjamin, bishop of Bangor, attacked by the convocation, ii. 598; his principles, ib.

Hobby, sir Philip, recommends the bishops' revenues being decreased, i. 102, *note* †.

Hobby, sir Edward, his bill concerning the exchequer, i. 278.

Holland, Henry Rich, earl of, chief justice in eyre, i. 463; joins the king at Oxford, ii.; is badly received, 10; returns to the parliament, ib.; ingratitude of, 11.

Holland, war with, great expense of the, ii. 241; Charles II. receives large sums from France during the, 250; infamy of the, 254.

Holles, Denzil, lord, committal and proceedings against, i. 454, 456, 458, 459.

Holles, lord, sincerely patriotic in his clandestine intercourse with France, ii. 270, and *note* *.

Holingshed, Raphael, his savage account of the persecution of the papists, i. 157, *note* †; his description of the miserable state of Ireland, ii. 730.

Holt, chief justice, his opinion concerning the power of the commons to commit, ii. 637.

Homilies, duty of non-resistance maintained in the, i. 448, and *note*, 449.

Hooker, Richard, excellence of his *Ecclesiastical Polity*, i. 230, 231; character and force of his argument, 232, 233; relative perfection of the various books, 233; imperfections of, 234; justness and liberality of, in his views of government, 235, 236; interpolations in the posthumous books considered, 236, and *note*, 237; his view of the national constitution and monarchy, 237,

238, 239; dangerous view of the connexion of church and state, 237, 245, *note*.
Hooker, member for Athenry, extract from his speech in the Irish parliament, ii. 732.
Hooper, John, bishop of Gloucester, refuses consecration in the episcopal habit, i. 111.
Hopes of the presbyterians from Charles II., ii. 177.
Houses built of timber forbid to be erected in London after the great fire, ii. 346.
Howard, Catherine, her execution not an act of tyranny, her licentious habits probably continued after marriage, i. 35; singularity of the sentence pronounced upon her by the lords, ib. *note* *.
Howard, sir Robert, and sir R. Temple, become placemen, ii. 264.
Howard, lord of Escrick, his perfidy caused the deaths of Russel and Essex, ii. 326.
Howell, James, letter concerning the elevation of bishop Juxon, i. 495, *note* †.
Hugonots of France, their number, i. 190, *note*.
Huic, ——, physician to queen Elizabeth, accused of dissuading her from marrying, i. 135, *note*.
Hume, David, his estimate of the value of suppressed monasteries, i. 82, *note*; perversion in his extracts of parliamentary speeches, 283, *note*; his erroneous assertion on the government of England, 298, 301, 302, *note*; his partial view of the English constitution under Elizabeth, 305, 306, *note*; his account of Glamorgan's commission, ii. 46.
Hun, Richard, effects of his death in the lollards' tower, i. 63.
Huntingdon, George Hastings, earl of, his title to the English crown, i. 309.
Hutton, Mr. justice, his statement concerning a benevolence collected for Elizabeth, i. 263, *note* †.
Hutchinson, Mrs., her beautiful expression of her husband's feelings at the death of the regicides, ii. 187.
Hutchinson, colonel, died in confinement, ii. 231.
Hyde, sir Nicholas, chief justice, his speech on the trial of habeas corpus, i. 416, 417.
Hyde and Keeling, chief justices, exercise a pretended power with regard to juries, ii. 348, and *note* *, ib.

I.

Jacobite faction, origin of the, ii. 456; party rendered more formidable by the faults of government, 607; their strength, 609; strength of, in Scotland, in the reigns of George I. and II. 697.
Jacobites, intrigues of the, ii. 571; their disaffected clergy send forth libels, 572; decline of the, 605.
Jacobitism of the ministers of queen Anne, ii. 579, *note* †; of Swift, ibid.; powerful in the church, 594; its general decline, 697.
James II. king of Scotland, statute of, to prevent the alienation of the royal domains, ii. 664.
James VI. king of Scotland, his success in restraining the presbyterians, ii. 672; his aversion to the Scottish presbytery, 675; forces on the people of Scotland the five articles of Perth, 676.
James I. king of England, view of the English constitution under, i. chap. iv. 307—403; his quiet accession notwithstanding the numerous titles to the crown, 307, 310; his and the other claims considered, 308—316, and *notes*; Elizabeth's intrigues against, 310, and *note*; four proofs against his title, 311; his affection for hereditary right; 316, 317; posture of England at his accession, 317; his early unpopularity, 318; hasty temper and disregard of law, ibid. *note* *; his contempt for Elizabeth, 319, and *note* *; the Millenary petition presented to, ibid. and *note* †, 321; his conduct to the puritans at the Hampton Court conference, 320, and *notes* * †; proclamation for conformity, 320; his first parliament summoned by irregular proclamation, 321—323; libels against him, 321, and *note* ‡; employed in publishing his maxims on the power of princes, 322; dispute with, on the election of Fortescue and Goodwin, 323—325; artifice of, towards the commons on a subsidy, 329; discontent of, at their proceedings, ibid. 331, *note* †, 356, ibid.; his scheme of an union with Scotland, 333—335, and *notes*; his change of title, 335, *note*; continual bickerings with his parliaments, 335, 336; his impolitic partiality for Spain, 337, and *notes*, 382, and *note* ‡, 383, and *note* *, 398, 399, 442; duties imposed by, 342, and *note* ‡, 344; defects of his character, 356, 357, and *note*; foreign politics of England under, 358, 359; his treatment of lord Coke, 361, *note*; his use of proclamations, 363, *note*; his endeavours to raise money by loans, titles, &c., 363, 364, and *note* ‡, 368; dissolves the parliament, ibid. and *note* *; his letter and conduct to the twelve judges, 374, 375; his unpopularity increased by the circumstances of Arabella Stuart, Overbury, and Raleigh, 377—384; his probable knowledge of the murder of Overbury, 380, and *note* †; calls

a new parliament, 384; his sudden adjournment of it, 391, 392; his letter to the speaker of the commons on petitions against popery, 394; reply of, to a second petition, 394, 395; adjournment, dissolution and proceedings against members of both houses, 396—398, and *note*; libels against, 399, and *note* *; his declaration of sports, 430; opposes the Arminian heresy, 434, 435, and *notes*; suspected of inclination to the papists, 436, 437, and *note*; answers cardinal Bellarmin, 440; state of papists under, 437—444, and *notes*; his reign the most important in the constitutional history of Ireland, ii. 734.

James II. king of England, attributes his return to popery to the works of Hooker, i. 234, *note*; his schemes of arbitrary power, ii. 393; issues a proclamation for the payment of customs, ibid. and *note* †, ibid.; his prejudice in favour of the catholic religion, 396; his intention to repeal the test act, ibid.; his remarkable conversation with Barillon, 397, and *note* †, ibid.; deceived in the disposition of his subjects, 400; supported by his brother's party, 402, and *note* *; prorogues the parliament, 404; his scheme for subverting the established religion, 409; his success against Monmouth inspires him with false confidence, 413; rejects the plan for excluding the princess of Orange, 414; dissolves the parliament, 419; attempts to violate the right of electors, ibid.; solicits votes for repealing the test and penal laws, 421; expels the fellows from Magdalen college, 421; his infatuation, 424; his impolicy, ibid.; received 500,000 livres from Louis XIV., ibid.; his coldness to Louis XIV., 425; his uncertain policy discussed, ibid.; his character, ibid. and *note* *, ibid.; reflections on his government, 429; compared with his father, ibid.; has a numerous army, 431; influenced by his confessor Petre, 433; considered an enemy to the prince of Orange and the English nation, 434; his sudden flight, ibid.; his return to London and subsequent flight, 436, and *note* *; vote against him in the convention, 440; compassion excited for him by historians, ii. 454; large proportion of the tories engaged to support him, 470; various schemes for his restoration, and conspiracy in his favour, 474; issues a declaration from St. Germain's, 475, and *notes* ‡ §; charged by Burnet with privity to the scheme of Grandval, 477, *note* *; his commission to Crosby to seize the prince of Orange, ibid., *note* *; civil offices, courts of justice, and the privy council in Ireland, filled with catholics in the reign of, 759.

James VII., king of Scotland, his reign, ii. 685; national rejection of him from that kingdom, 688; his cruelties, 685; attempts to introduce popery, 686.

Icon Basilike, account of, ii. 85; remarks on its author, ibid. (v. Eicon Basilike.)

Jefferies, judge, violence of, ii. 409.

Jenkes committed by the king in council for a mutinous speech, ii. 351.

Jenkins, judge, confined in the Tower by the long parliament, ii. 634.

Jenner (a baron of the exchequer) committed to the Tower by the council, and afterwards to the custody of the serjeant by the commons, ii. 632.

Jermyn, Henry, lord, dictatorial style assumed by him in his letters to Charles II., ii. 40.

Jesuits, their zeal for the catholic faith, i. 178.

Jesuit missionaries in England, i. 518, and *note* *.

Jews permitted to settle in England, ii. 177.

Jewel, John, bishop of Salisbury, opposes church ceremonies and habits, i. 136, 138, 139, *note* †.

Images, destruction of, under Edward VI. i. 92, 93, and *note*.

Impeachment, parliamentary, character and instances of, i. 385, 386, 400, 401; question on the king's right of pardon in cases of, ii. 280; decided by the act of settlement against the king's right, 283; abatement of, by dissolution of parliament, 284; decided in the case of Hastings, 289; of commons for treason constitutional, 315.

Impositions on merchandise without consent of parliament, i. 341, 342, and *note* ‡; argument on, 343, 344, and *note* §; again disputed in the house of commons, 366, 367.

Impressment, statute restraining, i. 560, 561.

Imprisonment, illegal, banished from the English constitution, i. 251; flagrant instances of, under Elizabeth, 252; remonstrances of the judges against, ibid., 254.

Incident, (transaction in Scotland so called) alarm excited by the, i. 586.

Independence of judges, ii. 544; this important provision owing to the act of settlement, 545.

Independent party, the, their first great victory the self-denying ordinance, ii. 33; new-model the army, ibid.; two essential characters of, 51, and *note* †; first bring forward principles of toleration, 55.

Independents, liability of the, to severe laws, i. 229; origin of the name, 230; emigrate to Holland, ibid., and to America, 514.
Influence of the crown in both houses of parliament, remarks on the, ii. 619.
Injustice of the condemnation of Vane, ii. 188, and *note* *.
Innes, father, the biographer of James II., extract from, ii. 419.
Innocent VIII., pope, his bull for the reformation of monasteries, i. 77, *note* *.
Intrigues of Charles II. with France, ii. 210.
Intercommuning, letters of, published in Scotland, ii. 683.
Insurrections on account of forced loans, i. 22, 25; on the king's supremacy, 30, 31; concerning inclosures, 100; of sir Thomas Wyatt, &c. 116, *note*.
Insurgents in the rebellion of 1641, their success, ii. 753; claim the re-establishment of the catholic religion, ibid.
Institution of a Christian Man, 1537, reformed doctrines contained in, by authority of Henry VIII., i. 88; character of, ibid, *note* *.
Johnson, Dr. Sam. error of, with respect to lord Shaftesbury, ii. 515, *note* *.
Joseph, emperor of Germany, his death, ii. 567.
Ireland, mismanagement of the affairs of, ii. 458, and *note* †; ancient state of, 699; necessity of understanding the state of society at the time of Henry the Second's invasion, ibid.; its division, 700; king of, how chosen, ibid.; its chieftains, ibid.; state of the clergy in, 704; rude state of society there, 702; ancient government of, nearly aristocratical, 704; its reduction by Henry II., 706; its greatest part divided among ten English families, 707; the natives of, expelled, ibid.; English laws established in, ibid.; natives of, claim protection from the throne, 709; its disorderly state, 714; miseries of the natives, 715; its hostility to the government, 716; its northern provinces, and part of the southern, lost to the crown of England, ibid.; its conduct during the contest between the houses of York and Lancaster, 719; royal authority over it revives under Henry VIII., 721; raised to the dignity of a kingdom, 722; elections declared illegal in, 731; rising of the people to restore the catholic worship, 736; priests ordered to quit, ibid.; English laws established throughout, 737; scheme for perfecting its conquest, 738; Edmund Spenser, his account of the state of Ireland, 739; constitution of its parliament, 742; its voluntary contribution for certain graces, 744; free trade to be admitted, ibid.; rebellion of 1640, its misgovernment at all times, 749, and *note* *; its fresh partition, 755; declaration for its settlement by Charles, II. 755; different parties in, their various claims, ibid.; declaration not satisfactory, 756; complaints of the Irish, ibid.; natural bias of Charles II. to the religion of, ibid.; unpopularity of the duke of Ormond with the Irish catholics, 758; lord Berkley's administration in 1670, ibid.; the civil offices of, filled with catholics in the reign of James II., 759; civil war of, in 1689, ibid.; treaty of Limerick, 760; oath of supremacy imposed on the parliament of, 763; three nations and their religions in, 765; its dependence on the English parliament, 766; rising spirit of independence in, 769; jealousy and discontent of the natives of, against the English government, 779.
Irish people, origin of the, ii. 700; their ancient condition, 705.
Irishmen, their character, ii. 704; disaffected, their connexion with Spain, 750.
Irish, natives, claim the protection of the throne, ii. 709; not equitably treated in the settlement of the colonies, 741.
Irish catholics, penal laws against, ii. 761.
Irish lords, surrender their estates to the crown, ii. 737.
Irish agents for the settlement of Ireland disgust Charles II. ii. 755.
Irish forfeitures resumed, ii. 490.
Judges in the reign of Henry VIII., their opinion that attainders in parliament could not be revested in a court of law, i. 31; of the court of star chamber, 57, and *note* †; of Elizabeth, remonstrate against illegal imprisonments, 252, 254; privately conferred with, to secure their determination for the crown, 370, and *note* *; their answers on the petition of right, 422; instances of their independence in their duty, 460, 461; account Strafford guilty, 567, 568, and *note*; their conduct on the trial of Vane, ii. 187; in the reign of Charles II. and James II., their brutal manners and gross injustice, 294, and *note* *; devise various means of subjecting juries to their own direction, 348; independence of the, 544; this important constitutional provision owing to the act of settlement, 545; their general behaviour infamous under the Stuarts, ibid.; Scroggs, North, and Jones, their conduct, 295, and *note*; Pemberton and Jones, two late judges, summoned by the commons in the case of Topham, 635; Powis, Gould,

and Powell, their opinions, concerning the power of the commons to commit, 636; the twelve, disregard the king's letters for delay of judgment, i. 374, 375, 376; their sentiments on ship money, 469; sentence on the cause of, 476.
Justices of the peace under the Plantagenets, their jurisdiction, i. 7; limitation of their power, 18.
Justice, open administration of, the best security of civil liberty in England, i. 248; courts of, sometimes corrupted and perverted, ibid., 249.
Juries governed by the crown under Elizabeth, i. 251; fined for verdicts, ii. 348; question of the right of, to return a general verdict, 350.
Jurors punished for the acquittal of sir N. Throckmorton, i. 52.
Jury, grand, their celebrated ignoramus on the indictment against Shaftesbury, ii. 319, and *note* †.
Juxon, Dr. William, bishop of London, made lord treasurer, i. 495, and *note* †; well treated in the parliament, ii. 40, *note* *.

K.

Karn, sir Edward, ambassador at Rome, to queen Mary, i. 117, 118, *note* *.
Keeling, chief justice, strong resolutions of the commons against, for fining juries, ii. 349.
Kentish petition of 1701, ii. 624.
Kerns and gallowglasses, names of mercenary troops in Ireland, ii. 705.
Kildare, earls of, their great influence in Ireland, ii. 721; earl of, his son takes up arms, *ibid.*; his wild followers murder the primate, ibid.; sent prisoner to London, and committed to the Tower, 722; executed with five of his uncles, ibid.
Killigrew and Delaval, parliamentary inquiry into their conduct, ii. 492.
King, ancient limitations of his authority in England, i. 2; his prerogative of restraining foreign trade, 344, *note* §; ecclesiastical canons on the absolute power of the, 347; his authority styled absolute, 350; command of the, cannot sanction an illegal act, 416; his power of committing, 414—418, and *note*, * 422, 423, 454; power of the, over the militia considered, 578, 599, and *note* *.
Kings of England, their difficulties in the conduct of government, ii. 649; their comparative power in politics, ibid.; of Scotland, always claim supreme judicial power, ii. 665; prerogative, vote of the commons against the, ii. 256.
King's Bench, court of, its order prohibiting the publishing a pamphlet, ii. 345; formed an article of impeachment against Scroggs, 346.
Knight, ———, proceedings against, by the university of Oxford, i. 449, and *note* *.
Knight's service, tenure of, i. 592, and *note*; statutes amending, 593.
Knighthood, conferred by James I. &c. to raise money, i. 364, *note* ‡, 462, and *note* *; compulsory, abolished, 560.
Knollys, sir Francis, friendly to the puritans, i. 214; opposed to episcopacy, 224, *note* ‡, 227.
Knox, John, persecuting spirit of, against the papists, i. 151, *note* *; supports the dissenting innovations at Frankfort, 185; his book against female monarchy, 301; founder of the Scots reformation, particulars of his scheme of church polity, ii. 668.

L.

Lacy, his conquests in Ireland, ii. 706.
Lambert, general, refuses the oath of allegiance to Cromwell, ii. 116, *note* *; ambitious views of, 125; a principal actor in expelling the commons, 130; cashiered by parliament, ibid.; his character, 138; panic occasioned by his escape from the Tower, 155; sent to Guernsey, 189; suspected to have been privately a catholic, 205.
Landed proprietors, their indignation at the rise of new men, ii. 566.
Landowners of England, became great under the Tudors, many of their estates acquired from the suppressed monasteries, i. 85.
Land tax, its origin, ii. 482; its inequality, ib.
Lands in Ireland, act for their restitution, ii. 755; its insufficiency, 757; three thousand claimants unjustly cut off from any hope of restitution, ibid.; ancient English laws concerning their alienation, i. 12, 13, 14; crown and church, restoration of, 169.
Latimer, Hugh, bishop of Worcester, intercedes for Malvern priory at the dissolution, i. 81; zealous speech of, against the temporizing clergy, 100, *note* *.
Latin ritual, antiquity and excellence of the, i. 92.
Latitudinarian divines, men most conspicuous in their writings in the reign of king Charles II., ii. 401, and *note* *.
Laud, William, archbishop of Canterbury, his assertion concerning bishops, i. 427, *note*, 503, *note*; high religious influence of, 435, and *note* ‡; his talents and character, 494, and *note*, 495, and *note* *; his correspond-

ence with lord Strafford, 500—506, 515, *note* †, 544, and *note* *; accused of prosecuting Prynne, &c., 505; his conduct in the church, 511; prosecution of the puritans, 512, and *note*; procures a proclamation to restrain emigrants, 515, and *note* †; cardinal's hat offered to, 516, *note* ‡; charges of popery against, 519, and *note*, 521; foreign reformed churches prosecuted by, 522, and *note* ||; union with the catholics intended by, 524; turns against them, 531, 532, and *note*; impeached for high treason, ii. 18; confined in the Tower, and in great indigence, ibid.; particulars of the charges against him, ibid.; defends himself with courage and ability, ibid.; judges determine the charges contain no legal treason, ibid.; commons change their impeachment into an ordinance for his execution, 19; peers comply, ibid.; number of peers present, ibid.

Lauderdale, duke of, one of the cabal, ii. 238; obliged to confine himself to Scotch affairs, 261; act of the, respecting the order of king and council to have the force of law in Scotland, 681; his tyranny, 682.

Law, the ecclesiastical, reformed, i. 108—110, and *notes*; less a security for the civil liberty of England than the open administration of justice, 248; its ordinances for regulating the press, 257.

Laws against theft, severity of, i. 8; of England, no alteration of, ever attempted without the consent of parliament, 4, 299; not enacted by kings of England without the advice of their great council, 3, 299; penal, extension of the, ii. 641, and *note* *; their gradual progress and severity, 642; have excited little attention as they passed through the houses of parliament, 643; several, passed in England to bind Ireland, 767.

Lawyers, their jealous dislike of the ecclesiastical courts, i. 228; Whitgift's censure of, ibid. *note* *; dislike of, by archbishop Laud, and the earl of Strafford, 503, 504.

Layer accuses several peers of conspiring in Atterbury's plot, ii. 604, *note* *.

Leeds, Henry Osborn, duke of, in the Stuart interest, ii. 577, *note* *.

Leicester, Robert Dudley, earl of, a suitor for the hand of Elizabeth, i. 133; Cecil's arguments against him, ibid. *note* §; assumes an interest in the queen, 134; connexion with, broken off, ibid.; combines with the catholic peers against Cecil, 138, *note* *.

Leicester, Robert Sidney, earl of, archbishop Laud's dislike to, i. 522, *note* ||.

Leighton, Alexander, prosecution of, by the court of star chamber, i. 492.

Leinster, rebellion of two septs in, leads to a reduction of their districts, now called King's and Queen's counties, ii. 273.

Lent, proclamations of Elizabeth for observing of, i. 255, 256, *note* *; statutes and proclamations for the observance of, 429—431, *note* ‡; licenses for eating flesh in, 431, *note*.

Lesley, bishop of Ross, ambassador of Mary, queen of Scots, his answer concerning Elizabeth, i. 158, *note*.

Leslie, remarks on his writings, ii. 527, and *note* *; author of the Rehearsal, a periodical paper in favour of the Jacobites, 572.

L'Estrange, sir Roger, business of licensing books intrusted to him, ii. 344.

Lethington, Maitland of, his arguments on the title of Mary Stuart to the English crown, i. 140, and *note*; his account of the death and will of Henry VIII., i. 312, *note*.

Levies of 1524–5, letters on the difficulty of raising, i. 19, *note*, 21, *note* *; instructions for procuring, 20, *note* †.

Levellers, and various sects, clamorous for the king's death, ii. 78; favourably spoken of by Mrs. Hutchinson, 96, *note* *; reformations required by the, 96.

Libel, law of, indefinite, ii. 517; falsehood not essential to the law of, 519, and *note* *; settled by Mr. Fox's libel bill in 1792, 520.

Libels published by the puritans, i. 220, 221, and *notes*; against James I., i. 399, and *note* *.

Liberty of the subject, comparative view of the, in England and France in the reign of Henry VIII., i. 23; civil, its securities in England, 248; public, dangerous state of, under the Stuarts, ii. 338; of conscience, declaration for, 416; its motive, ib.; observations on its effects, 417; similar to that published in Scotland, ib.; of the press, 516; particulars relating to the, ib.

Licenses granted for eating flesh in Lent, i. 431, *note*.

Licensing acts, ii. 344; act, particulars relating to the, 516.

Lichfield, bishopric of, despoiled in the reformation, i. 102.

Limerick, treaty of, ii. 760; its articles, ib. and *note* *, 761.

Lincoln, Theophilus Clinton, earl of, refuses to take the covenant, and is excluded from the house of peers, ii. 15, *note* †.

Lingard, Dr. John, his notice of the bill on the papal supremacy, i. 71, *note* *; his estimate of the value of suppressed monasteries, 82, *note*; his observations on the canon laws, and on Cranmer, 109, 110, *note* *; his extenuations of queen Mary's conduct, 113, *note* †; his apology for the charge of the

Nag's Head Consecration, i. 127, *note* *; artifice of, in regard to the history of Anne Boleyne, 33, *note* *; his insinuation in regard to Catherine Howard and lady Rochford, 35, *note* *.
Litany, translated in 1542, i. 92, *note*.
Liturgy, chiefly translated from the Latin service book, i. 92, and *note*; prayers for the departed first kept in, 93; taken out in its first revisal, 94; amendments of the English under Elizabeth, 119, and *note* *; statute defending, 121; revised, ii. 524; the, established the distinguishing marks of the Anglican church, 526.
Llandaff, bishopric of, despoiled in the reformation, i. 102.
Loan remitted to Henry VII. by parliament, i. 25; demanded by Charles I., and conduct of the people on it, 412, and *note* †, 413; committal and trial of several refusing to contribute, 414; their demand of a habeas corpus, 415; their right to it debated and denied, 415—418; on property, in 1524-25 raised by cardinal Wolsey, 18—23, and *notes*; to Elizabeth not quite voluntary, nor without intimidation, 263, and *note* *; always repaid, ib., 264; solicited under James I., 363, 364.
Locke, John, his theory of government similar to that of Hooker, i. 235—238.
Lollards, the origin of the protestant church of England, i. 61; their re-appearance and character before Luther, 62.
London, levies on the city of, i. 20—22—27; citizens of, inclined to the reformation, 73; increase of, prohibited by proclamation, 255; tumultuous assemblies of, resigned to martial law, 260, 261; proclamation against buildings near, 362, 363, *note*, 479, and *note* **, 480, 487; remonstrates against paying ship-money, 465; proposed improvements in, 481; lands in Derry granted to, ib., 482; offer of, to erect the king a palace in lieu of a fine, &c. ib. *note* *; corporation of, information against the, ii. 323; forfeiture of their charter, ib.; judgment against, 324; purchases the continued enjoyment of its estates at the expense of its municipal independence, ib.
Long, Thomas, member for Westbury, pays four pounds to the mayor, &c. for his return in 1571, ii. 388.
Long parliament summoned, i. 553; different political views of the, 554; its measures of reform, 555—561; made but little change from the constitution under the Plantagenets, 561; observations on its acts, ib., 562, 563; errors of the, 563—573; bill of, enacting their not being dissolved against their own consent, 573, 574, and *notes*.
Lord lieutenant, institution of the office of, i. 597; appointment of, under militia bill, 599, 500, *note* *.
Lords Portland, Oxford, Somers, and Halifax, impeached on account of the treaties of partition, ii. 495.
Lords, house of, cold reception of the articles on religious reform prepared by the commons, i. 226; disagreements of the house of commons with the, 297, 298, *note* *; impeachment of lord Latimer at the bar of the, 385; sentence of the, on Mompesson, 386; objects to titles assumed by the commons, 389, *note*; unable to withstand the inroads of democracy, ii. 87; reject a vote of the commons, 88; motion to take into consideration the settlement of the government on the death of the king, 89; their messengers refused admittance by the commons, ib.; retain their titles, ib.; Cromwell's description of, 116; embarrassing question concerning the eligibility of peers, 158; commons desire a conference with the, ib. and *note* †; receive a letter from Charles II., 159; declare the government ought to be in the king, lords, and commons, ib.; vote to exclude all who signed the death warrant of Charles I. from act of indemnity, 166, and *note* ‡; in the case of lord Danby, not wrong in refusing to commit, 279, and *note* *, 280; inquiry of the, in cases of appeals, 285; its judicial power historically traced, 358; the king always presumed to be present, 359; make orders on private petitions of an original nature, 360; assume power unconnected with privilege, ib.; antiquity of its ultimate jurisdiction, ib.; pretensions of the, about the time of the restoration, 361; its disputes with the commons, ib.; assume great power, 362, and *note* *; prejudice raised against the, 363; its conduct in the case of Skinner and the East India company, 364; does not entertain petitions of appeal before the reign of Charles I., 366; and *notes* *†; its state under the Tudors and Stuarts, 376; its numbers from 1454 to 1661, ib.; and of the spiritual lords, ib.; every peer of full age entitled to his writ of summons, 378; privilege of voting by proxy, originally by spiritual permission of the king, ib.; its important privilege of recording its dissent, 379; proceedings of the, in the convention of 1688, 441; dispute with, about Aylesbury election, 627; spiritual in Scotland, choose the temporal to the number of eight, 678.
Lord's supper, controversies on the, i. 95; four theories on the presence in the, 96, 97, 98; modern Romish doctrines on the, ib. *note*.
Love, Christopher, executed for a conspiracy,

ii. 91; effects of his trial and execution, ib. and *note* †.
Loudon, Dr. ——, his violent proceedings towards the monasteries, i. 76, *note*.
Louis XIV., his object in the secret treaty with Charles II., ii. 247; mutual distrust between them, 249; secret connexions formed by the leaders of opposition with, 267, and *note* †; his motives for the same, 269, and *note* *; secret treaties with Charles, 275; mistrusts Charles's inclinations, ib.; refuses Charles the pension stipulated for in the private treaty, 276; connexion between Charles II., and broken off, 339; his views in regard to Spain dangerous to the liberties of Europe, 485, 486; makes overtures for negotiations, 562, and *note* *, 564; exhausted state of his country, 568; acknowledges the son of James II. as king of England, 546.
Luders, Mr., observations in his report of election cases, ii. 387, *note* †.
Ludlow, general, and Algernon Sidney, project an insurrection, ii. 231.
Lundy, colonel, inquiry into his conduct, ii. 492.
Lutherans of Germany, less disposed than the catholics to the divorce of Henry VIII., i. 72, 73, *note*.
Luther, Martin, his doctrines similar to those of Wicliffe, i. 61; treatise of, answered by Henry VIII., 63; his rude reply and subsequent letter to the king, 64, and *note*; his allowance of double marriages, 73, *note*; his doctrine of consubstantiation, 96; rejects the belief of Zuingle, 97.

M.

Mac-crie, Dr., his misconception of a passage in Hooker's Ecclesiastical Polity, i. 237, *note*.
Mac-Diarmid, John, his Lives of British Statesmen, i. 497, *note* *.
Macdonalds, their massacre in Glencoe, ii. 691, and *note* *.
Mackenzie, sir George, account of his Jus Regium, ii. 336.
Macpherson, John, extract from his Collection of State Papers, ii. 470, *note* ‡.
Madox, Dr. ——, bishop of Worcester, his Answer to Neal's History of the Puritans, i. 221, *note* †.
Mainwaring, ——, his assertion of kingly power, i. 451.
Magistrates under Elizabeth inclined to popery, i. 154, and *note* *.
Magdalen college, Oxford, expulsion of the fellows from, ii. 421; mass said in the chapel of, 422.
Malvern priory interceded for at the dissolution, i. 81.
Malt, imposition set upon, i. 391, *note* *.
Manchester, Edward Montagu, earl of, suspected of being reluctant to complete the triumph of the parliament in the contest with Charles I., ii. 32.
Maritime glory of England first traced from the commonwealth, ii. 119.
Marriages, ordered to be solemnized before justices of the peace, ii. 99.
Marlborough, John, earl of, and Sidney, earl of Godolphin, Fenwick's discoveries oblige them to break off their course of perfidy, ii. 480.
Marlborough, John, duke of, abandons the cause of the revolution, ii. 471, *note*; his whole life fraught with meanness and treachery, ib.; preserves a secret connexion with the court of James, 572; extreme selfishness and treachery of his character, 573.
Marlborough, Sarah, duchess of, her influence over queen Anne, ii. 560.
Martin Mar-Prelate, puritan libels so called, i. 220, and *note* *, 221, and *note* *†.
Martial law, origin, benefits, and evils of, i. 258; instances of its use, 259, 260; ordered under Charles I., 420, *note*; restrained by the petition of right, 420—423, 424.
Martyr, Peter, assists the reformation in England, i. 98; and in drawing up the forty-two articles, 105, *note* *; objected to the English vestments of priests, 110.
Martyrs under queen Mary, their number considered, i. 114, *note* *.
Mary, princess, unnatural and unjust proceedings in regard to, i. 36; denied enjoying her own religion, 103.
Mary, queen of England, restores the Latin liturgy, i. 44; married clergy expelled, ib.; averse to encroach on the privileges of the people, ib.; her arbitrary measures attributed to her counsellors, ib.; duty on foreign cloth without assent of parliament, 45; torture more frequent than in all former ages, ib.; unprecedented act of tyranny, 46; excited by an attempt of Stafford, ib.; sends a knight to the Tower for his conduct in parliament, 59; her re-establishment of popery pleasing to much of the nation, 111; protestant services to, ib.; her unpopularity, ib.; number of emigrants from England in her reign, 112, and *note* *; not seconded by her parliaments, 112; her marriage with Philip of Spain disliked, 113; cruelty of her religion productive of aversion to it, 114; and of many becoming protestants, 115; her dislike of Elizabeth, and desire of changing the succession, 117, *note*; use of martial law by, 258; origin of the high commission court under, 216, *note* *;

Knox's attack on her government, and Aylmer's defence of, i. 301, 302; imposes duties on merchandise without consent of parliament, 341.
Mary, queen of William III., letters of, published by Dalrymple, ii. 472, *note* *.
Mary Stuart, queen of Scots, her prior right to the throne of England, i. 132; her malevolent letter to Elizabeth, 135, *note*; her offensive and peculiar manner of bearing her arms, 139, and *note* *; her claim to the English throne, ibid. 140; Elizabeth intrigues against, though not unfavourable to her succession, 139, *note*, 140; her difficulties in Scotland, and imprudent conduct, 140, 141; Elizabeth's treatment of, considered, 141; strength of her party claim to England, 142; her attachment to popery, and intent of restoring it, ibid. and *note* ‡; combination in favour of, 143; probability of her succession, 146; statute against her supporters and allusion to herself, 148, and *note*; address of the puritans against, 149; bill against her succession considered, ibid.; her death advised, ibid. 150; her succession feared by the puritans, 148—151, and *note* *; in confinement, and her son educated a protestant, 155; her deliverance designed by the catholics, 167; her correspondence regularly intercepted, 168; less formidable to the protestant interest, and her succession more doubtful, ibid.; statute intended to procure her exclusion, 170; her danger from the common people, ibid.; reflections on her trial, imprisonment, death, and guilt, ibid. 174; not exempt from the English law, 171, 172; her regal title and privileges examined, 173; observations on the controversy concerning, ii. 667, and *note* †.
Masham, lady, in the interest of pretender, ii. 577.
Mass, service of the, not tolerated in Germany and England, i. 103; performance of the, interdicted by the act of uniformity, 121; secretly permitted, ibid.; instances of severity against catholics for hearing, 122; penalty for, and imprisonments, probably illegal, *note* †, ibid.
Massacre of the Scots, and English, in Ulster, ii. 751.
Massey, a catholic, collated to the deanery of Christ church, ii. 409, and *note* †, ibid.
Massachusett's bay, granted by charter, i. 514.
Matthews's Bible, 1537, Coverdale's so called, i. 89; notes against popery in, 90, *note*.
Maximilian, his religious toleration in Germany, i. 128, and *note*; said to have leagued against the protestant faith, 146, and *note* †.
Mayart, serjeant, his treatise in answer to lord Bolton, ii. 767.
Mayne, ———, persecution of, for popery, i. 156.
May, Thomas, his view of England before the long parliament, i. 539, *note* *.
Mazure, F. A. J., extract from his *Histoire de la Revolution*, relating to the vassalage of James II. to Louis XIV., ii. 425; another extract concerning James II.'s order to Crosby to seize the prince of Orange, 477, *note* *, further extracts from, 414; his account of the secret negotiations between lord Tyrconnel and the French agent Bonrepos, for the separation of England and Ireland, 759, *note* ‡.
Melancthon, Philip, his permission of a concubine to the landgrave of Hesse, i. 73, *note*; allowed of a limited episcopacy, 108; incurred odium for the death of Servetus, 131.
Melville, Andrew, and the general assembly of Scotland restrain the bishops, ii. 670; some of the bishops submit, ib.; he is summoned before the council for seditious language, 61, 671; flies to England, 672; arguments urged in his defence, ibid.
Members of parliament, free from personal arrest, 624.
Merchants, petition on grievances from Spain, i. 337—339, and *note*; petition against arbitrary duties on goods, 341.
Merchandise, impositions on, not to be levied but by parliament, i. 340; book of rates on, published, 344.
Middlesex, Lionel Cranfield, earl of, his parliamentary impeachment, i. 400, 401, and *note* †.
Michiele, ———, committed to the Tower by the house of commons, i. 384.
Michiel, Venetian ambassador, his slander of the English, i. 112, *note* *; states that Elizabeth was suspected of protestantism, 117, *note*.
Ministers of the crown, responsibility of, ii. 277; necessity of their presence in parliament, 541.
Ministers ordained in foreign protestant churches, admitted to benefices in England, 201; early presbyterian of Scotland were eloquent, learned, and zealous in the cause of reformation, 671; their influence over the people, ibid.; interfere with the civil policy, ibid.
Millenary petition, treatment of, by James I., i. 319, and *note* †, 321.
Military force in England, historical view of, i. 591, 598, and *notes*.
Military excesses committed by Maurice and Goring's armies, ii. 30, *notes* * and †; by the Scotch, 32.

Military power, the two effectual securities against, ii. 498; always subordinate to the civil, 615.
Militia, dispute on the question of, between Charles I. and the parliament, i. 591, and *note*, 598, 599, and *notes*, 600, *note* *.
Militia, its origin, ii. 614; does not much diminish the standing army, ib.; grown unpopular and burthensome, ib.; considered as a means of recruiting the army, ib.; established in Scotland, 681.
Mist's Journal, the printer Mist committed to Newgate by the commons for libel in, 632.
Mitchell, confessing upon promise of pardon, executed in Scotland at the instance of archbishop Sharp, ii. 684.
Molyneux, his celebrated "*Case of Ireland's being bound by acts of parliament in England stated*," ii. 767; resolutions of the house of commons against his book, ibid.
Mompesson, sir Giles, his patents questioned, i. 384.
Monarchy of England limited, i. 1; erroneously asserted to have been absolute, 298, 299.
Monarchy established, extraordinary change in our, at the revolution, ii. 446, and *note* *; absolute power of, defined, 645; tendency of the English government towards, from Henry VI. to Henry VIII., i. 50; not attributable to military force, ibid.
Monasteries, their corruptions exposed by the visitations of, i. 76; resignation and suppression of, 77; papal bull for reforming, ibid., *note* *; act reciting their vices, ibid., *note* †; feelings and effects of their suppression, 79; might lawfully and wisely have been abolished, 80; several interceded for at the dissolution, 81; evils of their indiscriminate destruction, ibid; immense wealth procured by their suppression, 82, and *note*; how bestowed and distributed, 83, 84, and *note* *; alms of the, erroneously supposed to support the poor, 86; in Ireland in the 7th and 8th centuries, learning preserved by, 704.
Monastic orders averse to the reformation, i. 74; their possessions great, but unequal, ibid., and *note* †; evils of, in the reign of Henry VIII., 75; reformed and suppressed by Wolsey, ibid., and *note* †; visitations of the, truly reported, 76; protestant historians in favour of, ibid., 77, and *notes*; pensions given to the, on their suppression, 78, and *note* *.
Money-bills, privilege of the commons concerning, i. 297, 298; ancient mode of proceeding in, discussed, ii. 369.
Monopolies, nature of, i. 281; victorious debate on, in the house of commons, 282.
Monks, pensions given to, on their suppression, i. 78, and *note* *.
Monk, general George, his first tender of service to the king, ii. 143; not secure of the army, 145; represses their mutinous spirit, ibid.; writes to the gentry of Devon, ibid., and *note* ‡; receives a commission as general of all the forces, 146; his slowness in declaring for Charles, 148; urges the most rigid limitations to the monarchy, 149; suggest the sending the king's letter to the two houses of parliament, 150; his character, 161; can hardly be said to have restored Charles II., but did not oppose him so long as he might have done, 144, *note* *; his strong attachment to Cromwell, 139; his advice to Richard Cromwell, ibid.; observations on his conduct, 140, *note* *; takes up his quarters in London, 141; advises the exclusion of only four regicides from the act of indemnity, 165.
Monmouth, James, duke of, remark on the death of, ii. 403, and *note* *.
————'s rebellion, numbers executed for, ii. 412, *note* †.
———— (town), right of election extended to, ii. 381.
Monopolies, parliamentary proceedings against, i. 384—386.
Montague, lord, his speech in the house of lords against the statute for the queen's power, i. 124, 125, and *note*; brings a troop of horse to Elizabeth at Tilbury, 174, 175, *note* *.
Montagu, Dr. Richard, bishop of Chichester, his Roman catholic tenets, 520; his intrigues with Panzani, 527—529.
Montagu, abbé, committed by the commons for publishing a book, 631.
Monteagle, lord, his suit with the earl of Hertford, i. 314, 315, and *note* *.
Montreuil, negociation of, ii. 37, see also *note* *.
Mordaunt, lord, charges against, ii. 237.
More, Sir Thomas, opposes the granting a subsidy to Henry VII. i. 14, *note* †; his conduct upon another motion for a large grant, 18; apology for his proceedings against Wolsey, 24; causes of his death, 30; inclined to the divorce of Henry VIII., 70, and *note*.
Morgan, Thomas, his letter to Mary Stuart, i. 171, *note* *.
Morice, ——, attorney of the court of wards, attacks the oath, *ex officio*, i. 227; his motion on ecclesiastical abuses, 280; his imprisonment and letter, ibid.

Morton, John, archbishop of Canterbury, his mode of soliciting benevolences, called, "Morton's fork," i. 15; his charge against the abbey of St. Albans, 77, *note* *.
Mortmain, effect of the statutes of, on the clergy, i. 74.
Mortuaries, fees of the clergy on, limited, i. 69.
Mountnorris, lord, conduct of lord Strafford to, i. 499, 500, and *notes*.
Moyle, Walter, his *Argument against a standing Army*, ii. 487, *note* *.
Mutiny bill passed, ii. 498.
Murray, William, employed by king Charles to sound the parliamentary leaders, ii. 40.
Murray, Mr. Alexander, arbitrary proceedings of the commons against him, ii. 629; causes himself to be brought by habeas corpus before the king's bench, 637.
Murderers and robbers deprived of the benefit of clergy, i. 62.

N.

Nag's head consecration refuted, i. 127, and *note* *.
Naseby, defeat of Charles I. at, ii. 34; consequences of, 35.
Nation, state of the, proposition for an inquiry into the, ii. 493.
National antipathy to the French not so great before the reign of Charles II., ii. 239.
National debt at the death of William III. ii. 481, *note* *; rapid increase of the, 565.
Nations, three, and three religions, in Ireland, ii. 765.
Naval transactions in the reign of William III., ii. 484.
Navy of Charles I. reasons for increasing, i. 465, 466.
Navy laid up, ii. 22.
Neal, Daniel, his *History of the Puritans*, and *Answer to Bishop Madox*, i. 221, *note* †; statement of the puritan controversy under Elizabeth, 229, *note* †.
Netherlands, Charles I. negotiates with the disaffected in the, i. 466.
Neville, Sir Henry, his memorial to James I. on summoning a parliament, i. 365.
Newark, charter granted to, enabling it to return two members, ii. 383.
Newbury, battle of, its consequences to the prevailing party, ii. 13.
Newport, treaty of, ii. 70; observations on the, ibid., and *note* *.
News, to publish any, without authority, determined by the judges in 1680 to be illegal, ii. 345, and *note* †.
Newspapers, their great circulation in the reign of Anne, ii. 652; stamp duty laid on, 656.
Neyle, Dr. Richard, bishop of Lichfield, proceedings of the house of commons against, i. 367.
Nicolas, Henry, a fanatic leader, i. 131, *note* *
Nimeguen, treaty of, hasty signature of the, ii. 276.
Nini, council of, ii. 118, and *note* *.
Noailles, (ambassador in England from Henry II. of France) his conduct secures the national independence, i. 49, *note* §; unpopularity of queen Mary reported by, 111; his account of her persecutions, 114, *note* †.
Noailles, marshal de, extract from his memoirs relating to Philip of Anjou, ii. 564, *note* *.
Nobility, pliant during the reign of Henry VIII. i. 51; responsible for various illegal and sanguinary acts, ibid.; of the north of England, their turbulent spirit, 56; repressed by Henry VIII., and the court of star chamber, ibid., 57, and *note* *; why inclined to the reformation, 73, *note*; of England become great under the Tudors, deriving their estates from the suppressed monasteries, 85; averse to the bill against the celibacy of priests, 99; and to the innovations of the reformation, 100; such advanced into power under Mary, 111; censured, &c. for religion under that queen, 112, and *note* *; combination of the catholics for Mary Stuart, 142, 143.
Non-conformists, protestant, Elizabeth, laws respecting, i. chap. iv. 183—245; summoned and suspended by archbishop Parker, 194; number of, in the clergy, 197, *note* *; deprived by archbishop Whitgift, 214, and *note* ‡; increased under Elizabeth, 242; remarks on acts against, ii. 214; avail themselves of the toleration held out by James II., 420.
Non-jurors, Schism of the, its beginning, ii. 455, 526; send forth numerous libellous pamphlets, 594.
Non-resistance preached by the clergy, and enforced in the Homilies, i. 448, and *note*, 449.
Norfolk, Thomas Howard, duke of, his letter to Wolsey on the grant of 1525, i. 21, *note* *; letter of the council to, during the rebellion, 30, *note*; duke of, combines with the catholic peers against Cecil, i. 138, *note* *.
———, John, lord Howard, duke of, confidential minister of Henry VIII., ruined by the influence of the two Seymours; execution prevented by the death of Henry; continued in prison during Edward's reign, and

is restored under Mary, i. 33; prevails on Henry VIII. to prohibit the English scriptures, 89, *note*; a supporter of the popish party, 91; in prison at the death of Henry VIII., ibid.; his proposed union with Mary Stuart, 143; his character, ibid. and *note*; treason and trial of, ibid. 144, and *note* *.

———, county of, assists to place Mary on the throne, and suffers greatly from persecution, i. 111, and *note* ‡; parliamentary inquiry into the returns for, 296, 297.

Norman families, great number of, settle in Scotland, and become the founders of its aristocracy, ii. 659.

North of England, slow progress of the reformation in, i. 100; council of the, its institution and power, i. 498; act for abolishing, 559, and *note* ‡.

North, chief justice, proclamation drawn up by, against petitions, ii. 310.

North and Rich, sheriffs, illegally put into office, ii. 328.

Northampton, Henry Howard, earl of, declines to forward the merchants' petitions against Spain, i. 338.

Northampton, payment of ship-money complained of in, i. 545, and *note* §.

Northumberland, Algernon Percy, earl of, and others, take measures against a standing army, ii. 244; his connexion with the gunpowder conspiracy, 439, *note*.

Norton, Mr. his defence of the bill against non-resident burgesses, i. 287.

Nottingham, Daniel Finch, earl of, holds offices of trust under William III., ii. 458; unites with the whigs against the treaty of peace, 601.

Nowell, Alexander, parliamentary inquiry into his election, i. 296.

Noy, William, discovers tax imposed for shipping, i. 464.

Nuns, pensions given to, on their suppression, i. 78, *note* *.

O.

Oath, called *ex officio*, in the high commission court, i. 216; attacked in the house of commons, 227; administered to papists under James I., 439, 440; of abjuration, ii. 547.

October club, generally jacobites, ii. 577.

Offices, new created, at unreasonable salaries, as bribes to members of parliament, ii. 540.

Officers of the crown, undue power exerted by, i. 5.

Œcolampadius, John, his doctrines on the Lord's supper, i. 97.

O'Neil, attainted in the parliament of 1589, 738; and his land forfeited to the crown, ibid.

Onslow, speaker, his assertion of the property of the subject, i. 300.

Opposition to the court of Charles II., ii. 193.

O'Quigley, Patrick, his case compared with Ashton's, ii. 511.

Orange, William, prince of, declares against the plan of restrictions, ii. 306; remarks on his conduct before the revolution, 411; derived great benefit from the rebellion of Monmouth, 412; overtures of the malcontents to, 415; receives assurances of attachment from men of rank in England, 427; invitation to him, ibid., and *notes* * †; his design of forming an alliance against Louis XIV., 432; requested to take the administration of the government of England upon himself, 440; vote of the convention declaring him and the princess of Orange king and queen of England, 445.

Ordinance, a severe one, of Cromwell, ii. 176.

Origin of the present regular army, ii. 175.

Orkney, countess of, receives large grants from William III., ii. 489.

Orleans, duchess of, (sister of Charles II.) her famous journey to Dover, ii. 248.

Ormond, marquis of, (James Butler) sent to England by Charles II., ii. 133.

Ormond, duke of, engaged in the interest of the pretender, ii. 576, and *note* *; his unpopularity with the Irish catholics, 758.

Orrery, Roger Boyle, earl of, a catholic, ii. 252.

Overbury, sir Thomas, his murder, i. 379, examination of, 380, *note* †.

Owen, Thomas, his atrocious assertion, on papal excommunication, i. 370, *note* †.

Oxford, university of, measure adopted to procure its judgment in favour of Henry the Eighth's divorce, i. 72; attached to popery, 198, and *note* *; proceedings on doctrine of non-resistance, 449; decree of the, against pernicious books, ii. 337; opposes the measures of James II., 423; tainted with jacobite prejudices, 603, and *note* *.

Oxford, short parliament held at, in March, 1681, ii. 315.

Oxford, John de Vere, earl of, fined for his retainers, i. 16, 17; censured by queen Mary's council for his religion, 112, *note* *.

Oxford, Robert Harley, earl of, sends abbé Gaultier to marshal Berwick to treat of the restoration, ii. 574; promises to send a plan for carrying it into effect, ibid.; but takes no farther measures, ibid.; difficult to pronounce what were his real intentions, ibid.;

account of pamphlets written on his side, 575, *note* *; hated by both parties, 582; impeached of high treason, 585; committed to the Tower, 586; impeachment against him abandoned, ibid.; his speech when the articles were brought up, ibid., and *note* †.

P.

Paget, William, first lord, his remark on the doubtful state of religion in England, i. 100; *note* †; advises the sending for German troops to quell commotions, ibid.: his lands increased by the bishopric of Lichfield, 102.

Palatinate, negotiation of Charles I. for its restoration, i. 466, 467.

Palatine jurisdiction of some counties under the Plantagenets, i. 7.

Pale, old English, ill disposed to embrace the reformed religion in Ireland, ii. 731; deputation sent from Ireland to England, in the name of all the subjects of the, 733; delegates committed to the Tower, ibid., and *note* *.

Pamphlets, account of some, in the reign of Charles and James II., ii. 521.

Pamphlets, and political tracts, their character and influence on the public mind at the commencement of the last century, ii. 653.

Panzani, a priest, ambassador to Charles I. i. 516, 517, 525—527; his report to the pope of papists in England, 526, *note* *.

Papists proceeded against for hearing mass, i. 122; tracts and papers to recall the people of England to their faith, 123, and *note* †.

Papists of England, the emperor Ferdinand's intercession for, i. 127; subsequent persecution of, 128, 129, 131, and *note* †; attended the English church, 129; emigrate in consequence, and disquiet her reign, ibid.; combinations of, under Elizabeth, 142—144; numbers of, in the north of England, 142, *note*; treatment of, under James I. 437—446, and *notes*; under Charles I. 447, 448; more rigorously treated, and emigration of, 150, 152, 153, *note*; their strength and encouragement under Elizabeth, 154; emissaries from abroad, numbers, and traitorous purposes of, ibid.; executed for their religion under Elizabeth, 156; concealment of their treacherous purposes, 158; not exclusively chargeable with insincerity, 159; lord Burleigh's provisions against, in the oath of supremacy, i. 162, 163; his opinion that they were not reduced by persecution, 163; but by good instructors and obliging officers, to conform to the established church, 164; severity against, productive of hypocrites, ib.; ordered to depart the kingdom, 165; petition against the banishment of priests, ib.; spies and frauds for destroying, ib.; heavy penalties on, 166, and *note* *; the queen's death contemplated by, 166; become disaffected to Elizabeth, 167, *note* *; depressed state of, ib.; continued persecution of, between 1588 and 1603, 175, and *note* †; 176, and *note* *; statute restricting their residence, 175; executed for safety of the government and not their religion, 176; their simple belief construed into treason, 177; the nature of their treason considered, 177, *note*; two parties among the, 179; excellent conduct of, at the Spanish invasion, i. 167, *note* *, 174; principal persecutors of, 180; proportion of, in England under Elizabeth, 190, *note*; excluded from the house of commons, 204; state and indulgence of, under Charles I. 516, and *note*; inclined to support the king, 517, and *note* †; tendency to their religion, 518, 519, 524, 525, 529—531; report of, in England by Panzani, i. 526, *note* *; contributions raised by the gentry, 544.

Parker, Matthew, made archbishop of Canterbury, i. 118, *note* †; defends the church liturgy and ceremonies, 186, 188, 193, and *note* †; his order for the discipline of the clergy, 193; summons non-conformists, 194; Elizabeth's coarse treatment of his wife, 187, *note* ‡; orders certificates of the clergy, 197, *note* †; discussion of church authority with Mr. Wentworth, 207; prosecutes the puritans, 208; suppresses their "prophesyings," 211, 212; defends the title of bishops, 240, *note* *; his liberal treatment of bishop Tunstall, 126, *note* †; his consecration admitted, 127, *note* *; his sentence against lady Grey, 137; his advice against Mary queen of Scots, 149; speech of, against the papists, 151,

Parry, Dr. Wm., executed for a plot against Elizabeth, i. 166; account of him, ib. *note* †.

Parry, Dr., committal and expulsion of, by parliament, i. 295.

Parry, Thomas, his letter concerning the papists under James I. i. 438, *note* ‡.

Parsons, sir William, and sir John Borlase, lords justices, succeed lord Strafford in the government of Ireland, ii. 751.

Parker (Samuel, bishop of Oxford), account of his *History of his own time*, ii. 253, *note* ‡.

Parliament, the present constitution of, recognised in the reign of Edward II. i. 4; of Henry VII. secure the crown to his posterity, 9; anxious for his union with Eliza-

beth of York, ib.; power of the privy council over the members of, 58, 59; struggles of, against the crown, 59; complaint of the house of commons against Fisher, 69; address of, moved for Henry VIII. to receive back queen Catherine, 72; influence of the crown over, 285, and *note* †; divorce of Henry VIII. brought before the houses of, 69, 70; statutes for holding, 556, and *note*; enormous extension of its privileges, 605, and *note**; few acts of justice, humanity, generosity, or of wisdom from, manifested by, from their quarrel with the king to their expulsion, ii. 3; great alarm of, 4, *note* †; deficient in military force, 5; offers terms of peace to Charles I. at Newcastle, 38; deficient in political courage, 59; eleven members charged with treason, 60; insulted by a mob, ib.; relies on the protection of the army, ib.; the sequestered members of, restored to their places, ib.; duration of, proposed, 63; has no means to withstand the power of Cromwell, 94; is strongly attached to the established church, 95; new one called decidedly royalist, 184, 188; its implacable resentment against the sectaries, 207; session of, held at Oxford in 1665, 212; tendency of long sessions to form opposition in, 218; supplies granted by, only to be expended for specific objects, 220; strenuous opposition made by, to Charles II. and the duke of York, 250; convention dissolved, 468; its spirit of inquiry after the revolution, 491; annual assembly of, rendered necessary, 498; its members influenced by bribes, 540; its rights out of danger since the revolution, 542; its influence among the states of Europe, ib.; influence over it by places and pensions, 616; what degree of influence necessary, one of the most important political questions, ib.; attempts to restrain it, 617; its practice to repress disorderly behaviour, 620; assumed the power of incapacitation, 621; its power over those who do not belong to it, 621; dependent on the favour of government, undue proportion in the, 616; power of each house of, over those who do not belong to it, 621; sir Richard Steele expelled from, for a party pamphlet reflecting on the ministry, 629; debates, account of their first publication, 654; their great importance, 655; seat in, necessary qualification for, 657.

Parliament of 1685, remarks on its behaviour, ii. 394.

Parliament, convention, accused of abandoning public liberty at the restoration, ii. 151; pass several bills of importance, 169.

Parliament, long, called back by the council of officers, ii. 129; expelled by, 130; of seventeen years' duration dissolved, 297, and *note* †; long prorogation of, 310.

Parliaments, probable effects of Wolsey's measures for raising supplies without their intervention, i. 23; bill for septennial, ii. 388.

Parliament of Scotland, its model nearly the same as that of the Anglo-Norman sovereigns, ii. 659; its mode of convocation, ib.; number of its members in the fifteenth century, ib.; law enacted by James I. relating to, 660; royal boroughs in the, 661; its efforts were principally to support the royal power, 662; its legislative authority higher than that of England, 664; summoned at his succession by James II., acknowledges the king's absolute power, 685.

Parliament of Ireland, similar to an English one, 713; its constitution, 742; meet in 1634, its desire to insist on the confirmation of the graces, 746; opposition in the, to the crown, 731; in 1661, only one catholic returned to, 763.

Parliament of the new protestant nation of Ireland always whig, ii. 766.

Parliamentary party, old, assemble to take measures against a standing army, ii. 244.

Parties, idea of the, royalist and parliamentary, ii. 4; their military occupation of the kingdom, ibid.

Partition treaty, earl of Portland and lord Somers the only ministers proved to be concerned in the, ii. 538.

Party, moderate, in the reign of Charles I., ii. 3; endeavour to bring about a pacification with Charles, ib.; gain strength, 5; negotiation with the king, ibid.; broken off by the action at Brentford, ibid.; three peers of the, go over to the king, 9.

Passive obedience, doctrine of, passed from the Homilies into the statutes, ii. 192; remarks on the doctrine of, ii. 333.

Paul IV., pope, his arrogant reply to the message of Elizabeth, i. 117, 118, *note* *, 122.

Paulet, sir Amias, his honourable and humane conduct to Mary Stuart, i. 171, *note* †.

Peacham, Rev. ——, prosecution of, for a libellous sermon, i. 369, 370.

Pearce, Dr. Zachary, bishop of Rochester, his right to a seat in parliament after resigning his see, i. 79, *note*.

Peasantry of England under the Plantagenets, i. 5, 6.

Peers of England, under the Plantagenets, a small body, i. 5; their privileges not considerable, ibid.; disordered state of, under Henry VI. and Edward IV., 10; authority

and influence of abbots, &c. in the house of, 78, 79; freedom of the, from the oath of supremacy, 124; their interference with elections opposed, 288; proceedings of James I. against, for conduct in parliament, 397, 398, and *note*; not of the council could not sit in the star chamber, 484, *note*.
Peerage of England, probably supported the commons against the crown, i. 59.
Peerages, several conferred on old Irish families, ii. 722.
Peerage bill, ii. 590; its particulars, 591.
Pelhams, the, resign their offices, and oblige George II. to give up lord Granville, ii. 648.
Pembroke, William Herbert, earl of, peers' proxies held by, 409, *note* *.
Pembroke, Philip Herbert, earl of, sits in the house of commons, ii. 90.
Pemberton, chief-justice, sir Francis, unfair in all trials relating to popery, ii. 295: his conduct on the trial of lord Russel, 328.
Penal statutes, power of the crown to dispense with, ii. 256; severity of the, 258.
Penal laws enforced against some unfortunate priests, ii. 312; against catholics in Ireland, 761.
Penruddock enters Salisbury, and seizes the judge and sheriff, ii. 106, and *note* ||.
Pensioners, during the pleasure of the crown, excluded from the commons, ii. 544.
Penry, John (Martin mar-prelate), tried and executed for libels against queen Elizabeth, &c., i. 221, and *note* *, 249.
Pepys, Samuel, his *Diary* cited concerning Lent, i. 431, *note*; extract from, concerning money expended by Charles II., ii. 221, *note* †.
Permanent military force, or standing army, its rise, ii. 611; national repugnance to it, ibid.; its number during the administration of sir Robert Walpole, 612. (See Army, and Standing Army).
Perrott, sir John, his justice in the government of Ireland, ii. 730; falls a sacrifice to court intrigue, 731.
Persecution, religious, greater under Charles II. than during the commonwealth, ii. 216; of non-conforming ministers under various penal laws, 552.
Persons, father, his book on the succession to the English crown, i. 307, *note*; his *Leicester's Commonwealth*, 308, *note*.
Petition of right, its nature and proceedings in, i. 420—425, and *notes*, 455.
Petition and advice, particulars of the, ii. 115; impowers Cromwell to appoint a successor, 123.
Petitions, law relating to, ii. 190; for the meeting of parliament checked by a proclamation of Charles II., drawn up by chief justice North, 310; interfering with the prerogative repugnant to the ancient principles of our monarchy, ibid.
Petre, father, with a few catholics, takes the management of affairs under James II., ii. 410, and *note* †; James II.'s intention of conferring the archbishopric of York on, 422, and *note* †.
Petty, sir William, his account of the lands forfeited and restored in Ireland, ii. 757, *note* †.
Philip II., king of Spain, his temptation to the English to dethrone Elizabeth, i. 308, and *note*.
Philopater, Andreas (Persons), his account of the confederacy against Cecil, i. 138, *note* *; justifies deposing a heretic sovereign, 158, *note*.
Pickering, lord-keeper, his message to the house of commons, i. 279.
Pierrepoint, Henry, lord, hopes to settle the nation under Richard Cromwell, ii. 124; his aversion to the recall of Charles II., 148.
Pitt, William, earl of Chatham, the inconsistency of his political conduct, ii. 687.
Pius IV., pope, his embassy to Elizabeth, i. 123; moderation of his government, ibid.; falsely accused of sanctioning the murder of Elizabeth, 124, *note* *.
Pius V., pope, his bull deposing Elizabeth, i. 144; most injurious to its own party, 147; his bull explained by Gregory XIII., 158.
Place bill of 1743, ii. 617, and *note* †.
Plague in 1665, ii. 242.
Plan for setting aside Mary, princess of Orange, at the period of the revolution, ii. 414, and *note*.
Plantagenets, state of the kingdom under the, i. 5, 8; privileges of the nation under the, 5; violence used by their officers of the crown, ibid.; inconsiderable privileges of the peers under the, ibid.; of the gentry, ibid.; yeomanry, ibid.; their courts of law, 7; constitution of England under the, 306—561.
Plantagenet dynasty, its conduct with regard to the government of Ireland, ii. 718.
Plays and Interludes satirizing the clergy, i. 90.
Pleadings, their nature and process explained, i. 6. *note*.
Plunket, titular archbishop of Dublin, executed, ii. 321, and *note* *, 322; sacrificed to the wicked policy of the court, ibid.
Pluralities, the greatest abuse of the church, i. 205, and *note*; bill for restraining, 227.
Pole, cardinal Reginald, actively employed by the pope in fomenting rebellion in England, i. 31; procures the pope's confirmation of grants of abbey lands, 112; conspiracy of his nephew against queen Elizabeth, 124, *note* *.
Polity of England at the accession of Henry VII., i. 2.

Political writings, their influence, ii. 651.
Poor, erroneously supposed to have been supported by alms of monasteries, i. 86; statutes for their provision, ibid. and *note*.
Pope, his authority in England how taken away, i. 68, 72; his right of deposing sovereigns, 158.
Popery preferred by the higher ranks in England, i. 111; becomes disliked under queen Mary, 113.
Popish plot, great national delusion of the, ii. 290; nearly the whole people of England misled by the, ibid.
Popular party, in the reign of Charles II., its connexion with France, ii. 267.
Population, state of under the Plantagenets, i. 8, and *note*.
Portland, William Bentinck, earl of, receives large grants from William III., ii. 489.
Pound, Mr., sentenced by the star-chamber, i. 488, *note* ‡.
Power, despotic, no statutes so effectual against as the vigilance of the people, ii. 651.
Poyning's Law, or Statute of Drogheda, ii. 719; its provisions, 720; its most momentous article, ib.; bill for suspending, 732; attempts to procure its repeal, 766.
Predestination, canon law against, under Edward VI., i. 110, *note*; dispute on, 432—436, and *notes*.
Prerogative, confined nature of the royal, i. 4; strengthened by Henry VII., 11; usual recovery of on the dissolution of parliament, 453; of a catholic king, act for limiting the, ii. 304; of the kings of England in granting dispensations, 405.
Prejudices against the house of Hanover, ii. 609.
Presbyterians, their government, attempt to set up, i. 223, 224; erroneous use of Scripture in, 231, 232; averse to an unconditional restoration, ii. 148; consider the treaty of Newport as proper basis for the settlement of the kingdom, ib.; deceived by the king, 196; remarks on Charles II.'s conduct to, 204; implore his dispensation for their nonconformity, 208.
Presbyterian party, supported by the city of London, ii. 54; regain their ascendancy, 70; ministry solicit a revision of the liturgy, 181; clergy of Scotland, their power and attempts at independence, 671; restrained by James VI., 672; intermeddle again with public affairs, 673; church, its obstinacy, 690.
Presbyterian discipline of the Scottish church restored, ii. 677.
Pretender, the (James Stuart), has friends in the tory government, ii. 576, and *note* *; lands in Scotland, 584; and meets with great success, ib.; invades England, ib.; the Scots eager for the restoration of, 573; the king of Sweden leagues with, for his restoration, 593, and *note* †; his emissaries perpetually alert, 605; becomes master of Scotland, and advances to the centre of England, 606; rebellion of 1745 conclusive against the possibility of his restoration, ib. and *note* *; deserted by his own party, ib. 607; insulted by France, ib.; acknowledged king of England by France, and attainted of high treason by parliament, ii. 546.
Presence, the real, zeal of Henry VIII. in defending, i. 87; principal theories concerning the, 96, 97, 98; only two doctrines in reality, 97, *note*; believed in England in the 17th century, 520, and *note* *.
Press, liberty of the, ii. 516.
Priests, antiquity and evils of their celibacy, i. 99, and *note* *; catholic, resigned or deprived under Elizabeth, i. 119; pensions granted to, ib. *note* †; Romish, persecution for harbouring and supporting, 129; the most essential part of the Romish ritual, 130; secret travels and deceitful labours of, ib.; unite with sectarians, ib., 131; ordered to depart from England, unless they acknowledged the queen's allegiance, 179.
Priests and jesuits, intrigues of, against Elizabeth, i. 147; statute against, ib., 148.
Priests, popish seminary, executed under Elizabeth, i. 156; lord Burleigh's justification of their persecution, 161; ordered to quit the kingdom, 165.
Priests, Romish, in Ireland engage in a conspiracy with the court of Spain, ii. 735; ordered to quit Ireland by proclamation, 736.
Prince of Wales (son of James II.), suspicions attending the birth of, unfounded, ii. 423, and *notes* † ‡.
Principles of toleration fully established, ii. 603.
Printing and bookselling regulated by proclamations, i. 255, 256, and *notes*.
Printing, bill for the regulation of, ii. 343.
Priors, pensions given to, on their suppression, i. 78, *note* *.
Prisoners of war made amenable to the laws of England, i. 172.
Privilege, breach of, of parliament, ii. 620; members of the house committed for, ib.; the punishment of, extended to strangers, 621; never so frequent as in the reign of William III., 622; in the case of trespass on a fishery, the house of commons determined none had been committed, 623.
Privilege of parliament discussed, ii. 368; not controllable by courts of law, 627; important, the power of committing all who disobey its orders to attend as witnesses, 630; danger of stretching it too far, 637, and *note*; uncontrollable, draws with it un-

limited power of punishment, 640, and *notes* * †.
Privy-council, illegal jurisdiction exercised by the, i. 51; the principal grievance under the Tudors, ib.; its probable connexion with the court of star chamber, 57; authority of the, over parliament, 58, 59; illegal commitments of the, under Elizabeth, 252; power of its proclamations considered, 254—257; its power of imprisoning, 415, 418, and *note* *; commission for enabling it to interfere with courts of justice, 461, *note* ‡; without power to tax the realm, 473; of Ireland, filled with catholics by James II., ii. 759.
Privy-seal, letter of, for borrowing money, i. 263, and *note* †.
Proceedings against Shaftesbury and College, ii. 318, and *note* †.
Proclamation of Henry VII. controlling the subject's right of doing all things not unlawful, i. 5; of the sovereign in council, authority attached to, 254; unwarranted power of some of those under Elizabeth, ibid., 255—257; of martial law, against libels, &c., 259; of James I. for conformity, 320; for summoning his first parliament, 322, 323; house of commons, complaint against, 352—354; debate of judges, &c. on, 362, 363; illegality of, ibid. and *note*; issued under Charles I., 478, 479, and *notes* † **; illegal, in the reign of Charles II., not numerous, ii. 346.
Projects of lord William Russel and colonel Sidney, ii. 326.
Prophesyings, religious exercises so called, i. 211; suppression of, 212; tolerated by some prelates, ibid.
Propositions, the nineteen, offered to Charles I. at York, i. 600, and *note* †.
Protestants, origin of the name of, i. 103, *note* *; number of, executed under queen Mary, 114, *note* *; increased by her persecution, 115; never approved of religious persecution, 131; origin of the differences between, 184; emigration of, to Germany, ibid.; dislike of, to the English liturgy and ceremonies, 188, and *note* †; proportion of, in England, under Elizabeth, 169, *note* †; favour Arabella Stuart's claim on the crown, 309, *note*; church, established by Elizabeth, ii 726; many of the wealthier families in Ireland conform to the, 764; dissenters, bill to relieve, lost off the table of the house of lords, 522; faith, league of the catholic princes against the, i. 146, and *note* †; succession in danger, ii. 579, and *note* *; or new nation of Ireland, 766; Ireland, three distinct people or nations in, viz. the original natives, the Anglo-Irish, and the new English, 765.
Protestantism, slow progress of, in the north of England, i. 100; dissolution of the monasteries essential to its establishment, 79; strengthened by the distribution of their revenues, &c, 84.
Protestation of the house of commons against adjournment in 1621, i. 392; on the privileges of parliament, 396.
Prynne, William, prosecution of, by the star chamber, i. 492, and *note* ‡, 493, and *note* *, 505.
Pulteney, Mr, his remark on the standing army, ii. 613.
Purgatory, doctrine of, abolished by the reformers, i. 93; defence and opposition of, 94, *note*.
Puritans address Elizabeth against the queen of Scots, i. 149; laws of Elizabeth respecting, i. chap. IV. 183—245; rapid increase of under Elizabeth, 192; begin to form conventicles, 195; advised not to separate, ib. and *note* †; first instance of their prosecution, 196; supporters and opposers of, in the church and state, ib.; their opposition to civil authority in the church, i. 201; their own assumption of power, ib. *note* ‡, 202; not all opposed to the royal supremacy, 203, and *note* †; predominance of under Elizabeth, 204, and *note*; prosecuted by the prelates, i. 208, 217; partly supported by the privy council, 209; tolerated to preserve the protestant religion, 210, 211; deprived by abp. Whitgift, 214, and *note* ‡; lord Burleigh favourable to, 217, 218; libels published by, 220, 221, and *notes*; their church-government set up, 222; dangerous extent of their doctrines, 223, 224; their sentiments on civil government, ib.; severe statute against, 229; state of their controversy with the church under Elizabeth, ib., *note* †; names of sects of, 229, 230; object to the title of bishops, 240, *note* *; Elizabeth's reported offer to, 242, *note* ‡; civil liberty preserved by the, 248; their expectations on the accession of James I., 319, *note* ‡; summoned to a conference at Hampton-court, 320, and *notes* * †; alarmed at the king's proceedings, 326; ministers of the, deprived by abp. Bancroft, 426, and *note*; character of the, 427; difference with the sabbatarians, 429, 430; doctrinal puritans, 435, *note* ‡.
Purveyance, abuses of, i. 327; proceedings of parliament against, 328, 332.
Pyrenees, treaty of the, ii. 137.

Q.

Quartering of soldiers, compulsory, treason of, i. 568.

R.

Raleigh, sir Walter, instances of his flattery of monarchy, i. 298, 299, *note*; his execution, character, and probable guilt considered, 381, and *note* *, 382, and *note* *; his first success in the Munster colonies, ii. 739.

Reading, a Romish attorney, trial of, ii. 293.

Real presence denied in the articles of the church of England, i. 98.

Rebellion, northern, excited by the harsh innovations of Henry VIII.; appeased by conciliatory measures, but made a pretext for several executions of persons of rank, i. 30; in Ireland, in 1641, the grievances which led to it, ii. 742, and *note* *; primary causes of the, in 1641, 751; success of the insurgents in the, 753; of 1690, forfeitures on account of the, diminished by restitutions to the ancient possessors, 761; the remainder lavishly distributed to English grantees, ibid.

Recovery, common, for cutting off the entail of estates, its origin and establishment, i. 13.

Recusancy, persecutions for, under Elizabeth, i. 128; heavy penalties on, under Elizabeth, 155; annual fines paid for, 166, *note* *.

Recusants, severity against, productive of hypocrites, i. 164; annual fines paid by, 166, *note* *; statute restraining their residence, 175; penalties upon, under James I., 438, *note* *, 439, 441, *note* †.

Reed, alderman Richard, his treatment for refusing to contribute to the benevolence in 1545, i. 27.

Reeves, John, his History of English Law, character of, i. 14, *note* *.

Reformation of the church gradually prepared and effected, i. 61; disposition of the people for a, 73, 74; uncertain advance of the, after the separation from Rome, and dissolution of monasteries, 87; spread of, in England, 88; promoted by translating the scriptures, 90; principal innovations of the, in the church of England, 92–102; chiefly in towns and eastern counties of England, 100; German troops brought over at the time of, ibid., and *note* †; measures of, under Edward VI., too zealously conducted, 101; toleration not considered practicable in the, 103; in Germany, caused by vices of the superior ecclesiastics, 107; its actual progress under Edward VI., 111.

Reformatio Legum Ecclesiasticum, account of the compilation and canons of, i. 109, *note* *.

Reformers, their predilection for satirical libels, i. 220; of Scotland, their extreme moderation, ii. 669, and *note* †; for the Mosaical polity, 223, *note* ‡.

Refugees, popish, their exertions against Elizabeth, i. 147, 154, 155.

Regalities of Scotland, their power, ii. 665.

Regicides, execution of the, ii. 168; some saved from capital punishment, 186.

Religion, reformation of, gradually prepared and effected, i. 61; state of, in England, at the beginning of the sixteenth century, ibid.; different restraints of governments on, 180, 181; Roman catholic, abolished in Scotland, ii. 666.

Religious toleration, ii. 520; its state before the revolution, ibid.

Remonstrance on the state of the kingdom under Charles I., i. 583—585, and *notes*.

Republican party, first decisive proof of a, ii. 75; composed of two parties, levellers and anabaptists, 95; no, in the reign of William III., 467, and *note* *, 468; form of government ill suited to the English in 1659, and remarks on the same, 132.

Reresby, sir John, his conversation with Lord Halifax, ii. 315, and *note* *.

Restitution of crown and church lands, ii. 169.

Restoration of Charles II., remarks on the unconditional, ii. 152; popular joy at the, 163; chiefly owing to the presbyterians, 185.

Revenue, settlement of the, ii. 461; surplus in Ireland, dispute between the commons and the government concerning its appropriation, 770.

Revolution in 1688, its true basis, ii. 408; its justice and necessity, 429; argument against it, 430; favourable circumstances attending the, 434; its particulars and character, 435; its peculiar feature, ibid.; salutary consequences resulting from the, 437; laws not so much altered as the dispositions of the people, ibid.; its great advantage, 439; its temperate accomplishment, 453; in Scotland, and establishment of presbytery, 687.

Reynolds, Dr., at the Hampton Court conference, i. 320, *note* †.

Richard II., statute of, restraining the papal authority, i. 69; supply raised under, 473; his invasion of Ireland, ii. 717.

Richard III., first passed the statute of fines, i. 12.
Richelieu, cardinal, Armand du Plessis, his intrigues against England, i. 467, *note* §, 468.
Richmond, Charles Stuart, duke of, his marriage with miss Stewart, ii. 226.
Richmond-park extended, i. 463, *note*.
Ridley, Nicholas, bishop of London, liberality of, to the princess Mary, i. 103; assists in remodelling the English church, 105, and *note* *; firmness of, in the cause of Lady Jane Grey, 107; moderation in the measures of reform, ibid.
Right of the commons as to money bills, ii. 369.
Robbers and murderers deprived of the benefit of clergy, i. 62.
Rochester, Laur. Hyde, lord, his dismissal, ii. 410, and *note* *; creates great alarm, 411.
Rockingham Forest increased, i. 463.
Rockisane, archbishop of Prague, his reply to cardinal Carjaval at the council of Basle, i. 207, *note* †.
Rockwood, ——, persecution of, for popery, i. 153, *note*.
Roman catholic prelates of Scotland, including the regulars, allowed two thirds of their revenues, ii. 669.
Rome, accounts sent from, to England, i. 516, 517.
Romish priests' address to the king, to send them out of the kingdom, ii. 210, and *note* ‡; their policy, 252; superstition, general abhorrence of the, 400.
Root and branch party, i. 578.
Ross, Thomas, executed for publishing at Oxford a blasphemous libel, ii. 680.
Royal families of Ireland, O'Neal, O'Connor, O'Brian, O'Malachlion, and M'Murrough, protected by the English law, ii. 710.
Royal power, its constitutional boundaries well established, ii. 341.
Royalists, decimation of the, by Cromwell, ii. 107, and *note* *, 108; re-enter on their lands, 170; discontent of the, 171, and *note* †.
Rump, the, parliament, commonly called, ii. 78, and *note* ‡; fanatical hatred of, to the king, 79.
Rupert, prince, Bristol taken by, ii 12; and Newcastle defeated at Marston Moor, 20; consequences of the same, ib.
Rat, the first political, 29, *note* ‡.
Russel, lord William, sincerely patriotic in his clandestine intercourse with France, ii. 270, and *note* *; and the earl of Essex concert measures for a resistance to the government, 326; they recede from the councils of Shaftesbury, ib.; evidence on his trial not sufficient to justify his conviction, 327, and *note* *; lord John, extract from his life of lord William Russel, 274, and *note* †.
Russel, admiral, engaged in intrigues, ii. 472; his conduct at the battle of La Hogue, 473; his quarrel with the board of admiralty, ib.; parliamentary inquiry into their dispute, 492.
Rye-house plot, ii. 326, *note* †.
Ryswick, treaty of, ii. 485; particulars relating to, ib.

S.

Sabbatarians, origin and tenets of, i. 429, and *note* ‡.
Salisbury, countess of, her execution, causes of, i. 31; not heard in her defence, 32, *note* *.
Salisbury, William Cecil, earl of, his forest amerciament, i. 463; Robert Cecil, earl of, extenuates the wrongs imputed to Spain, 338; his scheme for procuring an annual revenue from the commons, 351—355; his death and character, 358—360, and *notes*.
Sampson, ——, his remonstrance against the papists, i. 151.
Sancroft, Thomas, archbishop of Canterbury, his scheme of comprehension, ii. 522.
Sandys, sir Edwin, his commitment to the Tower, i. 391—395, and *note* †, 393—401.
Savoy, conference at the, in 1661, ii. 197; animosity between the parties, 198; conduct of the churchmen not justifiable, ib. and *note* *; only productive of a more exasperated disunion, 199; general remarks on, ib.
Sawyer, sir Robert, expelled from the house of commons, ii. 459, and *note* †.
Scambler, Edmund, bishop of Norwich, his character, i. 241.
Scandinavia, colonists from, settle on the coasts of Ireland, ii. 700.
Schemes for raising the dukes of York or Gloucester to the throne, ii. 76; of Shaftesbury and Monmouth, 301, and *note* *.
Scheme of comprehension and indulgence, ii. 238; of no effect, 525; observations on the, ibid.
Schism in the constitutional party under Charles I., i. 582, 583, and *notes*; of the nonjurors, ii. 526.
Schools, free, in Ireland, act passed in the reign of Elizabeth for erecting, ii. 735, and *note* *.
Scotland, uncertain succession of the English crown in the royal family of, i. 132—248;

its claims not favoured, 138; puritanical church government established in, 224; union with England brought forward, 332—335, and *notes*; troubles commenced in, 543, 544, and *note* *, 551, 552, 553, and *note* †; its early state, ii. 658; wholly Celtic before the twelfth century, ib.; crown of, strictly hereditary, ib.; origin of its aristocracy, ib.; its want of records, ib.; privy council of, abolished, 555, and *note*; character of its history from the reformation, 668; could not remain indifferent during the civil war in England, 681; establishment of episcopacy in, 675; church of, still preserves the forms of the sixteenth century, 696; its wealth, 667; practice observed in summoning the national assembly of the, 690, *note* *; assemblies of the, judicious admixture of laymen in, ibid; episcopal and presbyterian, chief controversy between, 689; crown of, tendered to William and Mary, 688; papists excluded from the, ibid.

Scots, the, conclude a treaty with Charles I., 68; invasion of England by the, ibid.; its unfortunate issue, ibid.; conduct of, to Charles II., 49, and *note*; conspiracy of, with the prince of Orange, ii. 687.

Scots presbyterians sincerely attached to king Charles, ii. 57, and *note* *; army, excesses committed by, 32.

Scot and lot boroughs, very opposite species of franchise in, ii. 387, and *notes* * †.

Scripture, English translations of, proscribed, i. 89; permitted to be read, and prohibited, ibid., and *note*; effect of their general use, 90.

Scroggs, chief-justice, impeached for treason, ii. 317.

Seal, great, lord-keeper Lyttleton carries it to the king, ii. 13; new one ordered to be made by the parliament, ibid.

Seats in parliament, sale of, ii. 656.

Secret corruption, ii. 618; service money, annually expended to a large amount, ibid.; service money disposed of to corrupt the parliament, 540, and *note* *.

Secret treaty of 1670, ii. 246; anecdotes and particulars relating to, ibid., and *notes* † ||; differences between Charles and Louis, as to the mode of its execution, 248; concluded at Dover, ibid., and *note* *; negotiation of, broken off through the apprehensions of Hyde and Sunderland, 310.

Secret historical documents brought to light by Macpherson and Dalrymple, ii. 470.

Sectaries, persecution or toleration the only means of dealing with, i. 219.

Selden, John, summoned before the star chamber, i. 377.

Septs of the north of Ireland, liberty enjoyed by, ii. 709; of Munster and Leinster, their oppression, ibid.; offers made by some for permission to live under the English law, 711.

Serjeant of the house of commons, authority of the, i. 289, 296.

Settlement, act of, work of the whig party, ii. 436; rights of the reigning monarch emanate from the parliament and people, by the, 439.

Settlement of the revenue, ii. 172.

Session, court of, of Scotland, its origin and judicature, ii. 666.

Seymour, lord, of Sudely, courts the favour of the young king, Edward VI., i. 42; entertains a hope of marrying princess Elizabeth, ib.; accused of treason, and not heard in his defence, ibid.; warrant for his execution signed by his brother, ibid.

Seymour, William, marquis of Hertford, married to lady Arabella Stuart, i. 378, 379.

Seymour, sir Francis, refusal to pay ship-money, i. 545, and *note* ||.

Shaftesbury, Anthony, third earl of, declaration of indulgence projected by, ii. 255; desperate counsels of, 326; fall of, and his party, 260; bad principles of, 301; committed to the Tower with three other peers, by the lords, for calling in question the legal continuance of parliament, after a prorogation of 12 months, 634.

Shaftesbury and College, impeachment of, ii. 318, and *note* †.

Sharp, James, archbishop of St Andrew's, an infamous apostate and persecutor, ii. 684; violates his promise, ibid.

Sheffield, sir Robert, confined in the Tower for his complaint against Wolsey, i. 57, and *note* *.

Shepherd, Mr., expelled the house of commons, i. 432.

Sherfield, ——, recorder of Salisbury, star chamber prosecution of, i. 523, *note*.

Shelley, sir Richard, reluctantly permitted to enjoy his religion, i. 152.

Sherlock, Dr., his work entitled *Case of Resistance to the Supreme Powers*, ii. 334, and *note* *; his inconsistency, 454, *note* *.

Shirley, sir Thomas, parliamentary proceedings on his arrest, i. 325, 326.

Shirley, Dr., and sir John Fagg, case between, ii. 367.

Ship-money, the king's proposal of resigning for a supply, i. 549, 550, *note*; declared illegal, 557; its origin and imposition, 464, 465; remonstrances against paying, 465, and *note*; extended to the whole kingdom, 468; payment of, 469—545, and *notes* § ||;

trials concerning, 470—478, and *notes*; average amount of, 478.
Shower, infamous address of the barristers of the Middle Temple under the direction of, ii. 418.
Shrewsbury, duke of, engaged in intrigues, ii. 472; his correspondence, 473; his letter to king William after Fanwick's accusation of him, 473, and *note*.
Shrewsbury, lady, fine and imprisonment of, i. 379.
Sibthorp, ——, his assertion of kingly power, i. 450, 451.
Sidney, sir Philip, writes a remonstrance against Elizabeth's match with the duke of Anjou, i. 250.
Sidney, Algernon, receives pecuniary gratifications from France, ii. 272; was a distressed man, 274; his dislike to the prince of Orange, ibid.; his conviction illegally obtained, 329, and *note* †; observations on his character and conduct, 330.
Sidney, sir Henry, his representation to queen Elizabeth of the wretched condition of the Irish, ii. 729, and *note* ‡; his second government of Ireland, 732; excites resistance by an attempt to subvert the liberties of the pale, ibid.; particulars relating to it, 733; his disappointment at the want of firmness in queen Elizabeth, 734, *note* *; account of the protestant church in Ireland, 735, *note* *.
Silenced preachers set at liberty, i. 153, *note*.
Six articles, law of, on the celibacy of priests, i. 99.
Skinner, Thomas, case of, against the East India Company, ii. 363; committed by the commons for breach of privilege, 365.
Smalley, ——, his case of arrest, i. 290.
Smith, sir Thomas, his Treatise on the Commonwealth of England, cited concerning the star chamber, i. 52; his account of causes belonging to the court of star chamber, 58; his remark on the constitution of England, 303, 304; his natural son sent with a body of English to settle in Ireland, ii. 738.
Spain, design of transferring England to the yoke of, i. 49; dislike of the English to, under queen Mary, 113; royal family of, pretended title to the English crown, 309; king James's partiality for, 337, and *notes*; connexion with England under James I., 358, 359; his unhappy predilection for, 382, *note* ‡, 383, and *note* *; treaty of royal marriage with, 393, 394, 398, 399, 424, and *note* *, 443, 444; policy of Charles I. with, 466, 467, and *notes* † §, 468; decline of the power of, after the treaty of the Pyrenees, ii. 239.
Speaker of the house of commons, power of, concerning bills, i. 283, *note*.
Speed, John, his valuation of the suppressed monasteries, i. 82, *note*.
Speech, freedom of, in parliament, i. 456, 459.
Spenser, Edmund, his *Account of Ireland*, ii. 730, *note* †, the first three books of his Fairy Queen, where written, 739; *his Account of the State of Ireland*, ibid.
Spies, should be heard with suspicion in cases of treason, ii. 514.
Spire, protestation of, by the Lutheran princes against mass, i. 103, *note* †.
Sports, declaration of, by James I., 430, 431, 512, 513, and *note* *, 514.
Sprot, a notary, executed in Scotland for concealing letters, ii. 680.
Supplies, estimates for the, origin of, ii. 220.
Soap, chartered company for making, i. 463, 464.
Somerset, Edward Seymour, duke of, obtains a patent constituting him protector, discovers a rival in his brother lord Seymour, signs his warrant for execution, i. 41; deprived of his authority, 42; accused of a conspiracy to murder some of the privy counsellors, ibid.; evidence not insufficient, 43; inclined to the reformation, and powerful in the council, 91; his destruction of churches to erect his palace, 102; designed the demolition of Westminster abbey, 102; his liberality to the princess Mary, 103, *note* ‡.
Somerset, Robert Carr, earl of, his guilt of the murder of Overbury examined, i. 379, 380, and *note*.
Somers, lord chancellor, puts the great seal to blank powers, ii. 495, and *notes* * †.
Somers, Halifax, Wharton, Oxford, and Sunderland, kept out of administration by the dislike of queen Anne, ii. 561.
Somerville, executed for a plot against Elizabeth, i. 166.
Southampton, Thomas Wriothesley, earl of, his estate in the New Forest seized, i. 463; his opposition to the statute against nonconformists, ii. 213; real minister of the crown under Elizabeth, 224, and *note* *.
Sovereigns, their inviolability to criminal process examined, 172, 173; their power weakened by the distinction of party, 647.
Southey, Robert, his remark concerning the real presence in the articles of the church of England, i. 98, *note*; his assertion on persecution and toleration in the church of England, 131, *note* †.

Stafford, William Howard, lord, convicted of the popish plot, ii. 295, and *note* ‡.
Standing army, its rise, ii. 611; national repugnance to, ibid.; its numbers during Walpole's administration, 612; without consent of parliament declared illegal, 452, and *note* *.
Standish, Dr. ———, denies the divine privileges of the clergy, i. 62, 63; censured in the journal of Henry VIII., 63, *note*.
St. Bartholomew, day of, 2000 persons resign their preferments, ii. 203.
St. Germains, court of, preserve a secret connexion with Godolphin and Marlborough, ii. 572.
St. John, Oliver, declines to contribute to the benevolences, i. 369; his statement of means for defence of the realm, 471; of the royal prerogative, 474.
St. John's college, Cambridge, non-conformists of, in 1565, i. 199, *note*.
St. Paul's cathedral, proposed improvement of, i. 481.
St. Philipe, remarkable passage in his memoirs, ii. 564, *note* *.
Star chamber, court of, the same as the ancient *Consilium Regis*, or *Ordinarium*, i. 54, *note*; account of the powers of, 55; augmented by Cardinal Wolsey, 56; original limitation and judges of the, 57, and *note* †; causes within the cognizance of the, 58; its arbitrary and illegal powers, ibid.; not the court erected by Henry VII. ibid., *note* †; examination of papists in the, 129; security of the, 247; power of, 251; instances of its extended authority, 376, 377; informations in the, 480, 481; against London, 482; under Charles I., 483; jurisdiction of the, 484, 485; dispute with the king's bench, ibid. *note*; peers not of the council have no seat in the, ibid.; caution of, in cases of inheritance, 485; offences belonging to, 486; mode of process in the, 487; punishments inflicted by the, 488, and *notes*; fines of the, 489; fines and sentences of the, 489—493; corrupt and partial, 492, *note* ‡; act for abolishing, 558, and *note*, 559; attempt to revive the, ii. 194; report of committee of the lords concerning the, ibid.
State, council of, consist of forty-one members, ii. 90; test proposed to the, to which only nineteen subscribed, ibid.
Stationers, company of, power given to, over printers and booksellers, i. 257.
Statute of 11th Henry VII. protecting persons in the king's service, i. 10; extraordinary, giving to Henry VIII. all moneys paid by way of loan, &c. 25; similar act releasing to him all moneys he had subsequently borrowed, ibid.; 11th Henry VII. for payment of arrears of benevolences, 15, *note*; of 34th Henry VIII. for court of council of Wales, 354, *note*; of Winchester, for defence of the nation, 595; of the 15th of Edward II. recognizing the existence of the present constitution of parliament, 4; of the 11th of Henry VII. concerning the duty of allegiance, 10; of Edward I. *de donis conditionalibus*, 12; of fines enacted by Henry VII., merely a transcript from one of Richard III., 12; object of this enactment, ibid.; revived under Henry VII., and their penalties enforced, 16; of 1st Henry VIII. for amendment of escheats, 17, 18; of 11th Henry VII. giving power to justices of the peace, 18; of 28th Henry VIII. relating to treason, their servility and severity, 36; for the exclusion of princess Mary from the succession in 1634, 30; of Henry VII. concerning the court of star chamber, 57, 58, and *notes*; of Henry VI. for compelling clerks to plead their privilege, 62; of 4th Henry VII. for branding clerks convicted of felony, ibid.; of Richard II. restraining the papal jurisdiction, 69; of Henry VIII., taking away appeals to Rome, 71; of ditto on the consecration of bishops, ibid.; of mortmain of Edward I. and III. 74; of 27th Henry VIII. censures the vices of monasteries, 77, *note* †; of 27th Henry VIII., 1st Edward VI., 14th Elizabeth, for support of the poor, 86, and *note*; of 34th Henry VIII. against the sale and reading of Tindal's bible, 89, *note*; of 2d, 3d, and 6th of Edward VI. on the celibacy of priests, 99; of 2d Edward VI. against irreverently speaking of the sacrament, 101; for abolishing chantries, ibid. 102, *note* *; of 2d and 3d Edward VI. against hearing mass, 103; of 25th Henry VIII. against importation of foreign books, 88, *note* †; of supremacy and uniformity, 1st of Elizabeth, 120, 121; of 5th Elizabeth against fantastical prophecies, 123; for the assurance of the queen's power, 124; opposed by Mr. Atkinson and lord Montague, 124, 125; arguments for it, 125, *note* 126; of 8th of Elizabeth on behalf of the bishops, ibid. and *note* ‡; of 28th and 35th Henry VIII. on the succession, 132; of 13th of Elizabeth on altering the succession, 138; 13th Elizabeth, against papists, 147, 148, and *note*, 160, *note*; of 23d do. against recusancy, 155; of 25th Edward III. against treason, 156; of Elizabeth commanding papists to depart the kingdom, 165; of 27th Elizabeth for her security, 169; of 33d Elizabeth re-

stricting their residence, 175; of 13th Elizabeth for subscribing church articles, 206; of 23d Elizabeth against seditious books of seminary priests, wrested against the puritan libels, 220, 249; of 35th Elizabeth for imprisoning non-conformists, 229; of 1st of Elizabeth, restraining the grant of ecclesiastical lands, 240; of 14th of Elizabeth on recusants, 262, *note* †; of *Confirmatio Cartarum* and *Magna Carta*, 339, 340; of 25th Edward III. against new customs, 343; of 34th Henry VIII. on making laws for Wales, 366; of 2d and 3d Edward VI. for preserving Lent, 249, *note* ‡; of 5th, 27th, and 35th of Elizabeth, for increase of the fishery, 430, *note;* of 1st and 3d Charles I. for observance of Sunday, 432, *note* †; of 1st Edward II. *De Militibus*, 462, *note* *; of 4th Edward III. for holding parliaments, 556, and *note;* of 16th Charles I. for abolishing court of star chamber, &c., 558, 559, and *notes;* for determining forests, restraining purveyance, amending the stannary courts, 560; for levying troops, 561; of 1st and 25th of Edward III., and 4th Henry IV., amending military service, 593; of 1st of James I. on furnishing soldiers, 596, *note* †; of leasing-making in Scotland, ii. 679; of Edward IV., constructive interpretation of, by chief justice Eyre, 616; English, question on their validity in Ireland, 767.

Stawell, a gentleman of Devonshire, refuses compliance to the speaker's warrant, ii. 314.

Steele, sir Richard, expelled the house of commons for writing a pamphlet reflecting on the ministry, ii. 629.

Stephens, rev. Mr., Justice Powell's observations in passing sentence on him for a libel on ministers, ii. 518, and *note* *.

Stewart, miss, her marriage with the duke of Richmond, ii. 226.

Storie, John, his committal by authority of parliament, i. 292, 293.

Stow, John, his library seized, i. 256.

Strangers, amenable to law wherever they dwell, i. 172.

Strafford, Thomas Wentworth, earl of, character of, i. 496, 497, and *note* †, 498. *Strafford Papers*, 497, *note* *; made president of the council of the north, 498; his arbitrary conduct, 499, and *note* †; lord lieutenant of Ireland, ibid.; two instances of his injustice, ibid., 500, and *notes;* his correspondence with abp. Laud, 500—506, 515, *note* †, 544 and *note* *; his sentiments and practice on ship-money, 506, 507; advice to Charles I. against war with Spain, 508, 509; his sentiments and use of parliaments, 509, 510; summary of his conduct, &c. 511, and *note;* hatred excited against him, 564, and *note;* his impeachment, ibid. 565, and *note;* its justice discussed, 566—573, and *notes;* his able government of Ireland, 745, 746, and *note* †; his speech to the commons, 747, *note*; procures six subsidies, 746; his arbitrary domination, ib.; his despotic conduct to private persons, ib

Strickland, Mr., his attack on the abuses of the church of England, i. 204, 205; taken from his seat in the house of commons, 272; restored to it, 273.

Strongbow, earl, his acquisitions in Ireland, ii. 706; his possessions divided among his five sisters, 709; statutes, Irish, account of the, 714.

Stubbe, his pamphlet against Elizabeth's marriage with the duke of Anjou, i. 249, 250.

Stuart, Arabella, her title to the English crown, i. 309, and *note*; her unhappy life and persecutions, 377—379, and *note* §.

Stuart, house of, want of legal title to the crown, i. 311, 315, *note* †, 316.

Stuart, Henry VII., Henry VIII., Elizabeth, and the four kings of the house of Stuart, master-movers of their own policy, ii. 646.

Stuart papers in the hands of his majesty, ii. 605, *note* †.

Subsidy, value of, examined, i. 400, *note* *.

Subsidies, grant of, in 1588, i. 280, 281; in 1593—1601, 284; popular aversion to, 14; less frequent in Scotland than in England, ii. 663.

Succession, difficulties in regard to the, created by Henry's two divorces, i. 36; princesses Mary and Eliz. nominated in the entail after the king's male issue, crown devised to the heirs of Mary, duchess of Suffolk, to the exclusion of the royal family of Scotland, 37; the sovereign's power of limiting, 311.

Suffolk, Frances Brandon, duchess of, emigrates on account of her religion, 112, *note* *.

Suffolk, family of Brandon, duke of, succession of the crown settled in, 132, 138, 308, 311; title of, nearly defeated by Elizabeth, 136, 137; descendants of, living at the death of Elizabeth, 311, 313, 315; present representatives of their claim, 316, *note* *.

Suffolk, Edmund de la Pole, earl of, conspires against Henry VII. attainted, flies to the Netherlands, given up by the archduke Philip on condition of safety; Henry VIII. causes him to be executed, i. 28, 29.

Suffolk, county of, assists in placing Mary on the throne, and suffers greatly from her persecution, i. 111, and *note* ‡.

Sully, duc de, wears mourning for Elizabeth at the court of James I., i. 319, *note* *.
Sunderland, Robert Spencer, earl of, early mention of his inclination to adopt the catholic religion, ii. 252; his intentions, 404, *note* *; enters into secret negotiation with the prince of Orange, 415; reproached for his conduct in the peerage bill, 591.
Sunday, differences on the observance of, i. 428, 429, and *note* †, 432; statutes for, 432, and *note* †.
Supply to the crown, ancient mode of, ii. 369; the commons are the granting and the lords the consenting power, 370; present practice of, 372.
Supplies, remarks on the appropriation of, ii. 463, 464.
Supremacy of the church given to Henry VIII., i. 69, 71; acknowledged by some of the puritans, 224; executions for denial of, 230, *note* †; difficulty of repealing the act of, under queen Mary, 112; restored to the crown under Elizabeth, 118, 119; character and power of the act of, 120; oath of, ibid., *note* *; penalty for refusing, 124; lord Burleigh's memorial on the oath of, 162, 163; act of, links the church with the temporal constitution, 183; the sovereign's rejected by Cartwright and the puritans, 200; commission for executing in 1583, 215; act of resistance of the Irish to it, ii. 724; oath of, catholics murmur at the, 736, and *note* †, ibid.; imposed on the commons by the 5th of Elizabeth, never adopted by the Irish parliament, 763; resolution of commons of Ireland to exclude those who would not take the oath of the, ibid.
Surrey, Thomas Howard, earl of, futile charges against, the crime of quartering the royal arms; ignominious behaviour of his father, i. 33.
Sussex, Henry Ratcliffe, earl of, writes to the burgesses of Yarmouth and others, requesting them to vote for the person he should name, i. 49.
Sussex, Thomas Ratcliffe, earl of, his letter concerning the imprisonment of Mary Stuart, i. 141.
Swift, Dr. Jonathan, employed by government to retaliate on libellers, ii. 518.

T.

Talbot, lord chancellor, bill to prevent smuggling strongly opposed by him, ii. 643; his arguments against it, ibid.
Tanistry, law of, defined, ii. 701, and *note* †; strong inducement of the native Irish to preserve the, 711; custom of, determined to be void, 737.
Tax upon property in the reign of Henry VIII., mode of its assessment, i. 20, *note* †; discontents excited by it, 21, and *note* *; opposed tumultuously, and finally abandoned, 22.
Taxation under Henry VII., mode of, i. 14; arbitrary under the two Henries, 27.
Taxations not attempted by Elizabeth, i. 262, and *note* †.
Taxation, arbitrary, restrained by the petition of right, i. 423, 474.
Taxes not to be levied in England without consent of parliament, i. 339—341; larger in amount in the reign of Charles II. than at any former period, ii. 216.
Temple, sir John, his relation of the number of protestants massacred in Ireland, ii. 752, *note* *; his History of the Irish Rebellion unjustly depreciated, 753, *note* *.
Temple, sir William, and lord Danby, urge the king to a decided line of policy, ii. 268, and *note* *, ibid.
Temple, sir William, new council formed by, ii. 308, and *note* *, 309.
Tenancy, from year to year, of very recent introduction, ii. 386.
Tenison, archbishop, extract from his speech on the union, ii. 696, *note* *.
Test act, ii. 259; dissenters give their support to the, ibid., and *notes* * †, ibid.; 297, and *note* ‡.
Testament, New, 1526, translated into English, and proscribed, i. 89.
Thompson, Richard, taken into custody for preaching virulent sermons at Bristol, ii. 314; impeachment of, upon strange charges, ibid.
Thorough, a phrase used by archbishop Laud and the earl of Strafford to express their system of government, i. 501, 502, 505, 506.
Thurloe, John, letter from, to Henry Cromwell, ii. 126, *note* *.
Tindal, William, his translations of the scriptures, i. 89, and *note*.
Tithes subsisted during the commonwealth, ii. 176.
Todd, reverend J. H., parallelisms drawn by him between the language of the Icon and Dr. Gauden's other works, ii. 775, and *note* *.
Toleration, ancient avowal of the principle of, i. 131, *note* †; religious, ii. 521; one of the great trophies of the revolution, 552; act, a measure of religious liberty, 523; particulars of the, ibid.; no part of the, extended to papists, or such as deny the trinity; infringements of, by statutes under Anne, 600; repealed by the whigs, 602; natural right of the Irish, 736.

Tom Tell-truth, a libel against James I, i. 399, *note* *.

Tonnage and poundage, granted to Henry VIII. by his first parliament; mistaken assertion of Hume and Lingard respecting it, i. 20, *note* *; the king's right to disputed, 424, 425; declaration in the act for, 557, and *note* ‡.

Topham, serjeant at arms, actions brought against him for false imprisonment, ii. 635.

Topcliffe, ——, his persecution of papists under Elizabeth, i. 151, *note* *; 153, *note*.

Torture, use of, denied by the judges, i. 460; instances of, in England, ibid. *note* †.

Tortures, used under the house of Tudor, i. 159, and *note* *; under Elizabeth, denied by Lord Burleigh, 161, 162.

Toryism, its real character, ii. 208; cardinal maxim of, 311.

Tory principles of the clergy, ii. 332; firmly adhere to the established religion, 393; party, their rage against the queen and lord Oxford for retaining whigs, 582, *note* *; ministry annoyed by the vivacity of the press, 652.

Tories, their inconsistency, ii. 554; ill-received at court, and excluded from office, 607.

Tower of London, historical associations connected with the, i. 159.

Towns, chartered, their jurisdiction, i. 8.

Tracts, political, extraordinary number published from the meeting of the long parliament, ii. 342.

Trade, foreign, proclamations of Elizabeth restricting, i. 255, 256; the king's prerogative of restraining, 344, *note* §; interruption to, causes the city to lower its tone, ii. 6; has the same effect upon the lords, ibid.; project for a council of, 493.

Transubstantiation, persecutions concerning, i. 87, 91, 95; metaphysical examination of, 96; modern Romish doctrine of, 98, *note*.

Treason, consideration of the law of, as applied to the papists under Elizabeth, i. 177, *note*; trials for, unjustly conducted under Elizabeth, 249; perversions of the law of, under James I., 370, and *note* †; law of, ii. 499; statute of Edward III., ib.: observations on it, 500; its constructive interpretation, 501; material omission in the, ibid.; various strained constructions of the, 506; statute of William III., 509; prosecutions for, under Charles II., disgraceful to government, ibid.; Scots law of, its severity and odium, 678.

Treasury, reduced state of the, in 1639, i. 543, 545, and *note* †.

Treaty begun at Oxford, ii. 5; pretended, signed with France, 249; secret, between Charles II. and Louis XIV., 275; of peace broken off, 563; renewed by the Tory government, 564.

Treaties of partition, two, ii. 494; impeachment of four lords on account of the, 495.

Treby, chief justice, his conduct in the case of Anderton, ii. 511.

Trial by jury, its ancient establishment, i. 6. *note*, 7.

Trials for treason, &c. unjustly conducted under Elizabeth, i. 249; of Russell and Sidney, 327.

Triennial bill, its constitution and privileges, i. 556, and *note*, 557; act, repeal of, ii. 191; particulars of the, ib.; and of the act for its repeal, 193; sessions of legislature, and other salutary reformations in Scotland, 677.

Triple alliance, public satisfaction at the, ii. 239.

Trinity, denial of the, or of the inspiration of any book of the Bible, made felony, ii. 34, *note* ‡.

Trust estates, view of the laws relating to, i. 371, 372.

Tudor, house of, difficulty experienced by, in raising supplies, i. 14; one of the most important constitutional provisions of, 43; strengthened by Mary, ibid.

Tudors, military levies under the, i. 594.

Tunstall, Cuthbert, bishop of Durham, liberally entertained by Parker, i. 126, *note* †.

Tutchin, John, law laid down by Holt in the case of, ii. 517.

Tyrconnel, earl of, charged with conspiracy, and attainted of treason, ii. 739; lord lieutenant of Ireland, in 1687; his secret overtures with the French agents, 759.

Tyrone, earl of, charged with conspiracy, ii. 739; and attainted of treason, ibid.

Tyrrel, Anthony, an informer against papists, i. 165, *note* †.

U.

Udal, ——, tried and imprisoned for a libel on the bishops, 221, and *note* †, 249.

Ulster, the most enlightened part of Ireland, ii. 739; the colonization of, first carried into effect by sir Arthur Chichester, in the reign of James I., ibid.; linen manufacture first established by Strafford, 748.

Undertakers, agents between the king and the parliament so called, i. 365, 367, 384, *note* †.

Uniformity, act of, passed under Elizabeth, i. 119, and *note* *; its character and extent, 120, 121; links the church with the temporal constitution, 183.

Union of the two crowns, sovereign and court withdraws from Scotland, ii. 693; commissioners appointed for a more perfect incorporation, ibid.; treaty of the 1st May, 1707, 694; articles of, confirmed by the parliament, ib.; considered by Scotsmen as unfavourable, 695; general observations on the same, 695, and *note* *.
Universities, foreign, bribed on the subject of Henry VIII.'s divorce, i. 66, *note*; difficulty of procuring the judgment of Oxford and Cambridge against the marriage, 72.
Usher, James, archbishop of Armagh, his scheme for a moderate episcopacy, i. 577, 579, *note*, †, model of church government, ii. 180, and *notes*, †, ibid.; scheme of church government not inconvenient or impracticable, 197.
Utrecht, treaty of, arguments for and against the, ii. 565; negotiations mismanaged, 571; advantages lost by the, ibid.; misconduct of lords Bolingbroke and Oxford in the management of it, ibid.
Uxbridge, negotiations at, ii. 24, *note* *; particulars and observations on the, 25; farther remarks on, 29; rupture of the, ibid.

V.

Vagabonds, act of state against, under Elizabeth, i. 261.
Vane, sir Henry, his message to the commons, 1640, i. 549, 550; and general Lambert, excepted from act of indemnity, ii. 186; injustice of his condemnation, 188, and *note*; execution and character, 189; his communication to the lords justices relating to the connexion between Spain and the disaffected Irish, 750, *note* †.
Vaughan, chief justice, his argument with regard to the power of juries, ii. 350.
Venner, insurrection of, in 1660, ii. 175.
Verdict, general, question of the right of juries to return a, discussed, ii. 350.
Vestments of priests, retained in England, i. 110; dislike of the German reformers to, ibid. 111.
Vintners' company, fined by the star chamber, i. 490.
Visitations of monasteries, character and truth of, i. 76.
Vote of parliament, to prevent the meeting of caballing officers, ii. 128, and *note* *; is obliged to dissolve the parliament, 129, and *note* *.
Vowell's Treatise on the Order of Parliament, extract from, ii. 388, *note* *.

W.

Walcot and others executed for scheme of assassination, ii. 332.
Waldegrave, sir Edward, and his lady, imprisoned for hearing mass, i. 122.
Wales, court of the council of, its jurisdiction, i. 354, and *note*; court and council abolished, 559, 560; right of election extended to, by Henry VIII.
Walker, sir Edward, his Historical Discourses taken at Naseby, and restored by Fairfax, ii. 772.
Walker, Dr., his testimony in favour of Dr. Gauden's claim unjustly censured, ii. 772.
Waller's plot, ii. 8; oath taken by both houses in consequence of, 9.
Wallingford-house, cabal of, ii. 128; form a coalition with the republicans, ibid.; oblige Richard Cromwell to dissolve his parliament, 129.
Walpole, sir Robert, reconciles the church to the royal family, ii. 602; remarks on his administration, 609; character of the opposition to him, 610; the successors of, do not carry reform to the extent they endeavoured, 617; and Pelham, condemn the excessive partiality of their masters for their native country, 650, and *note* *; their political conduct, ibid.; his prudent administration, 655.
Walsingham, sir Francis, deceived by Charles IX. i. 147; his advice against Mary, queen of Scots, 150; fidelity of his spies upon her, 168; his enmity to her, 171, and *note* †; his moderation and protection towards the puritans, 209, 210; his disinterested liberality, 240; his letter in defence of Elizabeth's government, 244, and *note* †.
Walton, Dr. Brian, ejected by the covenant, 17.
War with Holland, infamy of the, ii. 254, and *note* *, 255; between William III. and Louis XIV. its ill success, 481; its expenses, 482; of the succession, 562; its object, ibid.
Warham, William, archbishop of Canterbury, his letter to Wolsey, on the grants, &c. of 1525, i. 21, *note* *.
Wards, extraordinary liveries taken for, i. 16.
Warwick, Edward Plantagenet, earl of, his long captivity, attempt to escape with Perkin Warbeck, his trial for conspiracy, induced to confess himself guilty in the hope of pardon, his execution, and the probable motive

for it, i. 27; John Dudley, earl of, a concealed papist, 103, *note* ‡.
Warrant of committal, form and power of, debated, i. 414—418, and *note* *, 422, 423, 454.
Wenlock, the first charter for returning members to parliament, ii. 385.
Wentworth, Paul, his discussion of the church authority with archbishop Parker, i. 207; his bold motion on a command of Elizabeth, 270; Peter, his motion on the succession, 230; his bold defence of the privileges of parliament against Elizabeth, 275; examined concerning it, 276; questions of, on the privileges, &c. of parliament, 277; committed to the Tower, 278.
Westbury, borough of, fined for bribery, i. 288.
Westminster, ancient courts of law held at, i. 6; abbey, preserved from destruction in the reformation under Edward VI., 102; Hall, tumult in, on demand of a loan by Charles I., 412, and *note* †.
Westmoreland, Mildmay Fane, earl of, his forest amerciament, i. 463.
Whalley, abbey of, Dr. Whitaker's scheme for distributing its revenues, i. 85, *note*.
Whig and Tory, first heard of in the year 1679, ii. 307; their first meeting, 311; remarkable triumph of the, 441; necessity of accurately understanding their definition, 550; their distinctive principles, 551; changes effected in them by circumstances, 553.
Whiggism, genuine, one of the tests of, ii. 496.
Whig party, justified in their distrust of Charles II., ii. 276.
Whigs, their influence in the councils of William III., ii. 458; oppose a general amnesty, 459; never abandon the cause of public liberty, 555; bold measure of the, 580; come into power, 582.
Whiston, extract from his Memoirs, ii. 548, *note* *.
Whitaker, Dr. Thomas Dunham, his plan for the revenues of the abbey of Whalley, i. 85, *note*.
Whitbread, a jesuit, his trial, ii. 294.
White, John, bishop of Winchester, speaks against the protestants in his funeral sermon for queen Mary, i. 118, *note* *.
Whitelocke, sir James, cited before the star chamber, i. 377; Bulstrode, palliation of his father's pliancy, 455, *note*; curious anecdote recorded by, ii. 142.
Whitgift, John, archbishop of Canterbury, orders given to, concerning papists in Denbigh, i. 152; his allowance of torture, 159, *note* *; his answer to Cartwright, 213, and *note* †; rigour of his ecclesiastical government, ibid. 214, and *note* ‡, 215; *ex-officio* oath tendered by, 216; his intercession for Udal, 221; his censure of lawyers, 228, *note* *; his bigoted sway over the press, 257, *note*; his exclamation at Hampton court, ii. 675.
Wicliffe, John, effect of his doctrines in England, i. 61.
Wildman, major, unites the republicans and royalists against the power of Cromwell, ii. 106; col. Creed, and others, illegally imprisoned, 231.
Wilford, sir Thomas, Elizabeth's illegal commission of martial law to, i. 260.
Wilkins, bishop, opposes the act for suppressing conventicles, ii. 253.
William the conqueror, capacity of his descendants to the seventeenth century described, ii. 645.
William the lion, statutes ascribed to him, ii. 659.
William III. receives the crown jointly with his wife, ii. 446; discontent with his government, 453; his character and errors, 456; his government in danger, 457; his dissatisfaction, 465; his magnanimous and public-spirited ambition, 466; dissolves the convention parliament, 468; gives his confidence to the tories, ib. and *notes* * †, 469; scheme for his assassination, 476, and *note* *; his magnanimous conduct, 480; unjustly accused of neglecting the navy, 483, and *note* †; skill and discipline acquired by the troops under his command, 484; aware of the intentions of Louis XIV. on the Spanish dominions, 485; 700,000*l.* granted him during life, 487; leaves a sealed order to keep up the army, 488; obliged to reduce his army and send home his Dutch guards, ibid.; his great concern at this, ibid.; his conduct censurable with regard to the Irish forfeitures, 489, and *note* *; unpopularity of his administration, 494; his conduct with respect to the two treaties of partition, 495; his superiority over the greatest men of the age, 496; improvements in the English constitution under him, 497; his statute of treason, 509; reservedness of his disposition, 537; his talent for affairs, ibid.; hatred of the tories to, 526; has a party at Rome, ibid.; distinction of the cabinet from the privy council during his reign, 536; influences members of parliament by bribes, 540; his partiality to Bentinck and Keppel not consistent with the good sense and dignity of his character, 539; refuses to pass a bill for rendering the judges independent, 545;

truly his own minister, 646; never popular in Scotland, 691; the only consistent friend of toleration, 692, and *note* †.
Williams, ——, his prediction of king James's death, i. 370, *note* †; Dr. John, bishop of Lincoln; suspicion of corruption in, 421, *note* *; fined by the star chamber, 491; made lord keeper, 495; bishop, suspected of popish principles, 528, *note* †.
Wills, fees of the clergy on the probates of limited, i. 69.
Winchester, statutes of, on defence of the nation, i. 595.
Wines, duties imposed on their importation, i. 341, and *note* †, 342.
Wisbech castle, factions of the prisoners in, i. 178, *note*.
Withins, sir Francis, expelled the house of commons, ii. 313.
Woad, proclamation of Elizabeth prohibiting its culture, i. 255, and *note* *.
Wolsey, cardinal Thomas, his motion for a supply of 800,000*l.* to be raised by a tax on lands and goods, i. 18; opposed by the commons, 19; circumstantial account of this transaction, ibid. and *note* *; his arbitrary modes of raising money without the intervention of parliament, 20; letters to, concerning, 21, *note* *; obloquy incurred by these measures, 22; estimate of his character, 23; articles against him never intended to be proceeded upon by the king, 24, *note*; cause of the duke of Buckingham's execution, 29, and *note*; augments the court of star chamber, 56; rigid in restraining the turbulence of the nobility, &c., 57; Luther's attack on, 64, *note* †; a delegate of Clement VII. on Henry VIII.'s divorce, 65; increases the fees of the clergy on wills, 69, *note*; his reformation and suppression of the monastic orders, 75; did not persecute, but proscribed heretic writings, 88.
Wool, &c. ancient unjust tolls on, i. 340, and *note*, 341.
Wotton, sir Henry, his palliation of impositions, i. 366, *note* †.
Worcester, Henry Somerset, earl of, proxy for queen Elizabeth, as sponsor to the daughter of Charles IX., i. 134, *note* †; victory of, ii. 92; its consequences to the future power of Cromwell, ibid.
Wordsworth, Dr., his strange misapprehension of passages in the Icon Basilike, 774.
Wright, ——, his case of conscience and confinement, i. 155, *note* †.

Y.

Yelverton, Mr., his defence of the privileges of parliament, i. 272, 273.
Yeoman of the guard, establishment of the, 594; the only armed men receiving pay in time of peace.
Yeomanry of England, under the Plantagenets, described.
York, council of, summoned, i 552, and *note* †, 553, and *note* ‡.
York, James, duke of, protests against a clause in act of uniformity, ii. 203; suspected of being a catholic before the restoration, 207, and *note* *; his marriage with lady Ann Hyde, 224, and *note* †; converted to the Romish faith, 245; particulars relating to his conversion ibid. and *note* *; always strenuous against schemes of comprehension, 252; obliged to retire from the office of lord admiral, 259, and *note* *; dangerous enemy of the constitution, 263; his accession to the throne received with great apprehension, 296; engaged in a scheme of general conversion, 299; resolved to excite a civil war, rather than yield to the exclusion, 303; encouraged by Louis. ibid.; plan for banishing him for life, 306, and *note* ‡; his unpopularity among the middling classes, 312; his tyranny in Scotland, 683.
York, Philip, (second earl of Hardwick), his account of the tories in 1745, ii. 606, and *note* *.
Yorkshire, levy of ship-money refused in, i. 545.

Z.

Zeal, religious, in Scotland, its furious effects, ii. 666.
Zuingle, Ulric, his belief concerning the Lord's Supper nearly fatal to the reformation, i. 97

THE END.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY THOMAS DAVISON, WHITEFRIARS.

00035145

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018